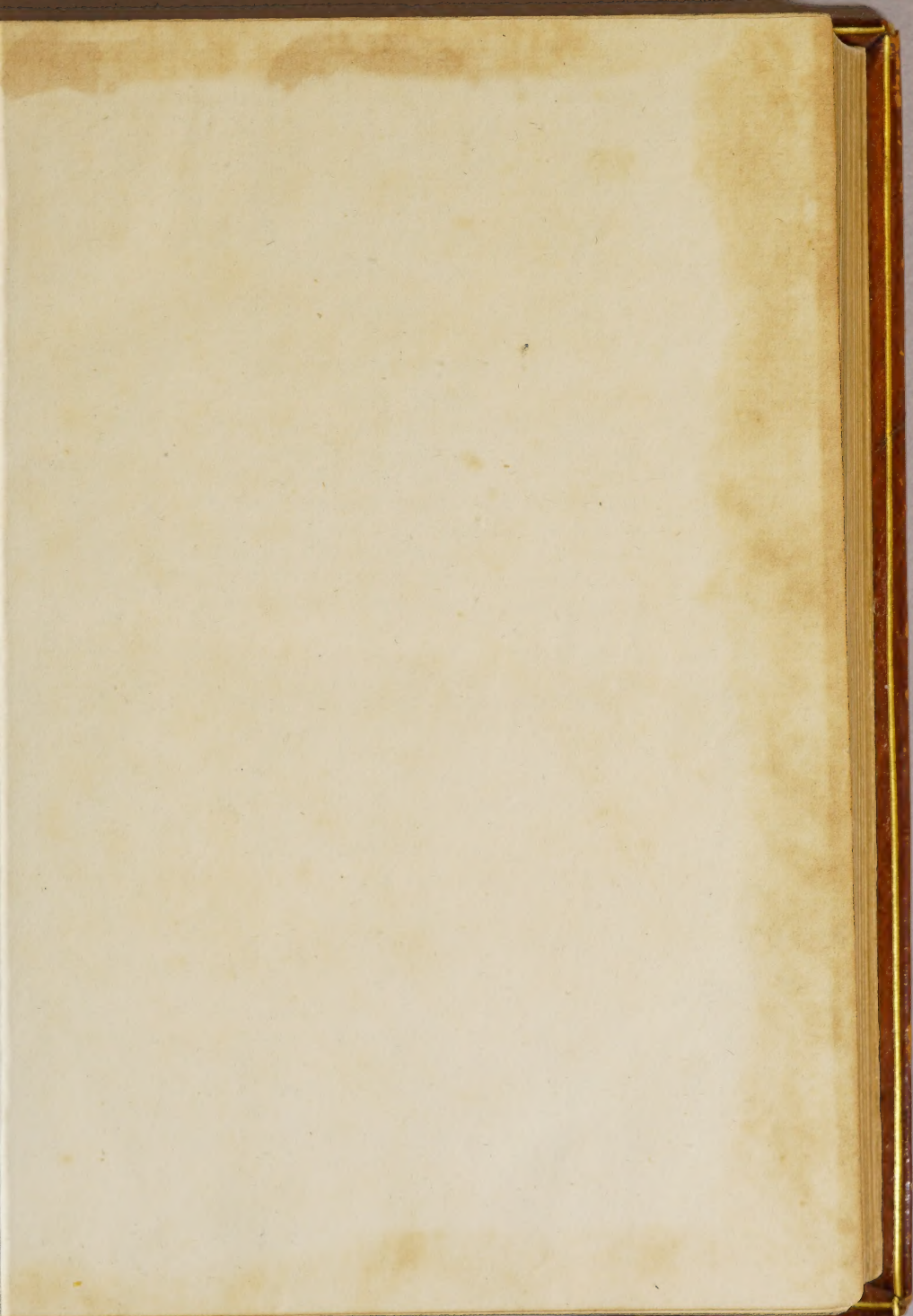


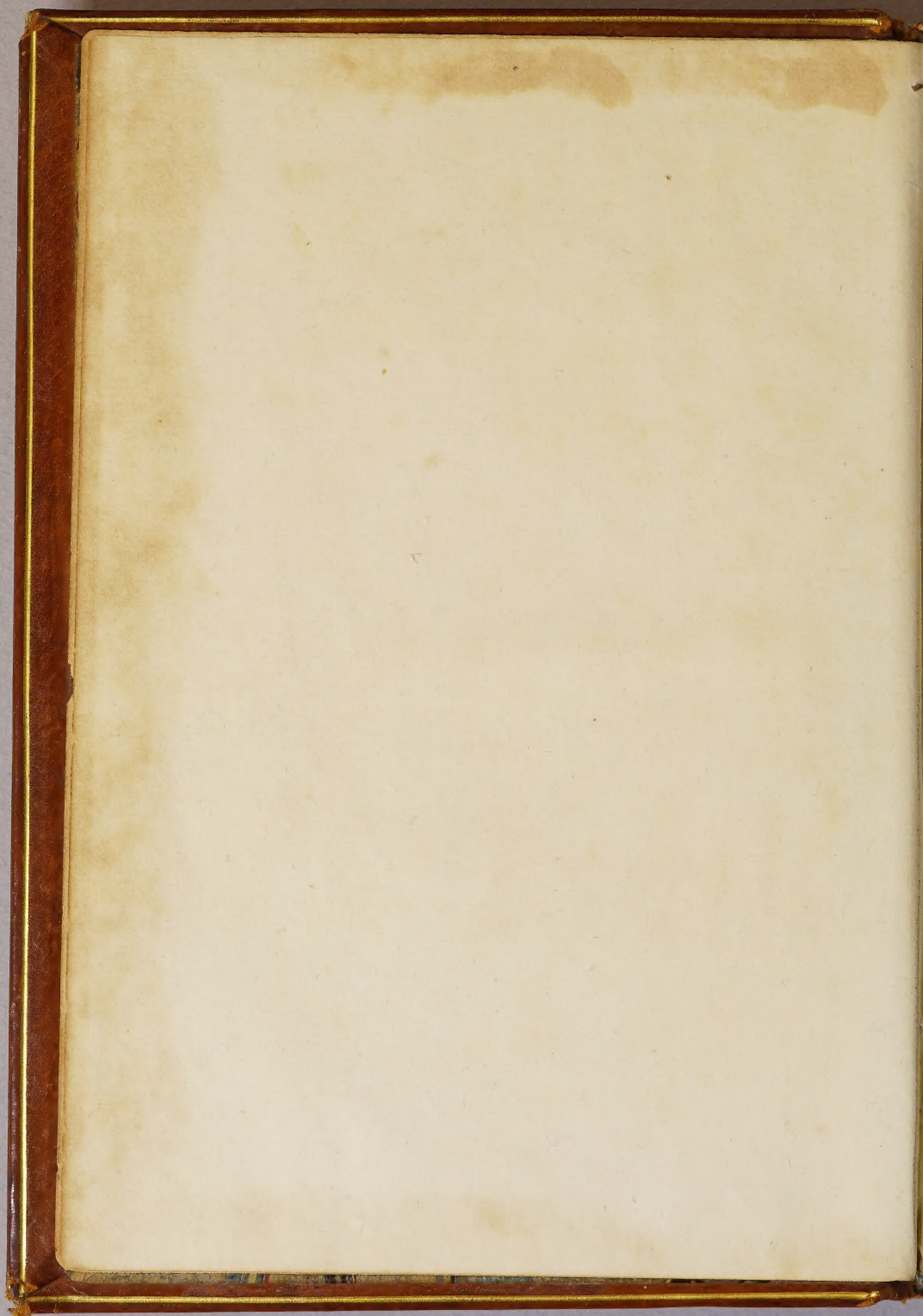


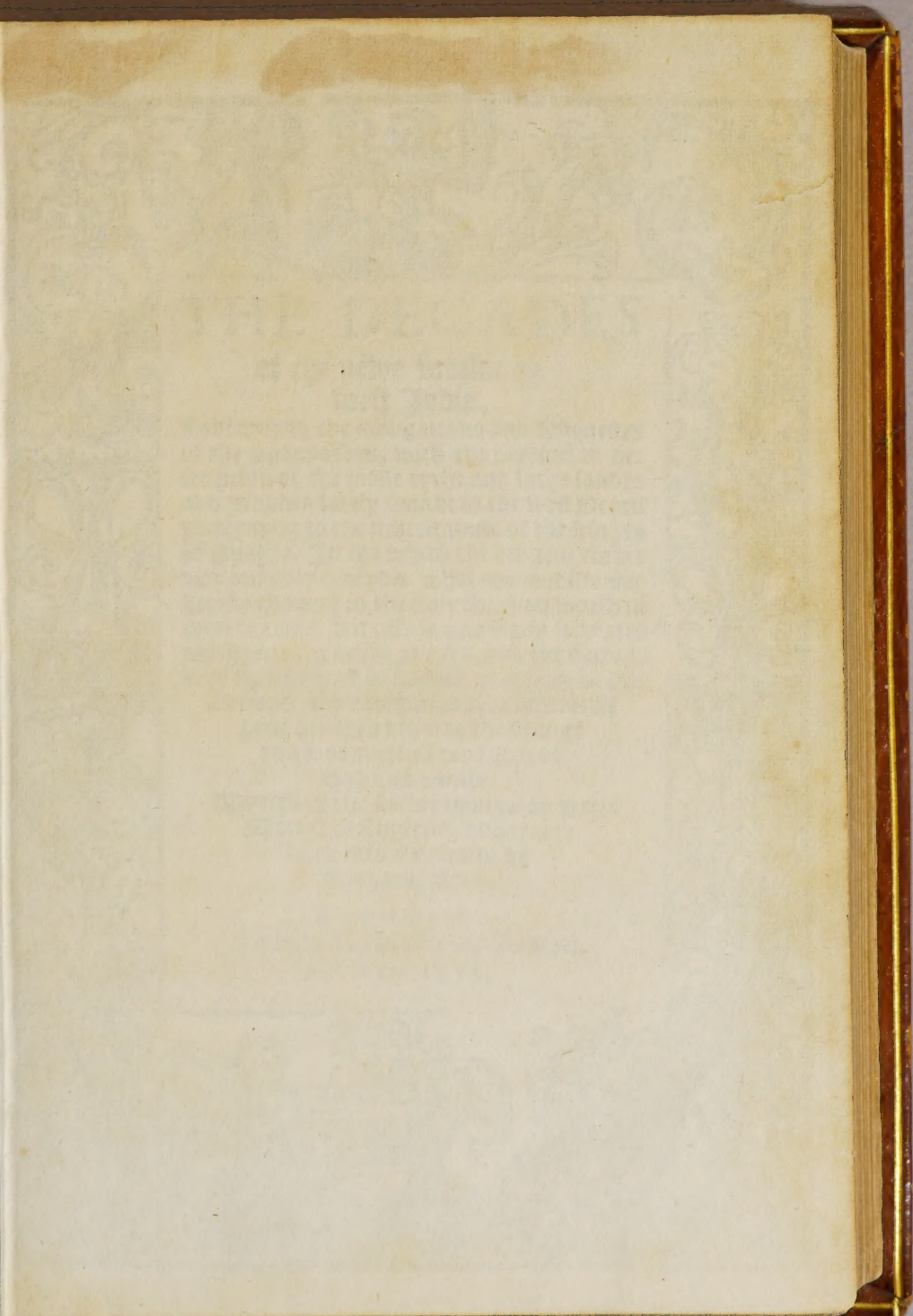
John Carter Brown.



Des.

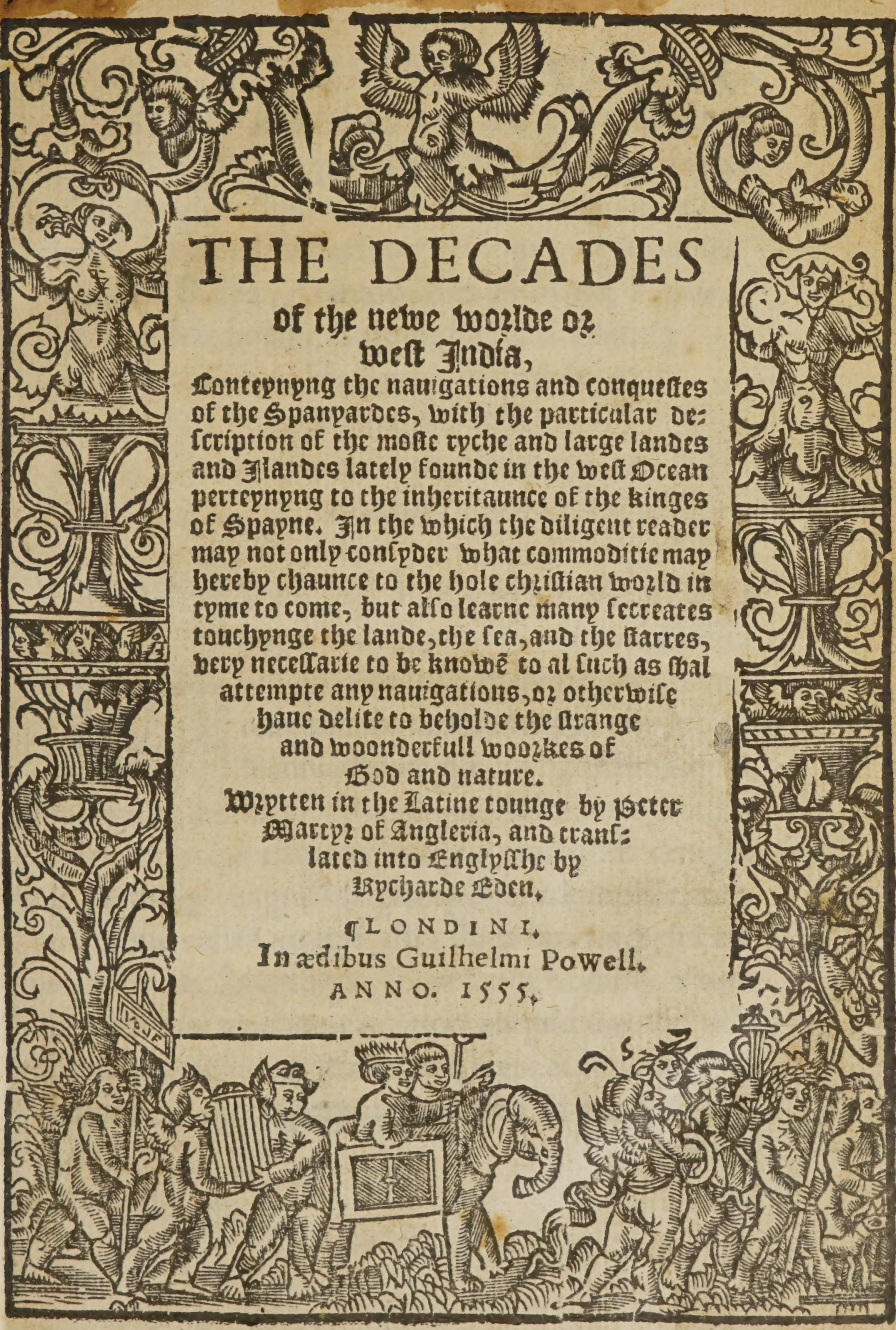






Lem 70

cat



# THE DECADES

of the newe worlde or  
west India,

Conteynyng the navigations and conquestes  
of the Spanyardes, with the particular de-  
scription of the moste ryche and large landes  
and Ilandes lately founde in the west Ocean  
perteynyng to the inheritance of the kinges  
of Spayne. In the which the diligent reader  
may not only consyder what commoditie may  
hereby chaunce to the hole christian world in  
tyme to come, but also learne many secretes  
touchynge the lande, the sea, and the starres,  
very necessarte to be knowe to al such as shal  
attempte any navigations, or otherwise  
haue delite to beholde the strange  
and woonderfull woorkes of  
God and nature.

Wrytten in the Latine tounge by Iohann  
Martyr of Angleria, and trans-  
lated into Englyshe by  
Rycharde Eden,

LONDINI.

In ædibus Guilhelmi Powell.

ANNO. 1555.



**P**POTENTISSIMO AC SERE-  
 NISSIMO PHILIPPO, AC SERENIS-  
 simæ potentissimæq; Mariæ, Dei gratia Regi ac Re-  
 ginæ, Angliæ, Franciæ, Neapolis, Ierusalem, et His-  
 berniæ: Fidei defensoribus, Principibus Hispanias-  
 rum et Siciliæ, Archiducibus Austriæ, Ducibus  
 Mediolani, Burgundiæ, et Brabantia,  
 comitibus Haspurgi, Flandriæ, et  
 Tirolis, Richardus Edenus  
 perpetuam optat foeli-  
 citatem,



**V**M IN PRIMO VESTRO  
 ingressu in hanc celeberrimam Londini  
 urbem (illustrissimi Principes) cerne-  
 rem quanto omnium applausu, popu-  
 li concursu, ac ciuium frequentia, quã-  
 to insuper spectaculorum nitore, nobilium virorum  
 splendore, equorum multitudine, tubarum clangore,  
 cæterisq; magnificis pompis ac triumphis, pro  
 dignitate vestra accepti estis dum omnes q; sui est  
 officij facere satagebant, ubi in tanta hominum tur-  
 ba vix vnus reperiatur qui non aliquid agendo ad-  
 uentum vestrum gratulabatur, cœpi et ego quoq; a  
 liorum exemplo (propius presertim ad me acceden-  
 tibus

### The Epistle.

tibus Celsitudinibus vestris) tanto animi ardore ad aliquid agendum accendi ne solus in tanta hominum corona otiosus viderer, q̃ vix me continebam quin in aliquam extemporariam orationem temere erupissem, nisi et præsentiæ vestræ maiestas, et mea me obscuritas a tam audaci facinore deterruissent. Verum, cum postea penitius de hac re mecum cogitassem, considerassemq̃ quam hæc omnia alioqui per se laude digna, vestris tamen meritis ac regiæ dignitatis eminentiæ comparata, plebeia ac ludicra videantur, coepi denuo cum animo meo reputare qua in re ita cum immortalis rerum memoria foelicissimum vestrū aduentum gratularer, vt inde nominis vestri fama et splendor, non vllis spectaculorum temporarijs ostentis, sed rerum gestarum gloria, ad posteros perpetuo emanaret. Excutio statim diuitias meas. Perscrutor si quid ex penu meo depromere possum q̃ me ad aliquid agendum vestris heroicis virtutibus dignum excitet. Sed cum penes me nihil tale reperio, agnosco nuditatem meam, atq̃ ad vos confugio. Patrum, auorum, proauorum, atq̃ atauorum vitas et facta recolo. Syluam rerum gestarum video, totq̃ preclarissimorum principum propagines, vt merito ab ipsiis heroibus, Saturno videlicet, Ioue, ac Hercule, cæterisq̃ theanthropis, originem duxisse videantur.

Quod

## The Epistle.

Quod cum ita sit, non aliunde profecto quam ex hac sylua materies mihi petenda erit quo in mentibus hominum et aeterna rerum memoria, perpetua spectacula reseratis et vobis et progenitoribus vestris praeclare gestarum, in mundi theatro ab omnibus cum summa nominis vestri fama ac veneratione cernantur.

Cum itaque inter caetera a maioribus vestris praeclare gesta, nihil sit admirabilius aut maiori laude dignum, quam quod incredibili fiducia et plus quam Herculeis laboribus superato Oceano, felicissimo tandem euentu, Indiae Occidentalis ditissimas Insulas atque Continentis amplissimas regiones, mortalium primi inuenerunt, in quibus infinitas incolarum myriades ad fidem Christi conuerterunt (quo nihil augustius aut Christianis principibus magis dignum excogitari potest) visus sum mihi quod non alia in re magis posse felicitati vestrae merito gratulari, quam si nostris quoque hominibus quibus haec haecenus nihil aut parum cognita sunt, innotescere faciam, ut perspectis illorum simul et vestrorum amplissimis imperiis non sine diuina prouidentia (ut credere par est) ad ipsos usque Antipodes et **PLVS VLTRA** terminatis, omnes boni, ipsa rerum magnitudine in admiratione ducti, vos ament et venerentur: Malis vero et improbis, os obstruatur si quam in maledicendo voluptatem

## The Epistle.

tem capiunt. Hæc dum cogito, venit mihi in mentē  
 q̄ olim adolescens perlegi Decades de Nouo Orbe  
 a Petro Martyre ab Angleria, illustrissimī Ferdinādi  
 regis Catholici, ac tui (Serenissime rex) <sup>re</sup> <sup>Qui ora-</sup>  
 tore, Latine conscriptas, atq; sacrae Cæsariæ maie-  
 statī patri tuo dedicatas. Tanti itaq; autoris fide et  
 eruditione motus, eum præ cæteris in nostram lin-  
 guam traducendum suscepī, q̄ non solum vt histori-  
 cus res Indicas cum summa fide scriptis mandauit,  
 sed etiam vt philosophus (q̄ in cæteris scriptoribus  
 desyderatur) naturalium rerum occultas causas red-  
 dit, ac admirabilium naturæ operum (quibus hæc  
 uestra India plena est) rationes inuestigat. Atq; vt  
 huius Indiæ posterior status cognoscatur, quantuq;  
 thesaurus auri, gemmarum, aromatum, aliarumq;  
 ditissimarum mercium ac annui census inde quotan-  
 nis in Hispaniam aduehitur, adiunxi doctissimi vi-  
 ri Gonzali Ferdinandi Ouiedi libellum quem ille  
 Indicæ historiæ generalis Summarij titulo inscripsit,  
 eiusdemq; illustrissimī Caroli Imperatoris patris tui  
 nomini consecrauit: Cæteraq; plurima ex recentio-  
 ribus scriptoribus excerpsi, quæ mihi in tam immen-  
 sa rerum memorabiliū bibliotheca, præcipue adno-  
 tanda videbantur. Quæ, quanta et qualia sunt, quā-  
 tisq; parasangis, omnium heroum ac Argonautarū  
 res

## The Epistle.

res gestas toto terrarum orbe tantopere celebratas  
superent, hæc mea sequens præfatio vulgari sermone  
ad huius historiæ lectores populumq; Anglicū con-  
scripta, satis prolixa oratione indicabit, adeo vt idem  
hic repetere superuacaneum sit, minimeq; necessari-  
um, quandoquidem Anglica lingua tibi Serenissī-  
ma Regina vernacula est, idemq; illustrissimo Regi  
q; tibi scriptum aut dictum existimen, non solum q;  
diuino vinculo vnum sitis in carne vna, sed etiam q;  
eadē animi lenitate, humanitate, affabilitate, cæteris-  
q; virtutibus, non minus animi moribus quā carnis  
vinculo vnum sitis. Sed neq; hic opus est vt ego La-  
tino sermone vestras virtutes, animi moderationem,  
clementiam, religionem, pietatem, educationē, casti-  
tatem, foelicitatem, fortunas, opes, munificentiam,  
victorias, imperia, stemmata, cæteraq; huiusmodi  
multa enumerē, cum præsertim vir nobilis et doctus  
Leonhardus Goretiſ Polonus de his omnibus deq;  
foeliciſſimo vestro matrimonio, orationæ satis fusa  
tractauit, in qua nihil pretermisit q; ad Celsitudinis  
vestræ et progenitorum vestrorum gloriam virtute  
partam, pertineat. Cæterū cum regiæ vestre virtutes  
nominisq; splendor ac regnorum amplitudo alias per  
vniuersa Christiani orbis imperia satis nota sint, nisi  
forte ibi minime vbi maxime nota esse deberēt, nem-  
pe in

## The Epistle.

pe in hoc Angliæ regno, ideo opere præcium et rem  
omnibus bonis gratam, quodq; mei est officij erga  
Cellitudines vestras me facturum existimaui, si hæc  
nostris (vt dixi) hominibus, nostraq; lingua ob oculos  
contemplanda proposuero. Quod quam foelicit  
er aut dextre a me factum sit, aliorum esto iudici  
um. Quam vero fideliter, sincere, ac animo in Ma  
iestatis vestras propenso hoc idem aggressus sum,  
testis est mihi conscientia mea in conspectu illius qui  
hominum corda et renes scrutatur. Maeste igitur vir  
tutis istius animi vestri estote Serenissimi Principes,  
atq; Diuino auxilio freti, pergite ea qua cœpistis fi  
ducia, huius deploratæ ac collapsæ reipub. nostræ sta  
tum, pristino decori restituere, id q; omnes a vo  
bis expectant atq; efflagitant, pollicentes insuper vo  
bis in eo negotio suam operam in nullo defuturam.  
Ne terreat vos quorūdam canum latratus qui bonis  
omnibus oblatrant, et tunc desinent latrare cum des  
inent viuere. Vulgatissimum semper fuit improbos  
homines viris probis vel propter inuidiam vel prop  
ter dissimilitudinem, solere latrare. Et tamen ille pro  
bus semper habitus est, quem peruersi maxime im  
probauerint. Non est igitur curandum quid de no  
bis homunculi, sed quid viri boni loquantur. Cogi  
tate (Serenissimi Principes) q; magnanimitate ac ma  
iorum

## The Epistle.

iorum insignijs, aquilis et leonibus similes estis. Aquilæ natura est, alta petere, et aduersus solis radios in altum volare, Leonis proprium est parcere subiectis et debellare superbos. Generosus equus per plateas incedens, canes vt animalcula imbellia præterit non perturbatus, Virtus non exercita (inquit Seneca ad Neronem) paruam laudem meretur. Non admodum magnificum fuerit mediocrem fortunam probe administrare: Sed tanta rerum omnium licentia non abuti, hoc vero admirabile est: Multo autem admirabilius in iuuenili ac lubrica ætate cui accedat ætas magistra: hijs præsertim qui contumelia lacerantur, quæ alioqui homines vel placidissimos solet de gradu deijcere. Sed (vt supra dixi) non est hic mei propositi (Serenissimi Principes) vestras laudes pro meritis decantare, aut exprimere quo modo in summo rerum fastigio vos humiles præbuiſtis, de quare fulius in præfacione ad lectores tractauî, Iam itaq; vt huic epistolæ dedicatoriæ finem imponam, rogo Serenissimas Maiestates vestras vt has meas lucubrationes in hijs autoribus vertendis, (quas vestro nomini consecraui) ea humanitate ac fauore suscipiatis, quibus omnes beneuolo animo ad vos accedentes, facile admittitis ac neminem reiicitis. Quæ admodum enim qui pomarium aut vineam planta-

The Epistle.

uit ac maturos inde fructus collegit, illi merito primis-  
tias soluit a quo prima semina primaque arborum in-  
sitiones habuit, ita et ego qui a maiorum vestrorum  
rebus gestis primis sumptis seminibus, hos quales-  
cumque fructus addidi, videor profecto mihi, debito  
vestro honore vos defraudasse, nisi eisdem vestro  
nomini ac numini obtulissem. Deus, Opt.  
Max, Celsitudines vestras perpetuo ser-  
uat incolumes, faxitque ut fecunda  
sobolis propagine, summaque pace  
et hac tranquillitate, huius regni ha-  
benas ad Divini nominis  
gloriam, diu gu-  
bernetis.

FINIS.

## The table of the contentes of this booke.

Wesylde the Decades (the table of whose contentes you  
may reade in the ende of the booke) are contey-  
ned furthermoze in this boooke these  
thynges folowynge.

- C** Of the landes and Ilandes lately founde. Folio. 149.  
The popes bulle and donacion. 167. and. 171.  
The hyſtorie of the Weſte Indies, wyrtten by Gonzalus  
Ferdinandus. 174.  
The ordinarie navigation from Spayne to the Weſte  
Indies. 175.  
Of two notable thynges as touchynge the Weſt Indies : and  
of the greate ryches brought from thence into Spaine. 176.  
Of the golde mines and maner of woozkyng in them. 177.  
The maner of ſpyllynge for pearles. 180.  
The familiaritie that the Indians haue with the deuyll. 181.  
Of temperate and habitable regions vnder the Equinocti-  
all line. &c. 184.  
Of dyuers particular thynges, as woozmes, ſerpentes,  
beaſtes, foules. &c. 185.  
Of trees, frutes, and plantes. &c. 194.  
Of the venemous apples wherewith the Canibales inueneme  
theyr arrowes. 199.  
Of ſpylhes and theyr maner of ſpyllynge. 201.  
Of the ryſynge and ſaulynge of oſtre Ocean ſea and the  
ſouth ſea cauled the ſea of Sur. 204.  
Of the ſtreight of lande beinge betwene the north and  
ſouth ſea. 205.  
Howe thynges of one kynde, dyffer by the nature of the  
place : and of the beaſtes cauled Tygers. 206.  
Of the maners and cuſtomes of the Indians of the firme  
lande and of theyr women. 208.  
Of the Ilandes Hiſpaniola and Cuba. 210.  
Of the Ilande of Cuba and other. 213.  
Of the lande of Bacalllaos. 213.  
Other notable thynges gathered owt of dyuers autours : and  
of the vniuerſall carde and newe worlde. 214.

## The Table,

- A discourse of the maruelous vyage made by the Spany-  
ardes rounde about the worlde. 215.
- The order of the starres about the pole Antartike. 222.
- The prices of precious stones and spices with their weightes  
and measures as they are soulede bothe of the Moores  
and Gentyles. 233.
- Of the weightes of Portugale and India, and howe they  
agree. 239.
- Of the doones of the Ilande of Madera. 239.
- Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas vnder the Equinoc-  
trial line. 240.
- The debate and strife betwene the Spanyardes and Portu-  
gales for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of  
spices. 240.
- Of the pole Antartike and the starres about the same: and of  
the qualitie of the regions and disposition of the elementes  
about the Equinoctiall line: Also of certeyne secretes tou-  
chyng the arte of saylpyng. 245.
- A discourse of dyuers vyages and wayes by the which spices,  
precious stones, and golde were brought in owlde tyme from  
India into Europe and other partes of the worlde. Also of  
the vyage to Cathay and East India by the north sea: And  
of the viages of Sebastian Cabot. 249.
- Of the vyages to Moscouia and Cathay. 249.
- A breefe description of Moscouia. 259.
- The description of the north regions: and how they are habi-  
table, contrary to the opinion of the owlde wyuers. 264.
- Scandia. 267.      Suetia or Suethlande. 275.
- Gronlande. 268.      Bothia or Bothlande. 276.
- Illande. 269.      Finlande and Eningia. 276.
- Laponia. 270.      Bochnia. 275.
- Norway. 273.
- The difference of regions and causes of great cities. 277.
- The historie of Paulus Iouius of the ambassade of great Ba-  
silus Prince of Moscouia to pope Clement the seuenth. 278.
- Other notable thynges as concernyng Moscouia, gathered  
out of the bookes of Sigismundus Liberns. 289.
- The description of the regions and people lyng North and  
East from Moscouia to the ryuer Ietzoza and the pro-  
uince of Jugaria and the ryuer Obi. &c. 294.

## The Table.

- Of the famous ryuer of Tanais. 297.  
 More directly from Moscouia to Cathay. 298.  
 Of the Tartars. 299.  
 The navigation by the frozen sea. 303.  
 The letters mistiue which kynge Edwarde the. vi. sent to the  
 kynges, princes, and other potentates inhabitynge the  
 north east partes of the worlde towarde the Empire of  
 Cathay. 306. and. 308.  
 The letters of the prince of Moscouia sente to kynge  
 Edwarde. 319.  
 Other notable thynges as touchyng the Indies : and of the  
 foreknowledge that the poet Seneca had of the fyndyng  
 of the newe worlde & other regions not then known. 310  
 Of the greare Ilande whiche Plato cauled Atlantica or  
 Atlantide. 310.  
 Of the coloure of the Indians. 311.  
 Why they were cauled Indians. 311.  
 The fyrst discoueryng of the West Indies. 312.  
 What maner of man Christopher Colon was, and howe he  
 came fyrst to the knowlege of the Indies. 313.  
 What labour and trauaile he tooke in attempyng his firste  
 vyage to the Indies. 313.  
 Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania or Mexico. 315.  
 Of Peru. 316.  
 Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata. 316.  
 Of the hygher or superioz India cauled India Tercera or  
 Terciera. 317.  
 Agreyne of the landes of Laboradoz and Baccalaos. 318.  
 The discoueryng of the lande of Florida. 319.  
 An opinion that Europe, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes : and  
 of certeyne Nauigations abowt the same. 320.  
 That the Spanyardes haue sayled to the Antipodes whiche  
 inhabite the vndermost halfe of the baule of the earth, con-  
 trary to thopinions of the owlde wyters. 321.  
 Who fyrst founde the needle of the compasse and the vse  
 therof. 322.  
 The situation and byggennesse of the earth. 323.  
 What degrees are. 324.  
 A demonstration of the roundenesse of the earth. 324.  
 What credit ought to be gyuen to wyters as touchyng the  
 woordes

## The Table,

- Woorkes of nature. 325.  
The preface to the booke of metals. 326.  
Of the generation of metalles and theyr mines, with the maner of fyndynge the same. 327.  
Of the mine of golde and the qualitie therof. 334.  
Of the myne of syluer. 340.  
The maner of woorkynge in the golde mines of Egypte in oulde tyme. 342.  
The discription of the two vyages made out of Englande to Guinea in Afrike. 343.  
A bryefe description of Afrike. 344.  
The fyrste vyage to Guinea. 345.  
The seconde vyage to guinea. 355.  
The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of regions by dyuers wayes. 360.  
A newe maner of fyndynge the Longitudes of regions. 361.  
A bryefe rehearfall of the contentes of the bookes of the Decades. &c.

FINIS.

## **C**The interpretacion of cer- teyne Wordes.

**C**Continente (that is) the firme lande not inclosed with  
water, or no Ilande.

**A** Carauel or Caruel, a kynde of shippes.

**H**emispherium, the halfe globe of the earth and water.

**D**esus, a ducate and a halfe.

**E**quinoctial, the line that diuideth the heauen and the earthe  
in the myddest betwene the two poles, in the which when  
the sonne commeth, the days & nyghtes are of equal length

**C**lime, is a portion of the worlde betwene north and south.

**P**aralleles, are lines whereby the sonne passynge causeth  
variation of tyme.

**B**arti Gammoni, Monkeys.

**S**choenus, is a space of. xl. furlonges.

**W**erst, is an Italian mile.

**C**olonie, an habitation.

## **T**he Indian language.

**C**anoa, a boate or barke.

**C**aciqui, kynges or gouernours.

**Z**emes an Idole.

**T**upza, the deuyll.

**M**achana, a sword.

**A**reitos, songes or balades.

**L**ona, the moone.

**T**onatico, the soonne.

**Q**uines, prestes.

**C**hiup, a man.

**I**ra, a woman.

**B**oa, a house.

**T**auni, golde.

**M**ayani, nothyng. &c.

**C**Note that the Ilande of Hispaniola, is now called San  
Domingo by reason of the chiefe citie so named. Also saynte  
Iohns Ilande called sancti Iohannis, or Burichena, is or  
therwoyle called Boriquen.



Rycharde Eden to  
the reader.



**T**he mosse famous oratoure and learned Philo-  
sopher Marcus Tullius Cicero, wyrteth, that  
in all consultations as touchynge owre beha-  
uoure and order of lyuynge amonge men, it be-  
houeth vs euer to beare in mynde howe farre  
the dignitie of mans nature, excelleth the con-  
dition of brute beastes. For they, beinge ruled altogether by  
sence, delyte in nothyng but beastely appetites, whercunto  
they runne headlonge as to theyr onely felicitie. But the  
mynde of man, beinge of more noble nature, is nuryshed  
with knowleage, and taketh pleasure in diuyllynge or excog-  
itaynge some honest thyng, wherby it not onely leaueth a-  
monge men a memorie of his immortall nature, but also en-  
gendereth the lyke affection in other that delyte to see and  
heare such thynges as are commendable in theyr predicellours.  
And this surely thynke I to bee the cause that epyther the fa-  
mous factes of woorkyng men, or ingenious inuentions of ex-  
perte artificers, haue not onely nobilitate the autours and di-  
tillers of the same, or such to whom they haue byn dedicate,  
but also that parte of theyr commendations haue redounded  
to all suche as haue spented theyr tyme and taken peynes in il-  
lustratyng and settyng furthe theyr doynges. For who  
shulde at this daye haue knowen Mausolus the kynge of Ca-  
ria, wth his wyfe Artemisia, or these famous artificers, Sco-  
pa, Bryaces, Timotheus, Leochares, or Pythis, if the won-  
derfull and sumptuous woork of the sepulcher whiche Ar-  
temisia made for kynge Mausolus her husband (beinge of such  
woorkemanshpye that it was accompted for one of the mar-  
ueyls of the worlde) had not geuen vnto all these immortall  
fame, wheras neuerthelesse it coulde not defende it selfe a-  
geynst thiniurie of tyme consumpyng all thynges. There re-  
mayneth at this daye no token of the laborious Tabernacle  
whiche Moyses buylded, or of the renoumed and marueilous  
Temple that was buylded in Ierusalem by Salomon and re-  
newed by Eldas. yet shall the name of the excellent artific-  
ers Doliab and Beselehel, and Hyram the kynge of Tyrys,

Commendati-  
on of noble  
factes.

Mausolus.

Cunynge ar-  
tificers.

The Taber-  
nacle of Mo-  
ses.

The Temple  
of Salomon.

Hyram.

## The preface to the reader.

**Trewe gloze.**

**Great and superfluous works,**

**Fame differeth from true gloze.**

**Absolute gloze.**

**What is true gloze.**

**The kynges of Spayne, Heroes,**

lyue for euer in the memory of men. Furthermore also, Salomon hym selfe, although he were many other wayes famous, yet gaue he a greate parte of his gloze to that princely buyldynge. But certeynely the most trewe and permanent gloze, proceedeth of such monumentes as byynge sume great and notable comoditie & profite to the lyfe of men, rather then of the hugious heapes of stones of the pyramides of Egypt, wherein is nought els to see but the fonde & barbarous ostentation of superfluous riches: Or of the Mazes cauled Labyrynthe, or of horryble great Images cauled Colossi, of knottes inexplicable, of brasen cauldrons of monstrous byggennesse, of hauens with echo seuen tymes reboundynge, and dyuers suche other portentous inuentions, the which as they do delite vs in consideringe the maruelous arte and witte of suche artificers as diuised and made the same, so are they otherwyse vnprofitable: And byynge rather a fame to theyr inuentours, then trewe gloze. Perillus was famous by diuynge his brasen bulle: yet so, that it had byn better for hym to haue byn obscure and vnknewen. They haue therefore deserued more trewe commendation whiche in buyldynge of cityes, towynes, fortresses, bridges, cunnities, hauens, hyppes, and suche other, haue so ioyned magnificence with profecte, that bothe may remaine for an eternal testimonie of absolute gloze, whose perfection extendeth to the gratifynge of vniuersal mankind as farre as mans mortalitie wyll permit. The whiche thinge whyle I consider, and caule to memorye holwe Cicero defineth trewe gloze to bee a fame of many and greate desertes eyther towarde owre citizens, owre countrey, or towarde all mankynde, and the same to bee of such excellencie that the owlde poetes for sume effecte sayned it to bee the sweete Ambrosia and Nectar wherewith the goddes are fedde, and that of such force that who so may drynke therof, shal also become a god, (that is to say immortall and happy) mee thynke verely that (yf man maye be a god to men as holy scripture speaketh of Moyses and other) the kynges of Spayne of late dayes (if I may speake it without offence of other) may so much the more for theyr iust desertes and good fortune be compared to those goddes made of men (whom the antiquitie cauled Heroes and for theyr manyfolde benefites to man kynde honoured them with diuine honoure) as theyr famous factes so farre excell at

other

## The preface to the reader.

other, as I dare not speake to such as haue not yet harde or  
redde of the same, least the greatnesse thereof shulde at the first  
bunte so muche astonyshe the reader that he myght geue the  
lesse credite to the autoure of this booke, who neuerthelesse  
hath moste faythfully wyrtten this hystoie of suche thynges  
wherof he hath seene a greate parte him selfe (as being by the  
moste catholyke and puissaunt kynge Ferdinando appoynted  
a commissionarie in thaffayres of India) and gathered the re-  
sidewe partly by information and partly out of the wyrynges  
of such as haue byn (as Wyrgyll wyrteth of Eneas, *Et quorum  
pars magna fui*) that is, doctrs and parte of such thynges as are  
conteyned in the hystoie: as Gouernours, Licutenantes,  
Capitaynes, Admirals, and Pylottes, who by theyr paineful  
trauayles and prowes, haue not onely subdued these landes  
and seas, but haue also with lyke diligence commytted tho-  
der therof to wyrynge: And not this onely, but for the better  
tryall of the trewth herein, haue and yet doo in maner dayly  
sende from thense into Spayne such monumentes as are most  
certeyne testimonies of theyr doynges, as yow may reade in dy-  
uers places in this boke. This newe worlde is now so much  
frequented, the Ocean now so well knowne, and the commo-  
dities so greate, that the kynge erected a house in the cite of  
Siuile (cauled the house of the contractes of India) perty-  
pyng onely to thaffayres of the Ocean, to the which al such  
resorte for necessities as attempte anye vyage to this newe  
worlde, and lykewyse at theyr retorne make theyr accompte  
to the counsaile for the Indies for the golde and suche other  
thynges as they byyng from thense. It is therefore appar-  
tent that the heroical factes of the Spanyardes of these days,  
deserue so greate prayse that thautour of this booke (beinge  
no Spanyarde) doth woorthely extolle theyr doynges aboue  
the famous actes of Hercules and Saturnus and such other  
which for theyr gloriois and vertuous enterpyles were ac-  
counted as goddes amonge men. And surely if great Alex-  
ander and the Romans which haue rather obteyned then de-  
serued immortall fame amonge men for theyr bluddye victo-  
ries onely for theyr owne glozy and amplifyinge theyr empire  
obteyned by slaughter of innocentes and kepte by violence,  
haue byn magnified for theyr doinges, howe much moze then  
shal we thynke these men woorthy iust commendations which

The certentie  
of this hystoie

The house of  
the contractes  
of India.

The counsaile  
for the Indies

The heroical  
factes of the  
Spanyardes.

Great Alexan-  
der.

The Spany-  
ardes warres  
in the Indies.

## The preface to the reader.

**The benefites  
that the Indi-  
ans haue recei-  
ued by the  
Spanyardes.**

**Ipyberie.**

**The Cani-  
bales,**

**Fearful idlenesse.**

**Iſai. 65.**

**The warres  
of Moyses.**

**The Indians  
ſubdued to  
the ſayth.**

**Iſai. 42.**

in theyr mercyfull warres ageynſt theſe naked people haue fo-  
bleſed them ſelues towarde them in exchaungynge of benefites  
for victorie, that greater commoditie hath therof enſewed to  
the vanquiſhed then the victourers. They haue taken no-  
thyng from them but ſuch as they them ſelues were wel wyl-  
lynge to departe with, and accounted as ſuperfluities, as  
golde, perles, precious ſtones and ſuch other: for the which  
they recompensed them with ſuche thynges as they muche  
more eſteemed. But ſum wyl ſay, they poſſeſſe and inhabyte  
theyr regions and vſe them as bondemen and tributaries,  
where befoze they were free. They inhabite theyr regions in-  
deede: yet ſo, that by theyr diligence and better manuryng  
the ſame, they maye nowe better ſuſteyne both, then one be-  
foze. Theyr bondage is ſuche as is much rather to be deſired  
then theyr former libertie which was to the cruell Canibales  
rather a horrible licencioſuſneſſe then a libertie, and to the in-  
nocent ſo terrible a bondage, that in the myddelt of theyr ſere-  
full idleneſſe, they were euer in daunger to be a pray to thoſe  
manhunyng wolues. But nowe thanked be God, by the  
manhodde and pollicie of the Spanyardes, this deuelyſhe  
generation is ſo conſumed, partly by the laughter of ſuche  
as coulde by no meanes be brought to ciuilitie, and partly by  
reſeruyng ſuch as were overcome in the warres, and conuer-  
tyng them to a better mynde, that the prophecie may herein  
bee fulfilled that the wolfe and the lambe ſhall feede toge-  
ther, and the wylde fieldes with the bale of Achor, ſhalbe the  
folde of the heard of gods people. Moyses as the miniſter of  
the lawe of wrath and bondage geuen in ſper & reſſeſſes, was  
comaunded in his warres to ſaue neyther man, woman, nor  
chylde, and yet brought no commoditie to the nations whom  
he overcame and poſſeſſed theyr landes. But the Spaniardes  
as the myniſters of grace and libertie, brought vnto theſe  
newe gentyles the victorie of Chryſtes deſth wherby they be-  
ynge ſubdued with the worldely ſworde, are nowe made free  
from the bondage of Sathans tyrannie, by the myghty poure  
of this triumphante victourer, whom (as ſayth the prophet)  
god hath ordeyned to be a lyght to the gentyles, to open the  
eyes of the blynde, and to deliuer the bounde owt of pryſon  
and captiuitie. What other men do phantaſie herein, I can  
not tell: but ſuer I am, that lyke as the ſlowe and brutiſhe  
wyttes

## The preface to the reader.

wyttes, for the sclenderneſſe of theyr capacitie and effeminate hartes, do neuer or ſeldome lyfte vp theyr myndes to the contemplation of goddes workes and maieſtie of nature, but lyke brute beaſtes lookynge euer downewarde, thynke the worlde to be in maner no bygger then theyr owne dunghylles or caggies, lyttle paſſynge whether the Chryſtian fayth do ſprade through the worlde, or bee dzyuen to one corner: Euen ſo al good wyttes and honeſt natures (I doubt not) wyl not once ly reioyce to ſee the kyngedome of God to bee ſo farre enlarged vpon the face of the earth, to the confuſion of the deuyl and the Turkye The Antichryſte, but alſo do the vtter moſt of theyr poure to further the ſame. For ſurely, as Bonifalvus Quicquid wyrteth to the Emperours maieſtie in his hyſtoie of the Weſte Indies, that he thynketh hym no trewe Spanyarde whiche reioyceth not in the good fortune of theyr kynges by whole ayde and godly zeale this myghrie portion of the worlde hath byn added to the ſtocke of Chryſties congregation, Euen ſo do I thinke them no trewe Chryſtian men that do not reioyce with the Angels of heauen for the deliuerie of theſe owre brotherne, owre fleſhe, and owre bones, from the handes of owre commune enemye the oulde ſerpente who hath ſo longe had them in hyſ poſſeſſion, vntyll the fulneſſe of the gentyles be accompliſhed accordynge to the time preſinite by hym, who vnto the yeare after his incarnation, **M. CCC. lxxxii.** hath ſuffered the greate ſerpente of the ſea Leuiathan, to haue ſuche dominion in the Ocean and to caſte ſuch myſtes in the eyes of men, that ſence the creation of the worlde vntyll the yeare before named, there hath byn no paſſage from owre knownen partes of the worlde to theſe newe landes, wheras nowe the ſame are moſte certeynely knownen to be not paſt. **xxx.** dayes ſaylynge from Spayne. Neyther yet had the church of Europe any knowleage of tye myghrie Chryſtian Empire of Precioſus Iohannes, otherwyſe cauled Preſbyter Iohannes, Emperour of many Chryſtian nationes in Ethiope, vntyll the yeare of Chryſte. **M. CCC. xxxiii.** as largely appeareth in the nauigations of the Portugales, and eſpecially in the booke of Damianus a Boes, wyrtten to the byſhop of Rome, Paule the thyrde of that name, of the fayth and religion of the Ethiopians which they haue hadde ſence the tyme of the Apoſtles, A thynge certes moſt wonderfull,

The contemplation of gods workes.

The Chryſtian Empire enlarged.

The conuerſion of the gentyles.

Leuiathan.

Precioſus Iohannes the Chryſtian Emperour of Ethiope.

## The preface to the reader.

Don Ferdinando  
kynge of Aragon.

The fauour  
of god knowen  
by his benefites.

Roe.

What god  
hath wrought  
by kynge Ferdinando.

Abraham,

Spiritual  
Israell.

Moses,

derfull, and suche, that yf the same were not hydde hether to by gods vnsercheable prouidence, I can not but thynke much negligence or ignorance in our forefathers and predicessours vnyll the dayes of the ryght noble, prudent, and Catholike kynge of Aragon Don Ferdinando grandfather to Themperours maiestie by his eldest dowghter, & to the queenes hyghnesse by his seconde dowghter the most vertuous lady queene Catherine her graces moother: A prince doubtlesse of suche nobilitie, proues, magnificence, and all other vertues commendable in a prince, that who so shall indifferently way all his doinges and good successe in all his assayes, comparinge the same to thenterpryses and doinges atchpyed by suche famous princes in whome the Greeces and Romans haue so greatly gloiyed, maye with one eye perceauie not onely howe farre his noble factes do surmount theyrs, but also wel consyder what noble braunches of isse he were lyke to sprynge out of so woorthy a stocke. And suerly if sence the begynning of the worlde, the fauour of god toward men hath byn knowen by such benefites and blessinges as he hath geuen to men, it seemeth to me that in maner (onely Chyrist excepted) there neuer lyued man to whom god hath geuen greater benefites and shewed moze fauoure. Great doubtlesse was the fauour and mercie that god shewed vnto Roe, by whom he saued the remanent of mankynde beinge but fewe in number. But much greater was the grace which he shewed to kynge Ferdinando vnder whom and by whose meanes he saued not onely the bodies but also the soules of innumerable millions of men inhabytynge a great part of the worlde heretofore vnknewen and drowned in the deluge of erreure. What shulde I here speake of Abraham the father of fayth whose promyses were great, and he caused the frende of god? Wyd he or his posteritie see Israell increase to such multitudes and nations as kynge Ferdinandos posteritie may see thincrease of this spiritual Israell vnto whome as a seconde Abraham he was the father of fayth? Moyses was so great in the syght of god that he disclosed vnto hym his secrete name, and miraculouly caused a corner of the sea to open at his prayer. But howe greater a myracle was it that he opened vnto the nauie of Don Ferdinando the greates Ocean thought befoze that tyme to bee without ende, where neuerthelesse he and his posteritie the

kynge

## The preface to the reader.

kynges of Spayne haue nowe planted a newe Iſraell muche  
 greater then that whiche Moyses ledde throughe the red ſea.  
 It were here ſuperfluous to ſpeake of Dauid whom Godde  
 founde a man accordynge to his hartes deſyre: and yet maye  
 it be doubted whether his plagies and ſcourges were greater  
 then his benefites: His ſonne Salomon for al his inconstant  
 and wantynge wyſedome and his great ryches obteyned by  
 his nauigations to Ophir, yet was there at this tyme no  
 knowlege of Antipodes, neyther dydde any of his ſhyppes  
 ſayle about the hole worlde, perce the Ocean, and trauerſe  
 the Equinoctial line to thinferiour hemiſpherie or halfe globe  
 of the earthe and ſea as dyd the famous ſhyppe Victoria ſent  
 furth by the Emperours maieſtie. A thyng doubteleſſe ſo ſtrange  
 and marueylous that as the lyke was neuer done before, ſo  
 is it perhaps neuer lyke to be done ageyne: ſo farre haue the  
 nauigations of the Spanyardeſ excelled the vyage of Iaſon  
 and the Argonaute to the region of Colchos, or all that euer  
 were before. And although in the booke of kynges and Para  
 lipomenon it bee hyperbozically wyrtten that in the dayes of  
 Salomon golde & ſyluer were in Hieruſale in maner as plenti  
 ful as ſtones, & that his ſeruantes brought from Ophir foure  
 hundreth & ſixtie talentes of gold, yet do we not reade that a  
 ny of his ſhyppes were ſo laden with golde that they ſoonke,  
 as dyd a ſhyppe of kynge ſerdinandus as yow maye reade in  
 the laſt booke of the fyrſte Decade. Neyther was the domini  
 on of Salomon extended from the ryuer of Euphrates to the  
 lande of the Philiftians and the extreme confines of Egypte  
 to be compared with the large Empire whiche the kynges of  
 Spayne haue in the weſt Indies: Nor his ryches of golde to  
 be thought much in reſpect of that which hath byn brought  
 from thence into Spayne as ſhall playnely appere to al ſuche  
 as wyll ſecke to knowe the truth hereof. But to let paſſe to  
 ſpeake any further of the myzacles which god hath wrought  
 by the handes of this noble prince in this newe worlde among  
 theſe newe gentyles. Is it not well knowne to all the worlde  
 what a defence and bzaken wall he hath byn to all Chryſten  
 dome in that he hath quite dryuen out of Spayne the Moores  
 or Saraſens and Jewes which ſo many hundreth yeares poſ  
 ſeſſed a greate parte of Spayne to no ſmaule daungoure of  
 the hole Chriſtian Empire, and yet coulde neuer before bee  
 cleane

Dauid.

Salomon.

Ophir.  
Antipodes.

The nauiga  
tion rounde  
about the  
worlde.

The dominion  
of Salomon.  
Paral. 9.

The Indies.

The warres  
of kynge ſer  
dinando a  
geynſt the  
Saraſens.

## The preface to the reader.

The conqueste  
of the Indies

The conqueste  
of Naples.

The Emperours  
maiestie

cleane vanquished vntill the dayes of this noble and Catho-  
lyke prince so named for his warres ageynste the infidelles,  
whom God rayled for a Capitayne of his people as an other  
Bedion vnder whose banner they myght ouercome theyr ene-  
mies and pource his vineparde from suche wycked weedes.  
The which thyng doubtelesse may seeme so much the greater  
and more difficulte, sozalmuch as in the myddest of the chiefe  
heate of his chargeable warres ageynste the Moores of Bra-  
nada, he euen then and at the same tyme sente furth shippes  
for the conquestynge of the Indies, as thowgh he and the na-  
tion of the Spanyarden had byn appoynted by god eyther to  
subdue the enemies of the fayth or to bringe theym to Christs  
religion. The selfe same kynge Ferdinando also aboute the  
yeare of Chryst. 1503, sent a nauie of shippes into Italy, where  
they vanquished, chased, and slewe the Frenchemen, and  
recovered the kyngedome of Naples with all the dominions  
belongynge thereunto. By which noble victorie, his successi-  
on and posteritie as themperours maiestie and now his sonne  
the kynge owre master and soueraigne lord haue euer sence  
enioyed thinheritaunce of the same as of antiquitie by iust and  
ryght tyle deuie to them and theyr prediceours. And as it  
is the nature of god not only to shewe his loue and fauour to  
such as haue pleased hym, but also to poure furth the plentie  
of his grace hypon theyr succession from generation to gene-  
ration, so hath he with lyke fecilitie prospered the reigne of  
Themperours maiestie who by his wisdom and proues hath  
not onely polittikly gouerned, but also augmented and inlar-  
ged such dominions as fel to hym by discent of inheritance.  
What shuld I speake of his warres and conquestes in India,  
in Aphrike, in Italic, in Fraunce, in Germanie, and in Flaun-  
ders: all the which to be declared accor dyngely wolde rather  
require hole volumes then fewe sheetes of paper. Yet hath one  
in fewe woordes effectually exprest his dominions and con-  
questes in these verses folowynge.

The preface to the reader.

Impiger expauit rapidas transire per vndas  
 Oceani Alcides: continuitq; gradum.  
 Maximus at Cæsar, PLVS VLTRA tendere cursum  
 Ausus, et ignotis est dare iura locis.  
 Et domita aurifera nunc victor gente reuersus,  
 Cætera sub sceptro ponat vt ipse suo.  
 Nam pater omnipotens vt famam terminet astris  
 Iussit, et imperium lineat Oceano.

¶ An other also breefely hath declared the  
 same in these verses,

Consortem Imperij voluit quia Iuppiter orbis,  
 Astra Deo cedunt, Carole terra tibi.

And certes who so well considereth the progenie of kynges  
 that in so shorte a time haue linially descended from Don Fer  
 dinando, and howe many kyngedomes they possesse, may see  
 that God hath fulfilled in hym also the promyses and bles  
 snges of Abraham, as to make hym the father of many nati  
 ons, and his seeede to growe great vpon the earth: Also that  
 many kynges shalbe come furth of his loynes, and to make a  
 perperuall league and conuenaunt with hym and his posterie  
 tie to bee they? god for ever. And here to omittre to speake of  
 other: Was there euer better hope or more likenes then now,  
 that these blesnges and promyses of god shulde continue  
 in this princely progenie, syth the vertues and felicitie of the  
 al doo so shyn and shyneth in our noble and gracious prince  
 kyng Philippe, to whom euen in his youth his father (oc  
 cupied in the warres of Italye and Africke) commytted the  
 hole gouernaunce of the kyngedomes of Spayne and the Fir  
 dies. Of his behauour in Englande, his enemies (which can  
 kee, vertue neuer lacked) they I say (if any such yet remaine)  
 haue greates cause to reposithe welth: ye so well, that of his na  
 tural

Gen. 17.

The kynges  
 matchie.

## The preface to the reader.

curall clementie were not greater then was they: vnnaturall indignation they knowe them selues what myght haue folowed. The properties of fooles and wyse men are declared in these old verses.

*Quid stulti proprium? Non posse et velle nocere.*

*Quid sapientis opus: Non velle et posse nocere.*

*Epistrophe  
to Englands.*

*Iſai. i.*

That is to say: What is the property of a foole? To wyl to doo hurte and can not. What is the woork of a wyse man? Not to wyl to hurte though he may. But whether he hath lacked poure or wyll, it is knowen to barbers and bledde eyde men. Who lamented they? folly more then he? Who more humbly admytted they? lutes and supplications? ye who obteyned they? pardon hat he? Seynge a Lion he behaued hym selfe as a lambe, and strooke not his enemye hauynge the swoorde in his hande. Swoope Englands swoope, and learne to knowe thy lord and master, as horses and other brute beastes are taught to doo. Be not indocible lyke Tygers and dragons, and such other monsters wyse to man kynde. God by the mouth of Iſaias the prophet reproveth the Iſraelites that they knewe not so well they? deuotie towarde hym as dyd the brute beastes the mangiers of they? masters. The oxe and the asse (sayth he) knoweth the mangier of they? master, but Iſraell knoweth not me. For shame let vs not be woorse then oxen and asses, & lyke vnto horses and mules in whom is no vnderstandynge. But O vnhankfull Englands and bodye of honest shame: Who hath geuen thee the face of a hooze and too[n]ge of a serpent withowt shame to speake venemous woordes in secrete agaynst the anoynted of god. O paynted hooze that hast Chryste in thy mouth and the deuyl in thy harte. Hath not the pocke of thy licentiousnesse bruste furth in maner to thyne owne destruction. Howe longe wilt thou nurse the in thy boosome that serpente whose nature is to deuoure her moother? Take a vomyte in tyme lest thy disease become incurable. What neede I rehearse vnto thee thy manyfolde infirmities and deformities whiche thou arte faulen into by thyne owne outragiousnesse? If the greeces of them bee to thee vnsensible by reason of thy feeblenesse and longe sickenes, take vnto thee that glasse wherein thou glozest with the Jewe and thyngest that thou seest al thynges and canst iudge all myseries. Looke I say in that pure glasse and be:

## The peface to the reader.

holde thy owne deformities, which thou canſte not or wylt not fee. I feare greatly that if thou looke therein diligently and looke euen throughe thy ſelfe, thou wylt abhorre thy ſelfe to ſee howe many monſters lye hid in the vnder the ſhape of man. There is euen now great talke of the in the monethes of all men that thou haſt of late yeares brought furthe many monſters and ſtraunge byrthes, wherof dyuers men make dyuers interpretations more monſtrous then the monſters them ſelues. But ſhall I breiefely and ſimply declare vnto thee the ſignification of thy monſters? fyrſt then conſyder that they are monſters of mankynde and not of other beaſtes. Secondly marke well that in them al, the headde is perfect, ſo that the monſtroſitie groweth owte of the body, although not owte of the hole body but certeyne partes therof. But not to go to farre. Conſyder ageyne that diſorder of the partes is a deformitie to the hole. One hath well interpreted that ſuch monſtrous byrthes ſignifie the monſtrous and deformed myndes of the people myſhappened with phantaſtical opinions, diſſolute luyunge, licentious talke, and ſuch other vicious behauiours which monſtrouſly deforme the myndes of men in the ſyght of god who by ſuche ſignes dooeth certifie vs in what ſimilitude we appere befoze hym, & thereby giueth vs admonition to amende befoze the day of his wrath and vengeance. What deformed beaſtes are more monſtrous then lpyng, rebel lion, ſtrife, contention, priuie malice, ſlaunderpunge, mutterpunge, conſpiraces, and ſuch other deuiliſhe imaginacions. But O Englande whyle tyme is giuen thee, circumsiſe thy hate. Put to onely thy good wyll, and thou mayſte fynde grace and fauoure to recouer thyne aunciente betwixte whiche hath ſo longe byn defaced. Thou haſte nowe a kynge and queene that deſyre thee to remember thy detourie, and holde theyr armes abrode to embrace thee yf thou wylt drawe nere vnto them. They are loy to occupie the whyppe yf thou myghteſt otherwyſe bee brought to obedience. But yf thou take pleaſure to perſiſt in ſtoward ſtoobberneſſe, knowe thou hat they are Lions whelpes and conquerours of monſters wherof thou haſt had ſuche experience, that proudeſt truſtyng in thyne owne ſtrength, and attemptyng lyke an other Remorſh to buylde a newe towre of confuſion, the woodkes of thy giants were miraculoſly overthrowne by a woman who de-

Monſtrous  
byrthes.

The ſignifica  
tions of mon  
ſtrous byrthes.

The deformity  
of monſtrous  
myndes.

The kynge and  
Queene.

## The preface to the reader.

liuered thee from that captiuitie, whereby thou oughtest to knowe the daungious thou wast in, and bee thankfull to thy deliuerer. Beware therefore leaste whyle thou contemne the peaceable princes that god hath sent thee, thou bee lyke vnto Jloses frogges to whō for theyr vnguietnesse, Jupiter sent a hearon to picke them in the hedes. Consider what benefites thou mayst receaue at theyr handes if thou doo thy dewtie towarde them. Consider ageyne that as they are able, so may thy gentlenesse make them wyllynge to recompense the same. Strophe thyne eares from bayne fables as from the inchauntinge Mermaydes. For as manye speake of Robbyn Hood and of his bowe that neuer shot therein, so doo fooles prate of such thynges as they knowe not. But O god? what phantasies are now in the heades of men? Howe redy they are to inuent lyes and tales? and of howe smaul sparkes they kindle greate flames? Summe are so curious to fynde faute in other, that for lacke of iust matter woozthy reproche in them whom they desyre to depaue, they speake euill of theyr parentes & kynred of whom they knowe as lytle. And not so satisfied they dispise and with lyeinge dispraise theyr hole nation and countrey. Ye sum take such pleasure herein, that if they can fynde nought els to dispraise, they wyl fynde faute in suche as they fauour not, because they weare not theyr apparell as they doo, or perhappes are not so effeminate as they, or eate not as they eate, or fight not as they fyght, so parciall is the iudgement of fooles in theyr owne rudenesse, chynkyng them selues the better for disprayinge of other. Spayne is a beggerly countrey sayth one: The emperor is but poore sayth another: He is deade sayth another: The Indies haue rebelled sayth another, and eether there cometh no more golde from thence, or there is no more founde nowe: With suche other false and licentious talke diuised by vnquiter braines in whose heades the hammers of sedition sease not to forge ingens of iniquitie. If I shoulde here answer to all these querels particularly and as the woozthynesse of the thyng requireth, I myght fynde matter sufficient to make a volume of infinite quantitie and perhappes be tedious to summe. Yet not to passe ouer so great a matter vntouched, and partly to stoppe the mouthes of suche impudent lyes, I haue thought good to speake sumwhat hereof. And therefore to speake of Spayne,

How curious  
summe are to  
fynde faute in  
other.

Yes Imagi-  
ned.

Commendati-  
one of Spaine

and

## The preface to the reader.

& by the testimonie of oulde autours to declare the commodi-  
ties therof: Plinie a graue & faythful autour, in the last boke  
& last chapiture of his natural hystory greatly commendynge  
Italy aboue al ocher contreys, giueth the second prayse vnto  
Spaine, aswel for al such thynges as in maner the heuen can  
geue & the earth byynge furth for the commoditie of this lyfe  
as also for the excellent wittes of men & Ciuile gouernaunce.  
Also Diodorus Siculus in the sixt booke of his Bibliotheca  
speakyng of Spayne (cauled of the Grekes Iberia) writeth  
that when in the mountaines named Pyrene the inhabitants  
burnte by the wooddes, there ranne out of the mountaynes  
as it were dyuers streames of pure syluer molten by the heate  
of the fyre. But the estimation and price of syluer beinge at  
those dayes to them vnknown, the Phenician marchauntes  
bought the same of them for thynges of smaule value: And  
carpyng it into Grecia, Asia, and other countreys, got great  
rycheesse therby. For the desyre of gaynes (sayth he) so great-  
ly moued the marchauntes, that when more syluer remayned  
then myght lade theyr shippes, they tooke the leade frome  
theyr ankers, and put syluer in the place therof. The Phen-  
ices by this gaynes beinge made very ryche, dyd assigne many  
colonies both in Sicilie and the Ilandes there about, and  
also in Libya, Sardinia, and Iberia. But after many yeares  
when the Iberians (that is the Spaniardes) knewe the price  
of syluer, and applyed them selues to the seekynge of metals  
and founde great plentie of syluer, they obteyned greate ry-  
ches therby forasmuch as in maner al that earth of the moun-  
taynes is so replenyshed with syluer that it is a marueylous  
thyng to consyder the nature of the region and the continual  
laboure of the woodzkemen in those mynes. Lykewyle when  
afterwarde the Romans subdued the Iberians, the Italians  
which for the desyre of gaynes searched those metals, gotte  
great rycheesse by the same. For they deputed to that labour  
a multitude of boboght seruantes, whiche searchynge the  
haynes of metals in dyuers places, and perceyng the earth dy-  
uers wayes for the space of many furlonges, brought furthe  
great plentie of golde and syluer. But the rycheesse of these  
mynes was fyrst founde at such tyme as the Carthaginenses  
(the enemies of the Roman Empire) had the Iberians in sub-  
jection: which was the cause that they poure afterwarde in-  
created

Ryche syluer  
mynes in  
Spayne.

The Romans  
enriched by the  
syluer of  
Spayne.

The Cartha-  
ginenses enri-  
ched by the syl-  
uer of Spaine.

## The peface to the reader.

The commodi-  
ties of Spain

The fyne of  
the fteepfe.

Englande im-  
pouerifhed,  
Spainne enrich-  
ed.

created. For, with monye hyringe the beft and moſte experte ſouldiers, they kepte greuous warres ageynſt theiꝝ enemies. And not vſynge the ayde eyther of theiꝝ owne ſouldiers oꝝ theiꝝ aſſociates, they were a terrout to the Romanes, Sicilians, and Libyans, whom they browgħt into great daunges our by reaſon they paſſed them al in abundaunce of golde and ſyluer. With better fortune theſe, and greater hope of gayne are ryche metals fought in Spayne, the goodnelle of whoſe tople yeldeth cloddes of earth conteynyng much golde and ſyluer. And theſe be the very wordes of Diodorius Siculus, which the later wyrtiers doo alſo confirme. For Julius Solinus in his Polyhiſtor, comparerh Spayne to the beſt countreys in plentie of grayne, byctayles, oyle, ſyluer, golde, and Iron. Likewyſe Strabo, Scatius, and Claudius, do no leſſe commend it. It were to longe here to ſpeake of the greate plentie of fine woollis lytle inferiour vnto others: alſo abundaunce of ſugar, vines, pome granates, limondes, and oranges in ſuch plentie that they ſuffice not only Spayne, but alſo in maner all Europe: whereas the apples and crabbes of Englande are ſcarſely able to ſerue it ſelfe. And althowgh here ſumme wyll obiecte, that they lacke corne, woodde, and certeyne other thynges, yet are theiꝝ commodities ſo greate otherwyſe, that al ſuch thynges are brought them owt of oꝝ ther countreys for theiꝝ wares: and that in ſuch plentie, that they are there better chepe then euer they were in Englande ſence the ſigne of the ſteepfe the pooze mans Jinne was pulled downe in all places. Summe for lacke of other matter, fynde greate faute that in traunſyllynge in Spayne, men ſhalbe ſerued with halfe a henne, and go to the cookes for theiꝝ meate and to the tauerne for theiꝝ drynke. And what then I praye you? What inconuenience enſewerh hereof? Is it not better ſo to doo then to pay thyrſe for one thinge as is the maner to doo in ſumme of oðre Jnnes and in tauerneſ where all that eat roſte meate are beaten with the ſpate, as wher they that of late in Barthelmeſe fayre payde fortie pence for a pygge, wher the good man of the houſe was not a ſhamed to make his vaunte that he had made foure ſhyllyngeſ of a pygge, and had in one day taken foure pounde for pyggeſ. But if I ſhuld here particularly and at large declare howe Englande is in ſeue yeares decayed and impouerifhed, and howe on the contray

## The preface to the reader.

contrary parte Spayne is inryched, I shulde perhappes dis-  
 please moze in descripyng the mysrie of the one, then please  
 other in expresseynge the flooythyng state of the other, which  
 by all reason is lyke dayly to increate, aswell for the great ry-  
 chesse that are yearely broughthe thither from the Indies, as  
 also for the ryche syluer mynes that are founde of late in  
 Spayne in the countrey of Asturia as I was credably infor-  
 med by the woorthy and lerned gentelman Augustinus de Ce-  
 rarta, Contrador (that is) the auditour of the kynges myntes  
 who had longe before byn suruepoure of the golde mynes of  
 Peru, and broughthe from thence and from Rio de Plata, xlii.  
 thousand pounce weyghe of syluer which was coyned to the  
 kinges vse in the towre of London where neuer so much hath  
 byn scene at once as suche as haue byn olde officers in the  
 mynte doo affirme. What shulde I heare speake of the golde  
 to which thempetours maiesie receaueth frome all the Indies,  
 wheras onely in the two meltyng shoppes of the gold mines  
 of the Ilande of Hispaniola, is molten yearely three hun-  
 dret thousande pounce weyghe of. viii. vnces to the pounce,  
 wherof the fyfte parte is deuote vnto hym, whiche amounteth  
 to three scoze thousande weyghe yearely. yet doo I not here  
 speake of the golde mines of the other Ilandes and the firme  
 lande reachyng. viii. thousande myles from the north to the  
 south: Neether of the ryche Ilandes of the south sea cauled  
 Mare del Sur, where the kyng of one lytle Ilande named  
 Tararequi, Margaritea, or de las Perlas, lying in the goulfe  
 of Saynt Michael, payeth yearely for his tribute a hundredth  
 pounce weighe of perles; Neether yet of the fyfte parte of or  
 ther thynges, as precious stones, braille, gossampine cotton,  
 spices, and dyuers other thynges, wheras also the ryche I-  
 landes cauled the Maluchas perreyne to the inheritance of  
 Castile, althowgh the kyng of Portugale enioy them for cer-  
 teyne yeares by composition. But the Indies haue rebelled  
 (say they) and there commeth no more golde from thence. But  
 what if summe of them haue rebelled? dooth it therby folowe  
 that there commeth no more gold from the other that lyue vn-  
 der obedience? But if thou wylte say that they haue al rebels  
 led at once, thou must proue that thou sayest eyther by hypos-  
 rre or wytnesse of such as knowe the truth herof, as I (hauing  
 made diligent searche for the same) am able to proue the con-  
 trarie,

Syluer mines  
 founde of late  
 in Spayne.

Syluer  
 broughthe frome  
 Peru into  
 Englande.

Thepetours  
 reuenues from  
 the Indies.

The Ilandes  
 of the South  
 sea.

The Ilandes  
 of Maluca.

## The preface to the reader.

trarie; and that suche talke is onely imagined by busie head:  
des. Ageyne: what if they haue rebelled in summe prouin:  
ces? dooth it folowe that they maye not ageyne be brought  
vnder subiection as were oftentimes the prouinces of the Ro:  
manes and as were in othere dayes dyuers countreys of Eng:  
lande whiche haue byn soze afflicted with that plague. But  
whether the landes of the rpuers and the mountaynes of the  
Indies bee so emptied with golde that no moze can be founde  
there, I thinke it here superfluous to answere to this objecti:  
on, forasmuch as it is hereafter confuted in the booke of me:  
tals where yow shall fynde by experience that metals growe  
and increase, and that after certeyne yeares, suche olde ca:  
ues of the mynes as haue byn dygged, are ageyne replenish:  
ed with bre: Also that the springes of suche mountaynes  
turnynge theyr course and breakynge furth in other places,  
byynge with them greate plentie of such golden sande as is  
founde in the rpuers into the which they faule. What impu:  
dencie is it therfore with woordes of reproche to caule hym  
poore whose poure is so greate, his treasure so infinite, and  
his doinges so chargeable, that I beleue that when so euer  
it please almyghtie God to caule hym frome this lyfe to the  
greate domage of all Chrystendome, it shalbe harde to fynde  
an other that shall in all poyntes bee so well able to supplye  
that roome and maynteyne thimperiall dignitie. Let al honest  
natures therfore learne to speake well of princes accordynge  
to the sentence *De Principibus nil nisi bonum*, forasmuch as they are  
the ministers of god who hath theyr hartes in his hande and  
ruleth the same as seemeth beste vnto hym. For there is no  
poure neyther good nor badde, but of god: and he that rely:  
eth or speaketh euill of the poure, resisteth and speaketh  
euill of god. Thou shalt not speake euill of the prince or ru:  
ler of thy people saith saint Paule.

The nauiga:  
tions of the  
Spanyarden

But wheras nowe by the poute of Neptunus (I wote nere  
with what wynde) I haue byn dysuene thus farre from my na:  
uigations, I haue thought good to turne my sayles and to  
folowe the ordinarie course which I begonne, and by the ex:  
ample of this worthy capitayne kynge Iferdinando, encour:  
rage al other to thez poure to attempte the lyke byages: As  
touchynge the which in fewe woordes to declare my oppyne:  
on, if any man shalbe aske me what I thinke these thinges  
wyl

## The preface to the reader.

Wyll growe to in tyme, I wyll answere as dooth the autowre of this booke, that when I consyder howe farre oore posses-  
 sorie shall see the Christian religion enlarged, I am not able  
 with tounge or penne to expresse what I conceaue hereof in  
 my mynde. yet one thyng I see whiche enforcerth me to la-  
 ment, that the harvest is so great and the woorkemen so fewe.  
 The Spanyardes haue shewed a good exemple to all Christ-  
 an nations to folowe. But as god is great and woonderfull  
 in all his woorkes, so besyde the portion of lande perceyving  
 to the Spanyardes (beinge eyght tymes bygger then Italye  
 as yowre maye reade in the laste booke of the seconde Decade)  
 and beside that which pertaineth to the Portugales, there yet  
 remayneth an other portion of that mayne lande reachyng  
 towarde the northeast, thought to be as large as the other,  
 and not yet knowne but only by the sea coastes, neyther inha-  
 bited by any Christian men: whereas neuerthelesse (as wy-  
 te: h Gemma Shyritius) in this lande there are many fayre and  
 frutefull regions, hygh mountaynes, and fayre ryuers, with  
 abundaunce of golde and dyuers kyndes of beastes. Also  
 cities and towres so wel buylded and people of such ciuillite,  
 that this parte of the worlde seemeth lytle inferiour to oore  
 Europe, if thynhabitauntes had receaued oore religion. They  
 are wyttie people and refuse not barterynge with straungers.  
 These regions are cauled Terra Florida and Regio Baccalea-  
 rum or Bacchallaios of the which yow may reade sumwhat in  
 this booke in the bypage of the woorthy owlde man yet lyuing  
 Sebastian Cabote, in the. vi. booke of the thyrde Decade.  
 But Cabote touched only in the north corner and most barba-  
 rous parte hereof, from whence he was repulled with Ise in  
 the moneth of July. Neuerthelesse, the west and south partes  
 of these regions haue sence byn better searched by other, and  
 founde to bee as we haue sayde before. The chiefe cite in the  
 south west partes of these regions, is cauled Temirtetan, or  
 Mexico in maner vnder the circle cauled Tropicu. Canceri, and  
 strongly defended by the nature of the place. For it standeth  
 in a very great lake haupyng abowt it innumerable byddges,  
 and buyldynges to be compared to the woorkes of Dedalus.  
 Thynhabitauntes also can wyte and reade. Summe wyrters  
 connecte this lande to the firme lande of Asia: But the truth  
 hereof is not yet knowen. And althoughe the Spanyardes

*This is 19. 120.  
 myles in leng  
 the and 126.  
 in breadthe.*

*The lande  
 cauled Terra  
 florida, & regio  
 baccalearum.*

*Looke the last  
 booke, thirde  
 decade.*

*This region  
 is now cauled  
 Noua Hispania. Some  
 thinke that  
 this cite is  
 Quinsai of  
 marcus Pau-  
 lus.*

*Looke the last  
 booke of the  
 3. decade, and  
 the beginninge  
 of the booke  
 of the landes  
 lately found.*

## The preface to the reader.

haue certeyne colonies in that part of this lande that is now  
cauled *Noua Hispania*, yet are the people for the moste parte  
~~Idolatours~~. How much therfore is it to be lamented, and  
howe greatly dooth it sounde to the reproche of all *Christiens*  
dome, and especially to such as dwell nereſt to theſe landes  
(as we doo) beinge muche nearer vnto the ſame then are the  
~~Spaniards~~ (as within .xxv. dayes ſaylinge and leſſe) howe  
much the I ſaye ſhall this ſounde vnto owre reproche and inexc  
cuſable ſlothfulneſſe and negligence bothe before god and the  
worlde, that ſo large dominions of ſuch tractable people and  
pure gentiles, not beinge hitherto corrupted with any other  
faſe religion (and therfore the eaſier to bee allured to em  
brace others) are now knowne vnto vs, and that we haue  
no reſpecte neyther for goddes cauſe nor for owre owne com  
moditie to attempte ſumme vyages into theſe coaſtes, to doo  
for owre partes as the ~~Spaniards~~ haue doone for theys, and  
not euer lyke ſheepe to haunte one trade, and to doo nothyng  
woorthy memorie amonge men or thanks before god, who  
maye herein woorthely accuſe vs for the ſlackeneſſe of owre  
dewtie towarde hym. Saynt Paule the doctoure of the gen  
tiles (to whoſe Apoſtelliſhippe alſo theſe newe gentiles doe  
perteyne) was of ſuch zeale toward the Jewes whom god had  
reiected, that he wiſhed hym ſelfe to bee accuſed of god for  
theyr ſakes. He went from *Damaſcus* to *Arabie*, preached  
the goſpell in *Grecia*, came priſoner to *Rome*, was ſcourged  
and ſtoned, and ſuffered thyſe thynges, what then thinke  
you he wolde do if he were now aliue? Is it to be thought that  
he wolde not aduventure .xxv. dayes ſaylinge to come to ſuch  
a myrie of ſoules in ſuch redineſſe to bee eaſely obreynt? I  
beleue verely that neyther death, nor the deuyll, nor *Leuita  
than*, nor the worlde, ſhoulde let hym but that he wolde geue  
thouſet agaynſt them all in hope of victorie by hym by whom  
he ſayth he can doo all thynges. He was not negligent in his  
office nor ignozant of his rewardes, but truſted to the promiſe  
of him that ſayde by the mouth of the prophet *Iſai*: Of them  
that ſhalbe ſaued, I wyl ſende ſum to the gentyles in the ſea,  
into *Aphyrike* and *Libia*, *Italie*, and *Grecia*, and into the I  
landes a farre of, to theſe that haue not harde of me, and haue  
not ſene my glozie. The like zeale that Paule had, and pro  
ceedynge of the ſame ſpirite, hath euer ſence *Chryſtes* tyme,  
moued

The godlye  
zeale of S.  
Paule.

*Iſai. 66.*

## The preface to the reader.

moved not only the Apostles, but also many other famous and  
 godly men (as superuisors of his testament) to sende oboe  
 preachers into dyuers partes of the worlde to shewe furth the  
 gladde tydyng of the gospell. By this zeale dyd Gregor the  
 bysshoppe of Rome and fyrste of that name, when he sawe  
 Englyshe mens chyldezen in Rome and asked what nation  
 they were, when answere was made hym in the latten tounge  
 that they were Angli, (that is, Englyshe men) he sayd (allu-  
 dyng to the similitude of the worde) that they myght wel be  
 cauled Angeli, that is, Angels: Meanyng therby that lyke as  
 god had done his part in geuyng them bodies of natural beu-  
 tie and comelynesse, so it apperteyned to his office beinge the  
 cheefe pastoure of goddes flocke, to prouyde that theyr soules  
 might be made woorthy to inhabite such bodies and the hole  
 nation consecrated vnto god by baptisme. For he sayde fur-  
 thermore: It is meete that vnto these also, the gospell of life  
 bee preached: And hereuppon immediatly sent preachers into  
 Englande wherby the hole nation was in shorte tyme conuer-  
 ted to Chrystes faith, although sum had receaued the gospell  
 longe befoze euen from Chrystes tyme by the preachyng of Jo-  
 seph of Arimathia who asked the body of Chryste of Pilore,  
 and buryed it reuerently. I wolde to god that there were now  
 many mo such Gregories in the worlde: And that there might  
 lyke zeale and gentelnesse bee founde in vs Englyshe men to-  
 warde other nations, as we haue founde in other towarde  
 vs. Oure predicaours were not utterlye vnmyndefull of  
 these benefices, but applyed them selues lykewise to spreade  
 the gospell in other nations. For Gadianus in his booke  
*De tribus terre partibus*, wyrteth, that more then seuen hundrethe  
 yeres after the death of Chryste, one Vnefride an Englyshe  
 man and bysshoppe of Mogunce (nowe cauled Mense) was  
 the fyrste that taught the fayth of Chryste amonge the Ber-  
 maynes, at such tyme as the Frankes and Almaynes had pas-  
 sed ouer the ryuers of Rhene and Danubius, and by puttyng  
 the garrisons of the Romans to flight, had possessed a great  
 parte of theyr moste notable prouinces. For albeit that these  
 rude and barbarous nations then accustomed onely to warre  
 and robberie did hardly admitte that holysome doctrine at the  
 beginning. yet by the pollicie and wisdom of the Frankes,  
 it came so to passe that in maner throughe out all Germanie,

Gregor the  
first.

The office of  
bysshoppes.

England con-  
verted to the  
faith of christ.

This vnefride  
was after  
warde named  
Boniface.

## The peface to the reader.

Whether any  
may bee com-  
pelled to the  
fa, the.

The tyme of  
miracles.

Miracles of  
late dayes.

Howe Ifraell  
poffeffed the  
lande of  
promiffe.

Efdra. 2.  
52. 4.

greate increafe of the Chriftian religion folowed there moſte ample victories, as the lyke ſucceſſe is alſo ſeene in theſe barbarous nations ſubdued by the Spanyardes. Whereby it is apparent, that although ſum holde opinion that none oughte to bee compelled to the faythe, yet we ſee by experience that without diſputynge of opinions (leſſe the patientes ſhulde dye befoze the philitians agree of the remedye) theſe enterpriſes haue taken good effect to the great glory of god who can leth men vnto hym by dyuers meanes and at dyuers ages of the declininge worlde, otherwyſe nowe then in the tyme of Chryſte and his Apoſtles when the poure of miracles was giuen vnto men to confirme the newe fayth which had yet prevailed no where in the worlde. Albeit, I beleeue verely, that if we wolde take the matter in hande accordyngly, god wolde not forget to ayde vs with miracles if it ſhulde ſo be requiſite as yowre may reade in this booke howe he wrought miracles by the fayth of a ſimple mariner even in thinfancie of faythe. And ſurelye, lyke as there is no cauſe why we ſhulde anye thyng doubte of goddes goodneſſe in this behalfe if the fault be not in owre ſelues. Euen ſo, if we wolde fyrſte ſette owre handes to the plowe, we ought to hope that he wolde giue increaſe and woorkes with vs as he hath doone with other, by whoſe proſperous ſucceſſe we may plainly ſee that it was his wyll that ſuche thynges ſhulde go forwarde. For euen Ifraell to whom promiſſe was made by ſignes and miracles that they ſhulde poſſeſſe the lande to thinheritaunce wherof, the ſea opened it ſelfe to giue them free paſſage, yet were they commaunded by the poure of the ſwoorde to make way, with greate loſſe and ſlaughtre of men and by force of armes to obteyne the lande promyſed to theyr fathers, whiche neuertheleſſe fewe of them poſſeſſed that firſt fought for the ſame, but leſte theyr carkeſes in the wilderneſſe. Is it not alſo writen of the Iudwes which repayed the walles of the citie of Hieruſalem after theyr captiuitie in Babilon, that Nehemias theyr capitaine ſet the people in order with ſwoordes, ſpeares, and bowes to defende the woorkemen? And that alſo euen the princes of Iuda wrought vppon the walles and caried burdens? lykewyſe that they wrought with one hande and held theyr ſwoordes in the other? And if it were lawfull for Ifraell accordynge to the ſaythe, to be all meanes and policies

## The peface to the reader.

to buylde by the walles of earthly Hierufalem, howe muche  
more then ought the fpirituall Ifraelites to vse all poffible The buyldeing  
meanes to buylde by the walles and temples of fpirituall Bre of fpirituall  
rufalem, whose fundacion is Chriſte, wyllynge all the hart Hierufalem  
ons of the worlde to bee buylded vpon the ſame. It is the  
propertie of a wyſe buylder to vse ſuch rooles as the woorkes  
requireth. And not at all tymes or in all woorkes to vse one  
roole. For that that ſerueth in ſofte tymber, wyl not ſerue  
in knotie pieces, nor yet for ſtones. Therfore phiſician bleſſe  
vehement remedies for deſperate diſeaſes: And cunninge ſur  
gians vse burnynge and currynge if the caſe ſo require, as in  
currynge of the ſpynger to ſaue the hande, or in curryng of the  
hande to ſaue the hole body. yee it hath ſumtymes ſo chaun  
ced that whereas men haue enced d hurt, there hath good pro  
ceeded therof in fine: As he that wolde haue ſaine Promes  
theus, wounded his wenne with his ſwoorde, whereby he  
was healed of that diſeaſe. So is god able to turne euyl in  
to good, and to make thynges that are not, as thynges that  
are. Euen ſo although ſumme wyl obiecte that the deſpyre of  
golde was the chiefe cauſe that moued the Spanyardes and  
Portugales to ſearch the newe founde landes, truely albeit  
we ſhulde admitte it to bee the chiefe cauſe, yet dooth it not  
folowe that it was the only cauſe, for ſomuch as nothyng let  
teth but that a man may bee a warriour or a marchaunte, and  
alſo a Chriſtian. Therefore what ſo euer othere chiefe intente  
bee, eyther to obteyne worldely fame or rycheſſe, (although  
the zeale to encrease Chriſtian religion ought chiefly to moue  
vs) I wolde to god we wolde fyrſt attempte the matter: And  
then I doubte not but that it wolde ſo comye to paſſe with  
vs as it dyd with them who of longe time after the beginning  
of the worlde befoze meyne were accuſtomed to care leſſe,  
thought it ſufficient ſo to vse them felues amonge beaſtes  
that they were not hurt of them: but ſozely after, bleſed them  
for theyr commoditie: Then begonne to weare theyr ſkinnes:  
And in fine, ſell to eatynge of theyr fleſhe, and to vse certeine  
partes of the for remedies ageynſt diſeaſes. Euen ſo may theſe  
barbarians by the only conuerſation with the Chriſtians, (al  
though they were enforced thereto) be brought to ſuch famili  
aritie with ciuilitie and vertue, that not onely we maye take  
greate commoditie thereby, but they may alſo hereby im  
bibe

## The peface to the reader.

**The conuerſi-  
on of the gen-  
tiles.**

**The chriſtian  
fayth.**

**Iſai. 42.**

**Requſita Chriſti-  
ane diſciplinæ.**

ſubſide trewe religion as a thing accidental although neyther they nor we ſhulde ſeek the ſame. For lyke as they that goe much in the ſonne, are coloured therewith although they goe not for that purpoſe, So may the conuerſation of the Chriſtians with the gentyles induce theym to othere religion, where there is no greater cauſe of contrarie to reſpice as is in the Jewes and Turkes who are already drowned in theyr confimed erreure. But theſe ſimple gentiles lyuing only after the lawe of nature, may well bee lykened to a ſmoother and bare table unpainted, or a white paper unwritten, vpon the which you may at the fyrſt paynte or wyte what you liſte, as you can not vpon tables already paynted, unleſſe you caſt or blot out the fyrſt formes. They may alſo theſe yer bee allured to the Chriſtian fayth, for that it is more agreeable to the lawe of nature then eyther the ceremonies lawe of Moyses, or potentous fables of Mahometes Alcharron. If we were therfore as deſirous to enlarge the fayth of Chryſte as to ſeek worldly gooddes, why do we deferre to aduenture that wherein we may doo bothe. We muſt not nowe looke for a newe Haule or doctoure of the gentiles to bee conuerred by heauenly reuelations: Or for a newe Moyses to leade men through the ſea: Or for an Angel to cary men in the ayre from one place to another as Habacuc the prophete was caryed by the heare of his heade from Judea to Babilon: Or as Phylippe thappozile was caryed by the ſpिरित from Baza to Azotus: but muſt (as ſayth the prophete Iſaias) euery man exhorde his neyghboure, and bid his brother be of good chere: That the maſon and carpenter may buylde togyther, and ſay to the glewe or cemente, it is good and faſte byndynge. What negligence and ſlackeneſſe hath hitherto byn in Chriſtian men in this kynde of buyldynge of goddes lyuely temple, the great clerke Erasmus hath declared in his booke intituled Eccleſiaſtes, whole woordes for the woorthynneſſe of the auctoure, I haue here thought good to rehearſe as they are wyrtren by hym in the latten tounge in the fyrſt booke of the ſayde woork. He wyrteth therfore as foloweth.

Audimus quotidianas queremonias deplorantiũ col-  
lapſa Chriſtianã religionẽ, eamq; ditionẽ quã quon-  
dam complexa eſt vniuerſum terrarum orbem, in

The preface to the reader.

has angustias esse contractam. Hoc igitur quibus  
ex animodolet, eos decet ardentibus assiduisq; votis  
flagitare a Christo vt operarios dignetur mittere in  
messiem suam, aut (vt melius dicam) seminatores mit  
tere in segetem suam. Deum immortalem, quantum  
in orbe patet agrorum in quibus aut non dum iactū  
est semen Euangelicum, aut ita iactum est, vt plus  
sit zizaniarum quam tritici. Orbis minima pars est  
Europa: Omnium florentissima pars est Græcia et  
Asia minor in quam magno successu primum a Iu  
dæa demigravit Euangelium. At hæc fere tota, non  
ne tenetur a Mahumetanis et ijs qui Christi nomen  
habent inuisum? Iam in Asia maiore quæ latissime  
patet, quid obsecro nostrum est? quum ipsa Palesti  
na vnde primo effluxit lux Euangelica, seruiat Allo  
phylis? In Aphrica vero quid nostrum est? Nec du  
bitandum est quin in tanta vastitate regionum sint  
populi rudes et simplices qui facile possent ad Chris  
tum alici, si mitterentur qui facerent bonam semina  
tem. Quid quod quotidie regiones hæcenus in  
cognitæ reperiuntur, ferunturq; superesse quo nul  
lus adhuc nostratium peruenit. Omitto nunc infi  
nitam Iudæorum vim nobis admixtam: omitto plu  
rimos qui titulo Christi tegunt Ethnicos: omitto  
tantas schismaticorum et hæreticorum phalanges.  
Quantus in his esset prouentus Christo, si quauis ac  
fideles

## The preface to the reader.

fideles mitteretur operarij qui iaciant semen bonum, qui reuellant zizaniam, qui plantent plantulas bonas, malas exterpent, qui extruant domum Dei, demoliantur structuras non innitentes petrae Christo, denique qui metant maturam segetem, sed Christo metant non sibi, et animas Domino colligant, non opes sibi. Nuper Aethiopiae rex quem vulgus appellat Presteian, per oratorem suum submisit se sedi Romanae, non nihil expostulans cum pontifice quod ea gens quum a fide Christi non sit aliena, tam diu fuerit a totius orbis pastore neglecta. Quidam viri boni, et propagandae religionis studiosi, queruntur Pilapios Scythiae septentrionalis populum mire simplicem ac rudem, a nescio quibus principibus Christianis teneri ditione, sed ita duro premi iugo humano, ut eis non imponatur suauius iugum Christi, atque ita spoliari bonis externis, ut non ditentur opibus euangelicis. Pulcherrimum, Deoque gratissimum erat dare potius quam accipere ijs quos studemus Christo lucrifacere, ac sic eos in ditionem nostram recipere ut gaudeant se subiectos esse principibus sub quorum imperio commodius degant quam ante degabant. Nouimus cicurare bestias feras et horribiles, vel ad voluptatem, vel ad vsum vulgarem: et non nouimus mansuefacere homines ut seruiant Christo. Monarchae alunt qui doceant elephantos ad saltandum

*Presteian Aethiopiae rex.*

*Ellapio.*

The preface to the reader.

dum, qui doment leones ad lufum, qui doment lynces  
et leopardos ad venatum : et monarcha ecclesiæ non  
inuenit quo homines alliciat ad amabile Christi ser-  
uiciũ : Scio vix vllam reperiri beluam domitu diffi-  
ciliorem quam est Iudæus obstinatus, et obduratus  
hæreticus : quanquam nullum est animal tam immi-  
te quod non cicuretur beneficentia et suauitate. E re-  
pertis regionibus cuehitur aurum et gemmæ : Sed  
triumpho dignius erat illuc inuehere Christianam  
sapientiam auro preciosiorem, ac margaritum euan-  
gelicum quod omnibus diuenditis benæ compara-  
tur. Dominus iubet suis rogare dominum melsis  
vt extrudat operarios quod melsis esset ampla, ope-  
rarij pauci. Non minus opus est nunc rogare deũ  
vt in tam late patentes agros eijciat operarios, Sed  
excusant omnes, alius aliud. Atqui Christiana di-  
tio tot habet myriadas Franciscanorum in quibus  
probabile est quamplurimos esse qui vere flagrant  
igni seraphico : nec pauciores sunt myriades Domi-  
nicanorum, et in his consentaneum est permultos  
esse Cherubici spiritus. Ex his cohortibus eligantur  
virĩ, mundo vere mortui, Christo viui, qui sincere a-  
pud barbaras gentes doceant verbum Dei. Excusa-  
tur linguæ imperitiã. Atqui principes ob humanas  
legationes inueniunt qui varias linguas perdiscant :  
Et Themistocles Athenienses vno anno sic didicit  
d.i. sermo-

Franciscani Ser-  
aphici.

Dominicani Che-  
rubici.

Linguæ imperitiã

Miracula.

## The preface to the reader.

sermonem Asiaticum vt absq; interprete cum rege lo-  
qui posset: An idem non studebimus in tam sublimi  
negocio? Inter barbaras et ignotas nationes Apосто-  
li inuenerunt victum et amictum: et Deus pollicitus  
est nihil defuturum quarentibus regnum Dei. Nec  
miracula quidem defutura sunt si res postulet, modo  
ad sit sincera fides cum seraphica charitate. &c.

**Damianus  
a Goes**

Furthermoze Damianus a Goes, wyrteth in his booke *de de-  
ploratione Lappiana gentis*, that he was the fyrst that moued Eras-  
mus to speake sumwhat hereof: And that he (Erasmus) was determined to wyte a iust volume of this matter  
yf he had not byn pccuented by death. Albeit (sayth Damas-  
nus) in his booke entituled *Ecclesiastes*, he dyd not keepe si-  
lence of so wicked an vngodlynesse, whiche surely is suche,  
that it may in maner make all Chyistian men (and especiall ye  
such vnto whom god hath gyuen poure and knowlege) giltye  
of so hepyghnous a crime, that he may take vengeance of them  
in the day of iudgement befoze the iuste iudge Chyyst. Nowe  
therfoze (sayth he) let the Chyistian Monarches take heede  
what accounte they shall make befoze the tribunal of Chyrist  
at the laste day, when neyther fauoure, nor pardon, or flatter-  
ie can take place to bee any excuse for the losse of so manye  
soules. And these be the very woordes of the woorthypful and  
lerned man Damianus a Goes, wyrtten to the byshoppe of  
Rome I saule the chyde of that name, whom he further char-  
gerh to looke diligently hereunto, as a thyng mooste chiefly  
perteynyng to the office of Chyistian prelates. Wee thynke  
herely that the sheepe of Europe shulde by this tyme be so well  
fedde, that they shulde by good reason be so stronge and migh-  
ty in Chyristes religion (excepte they be infected with the dy-  
sease which the phisicians caule *Cachexia*, beinge an euyl dis-  
position of the body wherby the more they are fed the worse  
they lyke) that many sheppardes myght well bee spared to bee  
sent to other shepe which ought to be of the same fouldre. For  
this purpose the doctoure of diuinitie when he comanenseth,  
hath his scapular cast ouer his headde in token that he hath  
for saken

**To the chylde  
an pynce.**

**The sheepe of  
Europe.**

**The doctoure  
of diuinitie**

## The preface to the reader.

forſaken the worlde for Chriſtes ſake : And his bootes on his legges in token that he ſhall euer bee in a readineſſe to go forwarde in preachynge the goſpell, as I doubt not there bee many in Englande wolde gladly doo euen amonge theſe new gentyles if they were thereto mainteyned by the ayde of the ſecular poure as in this caſe it ſhalbe requiſite for the furniture of necessities herunto apperteynyng, I muſt nowe therfore appele vnto you, you riche men and rulers of the worlde, to whom god hath giuen gooddes as thynges neyther good nor badde of them ſelues, but onely as they are vſed wel or euil. If you vſe them well, they are the gſtes of god wherewith you may doo many thynges acceptable both to god and men. And if you vſe them otherwyſe, you poſſeſſe not them, but they poſſeſſe you, and they canker and ruſte (as ſayth the Apoſtle) ſhalbe a teſtimonie againſt you in the day of the great audit. Thinke not therfore that this thyng perſeuereth not vnto you, if you perſeue vnto Chriſte and looke to haue any parte with hym. Conſyder with you ſelues if it were onely to get worldely riches, howe redye and greedye you wolde bee to venture a greate deale to get a thynde part, with out caſynge of any perell by lande or by ſea, as the myetic poet Horace hath in ſewer wordes deſcrybed the marchauntes deſyre and aduentures to obteyne rychelle.

An admonitiō  
to riche men.

The marchaunt

Impiger extremos currit mercator ad Indos,  
Per mare pauperiem fugiens, per saxa, per ignes.

The which verſes are thus much to ſay in effecte,  
The marchaunt in hope greate rychelle to fynde,  
By ſyre and by water paſſeth to Inde,  
By the burnt line or Equinoctiall,  
To flye from poverrie and haſarde all.

As the poet hath in theſe verſes, by the marchaunt declared the deſyre that couetous men haue to obteyne ſlippery riches, the lyke affection to obteyne worldly fame and honour, maye we ſee in valiant and noble capitaynes in the warres where they contend to put them ſelues forward to the moſte dangerous aduenture as to haue the forward of the battayle : a token ſurely of much nobilitie and manly courage. But oh immortal god? Is it not to bee lamented that men can be ſo vaſt, ſlowe, and in maner deſperate in theyr owne private

The deſyre of  
worldly ſame.

D.ii,

matters

## The preface to the reader.

Men are sloth  
full in goddes  
cause.

matters, perceyving onely to theyr bodies, and yet so coulde,  
negligent, and fearefull in goddes cause and thynges tou-  
chyng the healeth of theyr soules? If there were neyther de-  
uyl, nor lawe to accuse men before god in this case, shall not  
theyr owne consciences bee a lawe of condemnation ageynste  
theym in that they haue not shewed that loue to mankynde,  
which the very lawe of nature moueth brute beastes to shewe  
one to an other in theyr generations? But what hope is there  
(excepte god wolde in maner by myracle conuerthe the hartes  
of such men) what hope is there I say, that they wyl depart  
with any of theyr gooddes, muche lesse aduunture theyr bo-  
dies, to the furtheraunce of Christes religion in these regions.  
beinge so farre from them, wheras many shewe lytle loue, cha-  
ritie, or liberalitie (if not rather crueltie, tyrannie, and op-  
pression) to theyr poore neighbours and brootherne dwelling  
euen at home at theyr owne elbowes. But as this couctous-  
nesse is to bee repproued, so is the liberalitie of such to be com-  
mended as haue byn at greate coaste and charges in settyng  
forwarde suche viages: wherein not onely the marchauntes  
of London, but also diuers noble men and gentelmen as well  
of the counsaile as other, which bothe with theyr money and  
furtheraunce otherwyle haue furnished and sent furth cer-  
teyne shippes for the discouerynge of such landes and regions  
as were heretofore vnknowen, haue herein deserued immor-  
tall fame, for as much as in such attemptes and daungerous  
viages, they haue shewed no smaule liberalitie vpon vncer-  
teyne hope of gayne: wherein they haue deserued so much the  
greater prayse as theyr intent seemed to bee rather to further  
honest enterpryses then for respecte of vantage. And here cer-  
teynely in the mention of these viages I myght seeme vngraz-  
tefull if I shulde omitte to giue betwe commendations to the  
two chiefe capitaynes of the same as the woorthy knyght syr  
Hugh Wylloby and the excellent pilotte Rycharde Chaunceler:  
for who haue therein aduentured theyr lyues for the commo-  
dite of theyr countrey: Men doublelesse woorthye for theyr  
noble attemptes to bee made knights of the Ocean or other  
wyle preferred if euer god sende them home ageyne although  
they fayle of theyr purpose. For as suche haue obteyned abso-  
lute glozy that haue brought great thynges to passe, so haue  
they deserued immortall fame which haue only attempted the

viages from  
Englande.

Syr Hugh  
Wylloby and  
Rycharde  
Chaunceler.

Glozy and  
fame.

same

## The preface to the reader.

same: forasmuch as fortune (who sumtymes fauoureth the  
 unworthiest) is not in the poure of man. Xerxes obteyned glo  
 rie in makynge a brydge ouer the sea Hellespontus ioynynge  
 Europe to Asia, and Darius ouer Bosphorus when he passed  
 with his armie towarde the Scythians. No lesse fame and  
 commendation (although not lyke glozy) deserued Demetrius,  
 Cesar, Calligula, and Seleucus Nicanor, whiche attempted  
 to cutte in sundre certeyne places cauled Isthmi, (beinge na  
 rowe porcions of lande so diuidynge twoo seas, that there is  
 no passage from the one to the other) and yet neuer finished  
 that they tooke in hande, beinge hyndered epyther by deathe,  
 warres, or other chaunces. The auncient Romans & Greekes  
 gaue such gloze vnto them that had epyther well deserued of  
 the common welthe, or otherwyse attempted such great enter  
 pryses as might bee profitable for mankynde, that after theyz  
 death they caused ymages of golde, syluer, brasse, Iuery, and  
 marble to bee made to theyz lyknesse, and the same to be pla  
 ced in theyz solemne haules, palaices, or temples, with cer  
 teyne verses made to the commendation of them whom the y  
 mages represented. And this no lesse to prouoke and enco  
 rage other forwarde natures to themulation of their vertues,  
 then also to geue them the due honoure of theyz iust desertes.  
 And surely if euer sence the begynnynge of the worlde any en  
 terpryse haue deserued greate prayse as a thyng atchpyed by  
 men of herodicall vertue, doubtelese there was neuer any more  
 woorthy commendation and admiration then is that whiche  
 othere nation haue attempted by the north seas to discover the  
 mightie and riche empire of Cathay, by which byage not on  
 ly golde, syluer, precious stones, and spices, may be brought  
 hether by a safer and shorter way, but also much greater mat  
 ters may hereof enlwe in tyme if it shall please God to gyue  
 vnto Christian men such passage into those regions, whereby  
 such familiaritie may further growe betwene the Christiana prin  
 ces of Europe and the greare emperoure of Cathay, that (as  
 wyrteth Haytho *De societate Christianorum et Tartarorum*) there can  
 nothyng be imagined more effectiuall for the confusion of the  
 Turke if the great Cham of Cathay and the Sophie of Per  
 sia on the one syde, and the Christian Princes on the other  
 syde, shulde with one content inuade his dominions, as dyd  
 Tamburlanes The emperoure of the Tartars who abowte the  
 ycare

The rewarde  
 of noble enter  
 pryses.

The byage to  
 Cathay by the  
 north seas.

So lette be  
 twene the Te  
 tars and the  
 Christians.  
 The Turke.  
 The Sophie.  
 Tamburlanes.  
 Balaictes.

## The epistle of Peter Martyr

yeare of Christe. M. CCC. lxxxviii. toke prisoner Basiletes  
Detomanus Thempereoure of the Turkes and slewe. xx. thou:  
sande of his men in one battayle belyde many other great vic:  
tories, as yowe may further reade in this booke in the hystor:  
ie of Paulus Jovius. And to haue sayde thus muche in ma:  
ner of a peface it may suffice.

C To the moste noble Prince and Catholike kynge,  
Charles, Peter Martyr of Angleria  
wysheth perpetuall felicitie.

The largenes  
of the Ocean  
vniuersall to  
this day.



He diuine prouidence, frome the tyme that he  
firste created the worlde, hath reserved vnto  
this day the knowlege of the great and large  
Ocean sea: In the which tyme he hath opened  
the same, chiefly vnto yowe (moste mightie  
Prince) by the good fortune and happie suc:  
cesse of yowr grandfather by yowr mothers syde. The same  
prouidence (I knowe not by what desenie) hath brought me  
owt of my natie countrey of Milane, and owt of the cite of  
Rome (where I continued almost. x. yeares) into Spaine, that  
I myght particularlye collecte, these marueylous and newe  
thynges, which shoulde otherwyle perhappes haue line drow:  
ned in the whirlepoole of oblivion: forasmuch as the Spany:  
ardes (men woorthy greate commendation) had onely care to  
the generall inuentions of these thynges. Norwithstandinge,  
I doo not chalenge vnto me only, the thankes of the trauaile  
bestowed herein, wheras the chiefe rewarde therof is due to  
Alcanius vicounte Cardinal, who perceaupnge that I was  
wyllyng to departe owt of the cite to be present at the warres  
of Granatum, dissuaded me from my purpose. But seing that  
I was fully resolved to departe, exhorted and required me to  
wyrite vnto hym such newes as were famous in Spayne and  
woorthy to be noted. I tooke therfore my iorney into Spaine  
chiefely for the desyre I had to see the expedition whiche was  
prepared ageynst the enemies of the fayth: forasmuche as in  
Italye, by reason of the dissention amonge the Princes, I  
coule fynde nothyng wherewith I myght feede my wyrite,  
beinge a younge man despyous of knowlege and experience  
of thynges. I was therfore presente at the warres: frome  
whence I wyrite to Cardinal Alcanius, and by sundry epistols  
certified

Cardinal Al:  
canius.

The warres  
of Granatum  
ageynst the  
Moors.

## The epistle of Peter Martyr.

certified hym of such thynges as I thought mosse moozt hye  
to be put in memorie. But when I perceaued that his fortune  
was turned from a naturall moother to a steppedame, I cea-  
sed from wytyng. Yet after I sawe, that by thowert hys  
of the enemies of owre saythe, Spayne was purged of the  
Moores as of an euill weede plucked by by the rootes, I leaste  
I shulde bestowe my slipperye yeares in vnprofitable Idlenesse  
I was mynded to returne to Italie. But the singuler benig-  
nitie of bothe the Catholyke kynge and queene nowe depar-  
ted, and theyr large promises towarde me vppon my returne  
frome my legacie of Babilon, deteyned me frome my purpose.  
Yet dooth it not repent me that I drew backe my foote: Al-  
wel for that I see in no other place of the worlde at this time  
the lyke moozt hye thynges to bee done: As also that in maner  
thowgh ovr all Italy, by reason of the discorde of the Chri-  
stian Princes, I perceaued all thynges to runne headelonge  
into ruine, the countreys to be destroyed and made fatte with  
humane bludde: The citie sacked, virgines and matrones  
with theyr gooddes and possessions caried away as captiues  
and miserable innocentes without offence to be slayne vnar-  
med within theyr owne houses. Of the which calamities, I  
dyd not onely heare the lamentable owtcryes, but dyd also  
feele the same. For euen the bludde of mine owne kynsfolkes  
and frendes, was not free from that crueltie. As I was ther  
fore musynge with my selfe of these thynges, the Cardinal of  
Arragonie, after that he had seene the two fyrste bookes of  
my Decades wyrtten to Ascanius, required me in the name  
of kynge Frederike his vnckle, to put forth the other eyght  
epistell bookes, In the meane tyme also, while I was boyde  
of all care as touchynge the matters of the Ocean, the Apo-  
stolicall messengers of the byshopppe of Rome Leo the tenth,  
(by whose holosome counsaile and autozitie we truste the cala-  
mities of Italy shalbe synysshed) rayled me as it were frome  
scape, and encouraged me to proceade as I had begunne. To  
his holynesse I wrytte two Decades copysed in short booke  
after the maner of epistels, and added them to the fyrst, which  
was printed withowt myne aduise, as shall further appere  
by the peface folowynge. But nowe I returne to you (most  
noble Prince) from whom I haue sumwhat digressed. Ther-  
fore wheras your graundfathers by powre mootheres syde  
haue

The autour  
was sent am-  
baadour to  
the Soltaue  
of Alcap in  
Egypte.

Italy disquis-  
ted with  
warres.

The sequels  
of warre.

Kynge Freder-  
ike.

Leo the tenth,  
byshopp of  
Rome.

Spayne sub-  
dued from the  
Moores.

## The epistle of Peter Martyr

The kyndom  
of Naples.

Note, from  
the beginning  
of the worlde

The temperat  
nes of the E  
quinoctial vn  
known to the  
owld wy  
ters.

Contynente of  
firme lande  
as bygge as  
the Europes

Riches are  
the instru  
mentes of con  
questes.

haue subdued all Spayne vnder your dominion except onely one corner of the same, and haue also lefte your the kynges dome of Naples with the frutefull Ilandes of our seas, it is suerly a greate thyng and woorthy to be noted in owre cronacles. But not offendynge the reuerence due to owre predecessors, what so euer frome the begynnynge of the worlde hath byn doone or wyrtten to this day, to my iudgement seesmeth but litle, if we consyder what newe landes and countreys, what newe seas, what sundry nations and coninges, what goldemynes, what treasures of perles they haue lefte vnto your hyghnesse, besyde other reuenues. The whiche, what they are and howe greate, these three Decades shall declare. Come therfore moste noble Prince elected of God, and enioy that hyghe estate of thynges not yet vnderstode to men. We offer vnto your the Equinoctial line hethereto vnknewen and burnt by the furious heate of the soonne and inhabitable after the opinion of the owld wyrtters a fewe creected: But nowe founde to bee most replenished with people, faire, frutefull, and moste fortunate, with a thousande Ilandes crowned with golde and bewtifull perles, besyde that greate portion of earth supposed to bee parte of the firme lande, exceeding in quantitie three Europes. Come therfore and embrace this newe worlde, and suffer vs no longer to consume in desyre of your presence. From hence, from hence I saye (mooste noble younge Prince) shall instrumentes be prepared for you, whereby all the worlde shalbe vnder your obeyesauce.

And thus I byd your maiestie farewell: To whose taste if I shal perceaue the fruites of this my ryllage to be delectable, I wyll hereafter doo my endeuour that youe maye receaue the same more abundauntly. From Madrid. The day before the Calendes of Decer, In the yere of Chypte. M. D.

F. J.

F. J. S.





# The fyrst decade.

I

THE FIRSTE BOOKE OF THE DECADES  
of the Ocean, written by Peter Martyr of Angleria,  
Milneses, counsiler to the kyng of Spayne and  
Prototonaric Apostolicall, To *Ascanius*  
*Sphorcia*, vicount Cardinall. &c.



HE REVERENDE AND thanckesfull  
antiquite was accustomed to esteeme those men  
as goddes, by whose industrie and magnaniz  
mitie suche Landes and Regions were disco  
uered, as were vnknownen to theyr predices  
sours. But vnto vs hauynge onely one god  
whom we honour in triplicitie of person, this

The reward  
of Vertue

resteth, that albeit we do not woozship that kind of men with  
diuine honoure, yet do we reuerence them, and woozthely mar  
uell at theyr noble actes and enterprises. Vnto kynges and  
princes we gyue due obeyssaunce, by whose gouernaunce and  
furtherraunce they haue bin ayded, to perfurme theyr attemp  
tes. We commende bothe, and for theyr iust desertes worthe  
ly extoll them. Wherfore, as concernyng the Ilandes of the  
west Ocean, lately discovered, & of the auctours of the same,  
(whiche thyngge you desyre by your letters to knowe) I will  
begynne at the fyrst auctoure therof, lesse I be iniurious to a  
ny man. Take it therfore as foloweth.

The Ilandes  
of the weste  
Ocean.

Christophorus Colonius (other wise called Columbus) A gentilman  
of Italy, borne in the citie of Genoa, perswaded ffernando and  
Elizabeth, catholike prynces, that he doubted not to fynde  
certayn Ilandes of India, nere vnto owre Ocean sea, if they  
wolde furnyshe hym with shippes and other thynges apper  
teynynge. Affyrminge that thereby not onely the Christian re  
ligion myght be enlarged, but Spayne also enryched by the  
great plentie of golde, pearles, precious stones, and spices,  
whiche might be founde there. At the lengthe three shippes  
were appoynted hym at the kinges charges: of the which one  
was a great caracke with deckes: and the other twoo were  
light marchaunte shippes without deckes, whiche the Spa  
nyardes call *Carauelas*. Thus he departed from the costes of  
Spaine about the calendes of September, in the yere of Chast  
1492. and set forward on his viage, being accompanied with  
A. C. xx. Spanyardes. The fortunate Ilandes (as manye  
thynke

Christophor  
us Colonius,

India,

The first vi  
age of Colo  
nius.

A. i.

thynke

## The fyrst decade.

The Ilandes  
of Canarie.  
Gades or  
Cala mala.  
A league,  
what it con-  
teyneth by  
sea.  
the fortunate  
Ilandes.

Cabouerde.

The seven I-  
landes of Ca-  
narie.  
Betanchor. A  
frenche man  
subdued the  
Ilandes of  
Canarie.  
Lancelotus.  
Fortisuentura.  
Ferrea.  
Gomera.  
Grancanaria.  
Palma.  
Tenerisen.

Alphonfus  
Lugo.

thinke them to be, whiche the Spaniardes call *Canarie*, found but of late dayes) are distaunte from the Ilandes of *Gades*, a thousande and twoo hundred myles, accordyng to theyr ac-  
compte: for they say they are distant three hundred leagues: wheras such as are expert sea men, asyume that euery league conteyneth foure myles, after theyr supputations. These I-  
landes were called fortunate, for the temperate ayre whiche is in them. For neyther the coldenesse of wynter is sharpe vn-  
to them, nor the heate of sommer intollerable. Yet some men are of opinion, that those were in olde tyme called the fortun-  
ate Ilandes, whiche the Portugales call *Capo Verde*. Colonus therfore sayled fyrste to the Ilandes of *Canarie*, to the intente there to refreche his shippes with freshe water and fuell, be-  
fore he committed him selfe to this so laborious a vyage. And because I haue here made mention of the Ilandes of *Canarie*: It shall not be muche from my purpose to declare howe of vn-  
knownen they became knownen, and of saluage and wilde, bet-  
ter manured. For by the longe course of manye yeres, they were forgotten, and remayned as vnknownen.

These seven Ilandes (therfore) called the *Canaries*, were founde by chaunce by a frenche man, called *Betanchor*, by the permis-  
sion of queene Katharine, protectrice of kyng John her son, while he was yet in his nonage, about the yere of Christe.

M. CCC. III. This *Betanchor* inuaded twoo of these Ilan-  
des called *Lancelotus* and *Fortisuentura*, whiche he inhabited and brought to better culture. He beinge deade, his son and heire  
solde bothe the sayde Ilandes to certayne Spaniardes.

After this, *Fernandus Peraria* and his wyfe, inuaded *Ferrea* and  
*Gomera*. The other three were subdued in our tyme. *Grancanaria*,  
by *Petrus de Vera*, citezen of the noble citie of *Xericium*, and *Agiz*  
chacell of *Moxica*. *Palma* and *Tenerisen*, by *Alphonfus Lugo*, at the  
kynges charges. *Gomera* and *Ferrea* were easely subdued: But  
the matter wente harde with *Alphonfus Lugo*. For that naked  
and wyld nation, fyghtinge onely with stones and clubbes,  
droue his armie to flighte at the fyrste assaulte, and slewe a-  
boute foure hundred of his men. But at the length he ouer-  
came them. And thus all the Ilandes of *Canarie* were added  
to the dominion of Spayne. From these Ilandes *Colonus* di-  
rectyng his viage towarde the weste, folowinge the fallinge  
of the sonne, but declining somewhat towarde the left hande,  
sayled

sayled on forwarde. xxxiii. dayes continually, haūynge onely the fruition of the heauen and the water. Then the Spanyardes whiche were accompanied with hym, beganne fyrste to murmure secretly among them selues: and shortly after with wordes of reproche spake euyll of *Colonus* theyr gouernoure, and consulted with them selues, epyther to rydde hym out of the waye, ozelles to cast hym into the sea: Wagyng that they were deceyued of a straunger, an outlandishe man, a Ligurian a Genues, and brought into suche daungerous places, that they myght neuer retorne ageyne. And after. xxx. days were past, they furiously cryed out againste him, and threained him that he shulde passe no further. But he euer with ientyll wordes and large promyses, appeased theyr furie, and prolonged day after day, some tyme desyring them to beare with hym yet a whyle, and some time putting them in remembrance that if they shulde attempte any thinge agaynst him, oz other wise disobey hym, it wolde be reputed for treason. Thus after a fewe dayes, with cherefull hartes they espyed the lande longe looked for. In this fyrst nauigation, he discovered. vi. Ilandes, wherof twoo were exceeding great: Of whiche, the one he called *Hispaniola*, and the other *Iohanna*. But at that tyme he knewe not perfectly that *Iohanna* (other wyse called *Cuba*.) was an Ilande. As they coasted alonge by the shore of certayne of these Ilandes, they harde nyghtingales synge in the thyeke woodes in the mouth of *November*. They found also great riuers of freshe water, and naturall hauens, of capacitye to harborowe greate nautes of shippes. Saylinge by the coastes of *Iohanna*, from the northe poynte to the west, he rode lyttell lesse then eyght hundreth miles (for they call it a hundreth and foure score leagues) supposyng that it had byn the continent oz fyrme land, bicause he coulde nother fynd the landes ende, nor any token of the ende, as farre as he coulde iudgc with his eye: wherfoze he determined to retorne backe agayne, beynge thereto partly enforced by the roughnesse of the sea. for the sea bankes of the Ilande of *Iohanna*, by sondrye wyndinges and turnynges, bende them selues so muche toward the Northe, that the northnortheaste wynde roughely tossed the shippes by reason of the wynter. Turnynge therfore the stemmes of his shippes toward the East, he admyred that he had founde the Ilande of *Ophir*, whither *Salomon*

*Colonus* men  
rebel against  
hym.

faire wordes  
and promises.

*Hispaniola*.  
*Iohanna*.

Nyghtingales  
synge in  
*November*.

The Ilande  
of *Ophir*.

## The fyrst decade.

mons Shyppes sayled for golde. But the description of the Cosmographers well considered, it seemeth that bothe these, and the other Ilandes adioynng, are the Ilandes of Antilia. This Ilande he called *Hispaniola*: on whose northe syde as he approached nere to the lande, the keele or battome of the bigge golde vessel ranne vpon a blynde rocke covered with water, and clone in sunder. But the playnenesse of the rocke was a helpe to them that they were not drowned. Makynge haste therfore with the other two ships to helpe them, they brought away al the men without hurte. Here comming fyrst a land, they sawe certayne men of the Ilande: who perceauynge an vnknown nation comminge towarde them, flocked together and ranne al into the thicke wooddes, as it hadde byn hares courted with grehoundes. Owre men pursuing them, tooke onely one woman, whom they brought to the shyppes: where fyllinge her with meate and wyne, and apparelinge her, they let her departe to her company. Shortly after a greate multitude of them came runnyng to the shore to beholde this newe nation, whom they thought to haue disceded from heauen. They cast them selues by heapes into the sea, and came swimmyng to the shyppes, bryngyng golde with them, which they chaunged with owre men for erthen pottes, drinking glasses, popntes, pynnes, hawkes belles, lokinge glasses, and suche other trifles. Thus growyng to further familiaritie, owre men were honorably enterteyned of the kynge of that parte of the Ilande, whose name was *Guaccanarillus*: for it hath many kynnges, as when *Eneas* arriued in Italy, he founde *Latium* diuided into many kyngdomes and prouinces, as *Latium*, *Mexentium*, *Turnum*, and *Tarchontem*, which were seperated with narrow boundes, as shall more largely appere hereafter. At the euentide about the faulynge of the sonne, when owre men went to praye, and kneeled on their knees after the maner of the Christians, they dyd the lyke also. And after what maner so euer they sawe them praye to the crosse, they folowed them in all poyntes as well as they coude. They shewed much humanitie towardes owre men: and helpen them with theyr lighters or small boates (whiche they call *Canoas*) to vnlade theyr broken shyppe: And that with suche celeritie and cheerefulnesse, that no frende for frende, or kynseman for kynseman, in suche case moued with pitie, coude do more. Theyr boates are made

The landes  
of Antilia.

A shyppwrack

The people  
of the lande.

Naked people.

Expert swimmers.  
gold for erth  
and glasse.

many kinges

Religious &  
humaine people.

Canoas.

made only of one tree, made holow with a certain sharpe stone (for they haue no yron.) And are very longe and narrowe. Many affirme that they haue sene some of them with fortye eyes. The wylde and myscheuous people called *Canibales*, or *Caribes*, whiche were accustomed to eate mannes fleshe (and called of the olde writers, *Anthropophagi*) molest them exceedingly, inuadinge theyr countrey, takinge them captiue, kyllyng and eatyng them. As owre men sayled to the Ilandes of these meke and humayne people, they lefte the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, in maner in the myddest of theyr viage towards the south. They complayned that theyr Ilandes were no lesse vexed with the incursions of these manhuntynge *Canibales* when they go forth a younge to seeke theyr praye: then are other tame beastes, of Lyons and Tigers. Such chyldren as they take, they geld to make them fat as we doo cocke chikyns and younge hogges, and eate them when they are wel fedde: of suche as they eate, they fyrst eate the intralles and extreme partes, as handes, feete, armes, necke, and heade. The other most fleshy partes, they powder for sore, as we do pestelles of porke and gammondes of bakon. Yet do they absteyne from eatynge of women and counte it vyle. Therfore suche younge women as they take, they keepe for increace, as we doo hennies to leye egges. The olde women, they make theyr drudges. They of the Ilandes (whiche we may now call owres) bothe the men and the women when they perceauie the *Canibales* coming, haue none other myfte but onely to flie: for althoughe they vse very sharpe arrowes made of reedes, yet are they of small force to represse the furie of the *Canibales*: for euen they them selues confesse, that tenne of the *Canibals* are able to ouercome a hundred of them if they encountre with them. Theyr meate is a certeyne roote which they call *Ages*: muche lyke a nauch roote in fourme and greatnesse: but of sweete taste, muche lyke a greene chesnutte. They haue also an other kynde of rootes, whiche they call *Iucca*, wherof they make breade in lyke maner. They vse *Ages* more often rosted or sodden, then to make breade therof: But they neuer eate *Iucca*, excepte it be firste sliced and pressed, (for it is ful of lycoure) and then baked or sodden. But this is to be marueled at, that the iuyce of this roote is a popson as strong as *Aconitum*, so that if it be dronke it causeth present death, and yet the breade made of the masse

A, iii,

therof

*monoryla*.  
They haue  
no Iren.

*Canibales* or  
*Caribes*  
*Anthropo-*  
*phagi*.

The crueltie  
of the *Canibales*.

*Ages*.  
Rootes in the  
freede of  
meate.  
*Iucca*.  
Breade of  
rootes.

an herbe of a  
straunge nature.

## The fyrst decade.

maizum.

Golde in estimation.

Golde in the sandes of ryuers.

Serpentes without venime.

Turtle doues  
Duckes.  
Poppingiayes.

Plini.

These Ilandes are parte of India.  
The Indians are Antipodes to the Spaniardes.

Aristotle.  
Seneca.  
India not far from Spaine

therof, is of good taste and holosome, as all they haue proued. They make also an other kynde of breade of a certayne pulse, called *Panicum*, muche lyke vnto wheate, wherof is great plenty in the dukedome of Mylane, Spayne, and Granatum. But that of this countrey is longer by a spanne, somewhat sharpe towarde the ende, and as bygge as a mannes arme in the brayne: The graynes wherof are sette in a maruelous order, and are in fourme somewhat lyke a pease. While they be soure and vnripe, they are white: but when they are ripe they be very blacke. When they are broken, they be whytter then snowe. This kynde of grayne, they call *Maizum*. Golde is of some estimation among them: for some of them hange certain small pieces therof at theyr eares and nosethilles. A lytell beyonde this place, our men wente a lande for freshe water, where they chaunced vpon a Ryuer whose sande was mpyred with muche golde. They founde there no kindes of foure footed bestes excepte thre kyndes of lytell conyes. These Ilandes also nourishe serpentes: but such as are without hurt. Lykewise wyld geese, turtle doues, and duckes, much greater then ours, and as whyte as swannes, with heades of purple coloure. Also Poppingiaies, of the whiche some are greene, some yelow, and some lyke them of India, with yelow ringes about theyr neckes, as Plinie describeth them. Of these they broughte forthie with them, of moste liuely and delectable coloures, hauryng thre feathers entermengled with greene, yelow, and purple, whiche varietie, deliteth the sense not a litle. Thus muche thought I good to speake of Poppingiaies, (ryghte noble Prynce) specially to this intente, that albeit the opinion of Christophorus Colonus (who affirmeth these Ilandes to be parte of India) dothe not in all poyntes agree with the iudgement of auncient wyrters as touchyng the bignesse of the Sphere and compasse of the Globe as concernyng the nauigable portyon of the same beyng vnder vs, yet the Poppingiaies and many other thynges brought from thence, doe declare that these Ilandes sauioure somwhat of India, eyther beyng nere vnto it, or elles of the same nature: forasmuche as Aristotle also, about the ende of his booke *De Celo et Mundo*, and likewise Seneca, with diuerse other authours not ignorant in Cosmography, do affirme that India is no longe tracte by sea, distante from Spayne by the weste Ocean, for the soyle of these

## The fyrst decade.

4

of these Ilandes, bryngeth forth the *Massir*, Aloes, and sundry other sweete gummes and spyes as doth *India*. Cotton also of the gossampine tree, as in *India* in the countrey of the people called *Seres*.

The languages of all the nations of these Ilandes, maye well be written with our Latine letters. For they cal heauen *Turi*. A house, *Bod*. Bolde, *Cauni*. A good man, *Taino*. nothing *Mayani*. All other wordes of theyr language, they pronounce as playnely as we doo the Latine tongue. In these Ilandes they founde no trees knowen vnto them, but pyne appe trees, and date trees: And those of maruelous heyght and exceeding harde, by reason of the greate moyasne and farnesse of the grounde, with continuall and temperate heate of the sonne, whiche endureth so all the hole yere. They playnely aspyrne the Ilande of *Hispaniola* to be the most fruiteful lande that the heauen compasseth aboute, as shall more largely appere hereafter in the particular description of the same, whiche we intende to sette foorthe when we shall be better instructed.

Thus makynge a leage of frendshyppe with the kynge, and leauynge with hym. xxxviii. men to searche the Ilande, he departed to Spayne takynge with hym. x. of the inhabitauntes to lerne the Spanishe tongue, to the intent to vse them afterwarde for interpretours. *Colonus* therfore at his returne, was honorably receaued of the kyng and queene: who caused him to sytte in theyr presence, whiche is a token of great loue and honour amonge the Spaniardes. He was also made Admirall of the Ocean: and his brother gouenoure of the Iland.

Towards the second viage, he was furnished with. xii. shippes: wherof there were great carackes of a thousand tunne: xii. were of that sorte, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*: without deckes: and twoo other of the same sorte somewhat bygger, and more apte to beare deckes, by reason of the grettnesse of theyr mastes. He had also a thousand and two hundred armed footemen well appoynted: Amonge whiche were many artificers, as smythes, carpenters, myners, and suche other: Certayne holsmen also, wel armed: Likewise mares, sheepe, heygheffers, and such other of bothe kindes for increase. Likewise all kynde of pulse or grayne and corne, as wheate, barlye, rye, beanes and pease, and suche other, as well for food as to sowe: Besyde vynes, plantes and seedes, of suche trees,

*Massir*,  
Aloe.  
Gossampyne  
cotton or bom  
base.  
*Seres*.  
The language  
of these *Indi*  
ans.

Trees and  
frutes vnkno  
wen to vs.  
fat & moyste  
grounde.  
heate conti  
nuall and tem  
perate.  
The fruitful  
nes of *Hisp*  
*aniola*

The seconde  
viage of *Co*  
*lonus*.

Come and se  
des to sowe.

## The fyrst decade.

Tooles and  
artillery.

water drop-  
pyng from a  
tree continu-  
ally.

trees, frutes, and herbes, as those countreys lacke. And (not to be forgotten) sundry kindes of artillery & iron tooles, as bowes, arrowes, croſſebowes, bylles, hargabuzes, brode ſwordes, large targettes, pikes, mattockes, ſhoulders, hammers, nayles, ſawes, axes, and ſuche other. Thus beynge furniſhed accordyngely, they ſet forwarde from the Ilandes of Gades, (nowe called Cals,) the. vii. day before the calendes of October, in the yere of Chriſte. 1493. and arrived at the Ilandes of Canarie, at the calendes of October. Of theſe Ilandes, the laſte is called Ferres, in whiche there is no other water that maye be drinke, but onely that is gathered of the dewe whiche continually diſtilleth from one onely tree growynge on the higheſt backe of the Ilande, and falleth into a rounde trench made with mannes hande. We were inſourmed of theſe thynges within ſewe dayes after his departure. What ſhal ſuccede, we wyl certifie yowe hereafter. Thus ſave ye well, from the court, at the Ides of Nouember. 1493.

¶ The ſeconde booke of the fyrſte Decade  
to Aſcanius Phorcia, vicounte  
Cardinall, &c.



Methymna  
Campi.  
Caſtella Ve-  
tus.

Gades

¶ We repete (ryghte honorable Prynce) that yowe are deſirous to knowe what newes we haue in Spayne from the newe worlde: and that thoſe thynges haue greatly delected yow which I wrote unto yowe highneſſe of the fyrſte nauigation, yowe ſhal now therefore receaue what hath ſucceded. Methymna Campi, is a famous towne in high Spayne in the reſpect from yowe, and is in that parte of Spayne whiche is called Caſtella Vetus: beynge diſtante from Gades about. xl. myles. Here the court remayned, when aboute the. ix. of the kalendes of Aprill in this yere of mynetie and foure, there were poſtes ſente to the kynge and queene, certifyinge them that there were. xii. ſhippes come from the newe Ilandes and arriued at Gades. But the gouernoure of the ſhippes ſente worde to the kynge and queene that he had none other matter to certifie them of by the poſtes, but onely that the Admiral with five ſhippes and. iiii. ſcore and tenne men remayned ſtill in Hiſpaniola, to ſearch the ſea-creres

secretes of the Ilande. And that as touching other matters, he hym selfe wolde shortly make relation in theyr presence, by worde of mouthe. Therfore the daye before the nones of April, he came to the courte him selfe. What I learned of him and other saythefull and credible men whiche came with hym from the Admirall, I wyl reherse vnto youe in such order as they declared the same to me when I demaunded them. Take it therfore as foloweth. The thyrde daye of the Ides of October, departynge from Ferrea, the laste of the Ilandes of Canaria, and from the costes of Spayne with a nauie of .xvii. shippes, they sayled. xxi. dayes before they came to any Ilande: inclynning of purpose more towarde the lefte hand then at the fyrst viage, folowynge the northnortheast wynde: and arriued fyrst at the Ilandes of the Canibales, or Caribes of which, onely the same was knowne to our men. Amonge these, they chaunfed fyrste vpon one, so beset with trees, that they coulde not se so muche as an elle space of bare earthe or stony grounde. this they called *Dominica*, bicause they found it on the sunday. They taried here no tyme, bycause they sawe it to be deserte. In the space of these .xxi. dayes, they thynke that they sayled. viii. hundreth and. xx. leagues, the Northnortheast wynde was so full with them, and so freshly folowed the sterne of theyr shippes. After they hadde sayled a lyttell further, they espied dyuerse Ilandes replenyshed with sundrye kyndes of trees, from the whiche came fragrant sauours of spyces and sweete gummies. Here they sawe neyther man nor beaste, except certayne lisartes of huge bignesse, as they reported whiche went alande to hiewe the countrey. This Iland they called *Galana*, or *Galanta*. From the cape or poynt of this Iland, espying a mountayne a farre of, they sayled thither. Aboute. xxx. myles from this mountayne, they sawe a ryuer disceding whiche seemed to be a token of some great and large fludde. This is the fyrste lande whiche they founde inhabited from the Ilandes of Canaria, and is an Ilande of the Canibales, as they lerned by the interpretours whiche they tooke with them from Hispaniola into Spayne at theyr fyrst viage. Serchynge the Ilande, they founde innumerable villages of. xx. houses or. xxx. at the mooste, sette rounde aboute in order, makinge the streete in coompassse lyke a markette place. And for asmuch as I haue made mention of theyr houses, it shal nothe

The Iland of Ferrea.

Ilands of the Canibales.

The Iland of Dominica.

viii. hundreth  
.xx. leagues  
in. xxi. dayes.

Lysertes,

The Ilande of Galanta.

The Iland of Guadalupea.

villages of. xx  
or. xxx. houses

B. i.

greatly,

## The fyrst decade.

The building  
of theyr hou-  
ses.

Goſſampine  
cotton.

Bombast.  
hanginge  
beddes.

Images.

Fyne cookery

Arrowe heads  
of bones.

greately from my purpose to describe in what maner they are  
bylde. They are made rounde lyke belles or rounde paup-  
lions. Theyr frame is rayled of exceedyng hyghe trees, sette  
close together and fast rampaired in the ground, so standyng  
a slope and bending inward that the toppes of the trees ioyn-  
e together and beare one agaynſt another, hauyng also with-  
in the house, certayne stronge and shorte props or postes whi-  
che susteyne the trees from fallynge. They couer them with  
the leaues of date trees and other trees strongly compact and  
hardened, wherewith they make them close from wynde and  
wether. At the shorte postes or proppes within the house, they  
tie ropes of the cottis of goſſampine trees, or other ropes made  
of certayne long and tough vates much lyke vnto the shrubbe  
called *spartum*, wherof in olde tyme they vsed to make bondes  
for bynes and cabuls and ropes for shippes. These they tye  
ouerthwarte the house from poste to poste. On these they ley  
as it were certayne mattresses made of the cotton of the goſ-  
ſampine trees, whiche growe plentifully in these Ilandes.  
This cotton the Spaniardes call *Algodon*, and the Italians  
*Bombastine*. And thus they sleepe in hanginge beddes. At the  
enteraunce of one of theyr houses, they sawe two Images of  
woodde lyke vnto serpentes, whiche they thoughte had byn  
such idoles as they honour. But they lerned afterwarde that  
they were sette there onely for coosynesse. For they knowe  
none other god then the Sunne and Moone, althoughe they  
make certayne Images of goſſampine cotton to the similitude  
of such phantasies as they say appere to them in the nyght.  
Our men found in theyr houses, all kyndes of erthen vessels,  
not muche vnylike vnto oures. They founde also in theyr ki-  
chens, mannes fleshe, duckes fleshe, and goole fleshe, al in  
one pot: and other on the spittes redye to be layde to the fire.  
Entrynge into theyr inner lodgynges, they founde faggottes  
of the bones of mennes armes and legges, which they reserue  
to make heades for theyr arrowes, because they lacke iron.  
The other bones they caste awaye when they haue eaten the  
fleshe. They founde likewise the heade of a ponge man faste-  
ned to a poste and yet bledinge. They haue in some villages,  
one great haule or pallaice, aboute the whiche theyr common  
houses are placed. To this they resort, as often as they come  
together to playe. When they perceaued the comynge of  
our men

our men, they fledde, in theyr houses they founde also about  
xxx. chyl dren and women captiues which were reserued to be  
eaten, but our men tooke them awaye to vse them for inter:  
pretoures. Searchyng more diligently thynner partes of the  
Ilande, they founde. vii. other ryuers, bygger then this whi  
che we spake of before, runnyng throughe the Ilande, with  
fruitefull and pleasant banckes, delectable to beholde. This  
Ilande, they called *Guadalupes*, for the similitude that it hath  
to the mounte *Guadalupus* in Spayne, where the Image of the  
virgin MARIE is religiously honored. But the inhabitanz:  
tes call it *Carucueria*, or *Queraquiers*. It is the chiefe habitation  
of the *Canibales*. They brought from this Iland. vii. *Popin:*  
gays, bygger then pheasantes, muche differynge from other in  
coloure: haupnge theyr backs, bystes, and bealies of purple  
coloure, and theyr wynges of other variable coloures. In al  
these Ilandes is no lesse plentie of popingayes then with  
bs of sparrowes or starlinges. As we bynge vp capons and  
hennes to francke or make them fatte, so do they these bigger  
kyndes of poppyngayes for the same purpose. After that they  
hadde thus searched the Ilande and dyuen these *Canibales* to  
frighte, (whiche ranne awaye at theyr fyrst approche as sone  
as they had espied them) they cauled theyr company together.  
And as soone as they had broken the *Canibals* boates or lygh:  
ters (whiche they call *Canoes*) they lowed theyr ankers the  
daye before the Ides of Nouember, and departed from *Gua:*  
*dalupes*. Colonus the admirall, for the desyre he hadde to se his  
companions, whiche at his fyrst byage he lefte the yere before  
in *Hispaniola* to searche the countrey, lette passe many Ilandes  
bothe on his righte hande and lefte hande, and sayled direct:  
ly thither. By the waye, there appeared from the Northe. A  
great Ilande which the captiues that were taken in *Hispaniola*,  
cauled *Madanino*, or *Matinino*: Affirmyng it to be inhabited only  
with womē: To whō the *Canibales* haue accesse at certen tymes  
of the yere, as in owlde tyme the *Ibracians* had to the *Amazo:*  
*nes* in the Ilande of *Lesbos*. The men children, they sende to  
theyr fathers. But the women theye kepe with them selues.  
They haue greate and stronge caues or dennes in the ground,  
to the which they flye for safegarde if any men resorte vnto  
them at any other tyme then is appoynted. And there defende  
them selues with bowes and arrowes, agens the violence of

The mount  
*Guadalupus*:

*Carucueria*.

poppyngayes  
bygger then  
pheasantes

The *Caniba:*  
les dyuen to  
frighte.

*Matinino* an  
Ilande of wo  
men.

## The fyrst decade.

The Ilandes  
of Mons Ser  
ratus.

huntinge for  
men.  
Sancta Mari  
a Rotunda.  
Sanctus Mar  
tinus.

Sancta Mari  
a Antiqua,

Insula crucis  
An Ilande of  
the Canibals

The Caniba  
les are ex  
pert archers.

Arrowes in  
fecte d with  
Veneme.

A conflict  
with the Ca  
nibales.

suche as attempte to enuade them. They coulde not at this tyme approche to this Ilande, by reaso of the Northernorth east wynde which blew so vehemently from the same, wher as they nowe folowed the Eastertheaste. After they departed from Madanino, and sayled by the space of .xl. myles, they passed not farre frome an other Ilande which the captyues sayde to bee verpe peopulous, and replenyshed with all thynges necessarie for the life of man. This they cauled Mons Serratus, bycause it was ful of mountaynes. The captyues further declared that the Canibales, are wonte at some tyme to goo frome theyr owne coastes aboue a thousande myle to hunt for men. The daye folowynge, they sawe an other Ilande the whiche, bycause it was rounde, they cauled Sancta Maria Rotunda. The nexte daye, theye founde an other, which they cauled s. Martini. Which they lette passe also bycause they had no leasure to tarpe. Lykewylse the thirde daye they elyped an other, whose Diametral syde extendynge frome the East to the weste, they iudged to bee a hundreth and fyftie myle. Theye affirme all these Ilandes to be maruelous fayre and fructefull. This laste, they cauled Sancta Maria Antiqua. Saylyng yet forwarde, and leauynge many other Ilandes, after they had sayled aboute fortie myle, they chaunced vpon an other muche bygger then any of the reste, which thynhabitans caule Ay Ay, but they named it Insula crucis. Heare they cast anker to fetch the freshe water. The Admiral also commaunded .xxx. men to go a lande out of his owne shipp, and to search the Ilande. Here they founde some dogges on the shore. The Inhabitants are Canibales, and maruelous experte in shuting, as well women as men: And vse to infecte theyr arrowes with poyson: when they had tarped there two dayes, they sawe a farrre of, a Canoa, in the whiche were eight men and as many women haupnge with them bowes and arrowes. They fearfly assayled owre men withoute all feare, and hurte sum of them with theyr venemous arrowes. Amonge these there was a certen woman to whome the other gaue reuerence and obeyde as though she were theyr quene. Yet sonne wayted vpon her, beinge a younge man, strongly made, of terrible & frownyng countenaunce and a lyons face. Owre men leaste they sholde take the more hurte by beinge wounded a farrre of, thowght it beste to ioyne with them, Therfore with all spede settinge

## The fyrst decade,

7

settinge forewarde with their ores the brigantine in which they were sette alande, they ouerturned their *Canoe* with a great violence, which beinge ouerwhelmed, they notwithstandinge, as well the women as the men swimminge, caste theyr dartes at oore men, thicke and threefolde. At the lengthe, gatheringe them selues together vpon a rocke couered with the water, they fought manfully vntyll they were ouercome and taken, one being slayne, and the queenes sonne sore wounded. When they were brought into the Admirals shippe, they dyd no more put of their fierces and cruell countenances, then do the Lyons of *Libia* when theye perceauie the selues to be botonde in chaynes. There is no man able to behold them, but he shall feele his bowelles grate with a certain horroure, nature hath endewed them with soo terrible menacyng, and cruel aspecte. This coniecture I make of my selfe and other which often tymes wente with me to see them at *Methymna Campi*. But nowe to returne to the viage. *Proceding* thus further and further, more then fife hundred myles, firste towarde the Westesoutheweste, then towarde the Southwest, and at the lengthe towarde the Weste northeweste, they entered into a mayne large sea hauinge in it innumerable Ilandes, maruelouslye differinge one frome another, for sum of them were verpe frutesfull and full of herbes and trees. Other sum, verpe drye, barren, and rowgh with high rockye mountaynes of stone, wherof sum were of bright blew or asurine coloure, and other glysteringe white: wherfore they supposed them by good reason to bee the mynes of metalles and precious stones. But the rowghnes of the sea, and multitude of Ilandes standinge so thicke together, hindered them soo, that they coulde caste no anker leasse the bigger vesselles shulde runne vpon the rockes. Therefore they deferred the searchinge of these Ilandes vntill an other tyme. They were so manye and stode so thicke, that they coulde not number them. Yet the smauler vesselles which drewe no greater depthe, entered emonge them and numbered fortie and fyre Ilandes. But the bigger vesselles, kepte aloofe in the mayne sea for feare of the rockes. They caule the sea where this multitude of Ilandes are situate, *Archipelagus*. Frome this tracte proceedinge forewarde, in the mydde waie there lyeth an Iland which chynhabitantes caule *Burichena*, or *Buchena*.

B.iii,

But

The fiercesnes and terrible countenance of the Canibales.

*Methymna Campi*.

Innumerable Ilandes.

The mynes of metalles & precious stones.

The sea called *Archipelagus*.

## The fyrst decade.

Insula. S. Jo:  
hannes or Su  
chena.

Death for  
death

The moun:  
taynes are  
colder then  
the playnes.

From Domini  
ca to hispani:  
ola fyue hun:  
dred leagues

The Spany:  
ardes leste in  
the Island are  
slayne.  
kyng Guac:  
canarillus re  
bellyeth.

Two Images  
of goulde.

But they named it *Insula. S. Iohannis*, Dyucers of theym tohome we had deliuered frome the *Canibales*, sayde that they were bozne in this Ilande: affirminge it to be very peopulous and frutefull, hauinge also manye fayre wooddes and hauens. There is deadly hatred and continual battayle betwene them & the *Canibales*, They haue no boates to passe from their owne coastes to the *Canibales*. But if it bee their chaunce to ouercome them, when they make incursion into theyr countrepe to seke their praye (as it sumtyme happeneth, the fortune of warre beinge vncerteyne) they secue them with like faule, requitinge death for death. For one of theym mangleth an other in pices, and roste them and eate them euen before their eyes. They tarped not in this Ilande. yet in the weste angle ther of, a fewe of them went a lande for freshe water, and found a greate and high houlse after the maner of their buylding, hauinge. xii. other of their bulgare cottages placed abowre the same: but were all leste desolate, whether it were that they resorted to the mountaynes by reson of the heate which was that tyme of the yeare, and to retorne to the playne when the ayre wareth colder, or els for feare of the *Canibales* which make incursion into the Ilande at certen seasons. In all this Ilande is only one kinge. The south syde hereof extendeth abowte two hundred the myles. Shortly after, they came to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, beinge distante frome the firste Ilande of the *Canibales*, fyue hundred the leagues. Here they founde all thynges out of order, and theyr felowes slayne which they leste here at their fyrste vyage. In the beginninge of *Hispaniola*, (hauinge in it many regions and kyngedomes as we haue sayde) is the region of *Xamama* whose kinge is named *Guaccanarillus*. This *Guaccanarillus* iopned frendshippe with owre men at the fyrste biage, and made a league with them: But in the absence of the Admirall, he rebelled, & was the cause of owre mens destruction, althowgh he dissimuled the same, and pretended frendship at the Admirales retorne. As owre men sayled on yet a litle further, they espied a longe canoe with many ores, in which was the brother of *Guaccanarillus* with only one man waytinge on hym. He browghe with hym two Images of goulde, which he gaue the Admirall in the name of his brother. And tolde a tale in his language as concerninge the deathe of owre men, as they proued afterwarde

warde, but at this tyme had no regarde to his communicati-  
on for lacke of interpretours, which were eyther all deade,  
or escaped and floune awaye when they drewe nere the Ilan-  
des. But of the .x. vii. dyed by change of ayre and dyet. The  
inhabitanes of these Ilandes haue byn euer soo bled to liue  
at libertie, in playe and pastyme, that they can hardlye awaye  
with the yoke of seruitude which they attempte to shake of  
by all meanes they maye. And surely if they had receaued  
owre religion, I wolde thinke their life moste happye of all  
men, if they might therewith enioye their aunciente libertie.  
A fewe thinges contente them, hauinge no delite in suche su-  
perfluities, for the which in other places men take infinite  
paynes and commit manie vnlawfull actes, and yet are neuer  
satisfied, wheras many haue to muche, and none inough.  
But emonge these simple sowles, a fewe clothes serue the na-  
ked: weightes and measures are not needefull to such as can  
not skyll of crafte and deceyte and haue not the vse of pestife-  
rous monye, the seede of innumerable myscheues. So that if  
we shall not be ashamed to confesse the truth, they seeme to  
lyue in that goulden worlde of the whiche owlde wyrters  
speake so much: wherein men lyued simple and innocentlye  
without inforcement of lawes, without quarellinge Judges  
and libelles, contente onely to satisfie nature, without fur-  
ther veration for knowlege of thinges to come. Yet these na-  
ked people also are tormeted with ambitio for the desyre they  
haue to enlarge their dominions: by reason wherof they kepe  
warre & destroy one an other: fro the which plague I suppoie  
the golden worlde was not free. For euen then also, *Cede, non  
redam,* that is, gyue place, & I wyll not giue place, had entred  
emonge men. But nowe to retorne to thematter fro which we  
haue digressed. The admiral desyrous to knowe further of  
the death of his men, sent for Guaccanayllus to come to him to  
his ship, dissimulinge that he knew any thinge of the matter.  
After that he came aboard ship, saluting the Admiral & his co-  
pany gyuing also certē golde to the Capetaynes and officers,  
turned him to the womē captiues which not longe before our  
mē had deliuered fro the *Canibales*. And earnestly beholding one  
of them whome owre men cauled Catharyne, he spake gentel-  
ly vnto her. And thus when he had seene and marueyled at  
the howses and suche other thinges as were in the shippe, vn-  
known

Libertie and  
idlenes.

A happy kind  
of lyfe.

Superfluite.

many haue to  
much and  
none inough.

The goulden  
worlde

Naked men  
troubled with  
ambicion.

Gyue place.

The Admira  
lendeth for  
the kynge.

No howses in  
the Ilandes

## The fyrst decade.

A tyme for all  
thynges.

A desperate  
aduenture of  
a woman.

Cloelia of  
Rome.

Guaccanaril:  
lus is sought.  
melchior.

knownen to them, and had with a good grace and merelye asked leaue of the Admirall, he departed. Yet sum there were which counseyled the Admirall to kepe hym styll: that if they might by any meanes proue that he was consentinge to the deathe of owre men, he might bee punished accordynglie. But the Admirall considering that it was yet no tyme to incense thynhabitanes myndes to wrathe, dysmyssed hym. The next daye folowynge, the kinges brother resortyng to the Shyppes, eyther in his owne name or in his brothers, seduced the women. For on the next nyght about mydnight, this Katherine aswell to recouer her owne libertie as also her felowes, being suborned therto eyther by the kinge or his brothers promises attempted a much more difficulte and daungerous aduenture then dyd Cloelia of Rome, which beynge in hostage with other maydes to the kyng <sup>Porcena</sup>, deceaued her keepers, and rode ouer the ryuer Tiber, with the other virgins which were pledged with her. For wheras they swamme ouer the ryuer on horsebacke. This Catharine with seuen other women, trustyng onely to the strengthe of theyr owne armes, swamme aboue thre longe myles: and that also, at suche tyme as the sea was sumwhat rologhe. For euen soo farre of frome the shore, lay the Shyppes at rode, as nigh as they could comiecture. But owre men folowynge them with the shippeboates, by the same light scene on the shore wherby the women were ledde, tooke thre of them: supposynge that Catharine with the other foure, wente to Guaccanarillus. For in the springe of the mornynge, certen messengers beynge sente to hym by the Admirall, had intelligence that he was fledde with all his familie and suffice, and the women also. Which thynge minnstred further suspicion that he was consentinge to the deathe of owre men. Wherefore the Admirall sente forth an armye of thre hundred men, ouer the which he appoynted one Melchior to be capitayne, wylling hym to make diligent searche to fynde oute Guaccanarillus. Melchior therfore with the smaulest vessels enterynge into the countreye by the ryuers and scourynge the shores, chaunced into certen crooked goulfes defended with lyttle & steepe hilles, supposynge that it had byn the mouth of sum greate ryuer. He founde here also a verve commodious and safe hauen, and therefore named it *Portus Regalis*. They saye that the enterance of this is so crooked and bendynge, that

that after the Shippes are once within the same, whether they turne the to the lefte hand, or to the ryght, they can not perceauie where they came in vntyll they retorne to the mouth of the ryuer: Although it be there so brode that thre of the byggeste vessels may sayle together on a froont. The sharpe & high hilles on the one syde and on the other, so brake the wynde, that they were vncerten howe to rule theyr sayles. In the myddle gulfe of the ryuer, there is a promontorie or point of the lande with a pleasaunte groue full of *Popingayes* and other byrdes which breede therein and singe verye sweetlye. They perceaued also that two ryuers of no smaule largenes fell into the haue. Whyle they thus searched the lande betwene bothe, *Melchior* espied a high house a farre of, where supposinge that *Guaccanarillus* had lyne hyd, he made towarde it. And as he was goynge, there mette hym a man with a frostynge countenaunce and a grymme looke, with a hundred men folowynge hym, armed with bowes and arrowes, and long and sharpe staues like iaculynnes, made harde at the endes with fyre. Who approachyng towarde oware men, spake oware alowde with a terryble voyce, sayenge that they were *Taini*, (that is) noble men, and not *Canibales*. But when oware men had gyuen them signes of peace, they lefte bothe theyr weapons and fiercesnes. Thus geuyng eche of them certen haukes belles, they tooke it for so greate a rewarde, that they despyred to enter bondes of nere frendeshyppe with us, and feared not immediatly to submittre them selues vnder oware power, and resorted to our Shypps with theyr presentes. They that measured the house (beinge made in rounde fourme) founde it to be from syde to syde. xxxii. greate paces, compassed aboute with xxx. other vulgare houses, hauinge in them many beames crosse ouer, and couered with reedes of sundry colours, wythed and as it were weaued with maruelous art. When oware men asked sum of them where they myght fynde *Guaccanarillus*, they aunswered that that Region was none of his. But they kynge beyng there presente. Yet they sayde they supposed that *Guaccanarillus* was gone from the playne to the mountaynes. Makynge therfore a brotherly league with this *Caccicus*, (that is to saye a kynge) they retourned to the Admirall to make relation what they hadde scene and harde. wherbyppon he sent forth dyuers other Centurians with their

*Popingayes*  
and byrdes.

*Taini*.

hawkes bel-  
les.

A large hous

Reedes of sun-  
dry colours.

*Caccicus*.

## The fyrst decade.

Holedus and  
Goualanus.

Golde in ry-  
uers faulinge  
from moun-  
taynes.

The maner  
of gathering  
golde.

Graynes of  
golde.

A masse of  
rude golde  
weighinge. ix  
ounces.

Cannaboa,  
kyng of the  
house of gold

Holsome wa-  
ter and plen-  
tie of fysh.

The day and  
nyght of e-  
qual length  
in Decēber.

Bydes breed  
in Decēber

The eleuati-  
on of the pole

The starres  
are cauled  
gardens of  
the pole.

hundredes to searche the countrey yet further. Amonge the which were Holedus and Goualanus, noble younge gentlemen & of great courage. And as they went towarde the mountaynes to seeke Guaccanarillus, dyuidinge the mountaynes betwene the one of them fownde on the one syde therof foure ryuers faulynge from the same mountaynes: and the other fownde. iii. on the other syde. In the sandes of all these ryuers is folowd great plentye of goulde, which thynhabitanes of the same lande which were with vs, gathered in this maner. Making holes in the sande with theyr handes, a Cubette deape, and takynge vp sande with their lefte handes from the botome of the same, they picked out graynes of goulde with their ryght handes withoute any more arte or cunnynge. And so deliuered it to othere men: who affirme that many of them thus gathered, were as bygge as tares or fychis. And I my selfe sawe a masse of rude goulde, (that is to say, suche as was neuer molten) lyke vnto suche stones as are fownde in the botomes of ryuers, weighinge nyne ounces, which Holedus my selfe fownde. Beinge contented with these signes, they returned to the Admirall to certifie him hereof. For the Admirall had commaunded vnder payne of punishment that they shuld meddle no further then their commission: which was only to searche the places with their signes. For the same went that there was a certeyne kyng of the mountaynes from whens those ryuers had their faule, whom they caule Cacicus Cannaboa that is, the lord of the house of golde. For they caule a house Boia, goulde, Caumi: and a kyng of Loide, Cacicus, as we haue sayde before. They affirme that there can noo where be found better fysh, nor of more pleasant tast, or more holsome then in these ryuers: also the waters of the same to be most holsom to drynke. Melchior hym selfe told me, that in the moneth of December, the days and nyghtes bee of equal length among the Canibales. But the sphere or circles of the heauen, agreeth not thereto. Albeit that in the same moneth, sume bydes make their nestes, and sume haue alredy hatched their egges by reason of the heate beinge rather continuall then extreme. He told me also when I questioned with hym as concerninge the eleuation of the pole from the horizontal lyne, that all the starres cauled *Plastrum* or charles wayne, are hydde vnder the North pole to the Canibales. And surely there returned none from thence at this viage, to whome there is more

credit to be gyuen, then to this man. But if he had byn skilfull in Astronomie, he shulde haue sayde that the day was al mosse equall with the night. For in no place towarde the stay of the sonne (cauled *solficium*) can the night be equall with the day. And as for them, they neuer came vnder the *Equinociall*, for as much as they had euer the northe pole theyr gyde, and euer eleuate in sight about the *Horizontall*. Thus haue I brievely written vnto yowre honoure, as muche as I thought sufficient at this tyme. And shall shortly hereafter (by Gods fauoure) wyte vnto you moze largely of suche matters as shall be dayly better knowne. For the admirall hym selfe (whome I vse famlyperly as my verye frende) hath promysed me by his letters, that he wyl gyue me knowlege of al such thynges as shall chaunce. He hath nowe chosyn a stronge place where he may buyld a Citie nere vnto a comodious haven. And hath already buylded many houses and a chapell in the whiche (as in a newe worlde heretofore voyde of all religion) god is dayly serued with .xiii. preestes accordinge to the maner of owre churches. When the tyme nowe approached when he promysed to sende to the kynge and queene, and haupnge prosperous wynde for that purpose, sent backe the. xii. Carauelles wherof we made mencion before it was no smaul hynderance and greefe, vnto hym: Especially consyderynge the death of his men whom he left in the Ilande at the fyrst vyage, wherby we are yet ignorant of many places & other secretes wherof we might otherwylse haue had further knowlege. But as tyme shall reueale them ageyne, so wyl I aduertise yowre of the same. And that you may the better knowe by conference had with the *Apothecaries* and marchaunt strangers *Sirophenicians*, what these Regions beare, and howe hotte theyr ground is, I haue sent you all kyndes of graynes, with the barke & inner partes of that tree whiche they suppose to bee the *Cynamome* tree. And yf it be your pleasure to taste eyther of the graynes, or of the smaule seedes the which you shoulde perceaue to haue fallen from these graynes, or of the wodde it selfe, touch them firste softly mouinge them to your lippes. For although they bee not hurtfull, yet for theyr excelle of heate, they are sharpe and byte the tongue, yf they remayne any whyle thereon. But if the tongue be blystered by tastynge of them, the same is taken away by drynkyng of water. Of

L.ii.

the

The Equinoctiall lyne.

A chapel and preestes.

Marchaunts' Sirophenicians.

The Cynamome tree.

## The fyrst decade.

Xilaloos or  
lignū Aloes.

the corne also wherof they make theyr breade, this brynget  
shall deliuer sume graynes to your Lordeshyppe bothe whyte  
and blacke: And therewith also, a Trunke of the tree of Aloes  
The which if you cutte in peeces, you shall feeles a sweete sa-  
uoure to proccade from the same. Thus fare you hartely wel.  
From the court of *Merbimna Campi*. The thyrde day before the  
Calendes of May. Anno. Domini, M. CCCC. XCIII.

C The thyrde boke of the fyrst Decade, to  
Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonye and  
Renuie to the kynge.

The fable of  
Phaeton.



kynge Ferdi-  
nandus and  
queene heli-  
sabeth

hercules.  
he meaneth  
the Ilandes.

hispaniola.

Ophir whe-

Owe desyre that folyshe Phaeton shulde ageine  
rule the Chariotes of the Sunne: And con-  
tende to drawe sweete lycours out of the  
harde spynne, wheras you requyre me to dys-  
scribe vnto you the newe worlde, folownde in  
the weste by the good fortune & gouernaunce  
of the Catholike pynces *Ferdinandus* and *He-  
lisabeth*, your Vncle and Aunte: shewyng me also the letters  
of kynge *Frederike* your vncle, wyrtten to me in the same be-  
halfe. But sythe you haue layde this burden on my backe, in  
whose power it is to commaunde me to take vppon me more  
then I am wel able. ye bothe shal receaue this precious stone,  
rudely closed in leade after my maner of workemanshyppe.  
Wherfore when you shall perceaue the lerned sorte frendelye:  
The malicious, enuiously: And the backebyters, furiously, to  
bende theyr sclaunderous darter agaynst owre fayre *Nymphes*  
of the Ocean, you shall freely proteste in howe short tyme, and  
in the myddeste of what troubles and calamities, you haue en-  
forced me to wypte of the same. Thus fare you well frome  
*Granata* the ninthe day before the Calendes of May.

C We haue declared in the boke here before, howe the Admi-  
rall passed by the coastes of the *Cambales* to the Ilande of *Hispa-  
niola* with his whole nauie. But now we entende further to  
shewe what he folownde as concernynge the nature of this I-  
lande, after that he had better searched the seacreates of the  
same: Likewyse of the Ilande of *Cuba* nere vnto it which he  
yet supposed to bee the firme lande. *Hispaniola* therfore (which  
he affirmeth to bee *Ophir*, wherof we reade in the thyrde boke  
of

of the kynges) is of latitude, fyue southe degrees : haupnge the northe pole eleuate on the northe syde. xxvii. degrees: And on the Southe syde (as they saye) xxii. degrees. It reacheth in length from the East to the Weste, seuen hundredeth and foure score myles. It is distant from the Ilandes of Gades (called Cales) xlix. degrees, and more as sum saye. The forme of the Ilande, resemblerth the leafe of a chesnutte tree. Vppon a high hyll on the North syde of the Ilande, he buylded a citie, bycause this place was most apte for that purpose by reason of a myne of stones which was nere vnto the same, settyng well bothe to buylde with, and also to make lyme. At the bottome of this hyll, is there a great playne of thre score myles in length: and in bredth sumwhere .xii. sumwhere .xx. myles where it is broadest, and .vi. myles where it is narrowest. Through this playne runne dyuers fayre ryuers of hollesome waters. But the greatest of them which is nauigable, fauleth into the haue of the citie for the space of halfe a furlonge. Howe fertile and fruitfull this valley is, you shal vnderstand by these thynges which folowe. On the shore of this ryuer, they haue lympted and enclosed certeyne grounde to make gardynes and orchardes, in the which al kyndes of bygger herbes, as radyshe, letulse, colewortes, bozage, and such other, were rypp within .xvi. dayes after the seede is sowne. Lykewyle Melones, Gourdes, Cucumers, and suche other, within the space of .xxxvi. dayes. These garden herbes, they haue freshe and greene all the whole yeare. Also the rootes of the canes or reedes, of the lycour wherof, suger is made, growe a cubette high within the space of .xv. dayes : but the lycoure is not yet hardened. The lyke they affirme of plantes or throuddes of younge vines : And that they haue the second yeare gathered ripe and sweete grapes of the same. But by reason of to muche rankenes, they beare but fewe clusters. Furthermore, a man of the countrey sowed a lyttle wheate about the Calendes of February, and brought with hym to the citie a handefull of the rypp eares of the same the thyrde day before the calendes of Aprill: which was that yeare the vigile of the Resurreccion of oure Lorde. Also, al kyndes of pulse, as beanes, peason, fytches, tares, and suche other, are rypp twyse in the yeare, as all they which come from thence, affirme with one voyce : yet that the grounde is not vniuer-

ther Salomons ships sayled for golde.

Isabella.

A playne of threescore myles of lengthe.

A token of maruelous fruitfulness,

herbes greene all the hole yeare.

Suger reeds plantes and vines.

Come and grayne rypp twyse a yeare

## The fyrst decade.

The Region  
of Cipanga or  
Cibana.  
Solde.

Foure greate  
ryuers.

The golden  
region of  
Cibana.

Vales and  
mountaynes.

The vale of  
Cibana.

Solde for  
hawkes bels.

fallly apte to beare wheate. In the meane tyme whyle these thynges were doinge, the Admirall sent owte a compaigne of xxx. men to searche the Region of *Cipanga*, otherwyle cauled *Cibana*. This Region is full of mountaynes and rockes: And the myddle backe of the hyle Ilande in the whiche is greate plentie of goulde. When they that went to searche the Region, were returned they reported maruelous thynges as touching the great ryches of this Region. Frome these mountaynes, descende foure greate ryuers, which by the maruelous industrie of nature, deuised the hyle Ilande into foure partes, in maner equall, ouerspreadinge and wateringe the hyle Ilande with their branches. Of these foure ryuers, the one reacheth towarde the East. This the inhabitantes caule *Iunna*: An other, towarde the Weste, and is cauled *Attibunicus*. The thirde towarde the Northe, named *Iachem*: the laste reacheth into the Southe, and is cauled *Naiba*. The daye before the Ides of Marche, the Admirall him selfe with al his horse men and foure hundreth footemen, marched directly towarde the South syde of the goulden Region. Thus passinge ouer the ryuer, the plaine and the mountayne which enuironed the other syde of the playne, he chaunced vpon an other vale the which a ryuer muche bygger then the fyrste, and many other meane ryuers runne through. When he had also conueighed his armie ouer the ryuer and passed the seconde vale whiche was in no part inferiour to the firste, he made away throughe the thirde mountayne, where was no passage before, and descended into an other vale which was now the beginninge of *Cibana*. Throughe this also runne many fluddes, and ryuers, out of euery hyll, and in the sandes of theym all, is folowde greate plentie of goulde. And when he had now entered thre score and twelue myles into the goulden region from the citie he intended to buyde a fortreffe vpon the toppe of a hyll, standing by the mowe of a certeyne great ryuer, that he might the better and more safelye searche the secretes of the inner partes of the Region. This he cauled the fortreffe of saynte Thomas. The which in the meane tyme whyle he was buydinge, the inhabitantes beinge desirous of hawkes belles and other of oore thynges, resorted dayly thither. To whom the Admirall declared, that if they wolde buyge goulde, they shulde haue what so euer they wolde aske, Forthwith turninge

ninge theyr backes and runnyng to the shore of the next ry-  
uer, they returned in a short tyme, bynginge with them their  
handes full of goulde. Amongest al other, there came a owld  
man bynginge with him two pybble stones of goulde weigh-  
inge an vnce, despynginge them to gyue him a bell for the same  
who when he sawe oure men maruell at the byggenes therof,  
he made signes that they were but smaule and of no value in  
respekte of sume that he had scene. And takyng in his hande  
foure stones the least wherof was as bygge as a walnut, and  
the byggest as bygge as an orange, he sayde that there was  
fownde peeces of goulde soo bygge in his countrey, beyng  
but halfe a dayes iourney from thense, and that they had no  
regarde to the gatheringe therof. Whereby we perceaued that  
they passe not muche for goulde in asmuch as it is goulde on-  
ly, but so farre esteeme it, as the hande of the artificer hathe  
fashioned it in any coomely fourme. For who doth greatly  
esteemeth rough marble or vnwrought Iuerye. But if they be  
wrought with the cunnyng hande of Phidias or Praxiteles, and  
shaped to the similitude of the fayre nimphes or fayeres of the  
sea (cauled Nereides) or the fayres of the woods, (cauled Hamadri-  
ades) they shal neuer lacke buyers. Besyde this owld man, there  
came also dyuers other, bynginge with them pypple stones of  
gold weighing .x. or .xii. drammes: And feared not to confesse,  
that in the place where they gathered that golde, there were  
found sūryme stones of gold as bygge as the heade of a chyld  
When he had tarped heare a fewe dayes, he sent one *Luxanus*,  
a noble younge geptylman with a fewe armed men to searche  
all the partes of this Region. Who at his returne, reported  
that thynhabitanes shewed him greater thinges thē we haue  
spoken of here before. But he dyd openly declare nothyng  
therof: which they thought was doone by the Admirales com-  
maundement. They haue wooddes full of certeyne spyes:  
but not suche as we commonly vse. These they gather euen  
as they do golde: that is as much as wyl serue for theyr pur-  
pose, euery man for hym selfe, to exchauge the same with the  
inhabitanes of other countreys adioyninge to them, for such  
thinges as they lacke, as dysches, portes, stooles, and suche  
other necessaries. As *Luxanus* returned to the Admiral, (which  
was about the Ides of Marche) he fownde in the wooddes,  
certeyne wylde vines, tyepe and of pleasaunt taste. But thyn-  
habitans

Graynes and  
pypple stones  
of golde.

They passe  
not for golde,  
in that it is  
golde onely  
but .xc.

Stones of  
golde as byg-  
as the heade  
of a chyld.

Spyes.

wylde vines  
of pleasaunt  
taste.

## The fyrst decade.

Fruitful mountaynes

Golde in the sandes of ryuers faulnge from the mountaynes.

Libertie and Idelnes. The mountaynes are coude.

The Ilande of Cuba.

Least any other pynce.

Discencion betweene the Portugales and Spaniards.

The Ilandes of Caboverde or Hesperides

habitantes passe not on them. This Region though it bee full of stones and rockes (and is therefore cauled *Cibana*, which is as muche to saye as a stone) yet it is well replenyshed with trees and pastures. Ye they instantly affirme, that if the grasse of these mountaynes bee cutte, it groweth ageyne within the space of foure dayes, higher then wheate. And for as muche as many showres of rayne doo faule in this Region, whercof the ryuers and fluddes haue their increase, in euery of the which, golde is founde myxtre with sande in all places, they iudge that the golde is dryuen from the mountaynes, by the vehement course of the streames which faule from the same, and runne into the ryuers. The people of this Region are gyuen to Idelnes and playe. For suche as inhabyte the mountaynes, syt quakyng for coude in the wynter season, & had rather soo wander bype and downe Idelly, then take the paines to make them apparell, wheras they haue wooddes full of gossypine cotton. But such as dwel in the vales or plaines feelee no coude in wynter. When the Admirall had thus searched the beginninge of the region of *Cibana*, he repayred to *Isabella* (for so he named the citie) where, leauinge the gouernance of the Ilande with his deputies, he prepared hym selfe to search further the lymettes of the Ilande of *Cuba* or *Iobanna*, which he yet doubted to bee the firme lande, and distant from *Hispaniola*. onely three score and ten myles. This dyd he with more speedy expedition, caulpyng to remembraunce the kinges commaundement, who wylled hym fyrst with all celeritie to ouer runne the coastes of the newe Ilandes, leaste any other prince shulde in the meane tyme attempte to inuade the same. For the Kyng of Portugale affirmed that it perteyned only to hym to discover these vnknown landes. But the byshop of Rome Alexander the. vi. to auoyd the cause of this discencion, graunted to the Kyng of Spayne by thauctoritie of his leaden bulles, that no other prince shulde bee so bould as to make any viages to any of those vnknown regions, lpyenge without the precinct of a directe lyne drawe from the North to the Southe a hundreth leagues westwarde without the paralelles of the Ilandes cauled *Capud Viride*. or *Cabouerde*, which we thynke to bee those that in owlde tyme were cauled *Hesperides*. These perteyne to the kyng of Portugale. And frome these, his pylottes whiche doo ycarely searche newe coastes and

and regions, directe their course to the Easte, saylunge euer  
towards the lefte hande by the backe of Aphyrike and the seas  
of the Ethiopians: Neyther to this day had the Portugales  
at any tyme sayled Southwarde, or Westwarde from the I-  
landes of Cabouerde. Preparieng therfore three shippes, he made  
haste towards the Ilande of Iohanna or Cuba whyther he came  
in shorte space, and named the poynt therof where he fyrst ar-  
ryued, Alpha and O: that is, the fyrste and the laste: for he  
supposed that there had byn thend of owre Easte bycause the  
sonne fauleth there: And of the weste, bycause it ryseth there.  
For it is apparence, that westwarde, it is the beginninge of  
India beyonde the ryuer of Ganges: And Eastwarde, the fur-  
thest ende of the same: which thinge is not contrary to reason  
forasmuche as the Cosmographers haue lefte the lymites of  
India beyonde Ganges vnderdetermined: where as also sume were  
of opinion that India was not farre fro the coastes of Spaine  
as we haue sayde before. Within the prospecte of the begyn-  
nyng of Cuba, he founde a commodious haven in the extreme  
angle of the Ilande of Hispaniola. For in this part, the Iland  
receaueth a greate goulfe. This haven, he named saynt My-  
colas porte, beinge scarcely .xx. leagues from Cuba. As he de-  
parted from hence and sayled westwarde by the south syde of  
Cuba, the further that he went, so muche the more the sea seem-  
ed to bee extended in breadth & to bende toward the south.  
On the south syde of Cuba, he founde an Ilande which thyn-  
habitanes caule Iamaica. This he affirmeth to bee longer and  
broder then the Iland of Sicilie: hauieng in it only one moun-  
taine, which on euery parte begynninge from the sea, ryseth  
by little and little into the myddest of the Ilande: And that  
soo playnely without rooghnes, that such as goo by to the  
toppe of the same, can scarcely perceaue that they ascende.  
This Ilande he affirmed to bee very fruitfull and full of peo-  
ple as well in thinner partes of the same as by the shore: And  
that thynhabitanes are of quicker wytte then in the other I-  
landes, and more experie artificers and warrelke men. For  
in many places where he woulde haue arryued, they came ar-  
med agens him and forbodde him with threathening wordes.  
But beinge ouercome, they made a league of frendship with  
hym. Thus departyng from Iamaica, he sayled towards the  
Weste with a prosperous wynde for the space of threescore &  
tenne dayes

The portus  
gales viages

Alpha and O

The ende of  
the East &  
west.

Note.  
India not far  
fro Spayne.

Saynt Myco-  
las porte.

The Iland of  
Iamaica.

Iamaica.

Quicke wytt  
ed people.

The compa-  
reng of the  
earth.

## The fyrst decade.

**Aurea Cher-  
sonesus, or  
Malaccha.**

**A secrete of  
Astronomie.**

**The ryuer of  
Ganges.**

**Dangerous  
streights by  
reason of ma-  
ny Ilandes.**

**The Admi-  
ral gaue na-  
mes to seven  
hundred the I-  
landes.  
thre thousand  
Ilandes.**

**A large haue**

**Rosted fyfthe  
and serpents  
of .viii. foote  
longe.**

tenne dayes: thinkinge that he had passed so farre by the com-  
 passe of the earth being vnderneath vs, that he had byn nere  
 vnto Aurea Chersonesus (nowe cauled Malaccha,) in oore Easte In-  
 dia beyonde the beginninge of Persides. For he playnely bele-  
 ued that he had lefte onely two of the twelue howres of the  
 sonne, which were unknowen to vs, for the olde wyters  
 haue lefte halfe the course of the sonne vntouchted, where as  
 they haue but onely discusst that superficiall parte of the  
 earth which lyeth betwene the Ilandes of Bades and the ry-  
 uer of Ganges: or at the vttermoste, to Aurea Chersonesus. In  
 this navigation, he chaunced on many furious seas, running  
 with a faule as it had byn the streames of fluddes: Also many  
 whorlepooles, and shelles, with many other dangers, and  
 streyghtes by reason of the multytude of Ilandes, which ley  
 on every syde. But not regardinge all these perilles, he deter-  
 myned to proceade vntyl he had certayne knowledge whether  
 Cuba were an Ilande or firme lande. Thus he sayled forwarde  
 coastinge euer by the shore towarde the weste for the space of  
 CC. xii. leaques, that is, aboute a thousande and thre hun-  
 dret myles: And gaue names to seven hundred Ilandes by  
 the waye: Leauynge also on the lefte hande (as he feared not  
 to reporte) thre thousande here and thre. But let vs nowe  
 returne to suche thinges as he fownde worthy to be noted in  
 this navigation. Saylinge therfore by the syde of Cuba, and  
 searchinge the nature of the places, he espied not farre from  
 Alpha and O, a large haue of capacite to harborowe manye  
 shippes: whose enterance is bendinge, beinge inclosed on  
 bothe sydes with capes or poyntes which receaue the water.  
 This haue is large within, and of exceadinge depthe. Say-  
 linge by the shore of this porte, he sawe not farre frome the  
 same, two cotages couered with reedes, and in many places  
 fyer kyndeled. Here he sente certeyne armed men oore of the  
 shippes to the cotages: where they fownde nother man nor  
 woman, but rostmeate enowgh. For they fownde certeyne  
 fyettes of woodde lyenge at the fyre, hauinge fyfthe on theym  
 abowt a hundred pounde weight, and two serpentes of .viii.  
 foote longe a piece, wherat marueylinge, and lokynge abowt  
 if they coude espye any of thynhabitanes, and that none ap-  
 peared in syght (for they fledde all to the mountaynes at the  
 comminge of oore men) they fell to theyr meate, and ate the  
 fyfthe

fyfhe taken with other mens trauayle: But they abſteyned fro  
the ſerpentes, which they affirme to differ nothinge from Cro  
codiles of Egypt, but onely in byggenes. For (as *Plinie* ſayth)  
Crocodiles haue ſumetymes byn ſownde of. xliiii. cubettes  
longe. But of theſe the byggeſt were but of. viii. fote. Thus be  
inge well reſtreined, they entered into the next woodde where  
they ſownde many of the ſame kynde of ſerpentes hangynge  
vppon botwghes of trees: of the which, ſume had theyr mou:  
thes tyed with ſtrynges, and ſume theyr teethe taken owt.  
And as they ſearched the places nere vnto the hauen, they  
ſawe aboute. lxx. men in the toppe of a byghe rocke, whiche  
ſledde as ſoone as they had eſpied owere men. Who by ſignes  
and tokens of peace, caulinge them ageyne, there was one  
which came nere them and ſtoode on the toppe of a rocke, ſee:  
myng as thowgh he were yet ferefull. But the Admiral ſent  
one *Didacus* to hym, a man of the ſame countrey, whom he had  
at his fyrſt vyage taken in the Iſlande of *Guanahani*, beinge  
nere vnto *Cuba*: wyllinge hym to come nere and not to bee a:  
frayde. When he harde *Didacus* ſpeke to him in his owne tonge  
he came boldly to hym: and ſhortly after reſorted to his co:  
pany, perſuadinge them to come without all feare. After this  
meſſage was doone, there deſcended frome the rockes to the  
ſhippes, about thre ſcore and ten of thynhabitantcs, pro:  
feringe frendſhippe and gentelnes to owere men: whiche the  
Admirall accepted thankfully, and gaue them dyuers rewar:  
des: And that the rather, for that he had intelligence by *Di:  
dacus* thenterpretoure, that they were the kynges fyſhers, ſent  
of theyr lord to take fyſhe ageynſt a ſolemne feaſte which he  
prepared for an other kyng. And wheras the Admirales men  
had eaten the fyſhe whiche they lefte at the fyre, they were  
the gladder therof, bycauſe they had lefte the ſerpentes. For  
there is nothinge amonge theyr delicate dyſhes, that they  
eſteeme ſo muche as theſe ſerpentes: In ſoo muche that it is  
no moze lawfull for the common people to eate of them, then  
peacockes oz pheſantes amonge vs. As for the fyſhes, they  
doubted not to take as many moze the ſame wyght. Weynge  
aſked why they fyrſt roſted the fyſhe which they intended to  
beate to their kyng. They answered, that they might bee the  
freſher and incorrupted. Thus ioyninge handes for a token  
of further frendſhip, every man reſorted to his owne. The

D.ii,

Admiral

Crocodiles of  
Egypte.*Didacus* thyn  
terpretour.The kynges  
fyſhers.Serpentes  
eſteemed for  
delicate meat  
Ophiophagi.

## The fyrst decade.

Blossomes &  
frutes bothe  
at one tyme.

Trees which  
beare gourds

A multitude  
of Ilandes.

Potte water.

A straunge  
kynde of fyf-  
syngge,  
A huntynge  
fyshe.

Abundance  
of tortoyles.

Admirall went forwarde as he had appoynted, folowing the  
faulinge of the sonne from the beginninge of *Cuba* cauled *Al-*  
*pha* and *O*. The shores or sea bankes euen vnto this haue, al-  
beit they be ful of trees, yet are they toogh with mountains.  
Of these trees, some were ful of blossomes and flowres, and  
other laden with frutes. Beyond the haue the lande is more  
fertile and peopulous, whose inhabitantes are more gentyll  
and more desyrus of oovre thinges. For as sone as they had  
espied oovre shippes, they flocked all to the shore, bynginge  
with them suche breade as they are accustomed to eate, and  
gourdes full of water, offeringe theym vnto oovre men, and  
further desyringe them to coome alande. In all these Ilandes  
is a certeyne kynde of trees as bygge as elmes, whiche beare  
gourdes in the steade of frutes. These they vse only for drin-  
kyng pottes, and to fetch water in, but not for meate, for  
the inner substance of them, is sowzer then gaulle, & the barke  
as harde as any shelle. At the Ides of Maye, the watche men  
lokinge oovre of the toppe castell of the shyppe towarde the  
Southe, sawe a multitude of Ilandes standinge thicke toge-  
ther, beyng all well replenished with trees, grasse, and her-  
bes, and wel inhabytred. In the shore of the continent, he chaf-  
ced into a nauigable ryuer whose water was soo hotte, that  
no man myght endure to abyde his hande therein any tyme.  
The day folowinge, espying a farre of a Canoa of fysher men  
of thynhabitanes, fearinge least they shulde slye at the syght  
of oovre men, he commaunded certeyne to assaile them pryvily  
with the shyppe boates. But they fearinge nathing, taryed  
the commyng of oovre men. Nowe shal you heare a newe kind  
of fyshinge. Lyke as we with greyhoundes doo hunt hares,  
in the playne fieldes. So doo they as it were with a huntyn-  
g fysh, take other fyshes. This fysh was of shape or fourme  
unknownen vnto vs: but the body therof, not muche vnlyke a  
greate yele: hauinge on the hynder parte of the heade, a very  
toogh skynne, lyke vnto a greate bagge or purse. This fysh  
is tyed by the syde of the boare with a corde lette downe soo  
farre into the water, that the fysh maye lye close hyd by the  
keele or bottome of the same, for thee may in no case abyde the  
sight of the ayer. Thus when they espie any greate fysh, or  
tortoyse (wherof there is great abundance bygger then great  
targettes) they lee the corde at lengthe, But when the feeler  
her

her selfe loosed, shee enuadeth the fyllthe or tortoyse as swift-  
ly as an arrowe. And where she hath once fastened her hold  
shee casteth the purse of skynne wherof we spake before: And  
by drawyng the same togyther, soo graspeleth her pray, that  
no mans strength is sufficient to vnloose the same, excepte by  
lyttle and lyttle drawinge the lyne, shee bee lyfted sumwhat  
aboue the bynne of the water. For then, as sone as she se-  
eth the brightnes of the ayer, shee letteth the goo her holde.  
The praye therfore, beinge nowe drawen nere to the bynne  
of the water, there leapeth suddenly owte of the boate into  
the sea soo manye fyllthes, as maye suffice to holde faste the  
praye, vntyll the reste of the company haue taken it into the  
boate. Which thinge doone, they loose soo muche of the cord,  
that the hunting fyllthe, may ageyne returne to her place with  
in the water: where by an other corde, they let downe to her  
a peece of the praye, as we vse to rewarde grehoundes after  
they haue kylled theyr game. This fyllthe, they caule *Gudicanil*,  
But oware men caule it *Reuersum*. They gaue oware men foure  
tortoysses taken by this meanes: And those of such byggenes  
that they almoste fylled theyr fyllthinge boate. For these fyll-  
thes are esteemed amonge them for delicate meate. Oware men  
recompensed them ageyne with other rewarde, and soo lette  
them departe. Beinge asked of the compasse of that lande,  
they answered that it had no ende westwarde. Most instant-  
ly despyng the Admirall to coome alande: or in his name to  
sende one with the to salute their *Caxicus*, (that is) their kinge:  
Affirmyng that he wolde gyue oware men many presentes, yf  
they wolde goo to hym. But the Admiral, leaste he shalde bee  
hyndered of the vyage which he had begunne, refused to goo  
with them. Then they despyred to knowe his name, and to wold  
oware men lykewyse the name of theyr kyng. Thus sayling on  
yet further euer toward the West, within fewe dayes he came  
nere vnto a certeyne exceeding high mountayne, wel inhabyted  
by reason of the great fertillite of the same. Thinhabitantes  
of this mountayne, brought to oware shippe, breade, gossam-  
pine cotton, cunnies, and sundry kyndes of wyldfowle: de-  
maundyng relligiously of thinterpretours, if this nation de-  
cended not from heauen. The kyng of this people, and dy-  
uers other sage men that stood by hym, informed hym that  
that lande was no Islande, Shortly after, enteringe into one

fyllther men.

The fyllthe  
Gudicanil.humaine peo-  
ple.A mountaine  
fruitefull and  
well inhaby-  
ted.

## The fyrst decade.

Dogges of  
strange shape  
and dumme.  
Duckes.  
hearons.

Streightes.

whyte and  
thicke water.

Wooddes of  
date trees.

men appare-  
led like white  
fryers.

of the Ilandes beinge on the lefte hande of this lande, they  
fownde no body therein : for they fledde al at the commyng of  
ovre men. yet fownde they there fowre dogges of maruelous  
deformed shape, and suche as coulde not barke. This kynd of  
dogges, they ate as we do goates. Here is great plentie of  
geese, duckes, and hearons. Betwene these Ilandes and the  
continente, he entered into soo narowe streyghtes, that he  
coulde scarcely turne backe the shippes : And these also so nar-  
rowe, that the keele of the shypps sumtyme rased on the sandes  
The water of these streyghtes, for the space of fortie myles,  
was white and thicke lyke unto mylke, and as thowgh mele  
had byn sparkeled through oure al that sea. And when they  
had at the lengthe escaped these straghtes, and were now  
coome into a mayne and large sea, and had sayled thereon for  
the space of foure score myles, they espyed an other exceedinge  
hygh mountayne, whyther the Admirall resorted to store his  
shippes with freische water and fuel. Beare amonge certeyn  
wooddes of date trees, and pyncable trees of exceedinge height  
he fownd two natue springes of freische water. In the meane  
tyme whyle the woodde was cuttynge and the barrelles fyl-  
lyng, one of oure archers went into the wood to hunt: where  
he espyed a certeyn man with a whyte vesture, soo lyke a  
fryer of the order of saynt Marye of Mercedis, that at the fyrste  
sight he supposed it had byn the Admiralles preeste which he  
brought with hym, beinge a man of the same order. But two  
other folowed hym immediatly oure of the same wooddes,  
shortly after, he sawe a farre of a hole company of men clo-  
thed in apparel, beinge aboute xxx. in nomber. Then turning  
his backe and cryinge oure to his felowes, he made haste to  
the shippes with all that he myght dyne. These apparelled  
men, made signes and tokens to hym to tary and not to bee  
afrayde. But that notwithstandinge, he ceased not to flye.  
The Admirall beinge aduertised hereof, and not a lyttle reioy-  
syng that he had fownde a ciuile people, in continently sent  
forth armed men, with commaundement, that yf neede should  
soo requyre, they shulde enter fortie myles into the Ilande,  
untill they myght fynde eyther those apparelled men, or other  
inhabitanes of that countrey. When they hadde passed ouer  
the woodde, they came into a greate playne full of grasse and  
herbes, in which appeared no token of any pache way. Here  
attemptinge

attemptinge to goo throught the grasse and herbes, they were  
 so entangled and bewrapte therein, that they were scarcely a-  
 ble to passe a myle, the grasse beinge there lyttle lower then  
 owre rype corne. Beinge therfore weryed, they were enforced  
 to retorne ageyne, syndyng no pathe way. The day folowing  
 he sent forth .xxv. armed men an other way: Commanding  
 them to make diligent searche and inquisition what maner of  
 people inhabited the land. Who departinge, when they had  
 rownde not farre from the sea syde certeyne steppes of wyld  
 beastes, of the which they suspected sum to bee of Lyons feete  
 beinge stricken with feare, returned backe ageyne. As they came  
 they rownde a woodde in the which were many natue vines  
 here and there crepinge abowte highe trees, with many other  
 trees bearinge aromaticall frutes and spyes. Of these vines  
 they browght with them into Spaine many clusters of grapes  
 very ponderous and full of lycoure. But of the other frutes,  
 they browght none because they putrified by the waye in the  
 shippe, and were caste into the sea. They saye also that in the  
 laundes or medowes of those wooddes, they sawe flockes of  
 greate cranes twofe as bygge as owres. As he went forward  
 and turned his sayles towarde certeyne other mountaynes, he  
 espied two corages on the shore, in the whiche he sawe onely  
 one man: who beinge browght to the shippe, signified with  
 heade, fyngers, and by al other signes, that he coulde deuise  
 that the lande which lay beyonde those mountaynes, was ver-  
 ry full of people. And as the Admirall drewe nere the shore of  
 the same, there mette hym certeyne *Canoes* hauinge in them ma-  
 ny people of the countrey, who made signes and tokens of  
 peace and frendeshyp. But here *Didacus* thinterpretour whiche  
 vnderstoode the language of th inhabitants of the beginning  
 of *Cuba*, vnderstode not them one whytte, wherby they confy-  
 dred that in sundry prouinces of *Cuba*, were sundry languages  
 He had also intelligence, that in the inlande of this Region,  
 was a kynge of greate power, and accustomed to weare appa-  
 rell. He sayth that all the tracte of this shore, was drowned  
 with water and full of mudde, besette with many trees, after  
 the maner of owre maryshes. Yet wher eas in this place they  
 wente alande for freshe water, they rownde many of the shel-  
 fyshes in the whiche pearles are gathered. But that coulde  
 not cause the Admirall to tracte the tyme there, entendinge at  
 this

grasse almost  
 as bygge as  
 corne.

Steppes of  
 wyld beastes  
 feete.

Natue vines

Trees bea-  
 ringe spyes  
 and sweete  
 frutes.

Greate Cra-  
 nes.

Dyvers lan-  
 guages in the  
 Ilande of  
 Cuba.

Pearles in  
 the shel fyshes.

## The fyrst decade.

this biage, only to proue howe many landes & seas he coulde discover accordinge to the kynges commaundement. As they yet proceeded forward, they sawe here and there al the waye alonge by the shore, a great smoke rysinge, vntyll they came to an other mountayne foure score myles distant. There was no rocke or hyll that coulde be scene, but the same was all of a smoke. But whether these fyres were made by thynhabitanties for their necessary busynes, or as we are wont to sette beacons on fyre when we suspecte thapproche of owre enemies, thereby to gyue warninge to theyr neyghbours to bee in a redynes, and gather togyther if perhappes owre men shulde attempte any thinge ageynst them, or otherwyle as seemethe most lykely, to caule them togyther as to a wonder to behould owre shippes, they knewe yet no certentie. In this tracte, the shores bended sumetyme towarde the Southe, and sumetyme towarde the Weste and westesouthwest: And the sea was euery where entangeled with Ilandes: by reason whereof, the keeles of the shippes often tymes rased the sandes for halownes of the water: So that the shippes beinge very sore bzused and appayred the sayles, cables, and other tackelinges, in manner rotten, and the byracles, (especially the byskette breade) corrupted by takynge water at the riftes euyl closed, the Admirall was enforced to turne backe ageyne. This laste poynte where he touched of *Cuba* (not yet beinge knowen to be an Ilande) he cauled *Euangelista*. Thus turning his sayles toward other Ilandes lyinge not farre from the supposed continente, he chaunced into a mayne sea where was suche a multitude of greate tortoyles, that sumetyme they stayed the shippes. Not longe after, he entered into a gulfe of whyte water, lyke vnto that wherof we spake before. At the lenth fearing the shelles of the Ilands, he returned to the shore of *Cuba* by the same way which he came. Here a multitude of thynhabitanties, as well women as men, resorted to hym with cheerefull countenance and without feare: bringynge with them poppingayes breade, water, and cunnys: But especially stocke dones much hygger then obores: which he affirmeth, in sauour and taste, to bee muche moze pleasaunt then oboe partryches. Wherfore where as in eatinge of them he perceaued a certeyne sauoure of spyce to proceade from them, he commaunded the crowpe to bee opened of suche as were newly kylled, and fownde the same

The sea entangeled  
with Ilandes

Euangelista.

A multitude  
of great tortoyles  
A goulfe of  
whyte water  
humaine people.

Stocke dones  
of more pleasaunt  
taste than the  
partryches.

Came full of sweete spyes, whiche he argued to bee the cause of theyr strange taste. For it standeth with good reason, that the desire of beastes, shulde drawe the nature and qualitie of theyr accustomed nuryment. As the Admirall harde masse on the shoze, there came towarde hym a certeyne gouernour, a man of foure score yeates of age, and of great grauitie, although he were naked sauinge his pryue partes. He had a greate trayne of menne waytinge on hym. All the while the preeste was at masse, he shewed hym selfe verie humble and gaue reuerente attendaunce with graue and demure countenance. When the masse was ended, he presented to the Admirall, a baskette of the frutes of his countrey, despyringe the same with his owne handes. When the Admirall had gently interteyned hym, despyringe leaue to speake, he made an oration in the presence of *Didacus* thinterpreteur, in this effecte. I haue byn aduertised (moste mighty prince) that you haue of late with greate power subdued many landes and Regions hitherto unbeknowne to you: and haue brought no little feare vpon all the people and inhabitantes of the same. The which your good fortune, you shal beate with lesse insolencie, if you remember that the soules of men haue two iourneyes after they are departed from this bodye. The one towarde darke, prepared for suche as are iniurious and cruell to man kynde: The other pleasaunt and delectable, ordeyned for the which in theyr lyfe tyme, loued peace and quietnes. If therefore you acknowledge your selfe to bee mortall, and consider that every man shall receaue condigne rewarde or punishment for such thinges as he hath done in this life, you wyl wronge fully hurte no man. When he had sayde these wordes and of ther lyke, which were declared to the Admirall by thinterpreteur, he marueylinge at the iudgemente of the naked olde man, answered, that he was gladde to heare his opinion as touching the sundry iourneys and rewarde of soules departed from theyr bodyes: Supposinge that nother he, or any other of th inhabitantes of those Regions, had had any knowledge thereof. Declaringe further that the chiefe cause of his comynge thither was to instructe them in such godly knowledge and trewe religion: And that he was sente into those countreys by the Christian kynge of Spayne (his lord and maister) for the same purpose: And specially to subdue and

The humantie of a reuerende owlde gouernour.

An oration of the naked gouernour.

Theyr opinion of the soul of man.

Desyre of golde founde that which religion coulde not fynde.  
Virtus post humum.

E.i. pnyfthe

## The fyrst decade.

puniſhe the Canibales and ſuch other miſcheuous people: And to defende innocentes ageynſt the violence of ſuch euyl doers wyllynge hym and all other ſuch as embraſed vertue, in no caſe to bee aſtrayde: But rather to open his mynde vnto him, if eyther he, or any other ſuche quiete men as he was, hadde ſuſceyned any wronge of theyr neyghbours: and that he wold ſee the ſame reuenged. Theſe comfortable wordes of the Admirall ſoo pleaſed the olde man, that notwithstanding his extreeme age, he woulde gladly haue gone with the Admirall as he had doone in deede, if his wyfe and chyl dren had not hyndered hym of his purpoſe. But he marueyled not a lytle, that the Admirall was vnder the dominion of an other: And muche more, when thinterpretour tolde hym of the glorie, magnificence, pompes, greate power, and furnymentes of warre of olde kyn ges, and of the multitudes of cities and colonies which were vnder theyr dominions. Intendynge theſe foze to haue gonne with the Admirall, his wyfe and children fell proſtrate at his feete, with teares deſpyr ynge hym not to forſake them and leaue them deſolate. At whoſe pytyfull requieſtes, the worthy olde man beinge moued, remayned at home to the comfort of his people and familie, ſatiffyenge rather them then hym ſelfe. For not yet ceaſynge to wonder, and of heauy countenaunce bccaule he myght not departe, he demaunded oftentymes if that lande were not heauen, which brought forth ſuche a kynde of men. For it is certeyne, that amonge them, the lande is as common as the ſonne and water: And that Wyne and Wyne (the ſeedes of all myſellecte) haue no place with them: They are contente with too lytle, that in ſoo large a countrey, they haue rather ſuperfluitie the ſcarſenes. Soo that (as we haue ſayde befoze) they ſeeme to lyue in the goulden worlde, without toyle, lyuinge in open gardens, not intrenched with dykes, dpydded with hedges, or defended with waules. They deale crewely one with an other, without lawes, without bookes, and without Iudges. They take hym for an euyl and miſcherous man, which rather pleaſure in doinge hurt to other. And albeit that they deſpyte not in ſuperfluities, yet make they prouiſion for thincreaſe of ſuche rootes, wherof they make theyr breade, as Maizum, Lucet, and Ages, contented with ſuche ſimple dyet, wherby health is preſerued, and dyſeaſes auoyded, The Admirall therefore

The Glandas  
common as  
the ſunne and  
water.

The golden  
worlde.

Prouiſio with  
out care.

Simple diete

therfore departinge from thence, and myndinge to retorne ageyne shortly after, chaunced to coome ageyne to the Ilande of *Jamaica* beinge on the south syde therof: and coasted all a longe by the shore of the same, from the Weste to the East. From whose last corner on the East syde, when he sawe toward the North on his lefte hande, certeyn high mountains he knewe at the length that it was the south syde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, which he had not yet passed by. Wherefore at the Calendes of September, enteringe into the haven of the same Ilande, cauled saynt *Nicolas* haven, he repayred his shippes to thintent that he myght ageyne wast and spoyle the Ilandes of the *Tanibales*, and burne all theyr Canoas, that those raueninge wolues myght no longer persecute and deuoure the innocent sheepe. But he was at this tyme hyndered of his purpose by reason of a dyscase which he had gotten with to much watchinge. Thus beinge feeble and weake, he was ledde of the maryners to the cite of *Isabella*, where, with his two bytherne which were there, & other his familiers, he recovered his health in shorte space. yet coulde he not at this tyme assaile the *Tanibales*, by reason of sedicion that was risen of late amonge the *Spanyarden* which he had left in *Hispaniola*, wherof we wyll speake moze hereafter. Thus fare ye wel.

The fourth booke of the fyrst decade to

*Lodowike Cardinall of Aragonie.*



*Olonus* the Admirall of the Ocean, returninge (as he supposed) from the continent or firme lande of *East India*, had aduertisement that his brother *Boilus* & one *Peter Margarita*, an old familiar of the kinges, and a noble man, with diuers other of those to whom he had left the gouernemēt of the Ilande, were of corrupted mynde ageynst him, departed into *Spayne*. Wherefore as wel to purge him of such crimes as they shuld ley to his charge, as also to make a supply of other men in the place of them which were returned, & especially to prouyde for vitayles, as wheat, wyne, oyle, and such other which the *Spanyarden* are accustomed to eate, because they coulde not yet well agree with such meates as they founde in the Ilandes, determined thort

E.ii.

ly to

The Iland of *Jamaica*.

*Hispaniola*.

The *Tanibales*.

Sickenes of to much watchinge.

*East India*.

The *Spanyarden* rebelle in the Admiralls absence.

## The fyrst decade.

ly to take his hyage into Spayne. But what he dyd before his departure, I wyll brefely rehearse.

The kynges  
of the Ilande  
rebell.

The Spani-  
ardes misbe-  
haviour.

Guarionerius  
the kynge of  
the great vale  
Didacus the  
interpretour.

Caunaboa,  
the kynge of  
the howle of  
goide.

Capitayne ho-  
ieda.

The kynges of the Ilandes which had hitherto lyued quietly and content with theyr lytle whiche they thowght abundante, wheras they nowe perceaued that othere men began to fasten foote within theyr Regions and to beare rule amonge them, tooke the matter so greuously, that they thowght nothinge elles but by what meanes they myght utterly destroy them, and for euer abolyfhe the memory of theyr name. For that kynde of men (the Spaniardes I meane which folowed the Admirall in that nauigation,) was for the most parte brutely, regardynge nothinge but Idlenes, playe, and libertie: And wolde by no meanes absteyne from iniuries: Raupfynge the womē of the Ilandes before the faces of their husbands fathers, and brethrene: By which theyr abhominable mysde maynour, they disquieted the myndes of all thynhabitanes: In so much that where so euer they founde any of othere men vnprepared, they slewe them with suche spercenes and gladnes, as thowgh they had offered sacryfice to God. Intendynge therefore to pacifie their troubled myndes, and to purgysse them that slew his men before he departed from thence, he sent for the kynge of that vale, which in the booke before, we describhed to bee at the foote of the mountaynes of the Region of Cibana. This kynges name was Guarionexius: who, the more streghly to conceple vnto hym the frendeshyppe of the Admirall, gaue his syster to wyfe to Didacus, a man from his chyldes age browght vp with the Admirall, whom he vsed for his interpretour in the prouinces of Cuba. After this, he sent for Caunaboa, cauled the lorde of the howle of goilde: that is, of the mountaynes of Cibana, ffor this Caunaboa, he sent one capitayne Hoieda, whom the dictionaries of Caunaboa had enforced to keepe his howlde bysiegeinge ffor the space of. xxx. dayes, the fortreffe of saynte Thomas, in the which Hoieda with his ffortie souldiers, stood at theyr defence, vntyll the comminge of the Admirall. Whyle Hoieda remayned with Caunaboa, many ambassadours of the kynges of dyuers Regions were sene to Caunaboa, perswadinge hym in no condicion to permitte the Christians to inhabite the Ilande, except he had rather serue then rule. On the other partie, Hoieda aduertised Caunaboa to goo to the Admirall, and to make a league of frendeshyp with hym.

hym. But the ambassadours on the contrary part, threatened hym, that yf he wolde soo doo, the other kynges wolde invade his Region. But *Hoieda* aunswered theym ageyne, that wheras they conspired to maynteyne their libertie, they shuld by that meanes be browght to seruitude & destruction if they entended to resist or keepe warre ageinst the Christians. Thus *Caunaboa* on the one syde and the other, beinge troublede as it were a rocke in the sea, beaten with contrary fluddes, & much more vexed with the stormes of his gyltie conscience for that he had priuileie slaine .xx. of othere men vnder pretence of peace feared to coome to the Admirall. But at the length, hauing cogitated this deceyte, to haue slayne the Admirall and his company vnder the colour of frendshippe if oportunitie wold soo haue seruede, he repayed to the Admirall with his hole familie and many other wayting on hym, armed after theyr manner. Beinge demaunded why he browght soo greate a rout of men with hym, he aunswered that it was not decenre for soo great a prince as he was, to goo forth of his howse without suche a bande of men. But the thinge chaunced much otherwise then he looked for. For he fell into the snares which he had prepared for other. For wheras by the way he began to repent hym that he came forth of his howse, *Hoieda* with many fayre wordes and promyses, browght hym to the Admirall: At whose commaundement, he was immediatly taken & put in prison: So that the sowles of othere men were not longe from their bodies vnreruenged. Thus *Caunaboa* with all his familie beinge taken, the Admirall was determined to runne ouer the Ilande. But he was certified that there was such famine amonge the inhabitants, that there was alredye syftie thousande menne deade therof: And that they dyed yet dayly as it were rotten sheepe: The cause wherof was wel knownen to bee theyr owne obstinacie and forwardnes. For wher as they sawe that othere men entended to choose them a dwelling place in the Ilande, supposinge that they myght haue driven them from thence if the bytailes of the Ilande shoulde fayle, they determyned with them selues, not only to leaue sowing and plantyng, but also to destroy and plucke vp by the rootes euery man in his owne region, that whiche they had alredye sowen of both kyndes of breade wherof we made mencion in the fyrst booke. But especially amonge the mountaynes of

kyngz Caunaboa, had slaine the Spanyardes.

Caunaboa espyreth the Admiralles death.

Fayre wordes make fooles fayne.

Famine in the Ilande of Hispaniola.

The hunger of golde. caya sceth greas famine.

## The fyrst decade.

*Cibaua*, otherwyse cauled *Cipanga*, for as muche as they hadde knoweledge that the golde which abundeth in that Region, was the cheefe cause that deteyned oovre men in the Ilande. In the meane tyme, he sent forth a Capitayne with a bande of men to searche the lowthe syde of the Ilande. Who at his returne, reported that throughte out all the Regions that he trauallyed, there was suche scarcenes of breade, that for the space of .xvi. dayes he ate nowght elles but the rootes of herbes, and of younge date trees, or the fruites of other wyldre trees. But *Guarionexius*, the kynge of the vale lyinge beneth the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose kyngedome was not soo wasted as the other, gaue oovre menne certeyne bytayles.

The towre of  
conception.

Within a fewe dayes after, bothe that the iourneys myght bee the shorter, and also that oovre men myght haue more safe places of refuge, if the inhabitantes shuld hereafter rebell in lyke maner, he buylded an other fortesse (whiche he cauled the towre of Conception) betwene the citie of *Isabella* and saint *Thomas* fortesse, in the marches of the kyngdome of this *Guarionexius* within the precincte of *Cibaua* vpon the syde of *Ahyll*, hauynge a fayre ryuer of hollesome water runnyng hard by the same. Thus when the inhabitantes sawe newe buyldynges to bee dayly erected, and oovre shippes lying in the harbor rotten and halfe broken, they beganne to despayre of any hope of libertie, & wandered by and downe with heuie chere. From the towre of Conception, searchynge diligently the inner partes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, there was a certeine kyng whiche gaue them a masse of rude golde, as bygge as a mans fyft, weighing. xx. vnces. This golde was not fownde in the banke of that ryuer, but in a heape of drye earthe: and was lyke vnto the stone cauled *Tofus*, whiche is soone resoluved into lande. This masse of golde, I my selfe sawe in *Casstile*, in the famous citie of *Methymna Campi*, where the court lay all that wynter. I sawe also a great peece of pure *Electrum*: of the whiche belles and apothecaries morters, and many suche other vessels and instrumentes maye bee made, as were in olde tyme of copper of the citie of *Corinthus*. This peece of *Electrum*, was of such weight, that I was not onely with both my handes vnable to lifte it from the grounde, but also not of strengthe to remoue it eyther one waye or an other. They asseymed that it wayde more then thre hundred weight

A masse of  
gold weighing.  
xx. ounces.  
*Tofus*.

*Electrum* is a  
metall naturally  
mixt of  
one portion  
of golde & an  
other of siluer  
beinge of pro-  
prie to be:

weight, after. viii. unces to the pounde. It was founde in the howle of a certen prynce, and lefte hym by his predecessours. And albeit that in the dayes of thynhabitantes yet lyinge, *Electrum* was no where digged, yet knewe they where the myne therof was: but owze men with muche adoo, coulde hardely cause them to shewe them the place, they boze them suche priuie harred. yet at the length, they brawght theym to the myne, beyng nowe ruinate and stopped with stones and rubbyshe. It is muche easier to dygge then is the iren myne: and myght bee restozed agein, if myners and other woozke-men skylfull therein, were appoynted therto. Not farre from the towre of Conception, in the same mountaynes, is found great plentie of Amber: and owte of certen rockes of the same distilleth a substance of the yelow colour whiche the paynters vse. Not farre from these mountaynes are many greete wooddes, in the which are none other trees then brasile, whiche the Italians caule *Verzino*. But here perhappes (right noble prynce) yow woulde aske what shoulde be the cause, that where as the Spanyardes haue brought owte of these Ilandes certen shippes laden with brasile, sumwhat of gossam: pine cotton, a quantitie of amber, a lyttel golde, and sum spices, why they haue not broughte suche plentie of golde and suche other ryche marchaundies as the fruitfulnessse of these regions seeme to promise. To this I answere, that when *Colonus* the admirall was lykewise demaunded the cause hereof, he made answere that the Spanyardes whiche he tooke with hym into these regions, were gyuen rather to slepe, pley, and ydlenesse, then to labour: And were more audious of sedition and newes, then desyrans of peace and quietnesse: Also that beyng gyuen to lycenciousnes, they rebelled & forsooke hym, fyndyng matter of false accusations agaynst hym, by cause he went aboute to repress the outtragiousenes. By reason wherof he was not yet able to breake the power of the inhabitantes, and freely to possesse the full dominion of the Ilande. And these hynderaunces to be the cause that hit herto the gaynes haue scarcely counteruayled the charges. Albeit, euen this yere whyle I wyte these thynges at owze requeste, they gathered in twoo moonethes the summe of a thousande and twoo hundred poundes weight of golde. But because we intende to speake more largely of these thynges

way payson, and was therfore in owldetyme in greater estimation then golde.

The myne of *Electrum*.

An other kynde of amber is taken out of greete whale fishes Orpement or oker.

wooddes of brasile trees.

Causes of hinderance.

Lycenciousnes of too much libertie

And this only gathered & not digged out of the bowels of the mine

in theyr

## The fyrst decade.

The people  
make supplica-  
tion to stand  
to their tribu-  
te

Famine,

The nature  
of the Region  
disposeth the  
maner of the  
people.

kyng Cana-  
boa in capti-  
uic.

The persuasi-  
on of Cana-  
boa.

In theyr place, we wyll now retourne from whense we haue digressed. When the inhabitantes perceaued that they could by no meanes shake the yoke from their neckes, they made humble supplication to the Admirall that they myght stande to theyr tribute, and apply them selues to reincrease the fruites of theyr countrey, beinge nowe almoste wasted. He graunted them theyr requeste: and appoynted such order that euery Region shulde paye their tribute, with the commodities of theyr countreys, accordinge to theyr portion, and at suche tyme as they were agreed vppon. But the violent famine dyd frustrate all these appoyntmentes. For all the trauayles of theyr bodies, were scarcely able to suffice to fynde them meate in the wooddes, whereby to susteyne theyr lyues, beinge of longe tyme contented with rootes and the fruites of wyld trees. Yet manye of the kynges with theyr people, euen in this extreme necessitie, brought parte of theyr tribute: whiche humbly desyringe the Admirall to haue compassion of theyr calamities, and to beare with them yet a whyle, vntyll the Island were restored to the owlde state. Promysinge further, that that which was nowe wantinge, shulde then bee double recompensed. But fewe of the inhabitantes of the mountaynes of Cibaut, kepte theyr promyse, because they were sore oppressed with famine then any of the other. They saye, that the inhabitantes of these mountaynes, differ no lesse in maners and language from them which dwel in the playnes, the amonge vs, the rusticalles of the countrey from gentylmen of the court: wheras notwithstandinge, they lyue bothe as it were vnder one portion of heuen, and in many thinges, much after one fashon, as in nakednes, and rude simplicitie. But nowe lette vs retourne to Canaboa, the kyng of the howse of golde, beinge in captiuitie. When he perceaued him selfe to be caste in prison, frettinge and gratinge his teethe as it had bin a lyon of Libia, and dayely and nightlye deuisinge with hym selfe howe he myght bee deliuered, beganne to persuaide the Admirall, that for as muche as he had nowe taken vnto his dominion the Regis of Cipanga or Cibaut (wherof he was king) it shulde bee expedient to sende thither a garrison of Christian men, to defende the same from the incursions of his owld enemyes and borderers. For he sayde, that it was signified vnto hym, that the countrey was wasted and spoyled with  
such

suche incursions. By this crafty deuise, he thought to haue brought to passe, that his brother whiche was in that region, and the other his kynnesfolkes and frendes with their adherentes, shoulde haue taken, eyther by slepyghte or force, as many of owre men, as myght haue redeemed hym. But the Admirall vnderstandynge his crafty meanyng, sente <sup>Holieda</sup> with suche a company of men, as might vanquish the Cibauians, if they shulde moue warre ageynst them. Oure men had scarcely entered into the Region, but the brother of <sup>Cumaboa</sup> came agensst them with an armie of fyue thousande naked menne, armed after theyr maner with clubbes, arrowes typte with bones, and speares made harde at the endes with fyre. He stole vpon owre men beyng in one of theyr howses: and encamped rounde about the same on euery syde. This Cibauian, as a man not ignorant in the disciplyne of warre, as before the distance of a furlonge from the howse, diuided his armye into fyue batayles, appoyntinge to euery of them a circuit by equal diuision: And placed the froont of his owne batayle, directlye ageynst owre men. When he had thus set his batayles in good array, he gaue certeyne signes that the hole army shulde marche forwarde in order with equal paces, and with a lacharme freshly assaile theyr enemies, in such sort that none might escape. But owre men iudginge it better to encounter with one of the batayles, then to abyde the brunt of the hole army, gaue onfet on the mayne batayle aranged in the playne, bycause that place was most commodious for the horsmen. When the horsmen therfore hadde gyuen the charge, they ouerthrowe them with the breastes of theyr horses, and slewe as many as abode thynde of the fyght. The residue beinge stryken with feare, disparcelled, and fledde to the mountaynes and rockes: from whense they made a pytifull howlyng to owre men, desyringe them to spare them: protestinge that they wolde neuer more rebelle, but doo what so euer they wolde commaunde them, if they wolde suffer them to lyue in theyr owne countrey. Thus the brother of <sup>Cumaboa</sup> beinge taken, the Admirall licenced the people to resorte euery man to his owne. These thynges thus fortunately achieved this Region was pacified. Amonge those mountaynes, the vale which <sup>Cumaboa</sup> inhabited, is cauled <sup>Magona</sup> and is exceeding fruitfull: hauinge in it many goodly springes: and ry-

Cumaboa  
his brother  
rebellet.

A conflict betwene the Cibauians and the Spanyardes.

The Cibauians haue the ouerthrowe.

## The fyrst decade.

A great tempest in the month of June.

Three ships drowned lying at anchor.

Whyrle wyndes.  
Furacanes.

The death of kynge Caunaboa and his brother.

Bartholomeus Colonus the leaue-tenant searcheth the golde mines.

uers, in the lande wherof, is founde great plentie of golde. The same yeare in the mooneth of June, they sawe there rose suche a boystous tempeste of wynde from the southeaste, as hath not lyghly ben harde of: The violence hereof was such that it plucked hye by the rootes what so euer greate trees were within the reache of the force therof. When this whirle wynde came to the haven of the cite, it beate downe to the bottome of the sea, three shippes which lay at anchor, & broke the cables in sundre: and that (which is the greater marvail) without any storme or roughnes of the sea, onely turnynge them three or foure tymes abowte. The inhabitantes also affirmed, that the same yeare, the sea extended it selfe further in to the lande, and rose higher then euer it dyd before by the memory of man, by the space of a cubit. The people therefore, muttered amonge them selues, that owre nation hadde troubled the elementes, and caused such portentous signes. These tempesties of the ayre (which the Grecians caule *Tiphones*, that is, whyrle wyndes) they caule, *Furacanes*: which they say, doo often tymes chaunce in this Ilande: But that neyther they nor they great grandfatheres euer sawe suche violent and furious *Furacanes*, that plucked hye greate trees by the rootes: Neyther yete suche surges and vehement motions on the sea, that soo wasted the lande. As in deede it may appeare, for as muche as, where so euer the sea bankes are nere to any plaine there are in maner euery where, flourishing medowes reachinge euen vnto the shore. But nowe let vs returne to *Caunaboa*. As kynge *Caunaboa* therefore and his brother shoulde haue binne brought into Spayne, they dyed by the waye for verpe penyuenes and anguysh of mynde. The Admiral, whose shippes were drowned in the forsayde tempeste, perceauinge him selfe to bee nowe enclosed, commaunded forthwith two other shippes (which the Spaniardes caule *Carauelas*) to bee made. For he had with hym, all maner of artificers pertyninge therunto. Whyle these thinges were dooinge, he sent forth *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother, beinge leaue-tenant of the Ilande, with an army of men to searche the golde mynes beinge distant three score leaques from the cite of *Isabella*, which were founde by the conducte of certeyne people of the Ilande, before the mynes of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua*, were knowne. In these mynes, they founde certeyne deepe pittes which had byn digged

ged in owlde tyme, owte of these pyttes, the Admirall (who affirmeth this Ilande of *Hispaniola* to bee *Ophir*, as we haue sayde before) supposeth thit *Salomon* the kyng of *Ierusalem* had his greate ryches of golde wherof we reede in the owlde testamente: And that his shippes sayled to this *Ophir* by the goulfe of *Persia* cauled *Sinus Persicus*. But whether it bee soo or not, it lyeth not in me to iudge, but in my opinion it is farr of. As the myners dygged the superficiall or vppermost parte of the earthe of the mynes, durynge for the space of .vi. miles, and in dyuers places syfted the same on the dyve lande, they fownde such plentie of golde, that euery hyed labourer could easely fynde euery day, the weyght of thre drammes. These mynes beinge thus searched and fownde, the Licutenante certifyed the Admirall hereof by his letters. The which when he had receaued the .v. daye of the Ides of Marche. Anno. 1495. he entered into his newe shippes, and tooke his viage directly to Spayne to aduertise the kyng of all his assayes, leauinge the hole regiment of the Iland with his brother the Licutenante,

The golde mynes of *Salomon*.

Solde in the superficiall partes of the earth.

The Admirall taketh his viage to Spaine

The fyfte booke of the fyrst decade, to  
Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.



After the Admiralles departyng into Spaine his Brother the Licutenante, buylded a fortreffe in the golde mynes, as he had commaunded hym. This he cauled the golden towre, because the labourers fownde golde in the earth and stone wherof they made the waules of the fortreffe. He consumed thre monethes in makynge the instrumentes wherewith the golde shulde bee gathered, washed, tryed, and molten. yet was he at this tyme by reason of wante of vitayles, enforced to leaue all thynges imperfecte, and to goo seeke for meate. Thus as he with a bande of armed men, had entered thre score myles further within the lande, the people of the countrey here and there resorteinge to hym, gaue hym a certen portion of theyr breade in exchange for other of owre thynges. But he coude not long tary here, because they lacked meate in the fortreffe. wherther he hasted with such as he had now gotten. Leauyng

The golden towre.

Lacke of vitayles.

F.ii. therefore

## The fyrst decade.

huntinge  
houndes.

kynges want-  
cauteries.

vytayles  
brought fro  
Spayne.

Saynt Domi-  
nikes towne.

Groues of  
date trees.

Isabella.

therfore in the fortreffe a garryson of tenne men, with that portion of the Ilande breade whiche yet remayned, leaupnge also with them a hownde to take those kyndes of lytle beastes whiche they caule *vstis*, not muche vnlke owre conyes, he returned to the fortreffe of Conception. This also, was the monthe wherin the kynges *Guarionexius*, and also *Mamicautexius*, barytherer vnto hym, shulde haue brought in theyr tributes. Remaynyng there the hole moonth of June, he erased the hole tribute of these twoo kynges, and vytayles necessary for hym and suche as he brought with hym, whiche were abowt foure hundreth in number. Shortly after, abowt the calendes of Iulye, there came three Carauels from Spayne, bringyng with them sundry kyndes of vitayles, as wheate, ople wyne, bacon, and marckelmas beafe: whiche were dyuyded to euery man accordyng as neede required. Sum also was lost in the cariage for lacke of good lookyng too. At the arryuall of these shippes, the lieutenant receaued commaundment from the kyng and the Admyrall his brother, that he with his men shulde renoue theyr habitation to the south syde of the Ilande, bycause it was nerer to the golde mynes: Also that he shoulde make diligent searche for those kynges whiche had slayne the Chyistian men, and to sende them with theyr confederates, bownd into Spayne. At the nexte vyage therfore, he sent three hundred captiues with three kynges: And when he had diligently searched the coastes of the south syde, he transported his habitation, and buylde a fortreffe there, vpon the topp of a hyll, neere vnto a shure haueu. This fortreffe, he cauled saynt Dominikes towne. Vnto this haueu, runneth A ryuer of holsome water, replenished with sundrye kyndes of good fyshes. They ascryme this ryuer to haue many benefytes of nature, for, where so euer it runneth all thynges are excedyng pleasaunte and fruitfull: haupyng on euery syde, groues of date trees, and dyuers other of the Ilande frutes so plentyfully, that as they sayled alonge by the shore, often tymes the branches thereof laden with bowres & frutes, hunge soo ouer theyr heades, that they mighte plucke them with theyr handes. Also that the frutefulness of this grownde, is eyther equall with the soyle of Isabella, or better. In Isabella, he lefte only certeyne sicke men and shippe wythires, whom he had appoynted to make certeyne carauels

The

The residue of his men, he conueighed to the south, to saint Dominiches towne. After he had buylded this fortreffe, lea- uinge therein a garrison of .xx. men, he with the remanent of his souldiers, prepared them selues to searche the inner par- tes of the Weste syde of the Ilande, hitherto knowne onely by name. Therfore abowte .xxx. leagues, (that is) foure score and tenne myles from the fortreffe, he chaunced on the ryuer Naiba, whiche we sayde to descende from the mountaynes of Cibaua, ryght towarde the south, by the myddest of the Iland. When he had ouerpassest this ryuer with a companye of ar- med men diuided into .xxv. decursions, that is, tenne in a com- pany with theyr capitaynes, he sent two decursions to the rez- gions of those kinges in whose landes were the great woods of brasile trees. Inclyninge towarde the left hande, they fownde the wooddes, entered into them, and felled the hygh and precious trees, which were to that day, vntouched. & he of the decursions fylled certeyne of the Ilande howles with the trunks of brasile, there to be reserued vntyll the shippes came which shulde cary them away. But the Lieutenannt di- rectinge his iourney towarde the ryght hande, not farre from the bankes of the ryuer of Naiba, fownde a certeyne kynge whose name was *Beuchius Anacaucha*, encamped ageynst thinha- bitantes of the prouince of Naiba, to subdue them vnder his do- minion, as he had doone manye other kynges of the Ilande, boztherers vnto hym: The palaice of this great kynge, is cau- led *Xaragua*: and is situate towarde the Weste ende of the I- lande, distaunte from the ryuer of Naiba. .xxx. leagues. All the prynces whiche dwell betwene the Weste ende and his palaice, are ditionaries vnto hym. All that Region from Naiba, to the furthest marches of the weste, is vterly withowte golde, al- though it bee full of mountaynes. When the kynge had espiz- ed oovre men, layinge a parte his weapons, & gyuinge signes of peace, he spake gentelly to them, intercepte whether it were of humanitie or feare, and demaunded of the what they wolde haue. The Lieutenannte answered: That he shulde paye tribute to the Admirall his brother, in the name of the Christian kynge of Spayne. To whom he sayde: Howe can yowe requyre that of me, wherreas neuer a Region vnder my dominion bringeth forth golde. For he had harde, that there was a strange nation entered into the Ilande, whiche made

The ryuer of Naiba.

wooddes of brasile trees.

kinge Beuchi- us Anacau- choa.

The palaice of Xaragua.

mountaynes without gold

Tribute.

## The fyrst decade.

greate searche for golde. But he supposed that they desired none other thyng. The leauctenaunt answered ageyne: God forbydde that we shulde enioyne any man to pay such tribute as he myght not easely forbear, or such as were not engendered or growinge in the Region: But we vnderstand that your Regions byynge fourth great plentie of Gossampine cotton, and hempe, with suche other, whereof we desire you to gyue vs parte. When he harde these woordes, he promysed with cherefull countenance, to gyue hym as muche of these thynges as he wolde requyre. Thus dismissing his army, & sendinge messengers beefore, he hym selfe accompanied the Leauetenaunt and browght hym to his palaice, beinge distant (as we haue sayde). xxx. leagues. In al this tracte, they passed through the Jurisdiction of other princes beinge vnder his dominion: Of the whiche, some gaue them hempe, of no lesse goodnes to make tackelinges for shippes then oore woodde. Other some, browght breade, and sum gossampyne cotton: And soo euery of them payde tribute with suche commodities as they countreys browght fourth. At the lengthe they came to the kynges mansion place of *Xaragua*. Before they entered into the palaice, A greate multitude of the kynges seruantes and subiectes resorted to the court, honorably (after their maner) to receaue their kyng *Beuchius Anacauchos*, with the strangers which he browght with hym to se the magnificence of his court. But nowe shall you heare howe they were interteyned. Amonge other tryumphes and syghtes, two are especially to bee noted. Fyrste there mette them a company of xxx. women, beinge al the kynges wyues and concubines, bearinge in theyr handes branches of date trees, singinge and dauncinge: They were all naked, saynge that they pyruie partes were couered with breeches of gossampine cotton. But the virgins, hauynge theyr heare hangynge downe aboute their shulders, tyed aboute the forcheade with a fyllet, were vnterly naked. They affirme that theyr faces, brestes, pappes handes, and other partes of theyr bodyes, were excedynge smoorthe, and well proportioned: but somewhat inclynning to a louely browne. They supposed that they had seene those most beautifull *Dryades*, or the natyue nymphes or fayres of the fontaynes wherof the antiquites speake so muche. The branches of date trees which they bore in theyr right handes w<sup>h</sup> they

The wolfe  
entreateth.  
the sheepe.

hempe and  
gossampine  
cotton.

howe the  
Lieutenant  
was recea-  
ued at the  
kynges pa-  
laice.

The kynges  
wyues.

well fauered  
women.

Dryades.

they daunced, they delpuered to the Leanenenant with lowe curtesy and smyllynge countenance. Thus enteringe into the kynges howse, they sownde a delycate supper prepared for them after theyr maner. When they were well refecthed with meate, the nyght drawinge on, they were broughyt by the kynges officers, euery man to his lodgyng, accordyng to his degre, in certeyne of theyr howses abowte the palaice, where they rested them in hangynge beddes after the maner of the countrey, wherof we haue spoken moze largely in another place.

A delycate  
supper.

hangynge  
beddes.

The daye folowynge they broughyt owoze men to their common haule, into the whiche they coome together as often as they make any notable games or triumphes, as we haue said before. Here, after many daunsynges, synginges, maskinges runnynges, wrestlynges, and other tryng of mastres, suddenly there appered in a large plaine nere vnto the haule. ii. greate armies of men of warre, whiche the kyng for his partyme had caused to bee prepared, as the Spaniardes vse the playe with reedes whiche they caule *Iuga de Canias*. As the armies drew neere together, they assayled the one the other as fiercelly, as if mortal ennemies with theyr baners spicade, shulde fight for theyr goodes, theyr landes, theyr lyues, their libertie, theyr countrey, theyr wyues and theyr chyliden.

A common  
haule.

A prettie  
pastyme.

Soe that within the momente of an howre, foure men were slayne, and many wounded. The battayle also shoulde haue contynued longer, if the kyng had not at the request of owoze men, caused them to cease. The thyrde day, the Lienetenant conselynge the kyng to soue moze plentie of gossampine vpon the bankes nere vnto the waters syde, that they myghre the better paye theyr tribute priuately accordyng to the multitude of theyr howses, he repayred to *Isabella* to visite the sicke men whiche he had lefte there, and also to see howe his woorkes wente forwarde. In the tyme of his absence. xxx. of his men were consumed with diuerse diseases. Wherefore beinge soze troubled in his mynde, and in maner at his wyttes ende what he woulde best to doo, for as muche as he wanted al thynges necessarie as well to restore them to health whiche were yet accased, as also vitayles to mayntaine the hole multitude, where as there was yet no shippe coome from Spaine, as at the length he determyned to sende abrode the sicke men

foure men  
slayne in spore

provision for  
diseased men

here

## The fyrst decade.

The castels  
or towres of  
hispaniola.

The golden  
mountaynes  
of Cibana.

Bonaum

Tribute.

The kynge  
rebelle.

Guarionexius  
capitane of  
the confira-  
cie.

An army of  
the  
Barbarians.

here and there to sundrye Regions of the Ilande, and to the castelles which they had erected in the same. for directly from the cite of Isabella to saynt Dominikes towre, that is, from the north to the south, throught the Iland, they had buylded thus many castelles. *xxvi. myles* distante from Isabella, they buylded the castell of *sperantia*. from *sperantia. xxv. myles*, was the castell of saynte Catharine. from saynte Catharines. *xx. myles*, was saynt James towre. Other. *xx. miles* from saynte James towre, was A stronger fortresse then any of the other, which they cauled the towre of Conception: which he made the stronger bicause it was situate at the rootes of the golden mountaynes of Cibana, in the greate and large playne soo fruitfull and well inhabited as we haue before described. He buylded also an other in the myde waye betwene the towre of Conception & saynt Dominikes towre. The which also was stronger then the towre of Conception, bycause it was within the lymittes of A great kynge, hauing vnder his dominion fine thousande men: whose chiefe Cite and heade of the Realme, beyng cauled *Bonaum*, he wylled that the castell shulde also bee cauled after the same name. Therfore leauynge the sicke men in these castels and other of the Ilande homes nere vnto the same, he hym selfe repayred to saynte Dominikes, exactinge tributes of all the kynges whiche were in his waye. When he had tarped there A fewe dayes, there was a rumor spredde, that all the kynges aboute the borders of the towre of Conception, had conspyred with desperate myndes to rebell agensse the Spaniardes. When the Lieutenante was certified hereof, he tooke his iorneye towarde them immediately, not beyng discouraged either by the lengthe of the waye, or feeblenesse of his souldyers, beyng in maner forweried with trauayle. As he drew nere vnto them, he had aduertisement that kynge *Guarionexius* was chosen by the other pynces to bee the Capitayne of this rebellidn: And that he was enforced therto halfe vnwilling, beyng seduced by theyr perswasions and prouocations. The whiche is moze lykely to be trewe, for that he had before had experience of the powder and policie of othe men. They came together at a daye appoynted, accompanied with. *xv. thousande* men, armed after their maner, once agen to proue the fortune of warre, Here the Lieutenante consultynge with  
the

the Capitayne of the fortreffe and the other souldiers of whō he had the conducte, determynd to sette vpon them vnwares in their owne howses befoze they coulde prepare theyr army. He sent forth the therfoze to euery kynge, a Centurian, that is, a capitaine of a hundred, which were commaunded vpon a sudden to inuade theyr howses in the night, and to take the sleeping, befoze the people (beinge scattered here and there) might assemble to gyther. Thus secretly enteringe into their bylages, not fortified with waules, trenches, or bulwarkes, they broke in vpon them, tooke them, bounde them, and led away euery man his prisoner according as they were commaunded. The Licutenant hym selfe with his hundred men, as sayled kynge *Guarionexius* as the woorthier personage, whom he tooke prisoner as dyd the other capitaynes theyr kynges, & at the same howze appoynted. Foureteene of theym were brought the same nyght to the towre of Conception. Shortlye after, when he had put to death two of the kynges which were the chiefe autours of this newe reuolte, and had suborned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges to attempte the same: least the people for sorowe of theyr kynges shulde neglecte or forsake their countrey, which thinge myght haue byn greate incommodie to othere men, who by thinclease of theyr seedes and frutes were ostentymes ayded, he freely pardoned and dismissed *Guarionexius* and the other kynges. The people in the meane tyme flocked togyther abowte the towre, to the nūber of fyue thousande withoute weapons, with pytiful howling for the deliuerance of theyr kynges: The ayer thundered, & the earth trembeled through the vehemencie of theyr outcry. The Licutenant warned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges, with threatenynge, with rewardes, and with promyses, neuer hereafter to attempte any suche thyng. Then *Guarionexius* made an oration to the people of the great powre of othere mē, of theyr clemencie towarde offenders, and liberalitie to suche as remaine faithfull: desyringe them to quiet theyr myndes: and from henseforth nother in deede nor thought to interpyse any thyng ageynst the Christians, but to obeye & serue them, excepte they wolde dayly bringe them selues into further calamities. When the oration was synysed, they tooke hym vp and set hym on theyr shulders, and soo caried hym home to his owne palaice. And by this meanes, this Region

The kynges  
are taken pri  
soners.

kynge *Guarionexius* is  
pardoned.

## The fyrst decade.

Lacke of vy-  
tayles.

Beuchius Ana-  
cauchoa, the kynge of  
Xaragua.

Queene Ana-  
caona, the  
wife of kynge  
Caunaboa.

xxii. kynges.

Serpentes  
eaten.

was pacified for a whyle. But omore men, with heauy coun-  
tenaunce wandered bype and downe, as desolate in a strange  
countrey, lackinge vytailes, and woyme omore of apparell,  
wheras. xv. moonethes were nowe passed since the Admirals  
departure: duringe which tyme, they coulde heare nothyng  
omore of Spayne. The Lieutenantaunt comforted them all that  
he coulde with fayre wordes and promyses. In the meane  
tyme, Beuchius Anacauchoa (the kynge of the Weste partes of the  
Region of Xaragua (of whom we spake befoze) sente messen-  
gers to the Lieutenantaunt to signifye vnto hym, that he hadde  
in a redynes the gossampine cotton and suche other thyn-  
ges as he wylled hym to prepare for the paymente of his try-  
bute. Wherbyppon the Lieutenantaunt tooke his tozney thither,  
and was honorably receaued of the kynge and his syster, sit-  
tyme the wyfe of Caunaboa the kynge of Cibao, beeing no lesse  
rule in the gouernaunce of her brothers kyngedome, then he  
hym selfe. For they affirme her to bee a wyse woman, of good  
maners, and pleasaunt in company. Shee earnestly perswaded  
her brother by the example of her husbande, to loue and obeye  
the Christians. This woman was cauled Anacauchoa. He folowde  
in the palaice of Beuchius Anacauchoa, xxii. kynges which hadde  
browght theyr tributes with them, and abode his comynge.  
They browght with them also besyde theyr trybute a signed  
them, further to demerite the fauour of omore men, great plen-  
tie of vytailes: as bothe kyndes of breade, cunnys, and fyl-  
thes, alreedy dyed bycause they shulde not putrefie: Serpen-  
tes also of that kynd which wee sayd to bee esteemed amonge  
them as most delicate meate, and lyke vnto Crocodiles sauing  
in byggenes. These serpentes they caule *Iuanas*, which omore  
men learned sumewhat to late to haue byn engendred in the  
Ilande. For vnto that day, none of them durste aduenture to  
taste of them by reason of theyr horrible deformitie and lothe-  
sumnes. Yet the Lieutenantaunt beinge entysed by the pleasur-  
nes of the kynges syster, determined to taste of the serpentes.  
But when he felte the fleshe therof to bee so delicate to his  
tonge, he sel too, amayne without al feare. The which thinge  
his companyons perceauinge, were not behynde hym in gree-  
dines: In soo muche that they hadde nowe none other talke  
then of the sweetenes of these serpentes: which they affirme  
to bee of more pleasaunte taste, then eyther omore phelantes

or pertriches. But they lose theyr taste, excepte they bee prepared after a certeyne fashon: as doo peacockes and pheasantes except they bee interlarded beefore they bee roasted.

They prepare them therefore after this maner. Fyrst takynge owte theyr bowels euen from the throte to the thyghes, they washe and rubbe theyr bodies very cleane bothe within and withoute. Then roullyng them togyther on a cyrcle, inuolued after the maner of a slepyng snake, they thruste them into a pott of no bygger capacitee then to houlde them only. This doone, puttyng a lyttle water vnto them with a portion of the Ilande pepper, they seethe the with a soft fyre of sweete woodde, and suche as maketh no greate smoke. Of the fat of them beinge thus sodde, is made an exceeding pleasaunte brothe or potage. They say also, that there is no meate to bee compared to the egges of these serpentes, which they vse to seethe by them selues. They are good to bee eaten as sone as they are sodde: And may also bee reserued many dayes after. But hauinge sayde thus muche of theyr intertaynement and daintie fare, let vs nowe speake of other matters. When the Aienetenaunt had fylled one of the Ilande howses with the gossampine cotton which he hadde receaued for trybute, the kynge promysed furthermore to gyue hym as muche of theyr breade, as he wolde demaunde. He gaue them hartie thanks and gentely accepted their freendly profer. In the meane time whyle this breade was gatheringe in sundry Regions to bee browght to the palaice of Beuchius Anacauchoa kynge of Xaragua, he sent messengers to Ilabella for one of the two carauelles which were lately made there: intendinge to sende the same thither ageyne laden with breade. The maryners gladde of these tydynge, sayled abowte the Ilande, and in short space browght the shippe to the coastes of Xaragua. The wyfe of kynge Beuchius Anacauchoa, that wyfe and pleasaunt woman Anacaona, (the wyfe sumtyme of Canaboa the kynge of the golden howse of the mountaynes of Cibao, whose husbände dyed in the way when he shulde haue byn caried into Spayne,) when she harde saye that owre shippe was arryued on the shore of her natie countrey, perswaded the kynge her brother that they bothe myght goo togyther to see it. For the place where the shippe lay, was not passie .vi. myles distant from Xaragua. They rested all night, in the mydde way, in a certeyne byllage

The dressing  
of serpentes  
to be eaten.

Serpentes  
egges eaten.

Gossampine  
cotton.

Queene Ana  
caona.

## The fyrst decade.

The treasure  
of Queene  
Anacaona.

Hebene  
woodde.

The Ilande  
of Guanabba

Conninge ar-  
tificers.

A stone in the  
Reede of Iren

Sunnes.

Musical in-  
strumentes.

in the which was the treasure or iewell holde of *Anacaona*. Her treasure was nother goulde, syluer, or precious stones, but only thynges necessary to bee bled, as chepars, stooles, settels, dyshes, potingers, portes, pannes, basons, treyes, and suche other how holde stuffe and instrumentes, worke-  
manly made of a certeyne blacke and harde spynninge woodde which that excellent lerned phisition *John baptiste Elsius*, as-  
firmeth to bee hebene. What so ever portion of wytte nature hath gyuen to the inhabitantes of these Ilandes, the same doth most appeare in these kynde of woodkes, in whiche they shewe great arte and cunnyng. But those which this woman had, were made in the Iland of *Guanabba*, situate in the mouth of the weste syde of *Hispaniola*. In these they graue the lyuely Images of such phantasies as they suppose they see walke by night which the Antiquitie cauled *Lemures*. Also the Images of men serpents, beastes, & what soo ever other thyng they haue once seene. What wolde yowe thinke (moste noble *Isyrnce*) that they coulde doo, if they had the vse of Iren and steele? For they onely fyrste make these softe in the fyre, and after-  
warde make them holowe & carue them with a certeyne stone which they fynde in the ryuers. Of stooles and chayers, they gaue the *Licuetenaunt*.xiii. And of bestelles perteynyng to the table and kyche, they gaue hym thre scoze, sum of wood and sume of earthe. Also of gossampine cotton ready spunne foure great bottomes of excedinge weight. The day folowing when they came to the sea syde, where was an other vylage of the kynges, the *Licuetenaunt* commaunded the shyppe boate to bee brought to the shore. The kyng also had prepared two canoas, paynted after theyr maner: one for hym selfe and certeyne of his gentlemen: an other for his syster *Anacaona* and her waytinge women. But *Anacaona* despyred to bee caried in the shyppe boate with the *Licuetenaunt*. When they nowe approached nere vnto the shyppe, certeyne great pieces of ordinaunce were discharged of purpose. The sea was fylled with thunder, and the ayer with smooke. They trembled and quaked for feare, supposinge that the frame of the world had byn in danger of faulng. But when they sawe the *Licuetenaunt* ladowgh, and looke cherefully on them, they cauled ageyne theyr spirites. And when they yet drew neerer to the shyppe, and harde the noyse of the flutes, shalmes, & drums, they

they were wonderfully astonied at the sweete harmony thereof. Enterpyng into the shyppe and beholdinge the foreshippe and the sterne, the toppe castel, the masse, the hatches, the cabins, the keele, and the tackelinges, the brother firinge his eyes on the syster, and the syster on the brother, they were bothe as it were dumme and amased, and wiste not what to saye for to muche wonderpyng. Whyle beholdinge these thynges they wandered vp and downe the shippe, the Lieutenante commaunded the ankers to bee loosed, and the sailes to be hoisted vp. Then were they further astonied, when they sawe soo greate a mole, to moue as it were by it selfe, without oyes and without the force of man. For there arose from the earthe suche a wynde as a man wolde haue wished for of purpose.

Yet furthermoze, when they perceaued the shyppe to moue somtyme forwarde and somtyme backwarde: somtyme toward the ryght hande and somtyme toward the lefte, & that with one wynde and in maner at one instante, they were at thepyr wyttres ende for to muche admiration. These thynges fynished and the shippes beinge laden with breade and suche other rewarde, they beinge also recompensed with other of olore thynges, he dismissed not onely the kynge <sup>Beuchius Anacauchoa,</sup> and his syster, but lykewise all thepyr seruauntes and women replenished with ioye and woonderinge. After this, he hym selfe tooke his iorney by foote with his souldiers to the cite of <sup>Isabella:</sup> where he was aduertised that one <sup>Roldanus Ximenus,</sup> a nauogher felowe, (whom befoze beinge his seruante, he had preferred to bee capitayne of the myners and labourers, and after made hym a Iudge in causes of controuersie) had vsed hym selfe outrageously and was malyciously mynded against hym, and further, the cause of much myschiefe in his absēce. For kynge <sup>Guarionexius</sup> (who a whyle befoze was pardoned of his former rebellion, and perswaded the people to obeye the Spanparden) was by his nauogher vsage, and suche other as were conferhered with hym, so accensed to reuenge the iniuries which they susteyned at his handes, byspide the abhominable actes which they folowpyng onely the lawe of nature, abhorred to admytte, that he with his famelic, famplyers, & ditionaries, of desperate mynde fledde to the mountaynes beinge distant from <sup>Isabella</sup> onely tenne leagues Westwarde, toward the north syde of the sea, These mountaynes, and also

Ignorance  
can'th admira-  
tion.

Roldanus Ximenus.

The intemperancie and malice of a seruile witte aduanced.

Signalans,

## The fyrst decade.

**Matobaneri:**  
us, the great  
kyng of the  
mountaynes

**The inhaby-**  
tantes of the  
mountaynes.

**Guarionexi-**  
us rebelleth  
ageyne.

**Roldanus Xe-**  
minus rebel-  
leth.

the inhabitantes of the same they caule by one name *Ciguatos*. The greate kyng of al the kynges and regions of these mountayne, is cauled *Matobanexius*: and his courte or palaice is named *Capronus*. The mountaynes are rowgh, hygh, and suche as no man can passe to the toppes therof. They are also benedyng: and haue theyr corners reachinge downe to the sea. Betwene bothe the corners of the mountaynes, is there a greate playne, by the which many riuers faule from the mountaynes into the sea. The people are verpe fierse and warlyke men, hauing theyr original of the *Canybales*. For when they descende from the mountaynes to the playnes to keepe warre with theyr boztherers, they eate all suche as they kyll. *Guarionexius* therfore, synging to this kyng of these mountaynes, gaue hym many pzelentes of suche thynges as are wantunge in his countrey: therwith declaringe howe vpley, vplapnously, and violently, he had byn bled of oovre men: with who n he could nothinge preuayle nother by sayre meanes, nor by foule: nor ther by humilptic nor by stoutnes. And that to bee the cause of his resorthinge to hym at that tyme: moste humbly despyng hym to bee his defence ageynst thoppresions of suche myscheuous people. *Matobanexius* here vppon, made hym promette to ayde and helpe hym ageynst the Christians al that he myght. The Lieutenant therfore made hast to the fortreffe of *Conzeption*: whyther as soone as he was coome, he sent for *Roldanus Xeninus*, who with suche as folowed hym, lay in certeyne of the *Islande* bylages, twelue miles distant from the fortres. At his comminge, the Lieutenant asked hym what al these surres and tumultes ment. He answered without abashemēt: powre brother the Admirall hath to doo therwith, and shall answere for the same before the kyng. For we perceauē that the kyng hath soo put hym in truste, that he hath hadde no regarde to vs. Here we peryshe for hunger whyle we folowe powre: and are dyuen to seeke oovre unhappy foode in the desertes. Powre brother also, assigned me assistant with powre in gouerninge the *Islande*. Wherefore syth powre haue no more respecte vnto vs, we are determyned noo longer to bee vnder powre obedience. When *Roldanus* had spoken these wordes & suche other, the Lieutenant wolde haue layde handes on hym: but he escaped his syngers, and fledde to the weste partes of the Region of *Xaragua*, hauinge with hym a trayne of three

threescore and tenne men whiche were of his confetheracie. Here this fylthy synke of rebels thus conspired, played their vages and lyued with loose bydels in al kyndes of mylchefe robberyng the people, spoylinge the countrey, and ranspynginge bothe wyues and virgines. Whyle these thynges were doing in the Ilande, the Admirall hadde eyght shippes appoynted hym by the kynge: Of the whiche he sent two laden with vytayles, from *Cales* or *Gades* of *Hercules* pyllers, directly to the *Licuetenaunt* his brother. These shippes by chaunce arriued fyrst on that syde of the Ilande where *Roldanus Xenixus* ranged with his toompanyons. *Roldanus* in shorte tyme hadde seduced them: promysinge them in the steade of mattookes, wenches pappes: for labour, pleasure: for hunger, abundance: and for watchyness and watchinge, sleepe and quietnes. *Guarionexius* in the meane tyme, a Temblunge a powec of his freendes and confetherates, came of tentymes downe into the playne, and slewe as many of the Christian men, as he coulde meete conuenientlye, and also of the Ilande menne whiche were theyr freendes: wastunge theyr grounde, destroyinge theyr seedes, and spoylinge theyr bylages. But *Roldanus* and his adherentes, albeit they had knowleage that the Admiral wolde shortly coome, yet feared they nothyng bycause they had seduced the newe menne which came in the fyrste shippes. Whyle the *Licuetenaunt* was thus toyled in the middell of these stormes, in the meane tyme his brother the Admirall set forwarde fro the coastes of Spayne: But not directly to *Hispaniola*: For he turned more towarde the southe. In the which vyage, what he dyd, what coastes both of the lande and sea he compaled, and what newe regions he discovered, wee wyl fyrst declare. For to what ende and conclusion the sayde tumultes and seditions came, wee wyl expreke in the ende of the booke folowynge. Thus fare ye well.

Licencious-  
nes in liberte

hercules  
pyllers.

A violent  
persasion.

The furie of  
guarionexius

The thynde  
vyage of Co-  
lonus the Ad-  
mirall.

The fyrte booke of the fyrste decade, to

*Lodowike* Cardinall of *Aragonie*.



*Colonus* the Admirall, the thynde day of the Calendes of June, in the yeare of Christe. 1498. hysped by his sayles in the hauch of the towne *Barrameda* his, not farre distant from *Cales*: and set forwarde on

## The fyrst decade.

French men  
pirates.

The Iland of  
Madera.

The Admiral  
saileth to the  
Equinoctiall.

ixii. Ilandes  
of hesperi-  
des, now cau-  
led Cabover-  
de.

healyng of  
the leper.

Contagious  
ayre and ex-  
treeme heate

The pole ele-  
uate. v. de-  
grees.

on his hyage with eyght shippes laden with bytayles and o-  
ther necessities. He diuerted from his accustomed rase which  
was by the Ilandes of Canarie, by reason of certeyne frenche-  
men pirates and rousers on the sea, whiche laye in the ryght  
way to meete with hym. In the way frō Cales to the Ilandes  
of Canarie, aboute foure score and ten myles towarde the lefte  
hande, is the Ilande of Madera, more southwarde then the  
citic of Ciule by foure degrees. For the pole artryke is eleuate  
to Ciule, xxxvi. degrees: But to this Iland (as the mariners  
saye) only. xxii. He sayled therfore fyrste to Madera. And sen  
dinge from thence directly to Hispaniola, the resydue of the ship-  
pes laden with bytayles and other necessities, he hym selfe  
with one shyppe with deckes, and two marchant carauelles  
coasted towarde the southe to coome to the Equinoctiall lyne, and  
so furth to folowe the tracte of the same towarde the West, to  
thintent to searche the natyres of suche places as he coulde  
fynde vnder or nere vnto the same, leauinge Hispaniola on the  
north syde on his ryght hande. In the myddle of his rase, lye  
xiii. Ilandes of the Portugales, whiche were in olde tyme  
cauled Hesperides: And are now cauled Caput Viride, or Caboverde,  
These are situate in the sea, ryght ouer agaynst the inner par-  
tes of Ethiope, Westwarde two dayes saylinge. One of these  
the Portugales caule Bonauista. With the snayles, or rather  
tortoyles of this Ilande, many leproous men are healed and  
censed of theyr leprositie. Departing sodainly from hense by  
reason of the contagiousnes of the ayre, he sayled, cccclxxx  
myles towarde the Weste southwest, which is the myddest be-  
twene the weste and the southe. There was he so bered with  
maladies and heate (for it was the moneth of June) that his  
shyppes were almoste sette on fyre. The hoopes of his barrells  
cracked and brake, and the freshe water ranne owte. The  
men also complayned that they were not able to abyde that  
extremite of heate. Here the north pole was eleuate only. v.  
degrees from the Horizontall. For the space of. viii. dayes in  
the which he suffered these extremities, only the fyrst day was  
fayre: but all the other, cloudy and rainy: yet neuerthelesse  
feruent hote. Wherefore it oftentymes repented hym not a  
little that euer he tooke that way. Beinge tossed in these dan-  
gerous and veracions eyght contynuall dayes, at the lengthe  
an Eastsoutheaste wynde arose, and gaue a prosperous blaste  
to

to his sayles. Which wynde folowinge directly towarde the weste, he folowde the starres ouer that paralelle, placed in o<sup>r</sup> ther order, and an other kynde of ayer, as the Admirall hym selfe tolde me. And they al affirme, that within thre dayes saylinge, they folowde mosse temperate and pleasaunte ayre. The Admirall also a firmeth, that from the clime of the great heate and unholsome ayer, he euer ascended by the backe of the sea, as it were by a hygh mountayne towarde heauen. Yet in all this tyme, coulde he not once see any lande. But at the length, the day before the Calendes of July, the watchman lookynge forth of the toppercastell of the geatest shyppe, cryed owte alovde for ioy that he espyed thre exceedynge hygh mountaynes: Exhortinge his felowes to bee of good cheere, and put away all pensiuenes. For they were very heauy and sorowfull, as well for the greefe which they susteyned by reason of thynrollerable heate, as also that their frethe water fayled them, which canne owte at the ryftes of the baryls, caused by extreme heate as we haue sayde. Thus beinge wel comforted, they drewe to the lande. Yet at theyr fyrst approche, they coulde not arryue by reason of the shalownes of the sea nere the shore. Yet lookyng owte of theyr shippes, they might well perceaue that the region was inhabited and well cultured. For they sawe very sayre gardens, and pleasaunte meadowes: frome the trees and herbes wherof, when the moonyng dewes beganne to rylle, there proceeded manye sweete sauours. Twentie myles distant from hence, they chaunced into a haven, verie apte to harborowe shippes, but it had no ryuer runnyng into it. Saylinge on yet somewhat further, he folowde at the lengthe a commodious haven wherein he might repayre his shippes and make prouision of freshe water and fuel. *Arenalis* cauleth this lande *Pura*. They folowd no houses nere unto the haven: but innumerable steppes of certein wilde beastes secte, of the which they folowde one deade much lyke a goate. The day folowynge, they sawe a Canoas commynge a farre of, hauinge in it. xiiii. younge men of godly corporature & high stature, al armed with targets, bowes & arrowes. The heave of theyr heds, was longe & plaine, & cutte on the foreheade much after the maner of the Spanyardes. Theyr priuie partes were couered with fillettes of gossampyne cotton, of sundry coloures enterlaced: And were besyde al ouer naked.

.i. d

Here

The starres  
placed in o<sup>r</sup>  
ther order.

A sea ryfynge  
lyke a mount-  
ayne.

heate cau-  
seth the bary-  
ls to breake.

Sweete sa-  
uours proceed-  
ynge frome  
the lande.

The land of  
*Pura*.

people of  
ly corporature  
& longe heare  
nere the  
quinoctail.

## The fyrst decade.

The higher  
the colder.

Difference be  
twene people  
of one clyme.  
Ethiopia.

Note the  
cause of  
difference.

musical instru-  
mentes.

Here the Admirall consideringe with hym selfe the corpora-  
ture of this people and nature of the lande, he beleaued the  
same to bee soo muche he neuer heauen then other Regions of  
the same paralelle, and further remoued from the grosse va-  
pours of the vales and marishes, howe muche the hygheste  
toppes of the hyggest mountaynes are distant from the deepe  
vales. For he earnestly affirmeth, that in all that navigation,  
he neuer wente owte of the paralelles of Ethiopie: So greate  
Difference is there betwene the nature of the inhabitants and  
of the soyles of dyuers Regions all vnder one clyme or para-  
lelle: as is to see betwene the people and regions being in the  
same lande of Ethiopie, and theym of the Ilandes vnder the  
same clyme, hauinge the pole starre eleuate in the same degree.  
For the Ethiopians are all blacke, hauinge theyr heare curld  
more lyke wulle then heare. But these people of the Iland of  
Pitt (beinge as I haue sayde vnder the clyme of Ethiopie) are  
whyte, with longe heare, and of yelowe colour. Wherefore it  
is apparente, the cause of this soo greate difference, to bee  
rather by the disposition of the earth, then constitution of  
heauen. For wee knowe, that snowe fauleth on the moun-  
taynes of the Equinoctiall or burnt lyne, and the same to en-  
dure there continually: We knowe lyke wyse that the inhabi-  
tantes of the Regions farre distant frome that lyne towarde  
the north, are molested with greate heate.

The Admirall that he myght allure the younge men to him  
with gentelnes, shewed them lokynge glasses, sayre & bryght  
bestelles of copper, haukes belles, and suche other thynges  
vnnknownen to them. But the more they were cauled, so much  
the more they suspected crafte and deceate, and fledde backe:  
warde. yet dyd they with greate admiration beholde owte  
men and theyr thynges, but styll hauinge their oyes in theyr  
handes redy to flye. When the Admirall sawe that he coulde  
by no meanes allure the by gyftes, he thought to proue what  
he coulde do with musicall instrumentes: and therefore com-  
maunded that they which were in the greatest shippe, shulde  
play on theyr drummes and shalmes. But the younge men sup-  
posinge this to bee a token of battayle, left the oyes, and  
in the flynyng of an eye hadde put theyr arrowes in theyr  
bowes and theyr targettes on theyr armes: And thus direct-  
tinge theyr arrowes towarde owte men, stood in expectacio-  
to

to knowe what this people myght meane. More men likewise preparinge theyr bowes and arrowes, approached toward the by litle and litle. But they departinge from the Admirals shippe, and trustinge to the dexteritie of theyr ores came soo neare one of the lesse shippes, that one of theym plucked the clooke from the gouernour of that shippe, and as wel as they coulde by signes, requyred hym to come alande, promysinge feyth that they wolde common with hym of peace. But when they sawe hym goo to the Admirals shippe whether he went to aske leaue that he might common with them, suspectinge heareby some further deceate, they lept immediately into the Canoa, and fledde as swyfte as the wynde. So that to conclude, they coulde by no meanes be allured to familiaritie. Wherefore the Admirall thowght it not conuenient to bestowe any longe tyme there, at this byage. No greate space fronte this Ilande, euer toward the weste, the Admirall saith he founde so owtcragious a faule of water, runninge with such a violence from the Easte to the Weste, that it was nothyng inferioure to a myghy streame saulyng from hyghe mountaynes. He also confessed, that since the fyrst daye that euer he knewe what the sea mente, he was neuer in suche feare. Proceedinge yet sumwhat further in this daungerous byage, he founde certeyne goulfes of viii. myles, as it had byn the entrance of some greate hauens, into the which, the sayde violent streames dyd faule. These goulfes or streyghtes, he called *Os Draconis*, that is, the dragons mouth. And the Iland directly ouer ageynste the same, he named *Margarita*. Owt of these streyghtes, issued no lesse force of freshe water, whiche encounteringe with the faulte, dyd stryue to passe forth: Soe that betwene bothe the waters, was no smaule conflict. But enteringe into the goulfe, at the lengthe he founde the water therof very freshe and good to drynke. The Admirall hym selfe, and they which were his companions in this byage, beinge men of good credit, and perceauinge my diligence in searchinge for these matters, tolde me yet of a greater thyng. That is, that for the space of xxvi. leagues, amountyng to a hundred and foure myles, he sayled euer by freshe water: In so muche, that the further he proceeded, especially toward the west, he affirmeth the water to bee the fresher. After this, he came to a highe mountayne, inhabited onely

B.ii,

with

The violent course of the water from the Easte to the weste.

The goulfe cauled *Os Draconis*.

A conflict betwene the freshe water & the salte.

A sea of freshe water.

marmosets & monkeys,

## The fyrst decade.

With moonkeys or marmosets on that part towarde the East. For that syde was rogh with rocke and stony mountaynes: And therfore not inhabred with men. yet they that went a lande to searche the countrey, fownde nere vnto the sea, many fayre fieldes well tyled and sowed: But noo people, nor yet houses or corages. Wharhappes they were gone further in to the countrey to sowe theyr cozne and applye theyr husbandry, as wee often see owre husbände men to leaue theyr statious and bylages for the same purpose. In the weste syde of that mountayne, they espyed a large playne, whither they made haste, and cast anker in the brode ryuer. As soone as the inhabitantes had knowleage that a strange nation was appoynted in theyr coastes, they came flockinge withowte all feare to see owre men. We vnderstode by theyr sygnes and poyntynges, that this Region was cauled *Paria*: and that it was very large: In so muche that the further it reacheth towarde the weste, to be so muche the better inhabited and replenished with people. The Admirall therfore, takynge into his shyppe foure of the men of that lande, searched the weste partes of the same. By the temperatenes of the ayer, the pleasauntnes of the grownde, and the multytude of people which they sawe dayly more and more as they sayled, they coniectured that these thynges portended som great matter: As in deede their opinion sayled them not, as we wyll further declare in his place. The soonne not yet ryfen, but beginninge euen now to ryse, beinge one day allured by the pleasauntnes of the place and sweete sauiours which breathed from the land to the shippes, they went alande. Here they fownde a greater multytude of people then in any other place. As owre men appoynted towarde them, there came certeine messengers from their *Cacici*, that is, the kynges of the countrey, to despye the Admirall in the name of theyr princes to coome to theyr palayces withowte feare, and that they and al theyr Gulde be at his commaundement. When the Admirall had thanked them and made his excuse for that tyme, there came innumerable people with theyr boates to the shippes: haupng for the most parte cheynes abowte theyr neckes, garlandes on theyr heaues, and bracelets on theyr armes of pearles of India: And that so commonlye, that owre women in playes and reynnynges haue not greater plentie of bones of glasse and crystall in

The fayre &  
large region  
of paria.

Temperate  
ayer and frut  
ful grounde.

Sweete sa-  
uours procea-  
dyng frome  
the lande.

humayne  
people.

Cheynes and  
garlandes of  
gold & pearles

In theyr garlandes, crownes, gerdels, and fuche other tyer-  
 mentes. Beinge asked where they gathered them, they popu-  
 led to the next shore by the sea bankes. They signified also by  
 certeyne scozeful gesticures which they made with theyr mou-  
 thes and handes, that they nothing esteemed perles. Taking  
 also baskettes in their handes, they made signes that the  
 same might bee fylled with them in shorte space. But bycause  
 the corne wherewith his shippes were laden to bee caried into  
 Hispaniola, had taken hurt by reason of the salte water, he de-  
 termined to deferre this matre to a more convenient tyme. Yet  
 he sent to lande two of the shippe boates laden with men, to  
 thintent to fetch sum garlandes of perles for erchange of othe-  
 r thynges, and also somewhat to searche the nature of the Re-  
 gion and disposition of the people. They enterpeyned ovr me  
 gently: and came flockynge to them by heapes, as it hadde  
 byn to beholde sume straunge monsters. Fyrste there came to  
 meete ovr men, two men of grauitie, whome the multitude  
 folowed. One of these was well in age, and the other but  
 younge. They thinke it was the father with his soonne whi-  
 che shulde succede hym. When the one had saluted and embra-  
 ced the other, they brogght ovr men into a certeyne rownde  
 howse, nere vnto the whiche, was a greate court. Wether  
 were brogght many chapers and stooles made of a certeyne  
 blacke woodde, and very conuynge wrologht. After that  
 ovr men, and theyr Princes were sette, theyr wayting men  
 came in laden, sume with sundy delicate dysches, and sume  
 with wyne. But theyr meate, was only frutes: and those of  
 dyuers kyndes and bitterly vnknewe to vs. Theyr wyne was  
 both whyte and redde: not made of grapes, but of the lycour  
 of dyuers frutes, and very pleasaunte in drynkynge. After  
 this banquette made in the owlde mans howse, the younge  
 man brogght them to his tabernacle or mansion place, where  
 was a greate company bothe of men and women, but they  
 stode decauered the one from the other. They are whyte, e-  
 nen as ovr men are, sayunge fuche as are much conuersant  
 in the sonne. They are also very gentyll, and full of humani-  
 tie toward strangers. They couer theyr pryue partes with  
 godampine cotton wrologht with sundy coloures: and are  
 besyde all naked. There was fewe or none, that had not ey-  
 ther a collar, a cheryne, or a braselette of golde and pearles,

Baskettes ful  
 of pearles, I  
 knowe who  
 had bags ful.

howe the Ad-  
 mirals men  
 were enter-  
 peyned.

cheyers and  
 stoles of hes-  
 bene.

Frutes and  
 wyne.

lyne of the  
 lycour of  
 frutes.

whyte men  
 nere the Equi-  
 noctial

## The fyrst decade.

mountaynes  
are the matri-  
ces of golde.

Cambales

Shalownes  
of the sea,

The vse of  
caruelles or  
buganines.

Cumana and  
Manacapan  
regions of the  
prouince of  
Paria.  
Curiana.

A ryuer of  
maruelous  
depth and  
breadth.  
A sea of wee-  
des.  
Lentiscus.  
Mastix.

and many had all. Beinge asked where they had that golde; they poynted to certeyne mountaynes, seemynge with theyr countenaunce to dissuade othere men from goynge thither. For puttynge theyr armes in theyr mouthes, and grynnyng as thowgh they byte the same, theylle poyntynge to the mountaynes, they seemed to insinuate that men were eaten there. But whether they mente by the Cambales, or wyld beastes othere men coulde not well perceaue. They rooke it exceedinge greuouslye, that they coulde nother vnderstande othere men, nor othere men them. When they which were sente to lande, were returned to the shippes aboute thre of the clocke at after noone the same daye, bringynge with them certeyne garlandes and collers of pearles, they loosed theyr ankers to departe, myndynge to come agayne shortly, when all thynges were sette in good order in *Hispaniola*. But he was prevented by an other, which defeated hym of the rewarde of his trayuyle. He was also hyndered at this tyme by realis of the shalownes of the sea & violent course of the water, which with continual tossing, broosed the greatest ship as often as any great gale of wynde arose. To auoyde the daungours of suche hazardous places, and shelles, he ever sent one of the smallest caruelles before, to try the way with soundynge: and the best shippes folowed behynde. The Regions beinge in the large prouince of *Paria* for the space of *ccxxx* myles, are cauled of thynhabitanes, *Cumana*, and *Manacapan*: from these regions distant thre score leagues, is there an other Region cauled *Curiana*. When he had thus passed ouer this long tract of sea, supposynge wyl that it had byn an Ilande, & doubtinge that he might passe by the Weste to the Northe directlye to *Hispaniola*, he chaunced into a ryuer of *xxx* cubettes depthe, & of such breadth as hath not lyghly byn harde of. For he affirmed it to bee *xxviii* leagues. A lytle further toward the Weste, yet sumwhat more southwarde as the bending of the shore requyred, he entered into a sea full of herbes or weedes. The seede of the herbes whiche swymme on the water, are muche lyke the berryes of the tree cauled *Lentiscus*, which beareth the sweete gumme cauled *Mastix*. They grewe soo thicke, that they sumetyme in maner stayed the shippes. The Admirall reported, that here there is not one daye thowgh the othere all the yeaere muche longer or shorter than an other

other: And that the Northe pole is here eleuate onely fyue degrees as at *Paria*, in whose tracte all these coastes lye. Hee also declared certeyne thynges as concerninge the variete of the northe pole: The which because they seeme contrarie to thoppinions of all the Astronomers, I wyll touche them but with a dyve foote as sayth the proverbe. But it is wel known (mosse noble prince) that the starre which we caule the pole starre, or north starre, (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*) is not the very poynte of the pole Arctike hypon the whiche the ares or extremities of heauens are turned abowte. The which thyng may well be proued, if when the starres fyist appeare, yow beeholde the pole starre throught any narrow hole. For soo, applyinge yowre instrument therto in the morninge sun: what before the day springe haue blemysht theyr lyght, yf then yowre looke throught the same hole, yowre shall perceane it to bee moued from the place where yowre sawe it fyist. But howe it cometh to passe, that at the begynnyng of the euening twilight, it is eleuate in that Region only fyue degrees in the moneth of June, and in the morninge twilight to bee eleuate. xij. degrees by the same quaadrante, I doo not vnderstande. Nor yet doo the reasons which he bringeth, in any poynt satisfye me. For he sayth, that he hereby coniectured, that the earth is not perfectlye rounde: But that when it was created, there was a certeyne heape reyled thereon, much hygher then the other partes of the same. So that (as he saith) it is not rounde after the forme of an apple or a bal (as other thinke) but rather lyke a pear as it hangeth on the tree: And that *Paria* is the Region which possideth the supereminente or hyghest parte thereof nere vnto heauen. In soo muche that he earnestly contendeth, the earthly Paradyse to bee situate in the toppes of those three hylles, which wee sayde before, that the watche man sawe owte of the toppe castell of the shippe: And that the outrageous streames of the freche waters whiche soo violentlye isshewe owte of the sayde goulfes and firyue soo with the salte water, faule headlonge from the toppes of the sayde mountaynes. But of this matter, it shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche. Lette vs nowe therfore returne to the historye from which we haue degressed. When he perceaued hym selfe to bee thus intorapped in soo greete a goulfe beyonde his expectation, soo that he had now no hope

The eleuati-  
on of the pole  
at *paria*.

Note a se-  
crete as con-  
cerning the  
pole starre.

An experiee

A marvelous  
secrete.

That the  
earth is not  
perfectly  
rounde.

paradise is in  
the moun-  
taines of *pa-  
ria*.

Looke the  
ninth booke  
seconde de-  
cade.

## The fyfth decade.

Paria is part  
of the firme  
lande of india

Tyme reuea-  
leth al thynges

Paria more  
fouthwarde  
then Hispani-  
ola

to fynde any paſſage towarde the northe wherby he myghte ſayle directly to *Hiſpaniola*, he was enforced to tume backe the ſame way by the which he came, and directed his viage to *Hiſpaniola* by the northe of that lande lyinge towarde the Eaſte. They which afterwarde ſearched this lande more curiouſlye, wyll it to bee parte of the continente or firme lande of India, and not of *Cuba* as the Admiral ſuppoſed. For there are many which affirme that they haue ſayled rownd about *Cuba*. But whether it bee ſo or not, or whether enuyinge the good fortune of this man, they ſeek occaſions of querelinge ageynſt hym, I can not iudge: But tyme ſhall ſpeake, which in tyme appoynted, reuealeth both truth and falſehod. But whether *Paria* bee Continent or not, the Admirall dothe not muche con- tende. But he ſuppoſeth it to bee Continent. He alſo affirmeth that *Paria* is more ſouthwarde then *Hiſpaniola*, by eyght hundredeth foureſcore and two myles. At the length he came to *Hiſpaniola* (to ſee his ſouldiers which he left with his brethren) the thyrde day of the calendes of September: In the yeare 1498. But (as often tymes chaunceth in humayne thynges,) amonge his ſoo many proſperous, pleaſaunt, and luckye aſſayes, fortune mengled ſume ſeedes of worne woodde, and corrupted his pure corne with the malicious weedes of coccle.

¶ The ſeuenth booke of the fyfth decade, to  
the ſame Lodowike Cardinall &c.

The ſpany-  
ardes rebell  
in the Admi-  
rals abſence



¶ When the Admirall was nowe come to the Il- lande of *Hiſpaniola*, he ſortnde all thynges con- founded and oute of order. For *Roldanus* (of whom wee ſpake beefore) refuſed in his ab- ſence to obey his brother, truſtinge to the mul- titude of ſuch as were conſetthered with him. And not onely behaued hym ſelfe proudlye a- geynſt the Admiralles brother and Lieutenannt ſumtyme his maſter, but alſo ſente letters to his reproche to the kynge of Spayne, therein accuſinge bothe the brethren, leying heynous matters to theyr charges. But the Admirall ageyne, ſent meſ- ſengers to the kynge, which myght informe hym of theyr re- bellion: Inſtantly deſyringe his grace, to ſende hym a newe ſupplie of men, wherby he myght ſuppreſſe theyr licetiousnes  
and

and punyſhe them for theyr miſchuous actes. They accuſed the Admirall and his brother to bee vniuit men, cruel enemies and ſheaders of the Spanyſhe bludde: declaringe that vppon euery lyght occaſion, they wolde racke them, hange them, and heade them: And that they tooke pleaſure therein. And that they departed from them as from cruell tyrantes and wyld beaſtes reioyſinge in bludde, alſo the kynges enemies. Aſſurmyng ſyke wyſe that they well perceaued theyr intente to bee none other then to vſurpe The myre of the Iſlandes: whiche theynge (they ſayde) they ſuſpected by a thouſand coniectures. And eſpecially in that they wolde permitte none to reſorte to the golde mynes, but only ſuche as were theyr familiers. The Admirall on the contrary parte, when he deſpyed ayde of the kyng to infringe theyr inſolencie, auousched that al thoſe his accuſers, which had deuiled ſuche lyes ageynſt hym, were noughtye felowes, abhominable knaues and vylaynes, theues and baudes, ruſſians aduouterers and raiſhers of women faulſe perjured bagabundes, and ſuche as had byn eyther conuict in pryſons, or fledde for feare of Iudgement: ſo eſcaping punyſhement, but not leauinge vice wherin they ſtill contynued and brought the ſame with them to the Iſlande, lyeinge there in lyke maner as before, in theſte, lechery, and all kynnes of miſcheefe: And ſoo gyuen to Idolens and leape, that wheras they were brought thither for myners, labourers, & ſcullians, they wolde not now goe one furlonge from theyr houſes except they were bozine on mens backes, lyke vnto the whiche in owlde tyme were cauled *Ediles Curules*. For, to this office, they put the miſerable Iſlande men, whom they handeled moſt cruelly. For leaſte theyr handes ſhulde diſcontinewe from ſheadinge of bludde, and the better to trye theyr ſtrength and manhod, they vſed now and then for theyr paſſyme to ſtryue amonge them ſelues and proue who coulde moſt cleaneſly with his ſwoorde at one ſtroke ſtryke of the heade of an innocent. Soo that he which coulde with moſt agilite make the heade of one of thoſe poore wretches to flye quyte and cleane from the body to the grounde at one ſtroke, he was the beſt mā and counted moſt honorable. Theſe theynges and many ſuche other, the one of them layde to the others charge beefore the kyng. Whyle theſe theynges were doinge, the Admirall ſente his brother the lieutenant with an army of foure ſcore and

The Spanyarden accuſe the Admirall.

The Admirall anſwere.

Inſolencie & idelnes of li- bertie.

Theſe had the cuſtodies of the temples.

A cruel and deuelyſhe paſſyme.

## The fyrst decade.

kynges Guar-  
lionexius is ca-  
pitaine of vi.  
thousand Ci-  
guauians.

tenne footemen, and a fewe horsemen, (with thre thousande of the Glande men which were mortall enemies to the Ciguauians) to meete the people of Ciguaua, with Kynges Guarlionexius theyr graunde capitayne, who had doone muche myscheefe to othere men and suche as fauoured theym. Therefore when the Lieutenante had conducted his army to the bankes of a certeyne greate ryuer runnyng by the playne which we sayd before to lye betwene the corners of the mountaynes of Ciguaua and the sea, he forwode two scoutes of his enemyes lurking in certeyne bushes: wherof the one, castyng hym selfe head longe into the sea, escaped: and by the mouth of the ryuer swamme ouer to his coompanyons. The other beinge taken, declared that in the woodde on the other side the ryuer, there lay in campe fyre thousande Ciguauians redy, bnywares to assaile othere men passyng bye. Wherfoze the Lieutenante fyndyng a shalowe place where he myght passe ouer, he with his hole army entered into the ryuer. The which thyng when the Ciguauians had espyed, they came runnyng owt of the wooddes with a terrible crye and mosse horrible aspect, much lyke vnto the people cauled Agathysii of whom the poete virgile speaketh. For they were all paynted and spotted with sundry coloures, and especiall with blacke and redde whiche they make of certeyne frutes noozpethed for the same purpose in theyr gardens, with the ioyce wherof they paynt them selues from the forheade, euen to the knees: hauing theyr heare (whiche by arte they make longe and blacke if nature deny it them) wyethed and rowled after a thousande fashions. A man wold thinke them to bee deuylles incarnate newly broke owte of hell, they are soo lyke vnto helhoundes. As othere men waded ouer the ryuer, they shotte at them and hurled darteres soo thicke, that it almoste tooke the lyght of the sonne from othere men. In so much that if they had not bozne of the force therof with theyr targettes, the matter hadde gonne wryonge with them. per at the length, many beinge wounded, they passed ouer the ryuer, which thyng when the enemies sawe, they fledde: whome othere men persuinge, slewe sume in the chase: but not many, by reason of theyr swyftenes of foote. Thus beinge in the wooddes, they shotte at othere men more safely. For they being accustomed to the wooddes and naked without any lette, passed through the bushes and shrubbes

Agathysii.

Naked men  
paynted with  
the ioyce of  
certe frutes.

heare made  
longe & black  
by arte.

The vse of  
targettes.

The Ciguau-  
ians are dynt  
to flyght.

as it had byn wylde bores or hartes : wheras oovre men were hyndered by reason of theyr apparell, targettes, longe iauelens, and ignorance of the place. Wherefore, when he had rested there all that nyght in bayne, and the daye folowynge saue none sleringe in the wodes, he went (by the counceyl and conducte of the other Ilande men which were in his armye) immediatly from thence, to the montaynes in the which king *Maiohanexius* had his cheefe mansion place in the bylage cauled *Capronum*, by the which name also, the kynges palaice was caled, beinge in the same bylage. Thus marchynge forwarde with his army, abowte twelue myle of, he encamped in the bylage of an other kyng, which thynhabitanes had forsaken for feare of oovre men. yet makynge dyligent search, they fownde two, by whom they had knowleage that there was tenne kynges with *Maiohanexius* in his palaice of *Capronum*, with an army of eight thousand *Ciguanius*. At the Lieutenantes fyrst appoche, he durst not gyue them battayle vntyll he had sumwhat better searched the Region: yet did he in the meane tyme skympe the with them thowse. The nexte nyght abowte mydnyght, he sent furth scoutes, and with them guydes of the Ilande men which knewe the countrey. Whom the *Ciguanius* espyenge from the mountaynes, prepared them selues to the battayle with a terrible crye or alarome after their manner : but yet durst not coome owte of the wooddes, supposing that the Lieutenante with his mayne army had byn euen at hande. The day folowynge, whē he brought his army to the place where they encamped, leaping owte of the wooddes, they thowse attempted the fortune of warre, fiercely assayling oovre men with a mayne force, and woundinge manye befoze they coulde coouer them with theyr targettes. yet oovre men put them to flyght, slewe many, and tooke many. The resydewe fledde to the wooddes, where they kept them styll as in their moste safe houlde. Of them which were taken, he sent one, & with hym an other of the Ilande men which was of his parte to *Maiohanexius* with commaundement in this effect. The Lieutenante brought not hether his army (as *Maiohanexius*) to kepe warre eyther ageynst yowre or yowre people : for he greatly despyeth yowre frendshippe. But his entent is, that *Guario-nexius* who hath perswaded yowre to bee his ayde ageynste hym to the greate destruction of yowre pedple and vndoynge of

kyngs maiohanexius.

An army of viii. thousand *Ciguanius*.

A Larome.

The *Ciguani* ans out to flyght againe

The Lieutenante his ambassage to kyng maiohanexius.

## The fyrst decade.

kynges Guarionexius.

Maïobanexius his answer.

Natural hatred of vyce.

The Lieutenantes gentelnestoward Maïobanexius

powre countrey, may haue beſe correction alſoell for his diſobedience towarde him, as alſo for raiſing tumultes amonge the people. Wherefore, he requyret hys powre and crogeth powre, to deliuer Guarionexius into his handes. The which thyng yf powre ſhall perſorme, the Admirall his brother wyll not only gladly admitte yowre to his frendſchyppe, but alſo enlarge & defende yowre dominion. And if hercin yowre reſuſe to accomplyſhe his requette, it wyll ſolowe, that yowre ſhall ſhortely repent yowre therof. For yowre kyngedome ſhall be waſted with ſwoorde and ſyer, and yowre ſhall abyde the fortune of warre wherof yowre haue had experience with ſauour, as yow ſhall further know here after to yowre payne, yf with ſobernes yowre prouoke hym to ſhewe the vttermoſte of his powre. When the meſſenger had thus doone his errante, Maïobanexius answered, that Guarionexius was a good man, indued with many vertues as all men knewe: And therefore he thought hym worthy his ayde: eſpecially in as muche as he fledde to hym for ſuccoure, and that he had made hym ſuch promeſſe, to whom alſo he had proued to bee his faithfull frende. Ageyne, that they were naloghty men, violent and cruell, deſpyringe other mens gooddis, and ſuche as ſpared not to ſhede innocentes bludde: In ſyne, that he wolde not haue to doo with ſuche myſcheyuous men, nor yet enter into frendſchippe with them. When theſe thynges came to the Lieutenantes eare, he commaunded the bylage to be burnt where he hym ſelfe encamped, with many other bylages there aboute. And when he drew nere to the place where Maïobanexius lay, he ſent meſſengers to hym ageyne, to common the matter with hym, and to wyll hym, to ſende ſume one of his moſte feyrfull frendes to entreate with hym of peace. Where yppon the kyng ſent vnto hym one of his cheefe gentelmen, and with hym two other to wayte on hym. When he came to the Lieutenantes preſence, he frendly requyred hym to perſuade his lord and maſter in his name, and cruelly to admonyſhe hym, not to ſuffer his ſooryng kyngedome to bee ſpoyled, or hym ſelfe to abyde the haſarde of warre for Guarionexius ſake: And further to exhorte hym to deliuer hym, excepte he wolde procure the deſtruction bothe of hym ſelfe, his people, and his countrey. When the meſſenger was returned, Maïobanexius aſſembled the people, declaring vnto them what was doone, but they cried

owte on hym to delyuer *Guarionexius*: And beganne to curse the  
 dape that euer they had receaued hym, thus to disturbe theyr  
 quietnes. *Maiohanexius* answered them, that *Guarionexius* was a  
 good man, and had well deserued of him, giuinge hym many  
 princely presentes: And had also taught both his wyfe and  
 hym to synge and daunce, whiche thyng he dyd not lytle  
 esteeme. And was therfore fully resolued in no case to forsake  
 hym, or ageynste all humanitie to betraye his frende whiche  
 fledde to hym for succoure: but rather to abyde al extremities  
 with hym, then to minister occasion of obloquye to slaunders  
 to reporte that he had betrayed his gesse whom he tooke into  
 his house with warranties. Thus dismissinge the people sigh  
 inge and with sorrowfull hartes, he cauled *Guarionexius* before  
 hym, promysinge hym ageyne, that he wolde bee partaker of  
 his fortune whyle lyfe lasted. In so muche that he thought  
 it not beste to sende any further woorde to the *Licuetenaunt*:  
 but appoynted hym whome before he sent to hym, to keepe  
 the way with a garrisson of men, to thintent that if any mes  
 sengers shulde be sent from the *Licuetenaunt*, to kepe them by  
 the way, and admytte none to communication or further entre  
 tie of peace. In the meane tyme, the *Licuetenaunt* sent twoo,  
 wherof the one was a captiue *Ciguauian*, and the other an *A*  
*lande* man of them which were frendes to owre men: They  
 were bothe taken and slayne. The *Licuetenaunt* folowed the  
 onely with ten footemen and foure horsmen. Spydinge his  
 messengers deade in the waye, he was further prouoked to  
 wrath, and determyned more extremely to deale with *Maioha*  
*nexius*. And therefore wente forwarde incontinently with his  
 hole army to his cheefe palaice of *Capronum* where he yet laye  
 in campe. At his approche, all the kynges fledde, euery man  
 his way, and forsooke theyr capitayne *Maiohanexius*: who alio  
 with all his famelye, fledde to the roghly mountaynes. Sum  
 of the *Ciguauians*, sawght for *Guarionexius* to see hym, for  
 that he was the cause of all theise troubles. But his feete sa  
 ued his lyfe. For he fledde in tyme to the mountaynes where  
 he lurked in maner alone amonge the desolate rockes.

Wherreas now the *Licuetenaunts* souldiers were forwe  
 ryed with longe warre, with watchinge, laboure, and hunz  
 ger, (for it was now three moonethes sence the warres be  
 ganne) many desired leaue to departe to the towre of Concep  
 tion

J.iii.

A rare saythe  
 fulnes in a  
 barbarous  
 kyng.

The *Licue*  
*naunts* mes  
 sengers are  
 slayne.

all the kynges  
 are dryen to  
 flyght.

## The fyrst decade.

The Spany-  
ardes are  
peinful in the  
warres.

A desperate  
aduenture  
with xx. men

A police,

Kynge Malo-  
banexius is  
taken.

Guarionexius  
is taken.

tion, where they had graneges and exercised tyllage. He gaue them theyr passportes with allowance of bytayles, and soo that only thyrtyc remayned with hym. These three moonerthes warre, they contynued very paynfull and myserabyle: Sod that durynge al that tyme, they had none other meate but only Cazibi: that is, suche rootes whercof they make theyr breade, and that but seldome to theyr fyll: Also vsias, that is, lyttle beastes lyke Conyes, if by chaunce now and then, they tooke some with theyr houndes. Their drinke was none other then water, such as they fownde, sumtyme sweete, and sumtyme muddy saueringe of the mayrshes. Amonge these delicates, that lyttle sleepe that they had, was euer for the mosse parte abrode vnder the firmamente: And that not without watchmen, and in contynual remouinge as the nature of warre requyred. With these fewe therfore, the Lieuutenant determined to searche the mountaynes, dennes, & caues, if he coulde in any place fynde the steppes of Maiobanexius or Guarionexius. In the meane tyme certeyne of his menne (whom hunger enforced to goo a huntinge to proue if they coulde take any conies) chanced vppon twoo of Maiobanexius familyers, whiche were sent to certeyne bylages of his, to make pidiuision of breade. These he enforced to declare where theyr lord lay hydde. And vsed the same also for guides to bringe oovre me to the place. Twelue of oovre men tooke this enterpryse in hand, painting them selues after the maner of the Ciguaniens. Sod that by this stratageme or policie, they came sodenly vppon Maiobanexius, and tooke hym prisoner with his wyfe, children, and familie, and conuighed them to the towre of Conception to the Lieuutenant. Within a fewe dayes after, hunger compelled Guarionexius to coome oovre of the dennes: whome, certeyne of the people fearinge the Lieuutenant, bewrayde to oovre hunters. The Lieuutenant beinge certified hereof, sent furthe a bande of foote men, commaunding them to lye in ambuſhe vntyll suche tyme as Guarionexius wente from the playnes to the mountaynes, and then sodenly to intrappe hym. They wente as they were commaunded, tooke hym, and browght hym awaye with them. And by this meanes were all the Regions nere abowte, pacified and quyeted. A certeyne noble woman of nere kynred to Maiobanexius, and wyfe to an other kynge whose dominion was yet vntouched, folowed hym in al these aduer-

aduersities. They affirme this woman to bee the fayrest and moſte bewtifull that euer nature brought forth in the Iſlande. Whom, when the kynge her husbände who looued her moſte ardently (as her bewetic deſerued) harde ſaye that ſhee was taken priſoner he wandered vppē and downe the deſertes lyke a man owte of his wytte, not knowinge what to doo or ſaye. But at the lengthe, he came to the Lieutenante, promyſinge moſte faythfully that he wold ſubmitte hym ſelfe and all that he coulde make, vnder his poure, ſoo that he wolde reſtoze hym his wyfe. The Lieutenant accepted the condition & reſtozed him his wife, with certeyne other rulers and gentlemen which he had taken priſoners befoze: Charginge them, and byndinge them with an othe, to bee euer redye at his commaundement. Shortly after, this kynge, of his owne free motion, came ageyne to the Lieutenant, bringyng with hym fyue thouſande men without weapons, ſauyng onely ſuche instrumentes as they ble in tyllage of theyr grownde. He brought with hym alſo, ſeedes to ſowe: wherwith at his owne charge, he cauſed ſuche plentie of theyr corne and fruites to growe in ſundry places of the large vale whereof wee ſpake befoze, that ſhortely after, were ſcene manye fayre and fruitfull fieldes that came therof. And for his gentelnes beinge rewarded of the Lieutenant with certeyne of owre thynges, he departed ioyfully. When the report hereof came to the Ciguanians, it moued the myndes of the kynges to hope of clemencie. Where vppon they came togyther to the Lieutenant with humble ſubmiſſion and faythful promeſſe euer after to bee vnder his obedience: deſyryng hym to reſtoze vnto them theyr kynge, with his ſamylie. At theyr requeſte, the kynges wyfe and his houſholde was ſette at libertie, but he kepte ſtyll as a priſoner. Theſe thynges dyd the Lieutenant in the Iſlande, not yet knowinge what his aduerſaries and accuſers had layde to his charge befoze the kynge of Spayne: who beinge diſquycted with theyr querelinges and accuſacions, and eſpecially for that by reaſon of theyr diſcention, of ſoo greate abundaunce of golde and other thynges, there was as yet but lyttle brought into Spayne, appointed a newe gouernour which ſhuld ſee a redreſſe in theſe thynges: And eyther to punyſhe ſuche as were faultie, or elles to ſende them to hym. What was ſownde ageynſt the Admirall and

A Bewtifull  
woman.

A kynge ſendeth the lieutenant fyue  
thouſand men to tyll the  
grownde.

The kynges  
ſubmit them  
ſelues to the  
Lieutenant

A newe gouernour of  
the Iſlande.

## The fyrst decade.

An vnwoorthy  
rewarde  
for soo greate  
paynes.

His brother, or ageynst his aduersaries whiche accused hym, I doo not wel knowe. But this I am sure of, that both the brethren are taken, brough, and cast in prison, with their goodes confiscate. But as soone as the kynge vnderstoode that they were brough bounde to Calles, he sent messengers in poste, with commaundemente that they shulde bee loosed and coome freely to his presence: wherby he declared that he tooke they troubles greenowde. It is also sayde, that the newe gouernour sent letters to the kynge, wyrtten with the Admiralles hande in straunge and vnkowen sypheringes, to his brother the Lieutenant beinge absente, wyllynge hym to bee in a redynes with a poure of armed men to coome and ayde hym if the Gouernour shulde profer hym any violence. Wherof the gouernour hauinge knowlege (as he saythe) beinge also aduertised that the Lieutenant was gonne to his brother before the men which he had prepared were in a redynes, apprehended them bothe vnwares, before the multitude came togyther. What wyl folowe, tyme, the moste trewe and prudent Iudge, wyl declare. Thus fare ye well.

### The eyghth booke of the fyrst Decade, to Cardinall Lodouike,

The Ocean  
seaheretofore  
vknown.



Shipmasters  
vnder the Ad-  
miral.

The fift portion  
dewe to  
the kynge.

The nauigati-  
on of Petrus  
Alphonsus.

Be greate ryche, and plentifull Ocean sea, heretofore vknown, and nowe folowde by Christophorus Colonus the Admirall, by chauncie and furthurance of the Catholyke kynge, I haue presented vnto your honoure (ryght noble Prince) lyke a golden cheyne vnkowenly wrought. But your hall now receaue a precious iewel to bee appendaunt thereto. Therefore cōmunge suche as were pplottes or gouernours vnder the Admirall, and had dyligently marked the courses and differences of the wyndes, many had licences graunted them of the kynge to seeke further of theyr owne charges, vppon condiciō to pay hym faithfully his portion, which is the fyrst part. But because amonge all other, one <sup>Petrus Alphonsus</sup> cauled Nigro by his surname) sayled towards the South with more prosperous fortune then any of the other, I thinke it best first to speake sumwhat of his vyage. Be therfore, with only one Shippe

Shippe, well furnyshed at his owne charges, after that he had his passeporte with commaundement in no case to caste anker passe fyfte leagues distant from any place where the Admirall hadde touched, sayled fyfte to *Paria* where the Admirall founde bothe the men and women soo laden with cheynes, garlandes, and braselettes of pearles, as wec haue sayde before. Coastinge therfore alonge by the same shore accordinge to the kynges commaundement, (yet leauinge behynde hym the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapaná*) he came to the Region which thynhabitanes thereof, caule *Curiana*: where he founde a haven (as he saythe) muche lyke the porte of *Gades* or *Cades*. In to the which enteringe, he sawe a farre of certeyne howses on the shore, and perceaued when he drew nere, that it was a bylage of onely eyght howses. Proceadyng yet further for the space of thre myles, he espyed an other bylage well replenyshed with people, where there met hym fyfte naked men on a company hauinge with them a certeyne ruler, who desired *Alphósus* to coome to theyr coastes. He brought with hym at this tyme, many haukes belles, pyntes, nedels, braselettes, cheynes, garlandes, and rynges with counterfet stones and glasse, and such other tryfelles, the which within the momente of an houre, he hadde exchaunged for. xv. vneces of theyr pearles which they wore abowte theyr neckes and armes. Then they yet more earnestly desired him to sayle to theyr coastes: Promysynge hym that he shulde there haue as many pearles as he wolde desire. He condescended to their requeste: And the daye folowynge, came to the place where they appoynted hym: Lyinge there at anker, a great multitude of people resorted to hym, instantly requyringe hym to coome alande. But when he considered the innumerable multitude of people which was there assembled, and that he had only. xxxiii. men in his company, he durste not commyt hym selfe to theyr handes, but gaue them to vnderstand by signes and tokens that they shulde coome to the shippe with theyr canoas. For theyr boates (which the men of the Island caule *Canoas*) are made only of one hole peece of woodde as in the *Islandes*: yet more rude, and not soo artificially as theys are. These they caule *Gallitas*: They swarmed therefore to the ship as faste as they myght, bringinge with them great plentie of pearles (which they caule *Tenoras*) exchaunginge the same for

*Paria**Cumana**Manacapaná**Curiana*

pearles for tryfel.

Great plentie of pearles.

humayne people.

## The fyrst decade.

Shel fythe  
in which per-  
les are engen-  
dred.  
Beastes and  
fowles.

Hunters and  
archers.

Theyr maner  
of bargening

The vse of  
pyrnes,

Haukes bels  
in great esti-  
mation.

Roringe of  
wyld beastes

Hartes and  
wyld bores.

more marchaundies. He folowde this people to bee of gentyl nature, simple and innocent, beinge conuersant with them in theyr houses, for the space of .xx. dayes. Theyr houses are made of woodde, couered with the leaues of date trees. Theyr meate for the moste parte, is the selfyshe in the whi che pearles are engendred, wherof theyr sea coastes are ful. They haue also greate plentie of wyld beastes, as hartes, wyld bores, and conys lyke unto hares, both in colour and byggenes. Stocke dones also, and turtle dones. Lyke wyse geese and duckes which they noorye in theyr houses as wee doo. Peacocks flye abowte in maner in euerye woodde and groue: but they are not distinct with sundry coloures as ours are: for the cockes are lyke unto the hennes. These people of *Curiana*, are craftie hunters and exceeding cunning archers, soo that they wyll not lyghly mysse any beast or byrde that they shoote at. More men consumed certeyne dayes here very pleasauntely. Durynge which tyme, who soo euer brought them a peacocke, had for the same, foure pyrnes. He that brought a pheasaunt, had twoo: And for a stocke done or turtle done, one: And for a goose, a smaul looking glasse or a lyttle stone of glasse. Thus they bought and soude with proferynge and byddyng, denyng and refusinge as it had byn in a greate market. When pyrnes were profered them, they asked what they shulde doo with them, beinge naked. But more men satisfified them with a craftie answer, declaring by tokens that they were very necessary to picke theyr teeth and to pul thor: nes owte of theyr fleshe. But aboute al thynges haukes bels were most esteemed amonge them, for theyr sounde & faire colour: And wolde therfore geue much for one of the. More men lodginge in theyr houses, harde in the nyght season ho: ryble noyses and royrnges of wyld beastes in the wooddes which are full of exceedinge greate and hygh trees of sundry kyndes. But the beastes of these wooddes, are not noysome to men. For the people of the countrey goo dayly a hunting, naked, with theyr bowes and arrowes: yet hath it not byn harde of, that any man hath byn slayne of any wyld beaste. As many hartes or wyld bores as more men wolde desyre them to bynge, they wolde kyll in the wooddes with their bowes and arrowes, and not fayle to bynge theim. They lacke kyne, goates, & sheepe, Theyr breade is made of rootes,

as is theyrs of the Ilandes. This nation, hath blacke heare,  
grosse and sumwhat curlede, yet longe also. They keepe theyr  
teeth very whyte: And for that purpose vse to cary a certeine  
herbe betwene theyr lippes for the most parte of the day, and  
to washe theyr mouthes when they cast it away. The women  
doo all theyr busynes at home in theyr howses, and haue al-  
so the cure of yllage of the grounde. But the men apply them  
selues to the warres and huntynge, to playe, singynge and  
daunsing. They haue sundry kyndes of water pottes, iugges,  
and drynkinge cuppes made of earthe in other places about  
theym and brought thither for exchange of other thynges:  
For they vse fayres and markettes for the same purpose: and  
are greatly despyous of such thynges, as are not brought forth  
or made in theyr countrey, as nature hath gyuen a dispositi-  
on to al men to desyre and bee dellyted with newe and strange  
thynges. Many of them, had hangynge at theyr pearles, the  
Iimages of certeine beastes and birdes very artificiously made  
of golde, but not pure. These also are brought them from o-  
ther places for exchange of other thynges. The golde wher-  
of they are made, is native, and of much lyke finenes to that  
wherof the florenes are coyned. The men of this countrey, in-  
close theyr priuie members in a gourd, cutte after the fashion  
of a coddiepiece: or els, couer the same with the shelle of a tor-  
toyle, tyed abowte theyr loynes with laces of gossampine cot-  
ton. In other places of that tract, they thrust the synels with  
in the sheethe therof, and bynde the skynne fast with a stringe.  
The greate wylde beastes wherof wee spake befoze, and many  
other thynges whiche are not founde in any of the Ilandes,  
testifie that this regio is part of the continēt or firme land. But  
the chiefeſt cōiecture wherby they argue the same, is, that by  
the coastes of that lande, from *Paris* towards the weste, they  
sayled aboute thre thousande myles, fyndynge no signe or  
token of any ende. These people of *Curiana* (whiche sum caule  
*Curiana*) beinge demaunded where they hadde suche plentie of  
golde, signified that it was brought them from a Region cau-  
led *Canchieta* or *Cauchieta*, being distant from them syxe soones,  
that is, syxe dayes iourney westwarde: And that theyr Ima-  
ges of goulde, were made in the same Region. Where vppon  
owre men directed theyr vyage thither immediatly: and arri-  
ued there at the calendes of Nouember, in the yere of Christ

Blacke and  
curlede heare.  
white teethe.

Earthen ves-  
sels.

Connynges and  
artificers.

Base golde.

A strange ma-  
ner of coue-  
ringe theyr pri-  
uities.

Tokes of the  
continent or  
firme lande.

The golden  
Regio of Can-  
chieta.

## The fyrst decade.

a thousande and fyue hundreth. The people of the countrey resorted to them without feare, bryngynge with them of the golde which we sayde to bee natyue in that Region. This people had also collers of pearles aboute theyr neckes, whiche were brought them frome *Curiana* for exchange of theyr marchandies. None of them wolde exchange any of those thinges which they had owt of other countreys: as nother the *Curians* golde, nor the *Canchietans* pearles. yet amonge the *Canchietans*, they folowde but litte gold redy gathered. They toke with the frō thense, certen very fayre marmasets or munkeys, & many poppingayes of sundry coloures. In the monethe of November, the ayer was there most temperate, & nothyng coulde. The gardens of the north pole, were owt of syght to bothe these people, they are soo nere to the Equinoctiall. Of the degrees of the pole, they can gyue none other accompte. These people, are wel disposed men, of honest condicions, and nothyng suspicious. For all most all the nyght longe, they resorted to the Shippe with theyr boates, and went aboarde ship without feare, as dyd the *Curians*. They caule pearles, *Corixas*. They are sumwhat ielous. For, when any straungers coome emonge them, they euer place theyr women behynd the. In this Region of *Canchieta*, the gossampine trees growe of them selues commonly in many places, as doo with ys elmes, wyllowes, and salowes. And therefore they vse to make breeches of cotton, wherewith they couer theyr pryue partes in many other Regions there aboute. When they had yet sayled on forwarde by the same coastes, there came forth ageynste them aboute two thousande men, armed after theyr maner, forbidding them to coome aland. These people were soo rude and saluage, that owtre men coulde by no meanes allure them to familiaritie. Owtre men therfore, contentred only with their pearles, returned hacke the same way they came: where they remayned with the *Curians* continually for the space of twentie dayes, and fylled theyr bellies wel with good meate. And here it seemeth to me, not farre from my purpose, to declare what chanced vnto them in theyr returne, when they came nowe within the syght of the coaste of *Paria*. They happened therefore in the way, at *Os Draconis* and the goulfes of *Paria*, (wherof wee spake before) to meete with a nauie of .xviii. Canoes of *Canibales* which went a rounge to hunt for mē. Who  
as soone

Temperate  
ayer in No-  
uember.  
The Equino-  
ctiall lyne.

Humane peo-  
ple.

Gossampine  
trees.

Chollyshe  
people

Alphōsus re-  
turneth to  
Paria.

Canibales in  
the goulfes  
of Paria.

Soone as they had espyed ovr men, assailed theyr shippe fiercely and without feare enclosed the same, disturbing ovr men on euery syde with theyr arrowes. But ovr men so feared them with theyr gunnes, that they fledde immediatly, whom ovr menne folowinge with the shippe boate, tooke one of theyr Canoas, and in it, only one Canibal (for the other had escaped) and with hym, an other man bolonde: Who, with teares runninge downe his cheekes, and with gesture of his handes, eyes, and heade, signified that syre of his compaynyons had byn cruelly cutte in pieces and eaten of that myshcheuous nation: and that he shulde haue byn lykewyse handled the day folowynge. Wherefore they gaue hym poure ouer the Canyball, to doo with hym what he wolde. Then with the Canibales owne clubbe, he layde on hym al that he might dyue with hande and foote, grinninge and fetinge as it had byn a wylde bore: Thinkynge that he had not yet sufficiently reuenged the death of his compaynyons, when he had beaten ovr his braynes and guttes. When he was demaunded after what sorte the Canibales were woont to invade other countreys, he answered that they euer vsed to carpe with them in theyr Canoas, a greate multitude of clubbes: The whiche, where soo euer they lande, they pitch in the grownde, and encampe them selues within the compasse of the same, to lye the moze safely in the nyght season. In *Curiana*, they fownde the head of a capitaine of the Canibales, nailed ouer the doore of a certeyne gouernoure, for a token of victorie, as it hadde byn the standerde or helmette taken from the enemye in battayle. In these coastes of *Paria*, is a Region cauled *Haraid*, in the whiche, greate plentie of salte is gathered after a strange sorte. For the sea beinge there tossed with the poure of the wyndes, dyueth the salte waters into a large playne by the sea syde: where: afterward when the sea waxeth calme, and the soonne begynnethe to shyne, the water is congeled into mosse pure and whyte salte, wherewith innumerable sheppes might bee laden, if men doo resorte thither for the same beefore there faule any rayne. For the rayne melterhe it, and cartereth it to synke into the sande, and soo by the pores of the earth, to returne to the place from whence it was dyuen. Other say, that the playne is not fylled from the sea, but of certeine springes whose water is moze sharpe and salt the

water

Death for  
death.

howe the ca-  
nibales forti-  
fie their cape

*Haraid.*  
Salte engend-  
red of the  
water of the  
sea.

Sprynge of  
of salt water.

## The fyrst decade.

The bodies  
of princes dy  
ed & reserved

Threescore &  
xvi. poundes  
weight of per  
les for. v. spil  
lynges.  
The course of  
the sea to-  
ward the  
weste.

perles as co-  
mo as chaffe  
petrus Alpho  
sus in prison.

Orient perles  
as bygge as  
hasell nuttes.

water of the sea. Thinhabitantes doo greatlye esteeme this bay of salte. Which they vse, not only for theyr owne commoditie, but also woorkinge the same into a square forme lyke unto bricke, they sell it to strangers for exchange of other thynges whiche they lacke. In this Region, they stretch and dye the deade bodies of theyr kinges and noble men, layinge the same vpon a certeyne frame of woodde much lyke vnto a hurdle or grediven, with a gentell fyre vnder the same, thus by lyttle and lyttle consuminge the fleshe and keepinge the skynne hole with the bones inclosed therein. These dyed carcases, they haue in greate reuerence, and honour them for theyr household and famplier goddes. They say that in this place they sawe a man, and in an other place a woman, thus dyed and reserved. When they departed from *Curiana*, the. viii. day of the Ides of february to returne to Spayne, they had three score and. xvi. poundes weight (after. viii. vnces to the pounde) of perles, whiche they bought for exchange of other thynges, amountinge to the value of fyue myllinges. Departinge therfore, they consumed three score dayes in theyr iourney (although it were shorter then frome *Hispaniola*) by reason of the contynuall course of the sea into the weste, whiche dyd not only greatlye stay the shippe, but also sumtymes dryue it backe. But at the length they came home soo laden with perles, that they were with euery maryner, in maner as common as chaffe. But the master of the shippe, *Petrus Alphonsus*, beinge accused of his coompanyons that he had stowlen a great multitude of precious perles, and defrauded the kynge of his portion which was the fyueyth parte, was taken of *Fernando de Vega*, a man of greate learninge and experience and gouernour of *Gallecia*, where they arryued, and was there kepte in prison a longe tyme. But he styll denyethe that euer he deteyned anye parte of the perles. Many of these perles were as bygge as hasell nuttes, and oriente, (as we caule it) that is, lyke vnto them of the East partes. Yet not of soo greate price, by reason that the holes therof are not soo perfecte. When I my selfe was presente with the ryght honozable duke of *Medhyne*, and was bidden to dyner with hym, in the citie of *Liule*, they broght to hym aboue a hundreth and twentie vnces of perles to be soude: which surely did greatlye delyte me with their fayrenes and brightnes. Sum saye, that *Alphonsus* hadde nog these

these perles in *Curiana* being distante from *Os Draconis* more the  
a hundredth and twentie leagues, but that he had them in the  
Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapaná*, nere unto *Os Draconis* and  
the Ilande of *Margarita*. For they deny that there is any per-  
les folowde in *Curiana*. But sicke the matter is yet in controuer-  
sie, we wyll passe to other matters. Thus muche yowe haue  
whereby yowe maye conjecture what commoditie in tyme to  
coome may bee looked for from these newe landes of the west  
Ocean, wheras at the fyrste discoveringe, they shewe such to-  
kens of greate ryches. Thus fare ye well.

*Curiana*  
*Os Draconis.*  
*Cumana.*  
*Manacapaná.*  
The Ilande of  
*Margarita.*

The .ix. booke of the fyrst Decade  
to Cardynall Lodowike,



*Vincentiagnes Pinzonus*, and also *Aries Pinzonus*, his  
nemie, by his brothers syde, which accompa-  
nyed the Admirall *Colonus* in his fyrste vyage,  
and were by him appoynted to bee masters of  
twoo of the smaule shippes which the Spani-  
ardes caule *Carauelas*, beinge mooued by the  
greate ryches and amplytude of the new lan-  
des, furnished of theyr owne charges, foure carauels in the  
hauen of theyr owne countrey which the Spaniardes caule  
*Palos*, boztheringe on the weste Ocean. Hauynge therfore the  
kyniges licence and passeporte to departe, they loosed fro the  
hauen, aboute the Calendes of December, in the yere  
1499. This hauen of *Palos* is thre score and twelue myles  
distant from *Gades*, commonly cauled *Cades*: and thre score and  
foure myles from *Liule*. All thynhabitantcs of this towne,  
not one excepted, are greatly gyuen to searchinge of the sea,  
and continually exercysed in sayling. They also directed their  
vyage fyrst to the Ilandes of *Canarie* by the Ilandes of *Hespe-  
rides*, now cauled *Cabouerde*, which sum caule *Gorgodes Meducius*.  
Saylinge therfore directly towarde the southe frome that I-  
lande of the *Hesperides* which the Portugales (being possessers of  
the same) caule *Sancti Iacobi*, and departinge frome thense at  
the Ides of January, they folowed the south west wynde, be-  
yinge in the myddest betwene the south and the weste. When  
they supposed that they had sayled aboute thre hundred the  
leagues by the same wynde, they say that they losse the syght  
of

The nauigat-  
on of *Vincenti-  
us* and *Aries  
Pinzonus*.

Licence and  
passeporte.

*Cades*. Ciuile.

The Ilandes  
of *Canarie*  
*Cabouerde*.

*S. James* I-  
lande.

## The fyrst decade.

The North  
pole owte of  
syght.

habitable Re-  
gions vnder  
the Equinocti-  
al lyne.

An other or-  
der of starres  
A thicke mist

A ryfinge in  
the myddest  
of the earth.

of the North starre : and were shortly after ; tossed with  
exceedinge tempestes bothe of wynde and sea, and vered with  
intollerable heate. yet sayled they on further (not without  
greate daunger) for the space of twoo hundrethe and fortie  
leagues, folowing yet the same wynde by the lost pole. Wher-  
fore, whether habitable Regions bee vnder the Equinoctiall  
lyne or not, let these men and the owlde wyrters, aswel phi-  
losophers as poetes and cosmographers discusse. For these  
men, ascrive it to bee habitable, and maruelously replenished  
with people : and they, that it is uninhabitable by reason of  
the soone beames dependinge perpendicularly or directlye or  
uer the same. yet were there many of the oulde wyrters, whi-  
che attempted to proue it habitable. These maryners beinge  
demaunded, if they sawe the south pole, they answered that  
they knewe no starre there lyke vnto this pole; that myght be  
decerned aboute the poynte. But that they sawe an other or-  
der of starres, and a certeyne thicke myst ryfynge from the ho-  
rizontall lyne, which greatly hyndered theyr syght. They con-  
tende also, that there is a great heape or ryfynge in the myd-  
dest of the earth, which taketh away the syght of the southe  
pole, vntyll they haue vterly passed ouer the same. But they  
verely beleue that they sawe other images of starres, muche  
differinge from the situation of the starres of oure hemispher-  
re or halfe circle of heauen. Howe soo euer the matter bee, as  
they informe vs, wee certifie youe. At the lengthe, the se-  
uenth day of the calendes of Februarye, they espied lande a  
farre of. And seinge the water of the sea to bee troubelous,  
foundinge with theyr plummet, they founde it to be .xvi. fa-  
thames deepe. Goinge a lande, and tarienge there for the  
space of twoo dayes, they departed bycause they sawe no peo-  
ple serringe, althowghe they folowde certeyne steppes of men  
by the sea syde. Thus grauinge on the trees and the stones  
nere vnto the shore, the kynges name and theyrs, and the  
tyme of theyr comming thether, they departed. Not farre fro  
this station, folowynge the spers on the lande by nyght, they  
founde a nation lyng vnder the open fymamentre after the  
manner of warre. Oure men thought it not beste to trouble  
them vntyll the morninge. Therefore, at the ryfynge of the  
soonne, fortie of oure men well armed, wente toward them :  
ageynst whom came furth .xxii. of them, with bowes, ringes  
and

and dartes, enen redy to the feyght. The other coompanye folowed them, armed after the same maner. Oure men affirme that they were of hygher stature then eyther the Almaynes or Sannonians. They behelde oure men with feawynge and threatenynge countenance. But oure men thoughte it not good to faule to bickeringe with them, vncerteyne whether it were for feare, or bycause they wolde not dyne the to alyght. Wherfore they went aboute to allure them by faire meanes & rewarde. But they refused all kynde of gentelnes, & stood euer in a redynes to feight, declaringe the same by signes and tokens. Thus oure men resorted to theyr shippes, and they to the place from whence they came, without any further blyssnes. The same nyght aboute mydnyght, they fledde, and left the place voyde where they lay in campe. Oure men suppose them to bee a vagabunde and wanderinge nation lyke vnto the Scythians, withoute houses or certeyne dwellinge places, lyuinge onely with the frutes of the earth, hauing theyr wyues and chyldren folowinge them. Such as measured their footesteppes in the sande, affirme with greates othes, that one of theyr feete is almost as longe as thoo feete of oure men of the meane sorte. Saylinge wyther further, they founde lande ether ryuer, but not of deeply sufficient to beare the catasels. They sent therfore the foure shippe boates to lande, full of armed men to searce the countrey. They espyed vppon a hygh hyll nere vnto the sea syde, a greate multitude of people, to whom oure coompany sent furthe one man with certeyne of oure thynges to allure them to cerryunge. And when he had cast a harkes boll towarde them, they cast downe a wedge of golde a cuberre longer the which as he stouped to take vpper, they suddenly inclosed hym, and carped hym awaye. But he was shortly after released by his coompanyons, to sum of their paynes: for they sawe eyght of oure men, and wounded many a farre of, with theyr arrowes, and dartes made of wood hardened at the endes with fyre. After this, they entoomparfed oure shippe boates within the ryuer, and came valhelye within the reaches of oure men, lapinge shoulde on the barmes sydes, where they were thrust through and hosen in peeces as it had byn strepes, by reason they were naked. Yet wolde they not for al this, gyue ouer, but tooke from oure men one of their boates, hauing nod men in it. For the gonerous ther

People of  
hygh stature.

A vagabunde  
kynde of men

Signes.

bus obloq  
boring

Alloq

amud

amud

amud

amud

amud

amud

amud

amud

amud

amud

amud

amud

## The fyrst decade.

A sea of fre-  
the water.

many fruite-  
full Ilandes.

humane  
people.

Maratāball.  
Paricora.

Regions of  
Paria.

Golde and  
perles.

Os Draconis.

Cumana.  
Manacapanā.  
Curiana.

The hole  
earth largely  
taken, maye  
bee cauled  
an Ilande.  
Maragnonius  
a ryuer of ex-  
ceedinge  
breadth and  
full of Ilands  
looke decade  
liber. ii.

of being slayne with an arrowe, the other fledde and escaped. And thus they lefte this fierce and warlike people, saylinge towarde the northweste alonge by the same coastes, with forrowfull hartes for the death of theyr companions. When they had sayled abowte .xl. leagues, they chaunced into a sea of suche frethe water, that they fylled theyr banelles and hogges heades therewith. Searching the cause hereof, they vnderstoode that a vehement course of ryuers descended with great violence from the toppes of certeyne greate hylles. They say also that there lyeth within the sea, many fortunate and fruitefull Ilandes, and well inhabited: And that the inhabitants of this tracte are men of meeke nature and, suche as doo not refuse strangers: yet lyttle profitable to them, bycause they had noo marchandyses for their purpose, as golde or precyous stones. For lacke wherof, they brought from thence theyr captiues to sell for slaues. The inhabitants caule this Region *Maratāball*. The Region of the easie parte of that ryuer, is cauled *Camomorus*: And that of the weste parte, *Paricora*: in the midlande wherof, the inhabitants signified that there is greate plenty of golde: For folowynge this ryuer directly toward the North (as the bendynge of the shore requyred) they recovered agayne the sight of the north pole. All the coaste of this tracte, pertyneth to *Paria*, the which (as we sayd before) was fyrst founde by *Colonus*. hym selfe, and hath in maner in euery place, greate abundaunce of pearles. They saye that these coastes are adioynynge vnto, and all one with *Os Draconis*, and also ho: theynge vppon the Regions of *Cumana*, *Manacapanā*, *Curiana*, *Cauchiana*, and *Quechichoa*. Wherfore they thought it to bee parte of the firme lande of India: beyonge the ryuer of *Ganges*, for the greate and large compasse therof, dothe not permitte that it shoulde bee an Ilande. Albeit, the hole earth vncouered with water, largely taken, may bee cauled an Ilande. From the poynte of that land wher they lost the sight of the north pole, saylynge by a continuall tracke abowte thre hundredth leagues towarde the weste syde of *Paria*, they say that almoste in the mydde way, they chaunced into a ryuer cauled *Maragnonius*, which they affirme to bee of such exceedinge breadth, that it myght seeme incredible, if the antiquitie dyd not make mention of the lyke. Beinge demaunded of me if it were not salte water where it diuided the lande, they answered, that the wa-  
ter

ter therof was very freshe and sweete : And that the further  
it ranne, to bee soo muche the fresher : Also full of Ilandes &  
homsome fyre. They dare auouch the breadth therof, to bee  
more then thirrie leagues. Yet if wee well weighe and consy-  
der the largenes and wydenes of *Borisstomea* and *Spiriosstomea*, the  
mouthes of the famous ryuer of *Yster* (nowe cauled *Danubius*) &  
howe farre they violare or corrupte the salte water with their  
fresheenes, wee shall cease to maruelles; although this other ry-  
uer bee greater. For, who can dimynyshe the poure of nature,  
but that it may make this bigger then the other, and an other  
bygger then this. And I suppose this to bee the ryuer wher-  
of *Colonus* the Admirall made mention in the discription of his  
vyage in these coastes. But wee shall hereafter haue further  
knowleage hereof. Let vs nowe therfore returne to the com-  
modities of these Regions. They fownde in many Ilandes a  
bowte *Paria*, great wooddes of brastle trees : And brought a-  
wayne with them, three thousande poundes weight thereof.  
They say that the brastle of *Hispaniola*, is muche better then  
this, to dye clothe with a more fayre and durable colour. Fro  
Hense, folowynge the wynde (whiche the Spanyardes caule  
*Nordwest*, and the Italians *Graco*) they passed by many Ilandes  
very fruitfull, yet lesse desolate and wasted by reason of the  
crueltie of the *Camballes*. For they wente alande in many pla-  
ces, and fownde the ruines of many destroyed howses. Yet in  
sum places, they founde men, but those excreadinge fearefull,  
fyinge to the mountaynes, rockes, and wooddes at the sight  
of euery straunger or shippe, and wanderinge without houses  
or certeyne abydinge places, for feare of the *Camballes* lay-  
inge wayte and huntinge after them. Here they founde those  
great trees which of the selues in dyuers places bringe furth  
the fruite or spice whiche the Apothecaries caule *Cassia fistula* :  
And that of noo lesse goodnes then that whiche the phisitians  
minister to such as bee diseased with the ague. But it was not  
ripe at theyr beinge there. They affirme that there are trees of  
suche byggenes, that xvi. men ioyninge handes togyther and  
standinge in compace, can scarcely embrace sum of them. Be-  
monge these trees is fownde that monstrous beaste with a  
snout lyke a fore, a tayle lyke a marmasette, eares lyke a  
batte, handes lyke a man, and fecte lyke an ape, bearing her  
whelpes abowte with her in an owtwarde bellye muche lyke

Lii.

vnto

*Borisstomea*,  
and *Spirio-*  
*stomea*, mou-  
thes of the  
ryuer of *Da-*  
*nubius*,

The commo-  
dities of the  
Regions and  
Ilandes a-  
bout *paria*.  
*Brastle*.

many fruitfull  
Ilandes lesse  
desolate.

*Canibales*.

Trees of *Cas-*  
*sia fistula*.

Trees of mar-  
nelous bysge-  
nes.  
A monstrous  
beaste.

## The fyrst decade.

into a greate bagge or purse. The deade carcas of this beaſt,  
 you ſawe with me, and turned it ouer and ouer with yolore  
 olone handes, marueplynge at that newe belly and wonderz  
 full promiſion of nature. They ſay it is knowne by experience,  
 that ſhee neuer lettereth her whelpes goo owte of that purse, ex  
 cept it bee epyther to play, or to ſucke, vntyl ſuche tyme that  
 they bee able to gette theyr lyving by them ſelues. They tooke  
 this beaſt with her whelpes: But the whelpes dyed ſhortely  
 after in the ſhyppes, yet the damme liued certeyne moonerthes.  
 But at the length, not beinge able to abyde ſoo greate altera  
 tion of ayer, and chaunge of meate, ſhee dyed alſo in the way.  
 But of this beaſt, wee haue ſayde enowgh. Let vs now ther  
 fore retorne to the autours of theſe thynges. Theſe twoo *xiij*  
 xpm, the vncle and the newie, ſulſeyned manye great troubles  
 and horrible tempeſtes and perilles in this nauigation. For  
 when they had nowe ſayled by the coaſtes of *Parth* abowte, bi  
 hundredeth leagues, and (as they ſuppoſed) beyonde the cite  
 of Cathay and the coaſtes of Eaſte India beyonde the ryuer of  
 Eanges, there roſe ſoodenly ſoo fierce a tempeſt in the moor  
 neth of July, that, of the foure carauels which they had with  
 them, twoo were diſtroyed euen befoze theyr eyes: and the  
 thyrde lyenge at anker, with lyke ſoodennes carped owte of  
 theyr lyght thzowgh the violence of the tempeſt: The fourth  
 alſo lyng at anker, was ſoo ſhaken and brooſed, that al the  
 ſeames therof were almoſt looſed, yet came they to lande owte  
 of this laſte ſhyppe, but wyterlye deſpayryng of the ſhyppe.  
 Wherefoze conſulcyng with them ſelues what was beſt to bee  
 doone in ſoo extreme a caſe, and how to prouide them a ſafe  
 dwellinge place in thoſe Regions beinge owte of al hope how  
 to departe from thence, they determined to ſley all the inhabi  
 tantes of the contrey nere abowte them, leaſte they with the  
 other ſhulde conſpire togyther to kyl them, but theyr fortune  
 was better. For the carauell which the tempeſt had carped a  
 way, was coome to them ageyne. This had in it. xviij. men:  
 And the other that remayned, was ſaued and repayred. With  
 theſe two therfoze, they tooke theyr wyage directly to Spaine.  
 And thus beinge toiled with tempeſtes and vexed with aduer  
 ſities, they returned to theyr native contrey of *Pylos*, to theyr  
 wyues and children, the day befoze the Calendes of October,  
 with the loſſe of many of theyr dere frendes and neighbours.  
 They

Alteracion of  
 ayer & chāge  
 of meate

Cathay in In  
 dia beyonde  
 the ryuer of  
 Eanges  
 A ſhipwreake  
 by tempeſt.

Extreme re-  
 medie in a  
 deſperat caſe

they brought with them Cinamome and gynger: but not be-  
 ry good, bycause they were not there fully seasoned with the  
 heate of the soone before they brought them fro thence. They  
 brought also, cerreyne precious stones, whiche *Baptista Elysus*.  
 that excellent philosopher and yowre lordeshippes phisician,  
 affirmeth to bee trewe Topases. After these mens returne, o-  
 ther of theyr neighbours beinge moued thereto by a cerreyne  
 emulation, to proue yf theyr fortune wolde bee anye better,  
 lyke men of good corage, beinge nothing discomforted by the  
 harde fortune of theyr neighbours, knowinge that it often  
 tymes chaunceth that that which is one mans vndoinge is an  
 other mans makynge, attempted a newe vyage towarde the  
 solythe by the coastes of *Pavia*, folowynge the steppes of *Colo-*  
*nus* the Admiral, who had fyrst discovered the same. They also  
 brought with them greate plentie of *Cassia fistula*: And folownde  
 that precious medecine cauled of the Spanyardes, *Anima album*,  
 whose perfume is of most excellent effect to heale the reumes,  
 murrees, and heauines of the heade. As touchinge this vyage,  
 as yet I knowe noo other newes that I thought worthy to  
 certifie yowe of. Wherefore, I wyl nowe make an ende of this  
 booke, bycause yow put me so often in remembrance of your  
 departure. yet to accomplyshe the Decade, I wyll declare  
 sumwhat of the superstitions of *Hispaniola*. yowe shall nowe  
 therfore vnderstand the illusions wherewith the people of the  
 Ilande haue byn seduced after the errours of the owlde gen-  
 tilitie, and wandered in the ignorance and blyndenes of hu-  
 mane nature corrupted by the disobedience of ovr fyrst paren-  
 tes, which hath remayned in all nations vpon the face of the  
 earth, except where it hath pleased god by the lyght of his sp-  
 rite by his woorde, to poure vppon his electe the grace of re-  
 nouation, by the lyght wherof the naturall darkenes recea-  
 uerh sume clearennes as in a glasse, vntyll imperfection shalbe  
 abolyshed. Ovre men therefore, were longe in the Ilande of  
*Hispaniola*, before they knewe that the people thereof honorede  
 any other thyng the the lyghtes of heauen, or had any other  
 Religion. But when theye had byne nowe longe conuersante  
 with them, and by vnderstandyng their language, drew to a  
 further familiaritie, they had knowleage that they vsed dy-  
 uers ryles and superstitions. I haue therefore gathered these  
 fewe thynges folowynge, owte of a booke wyrtten by one  
 Ramo:

Cinamome  
and gynger

Topases.

men of noble  
corage.A nother  
vyage*Anima album*The supersti-  
tions of his-  
paniola.  
The errours  
of the owlde  
gentilite.The grace of  
renouation.

## The fyrst decade.

<p>Ramonus an heremyte.</p>	<p>Ramonus an heremyte, whom Colonus had lefte with certeyne kynge of the Ilande to instruct them in the Christian fayth. And bycause in maner their hole religion is none other thing then Idolatry, I wyll begynne at theyr Idoles. It is therfore apperente by the Images which they honour openly and commonly, that there appere vnto them in the nyghte seasons certeyne phantasies and illusions of euill spirites, seducinge them into many sonde and folye errors. For they make certeyne Images of gossampine cotton soulded or wretted after theyr maner, and harde stopped within. These Images they make sytting, much lyke vnto the pictures of sprites and deuilles which our paynters are accustomed to painte vpon waules. But forasmuch as I my selfe sent yowre fauour of these Images, yowre may better presently signifie vnto the kynge yowre vncle, what maner of thynges they are, &amp; howe lyke vnto paynted deuilles, then I can expresse the same by wyrtynge. These Images, thynhabitanthes caule <i>Zemes</i>: wher of the leaste, made to the lyknes of younge deuils, they bind to theyr forheades when they goo to the warres ageynst their enemies: And for that purpose haue they those strynges hanginge at them which yowre see. Of these, they beleue to obteyne rayne if rayne be lackyng, and lykewyle saye whether. For they thinke that these <i>Zemes</i> are the mediatours and messengers of the greate god, whom they acknowledge to be only one, eternall, withowte ende, omnipotent and inuisible. Thus euery kynge hath his particuler <i>Zemes</i> which he honourerth. They caule the eternall god, by these twoo names, <i>Iocanna</i>, and <i>Guamonocon</i>, as theyr prediceours taloght them. As touching that he hath a father cauled by these fyue names: that is, <i>Attabeira</i>, <i>Mamona</i>, <i>Guacarapita</i>, <i>Liella</i>, <i>Guimoxoa</i>. Nowe shall yowre heare what they fable on the earth as touchinge the originall of man. There is in the Ilande a Region cauled <i>Caunani</i>, wher they sayne that mankynde came fyrst owte of twoo caues of a mountayne: and that the byggest sorte of men, came furth of the mouth of the byggest caue, and the least sorte owte of the leaste caue. The rocke in the which these caues are, they caule <i>Cauta</i>. The greatest denne, they name <i>Cazibaxagua</i>, and the leste <i>Amadama</i>. They say, that befoze it was lawfull for men to come forth of the caue, the mouth of the caue was kepte and watched nyghtly by a man whose name was <i>Machochael</i>. This <i>Ma-</i> <span style="display: block; text-align: right;">chochael</span></p>
<p>Idolatry and Idoles.</p>	
<p>Illusions of euill spirites.</p>	
<p>Images of gossampine cotton.</p>	
<p><i>Zemes</i>, younge deuils.</p>	
<p>Mediatours.</p>	
<p>Only one god eternall. The names of god.</p>	
<p>The father of god.</p>	
<p>The originall of man kynde</p>	
<p>Fables much lyke Ovide his transformatiuous.</p>	

*Michael*, departinge sumwhat farre from the caue to thintente to see what thynges were abroad, was suddently taken of the soonne (whose sight he was forbydden) and was turned into a stone. They sayne the lyke of dyuers other, that whereas they went forth in the nyghte season a fyfthynge, so farre from the caue that they coulde not retorne befoze the rylsynge of the soone (the which it was not lawfull for them to behold) they were transformed into myrobalane trees, which of them selues growe plentifully in the Ilande. They saye furthermore, that a certeyne ruler cauled *Vagoniona*, sent one furth of the caue to goo a fyfthynge, who by lyke chaunce was turned into a nyghtyngale because the soonne was rysen befoze he came ageyne to the caue: And that yeaerlye abowte the same tyme that he was turned into a byrde, he dothe in the nyght with a moonyng longe bewaile his mylfortune, and caule for the helpe of his maister *Vagoniona*. And this they thynke to bee the cause why that byrde singeth in the nyght season. But *Vagoniona*, beinge sore troubled in his mynd for the losse of his famillier frende whom he loued soo intierly, leauinge the men in the caue, brought forth onely the women with theyr suckynge chyldren, leauinge the women in one of the Ilandes of that tracte, cauled *Mathinino*, and carped the chyldren awaye with hym: which pooze wretches oppressed with famine, fainted and remained on the bank of a certeyne ryuer where they were turned into frogges, and cryed *toa, toa*, that is, *mama, mama*, as chyldren are wont to crye for the mothers pappe. And hereof they say it commeth that frogges vse to crye so pytifully in the sprynge tyme of the yeare: And that men were scattered abroad in the caues of *Hispaniola* withowte the compaignie of women. They say also, that whereas *Vagoniona* hym selfe, was accustomed to wander in dyuers places, and yet by a speciall grace, neuer transformed, descended to a certeyne fayze woman whom he sawe in the bottome of the sea, and receaued of her certeyne pibble stones of marble (whiche they caule *cibas*) and also certeyne yelow and bright plates of lator, whiche they caule *Guaminos*. These thynges to this day are had in greate estimation amonge the kynges, as goodly iewels and most holy reliques. These men whiche we sayde befoze were lefte in the caues withowte women, went furth in the nyght (as they say) to walke them selues in a ponde of raine water and saue

The original  
of myrobala-  
ne trees.

The nightingale.

The Iland of  
Mathinino.

Children turned  
into frog-  
ges.

A speciall  
grace.

poly reliques

## The fyrst decade.

women are  
slippery cat-  
taile.  
Al wise dome  
sothe not by  
age.

here nedeth  
sum tropolo-  
gicall inter-  
pretour.

Myrmidones  
preachers  
for the deuyl.

A vengeable  
greate gourde.

The originall  
of the sea.

and salbe a farre of by the way a greate multitude of certein  
beastes in shape sumwhat lyke vnto women, creeping as thicke  
as antes aboute the myrrobalane trees: And that as they at-  
tempted to take these beastes, they slipped owt of their han-  
des as they had byn yeles. Where vppon they consulted, and  
determined byrhaduice of the elders, that al suche shulde bee  
sought forth amonge them, as were scabbyd and leproous,  
to thincence that with theyr rough and harde handes, they  
myght theselyer take holde of them. These men, they caule  
Caracaracoles: And sente them forth a huntinge to take these  
beastes. But of many which they tooke, they coulde keepe but  
only foure: The whiche as they wolde haue vsed for women,  
they founde that they lacked womans priuities. Wherefore  
caulinge thelders ageyne to counsaile, to consult what were  
beste to bee done in this case, theyr aduice was that the byrde  
which woe caule the Byc, shulde bee admitted with his byll to  
open a place for that purpose, whyle in the meane tyme these  
men cauled Caracaracoles, shulde hould fast the womens thighes  
abrode with theyr rough handes. Full wylfully therfore was  
the ppe put to this office, and opened the womens priuities,  
and hereof the women of the Ilande haue theyr original and  
offspringe. But nowe doo I cease to marueyle that the olde  
Brekes dyd fable and wyte so many bookes of the people  
cauled Myrmidones, which they sayned to bee engendred of an-  
tes or pissmewes. These and suche lyke, the sagest and wyldest  
of the people, preache continually to the simple sorte, and re-  
herse the same as moste holy oracles. But it is yet more chyl-  
dyshe that they fable as touchinge the originall of the sea. For  
they saye that there was once in the Ilande, a man of greate  
powder, whose name was *Lala*: whose only soonne being dead,  
he burped hym within a greate gourde. This *Lala*, greivously  
takyng the death of his soonne, after a fewe monethes, came  
ageyne to the gourde: The which when he had opened, there  
issued forth many great whales and other monsters of the  
sea: where vppon he declared to suche as dwelt aboute hym,  
that the sea was enclosed in that gourde. By which report,  
foure brethren (borne of one woman who dyed in her traual)  
beinge moued, came to the gourde in hope to haue many syl-  
ues. The whiche when they had taken in theyr handes, and  
espied *Lala* comming, (who oftentymes resorted to the gourde

to viset the boones of his soonne, fearing least he shulde suspecte them of theste and sacrileage, sodaynely let the gourde faule owte of theyr handes: which beinge broken in the faule the sea furthwith brake owte at the ryftes therof, and so fylled the bales, & ouerflowed the playnes, that only the mountaynes were vncouered, whiche now conteyne the Ilandes which are seene in those coastes. And this is the oppinion of theyr wyse men as concernynge the originall of the sea. But now (most noble prince) you shall heare a more pleasaunt fable. There is a certeyne caue cauled *Iouanaboina*, in the territorye of a certeyne kynge whose name is *Machinnech*. This caue they honour more religiously then dyd the Brekes in tyme past, *Corinth*, *Eyrha*, or *Myra*: And haue adourned it with pictures of a thousand fashions. In thenterance of this caue they haue two grauen *Zemes*, wherof the one is cauled *Bintathath*, and the other *Mirobu*. Beinge demaunded why they had this caue in soo greate reuerence, they answered earnestly, because the Soonne and the Moone came fyrst owte of the same to gyue lyght to the worlde. They haue religious concourse to these caues, as wee are accustomed to goo on *pylgramage* to *Rome* or *Vaticane*, *Composetele*, or *Hierusalem*, and most holye and heade places of owre Religion. They are also subiect to an other kynde of superstition. For they thinke that deade folkes walke in the nyght, and eate of the fruite cauled *Guanababa*, vnknoen vnto vs, and sumwhat lyke vnto a quynse. Affirmyng also that they are conuersant with lyuing people, euen in theyr beddes, and to deceaue women in takynge vppon them the shape of men, shewynge them selues as though they wold haue to doo with them: But when the matter cometh to actual deede, soodenly to vanysh away. If any doo suspecte that a deade body lyeth by hym when he feeleth any straunge thyng in the bedde, they say hee shalbe owte of dout by feelynge of the belly therof: affirmyng that the spirites of deade men may take vppon them al the members of mans body, sauynge only the nauell. If therfore by lacke of the nauell he doo perceaue that a deade body lyeth by hym, the feelynge is immediarly resolued. They helue verely, that in the nyght, and often tymes in theyr iourneys, and especially in common and hygh wayes, deade men doo meete with the lyuynge. Ageynste whome, if any man bee stout and owte of

M.i.

feare

The originall  
of Ilandes.

A holy caue.

Images.

The originall  
of the soone  
and moone.  
pylgramage.walkynge  
spytes.

Incubi.

A remedye ag-  
geynst wal-  
kynge spytes.

## The fyrst decade.

Phantasies  
proceedynge  
of feare.

Al is not good  
that is owlde

Syngynge &  
playynge

Prestes and  
diuines.  
Phisicians.

Ignorance is  
nourished  
with super-  
stition.

Fastyng and  
outward clen-  
lynnes.

A powder of  
maruelous  
effecte.

Juggelynge.

A strange ma-  
ner of curing

feare, the phantasie banysbeth incontinentely. But yf anye feare, the phantasy or vylion doth soo assaunte hym and stryke hym with further feare, that manye are thereby astonysht and haue the tymmes of theyr bodyes taken. Thinhabyrantes beinge demaunded of whom they had those bayne superstitions, they answered that they were leste them of theyr forefathers as by discent of inheritance: And that they haue had the same (befoze the memozy of man) composed in certeyne rymes and songes, which it was lawfull for none to lerne but onely the kynges soones, who commytted the same to memozye, because they hadde neuer any knowlege of letters. A hese they syng befoze the people on certeyne solemne and festiuall dayes, as moste religious ceremonies: whyle in the meane tyme they play on a certeyne instrumente made of one hole peece of woodde somewhat holowe lyke a tymbrell. The preestes and diuines (whom they caule *Boitios*) instructe them in these superstitions. These preestes, are also phisicians, diuisinge a thousande craftes and subtylties howe to deceaue the simple people which haue them in greate reuerence. For they persuaue them that the *Zemes* vse to speake with theym familiarlye, and tel them of thynges to come. And if any haue bin sicke & are recovered, they make them beleue that they obteyned theyr healthe of the *Zemes*. These *Boitii*, bynde them selues to muche fastynge and outwarde clenlynnes and pouregeinges: Especially when they take vppon them the cure of any prince. For then they drynke the powder of a certeyne herbe, by whose qualitie they are dryuen into a furye: At whiche tyme (as they say) they lerne many thynges by reuelation of the *Zemes*. Then, puttyng secretly in theyr mouches, eyther a stone, or a bone, or a peece of fleshe, they comme to the sicke person, commaundynge al to departe oute of that place, excepte one or twoo, whom it shall please the sicke man to appoynt. This doone, they goo about hym thre or foure tymes, greatly deformynge theyr faces, lippes, and noses with sundry fylthy glectures: blotynge, breachinge, and suckynge the foreheade, temples, and necke of the patient, wherby (they saye) they drawe the euyl ayer from hym, and sucke the disease out of his veynes. Then rubbyng hym about the shoul- ders, thyghes, and legges, and drawynge downe theyr handes close by his scete, holdynge them yet faste together, they runne

runne to the doze beinge open, where they vnclōse and shake  
theyr handes, affirminge that they haue dyuen away the di-  
sease, and that the pacient shall shortly bee perfectly restōred  
to health. After this, commynge behynde hym, he conueygh-  
eth the piece of fleshe owte of his owne mouth like a iuggeler,  
and sheweth it to the sicke man, sayinge, behoulde what you  
haue eaten to muche: you shall now be hole, bycause I haue  
taken this from you. But if he intende yet further to deceaue  
the pacient, he perswadeth hym that his *Zemes* is angry, ey-  
ther bycause he hath not buylded hym a chapell, or not hono-  
red hym religiously, or not dedicated vnto him a groue or gar-  
den. And if it soo chaunce that the sicke person dye, his kins-  
folkes by wyttchecraftē enforce the deade to confesse whether  
he dyed by naturall deskenye, or by the neglygence of the *Boi-  
sius*, in that he had not fasted as he shulde haue doone, or not  
mynistred a conuenient medicine for the disease. Soo that yf  
this phisitian bee founde faulcie, they take reuenge of hym. Of  
the stones or bones which these *Bois* carpe in theyr mouthes,  
yf the women can coome by them, they keepe them religiously  
beleauinge them to bee greatly effectuell to helpe women whi-  
che trauayle with chylde. And therfore honour them as they  
doo theyr *Zemes*. For dyuers of th inhabitantes, honour *Zemes*  
of dyuers fashions. Summe make them of woodde, as they  
were admonished by certeyne visions apperinge vnto them in  
the wooddes. Other, whiche haue receaued answere of them  
amonge the rockes, make the of stone and marble. Sum they  
make of rootes to the similitude of suche as appeare to them  
when they are gathering the rootes cauled *Agēs*, wherof they  
make theyr breade, as we haue sayde before. These *Zemes*,  
they beleue to send plentie and frutesfulnes of those rootes, as  
the antiquitie beleued suche fayries or spirites as they cauled  
*Dryades*, *Hamadryades*, *Satyros*, *Palmes*, and *Nereides*, to haue the cure and  
prouidence of the sea, wooddes, sprynges and fountaynes,  
assigninge to euery thyng, theyr peculier goddes. Euen soo  
doo th inhabitantes of this Ilande attribute a *Zemes* to euery  
thyng, supposinge the same to gyue care to theyr innuocati-  
ons. Wherefore, as often as the kynges aske counsaile of their  
*Zemes* as concerning their warres, increase of frutes or scarl-  
nes, or health and sickenes, they enter into the house dedicate  
to theyr *Zemes*, where, snuffinge by into theyr nosethrils the  
M.ii. powder

Angery gods

They make  
the deade to  
speake.Diuers Idols  
of sundry  
shape.Fayries or spi-  
rites of the  
gentyles.peculier  
goddes.They aske co-  
nsaile of Idols.

## The fyft decade.

The powder  
of the herbe  
Cohobba.

Secreate mi-  
series.

Reuelations.

The spirite of  
Apollo.  
The Sibilles

I haue harde  
the lyke of o-  
ther in Eng-  
lande.

hungery and  
lecherous  
gods.

Childre with  
two crownes

pouder of the herbe cauled Cohobba (wherewith the Boiui are dry-  
uen into a furey) they say that immediately they see the houses  
turne topsy turvey, and men to walke with theyr heeles vp-  
warde: of suche force is this pouder bitterly to take away all  
sense. As soone as this maddenes ceaseth, he embraceth his  
knees with his armes, holdynge downe his heade. And whē  
he hath remayned thus a whyle astonysht, he lyftech vp his  
heade as one that came newe out of sleepe: And thus loking  
vp towarde heauen, fyrst he fumbleth certeyne confounded  
wordes with hym selfe. Then certeyne of the nobilitie or  
chiefe gentelmen that are about him (for none of the common  
people are admytted to these myseries) with lowde voyces  
gyue tokens of reioysing that he is returned to them from the  
speache of the Zemes, demaundynge of hym what he hath  
seene. Then hee openinge his mouth, doateth that the Zemes  
spake to hym durynge the tyme of his traunce: declaring that  
he had reuelations eyther concerninge victorie or destruction:  
famine or plentie: health or sykkenes, or what soo euer hap-  
peneth fyrst on his coonge. Nowe (moste noble Prince) what  
neede you hereafter to marueyle of the spirite of Apollo soo sh-  
kyng his Sibylles with extreme furie? For we had thowght  
that the superstitious antiquitie hadde perpyshed. But nowe  
wheras I haue declared thus much of the Zemes in generall,  
I thowght it not good to lette passe what is sayde of them in  
particuler. They saye therefore, that a certeyne kynge cauled  
Guamaretus, had a Zemes whose name was Corochotum: who (they  
say) was often tymes woonte to descende frome the hyghesse  
place of the house where Guamaretus kepte hym faste bounde.  
They asirme, that the cause of this his breakynge of his ban-  
des and departure, was eyther to hyde hym selfe, or to goo  
seeke for meate, or els for the acte of generation: And that  
sumtymes beinge offended, that the kynge Guamaretus had byn  
negligent and slacke in honouringe hym, he was woont to lye  
hyd for certeyne dayes. They say also that in the kynges vy-  
lage there are sumtyme chylidren bozne hauing two crownes  
whiche they suppose to bee the chylidren of Corochotum the Zemes.  
They sayne lykewyse, that Guamaretus beinge ouercome of his  
enemies in the battayle, and his vylage with the palaice con-  
sumed with fyre, Corochotus brake his bandes and was after-  
warde founde a furlonge of, safe and withowte hurt. He  
hath

hath also an other Zemes cauled *Epilegumita*, made of woodde, in shape lyke a foure footed beaste: who also is sayde, often tymes to haue gonne from the place where he is honoured, in to the wooddes. As soone as they perceauie him to bee gonne, a great multitude of them gather togyther to seeke hym with deuoute prayers: And when they haue founde hym, bynge hym home religiously on theyr shulders to the chapell dedicated vnto hym. But they complayne that sence the commynge of the Christian men into the Ilande, he fledde for all togyther, and coulde neuer sence bee founde, wherby they diuined the destruction of theyr countrey. They honoured an other Zemes in the lyknes of a woman, on whom wayted twoo other lyke men, as they were ministers to her. One of these, executed thoffice of a mediatour to the other Zemes which are vnder the power and commaundement of this woman, to rayse wyndes, clowdes, and rayne. The other is also at her commaundement a messenger to the other Zemes whiche are ioyned with her in gouernaunce, to gather togyther the waters whiche faule from the hygh hylles to the valleyes, that beinge loosed, they may with force burst owte into greate fluddes and ouerflowe the countrey if the people doo not gyue due honour to her Image. There remaineth yet one thyng woorthy to be noted, wherwith we wyll make an ende of this booke. It is a thyng well knowne, and yet freelike in memozy amonge the inhabitantes of the Ilande, that there was sumetyme twoo kynges (of the which one was the father of *Guarionexius* of whō we made mention before) which were woont to absteyne fyue dayes togyther continually from meate and drinke, to knowe somewhat of theyr Zemes of thynges to coome: And that for this fastynge beinge acceptable to theyr Zemes, they receaued answere of them, that within fewe yeaeres, there shuld coome to the Ilande a nation of men couered with apparell, which shulde destroye al the customes and cerymonyes of the Ilande, and cyther slei all theyr chyldren, or bynge them into seruitude. The common sort of the people, vnderstoode this oracle to bee mente of the *Sambales*. And therefore when they had any knowlege of theyr commynge, they euer fledde, and were fully determyned neuer moze to aduenture the battayle with them. But when they sawe that the *Spanyarden* had entered into the Ilande, consultinge amonge them selues of the mat-

wanderinge  
Images.

Mediatours.

A woman zes-  
mes of great  
poure.

Fyue dayes  
fastinge.

A maruelous  
iulusion of the  
deuyll.

The deuyll  
sumtyme tel-  
leth truth.

## The fyrst decade.

The Idols  
abolished.

ter, they concluded that this was the nation which was mee by thozacle. Wherin, they opinion deceaued them not. For they are now all subiecte to the Christians, all suche beinge Rayne as toobernely resisted. For yet remayneth there anye memory of theyr *Zemes*: for they are al brought into Spayne, that we myght bee certified of theyr illusions of euyl spirites and Idoles, the which yowre yowre selfe (most noble Prince) haue seene and felte when I was presente with yowre. I let passe many thynges bycause yow put me in remembrance that to morowe yowre take yowre iorney towarde yowre countrey, to brynge home the queene yowre aunte, whom yowre accompanyed hether at the commaundemente of kynge Fredericke yowre vnckle. Wherfore I byd yowre farewell for this tyme, despyrnyng yowre to remember yowre *Martyr*, whome yowre haue compelled in the name of the kynge yowre vnckle, to gather these fewe thynges owte of a large felde of hystories.

**C** The tenth and laste booke of the fyrst decade, as a conclusion of the former booke: Wrytten to *Inacus*

*Lopez Mendocius*, countie of *Tendilla*, and vice:

roye of *Granata*.



The Lawe of  
nature.

Aslayne in  
the hands of  
the frenchme

In the fyrst begynnynge and newe attempte, when *Colonus* had taken vppon hym thenter pryse to search the Ocean sea, I was earnestly moued and requyred by the letters of certeyne of my frendes and noble men of Rome to wryte suche thynges as shoulde happen. For they whyspered with greate admiracion, that where as there were many newe landes founde, and nations which liued naked and after the lawe of nature, they coulde here noo certentie therof, beinge greatly desyrous of the same. In this meane tyme had fortune ouerthrowne *Ascanius* (his brother *Lodouike* beinge cast owte of *Applayne* by the frenchmen) whose autoritie wold not suffer me to bee idle, but euer to haue my pen in hande. So hym I wryte the twoo fyrst bookes of this decade, besyde many other of my byd commentaries whiche yowre shall see shortly. Fortune dyd noo lesse withdraue my mynde frome wrytynge, then disturbe *Ascanius* from power. As he was tossed with contrary stormes and cea

sed

sed to perswade me, euen soo slacked my feruentnes to enquire any further, vntyl the yeare of Chryste. 1500. When the court remayned at *Granata* where yowre are viccroye: At which time Adonike the Cardinall of Aragonie, neise to kynge Frederike by his brothers syde (beinge at *Granata* with the queene *Parthenopea* the syster of owre catholike kynge) browght me kynge Frederikes letters, wherby he exhorted me to synthe the other bookes whiche folowed the twoo epystell bookes, which I wypte to *Ascanius*. For they both acknowleaged that they hadde the copie of all that I wypte to cardinall *Ascanius*. And albeif that euen then I was sicke (as yowe knowe) yet tooke I the burden vppon me, and applyed my selfe to wyptynge. I haue therfore chosen these fewe thynges, owte of a greate heape of suche as seemed to me most woorty to bee noted amonge the large wyptynges of the autoures and scarachers of the same. Wherfore, forasmuch as yowe haue endeuoured to wryste out of my hardes the hole exemple of al my woorkes, to adde the same to the innumerable volumes of yowre librarie, I thowght it good nowe to make a breese rehearsal of those thynges which were done from that yeare of a thousande and fyue hundredeth, euen vnto this yeare which is the tenth from that. For I entende to wypte moze largelye of these thynges hereafter, if god graunte me lyfe. I hadde wrytten a hole booke by it selfe of the superstitions of the people of the *Ilande*, supposinge therwith to haue accomplished the hole Decade consistynge of tenne bookes. But I haue added this to the tenth as a perpendicular lyne, and as it were a backe gydde or reuerwarde to the other: So that yowe may knytte the fyrst tenth, to the nynthe, and impute this to occupie the place of the tenth to fyll vp the Decade. This order haue I appoynted, lest I shulde bee compelled often times to wypte ouer the hole woork, or sende yowe the same defaced with blottes and interlynynge. But nowe let vs come to owre purpose. The shippe masters and maryners ranne ouer many coastes durynge these tenne yeares: But euer folowede suche as were fyrst fownde by *Colonus*. For rasinge continually alonge by the tracte of *Paria*, which they beleue to bee parte of the firme lande or continent of easte India, some of theym chaunced vppon certeyne newe landes towarde the easte, and some towarde the weste, in which they fownde bothe goulde and

Epystell bookes

The historye folowing, containeth the actes of ten yeare.

*Paria*, part of the firme land of East India

## The fyrst decade.

**Golde & franken-  
sence.**

**The fierces-  
nes of the na-  
ked people.**

**Innumerable  
beastes vnto  
lyke vnto  
owies.**

**Nothing hurt  
full in the I-  
landes.**

**Battes as  
hygge as tur-  
tle doves.**

**A man deuou-  
red of a mon-  
ster of the sea**

**The Spany-  
ardes profer  
them selues  
to subdue the  
newe landes.**

**Note the lar-  
genes of the  
newe landes.**

**Commendaci-  
on of the  
Spaniardes.**

and frankensence. For they browght from thence many iels:  
els and ouches of golde, and greate plentie of frankensence,  
whiche they had of the people of those countreys, partly for  
exchange of sume of owre thynges, and partly by force, ouer  
commynge them by warre. Yet in sume places, althowgh they  
bee naked, they ouercame owre men, and slewe hole armyes.  
For they are exceedinge fierce, and vse venemous arrowes, and  
longe staues lyke iauelens, made harde at the ende with fyer.  
They sowe many beastes, both creepinge and foure footed,  
much differinge from owres, variable and of sundrye shap-  
es innumerable: yet not hurtfull, excepte Lyons, Tygers, and  
Crocodyles. This I meane in sundry Regions of that greate  
lande of *Paria*: but not in the Ilandes: For not soo much as  
one. For all the beastes of the Ilandes, are meeke and with-  
outte hurte, except men which (as wee haue sayde) are in ma-  
ny Ilandes deuourers of mans fleshe. There are also dyuers  
kyndes of foules. And in many places battes of such bygnes,  
that they are equall with turtle doves. These battes, haue  
often tymes assauted men in the nyght in theyr sleepe, and soo  
byrten them with theyr venemous teethe, that they haue byn  
therby almoste dyuen to madnes, in soo much that they haue  
byn compelled to fye from such places, as from rauenous har-  
pies. In an other place, where certeyne of them slepte in the  
nyght season on the landes by the sea syde, a monster com-  
myng out of the sea, came vppon one of them secretly and  
carped hym away by the myddeste owte of the sight of his fel-  
lowes to whome he cryed in bayne for helpe vntyll the beaste  
lepte into the sea with her praye. It was the kynges pleasure  
that they shulde remayne in these landes, and buylde townes  
and fortresses. Where vnto they were soo wel wyllynge, that  
dyuers profered them selues to take vppon them the subduing  
of the lande, makinge great sute to the kyng that they might  
bee appoynted therto. The coaste of this tracte is exceedynge  
greate and large: and the Regions and landes therof extende  
maruelous farre: Soo that they affirme the continent of these  
Regions with the Ilandes abowte the same, to bee thyrse as  
hygge as al Europe, belyde those landes that the Portugales  
haue sowe southwarde, whiche are also exceedynge large.  
Wherefore doubtesse Spayne hath deserved greate prayse in  
these owre dayes, in that it hath made knowne vnto vs soo  
many

many thousandes of *Antipodes* which lepe hyd befoze and byr-  
knownen to owre forefathers: And hath thereby mynystred so  
large matter to wyte of, to suche lerned wytes as are desy-  
rous to sette furthe knowlege to the commoditie of men: to  
whom I opened away when I gathered these thynges rudely  
to gyther as yowre see: The which, neuerthelesse I trust yowre  
wyll take in good parte, aswell for that I can not adourne  
my rudenes with better vesture, as also that I neuer tooke  
penne in hande to wyte lyke an historiographer, but only by  
epistels scribeled in haste, to satisfie theym, from whose com-  
maundementes I myght not drawe backe my foote. But now  
I haue digressed enowghe. Let vs nowe therfore retorne to  
*Hispaniola*.

Owre men haue founde by experience, that the  
breaude of the Island is of smaule strength to such as haue byn  
bled to owre breaude made of wheate: And that theyr strenthes  
were much decayed by vsynge of the same. Wherfoze the king  
hath of late commaunded that wheate shulde bee sowen there  
in diuers places and at sundry tymes of the ycare. It groweth  
into holowe reedes, with fewe eares, but those verpe bygge  
and frutefull. They fynde the lyke softenes or delicatenes to  
bee in herbes, which growe there to the height of corne. Neat  
or cattall, becoome of bygger stature and exceedynge fat, but  
theyr fleshe is more vnslauery, and theyr bones (as they say)  
cyther withowte marpe, or the same to bee verpe wateryllhe.  
But of hogges and swyne, they affirme the contrarpe, that  
they are more holsoome and of better taste, by reason of cer-  
teyne wylde futes whiche they cate, beinge of muche better  
nouryshment then masse. There is almost none other kynd of  
fleshe commonly coulde in the market. The multitude of hog-  
ges, are exceedingly encreased, and becoome wylde as soone  
as they are owte of the swyneheardes keepynge. They haue  
suche plentie of beastes and foules, that they shall heereafter  
haue noo neede, to haue any brought from other places. Whin  
crease of all beastes, growe bygger then the breaude they came  
of, by reason of the rankenes of the pasture, althowgh theyr  
feedynge bee only of grasse, withowte cyther barley or other  
grapne. But wee haue sayde enowgh of *Hispaniola*. They haue  
nowe fownde that *Cuba*, (which of longe tyme they thowght  
to haue byn firme lande for the greate length therof) is an Is-  
lande, yet is it noo maruell that rhinhabitantes them selues

*Antipodes*The autours  
excuse.*Hispaniola*The nature of  
the place, al-  
tereth the for-  
mes and qual-  
ities of  
thynges.  
wycate.  
herbes.  
Cattayle,

hogges.

Plentie of  
beastes and  
foule.*Cuba*, is an  
Islande.

P.i.

towlde

## The fyrst decade.

The descrip-  
tion of Cuba.

The Iland of  
Burichema or  
S. Iohannis.  
Golde mynes

The order of  
woorkynge in  
the golde  
mynes.

The kynges  
bynge theyr  
subiectes to  
woorke in the  
golde mynes.

Tyllage.

tolde oore men when they searched the length thereof, that it was withoute ende. For this nacion being naked and contented with a lytle, and with the limittes of theyr owne country, is not greatly curiouse to know what theyr neyghbours doo, or the largenes of theyr Dominion. Nor yet knowe they if there were any other thinge vnder heauen, besyde that whiche they walked on with theyr feete. Cuba, is frome the East into the Weste, muche longer then Hispaniola: And in breadthe from the Northe to the Southe, much lesse then they supposed at the fyrst: for it is very narowe in respecte to the length: And is for the moste parte, very feurefull and pleasaunt. Eastwarde not farre from Hispaniola, there lyethe an Ilande, lesse then Hispaniola more then by the halfe, which oore men cauled Sancti Iohannis, beinge in maner square. In this they founde exceedinge ryche golde mynes. But beinge nowe occupied in the golde mynes of Hispaniola, they haue not yet sent labourers in to that Iland. But the plentie and reuenewe of golde of al other Regions, gyue place to Hispaniola, where they gyue theim selues in maner to none other thinge then to gather golde, of which woork this order is appoynted. To every such wyttie and skylfull man as is put in truste to bee a suruioier or ouerscer of these woorkes, there is assigned one or more kynges of the Ilande with theyr subiectes. These kynges accordyng to theyr league, coome with theyr people at certeyne tymes of the yeaere, and resorte euery of them to the golde myne to the which he is assigned: where they haue all maner of dygginge or mynyng tooles deliuered them: And euery kyng with his men, haue a certeyne rewarde allowed them for theyr labour. For when they departe from the mynes to sowynge of corne, and other tyllage (wherunto they are addict at certeyne other tymes, leaste theyr foode shulde fayle them) they receaue for theyr laboure, one a tucken, or a dublet, an other a sherte, an other a cloke or a cappe. For they nowe take pleasure in these thinges, and goo no more naked as they were wont too doo. And thus they vse the helpe and laboure of the inhabitantes both for the tyllage of theyr ground, and in theyr gold mines as thowghe they were theyr seruantes or bondemen. They beare this yoke of seruitude with an euyl wyll: but yet they beare it. They caule these hyred labourers, *Anaborias*. Yet the kyng doth not suffer that they shulde bee vsed as bondemen:

And

And onely at his pleasure they are sette at libertie or appoynted to worke. At suche tyme as they are cauled together of thei kynges to worke (as souldiers or pioners are assembled of thei centurians) many of them siele away to the mountaynes and wooddes, where they lye lurkynge, beinge content for that tyme to lyue with wyld frutes, rather then take the paynes to labour. They are docible and apte to lerne, and haue nowme bitterly forgotten thei owlde supersticions. They beleue godly, and beare wel in memozy suche thynges as they haue lerned of owre faith. Thei kynges childzen are brought up with the chiefest of owre men, and are instructed in letters and good maners. When they are growen to mans age, they sende them home to thei countreys to bee exemple to other, and especially to gouerne the people if thei fathers bee dead that they maye the better set foorthe the Christian Religion, and keepe thei subiectes in loue and obedience. By reason whercof, they coome nowme by fayze meanes and gentell persuasions to the mynes which lye in twoo Regions of the Ilande aboute thirtie myles distante frome the citie of *Dominica*: wherof the one is cauled *sancti Christophori*: And the other beinge distante aboute foure scoze and tenne myles, is cauled *Cibao*, not farre from the cheefe haven cauled *Portus Regalis*. These regions are very large: In the which in many places here and there, are fownd sumtyme euen in the vpper crust of the earth and sumtyme amonge the stones, certeyne rounde pieces or plates of golde, sumtyme of smaule quantitie, and in sum places of great weyght: In so muche that there hath byn found rounde pieces of thre hundreth pounce weyght, and one of thre thousande, thre hundreth and tenne pounce weyght: The whiche (as yowre harden) was sente hole to the kynge in that shyppe in the which the gouernour *Boadilla* was comming home into Spayne, the shyppe with all the men beinge drowned by the way, by reason it was ouer laden with the weight of golde and multytude of men. Albeit, there were moo then a thousande persons whiche sawe and handeled the piece of golde. And wheras here I speake of a pounce, I doo not meane the common pounce, but the summe of the ducate of golde, with the coyne cauled *Triens*, which is the thyrde parce of a pounce, whiche they caule *Pesus*. The sum of the weyght hereof, the Spanyarde caule *Castellatum Aureum*. Al the golde

They abhorre labour

They are docible.

The kynges chyldren.

The two chiefe golde mynes of this panola.

Golde founde in the vpper part of the earth.

A piece of golde weighing three thousande thre hundreth & ten pounds. A coastly ship wake.

Pesus.

R.ii.

that

## The fyrst decade.

The fymyng  
and distributi  
on of golde.

Three hun  
drieth thousand  
weyght of  
gold molten  
perely in his  
paniolo.  
Controuerses

The newe  
landes.

The Spany  
ardes noble  
enterpryses.  
are not inferi  
our to the  
actes of her  
cules or Sa  
turnus, &c.

Enlarging of  
the Christian  
Religion.  
The originall  
of trewe nobi  
lite.

that is dygged in the mountaynes of *Cibana* and *Porte Re*  
gale, is carped to the towre of Conception, where shoppes  
with al thynges apperteyninge are redy furnyshed to fyne it,  
melte it, and caste it into wedges. That doone, they take the  
kynges portion therof, whiche is the fyfte parte, and soo re  
store to euery man his owne whiche he gotte with his labour.  
But the golde whiche is sownde in saynt *Christophers* myne  
and the Region there aboute, is carped to the shoppes whiche  
are in the vylage cauled *Bonauentura*. In these twoo shoppes, is  
molten perely, aboute thre hundredth thousand pounce weighe  
of golde. If any man bee knowen deceatefully to keepe backe  
any portion of golde, whereof he hath not made the kynge  
officers pryue, he forfitteth the same for a fyne. There chaunce  
amonge them often tymes many contentions and controuer  
sies, the whiche onlesse the magistrates of the *Islande* doo sy  
mplye, the case is remoued by appellation to the hyghe coun  
sayle of the court, from whose sentence it is not lawfull to  
appele in all the dominions of Castyle. But lette vs now re  
turne to the newe landes frome whense wee haue digressed.  
They are innumerable, dyuers, and excedyng fortunate.  
Wherfore the Spanyardes in these owre dayes, and theyr no  
ble enterpryses, doo not geue place eyther to the factes of *Sa*  
*turnus*, or *Hercules*, or any other of the ancient princes of famous  
memozie which were canonized amonge the goddes cauled *He*  
*roes* for theyr searchinge of newe landes and regions, & byrin  
ginge the same to better culture and ciuilitie. Oh God: howe  
large and farre shal owre posteritie see the Christian Religion  
extended? Howe large a campe haue they nowe to wander in,  
whiche by the trewe nobilitie that is in theym, or moued by  
vertue, wyl attempte eyther to deserue lyke prayse amonge  
men, or reputation of well doinge befoze god. What I con  
ceauie in my mynde of these thynges, I am not able to expresse  
with penne or tonge. I wyl nowe therfore soo make an ende  
of this perpendicular conclusion of the hole Decade, as myn  
dinge hereafter to searche and gather euery thyng particular  
lye, that I maye at further leasure wyte the same moze at  
large. For *Colonus* the Admirall with foure shippes, and a hun  
drieth threescore and tenne men appoynted by the kynge, dis  
couered in the ycare of *Christe*. 1520. the lande ouer ageynste  
the weste corner of *Cuba*, distant from the same aboute a hun  
drieth

## The fyrst decade.

51

breth and thirtie leagues: In the myddest of which tracte, ly-  
eth an Ilande cauled *Guanaſſa*. From hense he directed his by-  
age backwarde towarde the East by the thore of that coast,  
supposinge that he shulde haue founde the coastes of *Paria*:  
but it chaunced otherwyle. It is sayd also that *Vincentius Agries*  
(of whom we haue spoken befoze) and one *Iohannes Diaz*

The Ilande.  
of *Guanaſſa*

(with dyuers other of whose byages I haue as  
yet no certeyne knowleage) haue ouer

The wyage  
of *Iohannes*  
*Diaz*,

runne those coastes. But if God  
graunt me life, I trust to

know the

truth hereof and to aduertise yow  
of the same. Thus

fare ye well.

## The seconde Decade foloweth,

THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE SECONDE  
Decade, to *Leo* byshop of Rome, the tenth  
of that name, of the supposed Con-  
tinent of firme lande.



ENSE the tyme that *Galeatius Butrigarius* of *Bor-*  
*nonie*, and *Iohannes Curſius* of *Florence* (moſte  
holye father) came to the catholyke kynge of  
*Spayne*, the one, of yowre holynes ambalage,  
and thother for thaffaires of his comon welth,  
I was cuct for the moſte parte in theyr coom-  
panie, and for theyr vertues and wyledoome, had theym in  
greate reuerence. And wheras they were greatly gyuen to ſu-  
dyc, and continuall reuoluinge of dyuers auctours, they chaun-  
ced vppon certeyne bookes negligently let ſlyppe oute of my  
handes, entreatinge of the large landes and Regions herher:  
to lpyng hyd, and almoſt weſt *Antipodes*, folowde of late by the  
*Spanyardeſ*. yet beinge allured and delited with the newe-  
nes and ſtrangenes of the matter althowgh rudely adourned,  
they commended the ſame: Therwith earnestly deſpyng me

weſt *Antipos*  
*des*,

## The seconde decade.

The increase  
of the Christi-  
an congrega-  
tion.

Christophorus  
Colonus.

Of landes di-  
stante frō the  
Equinoctiall  
from fyue de-  
grees to ten.  
The death of  
Colonus.

A generall  
lycence.

The navigati-  
on of Alphon-  
sus Fogeda.

in theyr owne names, and requyring me in the name of your holynes, to adde here vnto all suche thynges as were folowde after that tyme, and to gyue them a copie thereof to sende to your holynes, that youe myght thereby vnderstande, bothe howe greate commoditie is chaunced to the progenye of man- kynde, as also increase of the militante congregation in these owre dayes, by the fortunate enterpryses of the kynges of Spayne. For lyke as rased or vnpaynted tables, are apte to receaue what formes soo euer are fyrst drawen thereon by the hande of the paynter, euen soo these naked and simple peo- ple, doo soone receaue the customes of owre Religion, and by conuersation with owre men, shake of theyr fierce and rariue barbarousnes. I haue thought it good therefore to satisfie the request of these wyse men, especially vsinge thantozitie of your name, wherunto not to haue obeyed, I shulde esteeme my selfe to haue commytted a heynous offence. Wherefore I wyl nowe brefely reherse in order, what hyd coastes the Spa nyardes ouerranne, who were the autours thereof, where they rested, what further hope they browght, and fynallye what great thynges those tractes of landes doo promesse in tyme to coome. In the declaration of my decade of the Ocean, which is nowe prynced and disperfed throughout Christendome vnto me, I described howe Christophorus Colonus folowde those Ilandes wherof we haue spoken, and that turnynge from thence towarde the left hande southwarde, he chaun- ced into greate regions of landes, and large seas, distant frō the Equinoctiall lyne, onely from fyue degrees to tenne: where he founde brode ryuers and exceedinge hygh mountaynes co- uered with snowe and harde by the sea bankes, where were many commodious and quyet hauens. But Colonus being now departed owte of this lyfe, the kyng beganne to take care, howe those landes myght be inhabited with Christian men to thincrease of owre sayth: Where vppon he gaue lycence by his letters parentes to al such as wolde take the matter in hand, and especially to twoo, wherof Diego Nicuesa was one, and the other was Alphonfus Fogeda. Wherefore aboute the Ides of De- cember, Alphonfus departinge fyrst with three hundred sould- ers from the Ilande of Hispaniola (in the which wee sayde the Spanyardes had builded a citie, and planted theyr habitaci- on) and sayllynge in maner full southe, he came to one of the hauens

Hauenis founde before whiche *Colonus* named *Portus Carthaginiis*,  
 bothe bycause of the Ilande standynge ageynste the course of  
 the streame, & also that by reason of the largenes of the place  
 and bendynge sydes, it is muche lyke to the hauen of Spaine  
 cauled *Carthago*. The inhabitantes caule the Ilande *Codego*, as  
 the Spanyardes caule the Ilande of theyr hauen, *Scombrin*.

This Region is cauled of the inhabitantes *Caramairi*. In the  
 which they affirme bothe the men and women to bee of good  
 ly stature, but naked. The men haue theyr heare cutte rounde  
 by theyr eares, but the women were it longer. Bothe the men  
 and women are very good archers. Dvve men folowde certen  
 trees in this prouince, which bore greate plentie of swete ap  
 ples, but hurteful, for they turne into woormes when they are  
 eaten. Especially the shadowe of the tree, is contagious, for  
 suche as sleepe vnder it any tyme, haue theyr headdes swolne  
 and lose theyr sight. But if they sleepe but a whyle, theyr  
 syght cometh ageyne after a fewe dayes. This porte is dy  
 stant foure hundredth fyfte and syxe myles from that parte of  
*Hispaniola* which the Spanyardes caule *Beata*, in the which also  
 they furnyshe them selues when they prepare anye vyage to  
 seeke other newe landes. When *Fogeda* had entered into the  
 hauen, he invaded, stole, and spoyled the people, whome he  
 founde naked and scattered. For they were gyuen hym for a  
 prape, by the kynges letters patentes bycause they hadde bin  
 before tyme cruel ageynst the Chyistians, and coulde neuer bee  
 allured to permytte them quietly to coome within theyr domi  
 nions. Here they founde gold, but in no greate quantitie, nor  
 yet that pyre. They make of it, certeyne brest plates and bzoo  
 ches, which they weare for coomelynes. But *Fogeda* not con  
 tent with these spoyles, vlinge certeyne captiues whiche he  
 had taken before, for guydes, entered into a byllage twelue  
 myles distant frome the sea syde further into the lande, into  
 the whiche they were fledde whom he fyrst invaded. Here he  
 founde a naked people, but apte to warre. For they were ar  
 med with targettes, shieldes, longe twoozdes made of wood,  
 and bowes with arrowes typte with bone, or hardened with  
 fyre. As soone as they had espyed ovr men, they with their  
 goetes whom they had receaued, assayled them with desperare  
 myndes, beinge therto more earnestly prouoked, beholding the  
 calamitie of these whiche fledde vnto them, by the violence  
 doone

*Portus Cartha  
 ginis.*

The Region  
 of *Caramairi*.

people of  
 goodly stature

Apples whi  
 che turne in  
 to woormes.  
 A tree whose  
 shadowe is  
 hurtfull.

*Fogeda* his  
 autontie con  
 firmed by the  
 kynges let  
 ters patents,

warlyke  
 people.

## The seconde decade.

The Spany  
ardes haue  
the ouer  
throwe.

Arrowes in-  
fected with  
poyson.

The navigati  
on of Diego  
Nicuesa.

The regions  
of vraba and  
Beragua.

The Spany  
ardes reuege  
the death of  
theyr compa-  
nyons.

A greate  
slawghter.

Camibales.

The hunger  
of golde.

doone to theyr women and chylde, in the spoyle and slawgh-  
ter. In this conflicte ower men had the otherthrowe: In the  
which, one *Iohannes de Lacossa* (beinge in autoritie nexte unto *Fo-  
geda* the capitayne, and also the fyrste that gathered golde in  
the sandes of *Vraba*) was slayne with fyfte souldiers. For  
these people infecte theyr arrowes with the deadly poyson of  
a certeyne herbe. The other with theyr capitayne *Fogeda* be-  
inge discomfited, fledde to the thyppes. Whyle they remayned  
thus in the haven of *Carthago* sorowfull and pensyue for the  
losse of their companions, the other capitayne *Diego Nicuesa*,  
(whom they lefte in *Hispaniola*, preparyng hym selfe towards  
the vyage in the haven *Besta*) came to them with fyue ship-  
pes and seven hundred the foure scoze and fyftee menne.  
For the greater number of souldyers, folowed *Nicuesa*,  
both bycause free libertie was gyuen them to choose which of  
the capptaynes them lyst, and also that by reason of his age,  
he was of greater autoritie: But especially bycause the ru-  
mour was that *Beragua* beinge by the kynges commission ap-  
pointed to *Nicuesa*, was rycher in golde then *Vraba* assigned to  
*Alphonso Fogeda*. Therfore, at the arryual of *Nicuesa*, they con-  
sulted what was beste to bee doone: And determyned fyfte to  
revenge the deathe of their felowes. Where vppon, settinge  
theyr battayle in arraye, they marched in the nyght towarde  
them whiche *Aewe Cossa* with his companyons. Thus stea-  
lynge on them vnwares in the last watche of the nyght, and  
encompassinge the byllage where they laye, consistoryng of a  
hundredth howses and more, hauninge also in it thysle as ma-  
ny of theyr neyghbours as of them selues, they set it on fyre,  
with diligent watche that none myght escape. And thus in  
shorte tyme they browght theym and theyr howses to ashes,  
and made them pay the raunsome of bludde with bludde. For  
of a greate multitude of men and women, they spared onc-  
ly fyve chylde, al other being destroyed with fyre or sword  
except fewe which escaped priuyle. They lerned by the reser-  
ued chylde, that *Cossa* and his felowes were cutte in peeces  
and eaten of them that slewe them. By reason wherof, they  
suppose that these people of *Caramabiri* tooke theyr originall of  
the *Caribes* otherwyle cauled *Camibales*. Here they founde sume  
golde amonge the ashes. For the hunger of golde, dyd noo  
lesse encourage ower men to aduenture these perels and labours  
then

then dyd the possessyng of the landes. These thynges thus  
 fynyshted, and the death of *Coffe* and his felowes reuenged,  
 they returned to the haue. After this, *Fogeda* whiche came  
 fyrst, fyrst lykewyse departinge with his army to seeke *Vraba*,  
 commytted to his gouernaunce, sayled by an Ilande cauled  
*Fortis*, lyinge in the mydwaye betwene *Vraba* and the haue of  
*Carthago*. In to the which descendinge, he fownde it to bee an  
 Ilande of the *Canybales*, bynynginge with hym frome thense  
 two men and seuen women: for the residue escaped. Here he  
 fownde in the cotages of them that fledde, a hundrethe foure  
 scoze and tenne drammes of golde, caste and wrought in dy-  
 uers formes. Saylunge forwarde from hense, he came to the  
 East coastes of *Vraba*, whiche thynhabitanes caule *Caribana*,  
 from whense the *Caribes* or *Canibales* of the Ilandes are  
 sayde to haue theyr name and originall. Here he beganne to  
 bygde a fortreffe, and a byllage nere vnto the same, therein  
 intendyng to place theyr fyrst habitacion. Shortly after, be-  
 inge instructed by certeyne captiues that there was aboute  
 twelue myles further within the lande, a certeyne byllage cau-  
 led *Tirusi*, hauinge in it a ryche golde myne, he determyned to  
 destroye the byllage. To the which when he came, he fownde  
 thynhabitanes redye to defende theyr ryght: And that soo  
 stoutly, that encounteryng with them, he was repulsd with  
 shame and damage. For these people also, vse bowes and ve-  
 nemous arrowes. Within a fewe dayes after, beinge enfor-  
 sed for lacke of bytales to inuade an other byllage, he hym  
 selfe was stryken in the thyghe with an arrowe. Summe of his  
 felowes say, that he was thus wounded of one of thynhaby-  
 tantes whose wyfe he had ledde awaye captiue before. They  
 say also that he had first frendly comoned with *Fogeda* for re-  
 demyng of his wyfe, & had appoynted a day to byng a por-  
 tion of golde for her ransome: And that he came at the daye  
 assigned, not laden with golde, but armed with bowes and  
 arrowes, with epyght other confederate with hym, whiche  
 had bin before partetakers of the iniuries doone to them first  
 at the haue of *Carthago*, and afterwarde at the burnyng of the  
 byllage. In reuenge wherof they had desperatly consecrated  
 them selues to death. But the matter beinge knowen, the cap-  
 tayne of this conspiracie was slayne of *Fogeda* his company-  
 ons, and his wyfe deteyned in captiuitie, *Fogeda* also through  
 the

The Ilande  
*Fortis*.

wrought gold

*Caribana*.

A gold myne.

The Spany-  
 ardes are re-  
 pulsed.

*Fogeda* is  
 wounded.

Ransome.

## The seconde decade.

Fogeda con-  
sumeth by  
force of the  
Beragua and  
Uraba.

Nicuesa.

The goulfe  
Coiba.

Dyuers lan-  
guages.

Bergantines  
or bugatines.

Barnardino de  
Cahuera.

Ancisus.

the maliciousnes of the venemie, consumed and was dyed by  
by lttle & lttle. Whyle these thynges chaunced thus, they  
elpped Nicuesa the other capitayne to whom Baragua the region  
of the weste syde of Vraba, was assigned to inhabite. He gaue  
wynde to his sayles to take his vyage towarde Beragua, the  
day after that Fogeda departed owte of the haven of Carthago.  
He with his army which he browghe with hym, coasted euer  
alonge by the shore untill he came to the goulfe Coiba, whose  
kynge's name is Careta. Here he founde theyr language to bee  
in maner nothyng like unto that of Hispaniola or of the haven  
of Carthago: wherby he perceaued that in this tracte there are  
many languages differinge from theyr owne boztherers. Nicue-  
sa departinge frome Coiba, wente to the prouince of Lieuetes  
nauynshippe of Fogeda his companion. Within a fewe dayes  
after he hym selfe enteringe into one of those marchaunt ship-  
pes whiche the Spanyardes caule Carauelas, commaunded that  
the bygger vessels, shulde folowe farre behynde. He tooke  
with hym twoo smaule shippes commonly cauled bergantines  
or bygantynes. I haue thowght it good in all the discourse  
of these booke, to vse the common names of thynges, because  
I had rather bee playne then curious: especially forasmuche  
as there doo dayly aryse manye newe thynges vnknewen to  
the antiquitie, wherof they haue leste noo trewe names. Af-  
ter the departure of Nicuesa, there came a shippe from Hispanio-  
la to Fogeda, the capitayne wherof, was one Barnardino de Cahuera,  
who had stoulne the same from Hispaniola with thre score  
men, withowte leaue or aduice of the Admirall and the other  
gouernours. With the vytailes whiche this shippe browghe  
they refrechted theym selues and somewhat recovered theyr  
strengthes muche weakened for lacke of meate, Fogeda his  
companionys whyspered and murthered ageynste hym daylye  
more and more, that he fedde them furthe with vayne hope.  
For he had tolde them that he left Ancisus in Hispaniola (whom  
he chose by the kynge's commission to bee a Iudge in causes,  
because he was lerned in the lawe) to coome shortly after him  
with a shippe laden with vytailes: And that he marueyled  
that he was not coome many dayes since. And herein he said  
nothyng but trewth. For when he departed, he lefte Ancisus  
halfe redy to folowe hym. But his felowes supposinge that  
all that he sayde of Ancisus had byn fayned, sume of them de-  
termined

termyned prouide to scale away the twoo brigantynes frome Fogeda, and to retorne to Hispaniola. But Fogeda hauing knowlege hereof, preuented theyr diuise. For leauynge the custodie of the fortreffe with a certeyne noble gentelman cauled Francisco Pizarro, he hym selfe thus wounded, with a fewe other in his companie, entered into the Shyppe wherof we spake before, and sayled directly to Hispaniola, both to heale the wound of his thygh if any remedy myght bee found, & also to knowe what was the cause of Ancifus tarynge: Leauing hope with his felowes (which were nowe brought from thre hundredeth to thre score, partly by famyne and partly by warre) that he wolde retorne within the space of. xv. dayes: prescribing also a condition to Pizarro and his companions, that it shulde not bee imputed to them for treason to departe from thense if he came not ageyne at the day appoynted with bytayles and a newe supply of men. These. xv. dayes beinge nowe past, whereas they coulde yet heare nothyng of Fogeda, and were dayly more and more oppressed with sharpe hunger, they entered into the twoo brigantynes which were lefte, and departed from that land. And as they were nowe saylunge on the mayne sea towarde Hispaniola, a tempeste soodeynly arysynge, swallowed one of the bygantynes with all that were therein. Sum of theyr felowes affirme that they playnely sawe a fysh of honge greatenes swymmyng abowte the bygantyne (for those seas bynge furthe greate monsters) and that with a stroke of her tayle, shee broke the rudder of the Shyppe in pecces: which saylunge, the brigantine beinge dryuen abowt by force of the tempest, was drowned not farre from the Ilande cauled Fortis, lyng betwene the coastes of the hauen Carthago and Vraha. As they of the other bygantyne wolde haue landed in the Ilande, they were dryuen backe with the bowes and arrowes of the fierce barbarians. Proceadyng therfore on theyr vyage, they mette by chaunce with Ancifus betwene the hauen of Carthago, and the Region of Cuchibacoa in the mouth of the ryuer whiche the Spanpardes cauled Boiū gatti, that is, the house of the catte, because they sawe a catte first in that place: and Boium, in the toonge of Hispaniola, is a house. Ancifus came with a Shyppe laden with all thynges necessarye, bothe for meate and drynke, and apparell, byngynge also with hym an other brigantine. This is he for whose comynge

Fogeda retourneth to Hispaniola.

Famyn

A brigantine drowned with the stroke of a fysh.

The Ilande Fortis.

Ancifus.  
The Region of Cuchibacoa.  
Boiū gatti.

## The seconde decade.

the capitayne Fogeda looked for soo longe. He loosed anker from Hispaniola in the Ides of September: And the fourth day after his departure, he espyed certeyne hyghe mountaynes, the whiche for the abundance of snowe which lyeth continually in the toppes therof, the Spanyardes cauled *Serra Neuata*, when Colonus the fyrst fynder of those Regions passed by the same. The fyfte daye, he sayled by *Os Draconis*. They whiche were in the bygantyne, tolde Ancifus that Fogeda was returned to Hispaniola. But Ancifus supposing that they had sayned that tale, commaunded them by thautoritie of his commission to turne backe ageyne. The brigantyners obeyed and folowed hym: yet made they humble sute vnto hym that he wolde graunte them that with his fauour they myght eyther goo ageyne to Hispaniola, or that he hym selfe wolde bynge theim to Nicusa: And that they wolde for his gentelnes declared towarde them in this beialse, rewarde hym with twoo thousande drammes of golde. For they were ryche in golde, but pooze in breade. But Ancifus assented to neyther of theyr requestes: affirmyng that he myght by no meanes goo anye other way then to *Vraba* the prouince assigned to Fogeda. Where vppon, by theyr conduct, he tooke his byage directly toward *Vraba*. But now let it not seme tedious to powre hylpnes to heare of one thyng worthy to bee remembred, which chaunced to this Licutenant Ancifus as he came thether. For he also cast anker in the coastes of the region of *Caramauri* whiche was sayde to bee famous by reason of the hauens of *Caribago*: and of the goodly stature, strength, and beawty of both men and women beinge in the same. Here he sent certeyne to goo alande on the shyre, both to fetch frethe water, and also to repaire the shippe boate which was sore broosed. In this meane tyme a greate multitude of the people of the countrey armed after theyr maner, came aboute oovre men as they were occupied aboute theyr buisynes, and stode in a redynes to feight, for the space of thre dayes continually: durynge whiche tyme, neyther durst they set vppon oovre men, nor oovre men assaile them. Thus bothe parties keepynge theyr arraye, stode styl thre hole dayes the one galyng on the other. per all this tyme oovre men applyed theyr woorkes, placinge the shippes wyghtes in the myddeste of theyr armye. As they stode thus amased, twoo of oovre compaigne wente to fyll theyr water portes

mountaynes  
covered with  
snowe.

*Serra Neuata.*

*Os Draconis.*

riche in gold  
and poore in  
breade.

The Region  
of *Caramauri*

fear on  
both partes.

Ship wyghtes.

pottes at the mouthe of the ryuer nere vnto them both, where suddenly there came furthe ageynste them a capitayne of the barbarians with ten armed men which inclosed them, & with terrible countenaunce bent theyr arrowes ageynste them, but shotte theym not of. One of oovre men fledde: but the other remayned, caulpyng his felowe ageyns and rebukynge hym for his fearefulnes. Then he spake to the barbarians in their owne language which he had lerned beinge conuersant with the captiues that were caried from thense longe befoze. They marueylpunge to here a straunger speake in their native tonge, put of theyr fierceness and fell to frendly communication, demandinge who were the capitaynes of that coompanie whiche were arryued in theyr lande. He answered that they were strangers passyng by: And that he marueyled why they wold attempte to dyspue them from theyr coastes and disturbe theyr shyppes: arguynge theim of follye and crueltie, and further thyratinge their ruine and destruction, except they woold vse them selues moze frendely towarde them. For hee aduertised them that there wolde shortly coome into theyr lande armed men, in nobt lyke to the landes of the sea: And that to theyr destruction, not only if they resysted them not, but also excepte they receaued them and enterteyned them honorably. In the meane tyme *Ancifus* was enformed that his men were decayned. Wherefoze suspectinge some deceate, he brought furth al his target men for feare of theyr venemous arrowes: And settinge them in battell arraye, he marched forwarde towarde them which stayed his men. But he which communed with the barbarians, gyuinge him a signe with his hande to procede noo further, he stayed. And caulynge to hym the other, he knewe that all was safe. For the barbarians profered him peace, bycause they were not they whom they suspected them to haue byn: meanyng by *Fogeda* and *Nicusfa*, who had spoyled the byllage standinge there by the sea syde, and caried away many captiues, and also burnt an other byllage further within the lande. And therefore (as they sayde) the cause of theyr commynge thether, was to reuenge those iniuries, if by any meanes they coude. per that they woold not exercise theyr weapons ageynste the innocent. For they sayde it was vngodly to fygght ageynst any, not beinge prouoked. Layinge a parte therefore theyr bowes and arrowes, they

entred

The vse of  
targettes ag-  
genst vena-  
mous ar-  
rowes.

The barbari-  
ans haue res-  
pect to iustice

## The seconde decade.

Salted fishe.

Wyne of  
frutes and  
seedes.

Vraba.

Artillerie.

Ancifus ship  
wracke.

meale, chee-  
ses, & bysket.

A groue of  
date trees.

wylde bores.

entercepted oboe men gentelly, and gaue them greate plenty  
of salted fyshe and breade of theyr contrey: And fylled theyr  
vessels with syder made of theyr contrey frutes and seedes,  
not inferiour to wyne in goodnes. Thus *Ancifus* hauinge en-  
tered into frendshyp and made a league of peace with thinha-  
bitantes of *Canamairi* whiche were before soze prouoked by o-  
ther capitaynes, he lanchyd from that lande, and directed his  
course to *Vraba* by the *Islande Fortis*, hauinge in his shippe a  
hundredth and fyftrie freshe men whiche were substitute in the  
place of suche as were deade. Also twelue mares, and manye  
swine, and other beastes both males and females for increase.  
Lykewyle, fyftrie pieces of ordinaunce, with a greate multy-  
tude of targettes, swoozdes, iauelyns, and suche other wea-  
pons for the warres. But all this with euyl speede and in an  
euyl houre. For as they were euen now enteringe into the  
hauen, the gouernour of the shippe which sate at the helme,  
strooke the shippe vppon the sandes, where it was soo fast en-  
closed, and beaten with the waues of the sea, that it opened  
in the myddeste, and al lost that was therein. A thyng surely  
miserable to beholde. For of all the vytayles that they had,  
they saued onely twelue baryls of meale, with a fewe chieffes,  
and a lytle bysket breade. For al the beastes were drowned:  
And they them selues scaped hardly and halfe naked by helpe  
of the brigantine ship boate, carryng with them only a fewe  
weapons. Thus they fell from one calamitie into an other, be-  
inge now more carefull for theyr lyues then for golde. Yet  
beinge brought alyue and in health to that land which they  
soo greatly despyred, they coulde doo noo lesse then to prouide  
for the susteynyng of theyr bodyes, bycause they coulde not  
lyue onely by ayer. And wheras theyr owne fayled, they must  
needes lyue by other mens. yet amonge these soo many aduer-  
sities, one good chaunce offered it selfe vnto them. For they  
founde, not farre from the sea syde, a groue of date trees, a-  
monge the which, & also amonge the reke or weedes of the ma-  
ryshes, they espyed a multitude of wylde bores, with whose  
fleshe they fed the selues wel certeine dayes. These they say to  
bee lesse then owres: And with soo thore tayles, that they  
thought they had byn cutte of. They dyffer also from owres  
in theyr secte: for theyr hynder feere are hole vndiuided, and  
also withowte any house. But they affirme that they haue  
proued

proned by experience theyr selfe to bee of better taste & more holloome then others. Duryng this tyme, they fedde also of dates and the rotes of younge date trees, which they eate like wyple in *Ciuite* and *Granata* where they caule them *Palmitos*, of the leaues wherof they make biesomes in Rome. Sumertymes also, they eate of the appels of that Region, whiche haue the taste of prunes, and haue also stones in them, and are but lytle and of redde coloure. I suppose them to bee of that kynde wherof I eate in the cite of *Alexandria* in Egypt in the moneth of Aprill: The trees wherof, the Jewes that dwel there, beinge lerned in the lawe of Moyses, affirme to bee the Ceders of Libane, which beare olde frutes and newe all the yeare as dothe the orange tree. These apples are good to bee eaten, and haue a certeyne sweetnes myrre with a gentell sharpnes, as haue the frutes cauled *Sorbes*. Thinhabitantes plant these trees in theyr orchardes and garedens, and nooche theym with greate diligence as wee doo cherries, peaches, and quinces. This tree in leaues, heyght, and trunk, is verye lyke unto the tree that beareth the frute cauled *Zizipha*, which the Apothecaries caule *ruibba*. But wheras now the wyld bozes beganne to faile them, they were ageyne enforced to consulte and prouyde for the tyme to come. Where vppon with theyr hole army, they entered further into the land. The Canibales of this prouince, are moste experte archers. *Ancofis* had in his company, a hundreth men. They mette by the way with only thre men of thinhabitantes, naked, and armed with bowes and venemous arrowes, who without al feare, assayled ovr men fiercely, wounded manye, and slewe manye: And when they had emptied theyr quyers, fledde as swyftely as the wynde: For (as we haue sayde) they are excedyng swyfte of foote by reason of theyr loose goinge frome theyr chyldeys age. They affirme that they lette slyppe no arrowe owte of theyr bowes in bayne. Ovre men therfore returned the same waye that they came, much more infortunate then they were before and consulted amonge them selues to leaue that lande: especially because thinhabitantes had ouerthrowne the fortreffe which *Fogeda* buylde, and had burne thirtie houses of the byllage, as soone as *Pizarrus* and his company lefte of *Fogeda*, had forsaken the lande. By this occasion therfore, beinge dygnyen to seeke further, they had intelligence that the weste syde

Apples of a  
strange kynd

Ceders of  
Libane.

Sorbes are  
cauled in  
french *Coum*  
er they grow  
not in Eng-  
lande.

The frute  
cauled *ziz-*  
*pha* or *ruibba*  
Canibales.

men of des-  
perat bold-  
nes.

## The seconde decade.

The goulfe  
of uraba.

The great ry  
uer of Dariē,  
fauleth into  
the goulfe of  
uraba.

Prayer and  
pouer.

The souldi-  
ers make an  
othe.

The barba-  
rians are dy-  
uen to flight.

syde of that goulfe of *uraba*, was more frutefull and better to inhabite. Wherfore, they sent the one halfe of theyr men this ther with the brigantine, and lette the other nere to the sea syde on the easie part. This goulfe, is. xliiii. myles in bredth: And howe muche the further it entereth into the firme lande, it is soo muche the narrower. Into the goulfe of *uraba*, there faule many ryuers: but one (as they say) more fortunate then the ryuer of *Nilus* in *Egypte*. This ryuer is cauled *Darien*, vppon the bankes whercof, beinge verye frutefull of trees and grasse, they intended to playnte their newe colonie or habitacion. But the inhabitantes maruelynge at the byggantyne beinge bygger then theyr canoas, and specially at the sayles therof, fyrst sente away theyr chyl dren and weakesse sorte of theyr people with theyr baggage and household stuffe, and assembled all suche togyther bothe men and women, as were meete for the warres: Thus beinge armed with weapons and desperate myndes, they stode in a redynes to feight, and tarried the comminge of owre men vppon a lyttle hyl, as it were to take thaduantage of the grounde. Owre men iudged them to bee aboute fyue hundred in number. Then *Ancisus* the capitayne of owre men, and Lieutenannt in the fiede of *Fogeda*, settinge his men in order of battayle array, and with his hole company kneelinge on his knees, they al made humble prayers to god for the victorie, and a bowe to the Image of the blessed virgin whiche is honoured in *Ciuite*, by the name of *sancta Maria Antiqua*, promysinge to sende her manye golden gyftes and a straunger of that contrey: also to name the byllage *sancta Maria Antiqua* after her name: lykenysse to serecte a temple cauled by the same name: or at the leasse to dedicate the king of that prouince his palaice to that vse, if it shulde please her to assiste them in this daungeraus enterpryse. This doone, al the souldiers tooke an othe, that noo man shulde turne his backe to his enemies. Then the capytayne commaundinge them to bee in a redynes with theyr targets and iauelens, and the trumppter to blowe the battayle, they fiercely assailed theyr enemyes with a larome. But the naked barbarians, not longe able to abyde the force of owre men, were putte to flight, with theyr kynge and capitayne *Cemacur*. Owre men entered into the byllage, where they fownde plentie of meate suche as the people of the contrey vse, suffice nte to assuage theyr

they present hunger, as breade made of rootes, with certeine  
fruits vnylike vnto oores, whiche they reserue for store as  
wee doo chestnutes. Of these people, the men are utterly na-  
ked: but the women from the nauell downewarde, are coue-  
red with a fyne clothe made of gossampine cotton. This Re-  
gion is utterly withowte any sharpenes of wynter. For the  
mouthe of this ryuer of Darien, is onely eght degrees distant  
from the Equinoctiall lyne: So that the commune sorte of oore  
men, scarcely perceauie any difference in lengerth betwene the  
day and nyght all the hole yeaere. But bycause they are igno-  
rant in astronomie, they can perceauie noo smaule difference.  
Therefore wee neede not much passe if the degree do differ sum-  
what from theyr opinion, for asmuche as the difference can  
not bee greate. The day after that they arriued at the lande,  
they sayled alonge by the ryuer, where they founde a greate  
thicket of reedes continuinge for the space of a myle in lengerth  
supposing (as it chaunced in deede) that the botherers there  
about which had fledde, had eyther lyne luykinge there, or  
els to haue hyd theyr stuffe amonge those reedes: Where by-  
pon, armyng them selues with theyr targettes, for feare of  
the people lyinge in ambushe, they searched the thicket dily-  
gently, and founde it withowte men, but replenished with  
householde stuffe and golde. They founde also a great mul-  
titude of sheetes, made of the sylke or cotton of the gossampine  
tree. Lyke wyse dyuers kyndes of vessels and tooles made of  
woodde, and many of earth: Also many breste plates of gold  
and ouches wrought after theyr maner, to the sum of a hun-  
dredth and twoos pounce weight. For they also take pleasure  
in the bewtie of gold, and worke it very artificially, although  
it bee not the price of thynges amonge them as with vs. They  
haue it owte of other Regions for exchanng of such thynges  
as theyr contrey bringerh furthe. For suche Regions as haue  
plentie of breade and gossampine, lacke golde: And suche as  
byngge furth golde, are for the most part couglt with mon-  
taynes and rockes, and therfore baren. And thus they ex-  
cite marchandies withowte the vse of money. Reioysing ther-  
fore with double gladdenes, aswell in that they sawe greate  
lykenes of golde, as also that fortune hadde offered them soo  
fayre and frutefull a contrey, they sent for theyr felowes whō  
they hadde left before in the easie syde of the goulfe of Vnaba,

Chestnutes.

The ryuer of  
Darien, but  
viii. degrees  
from the E-  
quinoctiall.

Golde founde  
in a thicket of  
reedes.

Sheetes of  
gossampine.

Breste plates  
of golde.

The golden  
Regions are  
for the moste  
parte baren.

## The seconde decade.

yet sume saye that the ayer is there vnholysome, because that parte of the Region lyethe in a lowe valley enuironed with mountaynes and many thes.

### The seconde booke of the seconde decade, of the supposed continente.



Fogeda, the  
Lieutenannt  
of Vnaba.  
Nicuesa the  
Lieutenannt  
of Beragua.

Nicuesa losse  
his felowes  
in the nyght.

Lupus Olanus

Petrus de vnbria

The capitay-  
nes confu re  
where to find  
theyr lost go-  
uernour.

Haue described to yowre holynes where Fogeda with his coompany (to whome the large tractes of Vnaba was assigned to inhabite) intended to fasten there foote. Lette vs nows therfore leaue them of Vnaba for a whyle, and retorne ageyne to Nicuesa to whom the gouernance and Lieutenanntshippe of the mosse large prouince of Beragua (beinge the weste syde of the goulfe of Vnaba) was appoynted. We haue declared howe Nicuesa departinge with one carauell and twoo brigantine from Vnaba the iurisdiction of his frende and companyon Fogeda, directed his course westwarde to Beragua, leauinge the bygger shippes sunewhat behynde hym, to folowe hym a farre of. But he tooke this diuise in an euyl honer. For he borthe losse his felowes in the nyght, and went past the mouth of the ryuer of Beragua, which he chiefly sought. One Lupus Olanus a Cantabrian, and gouernour of one of the greate shippes, had the conducre of one of the brigantines. He comynge behynde, lerned of thynhabitantes which was the waye Eastwarde to the goulfe of Beragua ouer passed and lefte behynde of Nicuesa Olanus therfore directinge his course towarde the East, mette with the other brigantine which had also wandered owt of the way by reason of the darkenes of the nyght. The gouernour of this brigantine, was one Petrus de Vnbria. Thus bothe beinge gladde of theyr meetinge, they consulted what was best to bee doone, and which way they coule coniecture their gouernour had taken his byage. After deliberation, they iudged that Nicuesa could no more lacke sum to put him in remembrance of Beragua, then they them selues were myndful thereof, hoppyng also to fynde hym there. They sayled therfore towarde Beragua: where they founde within xvi. myles distant, a ryuer which Colonus named Lapantos, because it noo: yett he greate yslandes whiche in the Spanysh tongue are cauled

cauled *Lagartos*. These *lyscertes* are hurtfull bothe to man and beaste, and in shape muche lyke vnto the *Crocodiles* of the ryuer of *Nilus* in *Egypte*. In this ryuer, they founde theyr companions and felowes of theyr erreure lyinge at anker with the greate shippes which folowed behynde by the gouernours commaundement. Here the hole assemble beinge carefull and disquieted by reason of the gouernours erreure, after consultation, by thadvice of the capitaynes of the brigantines, who had cased nere vnto the coastes of *Beragua*, they sayled directly therher. *Beragua*, in the language of thynhabitantes of the same prouince, is as much to saye, as the golden ryuer. The region it selfe is also cauled by the same name, takynge name of the ryuer. In the mouth of this ryuer, the greatest vessels cast anker, and conueighed al theyr bytailes and other necessaries to lande with theyr shippe boates: and elected *Lupus Olanus* to bee theyr gouernour in the steele of *Nicuesa* whom they had losse. By thadvice therfore of *Olanus* and the other vnder capitaynes, that all hope of departure myght bee taken from the souldiers which they had nowe brought thether, and to make them the more wyllinge to inhabite that land, they betterly forsooke and caste of those shippes beinge nowe rotten for age, and suffered them to bee shaken and brooked of the surges of the sea. Yet of theyr soundeste planks, with other newe, made of the trees of that Region (which they say to be exceedinge bygge and hygh) they framed a newe carauel shortly after, whiche they myght vse to serue for theyr necessitie. But *Beragua* was founde by the vnforgunate destenie of *Petrus de Umbria*. For he, beinge a man of prompt wytte and apt forwarde to attempte thynges (in whiche sumetyme fortune wyll beare a stroke notwithstandinge owre prouidence) tooke vpon hym thadventure to searche the shore to thintent to find a waye for his felowes where they myght beste coome alande. For this purpose, he chose hym twelue maryners, and wente aboorde the shippe boate whiche serued the greatest shippes. The rowlinge of the sea, raged and rozed there, with a horrible whurlinge as wee reede of the dangerous place of *Scylla* in the sea of *Scicilie*, by reason of the houghe and ragged rocks reachyng into the sea, from which the waues rebounding with violence, make a greate noise and rowghnes on the water, whiche rowghnes or rowlinge, the *Spanpardes* caule

The ryuer  
*Lagartos*.

The golden  
ryuer of *Beragua*.

The enter-  
pise & death  
of *Petrus de Umbria*.

The danger-  
ous place of  
*Scylla* in the  
sea of *Cicilie*.

## The seconde decade.

Swymminge

The fyfther  
boate of Ni-  
cuesa his ca-  
raucle.

The misera-  
ble case of  
Nícuesa.

Refused. In these daungers wretched *Vmbria* wrestled a while. But in shorte space, a waue of the sea almoste as hygge as a mountayne, reboundinge from the rockes, overwhelmed the boate and deuoured the same with the men, euen in the sight of theyr felowes: So that of them all, onely one escaped by reason he was crepte in shopymyng. For gettinge holde of the corner of a rocke, and susseyninge the rage of the sea vntyll the nexte daye when it waxed calme, and the shoze was drye by the faule of the water, he escaped and resorted to his coompanye. But *Vmbria* with the other eleuen, were vtterlye caste away. The resydue of the coompany, durst not committe them selues to the shippe boates, but went alande with theyr bygantines. Where remaynyng a fewe dayes, and saylinge alonge by the ryuer, they founde certeyne byllages of chynhabitantes, which they caule *Mumu*. Here they beganne to build a fortreffe, and to sowe seedes after the maner of theyr countrey, in a certeyne vale of frutefull grownde, bicause in other places the region is baren. As these thynges were thus dooinge in *Beragus*, one of their coompanye standyng vppon the toppe of a hygge rocke of especiall, and lpytynge his eyes toward the Weste, beganne to crye, Lynnyñ sayles, lymnyñ sayles. And the nexte it dyetoe toward hym, he perceaued it to bee a shyppe boate comminge with a lyttle sayle. yet receaued they it with muche reioysyng: for it was the fyfther boate of *Nícuesu* his caraucle, and of capacite to carye onely fyue men, and had nowe but thre in it, which had stoune it from *Nícuesa* bycause he refused to gyue credit to them that he had passed *Beragus*, and left it behynde hym Eastwarde. For they seyinge *Nícuesu* and his felowes to consume dayely by fampyne, thowght they woold proue fortune with that boate, if their chaunce myght bee to fynde *Beragus*, as in dede it was. Debaryng therefore with theyr felowes, of these matters, they declared howe *Nícuesu* erred and losse the caraucle by tempest, and that he was nowe wanderyng amonge the mystynges of unknowen coastes, full of mysferie and in extream penurie of all thynges, hauinge nowe lpyed for the space of thre score and tenne dayes, only with herbes and rootes, and sylldome with frutes of the countrey, contented to drinke water, and yet that often tymes saylyng, bycause he was instant to trauaile westwarde by foote, supposyng by that meanes to come

to Beragus. Colonius the fyfth fynder of this mapne lande, had coasted alonge by this tracte, and named it *Gratia Dei*: but the inhabitantes caule it *Cerabaro*. Throgh this Region, there runneth a ryuer which oore men named *Sancti Mathei*, distant from the weste syde of Beragus aboute a hundreth and thirtie myles. Here I lette passe the name of this ryuer, and of manye other places by the names which thynhabitanes vse, by cause oore men are ignorant thereof. Thus *Lupus Olanus* the conductoz of one of the shippes of *Nicuesa*, and nowe also vice Auetenaunt in his seeke, after that he hadde receaued this information of the maryners, sente thither a brigantine vnder theyr guydynge, these maryners therfore, which came in the fyfth boate, founde *Nicuesa*, and browght hym to the place where *Olanus* laye, whome at his comynge he caste in pryson, and accused hym of treason bycause he vsurped thauoritie of the Auetenauntshippe, and that for the desyre he had to beare rule and bee in autoritie, he tooke no care of his errours: also that he behaued hym selfe negligently: demaunding further more of hym, what was the cause of his so longe delay. Atkewyle he spake to al the vnder officers sharply and with a troubled mynde: And within fewe dayes after commaunded them to crulle vp theyr packes, and make them redye to departe. They despyed hym to quyet hym selfe, and to forbear them a while vntill they had reaped the coine that they had sowne, which wolde shortly bee ripe. For all kynde of coine waxeth ripe there euery fourth moone the after it is sowne. But he bitterly denyed to tarye any whyle: but that he wolde forthwith departe from that vnforsunate lande: And plucked vp by the rootes al that euer was browght into the goulfe of Beragus, and commaunded them to directe theyr course towarde the East. After they had sayled aboute the space of xvi. myles, a certeyne younge man whose name was *Bregorie*, a Venues borne, and of a chylde browght vp with *Colonius*, cauled to remembrance that there was a haven not farre frome thense: And to proue his sayinge true, he gaue his felowes these tokens: that is, that they shoulde fynde vpon the shoze, an anker of a losse shyppe halfe couered with sande: And vnder a tree nexte vnto the haven, a sprynge of cleere water. They came to the lande: founde the anker and the sprynge, and commended the wytte and memorie of the

The Region  
of *Gratia Dei*  
or *Cerabaro*.  
The ryuer of  
*Sancti Mathei*.

The rigour  
ousnes of  
*Nicuesa*.

Come waxeth  
ripe euery  
fourth moone

The commen  
dation of a  
younge man  
browght vp  
with *Colonius*.

## The seconde decade.

younge man, that he only amonge many of the marynes whiche  
 he had searched those coastes with *Colonus*, bore the thyng  
 soo well in mynde. This haven, *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus*.  
 Wheras in this byage for lacke of bytapes they were sumer  
 tymes enforced to goo alande, they were cruel entreated of the  
 inhabitantes. By reason wherof, they strengthes were soo  
 weakenes of hunger, that they were not able to keepe warre  
 agaynst naked men, or scarcely to beare theyr harnes on their  
 backes. And therfore oware men losse twentie of theyr coom-  
 panie, which were slayne with venemous arrowes. They con-  
 sulted to leaue the one halfe of theyr felowes in the haven of  
*Portus Bellus*: And the other parte *Nicusus* tooke with hym to  
 warde the *Estre*: where abowte twentie and eght myles fro  
*Portus Bellus*, he intended to buylde a fortresse harde by the sea  
 syde bypon the poynte or cape which in tyme past *Colonus* naz-  
 med *Marthon*. But they were soo feeble by reason of longe hun-  
 ger, that theyr strength serued them not to susteyne suche laz-  
 oure. Per he erected a lyttle towre able to resyst the fyrst as-  
 saute of the inhabitantes. This towre he cauled *Nomen Dei*.  
 From the tyme that he left *Beragus*, what in the forney amonge  
 the sandie playnes, then also for hunger whyle he buylded  
 the towre, of the felwe which remayned a lyue, he losse twoo  
 hundredeth. And thus by lytle and lytle, the multitude of se-  
 uen hundredeth foure score and fyue men, was nowe browghe  
 to scarcely one hundredeth. Whyle *Nicusus* lyued with these fewe  
 miserable men, there arose a contencion amonge them of *Uraba*,  
 as concerninge the *Licuetenanteshippe*. For one *Vaschus Nunnez*,  
 by the iudgemente of all men, trustynge moze to his strengthe  
 then wytte, floured by certeyne lyght felowes agaynst *Anicifus*,  
 sayinge that *Anicifus* had not the kynges letters patentes for  
 that office: And that it was not sufficient that he was auto-  
 rised by *Fogeda*. And therfore forbodde that he shoulde execute  
 the office of the *Licuetenanteshippe*: And wyllled theym to  
 chuse certeyne of theyr owne coompanye, by whose coun-  
 sayle and authoritie they myght bee gouerned.  
 Thus beinge diuided into factions by reason that *Fogeda*, their  
 capitayne came not ageyne, whom they supposed to bee nowe  
 deade of his venemous wounde, they contended whether it  
 were beste to substitute *Nicusus* in his place. The wyseste sorte  
 suche as were famplier with *Nicusus*, and coulde not beare thur  
 solencie

*Portus Bellus*

weakenes of  
hunger.

*Cap. Marmor*

*Nomen Dei*

*Nicusus* his  
men consumed

Contencion a  
bout the lieue-  
tenanteship  
of *Uraba*.

*Vaschus Nunnez*  
his moneth  
edition.  
*Anicifus* lieue-  
tenant for  
*Fogeda*.

solencie of Vasehus Nunnez, throught it good that Nicuesa should bee, fowght owt thorough owt all those coastes. For they had knoweledge that he departed from Beragua bycause of the barrennes of the grounde: And that by the temple of Ancisus, and such other as had made shippewacke, it were possible that he might wander in some secrete place: And that they could not be quiete in their myndes vntill they knewe the certētie, whether he with his felowes were aloue or deade. But Vasehus Nunnez, feareinge leaste at the coming of Nicuesa he shulde not bee had in autoritie emonge his felowes, sayde they were mad men to thinke that Nicuesa lyued: And althowgh he were aloue, yet that they hadde noo meade of his helpe. For he auouched that there was none of his felowes, that were not as meete to rule as Nicuesa. While they were thus reasonyng too and froo, one Rodericus Colmenaris arriued in those coastes with two greate shippes hauinge in theym three score freshe men, with greate plentie of vitayles and apparel. Of the nauigation of this Colmenaris, I intende to speake somewhat more. He therfore departed from the haven of Hispaniola cauled Beata (where they prepare and furnyshe theym selues whiche make any viage into these landes) aboute the Ides of Decēber in the yere. 1510: And landed the ix. of Nouember in a Region in the large prouince of Paria founde by Colonius betwene the haven Carthago and the Region of Cuchibacou. In this viage what by the roughnes of the sea & fiercenes of the barbarians, he suffered many incommodities. For when his freshe water fayled, he sayled to the mouth of a certeyne riuer which thin habitantes caule Gaira, beinge apte to receaue shippes. This ryuer had his course from the toppe of an erceadinge hyghe mountayne couered with snoue, hygher then the which, all the companyons of this capitayne Rodericus, saye that they neuer sawe. And that by good reason, yf it were couered wth snoue in that Region which is not past ten degrees distant from the Equinoctial lyne. As they beganne to drawe water owt of their shippeboate, a certeyne kynge made towarde theym appareled with vestures of goldampine cotton, hauinge aboute the noble men in his companye appareled also. Whiche thinge seemed straunge to ooure men, and not seeme before in those parties. The kynges apparell, hunge loose from his shoulders to his elbowes: And from the girdle downewarde,

Nicuesa.

Rodericus Colmenaris.

The nauigation of Rodericus Colmenaris.

Cuchibacou.

The ryuer Gaira. An exceeding hygh mountayne couered with snoue.

Appareled men.

## The seconde decade.

it was muche like a toomans kerle, teachinge euen to his heeles. As he drewe uere towarde oovre men, he seemed frendly to admonysh the yem to take none of the water of that ryuer, affirminge it to bee unholsome for men: And shewed theym that not farre from thense, there was a ryuer of good water. They came to the ryuer. And endeuouringe to coome nere the shore, they were dyspuen backe by tempeste. Also the burbulinge of the sande, declared the sea to bee but shalowe there. They were therfore enforced to returne to the fyrste ryuer where they myght safely caste anker. This kynge layde wayte for oovre men. For as they were fyllinge theire barrellles, he set on theym with abowt seven hundred men (as oovre men indged) armed after theire maner, althogh they were naked. For only the kynge and his noble men were appareled. They tooke away the shippeboare, and brooke it in maner to chips: soo fiercelly assaylynge oovre menne with theyr venemous arrowes, that they slewe of them fortie and seven beefore they coulde couer them selues with theyr targettes. For that payson is of such force, that albeit the woundes were not great, yet they dyed therof immediatly. For they yet knewe noo remedie ageynste this kynde of payson, as they after lerned of the inhabitants of Hispaniola. For this Islande bringeth forth an herbe which quenchereth and mortifieth the violent payson of the herbe wherewith theyr arrowes are infected, soo that it bee ministred in tyme. Yet of oovre company whiche went for water, seven escaped that condicte, and hyd them selues in a hollowe tree, lurkyng there untill nyght. Yet escaped they not the handes of theyr enemyes. For the shippe departed from thense in the nyght season and lefte them there, supposinge that they had byn slayne. Thus by manye such perils and daungers (which I lyghtly overpasse because I wyl not bee tedious to powre holynes) he arryved at the length at the haven of Uraba, and cast anker at the east syde thereof, fro whense not longe beefore, oovre men departed to the west syde by reason of the barrennes of that soyle. When he had comynued a whyle in the haven, and sawe noo man sturynge, nor uplynge at the silence of the places (for he supposed there to have founde his felowes) he coulde not coniecture what this shulde meane: and there vppon beganne to suspecte that either they were deade, or that they had chaunged the place

Seven and  
forty Spany-  
ardes are  
slaine with  
Venemous  
arrowes.  
Ierua.  
A remedy a-  
genste Vene-  
mous arrowes.

Seven men  
left behynde.

The haven  
of Uraba.

of theyr habitation. To knowe the certentie hercof, he commaunded all the greate ordinaunce and other smaule gunnes which he had in his shippes, to bee charged: And syers to bee made in the nyght vppon the toppes of the rockes. Thus the syers beinge kyndeled, he commaunded all the gunnes to bee shotte of at one instante: by the horrible noyse whereof, the goulfe of *Vraba* was shaken, althowghe it worre .xxiii. myles distant: for soo bryde is the goulfe. This noyse was harde of theyr felowes in *Dariena*: And they answered them ageyne with mutual syers. Wherefore, by the folowynge of these syers, *Colmenaris* broughit his shippes to the Weste syde. Here those wretched and miserable men of *Dariena* which nowe theyrough famen and feeblenes helde theyr wery sowles in theyr teethe redy to departe from theyr bodies by reason of the calamities which befall vnto them after *Ancifus* shippewracke, yf tynge by theyr handes to heauen, with the teares runnyng downe theyr cheekes bothe for ioye and sorowe, embraced *Rodericus* and his felowes with such kynde of reioysinge as their presente necessitie seemed to requyre. For whereas they were before his comminge, withowte vytrayles and almoste naked, he broughit them abundance of meate, drynke, and apparell. It resteth nowe (moste holy father) to declare what came of the dissention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concernynge the gouernance after the losse of theyr capitaynes.

The goulfe  
of *Uraba*.

*Dariena*.

Famen.

what became  
of the conten-  
cion of *Uraba*

The thyrde booke of the seconde Decade

of the supposed continent.



All the chiefe officers in *Beragua*, and such as were most politike in counsaile, determyned that *Nicuesa* shulde bee sought oute as by any meanes he coulde bee founde. Where vppon they tooke from *Ancifus* the gouernoure refusinge the commynge of *Nicuesa*, a byrganyne whiche he made of his owne charges: And agreed, ageynst bothe the wyll of *Ancifus*, and the master of fence *Vaschus Nunnez*, that *Nicuesa* shulde bee sought forth to take away the styfe as touchinge the gouernement. They elected therfore *Colmenaris* (of whom we spake before) to take this matter in hande: wyllynge hym to make diligent search

*Beragua*.

*Nicuesa* is  
sought forth

D. I.

for

## The seconde decade.

for *Nicuesa* in those coastes where they supposed he erred. For they harde that he had forsaken *Benigua*, the region of an vnt frutefull ground. They gaue hym therefore commaundement to hyng *Nicuesa* with hym, and further to declare vnto hym that he shulde doo ryght good seruite to come thether, in taking away the occasion of theyr seditions. *Colmenaris* tooke the chynge vppon hym the more gladly because *Nicuesa* was his very frende: Supposinge that his commynge with byracles shulde bee nos lesse thankefull to *Nicuesa* and his compaignie; then it was to them of *Vraba*. Fyery chynge therefore one of his owne shippes whiche he brynght with hym and also the bygiantyne taken frome *Ancissus*, he scapghred the same with part of the byracles and other necessaries whiche he brynght with hym before from *Hispaniola* to *Vraba*. Thus courtyng at longe by all the coastes and goulfes nere there abowte, at the length at the poynte cauled *Mimor*, he founde *Nicuesa*, of all luyng men most infortunate, in maner dyed wyth extreme hunger, fylthye and horrible to beholde, with onely thre score men in his company, leste alyue of seuen hundred. They al seemed to hym soo miserable, that he nos lesse lamented theyr case, then yf he had founde them deade. But *Colmenaris* comforted his frende *Nicuesa* and embrasinge hym with teares and cherefull woordes, relpyed his spirites, and further encouraged hym with greate hope of better fortune: declaring also that his commynge was looked for and greatlye desired of al the good men of *Vraba*, for that they hoped that by his autoritie, theyr discorde and contention shulde bee supplyed. *Nicuesa* thanked his frende *Colmenaris* after such sorte as his calamitie requyred. Thus they tooke shyppe to gyther, and sayled directly to *Vraba*. But so variable and vnconstant is the nature of man; that he soone groweth owte of hys benygnitie, and commeth insolente and vnyndful of benefites after to much felicitie. For *Nicuesa* after thus many teares and weepynge after dyuers bewaylinges of his infortunate destiny, after so many thankes geuyng yf he had faulen downe to the grounde and kyssed the feete of *Colmenaris* his sauoure, he beganne to quarrel with hym before he came yet at *Vraba*, reprovinge hym and them all for the alteration of the state of theyr ges in *Vraba*, and for the gatheringe of golde: Affirming that none of them shoulde to haue layde hande of any golde with

*Nicuesa* is  
founde in a  
miserable  
case.

In solencie of  
to much felici  
tie.

of the aduice of hym or of Fogeda his coompanion. When these sayinges and suche lyke, came to the eares of theym of *Vraba*, they soo floured vp the myndes of *Ancifus* Lieutenante for *Fogeda*, and also of *Vaschus Nunnez*, of the contrary parte, a geinke *Nicuesa*, that shortly after his arryuall with his three score men, they commaunded hym with threatenynge to departe fro thence. But this pleased not the better sort. Yet fearynge least tumult shulde bee amonge the people whom *Vaschus Nunnez* had slered to factions, the best parte was fayne to giue place to the greatest. This wretched man therfore *Nicuesa* thus drowned in miseries, was thruste into the brigantyne whiche he hym selfe brough: and with hym only scuentene men, of his three score which remayned alpye. He tooke wypppe in the Calendes of Marche in the yere 1511. intendynge to goo to *Hispaniola* to coomplayne of the rathenes of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and of the violence doone to hym by *Ancifus*. But he entered into the brigantyne in an vnfortunate houre: for he was neuer seene after. They suppose that the brigantyne was drowned with all the men therin. And thus unhappie *Nicuesa* faulynge headlonge owte of one miserie into an other, ended his lyfe moze myserabyllye then he lyued. *Nicuesa* beinge thus bylely reiected, & al theyr bytapes consumed which *Colmenaris* brought them, faulynge in maner madde for hunger, they were enforced lyke raueninge woodnes seekynge theyr praye, to invade suche as dwelte abowte theyr confynes. *Vaschus Nunnez* therfore, theyr newe capytayne of theyr owne election, a tembling togyther a hundred and thirtie men, and settinge them in order of battell after his swoordeplayers fashon, puffd wypppe with pryde, placed his souldiers as pleased hym in the forewarde and reerward, and sune as perisens abowt his owne person. Thus associatinge with hym *Colmenaris*, he wente to spoyle the kynges whiche were bartherers there abowte, and came fyrst to a Region abowte that coaste, cauled *Coiba*, (wher of we made mencion before) imperiously and with cruel countenance commaundinge the kyng of the region whose name was *Careta*, (of whome they were neuer troubled as often as they passed by his dominions) to giue them bytapes. But *Careta* denyed that he coulde giue them any at that tyme: alleagynge that he had oftentimes ayded the Christians as they passed by those coastes: by reason wherof his shipe was nowe consumed

*Nicuesa* faul-  
seth from one  
miserie into  
an other.

The greatest  
part ouercom-  
meth the best

The death of  
*Nicuesa*.

flamen enfor-  
seth them to  
faule to spoy-  
lynge.

*Vaschus* vsur-  
peth thantori-  
e of the  
Lieutenant-  
shippe.

*Careta*, kynge  
of *Coiba*.

The seconde decade.

consumed: Also that by the meanes of the continuall warre which he kepte cutt from his chyldes age with a kyng whose name is *Poncha*, borderinge vppon his dominion, he and his familie were in greate scarfenes of all thynges. But *Vaschus* woold admytte none of these excuses: And therbyppon tooke *Careta* prisoner, spoyled his byllage, and browght hym boord with his twoo wyues and chyldren and all his familie to *Dariens*. With this kyng *Careta*, they founde three of the felowes of *Nicuesa*, the whiche when *Nicuesa* passed by those coastes to seeke *Berigus*, fearynge punishment for theyr euill desertes stoule away from the shippes lyinge at anker: And when the name departed, comytted them selues to the mercie of *Careta*, who entercyned them very frendely. They had nowe bynne there .xviii. moonethes, and were therfore as utterly naked as the people of the contrey. During this tyme, the meate of thynhabitantes seemed vnto them delicate dishes and princely fare: especially because they enioyed the same without any stryfe for myne and thynne, which twoo thynges moue and enforce men to such harde wyftes and miseries, that in lying they seeme not to lye. yet despyred they to returne to theyr owde cares, of such force is education and natural affection toward them with whom we haue byn browght vp. The bytayles whiche *Vaschus* browght from the byllage of *Careta* to his felowes lefte in *Dariens*, was rather sumewhat to assuage theyr present hunger, and utterly to take away theyr necessity. But as touchinge *Ancisus* beinge Licutenant for *Fogeda* whether it were before these thynges or after, I knowe not. But this I am sure of, that after the reiectinge of *Nicuesa*, many occasions were sought agens *Ancisus* by *Vaschus* and his factionaries. Howe soo, cutt it was, *Ancisus* was taken, and cast in pylson, and his goodes confiscate. The cause hereof was, (as *Vaschus* alleaged) that *Ancisus* hadde his commission of the Licutenantshippe, of *Fogeda* onely whome they sayde to bee nowe deade, and not of the kyng. Sayinge that he woold not obey any man that was not put in office by the kyng hym selfe by his letters parentes. yet at the request of the grauest sorte, he was sumwhat pacified, and delt moze gently with hym, hauinge sum compassion of his calamities. And therbyppon commaunded hym to bee loosed. *Ancisus* beinge at libertie, tooke shyppe to departe from thense to *Hispaniola*. But before he

kyng *Careta* is taken and spoyled.

hunger is the best sauce.

wyne & thine the feedes of al mischefe.

*Ancisus*, Licutenant for *Fogeda* is cast in pylson.

*Ancisus* taketh his voyage to *Hispaniola*.

he had hoped by his sayle, all the best sorte resorted to hym, humbly desyringe hym to returne ageyne: promysynge that they wolde doo theyr diligence, that *Vaschus* bringe recoiled, he myght bee restored to his full auctoritie of the Lieutenants shippe. But *Ancifus* refused to consent to theyr request and soo departed. Yet sume there were that murmured that god and his angels shewed this reuenge vpon *Ancifus*, by cause *Nicuesa* was reiectred throught his counsaile. Howe soo euer it bee, the searchers of the newe landes, faule headlonge into ruine by theyr owne follye, consuminge them selues with ciuile discorde, not weighinge soo greate a matter, nor employinge theyr beste endeuoure aboute the same as the woorthynes of the thyng requyret. In this meane tyme, they determined all with one agreemente, to sende messengers into *Hispaniola* to the younge Admirall and viceroy, Sonne and heire to *Christophorus Colonius* the spyder of these landes, and to the other gouernours of the Ilande (from whom the newe landes receaue theyr ayde and lawes) to signifie vnto the what state they stood in, and in what necessitie they lyued: also what they had founde, and in what hope they were of greater thynges if they were furnished with plentie of bytayles and other necessities. For this purpose they elected at the assignement of *Vaschus*, one *Valdiuia*, beinge one of his faction, and instructed by hym agaynst *Ancifus*. And to bee assistant with hym, they appoynted one *Zamudius* a *Cantabrian*: So that commaundement was gyuen to *Valdiuia* to returne from *Hispaniola* with bytayles: And *Zamudius* was appoynted to take his vyage into *Spayne* to the kynge. They tooke shippe both togyther with *Ancifus*, hauinge in mynde to certifie the kynge home thynges were handled there, muche otherwysse then *Zamudius* information, I my selfe spake with both *Ancifus* and *Zamudius* at their comynge to the court. Whyle they were occupied aboute these matters, those wretched men of *Dariena* loosed *Careta* the kynge of *Coiba* vppon condition that he shulde ayde theym in theyr wartes ageynst his enemy and theyris, kynge *Poncha* both theringe vpon his dominions. *Careta* made a league with the, promysinge that as they passed by his kyngedome, he woold geue them all thynges necessarie, and meere them with an armie of men, to goo forwarde with them to the battaile agaynst *Poncha*. Theyr weapons are nother bowes nor benemed ar-

The reueng  
of God.

The inconue  
niences of  
discorde.

The sonne &  
heire of Colo  
nius, is Admi  
rall and vicer  
oy of *Vispas  
niola*.

*Valdiuia*.

*Zamudius* &  
*Ancifus*, take  
their vyage  
to *Spayne*.

kynge *Poncha*.

## The seconde decade.

Swoordes of  
woodde.

kynges Careta  
conspireth  
with the Spa  
nyardes a-  
genst kynges  
Poncha.

wrought gold

The region  
of Comogra,  
distant frome  
Darien: xxx.  
leaques.

kynges Come-  
grus.

The kynges  
palace.

rowes, as we sayde thinhabitantes to haue which dwel east-  
warde beyonde the goulfe. They feight therfore at hande,  
with longe woordes (which they caule *Macanus*) made of wood  
because they haue noo Iren. They vse also longe stauces lyke  
ia ielens hardened at the endes with fyre, or tpyte with bone.  
Also cerreyne apynges and darteres. Thus after the league made  
with *Careta*, bothe he and oovre men had cerreyne dayes ap-  
pointed theym to ryll theyr grounde and sowe theyr seedes.  
This doone, by the ayde of *Careta* and by his conduction, they  
marched towarde the palace of *Poncha*, who fledde at theyr co-  
myng. They spoyled his byllage and mytigated theyr hun-  
ger with such byrtales as they founde there, yet coude they  
not helpe their felowes therewith by reaso of the farre distance  
of the place, althowghe they had greete plentie. For the byl-  
lage of *Poncha*, was more then a hundreth myles distant from  
*Darien*: wheras was also none other remedy but that the same  
shalde haue byn carped on mens backes to the sea syde beinge  
farre of, where they left theyr shippes in the which they came  
to the byllage of *Carita*. Here they founde cerreyne polondes  
weyght of gold, grauen & wrought into sundrye ouches. Af-  
ter the sacking of this byllage they resorted toward the ships  
intending to leaue the kynges of the inland vntouched at this  
tyme, & to invade onely them which dwelt by the sea coastes.  
Not farre from *Coiba*, in the same tract, there is a Region na-  
med *Comogra*, and the kyng thereof, cauled *Comogrus* after the  
same name. To this kyng they came fyrst next after the sub-  
uersion of *Poncha*: And founde his palace situate in a tretefull  
playne of twelue leaques in bredthe, at the rootes of the fur-  
ther syde of the nere mountaynes. *Comogrus* had in his courte  
a cerreyne noble man of nere consanguinitie to kynges *Careta*,  
whiche had fledde to *Comogrus* by reason of cerreyne dissention  
whiche was betwene *Careta* and hym. These noble men, they  
caule *Irra*. This *Irra* therfore of *Coiba*, mette oovre men by the  
way, and conciled *Comogrus* to them, because he was well kno-  
wen to ovr me from the tyme that *Nicuesa* passed fyrst by those  
coastes. Oovre men therfore went quietlye to the palace of  
*Comogrus* beinge distante from *Darien*: thirtie leaques by a plaine  
waye abowte the mountaynes. This kynges *Comogrus*, had se-  
uen sonnes, younge men of comelye forme and stature, whiche  
he had by sundry wyues. His palace was framed of postes

or proppes made of trees fastened togepyther after a straunge  
 sorte, and of soo stronge bylding, that it is of no lesse strength  
 then waules of stone. They which measured the length of the  
 floure thereof, founde it to bee a hundreth and fyftie paces,  
 and in breadthe, foure score foote: beinge roofed and paued  
 with maruelous arte. They founde his store house, furnysched  
 with abundance of delicate vitayles after the maner of theyr  
 countrey: And his wyne celler replenished with great vessels  
 of earth and also of woodde fylled with theyr kynde of wyne  
 and syder. For they haue noo grapes. But lyke as they make  
 theyr breade of those three kyndes of rootes cauled *Iucca*, *agis*,  
 and *Naizium*, (whereof we spake in the fyrste decade) soo  
 make they theyr wyne of the frutes of date trees, and syder  
 of ocher frutes and seedes, as doo the Almaynes, Flemynge  
 Englyshe men, and oore Spanyardes whych inhabite the  
 mountaynes, as the Wascons and Asturians: likewise in the  
 mountaynes of the Alpes, the Noricians, Sueuians, and Hel-  
 uetians, make certeyne drynkes of barley, wheat, hoppes, and  
 apples. They say also that with *Comogrus*, they dronke wyne  
 of sundry tastes, both whyte and blacke. But now we shal  
 heare of a thyng more monstrous too behoulde. Enterynge  
 therfor into the inner partes of the palaice, they were browght  
 into a chamber hanged aboure with the carkeles of men, tyed  
 with ropes of gossampine cotton. Beinge demaunded what  
 they ment by that superstition, they answered that those were  
 the carkeles of the father, graunde father, and great graund-  
 father with the other auncestours of theyr Kyng *Comogrus*. De-  
 clarynge that they had the same in greate reuerence, and that  
 they tooke it for a godly thyng to honoure them religiously:  
 And therfore appaveled euery of the same sumptuously with  
 golde and precious stones accordyng vnto theyr estate. After  
 this sorte dyd the antiquitie honoure theyr *Penites*, whych  
 they thowght had the gouernaunce of their lyues. Howe they  
 dreyed these carkeles vppon certeyn instrumetes made of wood,  
 like vnto hurdels, with a losse tyer vnder the same, so that  
 onely the skynne remayneth to houlde the bones together, we  
 haue described in the former decade. Of *Comogrus* his seven  
 sonnnes, the eldest had an exceliente naturall wyte. Whether  
 soe thowght it good to flatter and please thys wandryng  
 kynde of men (our men I meane) lyuynge onely by gifts and  
 spoyle

wyne &amp; syder

Blacke wine.

The bodies  
of deade kyn-  
ges, religioun-  
ly honoured.*Penites*.The carcases  
of men dreyedThe kynges  
sonne a yonge  
man of excel-  
lent wyte.

## The seconde decade.

four thousand  
vnces  
of wrought  
golde.

The distribu-  
tion of golde.

young Comogrus  
his ora-  
tion.

The hunger  
of golde.

A region flow-  
inge with  
golde.

kinge Tuma-  
nana.

Cambales.

spoyle, least beinge offended and seekinge occasions ageynste hym and his familie, they shuld handle hym as they dyd other whiche sought noo meanes howe to gratifie theym. Wherefore, he gaue *Vaschus* and *Colmenaris* four thousande ounces of golde artificially wrought, and also fyfte naues whiche he had taken in the warres. For suche, cyther they sell for exchange of other thynges, or otherwise vse them as theym lyeth. For they haue not the vse of money. This golde with as muche more which they had in an other place, owt men wayed in the porche of *Comogrus* his palaice to separate the fyfte parte thereof, whiche portion is due to the kynges eschequer. For it is decreed that the fyfte parte of both golde, perles, and precious stones, shalde be assigned to the kynges treasurers: And the resydue, to bee diuided emonge theym selues by composition. Here as brabblinge and contention arose emonge owt men abowt the diuidinge of gold, this eldeste sonne of kyng *Comogrus* beinge presente, whome we praysed for his wylledome, commynge sume what wyth an angery countenance towarde hym whiche helde the balences, he strooke theym wyth his fyfte, and scattered all the golde that was therein, abowt the porche, sharply rebukynge theym with woordes in this effecte. What is the matter yowe Chyistian men, that yow soo greatly esteeme soo litle a portion of golde more then yowr owne quietnes, whiche neuerthelesse yow entend to deface from these fayre ouches and to melte the same into a rude masse. If yowre hunger of goulde bee soo insatiable that onely for the desyre yowe haue thereto, yowe disquiete soo many nations, and yow yowre selues also susteyne soo many calamities and incommodities, lyuing like banished men oute of yowre owne countrey, I wyl shewe yowe a Region flowinge with goulde, where yowe may satisfie yowr vaueringe appetites. But yowe must attempte the thyng with a greater poure: For it standeth yow in hande by force of armes to ouercome kynges of greate puillance, and rigorous defenders of theyr dominions. For bysye other, the greate kinge *Tumanus* will coome forth ageynste yowe, whose kengdome is mooste ryche with golde, and distant from hence onely fyr soones: that is, fyr dayes: for they number the dayes by the sonne. Furthermore, or euer yowe canne coome thither, yow must passe ouer the mountaynes inhabited of the cruell *Cambales*

hales a fierce kynde of men, deuourers of mans flesh, lying  
withoute lawes, wandering, and withoute empire. For  
they also, beinge despyous of golde, haue subdewed them un-  
der theyr dominion whiche before inhabited the golde mynes  
of the mountaynes, and vse them lyke bondemen, vsing their  
laboure in dygginge and workyng the golde in plates and  
sundry Images lyke vnto these whiche yow see here. For  
wee doo no more esteeme rude golde brought, then we doo  
cloddes of earthe, before it bee formed by the hande of the  
workeman to the similitude eyther of some vessel nece-  
ssarie for owre vse, or some ouche beueryfull to be drinke. These  
thynges doo wee receaue of them for exchange of other of  
owre thynges, as of prisoners taken in warre, whiche they  
bye to eat, or for shettes and other thynges perceyvinge to  
the furnytur of householde, suche as they lacke which inha-  
bite the mountaynes: And especially for vitayles wherof they  
stande in greate neede by reason of the barrennes of the moun-  
taynes. This iorney therfore, must bee made open by force of  
men. And when yow are passinge ouer these mountaynes  
(poyntinge with his synger towarde the southe mountaynes)  
yow shal see an other sea, where they sayle with shippes as  
bygge as yowres (meanyng the carauels) vsing both say-  
les and ores as yow doo, althowghe the men bee naked as  
wee are. All the waye that the water runneth frome the  
mountaynes, and all that syde lyinge towarde the southe,  
byngeth forth golde abundantly. As he sayde these word-  
des, he poynted to the vesselles in whiche they vse to serue  
theyr meate, affirmyng that kynge *Tumimans*, and all the o-  
ther kyniges beyonde the mountaynes, had suche and al their  
other householde stuffe of golde: And that there was noo lesse  
plentie of golde amonge those people of the southe, then of  
Iren with vs. For he knewe by relation of owre men, wher-  
of owre swordes and other weapons were made. Owre cap-  
taines marueyllyng at the gration of the naked younge man  
(for they had for interpretours those three men whiche had  
byn before a yere and a halfe conuersant in the court of kynge  
*Caretis*) pondered in theyr myndes, & earnestly considered his say-  
inges. Soo that his rashenes in scatteringe the golde oute  
of the balances, they turned to myrth and vrbannie, commen-  
dyng his dooinge and sayinge therein. Then they asked hym  
A. i. frendly

The golde  
mynes of the  
mountaynes.

Unwrought  
golde not este-  
med.

Exchange.

Abundance  
of golde.

householde  
stuffe of gold

## The seconde decade.

Naked peo-  
ple to merited  
with ambitio

A vehement  
persuasion.

frendely, vpon what certeyne knoweledge he spake those  
thynges: Or what he thought beste herein to bee doone yf  
they shulde byynge a greater supplie of men. To this, younge  
*Comogrus*, staynge a whyle with hym selfe as it were an ora-  
tour preparinge him selfe to speake of some graue matter, and  
disposynge his bodye to a giesture meete to perswade, spake  
thus in his mother tonge. Wyue care vnto me o yowe Chry-  
stians. Albeit that the greedie hunger of golde haue not yet  
bered vs naked men, yet doo we destroy one an other by reas-  
son of ambition and desyre to rule. Hereof springeth mortall  
hatred amonge vs, and hereof cometh ooure destruction.  
Oure prediceffours kepte warres, and soo dyd *Comogrus* my  
father with princes beynge boztherers abowte hym. In the  
which warres, as wee haue ouercoome, so haue wee byn ouer-  
coome, as dothe appere by the number of bondemen amonge  
vs, which we tooke by the ouerthrowe of oure enemyes, of  
the whiche I haue gyuen yowe fiftie. Lykewyse at an other  
tyme, oure aduersaries hauinge thupper hande agensle vs,  
ledde away manye of vs captiue. For suche is the chaunce of  
warre. Also, amonge oure familiers (wherof a great number  
haue byn captiues with them) beholde here is one whiche of  
longe tyme ledde a paynefull lyfe in bondage vnder the poke  
of that kynge beyonde the mountaynes, in whose kyngdome  
is suche abundance of golde. Of hym, and suche other innum-  
merable, and lykewyse by the resort of free men on theyr syde  
comminge to vs, and ageyne of oure men relozinge to them  
by safe conduct, these thynges haue byn ener as well knowen  
vnto vs, as oure owne possessions. But that yowe maye bee  
the better assured hereof, and bee oware of all suspencion that  
yowe shal not bee deceaued, make me the guyde of this biage,  
byndynge me fast and keepynge me in safe custodie to bee han-  
ged on the next tree, yf yowe fynde my sayinges in any point  
vntrewe. Followe my countayle therfore, and send for a thou-  
sande Chistian men apte for the warres, by whose power we  
may with also the men of warre of *Comogrus* my father armed  
after oure maner, inuade the dominions of oure enemyes:  
where, bothe yowe may bee satysfied with golde, and we for  
oure conductinge and apdynge yowe in this enterpryse, shall  
thynke oure selues abundantly rewarded, in that yowe shall  
helpe to delyuer vs from the iniuries and perpetuall feare of  
oure

more enemies. After these wordes, this prudente younge Comogrus helde his peace. And othere men moued with greates hope and hunger of golde, beganne ageine to swalowe downe theyr spirit.

A token of  
hunger.

¶ The fourth booke of the seconde Decade,  
of the supposed Continent.



After that they had tarped here a fewe dayes and baptised Comogrus with all his famelie, and named hym by the name of Charles after the kynge of Spayne, they returned to theyr felowes in *Dariena* leauinge with hym the hope of the thousande souldyers, which his sonne requyred to passe ouer those mountaynes towarde the South sea. Thus enteringe into the byllage which they had chosen to inhabite, they had knowlege that *Valdiuia* was returned, within fyre moonethes after his departure: but with noo great plentie of byrtales, bycause he brought but a smaule shippe: yet with hope that shortly after, there shulde bee sent them abundance of byrtales with a newe supply of men. For younge *Colonus*, the Admiral and viceroy of *Hispaniola*, and the other gouernours of the Ilande, acknowledged that herthero they had noo respecte to theym of *Dariena*, bycause they supposed that *Ancifus* the Licutenant had safely arryued there with his shippe laden with byrtales: wyllynge them from hencsforth to bee of good cheere, and that they shulde lacke nothyng hereafter: But that at this present tyme, they had noo bygger shippe wherby they myght sende them greater plentie of necessaries by *Valdiuia*. The byrtales therfore which he brought, serued rather sumwhat to mytigate theyr present neede, then to satisfie theyr lacke. Wherfore within a fewe dayes after *Valdiuia* his returne, they fel ageine into lyke scarcenes: especially for asmuch as a great storme and tempest whiche came from the hyghe mountaynes with horrible thunder and lyghtnyng in the mooneth of November, brought with it suche a fludde, that it partly carryed away and partly drowned all the coyne and seedes whiche they had sowe in the moonethe of September in a fruitful grounde before they went to kyng Comogrus. The seedes which

kyng Comogrus is baptised with his famely.

*Valdiuia* returneth from *Hispaniola*.

horrible thunder and lyghtnyng in the mooneth of November.

## The seconde decade.

**Bread of maize & hobbas** they of *Hispaniola* caule *Maizium*, and they of *Yraba* caule *Hobbas*: Wherof they make theyr breade, which also wee sayde to be cype thysle every yeaere, because those regions are not bytten with the sharpnes of wynter by reason of theyr nearnes to the Equinoctial lync. It is also agreeable to the principles of naturall philosophie, that this breade made of *Maizius* or *Hobbas* shulde bee more holtsome for inhabitants of those countreys then breade made of wheate, by reason that it is of easer digestion. For wheras coulde is wantinge, the naturall heate is not dzyuen frome the outward partes into the inward partes and pprecordials, whereby digestion is much strengthened. Beinge therfore thus frustrate of the increase of theyr seedes, and the kynges nere aboute them spoiled of both bytapes and golde, they were enforced to seeke theyr meate further of: And therewith to signifie to the gouernours of *Hispaniola* with what great neede Titie they were oppressed: And what they had lerned of *Comogrus* as concernynge the Regions toward the Southe: wyllynge them in consideration thereof to aduertise the kyng to sende them a thousande souldiers, by whose helpe they myght by force make waye throughte the mountaynes diuidynge the sea on bothe sydes, if they coulde not bynge the same to passe quietly. The same *Valdivia* was also sent on this message, carpyng with hym to the kynges treasurers (hauinge theyr office of receypte in *Hispaniola*) three hundred poundes weyght of golde after eyght ounces to the pounce, for the fyfte portion due to the kynges elchequer. This pounce of .viii. unces, the Spanyardes caule *Marcha*, whiche in weyght amounteth to fyfte pieces of golde cauled *Castellani*. But the Castellians, caule a pound *Pesum*. We conclude therfore, that the sume hereof, was .xv. thousande of those peeces of golde cauled *Castellani*. And thus is it appaunte by this accompte, that they receaued of the barbarous kynges, a thousande and fyue hundred poundes of eyght ounces to the pounce. All the whiche they founde redy brought in sundry kyndes of ouches, as cheynes, braselets, tablets, and plates, bothe to hange before theyr brestes, and also at theyr eares, and noses. *Valdivia* therefore tooke shypinge in the same carauell in the whiche he came last, and returned also beefore the thyrde day of the Ides of January, in the yeaere of Christ 1541. What chaunced to hym in this vyage, wee will declare

**Digestion  
strengthened  
by outward  
colde.**

**hunger.**

**A newe supply  
of a thousande  
souldiers.**

**Marcha.**

**Pesum.**

**A thousande  
and fyue hundred  
poundes  
weyght of  
brought gold**

## The seconde decade.

7

declare in place conuenient. But let vs now returne to them which remayned in *Vraba*. After the dismissing of *Valdiuit*, beinge picked forward with outrageous hunger, they determined to searche the inner partes of that goulfe in sundry places. The extreme angle or poynt of the same goulfe is distant from the enterance therof, aboute foure score myles. This angle or corner, the *Spaniards* caule *Culata*. *Vaschus* hym selfe came to this poynte with a hundred men, coastyng alonge by the goulfe with one byrgantine and certeyne of the boates of those regions, which the *Arabians* caule *Vru*, lyke vnto them whiche the inhabitants of *Hispaniola* caule *Canois*. From this poynt, there fauleth a ryuer from the East into the goulfe, ten tymes bygger then the ryuer of *Dariens* which also fauleth into the same. Saylyng alonge by the ryuer about the space of thirte myles (for they caule it nyne leagues) and somewhat inclynge towarde the ryght hande southwarde, they founde certeyne byllages of inhabitants, the kynge wherof, was cauled *Dabaiba*. Oure men also were certified before, that *Cemacchus* the kynge of *Dariens* whom they put to flyght in the battayle, fledde to this *Dabaiba*. But at the cominge of oure men, *Dabaiba* also fledde. It is thought that he was admonished by *Cemacchus*, that he shulde not abyde the hunte of oure men. He folowed his counsaile: forsooke his byllages, and lefte all thynges desolate. yet oure men founde heapes of bowes and arrowes: Also much household stuffe and many shyppes boates. But those many the groundes were neyther apte for sowinge of seedes or planting of trees. By reason wherof, they founde there fewe such thynges as they desired: that is, plentie of byracles. For inhabitants of this Region, haue noo breade but such as they get in other contreys nere abowre them by exchunge for theyr shyppes, only to serue theyr owne necessitie. yet founde they in the houses of them that fledde, golde wrought and grauen, amountyng to the sume of seuen thousande of those pieces whiche we saye to be cauled *Castellans*: Also certeyne cardas: of the which they brought away twoo with them, and great plentie of theyr household stuffe, with certeyne bundels of bowes and arrowes. They saye, that from the manythes of that ryuer, there coome certeyne battes in the nyght season, as bygge as turtle doones, inuadyng men and byrtinge them with a deadly

The goulfe  
of *Uraba*.  
*Culata*.

*Vaschus* sear  
cheth the  
goulfe of *Uraba*.

A marvelous  
great ryuer.  
fauyng into  
the goulfe of  
*Uraba*.

kynge *Dabaiba*  
and *Cemacchus*, are  
dryuen to  
flyght.

many the  
grounde

wrought gold  
wherhyng  
vii. thousand  
*Castellans*.

Battes as  
bygge as tur  
tle doones,

## The seconde decade.

**Ancifus byt-  
ten of a batte**

**Remedies a  
gynst Ven-  
mousarrows**

**A tempest.**

**Colmenaris  
taketh his vy-  
age towarde  
the mountaine**

**kyng Turui.**

**The Iland of  
Cannafistula.**

wounde, as some of them testifie whiche haue byn bytten of the same. In my selfe communing with *Ancifus* the *Aleuteneant* whom they reiectred, and amonge other thynges askynge him of the venemous bytinge of these battes, he coulde me that he hym selfe was bytten by one of them on the heele, his foote lyinge vncouered in the nyght by reason of the heate in sommer season: But that it hurt hym noo more, then yf he hadde byn bytten by any other beaste not venemous. Other saye, that the bytyng of some of them is venemous: yet that the same is healed inconrinently, if it be washed with water of the sea. *Ancifus* coulde me also, that the venemous woundes made by the *Tanibales* arrowes infected with poyson, are healed by washinge with water of the sea, and also by cauterising with hotte Irens: And that he had experience thereof in the region of *Caribana*, where many of his men were so wounded. They departed therfore, from the poynte of the goulfe of *Vraka*, not well contented bycause they were not laden with vitayles. In this their retorne, there arose soo greate a tempest in that wyde goulfe, that they were enforced to cast into the sea, all the householde stufte whiche they tooke from the poore wyretches whiche lyued onely by fischynge. The sea also swallowed upp the two boates that they tooke from theym, wherewith the men were likewise drowned. The same tyme that *Vaschus Nunnez* attempted to searche the poynte of the goulfe towarde the southe, even then by agremente, dyd *Rodericus Colmenaris* take his viage towarde the mountaynes by the east, with threescore men, by the ryuer of the other goulfe. Aboute fortie miles distant from the mouth of the ryuer, (for they caule it twelue leagues) he founde certeyne vilages situate vppon the bankes of the ryuer, whose *Chiui*, (that is,) kinge, they caule *Turui*. With this kinge dyd *Colmenaris* yet remayne when *Vaschus* after his retorne to *Dariens*, sayling by the same ryuer, came to hym. Here refreschinge theyr hole coompany with the vitayles of this *Turui*, they departed from thense togyther. Other fortie myles from hense, the ryuer encoompalet an Iland inhabited with fyfther men. In this, bycause they sawe greate plentie of the trees which beare *Cassia fistula*, they named the Iland *Cannafistula*. They found in it, threescore villages of renne cotages apiece. On the right syde of the Iland there runneth an other ryuer, whose chanell is of depth sufficiente to beare brigantines. This ryuer

ryuer they cauled *Riuus Niger*: from the mouthe wherof about xv. myles distant they founde a towne of syue hundredth houses leuered: whose chebi, (that is,) kinge, was cauled *Abenama chei*. They all forsooke theyr houses as soone as they harde of olore mennes commyng. But when they sawe that olore men pursued them, they turned ageyne and ranne vppon them with desperate mindes, as men driuen from their owne possessions. Theyr weapons, are swozdes of wod, and long stauies like iauelens, hardened at the ende with syer: But they vse neyther bowes nor arrowes: nor any other of thynhabitanes of the weste syde of the goulfe. The pore naked wretches were easely driuen to flight with olore weapons. As olore men followed theym in the chase, they tooke the kinge *Abenama chei* and certeine of his noble men. A common souldier of olores whom the kyng had wounded, coominge to hym when he was taken, cutte of his arme at one stroke with his swoorde. But this was doone vnwares to the capitaynes. The number of the Christian men which were here, was aboute a hundredth and fiftie: the one halfe whereof, the capytaynes lefte here, and they with the resydue, rowed vpp the ryuer ageyne with twelue of the boates of those Regions, whiche they caul. *Vru*, as they of *Hispaniola* caule them *Canooas*, as we haue sayde. From the ryuer of *Riuus Niger* and the Island of *Gannafistula*, for the space of threescore and ten myles, leauing both on the right hande & on the lefte many riuers faulinge into it bigger then it selfe, they entred into one by the conductyng of one of the naked inhabitantes, beinge appoynted a guyde for that purpose. Vppon the banke of this ryuer next vnto the mouthe of the same, there was a kyng cauled *Abibeiba*: who, bycause the Region was full of maryshes, had his palatce buylded in the toppe of a highe tree, a newe kynde of byldyng and seldome seene. But that lande beareth trees of suche exceeding heigth, that emonge theyr branches, a man may frame large houses: As wee reede the like in diuers autoures holme in many Regions where the ocean sea ryseth and ouerfloweth the lande, the people were accustomed to lye to the high trees, and after the faule of the water, to take the fysh leste on the lande. This maner of buyldinge, is to laye beames crosse ouer the branches of the trees, faste bownde togyther, and there vppon to raple theyr frame, strongly made ageynste wynde and trees

The ryuer or *Riuus Niger*. A towne of v. hundredth houses.

The inhabitantes of the west syde of the goulfe.

kyng *Abenama chei*, is taken and his arme cut of.

many other ryuers faulinge into *Riuus Niger*.

kyng *Abibeiba* dwelleth in a tree.

Abundance of moyster & heat is cause of byggenes.

The ryfynge of the Ocean sea.

## The seconde decade.

whether. More men suppose that they buylde theyr houses in trees, by reason of the greate suddes and ouerflowinge of ryuers whiche often tymes chaunce in those Regions. These trees are of suche heighth, that the strength of no manes arme is able to hurle a stone to the houses buylde therein. And therefore doo I gyue the better credit to Plinie and other authors whiche wytte that the trees in some places in India are soo high by reason of the feutefulnes of the grounde, abundance of water, and heate of the Region, that noo man is able to shute ouer theym with an arrowe. And by iudgemente of all men, it is thowght that there is noo feutfuller ground vnder the soonne, then this is whercof wee nowe entreate. More men measuringe manye of these trees, founde theym to bee of suche biggnes, that seuen men, y<sup>e</sup> sumetymes eight, holdinge hande in hande with theyr armes streached furthe, were scarcely able too faryme them aboute. yet haue they theyr cellers in the grounde, well replenshed with such wyne wher of wee haue spoken beefore. For albeit that the vehemencie of the wynde, is not of poure to caste downe those houses, or to brecke the branches of the trees, yet are they tolled therewith, and swaye sumwhat from syde to syde, by reason wherof, the wyne shulde bee muche troubeled with moouinge. All other necessarpe thinges, they haue with theym in the trees. When the kynge or any other of the noble men, dyne or suppe in these trees, theyr wyne are brought theym from the cellers by theyr seruantes, whiche by meanes of exercise, are accustomed with noo lesse celeritie to runne vpp and downe the steares adherente to the tree, then doo otre maytynge boyes vppon the playne grounde, ferche vs what wote eagle for from the cobbarde bysyde otre dyninge table. More men therefore, came to the tree of kinge Abibeiba, and by thinterpretours cauled hym forth to communication, gyuinge hym signes of peace, and there vppon willinge hym to coomme downe. But he denyed that he woolde coomme otre of his house: Desyringe them to suffer hym to lyue after his fashion. But otre men fell from fayre woordes to threatheninge, that excepte he wolde descende with all his famelic, they wolde eyther ouerthrowe the tree, or elles set it on fyre. When he had denied them ageyne, they fell to hewinge the tree with theyr axes. Abibeiba seeinge the chippes faule from the tree on euery syde, chaunc

Trees of mar-  
uelous height

Plinie.

Frutefull  
grounde.

Cellers in the  
grounde.

Abibeiba, the  
kynge of the  
tree, yeldeth  
to thaschus.

chaunged his purpose, and came doone with only two of his  
foones. Thus after they had entreated of peace, they commu-  
ned of gatheringe of golde. *Abibeiba* answered that he had noo  
golde, and that he neuer had any neede therof, nor yet regar-  
ded it any moze then stones. But when they were instante  
vppon hym, he sayde vnto them. If yowe soo greatly desyre  
golde, I will seeke for sume in the nexte mountaynes, and  
bringe it vnto yowe. For it is plentifully engendred in thise  
mountaynes. Then he appointed a day when he wold bringe  
this golde. But *Abibeiba* came neyther at the day, nor after the  
daye appoynted. They departed therfore from thense well re-  
freshed with his vitailles and wyne, but not with goulde as  
they hoped. Yet were they enformed the like by *Abibeiba* and  
his dictionaries as concerninge the golde mynes and the *Can-*  
*bales*, as they harde befoze of kinge *Comogrus*. Saylinge yet  
further aboute thirtie myles, they chaunced vppon certeyne  
cotages of the *Canibales*: But bitterly boyde with owte men  
or stiffe. For when they had knowleage that owte men wa-  
nteder in the prouinces nere aboute theym they resorted to the  
mountaynes, caryinge al theyr goodes and stiffe wythcham.

Sold no more  
estemed then  
stones.

Canibales.

The fyfte booke of the seconde Decade  
of the supposed continent.



In the meane tyme whyle these thynges were  
doone alonge by the shores or bankes of the  
ryuer, a certeyne *Decurian*, that is a cappy-  
taine ouer tenne, of the coompanye of those  
which *Vascus* and *Colmenaris* had lefte for a gar-  
ryson in *Riuo Nigro* in the dominion of kynge  
*Abinamachei*, whether it were that he was com-

pelled throught hunger, or that his fatale dayes was now  
coome, he attempted with his souldiers to searche the coun-  
treys nere there about, and entered into the byllage of a king  
cauled *Abraiiba*. This capitaynes name was *Raka*: whom *Abr-*  
*aiiba* knewe, with twoo of his felowes: but the resydue fledde.  
Within a fewe dayes after, *Abraiiba* hauinge compassion of the  
calamitie of his kynseman and neyghbour *Abinamacheius* being  
driuen from his owne possessions (whose arme also we sayd  
befoze that one of the souldiers cut of at the riuer of *Riuo Nigro*

kyng *Abraiibo*

S. I.

and

## The seconde decade.

Abraiba cau-  
seth the kyn-  
ges to rebell.

men good  
enough yf  
they had iren

The kynges  
are dryuen to  
flygh.

and now remaynyng with *Abraiba* to whome he fledde by  
self after he was taken, went to *Abibeiba* thynhabitour of the  
tree, who had now lyke wyse forsaken his contrey for feare  
of owre men, and wandered in the desolate mountaynes and  
wooddes. When he had therfore founde him, he spake to him  
in this effecte. What thyng is this Oh vnfortunate *Abibeiba*?  
or what nation is this that soo tormenterly vs that wee can  
not enioye owre quyet lybertie? Howe longe, howe longe I  
say shall wee suffer theyr crueltie? were it not much better for  
vs to die, then to abide such iniuries and oppressions as yow,  
as *Abinamacheius* owre kynseman, as *Cemacchus*, as *Careta*, as *Pon-  
cha*, as I and other princes of our order doo susteyne? Canne  
any thyng bee more intollerable then to see owre wyues,  
owre chyldren, and owre subiectes, to bee ledde awaye cap-  
tyues, and owre goodes to be spoyled euen before owre faces.

I take the goddes to wytnes, that I speake not soo much  
for myne owne part as I doo for yowe whose case I lament.  
For albeit they haue not yet touched me, neuerthelesse, by the  
example of other, I ought to thynke that my destruction is  
not farre off. Let vs therfore (yf wee bee men) tye owre stren-  
gth and proue owre fortune ageynst them whiche haue delte  
so cruelly with *Abenamacheius*, and dryuen hym owre of his  
contrey. Let vs set on them with all owre poure, and vterly  
destroy them. And yf wee can not sleie them al, yet shall wee  
make them afraide eyther to assaile vs ageyne, or at the least  
dimynyssh the theyr poure. For what soo euer shall befaule, no  
thyng can chaunce woorse vnto vs then that which we now  
suffer. When *Abibeiba* harde these wordes and such other like,  
he condescended to doo in al thynges as *Abraiba* wolde requyre:  
Where vppon they appoynted a day to byngne theyr conspira-  
cie to passe. But the thyng chaunced not accordyng to the  
desyre. For of those whiche wee sayde to haue passed to the  
*Canibales*, there returned by chaunce to *Riuus Niger* the nyght  
before the day appoynted to woork the theyr feate, thirtie men  
to the ayde of theym whiche were left there yf anye sedition  
shulde ryse as they suspected. Therfore at the daumnyng of the  
day, the confederate kynges with fyue hundred of theyr di-  
tionaries armed after theyr maner, beleaged the byllage with  
a terrible alarome, knowyng nothyng of the newe menne  
whiche came thither the same nyght. Here owre target men  
cam

came forth agaynst them, and first assailed them a farre of  
with theyr arrowes, then with theyr pykes, and laste with  
theyr swoordes: But the naked seely folmes, perceauinge a  
greater number of theyr aduersaries thē they looked for, were  
soone dryuen to flyght, and slayne for the most parte lyke sca-  
terpunge sheepe. The kynges escaped, they slewe manye, and  
ooke many captiues whiche they sente to *Dariena* where they  
use them for labourers to ryll and sowe theyr grounde. These  
thynges thus happely atchpyed, and that prouince quyeted,  
they returned by the ryuer to *Dariena*, leauinge theyr thyrtye  
men for a garyson vnder the gouernance of one *Furatalo* a ca-  
pitayne. This *Furatalo* therfore, sente from *Riuo Nigro* where  
he was appoynted gouernoure, twentie of his felowes & one  
woman, with .xxiii. captiues to *Vaschus* and his company, in  
one of the byggest *Canoas* of that prouince. As they rowed  
downe by the ryuer, there came forth suddenly ouerthwarte  
the ryuer agaynst them, foure greate *Canoas*, which ouerthrew  
theyr boate and slewe as many of them as they coulde coome  
by, because they were vnprepared suspecting noo such thinge.  
More men were all drowned and slayne excepte twoo, which  
hyd them selues amonge certeyne fagottes that swamme on  
the water, in the whiche they laye luckynge, and soo escaped  
to theyr felowes in *Dariena*: who by them beinge aduertysed  
hercof, beganne to caste theyr wyttes what this thyng might  
meane: beinge no lesse sollicitate for them selues, then medita-  
tynge in what daunger theyr felowes had byn in *Riuo Nigro*,  
excepte by good fortune, those thirtie newe men which were  
sente to them, had coome to the byllage the nyght before the  
conspiracie shulde haue byn wrought. Consultinge therefore  
what was best to bee doone herein, at the lengthe with dyl-  
gent searchynge they had intelligence that foue kynges, that  
is to wytte, *Abibeiba* the inhabitoure of the tree, and *Cemacabus*  
dryuen from his byllage whiche owe menne nowe possessed,  
*Abraiba* also and *Abenamscheius*, kynsmen, with *Dabaiba* the king  
of the syther men inhabytyng the corner of the goulfe whiche  
we cauled *Culata*, were all assembled to conspire the Christian  
mens destruction at a day assigned. Which thyng had surely  
coome to passe, if it had not byn otherwyse hyndered by gods  
prouidence. It is therfore ascribed to a myracle: And truly  
not vnwoorthely if wee weye howe chaunce detected and be-

Captiues.

A garyson of  
xxx. men.xviii. Spany-  
ardes slayne  
and drownedThe kinges  
which conspi-  
red the death  
of the Christi-  
ans.A strange  
chaunce.

## The seconde decade.

*Vaschus.*

Women can  
keepe no  
counsaile.

An army of C  
canoas and  
fyue. xx. men.

Tryumphe  
before victory

Affection cor-  
rupteth trew  
iudgement.

Wrayed the counsaile of these kynges. And bycause it is too  
thy to bee harde, I wyll declare it in fewe woordes. *Vaschus*  
*Nunex* therfore, who rather by poure then by election, blur-  
ped the gouernance in *Dariena*, beinge a master of fence, and  
rather a raffe royster then politike capitayne (although for-  
tune sumtyme fauoureth tooles) amonge many women which  
in dyners of these regions he had taken captyue, had one whi-  
che in fauoure and belotic excelled all other. To this woman  
her owne brother often tymes resorted, who was also dyuen  
owte of his contrey with kyng *Cemacbus*, with whom he was  
very familiar and one of his chiefe gentelmen. Amonge other  
communication which he had with his syster whom he loued  
entierly, he vttered these woordes. My deare and welbeloued  
syster, gyue care to my sayinges, and keepe mosse secreteelye  
that whiche I wyll declare vnto you, yf you desyre youre  
owne wealch and myne, and the prosperitie of owre contrey  
and kynsefolkes. The insolencie and crueltie of these menne  
whiche haue dyuen vs owre of owre possessions, is soo intol-  
lerable, that the princes of the lande are determyned noo lon-  
ger to susteyne theyr oppressions.

By the conductinge therfore of fyue kynges (whiche he named  
in order) they haue prepared a hundredeth create *Cinoas*, with  
fyue thousande men of warre by lande and by sea, with vitai-  
les also in the village of *Tichiri*, sufficient to maintayne such an  
army. Declaringe further, that the kynges by agremente, had  
diuided emonge theym the goodes and headdes of owre men:  
And therfore admonybed her, at the daye appoynted by su-  
re occasion to conuicgh her selfe owte of the way, lest she shuld  
bee slayne in the confusion of the bataile. For the soldier  
victourer, is not woonte to spare any that commerthe in his  
rase. And thus shewinge his syster the daye assigned to the  
slawghter, he departed. But the younge woman (for it is the  
sword that women feare and obserue more then the grauitie  
of *Cato*,) whether it were for the loue or feare that shee had to  
*Vaschus*, forgettinge her parentes, her kynsefolkes, her countrey  
and all her frendes, yf and all the kynges into whose throt-  
*Vaschus*, had thrust his sword shee opened all the matter vnto  
hym, and conceled none of those thinges whiche her vndis-  
crete broother had declared to her. When *Vaschus* therfore had  
hard the matter, he caused *Fuluis*, (for soo had they named her)

to sende for her brother, who came to her immediately, was taken, and enforced to tell the hole circumstances of the matter. Where vpon, he playnely confessed that kinge Cemacchus hys lord and master, sente those foure canoas to the destruction of oovre men, and that these newe conspiracies were attempted by his counsaile. Likewise that Cemacchus soughte the destruction of Vascus hym selfe when he sent hym fortie men vnder presence of frendshippe to kyll and solue his grownd after the maner of the contrey, gyuinge them in commaundement to slepe Vascus at Marris, whyther he resorted to comforte his laboures as the maner is of all good husbannes. yet durste they at noo tyme execute theyr lordes commaundemente vpon hym, because Vascus came neuer emonge them afoote or vnarmed, but was accustomed to ryde to theym in harnes with a saulen in his hande and a swoorde by his syde. Wherefore Cemacchus beinge frustrate of his particuler counsaile, tooke this laste thing in hande to his owne destruction and his neighbours. For the conspiracie beinge detected, Vascus cauled threescore and tenne souldiers, commaundinge them to folow him, but declared nothing vnto them whether hee wente or what hee intended to do. He wente forwarde therfore fyrste towarde Cemacchus which ley from hym, onely tenne myles. But he had knowlege that he was fledde to Dabaiba the kinge of the marishes of Culata. yet searchinge his village, he founde a noble man a ruler vnder hym and also his kinde man, whom he tooke prisoner with many ocher of his familiers and frendes both men and women. The same houre that he sette forwarde to seeke for Cemacchus, Rodericus Colmenaris rowed vp the ryuer with foure of the biggeste canoas and threescore men by the conduction of the maydes brother who brought hym to the village of Tchiri, in the which we sayd all their vitayles to remayne whiche were prepared for theyr armye. Colmenaris therfore, sacked the village, and possessed all their vitayles and wyne of sundry colours: likewise tooke the gouernoure thereof prisoner, and hanged hym on the tree in whiche he dwelte hym selfe, commaundinge hym too bee shotte throwgh with arrowes in the sight of the inhabitants, and with hym foure other rulers to bee hanged on iebbettes to the exemple of other rebelles. This punishment thus executed vpon the conspirators, strooke the hartes of all the inhabitants of the prouince with feare

The conspiracie of the kynges is detected.

kyng Cemacchus, conspyreth the death of Vascus.

Vascus purseweth the kynges with threescore & ten men.

Colmenaris sacketh the village of Tchiri.

Foure rulers hanged and shot throwgh with arrowes.

## The seconde 'decade.

fearc, that there is not nowe a man that dare stoore his fingers ageynst the wrath of othere men. They lyue nowe therefore quietly: And the other kinges by theyr exemple doo the gladlyer line in subiection, with lesse offence bearinge the yoke, whych they can by noo meanes shake of.

### The fyrte booke of the seconde decade of the supposed continente.



The golden  
regions on  
the south side  
the mount-  
aynes.

The death of  
Valdiuia and  
Zamudius.

Johannes  
Quicedus is  
sent to Spain

These thinges, thus fynylshed, assemblinge all their company togither they determined with one consente, that a messenger shulde forthwith bee sente to Hispaniola (from whence they haue their lawes and ayde) to declare the hole order of all these affayres, fyrste to the admirall and gouernoure of the Islande, and afterwarde to the Kinge of Spayne, and to perswade hym to sende those thousand men which younge Comogrus said to bee expediente to passe ouer the mountaynes lying betwene them and the golden regions towarde the Southe. Vascobus him selfe dyd greatly affecte this embassage: But nether wolde the resydewe of his felowes electe hym therto, nor his factionaries suffer hym to departe: Aswell for that thereby they thought they shulde bee left desolate, as also that they murmured that if Vascobus shulde once goo from them, he wolde neuer retorne to suche turnepyles and calamities, by the exemple of Valdiuia and Zamudius, who had byn now absent sence the mooneth of January, in soo muche that they thowght they wolde neuer coomme ageine. But the matter was otherwise then they tooke it, as I wyl shewe in his place. For they were perished. At the lengerth after many scrutynies, they elected one John Quicedus, a graue man well in yeares, & treasurer of the kinges eschequer in those prouinces. They had conceaued a good opinion of this Quicedus that all thynges shulde bee well browghe to passe by his meanes, aswell for his wysdome, as also that they were in good hop of his retorne, bycause he had brought his wyffe with hym to those regions, whome he lefte with his felowes for a pldge of his comminge ageyne. When they had thus elected Quicedus, they were ageyne of diuers opinions whome they might ioyne with hym for assistance: Affirminge that

that it were a dangerous thinge to committe soo weightye a matter to one mans handes. Not that they mistrusted *Quicedus*. but bycause the life of man is frayle, and the chaunge of the ayer perelous, especially to theym hauynge nowe of longe tyme byn accustomed to the temperature nere vnto the Equinoctiall, if they shulde bee compelled to retorne to the North with alteratiō of ayer & dyet. They thought it therefore good to appoint a companiō to *Quicedus*, that if by chance the one shuld fayle the other might remayne. And that if they both escaped, the king shuld gyue the better credit to the relation of both. After longe consultatiō therfore, they chose *Rodericus Colmenaris* a man of good experience, of whō we haue often tymes made mencion. For from his youth, he had trauiayled ouer al Europe by land and by sea, and was present at the doinges of all thynges in Italy ageynst the Frenchemen: Of whose retorne also, they had noo small hope bycause he had many fermes and hadde tyllled and sowne much grounde in *Dariena*, by thincrease wher of he might get much gold by sell yng the same to his felows. He lefte therfore the charge of al his affayres in *Dariena*, with his partener *Alphonsus Nunnez*, a Iudge of the lawe, who also was lyke to haue byn chosen procuratoure of this byage be fore *Colmenaris* if one had not put theim in remembraunce that he had a wyfe at *Marrinis*: fearyng least beinge ouercoome with her teares, he woold no more retorne. *Colmenaris* therefore, a free man and at libertie beinge associate assistant with *Quicedus* they tooke shyppyng togyther in a brigantine, the fourth day of the Calendes of Nouember, in the yeaere of Christ. 1512. In this byage, beinge tossed with sundry tempestes, they were by the violence of the wynde, cast vppon the Weste coastes of that large Ilande whiche in the fyrste Decade we called *Cuba*, suppoled to haue byn fyrste lande. They were sore oppressed with hunger. For it was nowe three moonethes sence they departed from theyr felows. By reason whercof, they were enforced to take lande to proue what ayde they coulde gette amonge the inhabitantes. Theyr chaunce therfore, was to arriue in that part of the Ilande, where *Valdina* was gyven alande by tempest. But oh howe wretched men of *Dariena*? Wary for *Valdina* whom youe sent to prouide to helpe youre necessities? Doubtde for youre selues rather and trust not to them whose fortune youe knowe not, For when he ar ryued

Change of  
the ayer is  
dangerous.

*Rodericus  
Colmenaris*,  
assistant with  
*Quicedus*.

A wyfe is a  
hynderance

*Cuba*.

Three moos-  
nethes from  
*Dariena* to  
*Cuba*, by rea-  
son of tempests

The death of  
*Valdina*.

## The seconde decade.

hurt of la-  
uysenes of  
the tonge.

The calami-  
tie & death of  
Fogeda.

maladies &  
famen.

The prospe-  
rous vyage  
of Ancisus.

A kyng of Cu-  
ba baptised  
by the name  
of Commen-  
dator.

Ancisus

eyued in *Cuba*, thinhabitantes Acwe him with al his felowes,  
and lefte the carauell wherein they were caried, to rme in pieces  
and halfe couered with sande on the shore: where *Quicodus* and  
*Columenaris* fyndyng the fragmentes therof, bewayled their fe-  
lowes mysfortune. But they founde none of theyr carkeles:  
supposyng that they were eyther drowned, or deuoured of  
the Canibals, which oftentymes make incurfions into that I-  
lande to hunte for men. But at the length, by twoo of the I-  
lande men which they had taken, they had knowleage of *Val-  
diuis* his destruction: And that thinhabitantes the more gree-  
dely attempted the same, for that they had harde by the bab-  
lyng of one of his felowes that he had great plentie of gold.  
For they also take pleasure in the bewtie of gold, which they  
forme artificially into sundry ouches. Thus oovre men strey-  
ken with penyuenes for the cruell destenie of theyr felowes,  
and in bayne seekyng reuenge for theyr iniuries, determyned  
to forsake that vnfortunate lande, departyng from those co-  
uetous naked barbarians with more sorowe and necessitie  
then they were in before. Or euer they had passed the South  
syde of *Cuba*, they fel into a thousand mysfortunes: and had  
intellygence that *Fogeda* arryued thereaboute, leadyng a my-  
serable lyfe, rosted and turnoyled with tempestes and vered  
with a thousand perplexities: Soo that departing from thense  
almost alone, his felowes beinge for the most parte all confuz-  
med with maladies and famyn, he came with much difficultie  
to *Hispaniola*, where he dyed by force of the poyson of his vene-  
mous wound which he had receaued in *Vraba* as we haue said  
before. But *Ancisus* elected Lieutenannt, sayled by all those  
coastes with much better fortune. For as he hym selfe coulde  
me, he founde prosperous wyndes in those parties, and was  
well enterteyned of thinhabitantes of *Cuba*. But this special-  
ly in the dominion of a certeyne kyng whose name was *Com-  
mendator*. For wheras he despyred of the Christian men whiche  
passed by, to bee baptised, demaundyng the name of the go-  
uernour of the Ilande next vnto *Hispaniola*, beinge a noble man  
and a knyght of the order of *Calatrana* of which order al are cau-  
led *Comendatores*, this kynges desyre was to bee named after  
hym. Kyng *Commendator* therefore, frendely receaued *Ancisus*,  
and gaue hym greate abundance of al thynges necessarie. But  
what *Ancisus* lerned of theyr religion durynge the tyme of his  
remaynyng

remaynyng there, I haue thowght good to adiecte yf yowre  
holynes. yowre shall therefore vnderstande, that certeyne of  
owre men saylinge by the coastes of Cuba, lefte with kynge  
Commendator a certeyne pooze maryner beinge diseased. Who in  
shorte space recoueringe his health, and hauynge nothe sum:  
what lerned theyr language, beganne to growe into great esti  
mation with the kynge and his subiectes, in soo muche that  
he was oftentimes the kynges Lieutenante in his warres a  
geynst other princes his botherers. This mans fortune was  
soo good, that all thynges prospered well that he tooke in  
hande. And albeit that he were not lerned, yet was he a ver  
tuous and well meanyng man accordyng to his knowlage;  
and dyd religiously honoure the blessed virgin, bearyng eue  
about with hym her picture fayre paynted vpon paper & slowd  
in his apparell nere vnto his breste: Signifyng vnto the  
kyng, that this holynes was the cause of al his victories: per  
suadynge hym to doo the lyke, and to cast away all his Zemes  
which were none other then the symilitudes of euill spirites;  
mooste cruell enemyes and deuouers of owre sowles: And to  
take vnto hym the holy virgin and moother of god to bee his  
patronesse if he desyred all his affayres aswell in warre as in  
peace to succede prosperously. Also that the blessed virgin  
woolde at noo tyme fayle hym, but bee euer redy to helpe him  
and his, if they wolde with deuoute hartes caule vppon her  
name. The maryner had soone perswaded the naked nation:  
And there vppon gaue the kynge (who demaunded the same)  
his picture of the virgin, to whom he buylded and dedicate a  
chapell and an altare, euer after contemnyng and reiectyng  
his Zemes. Of these Zemes made of gossampine cotton to the  
similitudes of spytes walkyng in the nyght which they of  
tentymes see, and speake with them familiarly, wee haue spo  
ken sufficiently in the nynti booke of the fyrst Decade. Fur  
thermore, accordyng to the institution of this maryner, when  
the soonne draweth towarde the faule, this kynge Commenda  
tor with all his family bot he men and women, resorte daylye  
to the sayde chapell of the virgin Marie, where kneelyng on  
theyr knees and reuerently bowyng downe theyr heades, hol  
dyng theyr handes ioyned together, they salute thimage of  
the virgin with these woordes: Ave Maria, Ave Maria. For fewe  
of them can rehearse any more woordes of this prayer. At

I. i.

Ancilus

A marvelous  
histoure howe  
God wrought  
miracles by  
the simple  
fayth of a  
maryner.

Be not rashe  
in iudgement

Zemes.

A chapel buil  
ded to the pic  
ture of the  
virgin Mary.

God re'pec  
teth the infan  
cie of sa:the  
for seles sake

## The seconde deacde.

One Religion  
turned into  
an other, hol-  
deth styl ma-  
ny thynges of  
the first.

A strange fan-  
tasy.

The effect of  
godly zeale.

A miracle in  
the tyme of  
the battayle

The virgin  
mary, is pre-  
sent at the  
battayle.

And thus his beinge there, they tooke hym and his felowes by the handes, and ledde them to this chapell with reioysinge, sayinge that they wolde shewe theyn maruelous thynges. When they were entered, they poynted with theyr fyngers to the Image of the virgin alcobeset and hanged aboute with ouches and iewels and many earthen pottes, fylled sum with sundry meates, and sume with water, rownde aboute all the tabernacle. For these thynges they offer to the image in the steede of sacrifice, accordyng to theyr owlde supersticion towarde theyr Zemes. Beinge demaunded why they dyd thus, they answered, leaste the image shulde lacke meate if perhaps it shuld be a hungerd. For they most certainly belue that images may hunger, and that they doo eate and drynke. But what ayde and helpe they confesse that they haue had of the godly poure of this image, that is of the blessed virgin, it is a thyng woorthy to be harde, and most auredly to bee taken for a truthe. For by the report of olore men, there is such feruent godly loue & zeale in these simple men toward the holy virgin, that to them beinge in the daungers of warre ageynst theyr enemies, they doo in maner (yf I may soo terme it) com- pel her to descende from heauen to helpe them in theyr neces- sities. For such is the goodnes of god, that he hath lefte vn- to men in maner a pryce wherby we may purchase hym with his holy angels and sayntes, that is to wytte, burnyng loue, charitie & zeale. Howe therfore can the blessed virgin at any time be absent fro the which cal for her helpe with pure faith & feruent loue? Comend for him selfe, with al his noble me and gentelmen, doo testifie with one voyce, that in a fought bat- taye in the which this maryner was capitayne, bearyng with hym this picture of the virgin Marie, the Zemes of theyr ene- mies turned their backes and trembeled in the presence of the virgins Image and in the syght of them all. For euery of the dryng theyr Zemes to the battayle, hoppyng by theyr helpe to obteyne the victorie. Ye they say further, that durynge the tyme of the battayle, they sawe not only an Image, but a liue ly woman clothed in fayre and whyte apparel, apdyng them ageynst theyr enemies: whiche thyng also the enemyes them selues acknowleaged, confestynge that on the contrary parte shee appeared to them, shakynge a septer in her hande with threatenynge countenaunce, whiche caused theyr hartes to shake

Wake and saynt for feare. But after that this marynet departed from them, beinge taken into a shyppe of certeyne Churians passynge by those coastes, Commendator declared that he with all his subiectes, continually obserued his institutions: In soo muche that beinge at contention with an other prince, which of they *Zemes* were moste holy and of greatest poure, the matter grewe to suche extremitie that they tryed it with hande strokes: And that in all these attempts, the blessed virgin neuer fayled hym, but was euer presente in the byrte of the battayle, and gaue hym ealpe victorie with a smaule poure of men, agaynst a mayne armie of his enemies. Beinge demaunded with what woordes they cryed vpon the virgin Mary when they assailed theyr enemies, they answered that they had lerned noo other woordes of the mariners doctrine, but *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*: That is, holy Mary helpe vs, holy Mary helpe vs: And this also in the Spanish tongue. For he had lefte these woordes in the mowthes of all men. Whyle they murthered and destroyed them selues thus on bothe sydes, they fell to entreacie of peace and agreed to trye the matter, not hande to hande by combatte of certeyne chossen for bothe parties as the maner was amonge the Romaynes and dyuers other nations in the owlde tyme, or by any syght or policie, but that twoo younge men shulde be chossen, for eche partie one, with theyr handes bounde fast beynde them in the playne fielde, bothe parties beinge sworne to acknowledge that *Zemes* to be the better, which fyrst loosed the bandes of the younge man whiche stood bounde for the tryall of his religion. Thus diuidinge them selues, and placeringe the sayde younge men before them in the syght of them al, with theyr handes fast bounde by theyr enemyes, the contrary parte cauled fyrst on theyr *Zemes* (that is, the deuyl to whole similitude theyr Images are made) who immediatly appered in his lyknes aboute the younge man that stood bounde in the defence of Sathans kyngedome.

But as soone as Commendator with his companye cryed *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*, forthwith there appeared a saynt virgin clothed in whyte, at whose presence the deuell banquished immediatly. But the virgin hauinge a longe rod in her hande, & putting the same on the bandes of the younge man that stood for Commendator, his handes were loosed imme-

diatly

A maruelus  
experience of  
fayth

muche lyke  
vnto this, is  
redde iii. Reg.  
xviii.  
The deuill ap-  
peareth in  
his lyknes

## The seconde decade.

An other miracle.

Math. 14.

The deuyl appeared again.

The virgin Mary ouercometh the deuyl.

Infidels converted by miracle, and baptised.

diatly in the syght of them all, and his bandes founde about the handes of hym that stood for the other partie, in somuch that they them selues founde hym double bounde. But for all this, were not the enemies satisfied: querelinge that this thyng was doone by sum wyght or diuise of man, and not by the pouer of the better Zemes. And thet vppon requyred for thaduoppyng of all suspencion, that there myght bee eygh graue and sage men appoynted, for eche syde foure, whiche shulde bynde the men in the syght of theim all, and also gyue iudgemente whether the thyng were doone withowt craft or gyle. Oh pure simplicitie and constant fayth: Oh golden and blessed confidence. Commendator and his familliers, doubred not to graunte theyr enemies theyr requeste with lyke faythe wherwith the diseased woman obteyned healthe of the cure of her blidde, and wherby Peter feared not to walke on the sea at the syght of his master Chryste. These younge men therfore were bounde in the presence of these eight graue men, and were placed within theyr lyties in the syght of bothe parties. Thus vppon a signe gyuen, when they cauled vppon theyr Zemes, there appered in the syght of them all, a deuyl with a longe tayle, a wyde mouthe, greate teeth, and hornes, resembling the similitude of the Image which the kyng being enemye to Commendator, honoured for his Zemes. As this deuyl attempted to loose the bandes of his clientre, the blessed virgin was immediatly presente as before at the caule of Commendator and his subiectes, and with her rodde loosed the bandes of her suppliant, which were agayne lykewyse founde fast tyed aboute the handes of hym that stood for the contrary parte. The enemies therfore of Commendator, beinge awkened with greate feare and amased by reason of this greate miracle, confessed that the Zemes of the virgin was better then theyr Zemes. For the better profe wherof, these pagans beinge botherers to Commendator, which had euer before byn at continuall warre and enmitie with hym, when they had knowleage that Anciscus was arryued in those coastes, they sente ambasadoures vnto hym, to desyre hym to send them preestes of whom they might bee baptised: Where vppon he sent them twoo which hee had with hym there at that present. They baptised in one day a hundred and thirte of thynhabitanes, sumeyne enemyes to Commendator, but not his frendes & ioynd with him in aliance.

All

All suche as came to bee baptised, gaue the pices of theyr owne liberalitie, eyther a cocke or a henne. But no capons: for they can not yet skyl how to carue theyr cocke chykes to make them capons. Also certeyne salted fyshes, and newe fyne cakes made of theyr breade: likewise certeyne foules franked and made fatte. When the pices resorted to the shippes, fyre of these newe baptised men accompanied theym laden with vitayles, wherewith they ledde a ioyfull Easter. For on the Sunday two dayes before saynte Lazarus day, they departed from Dariena, and touched at that tyme, onely to the cape or angle of Cuba nere vnto the East syde of Hispaniola. At the requeste of Commendator, Ancifus lefte with hym one of his companye, to thintente too teache hym and his subiectes wyth or ther his boztherers, the salutation of the angell whiche we caule the Aue Maria. For they thinke them selues to be soo much the more bcloued of the blessed virgin, as they can reherse the more woordes of that prayer. Thus Ancifus takinge his leaue of kynge Commendator, directed his course to Hispaniola, from whiche he was not farre. Shortely after, he tooke his viage to Spayne, and came to Valladoletto to the kynge, to whom he made greuous complaint of the insolencie of V. felus N. n. ues, in so muche that by his procuremente, the kynge gaue sentence against hym. Thus muche haue I thowgh good (moste holy father) wherof to aduertyse your holynes as concernyng the religio of these nations, not only as I haue byn instructed of Ancifus (wyth whom I was dayly couersante in the court and vsed hym familiarlye) but also as I was enformed of dyuers other men of greate autoritie, to thintente that your excellencie may vnderstande howe docible this kynde of men is, and wyth what facilitie they may bee allured to embrace our religion. But this can not bee done suddenlye. Yet we haue greate cause to hope that in shorte tyme they wilbe all drawn by litle and litle to the euangelicall lawe of Christe, to the great increase of his flocke. But let vs nowe returne to the messengers or procuratours as concernynge the assayres of

Dariena.

The pices  
rewards.

Aue Maria,

Ancifus vyz  
age to Spain

Ancifus com  
playneth of  
Vaichus.

The haruest  
is great, but  
the labourers  
are fewe.

## The seconde decade.

### The seueneth booke of the seconde decade of the supposed continente.

From Dariena  
to Hispaniola  
viii. dayes  
sayiing.



The procura-  
tors of Dari-  
ena, are hono-  
rably recea-  
ued at the  
courte.

Their copler  
ion is altered

Of whom the  
autour had  
information

From Dariena to Hispaniola is eyght dayes say-  
linge and sumtymes leste with a prosperous  
wynde. yet Quicodus and Colmenaris the procu-  
rators of Dariena, by reason of tempestes and  
contrary wyndes, could scarcely saile it in a  
hundred dayes. When they had tarped a  
fewe dayes in Hispaniola, and had declared the  
cause of the comminge to the admirall and the other gouer-  
nours, they tooke shippinge in two marchante shippes beinge  
redye furnysched, which were also accustomed to saile too and  
froo betwene Spayne and the Ilande of Hispaniola. They  
departed from Dariena (as we sayde before) the fourthe day of  
the calendes of nouember in the yeare of Christ. 1512, and came  
not to the courte before the calendes of May in the yeare fol-  
lowinge beinge the yeare of Christ. 1513. At thyr commynge  
to the courte, Iohannes Fonseca (to whom at the begynnyng the  
charge of these affayres was committed, whom also for hys  
faithful seruice towarde the kinge, yowre holynes created ge-  
nerall committarie in the warres agensse the moores) recea-  
ued them honorably, as men comminge from the newe world,  
from naked nations, and landes vnknown to other menne.

By the prefermente therfore of the byshoppe of Burges,  
Quicodus and Colmenaris were brought before the king, and decla-  
red theyr legacie in his presence. Suche newes and presentes  
as they brought, were delectable to the kinge and his noble  
men, for the newnes and straungnes therof. They also iuior-  
ned with me often tymes. Theyr countenaunces doo declare  
the intemperatenes of the ayer and region of Dariena. For they  
are yelow like vnto them that haue the yelow gaundies:  
And also swolne. But they ascribte the cause hereof, to the  
hunger which they susteyned in tyme past. I haue byn aduer-  
tised of thaffayres of this newe woold, not onely by these  
procurators of Dariena, and Ancisus, and Zamudius, but also by  
conference with Baeza the lawier, who came ouer a greate  
parte of those coastes. Likewise by relation of Vincentius Amex  
the patrone of the shippes, and Alfonso Nignus, both being men  
of greate experience and wel trauayled in those parties, beside  
many

many other, of whom wee haue made mention in other places  
 For there came neuer any from thence to the court, but tooke  
 greate pleasure to certifie mee of al thynges eyther by woorde  
 of mouth or by wyrtynge. Of many thynges therfore which  
 I lerned of them, I haue gathered suche as to my Iudgemēt  
 seeme moſte woorthy to ſatiffie them that take delyte in hysto-  
 ries. But let vs nowe declare what folowed after the com-  
 ming of the procuratours of *Dariena*. Therfore, before they  
 arryual there was a rumoure ſpreade in the court, that the  
 chiefe gouernours and Lieutenantes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, al-  
 ſo *Iohannes De la Goffa* (a man of ſuch reputation that by the kyn-  
 ges letters patentes he was named the greate maſter of the  
 kynges ſhippes) were all perſhed by miſchaunce: And that  
 thoſe ſewe which yet remayned alque in *Dariena*, were at con-  
 tencion and diſcorde amonge them ſelues: So that they ney-  
 ther endeouored theyr diligence to allure thoſe ſimple natiōs  
 to owe ſaythe, nor yet had regarde to ſearch the natures of  
 thoſe Regions. In conſideration wherof, the kyng was de-  
 termined to ſende a newe capitayne thither whiche ſhulde re-  
 ſtore and ſet all thynges in good order, and put them owte of  
 autozitie whiche hadde vſurped thempire of thoſe prouinces  
 withowte the kynges ſpeciall commaundement. To this of-  
 fice, was one *Petrus Arias* aſſigned, a man of greate prowes  
 and a citiſen of *Segouia*. But when the procuratours of *Dariena*  
 had publiſhed in the court howe greate a matter it was, and  
 of what moment, many laboured earnestly to the kyng, to take  
 the office owte of his handes. But the biſhop of *Burges* be-  
 inge the kynges chiefe chaplayne, and one of the commiſſio-  
 ners appoynted by hym in theſe matters, beinge aduertised  
 hercof, came immediatly to the kyng, and ſpake to hym in  
 this effect. May it pleaſe your hyghnes to vnderſtand (moſt  
 catholyke prince) that wheras *Petrus Arias* a man of valiente  
 corage and greate ſervice, hath offered hym ſelfe to aduenture  
 his lyfe in your maiesties attaynes, vnder vncerteyne hope of  
 gayne and moſte certeyne perels, yet that notwithstandinge  
 ſum other haue ambitiously maliced his felicitie and preſerued  
 labouringe for thoſe whereto he is elected: It maye pleaſe  
 your grace herein ſoo to ſhewe hym your fauour and permit  
 hym to enioye his ſayde office, as your maiestie doo knowe  
 hym to bee a woorthy and meete man for the ſame, haung in  
 tyme

The greate  
 maſter of the  
 kynges ſhips

*Petrus Arias*  
 is elected go-  
 uernour of  
*Dariena*.

The action of  
 the biſhop.  
 of *Burges* in  
 the defence  
 of *Petrus Arias*.

## The seconde decade.

The warres  
of Aphyca.

Petrus Arias  
Lieutenante  
of Dariena.

Petrus Arias  
hath a thou-  
sand & two  
hundred men  
appoynted at  
the kynges  
charges.

A house in Ci-  
uille appoin-  
ted to the af-  
fayres of  
India.

Peruaries.

eyme passe had greate experience of his proweesse and baliane-  
nesse, aswell in behauinge hym selfe as orderinge his souldi-  
ers, as yowre hyghnes may the better consyder if it shal please  
yowre to callye to remembrance his doinges in the warres of A-  
phyca, where he shewed hym selfe bothe a wyse Capitayne,  
and valient souldier. As concerninge his maners and blages  
other wayes, they are not vnknownen to yowre maiestie, vn-  
der whose wyng he hath of a chylde byn brought vp in the  
courte, and euer founde faythfull towarde yowre hyghnesse.  
Wherefore, to declare my opinion vnder yowre graces fauour  
(whom it hath pleased to appoynt me a commissioner in these  
affayres) I thinke it were vngodly that he shuld bee put from  
his office at the sute of any other, especially beinge thereto  
moued by ambition and couetousnes: who perchaunce woold  
proue them selues to be the same men in the office if they shuld  
obteyne it, as they nowe shewe them selues in the ambitious  
desyringe of the same. When the byshoppe had sayde these  
wordes, the kyng confirmed the election of Petrus Arias in  
moze ample maner then before: wyllinge the byshoppe to ap-  
poynt hym a thousand and two hundred souldiers at his  
charges, makynge hym a warrant to thofficers of his elche-  
ker to deliuer hym money in presse for the same purpose. Pe-  
trus Arias therfore beinge thus put in office and authorysed by  
the kynges letters patentes vnder his brode seale, chose a  
greate number of his souldiers in the court, and soo departed  
frome Valladoleta aboute the calend. 8 of October in the yea-  
re 1513: And sayled fyrst to Ciuille beinge a verie ryche citie and  
well replenyshed with people: where by the kynges magistra-  
tes he was furnyshed with men and wytayles and other neces-  
saries perteynyng to soo greate a matter. For the king hath  
in this citie erected a house seruinge only for thaffayres of the  
Ocean, to the which al they that goo or coome from the newe  
landes and Ilandes, resorte to gyue accomptes aswell what  
they cary thither as what they byng from thense, that the  
kyng may bee truly answered of his custome of the fyfte part  
bothe of golde and other thynges as wee haue sayde before.  
This house, they callye the house of the Contrattes of Indi,  
Petrus Arias founde in Ciuille aboute two thousand younge men  
which made great sute to goo with hym: lykewyse noo small  
number of conuous olde men: of the whiche, many offered  
them

them selues to goo with him of theyr owne charges withot  
the kynges stipende. But lest the shippes shulde bee pestered  
with to great a multitude, or least by rayles shulde fayle them,  
the libertie of free passage was restraynt. It was also decreed  
that noo stranger might passe withot the kynges licence.  
Wherfore I doo not a lytle maruaile at Aloisius Cadamustus a ve  
netian and wyter of the Portugales byages, that he was  
not a shamed to wyte thus of the Spanyardes nauigations:  
we went: we saue: we dyd. Wheras he neuer went, not any  
Venetian same. But he shoulde certeyne annotations obte of  
the three first bookes of my fyrst Decade wytten to Cardinal  
Ascanius and Arcimbolus, supposinge that I wolde neuer haue  
publyshed the same. It myght also happen that he came by  
the copie therof at the hande of sum ambasadoure of Venice.  
For I haue graunted the copie to many of them, and was not  
daungerous to forbyd them to communicate the same to other.  
Howe so euer it bee, this honelle man Aloisius Cadamustus feared  
not to chalenge vnto hym the frute of an other mans labour.  
Of the inuentions of the Portugales (which surely are woon  
derfull) whether he haue wytten that whiche he hath seene  
(as he sayth) or lykewyse becaused other men of the iuste com  
mendations of theyr traunayles, I wyl not iudge, but am con  
tent to let hym lyue after his maner. Amonge the company of  
these souldiers, there were none embarked but suche as were  
licenced by the kyng, except a fewe Italians, Venues, who  
by frendshippe and sure were admitted for the Admirals sake  
younge Colonys, sonne and heyre to Christophorus Colonus the fyrst  
synder of those landes. Petrus Arias therfore tooke shippynge in  
the ryuer Betis (nowe cauled Guadalqueni) runnyng by the cite of  
Seuille, aboute the begynnyng of the yere of Christe, 1514.  
But he loosed anker in an euylle hour. For suche a tempeste  
folowed shortly after his departure, that it rent in peeces two  
of his shippes, and soo tolled the other that they were enfor  
ced to heaue ouer boorde parte of theyr bytayles to lyghten  
them. All such as escaped, sayled backe ageyne to the coastes  
of Spayne: where, beinge newely furnished and refreshed, by  
the kynges officers, they went forwarde on theyr viage. The  
master pylot of the gouernours shyppe, was Iohannes Vesputius a  
Florentine, the neuie of Americus Vesputius, who lefthym as it  
were by discent of inheritance, the experience of the mariners

many profer  
them selues  
to go of theyr  
owne char  
ges.

Aloisius Ca  
damustus is  
reproued.

The Portu  
gales inuen  
tions.

The nauigae  
tio of Petrus  
Arias.

A shipwacke

Americus Vespu  
tius.

## The seconde decade.

facultie, and knowleage of the sea, carde and compasse. But we were aduertised of late by certeyne which came from *Hispaniola*, that they had passed the Ocean with more prosperous voynde. For this marchaunt Gyppe commynge from *Hispaniola* founde them landinge at certeyne Ilandes nere there aboute. But in the meane tyme whyle my importunate caulers on, *Celestius Butrigarius* and *Iohannes Cursius*, men studious by al meanes to gratifie yowre holynes, ceased not to put me in remembrance that they had one in a redynes to depart into Italy, and tarped onely to cary with hym vnto yowre holynes these my fayre *Nereides* althowgh rudely decked, leaue I shulde bestow muche tyme in bayne, I haue let passe many thynges, & will reherse onely such as seeme in my iudgement mosse woorthye memory, althowgh sumwhat disordered as occasion hath serued. So it is therfore that this *Petrus Arias* hath a wyfe named *Helisabeth a Boadilla*, beinge nyse by the broothers syde to the marques of *Boadilla*, which rendered the citie of *Segouia* to *Fernando* and *Helisabeth* princes of Spayne at such tyme as the *Portugales* inuaded the kingdome of *Castile*: by reason wherof they were encouraged fyrste to resyste, and then with open warre to assaile and expulse the *Portugales* for the great tresure which kynge *Henry* brother to queene *Helisabeth* hadde gathered togyther there. This marquette whyle she lyued, dyd euer shewe a manly and stoute mynde, bothe in peate and warre, so that by her counsaile manye noble thynges were brought to good effecte in *Castile*: vnto this noble woman, the wyfe of *Petrus Arias* was nyse by her broothers syde. Shee folowynge the magnanimitie of her aunt, perceauinge her husbande nowe furnysshynge hym selfe to depart to the vnknowen coastes of the newe woorld, and those large tractes of lande and sea, spake these wordes vnto hym. My mosse deare and welbeloued husbände, we owtoght not nowe to forget that first ofore younge yeares we haue byn ioyned, togyther with the yoke of holy matrimonie to thintente that we shulde soo lyue togyther and not a sunder durynge the tyme of oure naturall lyfe. Wherefore for my parte to declare my affection herein, yowe shall vnderstande, that whither so euer yowe fatal destinye shall dyue yowe, cyther by the furious waues of the greate Ocean, or by the manyfoulde and horrible daungers of the lande, I wyll surely beare yowe company, There can no

A notable example of a valient woman.

kyng Henry.

The wyfe of Petrus Arias

perel

perell chaunce to me so terrible, nor any kynde of death so cruell, that shal not bee much easyer for me to abyde, then to liue so farre seperate from youe. It were muche better for me to dye, and eyther to bee cast into the sea to bee deuoured of the fyshes, or on the lande to the Canibales, then with continuall mournynge and bewaylinge, to lyue in deache and dye lyuynge, whyle I consume in lookyng rather for my husbandes letters then for hym selfe. This is my full determinacion, not rashely nor ptesently excogitate, nor conceaued by the lyght phantasie of womans brayne, but with longe deliberatis and good aduise ment. Nowe therfore choose to whether of these twoo youe wyll assente: Eyther to thruste youe swoorde in my throte, or to graunte me my requeste. As for the chyl dren which god hath giuen vs as pledges of our inseperable loue, (for they had foure sonnes and as many dochters) shal not stay me a moment. Let vs leaue vnto them suche gooddes and posseltions as haue byn left vs by owre parentes and frendes wherby they may lyue amonge the woorthypful of theyr order. For other thynges I take no care. When this noble matrone of manly vertue had fynished these woordes, her husbände seinge the constant mynde of his wyfe, and her in a redynes to doo accorpyng to her woordes, had no hart to denye her louynge petition: but embrasinge her in his armes, commended her intente and consented to her requeste. Shee folowed hym therfore as dyd *Ipsicrates* her *Mithridates* with her heare hanginge loose aboute her shulders. For shee loueth her husbände as dyd *Halcagnassæ* of *Caria*, hers beinge deade, and as dyd *Artemisia* her *Mausolus*: We haue also had aduertisemēt sence their departure that she (being brough t by as it were amonge soft fethers) hath with noo lesse stout corage susteyned the rozynges and rages of the Ocean, then dyd eyther her husband or any of the maryners brought by euen amonge the saurges of the sea. But to haue sayde thus much hereof, this shal suffice. Let vs nowe speake of other thynges no lesse woorthy memorie. Therefore, whereas in the fyfte Decade we haue made mention of *Vincētius Annæ Pinzonus*, ye shal vnderstande that he accompanyed *Christophorus Colonus* the Admirall in his fyft byage, and afterwarde made an other byage of his owne charges with onely one shyppe. Ageyne, the fyfte yeare after the departinge of the Capitaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, he ran ouer

## The seconde decade.

The thyde  
nauigation of  
Vincentius  
pinzonus.

Cuba.

Beragua.

Vraba.

Cuchibachoa.

Paria.

Os Draconis

Curiana.

Cumana.

Manacapana.

Plentie of  
pearles.

Monoxyla.

The Barbari  
ans assaile  
owre men be  
inge in theyr  
shyppes.

The vse of  
gunnes.

those coastes from Hispaniola, and searched all the southe syde of Cuba from the East to the weste, and sayled rownde about that Ilande which to that day for the greate length thereof, was thought to haue bin part of the continent or firme land, al though some other say that they dyd the lyke. Vincentius Anz nex therfore, knowyng nowe by experience that Cuba was an Ilande, sayled on further, and found other landes westward from Cuba, but such as the Admirall had fyrst touched. Wherefore, beinge in maner encompassed with this newe lande, turninge his course towarde the lefte hande, and rasing the coastes of that lande by the East, ouerpasseinge also the mouthes of the goulfes of Beragua, Vraba, and Cuchibachoa, he arriued at the Region which in the fyrst Decade we cauled Paria and Os Draconis: And entered into the greate goulfe of frethe water, which Colonus discovered, beinge replenished with great abundance of fyssh, and famous by reason of the multitude of Ilandes lyinge in the same, beinge distant Eastward from Curiana aboute a hundreth and thirtie myles, in the which trace are the Regions of Cumana and Manacapana, whiche also in the fyrst booke of the fyrst Decade we sayde to bee Regions of the large prouince of Paria, where many affirme to bee the greteste plentie of the beste pearles, and not in Curiana. The kinges of these regions (whom they call Chicaones, as they of Hispaniola caule theym Caici) beinge certified of the comminge of owre men, sente certeyne spyes to enquire what newe nation was arriued in theyr coastes, what they brought, and what they wolde haue: and in the meane tyme furnished a number of theyr Canoas (whiche they caule Chichos) with men armed after their maner. For they were not a lytle astonished to beholde owre shippes with the sayles spreade, whereas they vse no sayles, nor can vse but smaule ones if they wolde, by reason of the narrownes of theyr canoas. Swarminge therfore aboute the shippe with theyr canoas (whiche we may well caule Monoxyla, bycause they are made of one hole tree,) they feared not to shute at our men beinge yet within their ships and keepinge theym selues under the hatches as safely as yf they had byn defended with stone waules. But when our men had shotte of certeyne pieces of ordinaunce agaynst theym they were soo discomfited with the noise and sight thereof that they drowne them selues to agher. Beinge thus dispersed

eled, othere men chased them with the shippe bote, tooke many, and slew many. When the kynges harde the noyse of the gunnes, and were certyfyed of the losse of their men, they sent ambasadours to *Vincentius Agnes* to entreate of peace, fearinge the spoyle of theyr goodes and destruction of theyr people, if othere men shulde coomme alande in theyr wrathe and fure. They desired peace therfore, as could bee coniectured by their signes and poyntinges: For othere men vnderstoode not one woorde of theyr language. And for the better prooffe that they desired peace, they presented othere men with three thousand of those waightes of gold that the Spanyardes caule *cellum Aureum*, which they commonly caule *Pesum*. Also a greate barell of woodde full of moste excellent masculine frankensence, weighing about two thousande and syxe hundred poundes weight after eight ounces to the pounce: Wherby they knewe that that lande browghe furthe greate plentie of frankensence. For there is noo entercourse of marchaundies betwene the inhabitants of *Paria* and the Sabians bringe soo farre distant, wheras also the of *Paria* knowe nothyng with othere theyr owne coastes. With the golde and frankensence whiche the presented to othere men, they gaue them also a greate multitude of theyr peacocks, bothe cockes and hennes, brade and alpe, aswell to satisfie theyr present necessitie, as also to cary with them into Spayne for encrease. Lykewyle certeyne carpettes, couerlettes, table clothes and hanginges made of gossampine silke fynelye brought after a straunge diuise with pleaunte & variable colours, hauing golden belles & such other spangles and pendants as the Italians caule *sonaglios*, and the Spanyardes *Cascaules*, hanging at the purses therof. They gaue them furthermore speakinge popingais of sundry colours as many as they wolde aske. For in *Paria*, there is no lesse plentie of popingais, then with vs of dooues or sparous, the inhabitants of these Regions both men and women are appareled with vestures made of gossampine cotton, the men to the knees, and the women too the calfe of the legge. The fashion of theyr apparell, is simple and playne muche like vnto the Turkes: But the mens, is double and quilted like that whiche the Turkes vse in the warres. The princes of *Paria*, are rulers but for one yeare: But their autumic is noo lesse emonge the people both in peace and warre, then

Great abundance of gold and frankensence.

*Olibanum.*

Sabea, is a contrey in Arabia, which bringeth forth frankensence *Paria*.

Peacocks which wee caule Turkye cockes.

Carpettes and couerlettes fynely wrought.

Popingayes.

The apparell of the inhabitants of *Paria*.

Rulers for one yeare.

## The seconde decade.

The greate  
goulfe of pa-  
ria.

Bala Natiui-  
tatis the gret  
goulfe of Pa-  
ria.

Vincenſius  
maketh a  
league with  
v. princes.  
of paria.

Mount Atlas  
in aphyrike.

The great I-  
land atlantike

is thantozitie of other kynges in those Regions. Theyr villa-  
ges are buylded in coompanie, along by the banks of all that  
greate goulfe. Some of theyr princes came to owne men woth  
theyr presentes, whose names I thought worthy to bee put  
in this historie in remembrance of soo notable a thinge *Chiaconus*  
*Chiaconus* (*that is the prince of Chiaconus, for they caule prin-*  
*ces or kinges Chiaconos*) *Chiaconus Pintiguanus, Chiaconus Chamailaba,*  
*Chiaconus Polomus, and Chiaconus Potto.* The goulfe beinge fyrste  
founde of the admirall *Colonus*, they caule *Bala Natiuitatis*, bycause  
he entered into the same in the day of the natiuitie of *Christe*.  
But at that tyme he only passed by it withowte anye further  
searching, and *Bala* in the Spanyshe tong, signifieth a goulfe.  
When *Vincenſius* had thus made a league with these princes,  
folowinge his appoynted course, he founde many regions to-  
warde the East, desolate by reason of diuers fluddes and ouer-  
flowynges of waters: also many standynge pooles in dryeres  
places, and those of exceedynge largenes. He ceased not to fo-  
lowe this tracte vntyll he came to the poynte or cape of that  
moſte longe lande. This poynte semethe as though it wolde  
innade the monte *Atlas* in *Aphyrike*. For it prospecteth towarde  
that parte of *Aphyrike*, whiche the portugales caule *Caput Bone*  
*Sperantie*. The poyntes or capes of the mount *Atlas*, are rough  
and saluage nere vnto the sea. The cape of *Bona Speranza*, ga-  
thereth the thirtie and foure degrees of the Southe pole, cauled  
the pole antarrike: But that poynte, onely seven degrees. I  
suppose this lande to bee that, whiche I fynde in owlde wy-  
ters of Cosmographie to bee cauled the greate Iland *Atlant-*  
*tike*, withowt any further declaringe eyther of the sytuation,  
or of the nature therof.

### The eight booke of the seconde decade of the supposed continent.

Contention  
betwene the  
Castilians &  
portugales  
for the newe  
landes.



When *Johan* the king of portugale lyued which  
was predicessour to hym that now reighneth,  
there arose a great contention betwene the *Cast-*  
*ilians* and *Portugales* as concerninge the do-  
minion of these newe founde landes. The *Port-*  
*tugales*, bycause they were the firste that durst  
attempte to searche the *Dean* sea sente the memorie of man,  
affirmed

affirmed that all the nauigations of the Ocean, ought to per-  
 teyne to theym onely. The Castilians, argued on the contrarie  
 parte, that what so euer god by the ministratio of nature hath  
 created on the earth, was at the begynnyng common among  
 men: And that it is therfore lawfull to every man to possesse  
 suche landes as are boyd of Christian inhabitours. Whyle  
 the matter was thus uncerteynly debated, bothe parties agre-  
 ed that the controuersie shulde bee decerned by the byshoppe of  
 Rome, and plighted faith to stande to his arbitramente. The  
 kyngedome of Castile was at that tyme gouerned by that  
 great Queene Helisabeth with her husbände: for the roialme of  
 Castile was her dowerye. Shee also and the kyng of Portu-  
 gale, were cosyn germaines of two sisters: by reason wher-  
 of the dissention was moze easely pacified. By thassent ther-  
 fore of both parties, Alexander the byshop of Rome, the .vi. of  
 that name, by thautozie of his leaden bull, drew a right line  
 from the North to the South a hundred leagues westwarde  
 withoute the paralelles of those Ilandes whiche are cauled  
*Caput Viride* or *Cabouerie*, Within the compase of this lyne (al-  
 though soonne denye it) fauleth the poynte of this lande  
 wherof we haue spoken, which they caule *Caput Sancti Augustini*,  
 otherwyle cauled *Promontorium Sancti Augustini*, that is, saynt Au-  
 gustines cape or poynte. And therfore it is not lawfull for the  
 Castilians to fasten foote in the begynnynge of that lande. Vin-  
 centius Annex therfore, departed from thence, beinge aduertised  
 of the inhabitantes, that on the ocher syde of the hyghe moun-  
 taynes towarde the South, lyinge before his eyes, there was  
 a Region cauled *Giamba*, which brought forth greate plentie  
 of golde. Of certeyne captiues whiche he tooke in the goulfe  
 of *Paria* (whiche certenly pertaineth to the dominion of Castile)  
 he brought some with hym to *Hispaniola*, and left them with  
 the younge Admirall to lerne othere language. But he hym  
 selfe, repayed to the court to make earnest sute to the kyng  
 that by his fauoure, he myght bee gouernour of the Ilande of  
*Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyle cauled *Burichena*, beinge distant from  
*Hispaniola* onely .xxv. leagues) because he was the spryng foun-  
 taine of golde in that Ilande. Before Vincentius made sute for this  
 office, one Don Christopher a Portugale, the soonne of the  
 countie of *Camigna*, was gouernour of the Ilande: whom the  
 Canibales of the other Ilandes serue, with all the Christian  
 men

The byshop  
 of Rome diui-  
 deth the land

Cabouerie  
 loke decade  
 i. lib. iii

The golden  
 region of Gi-  
 amba.

The Iland of  
 S. Iohannes

## The seconde decade.

fyue byshop-  
pes of the I-  
land made by  
the byshop  
of Rome.

The Caniba-  
les of the I-  
land of Sancte  
Crux.

men that were in the same, excepte the byshop and his famill-  
ers, which fledde and sought for them selues, forsakynge the  
church and all the oznamentes thereof. For yowre holynes  
hath consecrated fyue byshoppes in these Ilandes at the re-  
quest of the most catholyke kynge. In *Sancto Dominico* being the  
chiefe citie of *Hispaniola*, *Gaspar de Padilla*, a regular fryer of the or-  
der of saynt *Fraunces*, is byshop. In the towne of *Concepcion*,  
doctor *Petrus Xuarez* of *Deza*: And in the Ilande of saynte  
*John* or *Burichena*, *Alfonso Mansus* a licenciare, beinge bothe ob-  
seruantes of the institution of saynt *Peter*. The fourth, is fryer  
*Barnarde* of *Mesa*, a man of noble parentage, borne in *Toledo*,  
a preacher, and byshop of the Ilande of *Cuba*. The fyfte is *Io-  
hannes Cabedus*, a fryer preacher, whom yowre holynes announ-  
ced mynister of *Christ*, to teache the *Christian* faith amonge  
the inhabitantes of *Dariena*. The *Canibales* shall shortly re-  
pent them, and the bludde of owre men shalbe reuenged: And  
that the sooner, because that shortly after they had committed  
this abhominable slaughtre of owre men, they came ageyne  
from theyr owne Ilande of *Sancti Crux* (otherwyle cauled *AyAy*),  
to the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, and sette a kynge whiche was  
a frende to owre men, and eate hym and all his famely, breter-  
ly subueringe his byllage, vppon this occasion that viola-  
tinge the lawe of hostage, he had slayne seuen *Canibales* whi-  
che were left with hym by composition to make certeyne ca-  
noas, bicause the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* beareth greater trees  
and apter for that purpose, then doth the Ilande of *Sancti Crux*  
the chiefe habitation of the *Canibales*. These *Canibales* yet  
remaynyng in the Ilande, certeyne of owre men sayling from  
*Hispaniola*, chaunced vppon them. The thyng beinge understode  
by chinterpreterours, owre men quarelyng with theym and  
caulyng them to accompte for that mischeuous deede, they  
immediatly directed theyr bowes and venemous arrowes a-  
geynst them, and with cruell countenauces threatened the  
to bee quyet, least it shulde repent them of theyr commyng thy-  
ther. Owre men fearyng theyr venemous arrowes (for they  
were not prepared to fyght) gaue them signes of peace. Being  
demanded why they destroyed the byllage, and where the  
kynge was with his famelye, they answered that they raised  
the byllage and curte the kynge with his famelie in peeces &  
eate them in the reuenge of theyr seuen woorkemen: And that  
they

they had made faggottes of theyr bones to cary theim to the wyues and chyl dren of theyr layne woozkemen, in wyneſſe that the bodyes of theyr huſbandes and parentes lay not unreuenged: and therewith ſhewed the faggottes of bones to othere men: who beinge aſtonyſhed at theyr fierceness and crueltye, were enforced to diſſimble the matter and houlde theyr peace, quarelyng noo further with them at that tyme. Theſe and ſuche other thynges doo dayly chaunce, the which I doo let paſſe leaſt I ſhulde offende the eares of your holynes with ſuche bluddy narrations. Thus haue wee ſufficiently digreſſed from the regions of *Beragua* and *Vraba* beinge the chiefteſte foundations of othere purpoſe. Wee wyll nowe therefore create ſumewhat of the largenes and depthe of the ryuers of *Vraba*: Alſo declare bothe what they and the landes whiche they runne through doo bringe forth: lykwile of the greatnes of the lande from the Eaſte to the Weſt, and of the bredth thereof from the Southe to the North, and what theyr opinion and hope is of thynges yet unknowen in the ſame. Wee wyll therefore beginne at the newe names wherewith the Spanyardeſe haue named theſe prouinces ſence they were vnder the dominions of the Chyiſtians.

*Beragua* and  
*Uraba*.

The ryuers  
of *Uraba*.

**C** The nyynth booke of the ſeconde Decade,  
of the ſuppoſed Continent.



*Beragua* therefore, they cauled *Castella Aurea*, that is golden Caſtile: And *Vraba* they named *Andaluzia Noua*, that is, newe Andaluſia. And lyke as of many Ilandes which they ſubdued, they chooſe *Hispaniola* for the chiefe place of theyr habitation, ſo in the large tract of *Paria*, they appoynted theyr coloune or bydng place in the twoo regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua*, that all ſuche as attempte any byages in thoſe coaſtes, may reſorte to them as to ſafe portes to bee reſreſhed when they are weyry or dyuynen to neceſſitie. All othere ſeedes, and plantes, do nowe maruelouſly encrease in *Vraba*. Lykwile blades, ſertes, ſippes, graſſes, ſuger canes, and ſuche other as are brought from othere places to thoſe regions, as alſo beaſtes and foules as we haue ſayde befoze, & maruelous fruteſulnes. Twentie dayes after

*Beragua*, cauled *Castella aurifera*, and *Uraba*, *Andaluzia noua*. Sum caule *Peru*, *Noua Caſtilia*.

*Beragua* and *Uraba*, regions of *paria*.

The fruteſulnes of *Uraba*

## The secondedecade.

after the seede is sowne, they gather vnye cucumers, and such lyke, But colwortes, beetes, Letuse, Borage are vnye within the space of ten dayes. Gourdes, melones, and pompones, within the space of .xxviii. dayes. *Dariena* hath many natie trees and frutes of dyuers kyndes with sundry tastes, & hol: some for the vse of mē: of the which I haue thought it good to describē certeyne of the best. They noyſthe a tree which they caule *Gutina*, that beareth a frute much resemblinge the kynde of citrons which are commonly cauled limones, of taste somewhat sharpe myre with sweetenes. They haue also abundance of nutres of pynetrees, and great plentie of date trees, whiche beare frutes bygger then the dates that are knowne to vs: but they are not apte to bee eaten for theye to much forwernes. Wylde and baren date trees, growe of them selues in sundry places, the branches wherof they vse for biesommes, and eare also the buddes of the same. *Guarausna*, being hig ger and bygger then the orange tree, bringeth furth a great frute as bygge as pome citrons.

There is an other tree much lyke to a chestnut tree whose frute is lyke to the bygger sort of fygs, beinge halsome & of pleasant taste. *Mameis*, is an other tree that bringeth forth the frute as bygge as an orange, in taste nothyng inferioure to the beste kyndes of melones. *Guananala*, beareth a frute lesse then any of the other, but of sweete sauoure lyke spice, and of delectable taste. *Houos*, is an other tree whose frute bothe in shape and taste, is much lyke to prunes, but somewhat bygger. They are surely perswaded that this is the *Myrobalaue* tree. These growe soo abundantly in *Hispaniola*, that the hogges are fedde with the frute therof as with masse amonge vs. The hogges lyke this kynde of feadyng soo well, that when these frutes be at vnye, the Smycherdes can by no meanes keepe them owte of the wooddes of these trees: by reason wherof, a greate multitude of them are becoome wylde. They also affirme, that in *Hispaniola*, swynes fleshe is of much better taste and more hol: some then mutton. For it is not to bee doubted, but that dyuers kyndes of meates do engender sundry tastes and qualities in suche as are noyſthed therewith. The moste pitiaunte prince *Ferdinandus*, declared that he had eaten of an other frute brought from those landes, beinge full of scales with keyes much lyke a pine apple in forme and coloure, but in tendernes equal to melopepones, and in taste exceeding al garden frutes.

The fruitfulnes of *Dariena*.

Dyuers hol: some frutes of trees.

*Gutina*,

Pine trees.

Date trees.

*Guarausna*

*Mameis*,

*Guananala*.

*Houos*.

*Myrobalaue*, hogges fed with *myrobalaue*.

Swynes fleshe of better taste and more hol: some then mutton.

For it is noo tre, but an herbe much lyke vnto an archichoke,  
 of *Acantho*. The kynge hym selfe, gaue the cheefest commenda-  
 tion to this. I haue eaten none of these frutes. For of a great  
 number which they brought from thence, only one remainned  
 vncorrupted, the other being putrified by reason of the longe  
 wyage. All suche as haue eaten of theym newly gathered in  
 theyr natyue soyle, doo maruelously commende theyr swete-  
 nes and pleasaunt taste. They dygge also owte of the ground  
 certeyne rootes growynge of them selues, whiche they caule  
*Betates*, much lyke vnto the nauie rootes of *Oylayne*, or the  
 greate pusses or muheroms of the earth. Howe soo euer they  
 bee dressed, epyther fryed or sodde, they gyue place to noo such  
 kynde of meate in pleasaunt tendernes. The skyn is sumwhat  
 towgher then epyther of nauies or muheroms, and of earthy  
 coloure: But the inner meate therof, is verie whyte. These  
 are nooyshed in gardens, as we sayde of *Iucca* in the fyrste  
 Decade. They are also eaten rawe, and haue the taste of rawe  
 chesnutres, but are sumwhat sweeter. Wee haue spoken suf-  
 ficiently of trees, herbes, and frutes. Wee wyll nowe there-  
 fore entreate of thynges sencitiue. The laundes and desolate  
 pastures of these regions, are inhabited and deuoured of wild  
 and terrible beastes, as Lions, Tygers, and such other mon-  
 sters as we nowe knowe, and haue byn descrybed of owlde au-  
 toures in some past. But there is especially one beast engende-  
 red here, in which nature hath endeouored to shewe her curi-  
 osyng. This beast is as hygge as an ore, armed with a longe  
 snoute lyke an Elephant, and yet no Elephant. Of the coloure  
 of an ore and yet noo ore. With the houle of a horse, and yet  
 noo horse. With eares also much lyke vnto an Elephant, but  
 not soo open nor soo much hangyng downe: yet much wyder  
 shē the eares of any other beast. Of the beast which beareth  
 her whelpes about with her in her seconde belly as in a purse  
 (beinge knowen to none of the owlde wyters) I haue spoke  
 in the fyrst Decade which I doubt not to haue coome to the  
 handes of your holynes. Let vs nowe therefore declare what  
 resteth of the ruddes and ryuers of *Vraba*. The ryuer of *Darien*  
 fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba* with a narrowe chanel, scantly  
 able to beare the canoas or lyghters of that prouince, and run-  
 neth by the byllage where they chose theyr dwellynge place.  
 But the ryuer in the corner of the goulfe which we sayde that

Frutes putre-  
fied on the  
sea.

*Betates*.

Lions and  
Tygers.

A straunge  
beast.

The ryuer  
of *Uraba*.

The ryuer of  
*Darien* fau-  
leth into the  
goulfe of  
*Uraba*.

## The secondedecade.

A league is  
xxiii furlonges

Danubius.

Grandis or  
Rio grandis.  
A crocodile is  
much lyke an  
ente, but of  
excedyng big  
nes.

The autoure  
of this booke  
was in Egypt  
The river Ni  
lus in Egypte  
Montes,  
Luna.

The Portuga  
les nauigaci  
ons.

The ryuer  
Senega, is o  
ther chanell  
of the ryuer  
of Nilus.

Crocodiles.  
The thyde is  
fourth Nilus.  
Delagartos.

Vaschus passed by, they found to bee. xxiij. furlonges in bredeth (which they caule a league) and of ereeadyng depthe, as of twoo hundredeth cubettes, faulnge into the goulfe by dyuers mouthes. They say that this ryuer fauleth into the goulfe of Vraba, lyke as the ryuer Isyr (otherwyse, cauled Danubius, and Danowe) fauleth into the sea. Pontike, and Nilus into the sea of Egypte: wherfore they named it Grandis, that is great: whiche also they affirme to nooryshe many and great Crocodyles, as the owld wyters testifie of Nilus, and especially as I haue lerned by experience, hauinge sayled by and downe the ryuer of Nilus when I was sent ambasadoure to the Soldane of Al capz at the commaundement of the moste catholyke kynge. What I may therfore gather owte of the wytynges, of so many lerned autours as concerninge the ryuer of Nilus, I knowe not. For they say that nature hath gyuen two riuers, of that name to water the lande, whether they wyll them to sprynge owte of the mountaynes of the moone or the soonne, or owte of the toppes of the rogh mountaines of Ethiopia: Affirming one of the same to faule into the goulfe of Egypte toward the North, and the other into the South Ocean sea. What shall wee saye in this place? Of that Nilus in Egypte, there is no doubte. The Portugales also whiche sayle by the coastes of the Ethiopians cauled Nigritia, and by the kyngedome of Melinda passinge vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, amonge theyr marvelous inuentions haue founde an other towarde the South, and earnestly affirme the same to bee also deriued fro the mountaynes of the moone: And that it is an other chanell of Nilus, because it byngeth forth Crocodyles, whereas it hathe not byn reade before tyme that any other ryuer nooryshed Crocodyles sauinge onely Nilus. This ryuer, the Portugales caule Senega. It runneth through the Region of the Nigritia, beinge very frutefull towarde the north bore: but on the southe syde sandie and rowghe. Crocodiles are also engendred herein. What shall wee then say of this thyde: ye I may wel say the fourth. For I suppose them also to bee Crocodiles which comen with his company founde armed with teales as harde as shelles in the ryuer cauled Delagartos, wherof wee haue made mention befoze. Shall wee say that these ryuers also of Danow and Vraba, haue theyr originall frome the mountaynes of the moone, whereas they sprynge owte of the nexte mountaynes, and

and can by noo meanes haue the same originall with Nilus in Egypte, or that in Nigrita, or els that in the kyngedome of Melinda, from whence soo euer they are deriued. Whereas these other (as we haue sayde) springe out of the nere mountaines whiche decyde an other southe sea with noo greate distaunce from the North Ocean. Wherefore it appeareth by experience of such as haue traueyled the worlde in omyr tyme, that other waters besyde the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, maye lyke wyse byynge forth Crocodiles. In the maryshes also and fennes of the Regions of *Dariens*, are founde greate plentie of shes, sauntes and peacockes, (but not of variable coloures) with many other kyndes of byrdes and foules whylke vnto owres, as well apte to bee eaten, as also to delite the eares of menne with pleasaunt noyse. But owre Spanyardes, because they are ignorant in foulunge, take but fewe. Also innumerable poppingayes of sundry kyndes are found chartering in the groues of those fenny places. Of these there are sume equall to Carpons in byggenes, and sume as lyttle as sparowes. But of the diuersitie of poppingayes, we haue spoken sufficiently in the first Decade. For in the case of this large lande, *Colonus* hym selfe brought and sent to the court, a greate number of euery kynde, the which it was lawfull for all the people to be holde, and are yet dayly brought in lyke maner. There remaineth yet one thyng moste woorthy to bee put in hystorpe: The which I had rather to haue chaunced into the handes of *Cicero* or *Linie*, then into myne. For the thyng is soo marueylous in my estimation, that I fynde my wytte more entangled in the description hereof, then is sayde of the henne when she seeth her younge chekyn inwapped in towe or dare. The breadth of that lande from the North Ocean to the South sea is only fyre dayes iourney by relation of the inhabitants. The multitude therfore and greatnes of the ryuers on the one side and on the other syde the narrowenes of the lande, byynge me into suche doubt howe it can coome to passe, that in soo little a space of three dayes iourney, measuryng from the hygh topes of those mountaynes, I doo not vnderstande howe soo many and soo great ryuers, may haue recourse into this north sea. For it is to bee thought that as many doo flowe toward the inhabitants of the southe, These ryuers of *Araba* are but smalle, in comparison of many other in those coastes. For the

The ryuers  
springe out  
of the mount-  
taines

Crocodiles en-  
gendred in o-  
ther ryuers  
besyde Nilus  
in Egypte.

Byrdes and  
foules.

poppingayes.

A philosophi-  
cal discourse  
as concerning  
the originall of  
springes and  
ryuers.

The breadth  
of the lande  
at *Uraba*, frō  
the North O-  
cean to the  
South sea.

## The seconde decade.

A ryuer of  
maruelous  
hyggenes  
like the first  
decade the  
ix. boke.

The great ry  
uer Maragno  
nus. liber. ix.  
decade. ii.  
Mariatambal.  
Camamorus.  
Paricora.

Paradise.  
Looke. vi. boke  
first decade.

The sea.

The land en-  
closed with  
two seas.

Spanyarden say, that in the tyme of *Colonus*, they founde and passed by an other ryuer after this, whose goulfe faulynge in to the sea, they affirme to bee lytle lesse then a hundred myles in the fyrste coastes of *Paria*, as wee haue sayde elsewhere. For they saye that it fauleth from the toppes of hyghe mountaynes with soo swifte and furious a course, that by the violence and grearnes therof, it dyspueth backe the sea althowgh it bee towghe and enforced with a contrary wynde. They all affirme lykelysse, that in all the large tracte therof, they felt noo sower or salte water, but that all the water was freshe, swete, and apte to bee dyoonke. Thynhabitanes caule this ryuer *Maragnonum*: And the regions adiacent to the same, *Mariatambal*, *Camamorus*, and *Paricora*. Welsyde those ryuers whiche I haue named before, as *Darien*, *Grandis*, *Dabiba*, *Beragua*, *Santi Mathei*, *Boius gatti*, *Delagartos*, & *Gaira*, they whiche of late haue searched those coastes, haue founde many other. Deliberaringe therfore with my selfe, from whence these mountaynes beinge soo narowe and nere vnto the sea on bothe sydes, haue such great holowe caues or denues of suche capacite, and from whence they are fylled to cast forth such abundance of water, herof also askynge them the opinions of the inhabitantes, they affirme them to bee of dyuers iudgements herein: Alleagynge fyrst the greatnes of the mountaynes to bee the cause, whiche they say to bee very hygh, which thynge also *Colonus* the first fynder therof affirmeth to bee trewe: Adding there vnto that the Paradise of pleasure is in the toppes of those mountaynes whiche appeare from the goulfe of *Paria* and *Or Draconis*, as he is fully perswaded. They agree therfore that there is greates caues within these mountaynes: but it resteth to consyder fro whence they are fylled. If therfore all the ryuers of freshe waters by thoppinion of manye, do soo flowe owte of the sea as dysuen and compelled throughte the passages or pyses of the earth by the ponderous weyght of the sea it selfe, as wee see them breake furth of the spynges and directe their course to the sea ageyne, then the thynge is leste to bee marueyled at here then in other places. For wee haue not redde that in any other place twoo such seas haue enuironed any lande with soo narowe lymittes. For it hath on the right syde, the great Ocean where the sonne goeth downe on the leste hande: And an other on the other syde where the sonne ryseth, nothynge inferioure

inferioure to the fyrt in greatenes, for they suppose it to bee myrrie and topned as all one with the sea of East India.

This lande therefore being burdened with so great a weight on the one syde and on the other (yf this opinion bee of anye value) is enforced to swalowe by such deuoured waters, and ageyne to cast forth the same in open springes and streames. But if wee shall denye that the earth draweth humours of the sea, and agree that all fountaynes or springes are engendered of the conuersion or turnynge of ayer into water distilling within the holowe places of the mountaynes (as the most part thinke) we will gyue place rather to thautozitie of them whiche specke to those reasons, then that oovre sense is satisfiied of the full truth therof. Yet doo I not repugne that in some caues of mountaynes, water is turned into ayer. For I my selfe haue seene, home in the caues of manye mountaynes in Spayne, in maner howers of rayne doo faule continually: And that the water gathered by this meanes, doth send furth certeyne ryuers by the sydes of the mountaynes, wherewith all suche trees as are planted on the siepe or foote of the mountaynes, as vines, Oliue trees, and suche other, are watered. And this especially in one place: As the ryght honorable Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie moste obsequious to yovre holynes, and thoo other byshoppes of Italy, wherof the one is *Siluius Pandonus*, and the other an Archebysshop (whose name and tyle I doo not remember) can beare me wytnes. For whē wee were togyther at *Granata*, lately deliuered from the domination of the Moores, and walked for oovre pastyme to certeine pleasaunte hylles (by the whiche there ranne a fayre ryuer) Whyls Cardinall Lodouike occupied hym selfe in shurynge at byrdes whiche were in the bushes nere vnto the ryuer, I and the other thoo byshoppes determined to clyme the mountaynes to searche the originall and springe of the ryuer: for wee were not farre from the toppes thereof. Folowynge therefore the couree of the ryuer, wee founde a greate caue in which was a continuall faule of water as it had byn a howse of rayne: the water wherof, faulynge into a trenche made with mans hand, encreaseth to a ryuer, and runneth downe by the sydes of the mountaynes. The lyke is also scene in this famous towne of *Villadoleta* (where we nowe liuozne) in a certeyne greene cloze, not pass a furlonge distant from the wailes of the towne. I

Conuersion of  
ayer into wa-  
ter in the ca-  
ues of moun-  
taynes.

Showers of  
rayne in the  
caues of moun-  
taynes

grauns

## The seconde deca de.

The often fall  
of raine and  
continuall  
sprynge time.

The Equinoctiall.

The pores of  
the sea & the  
South wynde.

Nothinge im-  
possible to  
the poure of  
nature.

The cause of  
the greatnes  
and force of  
the goulfe.

hygh and  
steepe hylles.

graunte therfore that in certeyne places. by conuersion of the  
ayrie dewe into water within the caues of suche mountaynes,  
many sprynges and ryuers are engendred. But I suppose that  
nature was not sollicite to byynge furthe suche greate fluds  
by this so swaile industry. Twoo seasons therfore, do sound  
beste to my iudgement: wherof the one is, the often faule of  
rayne: The other, the continuall autumnne or sprynge tyme  
which is in those regions beinge soo nere vnto the Equinocti-  
al that the common people can perceaue no difference betwene  
the length of the day and the night throught out al the yeare  
whereas these twoo seasons are more apte to engender abun-  
dance of rayne then eyther extreme wynter or feruent summer.  
An other reason in effect much lyke vnto the first, is this: If  
the sea bee full of pores, and that by the pores therof beinge  
opened by the Southe wyndes, wee shal consent that vapours  
are lyfted vp wherof the watery cloudes are engendred, this  
lande must needes bee moysted with moore shoures then anye o-  
ther: yf it bee as narrowe as they saye, and enuironed with  
twoo mayne seas collaterally beatinge on the same. Howe so  
euer it be: I can not but gyue credit to the report of such wor-  
thy men as haue recourse to those regions: And can noo lesse  
then declare the same albeit it may seeme incredible to sume ig-  
norant persons not knowynge the poure of nature to whome  
Plinie was perswaded that nothyng was impossible. Wee  
haue therfore thought it good to make this discourse by the  
way of argument, least on the one syde, men of good lernynge  
and iudgement, and on the other syde, suche as are studious  
to fynde occasions of quarelyng in other mens wyprynges,  
shulde iudge vs to bee so vndescreete lyghely to gyue creditte  
to euery tale not beinge consonant to reason. But of the force  
and greate violence of those freshe waters, which repulunge  
the sea make so greate a goulfe (as wee haue sayde) I thinke  
the cause therof to bee the greate multitude of fluddes and ry-  
uers, which beinge gathered together, make so great a poole:  
and not one ryuer as they suppose. And for as muche as the  
mountaynes are exceedynge hygh and steepe, I thinke the vi-  
olence of the faule of the waters to be of such force, that this  
conducte betwene the waters, is caused by thimpulsion of the  
poole that the salte water can not enter into the goulfe. But  
here perhappes sume wyl marueyle at me why I shulde mar-  
ueyle

people soo muche hereat, speakynge vnto me scornefully after this manner. Why dothe he soo marueyle at the greate ryuers of these Regions? Hath not Italye his *Eridanus*, named the kyng of ryuers of the owlde wyters? Haue not other regions also the lyke? as wee reede of *Tanis*, *Ganges*, and *Danubius*, which are sayde soo to ouercoome the sea, that freshe water may bee drawne fortie myles within the same. These menne I wolde satisfie with this answer. The famous ryuer of *Padus* in Italye (whiche they nowe caule *Po*, and was of the Grekes cauled *Eridanus*) hath the greate mountaynes cauled *Alpes* diuindinge Fraunce, Germanie, and Dannonie from Italye, lyinge at the backe therof as it were bulwarges full of moysture: And with a longe tracte receauinge *Ticinum* with innumerable other great ryuers, fauleth into the sea *Adriatique*. The lyke is also to bee vnderstode of the other. But these ryuers (as olde men were enformed by the kynges) faul into the Ocean sea with larger and fuller chanelles nere hand. And sume there are which firme this lande to bee very large in other places althowgh it bee but narrowe here. There cometh also to my remembrance an other cause: the whiche althowgh it bee of no greate force, yet doo I entende to wyte it. Perhapses therfore the length of the lande reachyng far from the East to the weste, if it bee narrowe, may bee a helpe hereunto. For as wee reade that the ryuer *Alpheus* passeth through the holowe places vnder the sea from the citie of *Elis* in *Peloponeso*, and breaketh forth at the fountayne or sprynge *Arethusa* in the Iland of *Sicilia*, so is it possible that these mountaynes may haue suche longe caues pertynyng vnto them, that they may be the receptacles of the water passing through the landes beinge farre distante: And that the same waters commynge by soo longe a tracte, may in the way bee greatlye encreased by the conuersion of ayer into water, as wee haue sayde. Thus muche haue I spoken freely, permittynge bothe to them whiche doo frendely interpret other mens doinges, and also to the malicious scorner, to take the thyng euen as them lysth. For hether to I can make no further declaration hereof. But why the truch shalbe better knowe, I wyl do my diligence to commit the same to wyryng. Nowe therfore, forasmuche as we haue spoken thus muche of the breadth of this land, we entred to describe the length & forme of the same.

The fludde  
*Eridanus*.

*Tanis*.

*Ganges*.

*Danubius*.

*Padus*.

*Alpes*.

*Ticinum*.

The sea *Adriatique*, sume caule the gonne of *Venes*.

An other reason

The ryuer  
*Alpheus*.

*Arethusa*.

Longe caues in the mountaynes.

## The seconde decade.

### The tenth booke of the seconde Decade, of the supposed Continent.

The length  
and forme of  
the Iland.  
Cap. 8. August.



Eyght tymes  
bygger then  
Italy beyde  
that part whi-  
che the Por-  
tugales possesse.  
Italy is  
in length a  
thousand and  
two hundred  
myles, and in  
breadth four  
hundred and  
ten.  
Cardes of  
the sea.

The carde of  
Americus  
Vesputius.

The carde of  
Colonus.

The carde of  
Johannes de  
la Cosa.

That lande reacheth forth into the sea even  
as doth Italy, althowgh not like the legge  
of a man as it doth. But I nowe compare a  
bigmean or a dwarfe to a giant. For that  
part therof which the Spaniards haue ouer-  
runne from the sayde Eastre point which reacheth  
towards the sea Atlantike (the ende  
not beinge yet founde towards the Weste) is more then eyght  
tymes longer then Italye. And by what reason I am moued  
to say eyght tymes, yowre holynes shall vnderstande. From  
the tyme therefore that I fyrste determined to obeye their re-  
questes who wylled me fyrste in yowre name to wyte these  
thynges in the laten tonge, I dyd my endeuour that al thin-  
ges myght coome forth with dewe repall and experience.  
Wherupon I repayred to the byhoppe of Burges beinge the  
chiefe refuge of this nauigation. As wee were therfore secret-  
ly togyther in one chamber, we had many instrumentes pertey-  
nyng to these assayres as globes and manye of those mappes  
which are commonly cauled the shipmans cardes, or cardes of  
the sea. Of the which, one was drawen by the Portugales,  
wherunto Americus Vesputius is sayde to haue put to his hande,  
beinge a man moste experte in this facultie and a florentyne  
borne: who also vnder the stipende of the Portugales, hadde  
sayled towards the south pole many degrees beyond the Equi-  
noctiall. In this carde we founde the fyrst front of this land  
to bee brooder then the kynges of Vraba had perswaded oore  
men of theyr mountaynes. To an other, Colonus the Admirall  
whyle he yet lyued and searched those places had gyuen the  
beginnyng with his owne handes: wherunto Bartholomeus Co-  
lonus his brother and Lieneraunt had addid his iudgement,  
for he also, had sayled aboute those coastes. Of the Spany-  
ardes lykelyste, as many as thought them selues to haue any  
knowledge whar perteyned to measure the lande and the sea,  
drew certeyne cardes in parchement as concernyng these na-  
uigations. Of all other, they most esteeme them which Iohan-  
nes de la Cosa the companion of Vesputius (whom wee sayde to bee  
a payne of the people of Caramari in the haueu Carthago,) and an  
other

other expert pylot cauled *Andreas Moralis*, had set forth. And this aswell for the greate experience which they bothe hadde (to whom these tracteres were as wel known as the chambers of theyr owne houses) as also that they were thought to bee cunninger in that parte of Cosmographie which teacheth the description and measuringe of the sea. Conferringe therefore all these cardes together, in euery of the whiche was drawn a lyne expresseinge, not the myles, but leagues after the maner of the Spanyarden, we tooke oure compases and beganne to measure the sea coastes after this order. From that poynt of fronte which we sayde to bee included within the lyne pertynyng to the Portugales iurisdiction, beinge drawn by the paralleles of the Ilandes of Cabouerde, but a hundred leagues further towarde the weste (which they haue nowe also learned on euery syde) we founde thre hundred leagues to the entrance of the ryuer *Maragnonum*: And from thence to *Os Draconis*, seuen hundred leagues: but somewhat lesse in the description of sume: For they doo not agree in al poyntes exquisite. The Spanyarden wyll that a league conteyne foure myles by sea and but thre by lande. From *Os Draconis*, to the cape or poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, which beinge passed, there is a goulfe on the lefte hande, we measured thre hundred leagues in one carde, and much thereabout in an other. From this poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, to the region of *Caramairi* in which is the haueu *Carthago* (which sum caule *Caribagena*) we found about a hundred and seuentie leagues. From *Caramairi* to the Ilande *Fortis*, fiftie leagues, from thence to the goulfes of *Vraba* amonge the which is the byllage cauled *Sancta Maria Antiqua* where the Spanyarden haue apoynted theyr habitacion, only xxxiii. leagues. From the ryuer of *Vraba* in the prouince of *Dariena* to the ryuer of *Beragua* where *Nicuesa* hadde intended to haue fastened his foote if god hadde not otherwyse decreed, we measured a hundred and thirtie leagues. Frome *Beragua* to that ryuer which wee sayde of *Colonus* to bee cauled *Sancti Mathei*, in the which also *Nicuesa* loosinge his carauell, wandered in greace calamities, we founde in oure cardes, onely a hundred and fortie leagues: yet many other which of late tyme haue come from these partes, haue describied many moe leagues in this tracte fro the ryuer of *Sancti Mathei*: In which also, they place byuers ryuers, as *Aburema* with the Ilande cauled *Scutum Cateba*

P. II,

lyng

The carde of  
*Andreas mor-  
alis*.

The maner  
of measuring  
the cardes.

Loke decade  
i. liber. lii.

The Iland of  
Cabouerde.

*Maragnonum*  
*Os Draconis*

A league.

*Cuchibacoa*.

*Caramairi*.

*Carthago*.

The Iland  
*Fortis*.

*Vraba*.

*Beragua*.

*R. Sancti Mat-  
thei*.

*R. Aburema*  
*Scutum Cateba*.

## The seconde decade.

R. Zobroba.

Vrida.

Duraba.

Corabaro.

Hiebra.

Note.

R. d. los perdidos

The nauigati  
on of Span-  
nes Dias.

The eleuati  
on of the pole.

The iurisdic-  
tion of the  
Portugales.

Paria.

Darlena.

Beragua.

Hercules pyl-  
lers.

lyinge before it, whose kynges name is *Faciès combusta*. Lyke:  
wise an other ryuer cauled *Zobroba*: after that, *Vrida*: and the  
*Duraba* in the which gold is founde. Furthermore, many good  
ly hauens, as *Corabaro* and *Hiebra*, soo cauled of their inhabitant-  
tes. And thus if yowre holynes wyll conserue these numbers  
together, yowre shall fynde in this accompte, a thousand fute  
hundredth twentie and fyue leagues, whiche amounte to fute  
thousande and seuen hundredth myles from the paynt of *Sancti*  
*Mathei*, which they caule *Sinum perditorum*: that is, the goulfe of  
the losse men. But we may not leane here. For after this, one  
*Asher Ouetensis*, otherwyse named *Iohannes Dñs do Solis*, bozne in *Ne-  
brissa* (which bringe h fourth many lerned men) saylinge frome  
this ryuer towarde the weste, ouer ranne many coastes & lea-  
gues: But the myddeste of that shore, bendethe towarde the  
North: And is not therefore directly placed in order with the  
other. yet may we gather by a diameter or ryght lyne, about  
thre hundredth leagues. Wherby maye yowre gather what is  
the length of this lande. But of the breadth, perhappes wee  
shall hereafter haue further knowleage. Let vs nowe speake  
sumwhat of the varietie of the degrees of the eleuation of the  
pole starres. This lande therefore, althowgh it reache fourth  
from the East into the Weste, yet is it crooked and hath the  
paynt bendynge so toward the South, that it loseth the sight  
of the North pole, and is extendend beyonde the Equinoctial  
lyne seven degrees toward the South pole. But the paynt  
herof, pertyneth to the iurisdiction of the Portugales as we  
haue sayde. Leauinge this paynt and saylinge toward *Paria*  
the north starre is seene ageyne, and is so much the more lyf-  
ted vp, in howe much the region enclyneth more toward the  
Weste. The Spanyardes therefore, haue dyuers degrees of ele-  
uations, vntill they come to *Dariena* beinge their chiefe station  
and dwellinge place in those landes. For they haue forsaken  
*Beragua*, where they found the North pole eleuate. viii. degrees  
But from hence the lande doth soo muche bende toward the  
North, that it is there in maner equall with the degrees of  
the straghtes of *Hercules pylles*: especially yf wee measure  
certeyne landes founde by them toward the North syde of  
*Hispaniola*. Amonge the which, there is an Ilande, about thre  
hundredth and .xxv. leagues from *Hispaniola*, as they say whiche  
haue searched the same, named *Boiue* or *Agnameo*, in the which

is a continual springe of runnyng water of such maruelous  
vertue, that the water thereof beinge dronke, perhappes with  
some dyete, maketh olde men younge ageyne. And here must  
I make protestacion to powre holynes, not to thynke this to  
bee sayde lightly or rashely. For they haue soe spreadde this  
rumour for a truth througheout all the coure, that not onely  
all the people, but also many of them whom wisdom or for-  
tune hath diuided from the common sort, thinke it to be true.  
But if youe shal aske my opinion herein, I wyl answere that  
I wyl not attribute so greate poure to nature: but that god  
hath noo lesse reserved this prerogative to hym selfe, then to  
searche the hartes of men, or to geue substance to pitiacion,  
(that is) beinge to noo beinge: Excepte we shal beleue the fa-  
ble of Colchis of Esou renouate, to bee as true as the myr-  
rages of Sybilla Erythraea. Albeit perhappes the scoles of physicians  
and naturall philosophers wyl not muche aspyre to affirme  
that by thuse of certeyne secrete medecines and dyete, the ac-  
cidentes of age (as they cause them) may be longe hydden and  
deferred, which they wyl to bee vnderstoode, by the renoua-  
cion of age. And to haue sayde this much of the length and  
breadthe of these Regions, and of the towgh and hugiolis  
mountaynes with theyr watery cautes, also of the dyuers de-  
grees of that lande, I thinke is sufficient. But I thowght it  
not good to let passe what chaunced to these miserable men  
amonge theyr generall calamities. I remember that when I  
was a chyld, mee thowght my bewelles grated and that my  
spirites were maruelously troubled for verie pite, when I  
readge in the poe: Virgyl howe Achemenides was leste of Vlysses  
vpon the sea bankes amonge the giantes cauled Cyclopes where  
for the space of many dayes from the departinge of Vl'ss vntyl  
the comynge of Eneas he eate none other meate but only  
berryes and hawes. But owre vnfortunate Spanyardes whi  
che folowed Nicolsa to inhabite Beragua, wolde haue eate  
hawes and berryes for greate delicates. What shulde I here  
sprake of the heade of an asse bowght for a greate price, and  
of such other extremities as men haue suffered in toynes be-  
seaged? After that Nicolsa hadde determyned to leane Beragua  
for the barrennes of the soyle, he attempted to searche Portum  
Bellum, and then the coastes of the poynt cauled Marmor, if he  
myght there fynde a place more fortunate to inhabite. In this  
meane

The Glande  
Souca or  
Agnaeo.

A water of  
maruelous  
vertue.

The renoua-  
cion of age.

The accidens  
tes of age  
may bee hyd-  
den.

Achemenides,  
Vlysses.  
Eneas.

Extreme hun-  
ger.

This was at  
the sieg of  
Ierusalem.  
Portus Bellus  
Marmor.

## The seconde decade.

**Mangy dogs  
eaten.**

**A mangy dog  
were sold.**

**Booth of a  
mangy dogs  
skynne.**

**Toades eatē**

**A deade man  
eaten.**

meane tyme, so greuous famen oppressed his souldiers, that they neyther absteyned from eatinge of mangie dogges which they had with them as well for theyr defence as for huntyng (for in the warre ageynst the naked people, dogges stode the in greare steade) nor yet sumtymes from the slayne inhabitantes. For they founde not there any frutfull trees or plentie of foules as in *Dariena*, but a barren grounde and not meete to bee inhabited. Here certeyne of the souldiers made a bargein with one of theyr felowes for the price of a leane dogge, who also was almoste deade for hunger: They gaue the owner of the dogge many of those pieces of golde which they caule *Pesos* or golden Castellans. Thus agreinge of the price, they fleid the dogge to bee eaten, and caste his mangie skynne with the bones of the heade hangyng therro, amonge the bushes. The day folowynge, a certeyne footman of theyr company, chaunced to fynde the skynne beinge now full of maggottes and synkynge. He brought it home with hym, sodde it, and ate it. Many resorted to hym with theyr dysshes for the brothe of the sodde skynne, proferinge hym for euery dysshfull a piece of golde. An other founde twoo roades and sodde them which a sicke man bought of hym for twoo fyne Hertes curiously wrought of lyncen intermyxt with golde. Certeyn other wanderynge abowte to seeke for bytayles, founde in a patheway in the myddest of a fælde, a deade man of thynhabitantes whiche had byn slayne of his owne coompanye and was now rotten and synkynge. They drewe hym a fyde, dismembred hym secretly, roasted hym and ate hym, therewithal swagynge theyr hunger as yf they had byn fedde with pheasauntes. One also, which departinge from his companions in the nyght season, went a fyshyng amonge the reedes of the maryshes, lyued only with slyme or mudde for the space of certeyne dayes, untill at the lengthe creepinge and almoste deade, he founde the way to his felowes. And thus these miserable men of *Beragua* vered with these and suche other afflictions, were broughte from the number of seven hundred thre scoze & ten souldiers, scarcely to fortie, beinge now also added to the coompany of them in *Dariena*. Fewe were slayne of thynhabitantes. But the resydew consumed by famen, breathed out theyr wery soules, openyng a waye to the newe landes for such as shal coome after them, appeasinge the fury of

of the barbarous nations, with the price of theyr bludde. *Note.*

syderinge therfore after these stormes, with what ease other men shall oucrumme and inhabite these landes, in respecte to the calamities that these men haue suffered, they shall seeme to goo to bryde feastes where all thynges are redy prepared agaynst their commynge. But where *Petrus Arias* arryued with the kynges nauie and newe supply of men, to this houre I knowe no certentie. What shall chaunce hereafter

*Petrus Arias*  
whom the  
Spanyarde  
caule *pediari*  
89.

I wyll make diligente inquisition if I shall vnderstande this to bee acceptable to yowre holynes.

Thus I byd yowre hartely farewell: from the court of the mooste Catholyke kyng,

the daye beefore the nones of  
December, in the yeaere of  
Christe, M. D.

XIIII.

The fyrst booke of the thyrde Decade, to the  
byshoppe of Rome Leo the tenth.



Was determynd (mooste holye father) to haue closed vp the gates to this newe worlde, supposinge that I had wandered farre enowgh in the coastes therof, while in the meane time newe letters were brought me frome thence, which caused me ageyne to take my penne in hande. For I receaued letters not only from

certeyne of myne acquaintance there, but also frome *Vaschus Nunnez* whome we sayde by the confidence of his owne poure with his confertherates, to haue vsurped the gouernaunce of *Dariena* after the reiecting of *Nicusu* and *Ancisus* Lieutenantes. By his letter wyrtten after his warlyke maner, wee vnderstand that he hath passed ouer the mountaynes, diuidyng the Ocean knowne to vs, from the other mayne sea on the south syde of this lande heretto vnknewen. His epistell is greater then that cauled *Capreensis de Selano*. But wee haue gathered out of that and other, onely suche thynges as we thowght mooste woorthy to bee noted. *Vaschus* soo behaued hym selfe in these affayres, that he dyd not onely pacifie the kynges displeasure

conceaued

*Vaschus Nunnez*, gouernour of *Dariena*.

The newe  
south Ocean.

concealed ageynst hym, but also made hym so favorable and gracious good lord towarde hym, that he rewarded him and his companions with many honorable gyftes and privileges for theyr attempts. Wherefore I desyre youre holynes to in chyne youre attentive eares, and to consyder with a ioyfull mynde what they have brought to passe in these great enterpryses. For this valiant nation (the Spaniards I meane) haue not onely with greate paynes and innumerable dangers subdued to the Christian empire, infinite hundredes and legions, but also myriades of men. *Vaschus Nuñez* therfore, whether it were that he was impatient of Idleness (for a valiente mynde can not rest in one place or bee vncoccupied) or leasse any other shulde pzenent hym in so great a matter (suspecting the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias*) or being moued by both these causes, and especially for that the kynge had taken displeasure with hym for such thynges as he had doone before, toke thadventure vppon hym with a fewe men to bynge that to passe which the sonne of kynge *Comogrus* thought could hardly haue hym doone with the ayde of a thousande men, wherof *Petrus Arias* was appoynted capitayne for the same purpose. Aftersemblynge therfore certeyne of the owlde souldiers of *Dariens*, and many of those whiche came lately from *Hispaniola*, allured by the fame of greater plentie of golde, he gathered an armie of a hundredeth fourescore and tenne men. Thus beinge furnished and redie to take his bypage by sea, whyle the wynde serued hym, he departed from *Dariens* with one bygantyne and tenne of theyr boates whiche they caule *Capoas* as wee haue sayde. First therfore arryvinge in the dominion of *Careta* kynge of *Coiba* and frende to the Christians, and leaſynge his shyppe and boates there, he made his deuout prayers to almyghtie god, and therewith went forwarde on his iourney by lande toward the mountaynes. Here he first entered into the region of kynge *Poncha*, who fledde at his commyng as he had doone before. But *Vaschus* sent messengers to hym by the conduct of certeyne of *Careta* his men, promysinge hym frendship and defence ageynst his enemies, with many other benefites. *Poncha* thus entyled with the sayre speache and frendely proffers bothe of ower men and of the *Caretans*, came to ower men gladly and wyllingely made kynge a league of frendshippe with them. *Vaschus* receyved hym very frendely, and periuaded him

Commendation of the Spaniards.

A valient mynde can not bee ydle.

A desperate aduenture

Vaschus his viage toward the golden mountaynes.

Careta kynge of Coiba

kyng Poncha

hym neuer thereafter to stande in feare. Thus they ioyned handes, embrazed, and gaue greate gyftes the one to the other to knytte by the knotte of continuall amitie. *Poncha* gaue *Vaschus* a hundredth and ten poundes weyght of golde, of that pounde which the Spanyardes caule *Pesum*. He had no greater plentie of golde at this tyme, by reason he was spoyled the yeaere before as we haue sayde. *Vaschus* to recompence one benefyte with an other, gaue hym certeyne of othere thynges, as counterfet rynges, Christall stones, copper cheynes & brasse lettres, haukes belles, lokynge glasses, and suche other fyne stuffe. These thynges they set much by and greatly esteeme. For suche thynges as are straunge, are euery where counted precious. He gaue also to *Poncha* certeyne axes to fell trees: which he accepted as a princely gyfte, bycause they lacke Iron and all other metals except golde: by reason wherof they are enforced with greate labour to cut theyr trees to buylde theyr houses, and especially to make theyr boates holowe withowte instrumentes of Iron, with certeyne sharpe stones whiche they fynde in the ryuers. Thus *Vaschus* leauynge all thynges in safetie behynde hym, marched forwarde with his armye towarde the mountaynes, by the conductre of certeyne guydes and labourers which *Poncha* had gyuen hym, as well to leade hym the way, as also to cary his baggages and open the straighes throught the desolate places and craggy rockes full of the dennes of wylde beastes. For there is selldoome encounter of byinge and sellynge betwene these naked people, bycause they stand in neede of fewe thynges and haue not the vse of money. But yf at any tyme they exercise any bartering they doo it but nere hande, exchanginge golde for household stuffe with theyr confynes whiche somewhat esteeme the same for oznamente when it is brought. Other superfluities they utterly contemne, as hynderances of theyr sweere libertie, for asmuch as they are gyuen only to play and Idelnes. And for this cause, the high wayes which lye betwene theyr regions are not much woyned with many iorneyes. Yet haue theyr scoutes certeyne priuie markes wherby they knowe the waye the one to inuade the others dominions, and spoyle and infeste them felues on bothe sydes with mutual incursions priuie in the nyght season. By the helpe therfore of theyr guydes and labourers, with othere carpenters, he passed ouer the horrible

A hundredth & 10. poundes weyght of golde.

Strange thinges are counted precious.

Lacke of Iron

A stone in the fcedde of Ire.

Superfluities hynder libertie.

Carpenters,

## The thyerde decade.

**Bydges.**

**The region  
of Quarequa.**

**kyng Quare-  
qua is dyuen  
to flyght.**

**hargabusties.**

**Crossebowes**

**W.C. Barbari  
aus are slaine**

**unnatural le-  
chery.**

mountaynes and many greate ryuers lyeinge in the way, ouer the which he made bydges eyther with pylles or trunks of trees. And here doo I let passe many thynges whiche they suffered for lacke of necessities, beinge also in maner ouercome with extreme laboure, leaste I shulde bee tedious in reherlinge thynges of smaule value. But I haue thought it good not to omitte suche doinges as he had with the kynges by the waye. Therefore or euer he came to the toppes of the hygh mountaynes, he entered into a Region cauled *Quarequa*, and mette with the kyng thereof cauled by the same name, with a greate bande of men armed after theyr maner, as with bowes and arrowes, longe and brode two handed swordes made of wodde, longe staues hardened at the endes with fyre, dartes also and spynges. He came proudly and cruelly agaynste owre men, and sent messengers to them to byd theym stande and procede no further: demaundynge whyther they went and what they hadde to doo there. Herewith he came forth and shewed hym selfe beinge appareled with al his nobilitie: but the other were all naked. Then approachinge towarde owre men, he thretened the with a lions countenance to depart from thense except they wolde bee slayne euery mothers sonne. When owre men denyed that they wolde goe backe, he assayed them fiercely. But the battayle was soonelynished. For as soone as they harde the noyse of the hargabusties, they beleued that owre menne carped thunder and lyghtenynge about with them. Many also beinge slayne and sore wounded with quarels of crossebowes, they turned their hackes and fledde. Owre men folowynge them in the chase, helmed them in pices as the butchers doo slethe in the shambelles, from one an arme, from an other a legge, from hym a buttocke, from an other a shulder, and from sume the necke from the bodye at one stroke. Thus, fyre hundred of them with theyr kyng, were slayne lyke brute beastes. *Vaschus* founde the house of this kyng infected with most abhominable and vnnaturall lechery. For he founde the kynges brother and many other younge men in womens apparell, smother & effeminately decked, which by the report of such as dwelte aboute hym, he abused with preposterous Venus. Of these aboute the number of fortie, he commaunded to bee gyue for a pray to his dogges, for (as we haue sayd) the Spaniardes

hfe

Whe he helpe of dogges in their warres ageynst the naked people whom they inuade as fiercely and rauenyngely as yf they were wyld boares or hartes. In soo muche that oovre Sparyardes haue founde theyr dogges noo lesse faythful to them in all daungious and enterpyles, then dyd the Colophonians or Cassabalentis which instituted hole armies of dogges soo made to serue in the warres, that beinge accustomed to place them in the fore froonte of the battayles, they neuer shrunke or gaue backe. When the people had harde of the seruere punishment which olov men had executed vpon that fylthy kynde of men, they resorted to them as it had byn to Hercules for refuge, by violence bryngyng with them al such as they knewe to bee infected with that pestilence, spetrynge in theyr faces and crynge olov to olov men to take reuenge of them and rydde them olov of the worlde from amonge me as contagious beastes. This stinkyng abomination hadde not yet entered amonge the people, but was exercised onely by the noble men and gentlemen. But the people lyftinge byp theyr handes and eyes toward heauen, gaue tokens that god was greuously offended with such vyle deedes. Affirmynge this to bee the cause of theyr soo many thunderinges, lyghtnyng, and tempestes wherwith they are soo often troublede: And of the ouerflowinge of waters which drowne theyr sets and frutes, whereof famenne and dyuers diseases insue, as they simple and faythfully beleue, although they knowe none other god then the soonne, whom onely they honoure, thynkyng that it dooth bothe geue and take awaye as it is pleased or offended. yet are they very docible, and easye to bee allured to olov customes and religion, if they had any teachers. In theyr language there is nothyng vnpleasaunte to the eare or harde to bee pronounced, but that all theyr wordes may bee wyrtten with latin letters as wee sayde of the inhabitants of Hispaniola. It is a warlyke nation, & hath byn euer hetherto molestous to theyr borderers. But the region is not fortunat with fruitful ground or plentie of gold. yet is it full of greate barren mountaynes beinge somewhat colde by reason of theyr heyght. And therfore the noble men and gentlemen are apparelled. But the common people lyue content onely with the benefytes of nature. There is a region not past two dayes iourney distant from Quarequa, in which

The vse of dogges in the warre agens the naked Barbarians.

Natural hatred of vnnatural sinne.

Palatine.

I wolde all men were of this opinion.

The harness is great & the workemen but fewe.

warrelyke people.

The bysher the colder.

## The seconde decade.

A region of  
black moores

Diseases of  
change of  
ayer & dyet.

The south  
sea.

Vaschus is  
coome to the  
syght of the  
newe south  
sea.

Prayer.

God rayseth  
the poore fro  
the dungehyll

they founde only blacke Moores: and those exceedinge fierce and cruell. They suppose that in tyme paste certeyne blacke mores sayled thither out of Aethiopia to robbe: & that by shipwracke or some other chaunce, they were dyuen to those mountaynes. Whinhabitantes of Quarequa lyue in continuall warre and debate with these blacke men. Here Vaschus leuynge in Quarequa many of his souldiers (which by reason they were not yet accustomed to such crannyles and hunger, fell into dyuers diseases) took with hym certeyne guydes of the Quarequatans to conduct hym to the toppes of the mountaynes. From the palaice of kynge Poncha, to the prospect of the other south sea, is only fyre dayes iorney: the which neuerthelesse by reason of many hynderances and chaunces, and especially for lacke of bytayles, he could accomply he in noo leste then xxx. dayes. But at the length, the seuench daye of the calendes of October, he behelde with woondertinge eyes the toppes of the hygh mountaynes shewed vnto hym by the guydes of Quarequa, from the whiche he myght see the other sea soo longe looked for, and neuer seene before of any man comynge oute of owre worlde. Approchinge therefore to the toppes of the mountaynes, he commaunded his armye to slepe, and went him selfe alone to the toppe, as it were to take the fyrst possession thereof. Where, faulynge prostrate vppon the grounde, and rayfynge hym selfe ageyne vpon his knees as is the maner of the Christians to pray, lyfeynge vppon his eyes and handes towardes heauen, and directinge his face towardes the newe founde south sea, he prayed forth his humble and deuout prayers before almyghthe God as a spirituall sacrifice with thanks gnyng, that it had pleased his diuine maiestie to reserue vnto that day the victorie and praisse of to greate a thyng vnto hym, beinge a man but of smaule witte and knowleage, of lytle experience and base parentage. When he had thus made his prayers after his warlike maner he beckened with his hande to his companions to coome to hym, shewynge them the greate mayne sea heretofore vnkno: wen to thinhabitantes of Europe, Aphrike, and Asia. Here ageyne he fell to his prayers as before: desyrynge almyghthe God and the blessed virgyn to fauour his beginnynges, and to geue hym good successe to subdue those landes to the glorie of his haly name and encrease of his crewe religion. All his companions

companions dyd lyke wyse, and praysed god with loude voyces for ioye. Then *Vaschus*, with no lesse manlye corage then Hanniball of Carthage bewed his souldiers Italye and the promontories of the Alpes, exhorted his men to lyft vp their harres, and to behoulde the lande euen now under theyr feete, and the sea before theyr eyes, whiche shulde bee vnto them a full and iust rewarde of theyr great laboures and traualles now ouerpassed. When he had sayde these wordes, he commaunded them to raise certeine heapes of stones in the neede of alters for a token of possession. Then descendynge from the toppes of the mountaynes, least such as might come after hym shulde argue hym of lpyng or falschod, he wrote the kynge of Castelles name here and there on the barkes of the trees bothe on the ryght hande and on the left: and raysed heapes of stones all the way that he went, vntyll he came to the region of the nerre kynge towarde the south whose name was *Chiapas*. This kynge came forth agaynst hym with a greate multitude of men: threathenynge and forbyddynge him not onely to passe through his dominions, but also to goo no further. Wherevpon, *Vaschus* set his battayle in array, and exhorted his men (beinge now but fewe) fiercely to assaile theyr enemies, and to esteeme theym noo better then dogges meate as they shulde bee. Wherby, placinge therfore the harbagabuliers and masties in the forefront, they saluted kynge *Chiapas* and his men with such a larome, that when they hard the noyse of the gunnes, sawe the flames of fyre, and smelte the sauer of byrnstone (for the wynde blew towards them) they droue them selues to dyght with suche feare leasse than derboultes and lyghtnynges folowed them, that manye fell downe to the grounde: whom othere men pursuynge, kepte theyr order, and after breakynge theyr array, stode but felde andooke many captiue. For they determined to use no extremitie, but to pacifie those Regions as quietly as they myght. Enterynge therefore into the palace of kynge *Chiapas*, *Vaschus* commaunded many of the captiues to bee loosed: wyllynge them to search othere theyr kynge, and to exhorte hym to coome thither: And that in soo doynge, he wolde bee his frende and profer hym peace, besyde many other benefites. But if he refused to coome, it shulde turne to the destruction of hym and his, and vnto subuersion of his country. And

Hanniball of Carthage.

*Vaschus* taketh possession of the mountaynes

kynge *Chiapas*.

A battayle.

*Chiapas* is drouen to flight.

*Vaschus* sendeth for kynge *Chiapas*.

that

## The thyrde decade.

that they myght the more assuredly do this message to Chiapes he sent with them certeyne of the gypdes whiche came with hym from Quarequa.

Chiapes sub-  
mitteth hym  
selfe to Vas-  
chus.

liti. C. pounds  
weyght of  
wrought gold

Vaschus ad-  
dicteth the  
newe land &  
sea, to the do-  
minion of  
Castile.

kyng Coque-  
ra is dyuen  
to flyghy.

Vaschus  
wyllyth both  
gentelnes  
and rigour.

Thus Chiapes beinge perswaded aswel by the Quareqans who coude coniecture to what ende the matter woold coome by therperience whiche they had scene in them selues and theyr kyng, as also by the reasons of his owne men to whome Vaschus hadde made soo frendely promyses in his behalfe, came forth of the caues in the whiche he lurked, and submytted hym selfe to Vaschus, who accepted hym frendely. They ioy- ned handes, embrased the one the other, made a perpetuall league of frendshippe, and gaue greate rewardes on bothe sydes. Chiapes gaue Vaschus foure hundred pounds weyght of wrought goulde of those poundes whiche they caule Pesos: And Vaschus recompensed hym ageyne with certeyne of owre thynges. Thus beinge made frendes, they remayned togy- ther a fewe dayes untill Vaschus souldiers were coome whiche he lefte behynde hym in Quarequa. Then caulinge vnto hym the gypdes and labourers whiche came with hym from thence he rewarded them liberallye and dismissed theym with than- kes. Shortly after, by the conduct of Chiapes hym selfe, and certeyne of his men, departinge from the toppes of the moun- taynes, he came in the space of foure dayes to the bankes of the newe sea: where assemblynge al his men togyther with the kynges scribes and notaries, they addicted al that maine sea with all the landes adiacent there vnto to the dominion and Empire of Castile. Here he left part of his souldiers with Chiapes that he myght theseler seache those coastes. And ta- kyng with hym nyne of theyr lyghters made of one hote tree (whiche they caule Culobas as thynhabitanres of Hispaniola caul them Canoas) and also a bande of fourescore men with certeyne of Chiapes men, he passed ouer a greate ryuer and came to the region of a certeyne kyng whose name was Coquera. He at- tempted to relyse owre men as dyd the other, and with lyke successe: for he was ouercoome and put to flyghy. But Vaschus who intended to wyne hym with gentelnes, sente certeyne Chiapeans to him to declare the greate poure of owre menne: howe inuincible they were: howe mercifull to such as submit them selues, also cruell and seuer to such as obstinately with- stande them, promysinge hym further moze, that by the fred-  
hym

Shippe of oore men, he myght bee well assured by the example  
of other, not onely to lyue in peace and quietnes hym selfe,  
but also to bee reuenged of thiniuries of his enemies. Wyllyng  
hym in conclusion soo to weigli the matter, that if he refused  
this gentelnes profered vnto hym by soo greate a victourer,  
he shulde or it were longe, lerne by feelynge to repent him to  
late of that perel which he myght haue auoyded by hearing.  
Coquera with these woordes and examples, shaken with great  
feare, came gladly with the messengers, byngyng with him  
fyre hundred & .l. Pesos of wrought gold, which he gaue vnto  
oore men. Vascbus rewarded hym lykewise as we sayd before  
of Poncha, Coquera beinge thus pacified, they returned to the  
palaice of Chiapes. Where, visitinge theyr companions, and re  
styng there a whyle, Vascbus determyned to search the nexte  
greate goulfe, the which, from the furthest reachyng the of  
into the lande of theyr countreys, from the enteraunce of the  
mayne sea, they saye to bee threescore myles. This they na  
med saynt Mychaeld goulfe, which they say to bee full of in  
habited Ilandes and hugions rockes. Enteringe therefore  
into the nyne boates or Culchas wherwith he passed ouer the  
ryuer before, hauinge also with hym the same coompanye of  
fourrescore hole men, he wente forwarde on his purpose, al  
though he were greatly dissuaded by Chiapes, who ernestly de  
syred hym not to attempt that vyage at that tyme, affirming  
the goulfe to be soo tempestious and stormy three moonethes  
in the yeare, that the sea was there by noo meanes nauigable:  
And that he had scene many Culchas deuoured of whirlepoles  
euen beefore his eyes. But inuincible Vascbus, impaciente of  
idleness, and boyde of all feare in goddes cause, answered  
that god and his holy sayntes wolde prosper his enterpry  
ses in this case, forasmuche as the matter touched God and  
the defence of the Christian religion, for the mayntenaunce  
wherof it shulde bee necessarie to haue great abundance of ry  
ches & treasure as the synelwes of war ageynste the enemies  
of the faythe. Thus vsinge also thoffice both of an oratoure  
and preacher, and hauinge perswaded his coompanyons, he  
lanched from the lande. But Chiapes, least Vascbus shulde any  
thyng doubt of his faythfulnes towarde hym, profered him  
selfe to goo with hym whither soo euer he went: And wolde  
by noo meanes assent that Vascbus shulde depart from his pa  
arose

vi. C. and .l.  
poundes  
weyght of  
wrought gold

A goulfe of  
threescore  
myles.

Saynt Micha  
els goulfe

The manly  
corage and  
godly zeale of  
Vascbus

Rychesare  
the synewe  
of warre

The faythful  
nes of kynge  
Chiapes.

A tempest  
on the sea.

## The seconde decade.

laice, but that he wolde bynge hym on the waue and take part of his fortune. Therefore as soone as they were nowe entered into the maine sea, such surges and conductes of water arose agaynst them that they were at theyr wyttes endes whither to turne them or where to rest. Thus beinge tolled and amased with feare, the one loked on the other with pale and vnhersfull countenances. But especially *Chiapes* and his company, who had before tyme with theyr eyes scene the experience of those redberdies, were greatly discomforted. yet (as god wolde) they escaped all, and landed at the nexte Ilande: Where makinge faste theyr boates, they rested there that nyght. Here the water soo increased, that it almost overdrowed the Iland. They say also that that south sea doth soo in maner boyle and swelle, that when it is at the hyghest it doth couer many greate rockes, which at the faule thereof, are scene farre aboue the water. But on the contrary parte, all such as inhabite the North sea, affirme with one voyce, that hit scarcely riseth at any tyme a cubit aboue the bankes as they also confesse which inhabite the Ilande of Hispaniola and other Ilandes situate in the same. The Ilande therefore beinge nowe dzye by the faule of the water, they resorted to theyr boates which they founde all ouerwhelmed and full of sande, and some soe brused, with great ryftes, and almost lost by reason theyr cables were broken. Such as were brused, they tyed fast with theyr gyrdels, with stippes of the barkes of trees, and with tough and longe stalkes of certein herbes of the sea, stopping the ryftes or chynkes with grasse accordyng to the presente necessitie. Thus were they enforced to retorne backe agayne lyke vnto men that came frome shipwreake, beinge almost consumed with hunger, bycause theyr vytayles were bitterly destroyed by tempest. The inhabitants declared that there is harde all the yere horrible roaringe of the sea amonge those Ilandes as often as it ryseth or fauleth. But this most especially in those three monethes in the which it is moste boystious as *Chiapes* tolde *Vaschus* before: Meanynge (as they coulde coniecture by his wordes) October, Nouember, and December: for he signified the present moone and the two moones folowynge, countynge the monethes by the moones, whereas it was nowe October. Here therefore refreshynge hym selfe and his souldiers a

whyle

The increas-  
ing. of the  
South sea.

The North  
Ocean.

Hard shyft in  
necessitie.

whyle, and passynge by one vnprofitable kynge, he came to an other whose name was *Tumaccus*, after the name of the region, beinge situate on that syde of the goulfe. This *Tumaccus* came forth ageynste oore men as dyd the other, and with lyke fortune. For he was ouercome, dryuen to flyght, and many of his men slayne. He hym selfe was also sore wounded, but yet escaped. *Vaschus* sent certeyne messengers of the *Chiapans* to hym to retorne, and not to bee afrayde. But he could be nothyng moued nerher by promysse nor threateninges. Yet when the messengers were instant, & ceased not to threaten death to him and his famely, with the vtter desolation of his kyngedome if he persisted in that obstinacie, at the length he sent his sonne with them: whom *Vaschus* honorably enterteyninge, apparelinge hym gorgeously and gyuing hym many gyftes, sent hym to his father, wyllynge hym to perswade hym of the pusillanice, munificence, liberalitie, humanitye, and clemencie of oore men. *Tumaccus* beinge moued by this gentelnes declared toward his sonne, came with him the thyrde day, bringynge nothyng with hym at that tyme. But after that he knewe that oore men despyred goulde and pearles, he sent for fyre hundred and .xliii. Pesos of golde, and two hundred and fortie of the biggest and fayrest perles besyde a great number of the smaulest sorte. Oore men marueyled at the byggenes and fayrenes of these perles although they were not perfectly whyte bycause they take theym not wyte of the sea muscals excepte they fyrst rost them, that they may theselper open them selfe, and also that the fyre maye haue the better taste, whiche they esteeme for a delicate and princely dyshe, and set moze thereby then by the perles them selues. Of these thynges I was enformed of one *Arbolantius* beinge one of *Vaschus* coompanions whom he sent to the kyng with manye perles and certeyne of those sea muscals. But when *Tumaccus* sawe that oore men soo greatly regarded the beuotie of the perles, he commaunded certeyne of his men to prepare them selues to goo a fyfthynge for perles. Who departinge, came ageyne within foure dayes, bringynge with them twelue pounde weight of orient perles after eight ounces to the pounde. Thus reioysinge on bothe parties, they embraced and made a league of continual frendshyppe. *Tumaccus* thought him selfe happie that he had presented oore men

The Region  
*Tumacca*.

kyng *Tumaccus* is dryuen to flyght.

Golde and  
perles,

muscals of  
the sea.

Fyfthynge for  
perles.  
Itt pounde  
weyght of  
perles.

## The thyrde decade.

The thyrst  
of golde.

Ambition a-  
monge naked  
men.

This Ilande  
is cauled  
Margarites  
Dunes, or Dis-  
tes.  
A kynge of  
greate poure.

Diggeperles.

Cleopatra,  
queene of E-  
gypti resolved  
a pearle in  
vineger and  
drunke it;  
price .v. thou-  
sande pounde  
of ower money.  
thes creenes  
of Vascus.

With such thankeful gyftes and was admitted to theyr frend  
shippe: and owere men thinkynge them selues happie and blef-  
sed that they had founde suche tokens of great ryches, swa-  
lowed downe theyr spetle for thyrste. At all these doinges,  
kynge *Chiapes* was present as a wyynes and coompanion. He  
also reioysed not a lyttle, aswell that by his conductinge he  
sawe that owere men shulde bee satisfified of theyr desyre, as al-  
so that by this meanes he had declared to the next kynge his  
boztherer and enemye, what frendes he had of owere men, by  
whose ayde he myght lyue in quyetnes and bee reuenged of  
his aduersarie if neede shulde soo requyre. For (as wee haue  
sayde) these naked kynges infeste theim selues with greuous  
warres onely for ambition and desyre to rule. *Vaschus* boistereth  
in his epistell, that he lerned certeyne maruelous secretes of  
*Tumaccus* him selfe as concernynge the greate ryches of this  
lande: wherof (as he sayth) he woold vter nothyng at this  
presente, for asmuche as *Tumaccus* toulde it him in his eare.  
But he was enformed of bothe the kynges, that there is an  
Ilande in that goulfe, greater then any of the other, hauing  
in it but onely one kynge, and hyat of soo great poure, that at  
suche tymes of the yeate as the sea is caulme, he inuaderthe  
theyr dominions with a greate nauie of *Culchas*, spoyling and  
carynge a way for a praye, all that he meeteth. This Iland  
is distant from these coastes, onely twentie myles: Soo that  
the promontories or poyntes therof rechyng into the sea, may  
bee scene from the hylles of this Continent. In the sea nere  
about this Ilande, sea musculls are engendred of such quant-  
tie, that many of them are as brode as buckelers, In these  
are perles founde (beinge the hartes of those shell fyshes) of-  
ten tymes as bygge as beanes, sumtymes bygger then olyues  
and such as sumptuous *Cleopatra* myght haue desyred. Al-  
though this Ilande bee soo nere to the Mouthe of this firme  
lande, yet is the begynnynge therof in the mayne sea without  
the mouth of the goulfe. *Vaschus* beinge ioyfull and mery with  
this ryche communication, fantasinge nowe in maner nothing  
but princes treasures, beganne to speake fierce and cruell  
woordes ageynst the tyranne of that Ilande, meanynge here-  
by too woonne the myndes of the other kynges, and bynde  
them to hym with a neater bonde of frendship. Yet therfore  
carynge further on hym with spytefull and opprobrious  
woordes

woordes, he swore great othes that he wolde furthwith inuade the Ilande, spoylyng, destroyng, burnynge, drownyng, and hangynge, sparinge neyther swoorde nor fyre, vntyll he hadde reuenged theyr iniuries: And therewith commaunded his *Culchas* to bee in a redynes. But the twoo kynges *Chiapos* and *Tumaceus*, exhorted hym frendly to deferre this enterprise vntyll a more quiete season, because that sea was not nauigable withowte greate daunger, beinge nowe the begynnynge of Nouember. Wherin the kynges seemed to sape trewe. For as *Vaschus* hym selfe wytteth, great rotyng of the sea was harde amonge the Ilandes of the goulfe by reasyn of the raginge and conflicte of the water. Great ryuers also descending from the toppes of the mountaynes the same time of the yere, & ouerflowynge theyr bankes, drypynge downe with theyr vyolence greate rockes and trees, make a marueylous noyse. Lykewise the furie of the South and Northeast wyndes, associate with thunder and lyghthyng at the same season, dyd greatly moleste them. Whyle the wether was fayre they were hered in the night with coulde and in the day time, the heate of the sonne troubled them: wherof it is noo maruaile, forasmuche as they were neare vnto the Equinoctiall lyne, although they make noo mention of the elevation of the pole. For in such regions, in the nyght, the mone and other coulde planettes: but in the daye, the soone and other hote planettes, doo chiefly exercise theyr influence: Althowghe the antiquitie were of an other opinion, supposinge th Equinoctiall circle to bee inhabitable and desolate by reason of the heate of the soonne hauinge his course perpendicularly or directly ouer the same: except a fewe of the contrary opinion, whose assertions the Portugales haue at these dayes by experience proued to bee trewe. For they saile yearly to chinhabitantes of the south pole, being in maner *Antipodes* to the people cauled *Hyperborei* vnder the North pole, and exercise marchaundies with them. And here haue I named *Antipodes*, forasmuch as I am not ignozant that there hath byn men of singular witte and great lernyng, which haue denyed that there is *Antipodes*: that is, such as walke feete to feete. But it is most certepne, that it is not gyuen to anye one man to knowe all thynges. For euery theyr llo were men: whose propertie is to erre and bee deceaued in many thynges. Nevertheless, the

A a ii,

Portugales

Great ryuers  
fallyng from  
mountaynes.

Thunder and  
lyghthyng in  
Nouember.

Colde in the  
nyght nere  
the Equinoctiall.

habitable regions  
vnder  
the Equinoctiall lyne.

The natuitions  
of the  
portugales  
towards the  
southe pole.  
*Antipodes*.  
ye meaneth  
S. Augustine  
and Lectanius.

## The seconde decade.

The starres  
about the  
fourthe pole.

*Lactea via.*

A similitude  
reclarynge  
Antipodes.

Portingales of oloure tyme, haue sayled to the fyne and fyfthe degree of the south pole: Where, coompasinge absolute the poynt thereof, they myght see througheoute al the heauen about the same, certeyne shynynge whyte cloudes here & there amonge the starres, lyke vnto thepyn which are seene in the tracte of heauen cauled *Lactea via*, that is, the mylke whyte waye. They say, there is noo notable starre neare about that pole lyke vnto this of oloures which the comon people thynke to bee the pole it selfe (cauled of the Italians *Tramontani*, and of the Spanyardes *Nortes*) but that the same fauleth benethe the Decan. When the sonne descendeth from the myddeste of the criltee of the woorld from vs, it ryseth to them, as a payre of balances whose weyght inclynynge from the equall poyle in the myddest towarde eyther of the sydes, causeth the one ende to ryse as much as the other fauleth. When therefore it is autumne with vs, it is sprynge tyme with the: And summer with vs when it is wynter with them. But it sufficeth to haue sayde thus much of strange matters. Let vs now therefore retorne to the historie and to oloure men.

## The seconde booke of the thyrde Decade.



*Vaschus* by the aduice of kynge *Chilipes* and *Tamarcus*, determyued to deferre his vyage to the sayde Ilande vntyll the nexte sprynge or summer, at which tyme *Chilipes* offered hym selfe to accompanie oloure men and appoynted therin all that he myght. In this meane tyme *Vaschus* had knowleage that these kyn

The maner  
of fysshynge  
for perles.

Three Kindes  
of perles.

ges had nettes and fysshynge places in certeyne stations of that sea nere vnto the shore, where they were accustomed to fysh for sea muscels in the which perles are engendred: And that for this purpose they had certeyne dyuers or fyfthers exercised frome theyr yowthe in swymynge vnder the water. But they doo this onely at certeyne tymes when the sea is calme, that they may theselyer coome to the place where these shell fyshes are woodnte to lye. For the bygger that they are, soo much ly they the deaper and nerer to the bottome. But the lesser, as it were dowghters to the other, are nerer the byme

of

of the water. Lykewyse the leaste of all, as it were their nieces, are yet nearer to the superficiall parte therof. Too them of the byggeste sorte whiche lye loweste, the fyllers descende the depthe of thre mens heyght, and sumtyme foure. But to the doughters or nieces as their succession, they descend one lye to the mydde thygh. Sumtymes also, after that the sea hath byn disquieted with vehemente tempestes, they fynde a greate multitude of these fyllers on the sandes, beyng dygnen to the shoze by the vyolence of the water. The perles of these whiche are founde on the sande, are but lytle. The fishe it selfe, is moze pleasaunte in eatynge then are owre oylers as owre men report. But perhappes hunger the swete cause of all meates, caused owre men soo too thynke. Whether perles bee the hartes of sea musculls (as Aristotell supposed) or the byrthe or spaune of there intrals (as *Plinye* thought) Or whether they cleave conynnally to the rockes, or wander by companies in the sea by the gyardinge of theldesse: Whether euerye fyller byynge foorth the one perle or moze, at one byrthe or at dyuers: Also whether they bee fylled frome the rockes wherunto they cleave, or maye bee easylly pulled awaye, or otherwyse faule of by them selues when theye are coomme to there full growth: Lykewyse whether perles bee harde within the shelle or softe, owre men haue as yet noo certayne experyence. But I truste or it bee longe, too knowe the truth hereof. For owre men are euen nowe in hande with the matter. Also, as soone as I shall bee aduertysed of the arrivall of *Petrus Arias* the capytayne of owre navy, I wyll desyre hym by my letters to make diligent searche for these thynges, and certifie me therof in all poyntes. I knowe that he wyll not bee slacke or omitt any thyng herein. For he is my herpe frende: and one that taketh greate pleasure in consyderynge the woorkes of nature. And surely it seeme h vnto me vndercente, that wee shoulde with sylence ouerslyppe so greate a thyng whiche as well in the olde tyme as in owre dayes, hath, & yet doothe, drawe bothe men and women to enmyderate desyre of superfluous pleasure. Spayne therefore shal be able hereafter with perles to satisfie the gredye appetite of suche as in wanton pleasures are lyke vnto *Cleopatra* & *Asopus*. So that frome hensforth we shal neyther enuye nor reuerence the nyse frutesfulnes of *Stoidum*, or *Taprobana*, or the redde sea.

A, a, v,

But

Dyuers quest  
tios as cocer.  
nyng perles

*Petrus. arias*

wanton and  
superfluous  
pleasures.  
*Cleopatra.*  
*Asopus.*  
*Stoidum.*  
*Taprobana.*

## The thyrede decade.

But lette vs now returne to oovre purpose. *Vaschus* therfore determined with the fyllhers of *Chiapes* to proue what myght bee doone in his fythe pooles or stations of sea muscules.

*Chiapes* to shewe hym selfe obediente to *Vaschus* his requeste, although the sea were boytious, commaunded thirte of his fyllhers to prepare them selves and to resorte to the fyllhing places. *Vaschus* sente onely fyve of his men with them to bee holde them frome the sea bankes, but not to committe them selues to the daunger of the sea. The fyllhing place was distante frome the palayce of *Chiapes* aboute tenne myles. They durste not aduenture to dyue to the bottome by reason of the furie of the sea. yet of the muscules whiche lye hygher, and of suche as were dryuen to the shore by the violence of the water, theye broughte fyve greate farthels in the space of a fewe dayes. The perles of these were but lytle, aboute the bygnes of smaule pynches: yet verie fayre and bewyfull, by reason theye were taken newly owte of the fythe, beinge yet rawe. And that they shulde not bee reproued of lyinge as concerninge the bygnes of these sea muscules, they sente many of them into Spayne to the kynge with the perles, the fythe beyng taken owte. Wee thinke verily that there maye in noo place bygger bee founde. These shelle fythes therfore beyng thus founde here in soo manye places in that sea, and gold in maner in euery house, doo argue the ryche treasure of nature too bee hyd in those coastes, forasmuche as suche greate ryches haue byn founde as it were in the lytle fynger of a gigantes hande. What then maye wee thynke of the hole hande of the gyante (for hethereto theye haue onely bynne in hande with the confynes of *Vraba*) when theye shall haue thorowly searched all the coastes and secreates of the inner partes of all that large lande. But *Vaschus* contented with these sygnes & ioyfull of his good successe in these enterpryses, determined by an other waye to returne to his felowes in *Dariena*, where also, they haue golde mynes aboute tenne myles from the vil- lage. He gaue therfore kynge *Chiapes* leaue to depart, and to for- lowe hym noo further: Consailiug hym to continue faythfull to the christian kynge his lorde & maister. Thus embrasinge the one the other, & ioyninge handes, *Chiapes* departed, with teares declaring the good mynde which he boze to oovre men. *Vaschus* leauing his sicke ma with *Chiapes*, Went forward on his iorneye

The fyllhing  
place of king  
*Chiapes*.

Golde in ma-  
ner in euery  
house.  
The ryche  
treasure of  
nature.

The golde  
mynes of  
*Dariena*.

journey with the resydue, hauinge also with him for guydes  
 thre of *Chiapes* marynners. He conueyghed his armye ouer a  
 greate ryuer into the dominion of a certeine kynge cauled *Ta-  
 ocha*: who beinge aduertised of the cominge of ovr men, of  
 whose famous actes he had harde muche before, was verie  
 gladd theof and enterpnyed them honorably: So that for  
 a token of his frendely affection towarde them, he gaue *Vas-  
 chus* twentie poundes weyght of wrought golde after eght  
 ounces to the pounce: Also twoo hundred bigge perles: but  
 not sayre, by reason they were taken ovr of the muscals after  
 they had byn sodden. After they had ioyned handes, *Vaschus*  
 recompensed hym with certeyne of ovr thynges. *Apkchile*  
 rewardynge his guydes the seruantes of *Chiapes*, he dismissed  
 them with commendations to theyr lord. *Kyng Teaocha* at the  
 departure of ovr men from his palace, dyd not onely appoint  
 them guydes to conduct them in the way, but also gaue them  
 certeyne slaues in the scede of bestes to cary theyr bytrayles,  
 bycause they shulde passe through many desertes, baren and  
 rough mountaynes and terrible wooddes full of tygers and  
 Lions. He sent also one of his sonnes with these slaues, la-  
 dyng them with salted and dyed fysh, and breade of those  
 regions, made of the rootes of *Muzium* and *Iucca*. He also  
 commaunded his sonne not to depart from ovr men butyl he  
 were licenced by *Vaschus*. By theyr conductinge therfore, *Vas-  
 chus* came to the dominion of an other kynge whose name was  
*Pacra*, a cruell tyranne, fearefull to the other kynges his bor-  
 therers, and of greater poure then any of them. This tyran,  
 whether it were that his gyltie conscience for his mischecious  
 actes, put him in feare that ovr menne wolde reuenge the  
 same, or that he thought hym selfe inferior to resist them, Aed  
 at theyr cominge. *Vaschus* wyrteth that in these regions in  
 the moneth of *December* he was soze afflicted with greate  
 heate and intollerable thirst, by reason that syde of the moun-  
 taynes hath lytle water: In soo muche that they were in  
 daunger to haue perished but that certeyne of thynhabitantes  
 shewed them of a springe which was in the secrete place of  
 a woodde, whither *Vaschus* with all theade sent twoo guycke  
 and stronge younge men of his companions with theyr gour-  
 des and suche water vessels as *Teaocha* his men browghte  
 with them, Of thynhabitantes, there durst none depart from  
 theyr

Kyng Teao-  
 cha enterp-  
 neth *Vaschus*  
 frendelye.

Twentye  
 pounce  
 weight of  
 wrought  
 golde.

Desertes full  
 of wyde  
 bestes.

Dyed fysh

Kyng *Pacra*  
 a tyranne.

Greate heate  
 in the mo-  
 nethe of *Dec-  
 ember*.

## The seconde decade,

hurte by  
wyld beas-  
tes.  
A tyger.  
Calidonia is  
a foireste in  
Scotlande.  
Nemea is a  
wodde in  
Greece.

Tigers whel-  
pes.

Thus the E-  
gyptians take  
Crocodiles.

The dogge  
tyger taken.  
The roynge  
of the tyger.

Tigers fleshe  
eaten.

there company because the wyld beasts doo soone invade naked men. For in those mountaynes, and especially in the wooddes neare vnto the springe, they saye that they are sum- tymes taken owte of there houses in the nyght, excepte they take good heede that the doozes bee well sparde. It shall not bee frome my purpose hereto declare a particular chaunce be- fore I enter any further in this matter. Theye saye therfore that the lasse yeare the regyon of *Dariens* was nooleffe infested and troubeled with a fierse tyger, then was *Calidonia* in tyme past with a wyld boze, and *Nemea* with a horrible lyon. For they asserme that for the space of fyre hole moonethes there passed not one nyght withoute summe hurte doone: soo that it kylled nyghtlye eyther a bullocke, a mare, a dogge, or a hogge, sumtimes euen in the highe wayes of the village. For owre men haue nowre greatchardes of cattayle in those regions. They say also that when this tyger had whelpes, noo man myght safelye goo furthe of his doozes, because the spared not men if the mette fyrste with them. But at the len- geth, necessitye enforced them to inuente a polycye howe they myght bee reuenged of suche bludshed. Searchynge therfore diligently her footesteppes, and folowynge the pathe wher bye the was accustomed in the nyght season to wander owte of her denne to seeke her praye, theye made a greate trenche or pytte in her walke, coueringe the same with hurdels wher bypon theye caste parte of the earthe and disperled the resy- due. The dogge tyger chaunled fyrste into this pitfaul, and fel bypon the poyntes of sharpe stakes and suche other ingens as were of purpose fyred in the bottome of the trenche. Be- ynge thus wounded, he rored soo terribly, that it grated the bowels of suche as harde hym, and the wooddes and mon- tainnes neare aboute, rebounded the noyse of the horrible crye. When they perceaued that he was layde faste, they re- forced to the trenche and slewe hym with stones, darteres, and pykes. With his teethe and clawes, he broke the darteres in: to a thousande chyppes. Beynge yet deade, he was fearefull to all suche as behelde hym: what then thinke you he wolde haue doone beynge alpye and loose. One *Iobannes Ledismos* of *Amile*, a nere frende to *Vaschus* and one of the companions of his traauayles, toulde me that he hym selfe byd eate of the fleshe of that tyger: and that it was nothyng inferyore to biefe

in goodnes. Beyng demaunded howe they knewe hit to bee  
 a tyger forasmuche as none of them had euer scene a tyger,  
 they answered that they knewe hit by the sportes, fiercenes,  
 agilitie, and suche other markes and token wherby the an-  
 ciente wyters haue described the tiger. For sum of them, had  
 before tyme scene other sported wilde beastes, as lybarbes &  
 panchers. The dogge tiger beyng thus kyllid, theye folo-  
 wyng the trace of his steppes towarde the mountaines, came  
 to the denne where the bytche remayned with her twoo  
 younge suckynge whelpes. But shee was not in the denne at  
 there coomynge. Theye fyrste carped awaye the whelpes  
 with them. But afterwarde fearynge leasse they shulde dye  
 bycause theye were very younge, encendynge when they were  
 bygger to sende them into Spayne, they put cheynes of yren  
 aboute there neckes, and carped them agayne to there denne:  
 whither returnynge within a fewe dayes after, theye founde  
 the denne emptye and the cheynes not remoued frome there  
 place. Theye suppose that the damme in her furye toze them  
 in pyeces and carped them awaye, lest anye shulde haue the  
 fruition of them. For theye playnely asseme that it was not  
 possible that they shulde bee loosed frome the chaynes aloue.  
 The skynne of the deade tyger stufed with dye herbes and  
 strawe, theye sente to *Hispaniola* to the admyrall and other of  
 the chiefe rulers frome whome the newe landes receyue there  
 labes and succoure. It shall at this tyme suffice to haue writ-  
 ten thus much of the tygers, as I haue lerned by the reporte  
 of them whiche bothe susteyned damage by there rauenyng,  
 and also handeled the skynne of that whiche was slayne. Let  
 vs nowe therfore returne to kynge *Pacra* frome whome wee  
 haue digressed. When *Vaschus* had entred into the houses for-  
 taken of *Pacra*, he sente messengers to reconyle hym as he  
 had doone the other kynges. At the first he refused to coomme.  
 But after threatennges, he came with thre other kynges  
 in his coompanye. *Vaschus* writeth that he neuer sawe a more  
 monstrous and deformed creature: And that nature hath oue-  
 ly given hym humane shape, and otherwyle to bee worse the  
 a brute beaste, with maners accordynge to the lymamentes  
 of his bodye. He abused with moche abhominable lychery the  
 daughters of foure kynges his brotheres frome whome he  
 had taken them by violence. Of the fylthy behauioure of

The bitch  
 tyger.

Tigers whel-  
 pes.

A strange  
 thynge.

kyng *Pacra*.

## The second decade.

Naturall ha-  
stred of vyce.

four kinges  
deuoured of  
dogges.

The vse of  
dogges in  
warre as  
geinst naked  
men.

The Cany-  
bales are ex-  
perts at  
chere.

Swordes of  
woodde.

A fiftie pounde  
weyght of  
golde.

*Pacha* of his crueltie and iniuries doone by hym, many of the other kynes made greuous complayntes to *Vaschus* as vnto a hygh Iudge and iuste reuenger: Whose humblye beseechyng hym to see suche thynges punished, forasmuche as theye tooke hym for a man sente of god for that purpose. Hereby *p m Vaschus* aswell to wyne their good wylls, as also too shewe an exmple of terroure to suche as vsed lyke fashions, commaunded that this monstrous beast with the other thre kynes whiche were subiecte to hym and of lyke conditi-  
tions, shulde bee geuen for a praye to his feyghtinge dogges, and their tozue carkeses to bee burned. Of these dogges whi-  
che theye vse in the warres, theye tell maruelous thynges, For theye saye that theye runne vppon thinhabitanres ar-  
med after there maner, with noo lesse fiercenes then if theye were hartes or wylde bozes, if the Spaniardes doo but ones ly poynte towarde them with their fyngers: In soo muche that oftentymes they haue had no nede too dyue their ene-  
mies too flyght with swordes or arrowes: But haue doone the same onely with dogges placed in the forefront of their battayle, and lettynge them slyppe with their warche woorde and pryue token. Wheruppon the barbarians step-  
pen with feare by reason of the cruell countenances of the masties, with their desperate bouldenes and vnaccustomed honlynge and backynge, haue disparcelled at the fyrste onfette and broke their arraye. yet it chaunserth otherwyse when theye haue anye condicts agaynst the Canibales and the peo-  
ple of *Caramani*. For these are expertes, and moze warrellyke men: Also so experte arches, that theye can moste certenlye dyrect their venemous arrowes against the dogges with su-  
che celeritye as if theye were thunderboltes. By reason wher-  
of, theye sumtymes kyl many of the. Thinhabytantes of these montaynes, doo not keepe warre with bowes and arrowes: But vse onelye *Mechanis*, that is certayne longe and broude swordes made of woodde: Also spynges, longe pykes and darters hardened at the endes with fyre. Whyle kynge *Pacha* yet lyued, noo man coulde knowe of hym neyther by sayre meanes nor by foule, where he had the golde whiche was founde in his house. For othere men founde in his iewel house fyfthe poundes weyght of golde. Weynge therfore demaun-  
ded where he had it, he answered that they whiche gathered the

The same in those montaynes in his fathers dayes, were all  
 deade: And that sence he was a chylde, he neuer esteemed  
 golde more then stones. More then this, theye could not  
 gette of hym. By this seuerer punishment executed vppon Pa-  
 cerna, Vascus conuylced vnto hym the myndes of all the other  
 kynges of that prouince. And by this meanes it came too  
 passe, that when he sente for the lycke men whiche he lefte  
 behynde hym with kyng Chispes, an other kyng whiche  
 was in the mydde waye (whose name was Bononiana) enter-  
 reyned them gentellye, and gaue them. xx. pounce weyght  
 of pure wrought golde, besyde great plentye of byttayles.  
 And not this onely, but also accompanyed them hym self  
 vntill he had brought them safelye from his palaice into the  
 companyon of Pacra: Where takynge eche of them by the  
 ryghte handes, he deliuered them to Vascus hym selfe, as  
 a faythfull pledge commytted too his charge, and there-  
 with spake to Vascus in this effecte. Goodly myghtye and  
 valyaunte byttourer, beholde I here deliuer vnto you,  
 your companions in suche plight as I receaued them: wil-  
 linge that I had byn aswell able to gyue them healthe, as  
 they were hertely welcume to suche poze enterreynement as  
 I was able to shewe them. For the fauoure and gentelnesse  
 whiche I haue founde bothe in you and them, he shall re-  
 warde you whiche sendeth thunders and lyghtelyng to  
 the destruction of myscheuous men, and of his clemencye gi-  
 ueth vnto good men plentye of Iucca and Matixum in the sea  
 son. As he spake these wordes, he lysted vpp his handes  
 and eyes towarde the sonne whome they honoure for god.  
 Then he spake further to Vascus, sayinge: In that you  
 haue destroyed and slaine oure vyolent and proude enemies,  
 you haue brought peace and quyetnesse to vs and oure fa-  
 milyes, and bounde vs for euer to loue and obeye you.  
 You haue soo ouercome and tamed wyld monstres, that  
 wee thynke you to bee sente from heauen for the punish-  
 ment of euell men and defence of innocentes, that vnder the  
 protection of your myghtye sword, wee maye hereafter  
 leade oure lyues withoute feare, and with more quicnesse  
 gyue thanks to the giuer of all good thynges for his mercie  
 shewed vnto vs in this behalfe. When this interpreter had  
 coude Vascus that kyng Bononiana had sayde these wordes,

kyng Bononiana, frende  
 to the churche  
 and  
 wrought  
 golde.

The oration  
 of kyng  
 Bononiana

The sparke  
 of the lawe  
 of nature, is  
 the lawe  
 written in the  
 hartes of  
 men.

## The thyrde decade.

and suche lyke, *Vaschus* rendered hym lyke thanks for his  
 humanyte declared towarde oþre men, and rewarded hym  
 as he had doone other in whome he founde lyke gentillneſſe.  
*Vaschus* wyrrerth that he learned manye thynges of this kynge  
 as concernynge the greate rycheſſe of theſe regions: But  
 that he woolde at this preſent ſpeake nothyng therof: And  
 reherſerth the ſame as thynges lyke to haue good ſucceſſe.  
 What this implicate *Hyperbole*, or aduancement meaneth, I  
 doo not well vnderſtande. But he playnely ſeemeth hereby to  
 promyſſe many greate thynges. And ſurely it is to be thought  
 that accordynge to his hope, great riches maye bee looked  
 for. For they came in maner into none of thynhabytantes  
 houſes, but that they found in them, eyther byſſeplates or  
 curretes of golde, or elles golden ouches, iewels, or gar-  
 landes to weare aboute there heades, neckes, or armes. I  
 coniecture therfore thus by a ſymilitude of oþre houſes: If  
 amonge vs any man of great poure were moved with the de-  
 ſyre to haue great plentye of Iron, and woolde enter into I-  
 talye with a mayne force as dyd the Bothes in tyme paſte,  
 what abundaunce of Iron ſhoulde he haue in their houſes:  
 where as he ſhulde fynde in one place a ſcyngpan, in an o-  
 ther a chauldron, here a tryuet, and there a ſpyrre, and theſe  
 in maner in every pore mannes houſe, with ſuche other innum-  
 merable: Whereby any man maye coniecture that Iron is  
 plentifully engendryed in ſuche regions where they haue ſoo  
 greate uſe therof. Oþre men alſo perceaued that thynhaby-  
 tantes of theſe regions do no more eſteeme golde, then we do  
 Iron: nor yet ſoo muche after they ſawe to what uſe Iron  
 ſerued vs. Thus muche haue I thought good to write too  
 powre holpneſſe of ſuche thynges as I haue gathered oþre  
 of the letters of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and learned by woorde of  
 mouth of ſuch as were his cōpanyons in theſe affayres. As  
 wee receyue them, ſo wee gyue them vnto you. Tyme which  
 reueleth all ſecretes, ſhall hereafter mynſter larger argu-  
 ment of wyrtynge. Theye coulde at this tyme doo no greate  
 thyng in ſearchynge the golde mynes, forasmuche as of a  
 hundredth foureſcore and tenne men whiche *Vaschus* broughte  
 with hym from *Dariena*, there remayned onely threſcore and  
 ten, or at the moſt foureſcore, whoſe ayde he nowe vſed in  
 theſe dangerous aduentures, leauynge euer the crafed men  
 behynde

*Hyperbole,*

Great plenty  
of golde.

A ſymilitude  
for the profe  
of plentye of  
golde.

Iron more  
eſteemed then  
golde.

behynnd hym in the kinges houses all the waye that he went  
But they mooste especially fell into sundrye diseases, whiche  
came lately from *Hispaniola*. For they were not able to abyde  
such e calamities as to lyue onely contented with the breade  
of those regions, and wylde herbes without salt, drynkinge  
none other then ryuer water, and that oftentimes eyther lacke  
kinge or unhollsome, where as before their stomakes had byn  
bled to good meates. But the owlde souldiours of *Dariena*,  
were hardened to abyde all sorowes, and excadynge toller-  
able of labour, heate, hunger, and watchynge: In so muche  
that merilye they make their booste that they haue obserued  
a longer and sharper lent then euer yowre holynesse intoryned.  
For they saye that for the space of foue hole yeares, they  
eate none other then herbes and frutes, excepte nowe and  
then perhappes fysh, and verie seldome fleshe: yea, and  
that sumtime for lacke of al these, they haue not abhorred fro  
mangye dogges and fylt hye roades as wee haue sayde be-  
fore. The owlde souldiers of *Dariena*, I caule those whiche  
fyyste folowed the capytaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda* to inhabyte  
the lande, of the whiche nowe fewe were lpyunge. But lette  
us nowe omytte these thynges, and retourne to *Vaschus* the  
bictourer of the montaynes.

Change of  
dyet is daun-  
gerous.

Owlde souls  
diers.

A longe lent.

The thyrd booke of the  
thyrd Decade.



W hen *Vaschus* had remained thirtye dayes in the  
palayce of kynge *Pacra*, counselynge vnto hym  
the myddes of thynhabitantes and prouidinge  
thynges necessarye for his coompanions, he  
departed frome thense by the conducte of cer-  
tayne of kynge *Tasocha* his men, and came too  
the banke of the ryuer *Comogrus*, wherof the region and king  
therof, are named by the same name. He founde the sydes of  
these montaynes so rude and baren, that there was nothynge  
apte to bee eaten, but wilde rootes and certayne vnpleasante  
frutes of trees. Two kynges beinge neare of bludde, inhaby-  
ted this infortunate region, whiche *Vaschus* ouerpasse with  
all speede for feare of hunger. One of these poore kynges was  
named *Cotochus*, and the other *Churiza*. He tooke them bothe  
with

*Comogrus*,

Two poore  
kynges.

## The seconde decade,

**Desertes.**

with hym to guyde hym in the waye, and dismyssed *Tescha* his men with vytayles and rewarde. Thus for the space of three dayes, he wandered throughe many deserte wooddes, craggie mountaynes, & muddy marsthes full of suche quarmyres that men are oftentymes swallowed bp in them if they looke not the more warclpe to their fiere. Also throughe places not frequented with resorte of men, and suche as nature had not yet opened to their vse, forasmuche as thinhabitan-tes haue seldome entercouise betwene them, but onely by sundrye incursions, the one to spoyle and destroye the other: Becynge otherwise contented to lyue onely after the lawe of nature, withoute worldly toyle for superfluous pleasures.

**kyng Beche  
buca submyt-  
teth hym selfe**

Thus enteringe at the lengthe into the territorpe of another kyng whose name was *Bechebuc*, they founde all thynges boyde and in silence: for the kyng and his subiectes, were all fledde to the wooddes. When *Vaschus* sente messengers to fetch the hym, he dyd not onely at the fyrste submytte hym selfe, but also promysse his ayde with all that he myghte make: for to saye furthermoze, that he fledde not for feare that othere men wolde doo hym any iniurie, but that he had hym selfe for verye shame and grieve of mynde, for that he was not able to receyue them honorablye accordynge vnto their dignitie, because his store of vytayles was consumed. Yet in a token of obedience and frendshyppe, he sente othere men many vesselles of golde, desyring them to accepte them as the gifte of a frind whose good will wanted not in greater thynges if his abyltye were greater. By whiche wordes the poore man seemed to insinuate that he had byn robbed and otherwise cruelly handled of his boztherers. By reason wherof, othere men were enforced to departe from thense more hungerly then theye came. As theye wente forwarde therfoze, they espied certeine naked men comminge downe from a hylle towarde them. *Vaschus* commaunded his armye to staye, and sente his interpretours to them to knowe what they wold haue. Then one of the to whom the other seemed to gve reuerence, spake in this effect. Othere lord & kyng *Chioris*, greeterly yoww well: Wyllynge vs to declare that he hath harde of yowre puissance and verue wherby yowe haue subdued euill men and reuenged the wronges doone to innocentes, for the whiche yowre noble facies and iustyce,

**kyng Chioris  
sus sendeth  
Vaschus xxx.  
vnto yow  
pure golde.**

as

as he doothe honour yowre fame, soo wolde he thinke him selfe moste happye if he myght receiue yowe into his palaice. But, forasmuche as his fortune hath byn so euell (as he imputeth it) that beyng obte of yowre waye, yowe haue ouerpast hym, he hath sent yowe this golde in token of his good wyll and frendshyppe towarde yowe. And with these woozdes he deliuered to *Vaschus* thirty dishes of pure golde. Addyng hereunto, that when so euer it shulde please him to take the paynes to cooime to their kyng, he shulde receyue greater gyftes. He declared further, that a kyng whych was their boztherer and mortall enemye, was very ryche in golde: And that in subduynge of hym they shulde haue obteine greate rycheesse, and also delpyer them from daylye vexations: whiche thinge myght easilye be doone by their helpe bycause they knewe the countrey. *Vaschus* put them in good coomforzte, and gaue them for rewarde certayne Iren axes whiche they more esteemed then greate heapes of golde. For they haue lytell neede of golde, haupyng not thise of pestiferous monney. But he that maye get but one axe or hatchet, thynketh hym selfe ryche then euer was *crissus*. For euen these naked men doo perceyue that an axe is necessarye for a thousande vles: And confesse that golde is desyred onely for certayne vaine and exteminate pleasures, as a thyng whiche the lyfe of man maye lacke withowte any inconuenience. For oore gluttony and superfluous sumptuousnesse hath not yet corrupted them: By reason wherof they take it for noo shame to lacke cobardes of plate, where as the pryde and wantonnes of oore tyme dooeth in maner impute it to vs for ignominye to bee withowte that, wherof by nature we haue no neede. But their contentation with the benefytes of nature doothe playnly declare that men may leade a free and happy life withowt tables, table clothes, carpettes, napkyns, and towels, with suche other innumerable wherof they haue no vse, excepte perhappes the kynges furnishe their tables with a fewe golden vessels. But the common people dyspue awaye hunger with a ppece of their breade in the one hande, and a piece of broylde fysh or summe kynde of fruite in the other hande. For they eate fleshe but scildome. When their fingers are imbued with any ounctuous meates, they wype them eyther on the soles of their feete, or on their thyghes, yea

Axes of Iren  
more esteemed  
then any gold

Superfluous  
and exteminate  
pleasures

An exemple  
of the lyfe of  
oure first pa  
rentes.

sumptuous

## The thyrde decade.

Plentye of  
gold & scarce  
nesse of  
meare.

knig pccchor  
rosa ub nys  
ecch hym  
selfe.  
xv. pounce  
weyghte of  
wroughte  
golde.  
kynge Tuma-  
nama, looke  
decad. ii. lib.  
all

A good po-  
licye.

sumpnes on the skynnes of their priuie members in the  
herde of a nappaynne. And for this cause doo they often  
tymes washe them selues in the ryuers. More men therfore  
wente forwarde laden with golde, but soze afflicted with  
hunger. Thus they came at the length to the dominion of  
kynge Pocchorrosa who fledde at their cominge. Here for  
the space of thirte dayes they fylled their empye bellies  
with breade of the rootes of Maiziun. In the meane tyme  
Vaschus sente for Pocchorrosa: who beyng allured with pro-  
misses and saye woordes, came and submytted hym selfe  
hrynginge with hym for a present. xv. poundes weighte of  
wrought golde, and a fewe slaues. Vaschus rewarded hym as  
he had doone other before. When he was mynded to depart,  
he was aduertised that he shulde passe through the dominion  
of a certayne kynge whose name was Tumanama. This is hee  
whome the soonne of kynge Comogrus declared to bee of so  
great poure and fearefull to all his boztherers, & with whom  
many of Comogrus familpers had byn captyue. But more men  
nowe perceined that they measured his poure by their owne.  
For their kinges are but gnattes compared to elephantes,  
in respecte to the poure and pollicpe of more men. More  
men were also enformed by suche as dwelte neare aboute Tu-  
manama, that his region was not beyonde the montaynes as  
they suppoled: For yet so ryche in golde as yonge Como-  
grus had declared. yet consulted they of his subduyng: whi-  
che they thoughte they myght theadlyer hrynge to passe by:  
cause Pocchorrosa was his mortall enemye, who moste gladly  
promysed them his aduice and ayde herein. Vaschus therfore,  
leauynge his speke men in the byllage of Pocchorrosa, tooke  
with hym thre score of his moste valiante souldiers, and de-  
clared vnto them howe kynge Tumanama had oftentymes spo-  
ken proude and threapnyng woordes agaynst them: Lyke-  
wise that it nowe stode them in hande of necessitye to passe  
through his dominion: And that he thought it beste to sette  
bypon hym bywares. The souldiers consented to his aduice,  
and exhorted him to gyue thaduenture, promysinge that they  
woolde folowe hym whether so euer he wente. They deter-  
mined therfore to go two dayes iorney in one daye, that Tu-  
manama not knowynge of their sodden cominge, myght haue  
no leasure to assemble an armye. The thyng came to passe  
even

euen as they had deuyfed. For in the fyrſte watche of the  
 nyght, owoze men with the *Poechorroſians*, inuaded the byllage  
 and palaice of *Tumanama*, where they tooke hym priſoner in-  
 pectynge nothinge leſſe. He had with hym two younge men  
 whiche he abuſed vnnaturally: Alſo fourſcore women which  
 he had taken vyolently from dyuers kynges. Lykelike a  
 greate number of his gentlemen and ſubiectes were taken  
 ſtragelynge in other byllages neare aboute his palaice. For  
 their houſes are not adherent togiſther as owzes bee, bycauſe  
 they are oftentimes troubeled with vehement whylewyndes  
 by reaſon of the ſudden chaunges and motions of the ayre  
 cauſed by the inauence of the planetes in the equalitie of the  
 daye and nyght beyng there in maner bothe of one lengthe  
 throughout all the yeaer, for ſomuche as they are neare vnto  
 the Equinoctiall lyne as we haue ſayde before. Their hou-  
 ſes are made of trees, couered and after their maner cherched  
 with the ſtalles of certayne tologhe herbes. To the palapce  
 of *Tumanama*, was onely one houſe adherent, and that euen  
 as bygge as the palapce it ſelfe. Eyrther of theſe houſes were  
 in length a hundreth and twentie paſes, and in bredth ſyfte  
 paſes as owze men meaſured them. In theſe two houſes the  
 kyng was accuſtomed to muſter his men as often as he  
 prepared an armye. When *Tumanama* therfore, was thus tak-  
 en captiue with all his *Sardanapaneall* famelye, the *Poe-  
 chorroſians* bragged and threatened hym beyng nowe bounde,  
 that he ſhulde ſhortly bee hanged. The other kynges alſo his  
 brotherers, reioyſed at his myſfortune. Whereby owze men  
 perceaued that *Tumanama* was noleſſe troubleſome to his neigh-  
 bours, then was *Pacta* to the kinges of the ſouthe ſyde of the  
 montaynes. *Vaſebus* alſo the better to pleaſe them, thearened  
 hym greuouſly: But in dedde intended no euell toward him.  
 He ſpake therfore ſharply vnto hym with theſe wordes:  
 Thou ſhalte nowe ſuffer punyſhment thou cruell tyranne, for  
 thy pryde and abhominations. Thou ſhalte knowe of what  
 poure the chryſtians are whom thou haſte ſoo contemned and  
 thearead to drawe by the heare of their heades to the nexte  
 ryuer and there to drowne them as thou haſte often tymes  
 made thy haunte amonge thy naked ſlaues. But thou thy  
 ſelfe ſhalte fyrſte feele that whiche thou haſte prepared for o-  
 ther. And herewith commaunded hym to bee taken vppe.

kyng *Tuma-  
 nama* is take  
 priſoner.

The cauſe of  
 vehemente  
 wyndes nere  
 the Equinoes-  
 iall.

kyng *Tuma-  
 nama* his  
 palapce.

vaſebus his  
 wordes to  
 kyng *Tuma-  
 nama*.

## The thyrd lecade.

Neuerthelesse grynge a priuie taken of pardon to them  
 whiche layde handes on him. Thus unhappye *Tumans*, fear-  
 ryng and beleynge that *Vaschus* had mence in erneste as he  
 commanded, fell prostrate at his feete and with teares de-  
 syred pardon: Protestinge that he neuer spake any suche  
 woordes. But that perhappes his noble men in their droom:  
 kennede had so abused their toonges whiche he coulde not  
 rule. For their wyues although they bee not made of grapes  
 yet are they of force to make men dronken. He declared fur-  
 thermore that the other kynges his boztherers had of ma-  
 lice lympled suche lyes of hym enuyng his fortune bycause  
 he was of greater poure then they. Whiche humbly despyng  
*Vaschus* that as he tooke hym to bee a wise byctouer, soo to  
 gyue no credyite vnto their vntruste and malycious complain-  
 tes. Addynge herevnto that if it wolde please hym to par-  
 don hym not hauinge offended, he wolde bringe him great  
 plentie of gold. Thus layinge his ryght hande on his breast,  
 he swore by the sonne, that he euer loued and feared the  
 chrystians sence he fyrste harde of their fame and byctoyes:  
 Especially when he harde sape that they had *Michanus*, that  
 is, swoordes sharper then thearle, and such as cutte in pier-  
 ces al thynges that coomme in their waye. Then directynge  
 his eyes towarde *Vaschus* who had his swoorde in his hand,  
 he spake thus. Who (excepte he were owte of his wytte)  
 dare lyfe vypp his hande ageynste this swoorde of yowres  
 wherwith yowe are able with one strooke to cleaue a man  
 from the heade to the nauell. Lette no man therfore perswade  
 yowe (o moste myghtye victouer) that euer suche woordes  
 proceded owte of my mouthe. As *Tumans* with trembling  
 spake these woordes, therewith swalowyng downe the knot  
 of deathe, *Vaschus* seemed by his teares to bee moued to com-  
 passion: And speakyng to hym with chearefull countenance  
 commaunded hym to bee loosed. This doone, he sente imme-  
 diarly to his palatce for. xxx. poundes weyght of pure gold  
 artyscially wrought into sundry ouches whiche his wyues  
 and concubynes vsed to weare. Also the thyrd daye folow-  
 yng, his noble men and gentylmen sent threescore pound-  
 des weight of golde for their fyne and ransumme. *Tumans*  
 beyng demanded wher they had that gold, answered that it  
 was not gathered in his dominions But that it was broughte  
 his

O derunt quem  
 metuunt.

kyng *Tumas*  
 namia his  
 woordes.

*Tumans*  
 is pardoned.  
 xxx. pounde  
 weyghte of  
 wroughte  
 golde.  
 lx. poundes  
 weight of  
 golde.

his auncestours from the ryuer *Comogrus* toward the southe. But the *Pocchorrosians* & other his enemies, sayd that he lyed: Affirmyng that his kingdome was ryche in golde. *Tumanama* on the contrary part, instantly protested that he neuer knewe any golde myne in all his dominions. yet denyed not but that there hath sumtimes byn found certayne smaule graines of golde, to the gatherynge wherof, he neuer had any regard, because they coulde not gette it without great & longe labour. Whyle these thynges were dooinge, the sycke men whiche *Vaschus* had lefte in the village of *Pocchorrosa*, came to hym the. viii. day of the Calendes of January in the yeaere of Christe. M. D. XXXIII. bringyng with them certayne labourers from the kynges of the southe with sundrye instrumentes to dygge the grounde and gather golde. Thus passyng ouer the day of the natiuite of Christ without bodely labour, vppon sainte Streuens daye he brought certeyne mynners to the syde of a hyll not farre dystance from the palaice of *Tumanama*, where (as he saith) he perceaued by the coloure of the earth that it was lykely to bynge furthe golde. When they had dygged a pytte not past a hand breadth and a halfe, and syfted the earthe therof, they founde certayne smaule graynes of golde no bygger then lintell seedes, amountyng to the weyght of twelue graynes as they prouyd with their balances of assaye before a notarie and wyrtesse that the better credytte myghte bee gyuen therto. Wherby they argued that the rychenesse of that lande was agreable to the report of the bozherers, although *Vaschus* coulde by noo meanes cause *Tumanama* to confesse the same. They suppose that he noz thyng esteemed so smaule a portyon. But other saye that he denyed his countrey to bee frutefull of golde, leasse by reason therof the desyre of golde, myght intyse othere men to inhabyte his kyngdome, as in dedde the seely kyng was a prophet in soo thinkyng. For they chose that and the region of *Pocchorrosa* to inhabyte, and determyned to buylde towynes in them bothe, if it shulde so please the kyng of *Cassyle*: As well that they myght bee baytinge places and byrailyng houses for suche as shulde iozney toward the southe, as also that both the regions were frutfull and of good grounde to beare frutes and trees. Intendyng nozwe therfore to departe from

They abo-  
hoire labour.

The coloure  
of the golden  
earthe and a  
tryall of the  
same.

## The thyrde decade.

thence, he tried the earth by chaunce in an other place, where the colour of the ground with certayne shyninge stones, seemed to bee a token of golde. where causyng a smaule pitte to bee dygged lytell beneath the upper cruste of the earth, he founde somuche golde as weyghed that pyece of golde whiche the Spaniards caule *Castellatum aureum*, and is commonly cauled *Pesús*, but not in one grayne. Reioysyng at these tokens in hope of great riches, he badde *Tumana* to be of good comforte, promysyng hym that he wolde bee his frende and defender, soo that he troublede not any of the kynges whiche were frendes to the Christians. He also perswaded hym to gather plentye of golde. Summe saye that he ledde awaye all *Tumana* his women, and spoyled him leaste he shuld rebell. yet he deliuered his soonne to *Vaschus* to bee broughte vppon with othere men, to learne their language and relygion, that he myght thereafter the better vse his helpe as well in all thynges that he shulde haue to doo with othere men, as also more polyphe rule, and obtayne the loue of his owne subiectes. *Vaschus* at this tyme fell into a vehement feuer by reason of excesse of labour, immoderate watchyng, and hunger. In somuche that departyng from thence, he was sayne to bee borne vppon mennes backs in shiers of golde smyng cotton. Lykewyse also many of his souldiers whiche were so weakke that they coulde nother go nor stonde. To this purpose they vsed the helpe of thynhabytantes, who shewed the felues in all thynges wyllyng and obedyente. Also summe of them whiche were somewhat feeble and not able to traualle, although not greuously sycke, were ledde by the armes vntyll they came to the domynion of kyng *Comogrus* a greate frende to the Christians, of whom wee haue largely made mention before. At *Vaschus* comyng thither, he founde that the owlde kyng was deade, and his soonne (whome we so praysed for his wisedome) to raygne in his steade: And that he was baptised by the name of Charles. The palayce of this *Comogrus*, is situate at the foote of a shepe hyll well cultured. Hauyng towarde the southe a playne of twelue leages in breadth and bearyng frutefull. This playne, they caule *Zauana*. Beyond this, are the great and hyghe montaynes whiche deuyde the two seas wherof we haue spoken before. Oute of the shepe hylls, spryngeth the ryuer *Comogrus*, whiche runneth

Tokens of  
great plentye  
of golde.

*Vaschus* fau-  
leth sicke.

Feeblenes of  
hunger and  
watchyng.

kyng *Como-  
grus* frende  
to the Christi-  
ans.

The large &  
fruteful plain  
of *Zauana*.

The ryuer  
*Comogrus*.

nethe throught the sayde playne to the hyghe montaynes, re-  
ceauynge into his chanell by their valleys, all the other ry-  
uers, & so fauleth into the south sea. It is distant from *Dari-  
ena*, aboute threescore and tenne leages toward the weste.

As owere men therfore came to these parties, kynge *Comogrus*  
(otherwyse cauled *Charles* by his christian name) mette the  
ioyfully and enterpayned them honorably, geuyng them  
their fyll of pleasaunte meares and drynkes. He gaue also to  
*Vaschus*, twenty pounde weyght of wrought golde. *Vaschus* re-  
compensed him with thinges which he esteemed muche more:  
As axes and sundry kyndes of carpenters tooles. Also a soule-  
diours cloke, and a faure herte wrought with needle woork.  
By these gyftes, *Comogrus* thought hym selfe to bee halfe a  
god amonge his boztherers. *Vaschus* at his departynge from  
hense, earnestly charged *Comogrus* and the other kynges to re-  
maine faithfull and obedient to the christian king of Castile,  
if they desyred to lyue in peace and quietnesse: And that they  
shulde hereafter more diligently applye them selues to the ga-  
theringe of golde to bee sente to the great christian *Tiba* (that  
is) kyng. Declaryng further, that by this meanes they shuld  
bothe gette them and their posterity a parrone and defender  
ageinst their enemyes, and also obteyne great abundaunce of  
pore thinges. These assayes thus happely achined, he went  
forwarde on his vyage to the palace of kyng *Ponchas*, where  
he founde foure younge men whiche were come from *Dariena*  
to certify hym that there were certayne shippes comynge from  
*Hispaniola* laden with vyttayles and other necessaries. Where-  
fore takynge with him twentie of his moste lusty souldiers, he  
made haste to *Dariena* with longe toornes: leauinge the respy-  
due behynd him to solow at their leasure. He writeth that he  
came to *Dariena* the. xiiii. Cal. of Fe. An. 1514. The date of his  
letter is: From *Dariena*, the. iiii. day of march. He writeth in  
the same letter, that he had many sore conflicts, & that he  
was yett neyther wounded, or losse any of his men in the bat-  
taile. And therfore in al his large letter, there is not one lease  
without thanks geuyng to almyghty god for his deliuey  
and preservation from so many imminent perils. He attempt-  
ed no enterpryse or tooke in hande any viage without thur-  
uocation of god and his holy saintes. Thus was *Vaschus* Bal-  
boa of a vyolente *Boliath*, tourned into *Hekseus*: And frome

xx. pounde  
weyght of  
wrought gold

*Vaschus* re-  
turneth to  
*Dariena*

The good  
fortune of  
*Vaschus*

*Vaschus* was  
turned from  
Solitary to  
Eliens.

## The thyrd decade.

*Anteus* too *Hercules* the conquerour of monsters. *Beynge* therefore thus tourned from a ralshe royster to a polyppe and discrete capitayne, he was iudged woorthye to bee aduanced to greate honoure. By reason whereof, he was bothe receaued into the kynges fauour, and therevppon created the generall or Liuerenaunt of the kynges army in those Regions. Thus much haue I gathered bothe by the letters of certeyne my faythefull frendes beinge in *Dariena*, and also by woorde of mouth of suche as came lately frome thense. It pottle holynes desyre to knowe what I thynke herein, Suerly as by suche thynges as I haue seene, I belue these thynges to bee trewe, euen so thorder and agreinge of *Vaschus* and his companions warrelke letters, seeme to confirme the same. The Spanyarde therefore shall not neede hereafter with vndermynnyng the earth with intollerable labour to breake the bones of owre mother. and enter many myles into her bowels, and with innumerable daungers cut in sunder hole mountaynes to make a waye to the court of infernall *Pluto*, to byngge from thense wycked golde the seede of innumerable mischeues, withowt the whiche notwithstandinge we may nowr scarcely leade a happy lyfe sithe iniquitie hath so preuayled and made vs slaues to that wherof we are lordes by nature: The Spanyarde (I say) shall not neede with such trauayles & difficultie to dygge farre into the earth for gold, but shal fynde it plentifully in maner in the vpper crust of the earth, or in the sandes of ryuers dyed vppe by the heate of sommer, onely washtynge the earth softly frome the same: And shall with lyke facillite gather plentie of pearles. Certenly the reuerent antiquitie (by al the Cosmographers attene obteyned not soo greate a benefyte of nature, nor yet aspired to the knowleage hereof, bycause there came neuer man before owte of owre known worlde to these vknownen nations: At the leasse, with a poure of men, by force of armes, in maner of conquest: wheras otherwise nothyng can be gotten here, forasmuch as these nations are for the most part seuered defenders of theyr patrimonies, and cruell to straungers, in no condition admittinge them otherwyse then by conquest: especially the fierce *Canibales* or *Caribes*. For these wylye hunters of men, gyue them selues to none other kynde of exercise but onely to manhuntinge and yllage after theyr manner.

O flatteryng  
fortune, looke  
his death in  
the booke of  
the Ilande  
lately founde.

The earth is  
owre general  
mother.

The court  
of infernall  
Pluto.

There is a  
better waye  
then this.

The Spani-  
ardes con-  
questes.

Manhunters.

ner. At the commynge therfore of oovre men into theyr regi-  
ons, they loke as suerly to haue them faule into their snares  
as if they were hartes or wylde bores: and with no lesse con-  
fydence like their lippes secretly in hope of their praye. If  
they gette the vpper hande, they eate them greedely: If they  
mystruste them selues to bee the weaker parte, they truste to  
theyr feete, and flye swifter then the wynde. Ageyne, yf the  
matter bee tryed on the water, as well the women as men can  
dye and swimme, as though they had byn euer brought by  
and fedde in the water. It is noo maruayle therefore yf the  
large tracte of these regions haue byn hytherto vnknewen.  
But nowe sithe it hath pleased God to discouer the same in  
oovre tyme, it shall becomme vs to shewe oovre naturall loue to  
mankynde and deuotie to God, to endeuoure oovre selues to  
brynge them to ciuilitie and true religion, to thyncrease of  
Christes flocke, to the confusion of Infidels and the Deuill  
theyr father who delyterthe in oovre destruction as he hath  
doone frome the begynnynge. By the good successe of these  
first frutes, oovre hope is, that the Christian religion shall  
steeche forth her armes very farre. Which thyng shalde the  
sooner coome to passe yf all menne to theyr poure (especially  
Christian princes to whom it chiefly perteyneth) wolde put  
theyr handes to the plowe of the lordes vineyarde. The har-  
uest suerly is greate, but the woorkemen are but fewe. As we  
haue sayde at the begynnynge, yowre holynes shall hereafter  
nooyshe many myriades of broodes of chekins vnder yowre  
wynges. But let vs nowe retorne to speake of *Beragua* beinge  
the weste syde of *Vraba*, and first founde by *Colonus* the Admi-  
rall, then vnforgunately gouerned by *Diego Nicuesa*, and nowe  
lesse in maner desolate: with the other large regions of those  
prouinces brought from theyr wylde and beauly rudenes to  
ciuilitie and true religion.

The fierse-  
nesse of the  
Cauibales.

Oovre duty to  
god, and na-  
turall loue to  
mankynde.

The office of  
Christian  
princes.  
The harvest  
is great, &c.

*Beragua.*

*Nicuesa.*

¶ The fourth booke of the  
thynde Decade.

**T** Was determyned (moste holy father) to haue  
proceeded no further herein, but that our fierce  
ipacke yet remaynyng in my mynde, wolde  
not suffer me to cease. Wheras I haue therfore  
declared howe *Beragua* was first founde by  
*Colonus*



## The thyrd decade.

The fourth  
nauigation of  
Colonus the  
Admirall.

From Spaine  
to Hispaniola  
a thousande  
and two hun-  
dred leagues

The flowre  
of this Ilande  
of Guanassa.

Simple  
people.

A greate  
marchaunt.

Colonus, my thincke I shulde commette a heynous cryme if I shuld defraude the man of the due commendations of his nauigation, of his cares and troubles, and finally of the daungerous and perels, whiche he susteyned in that nauigation. Therefore in the yere of Christe. 1502. in the. vi. daye of the Ides of Maye, he hoysed vpp his sayles and departed from the Ilandes of *Gades* with. iiii. shippes of fyfte oz. iii. score tunne a peece, with a hundredeth thre score and tenne me, and came with prosperous wynde to the Ilandes of *Canarie* within fise daies folowinge, from thence arriuinge the. xvi. day at the Ilande of *Dominica* beinge the chiefe habitation of the *Tanibales*, he sayled from *Dominica* to *Hispaniola* in fyue oz. ther daies. Thus within the space of. xxvi. daies, with prosperous wynde and by the wyfte faule of the Ocean from the East to the west, he sayled from Spaine to *Hispaniola*: Which course is counted of the mariners to bee no lesse then a thousande and two hundredeth leagues. He sayled but a whyle in *Hispaniola*, whether it were wyllingly, oz that he were so admonished of the viceroie. Directing therefore his wyage from thence towarde the weste, leauyng the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Jamaica* on his ryght hande towarde the north, he wyrteth that he chaunced vppon an Ilande moze southeuarde then *Jamaica*, whiche the inhabitants caule *Guanassa*, so floreynginge and frutefull that it myghte seeme an earthlye *Paradyse*. Coastynge alonge by the shores of this Ilande, he mette two of the *Canoas* oz boates of those prouinces, whiche were drawne with two naked slaues ageynst the streame. In these boates, was carryed a ruler of the Ilande with his wyfe and chyl dren, all naked. The slaues seeynge owze men a lande, made signes to them with proude countenance in their maisters name, to stande owte of the waye, and threathned them if they wolde not gyue place. Their symple is suche that they nother feared the multitude oz poure of owze men, oz the greatnes and straungenes of owze shippes. They thought that owze men wolde haue honoured their maister with like reuerence as they did. Owze men had intelligēce at the length that this ruler was a greate marchaunte whiche came to the marke from oher coastes of the Ilande. For they crecepte bynge and sellynge by exchaunge with their confines. He had also with him good stoor of suche ware as they stande in

in neede of or take pleasure in: as laton belles, rasers, kny-  
ues, and hatchettes made of a certeyne sharpe yelowc bypgh  
stone, with handles of a stronge kynd of woodde. Also many  
other necessary instrumentes with kychen stuffe and vesselles  
for all necessary vles. Lykewyse sheetes of gossampine cotton  
wrought of sundrye colours. Wyse men tooke hym prysoner  
with all his famely. But *Colonus* commaunded hym to bee lo-  
fed shortly after, and the greatest parte of his goodes to bee  
restored to wyinne his fryndeshippe. Beinge here instructed of  
a lande lpyng furthor toward the southe, he tooke his vy-  
age thither. Therfore lytle more then tennē myles distant frō  
hence, he founde a large lande whiche the inhabitants cauled  
*Quiriquetana*: But he named it *Ciamba*. When he wente a lande  
and commaunded his chaplaine to saye masse on the sea ban-  
kes, a great confluence of the naked inhabitants flocked thi-  
ther symple and without feare, brinkyng with them plen-  
ty of meate and freshe water, marueplynge at owre men as  
they had byn summe straunge miracle. When they had presen-  
ted their giftes, they wente sumwhat backwarde and made  
lowe curtesy after their maner bowinge their heades and bo-  
dyes reuerently. He recompensed their gentylnes rewardinge  
them with other of owre thynges, as counters, bralletes  
and garlandes of glasse and counterfete stoones, lookyng  
glasses, nedelles, and pynnes, with suche other trache, whi-  
che seemed vnto them precious marchaundies. In this great  
tracte there are two regions wherof the one is cauled *Tala* and  
the other *Mala*. He writeth that all that lande is very fayre  
and holsome by reason of the excellent temperatnesse of the  
ayre. And that it is inferiour to no lande in frutefull ground  
beinge partly full of montaines, and partly large playnes:  
Also replenyshed with many goodly trees, holsome herbes,  
and frutes, continuynge greene and flozzyng all the hole  
yeare. It beareth also verye many holy trees and pyncle  
trees. Also, vii. kyndes of date trees wherof summe are frute-  
full and summe barren. It bringeth furth lykewyse of it selfe  
*Pelgoris* and wilde bynes laden with grapes euen in the wood-  
des amonge other trees. He saythe furthermore that there is  
suche abundaunce of other pleasaunte and profitable frutes,  
that they passe nor of bynes. Of one of thole kyndes of date  
trees, they make certeyne longe and brode swozdes and dar-  
tes,

The region  
of Queriques  
tana or Ci-  
amba.

Gentle peo-  
ple.

The regions  
of Tala and  
Mala.

Seuen kyn-  
des of date  
trees,  
wyld vines.

The thyrde decade.

Microbalanco

Hydes and  
foules.

people of  
goodly stature

They paynt  
theyr bodies

The swyfte  
course of the  
sea from the  
East to the  
West.  
Para.

Pressing wa-  
ter in the sea.

fishes and  
compasses

tes. These regions beare also go Sampyne trees here and  
here commonly in the woodds. Lyke wise Microbalanco of sun-  
dry kyndes, as those which the physicians caule Embicos and  
Obchulos. Marrium also, Iucca, Ages, and Butiras, lyke vnto those  
whiche we haue sayde before to bee founde in other regions  
in these coastes. The same noore hath also Lyons, Teygers,  
Bactes, Ages, Boates, and dyuers other beastes. Lyke-  
wise sundry kyndes of hydes and foules: Cynge the  
whiche they keepe onely them to franke and ferde, whiche  
are in colour, bygues, and taste, muche lyke vnto ome pe-  
heanes. He saith that thyn inhabitants are of high and good-  
ly stature, well lynned and proportioned both men and wo-  
men: Couerynge their priuie partes with fyne breeches of  
go Sampyne cotton brought with dyuers colours. And that  
they may seeme the more cumple and bewtifull (as they take  
it) they paynte their bodies redde and blacke with the uice  
of certeyne apples whiche they plante in their gardens for  
the same purpose. Summe of them paynte their hole bodies:  
summe but parte: and other summe drawe the portraictures,  
of herbes, floures, and knottes, euery one as seemeth best  
to his owne phantasie. Their language differeth hertelye  
from theirs of the Ilandes nere aboute them. From these  
regions, the waters of the sea ranne with as full course to-  
warde the West, as if it had ben the faule of a swyfte riu-  
er. Neuertheles he determined to searche the East partes of  
this lande, resoluyng in his mynde that the regions of Pa-  
ri and Os Dracnis with other coastes founde before toward  
the East, shulde bee nere therabout as in dede they were.  
Departynge therfore from the large region of Quiriquetana the  
xiii. daye of the calendes of September, when he had sailed  
thirtie leaques, he founde a ryuer without the mouth wher-  
of he drew frethe water in the sea. Where also the shoale  
was so cleane withowte rockes, that he founde grounde e-  
uery where, where he myght aptely caste anchor. He witteth  
that the swifte course of the Ocean was so belement and con-  
trarye, that in the space of fourte dayes he coulde scartelye  
sayle thre score and tenne leaques, and that with muche dis-  
turbance with many ferches and compasses, fyndynge him-  
selfe to bee sometimes repulled and dyuen backe by the  
poltent course of the sea when he wolde haue taken lande  
toward

toward the sucking, leasse perhappes wanderynge in vn-  
 knowne coastes in the darcknesse of the nyght, he myghte  
 bee in daunger of shipwracke: He wisteth that in the space  
 of cyght leagues, he founde thre great and fayre ryuers by-  
 pon the bankes wherof, there grewe reedes bigger then a  
 mannes thigh. In these ryuers was also greete plentye of  
 fysh and great tortoyles: Askeuise in many places, multi-  
 tudes of Crocodiles lyng in the lande, and vanyng to take  
 the heate of the soone: Besyde dyuers other kyndes of  
 beastes wherunto he gaue no names. He sayth also that the  
 fowle of that lande is very diuers and variable: being sum-  
 where stoupe and full of tough and craggie promontories of  
 porphires reachyng into the sea. And in other places as stur-  
 full as maye bee. They haue also diuers knyghts and rulers.  
 In summe places they caule a kynge *Cacicus*: in other places  
 they caule hym *Quebi*, and sumwhere *Isa*. Suche as haue  
 behaued them selues valiantly in the warres agensse their  
 enemies, and haue their faces full of scarres, they caule *ce-  
 gras*, and honour them as the antiquitie dyd the goddes whi-  
 che they cauled *Heroes*, supposed to bee the soules of suche  
 men as in their lyfe tyme excelled in vertue and noble actes.  
 The common people, they caule *Chiu*: and a man, they caule  
*Hocum*. When they saye in their language, take man, they say  
*Hoppa home*. After this, he came to an other ryuer apie to beate  
 great fowles: Besoze the mouth wherof, lye foure smaile  
 ylandes full of flourishing and fruitfull trees. These ylandes  
 he named *Quatuor tempora*, from hence saylpyng toward the  
 East for the space of. xii. leagues spyll agensse the byolent  
 southe of the water, he founde twelue other smaile ylandes.  
 In the whiche because he founde a newe kynde of frutes  
 muche like vnto owze lemons, he cauled them *Limonates*.  
 Wanderynge yet further the same waye for the space of. xii.  
 leagues, he founde a great haueu enterpyng into the land af-  
 ter the maner of a goulfe the space of thre leagues, and in  
 maner as brode, into the whiche fell a great ryuer. Here was  
 a newe losse afterwarde when he soughte *Beragua*: By reason  
 wherof they cauled it *Rio de los perdidos*: that is, the ryuer of the  
 losse men. Thus *Colonus* the Admirall yet further con-  
 tinuyng his course agensse the surfe of the sea, founde manye  
 hye mountaynes and horrible valleys, with dyuers ryuers  
 and

faire ryuers.  
 Great reedes

Great tortoy-  
 les.

Dyuers land  
 guages.

Heroes

Quatuor tem-  
 pora.

Twelue y-  
 lades named  
 Limonates.

Rio de los per-  
 didos,

## The thyrde decade.

The region  
of Quicuri.

The haven  
of Carial or  
Mirobalanus

Civile and hu-  
mane people

and hauens, from all the whiche (as he saythe) proceeded  
sweete sauers greatly recreatyng and confortyng nature.  
In so muche that in all this long tracte there was not one  
of his men diseased vntyll he came to a region whiche thin-  
habitanres caule *Quicuri*, in the whiche is the haven cauled  
*Carial*, named *Mirobalanus* by the admyrall bycause the *Miroba-*  
lane trees are native in the regions therabout. In this haven  
of *Carial*, there came about two hundred of thinhabitanres  
to the sea syde with euerye of them thre or foure darters in  
their handes: yet of condition gentell enoughe, and not re-  
fusyng straungers. Their comyng was for none other pur-  
pose then to knowe what this newe nation mente, or what  
they broughte with them. When owere men had gyuen them  
sygnes of peate, they came swymmyng to the shypes and  
despyred to barter with them by exchaunge. The admyrall to  
allure them to frendshippe, gaue them many of owere thinges:  
But they refused them, suspectyng summe disceate thereby  
bycause he wolde not receyue theirs. They broughte all by  
sygnes: for one understoode not a woorde of the others lan-  
guage. Suche gyftes as were sente them, they lefte on the  
shore and wolde take no part therof. They are of suche ciu-  
lite and humanyte, that they esteeme it more honorable to  
gyue then to take. They sente owere men two younge women  
beinge byrgines, of comendable fauour and goodly stature,  
sygnifyng vnto them that they myghte take them awaye  
with them if it were their pleasure. These women after the  
maner of their countrey, were couered from their ancles sum-  
what aboue their priuie partes with a certeyne clothe made  
of goffampine cotton. But the men are al naked. The women  
use to cutte their heare: But the men lette it growe on the  
hynder partes of their heades, and cutte it on the fore  
parte. Their longe heare, they bynde vppon the forepartes, &  
winde it in sundry coloures as owere maydes are accustomed to  
do. The virgins which were sente to the Admyrall he decked  
in fayre apparrell, & gaue them many gyftes, and sent theym  
home ageyne. But lykelike all these rewardes and apparrell  
they left vppon the shore bycause owere men had refused their  
gyftes. Yet tooke he two men away with him (and those ve-  
ry wyllyngly) that by lernyng the Spanyshe tonge, he might  
afterwarde vse them for interpretours. He considered that  
the

the tractes of these coastes were not greatly troublede with  
 behement motions or ouerflowynges of the sea, forasmuche  
 as trees growe in the sea not farre frome the shore, euen as  
 they doo vppon the bankes of ryuers. The which thyng al  
 so other doo affirme whiche haue latelyer searched those coas  
 tles, declaring that the sea riseth and fauleth but lyttle there  
 aboute. He sayth furthermore, that in the prospecte of this  
 lande, there are trees engendred euen in the sea, which after  
 that they are growen to any height, bende downe the toppes  
 of theyr branches into the grounde: which embracing them  
 canserth other branches to sprynge owte of the same, and take  
 roote in the earth, bringynge forth trees in theyr kynde suc  
 cessiuely as dyd the first roote from whence they had theyr o  
 riginall, as do also the settes of vines when onely bothe the  
 endes therof are put into the grounde. Plinie in the twelfth  
 booke of his natural historie maketh mention of suche trees,  
 describynge them to bee on the lande, but not in the sea. The  
 Admirall wytyeth also that the lyke beastes are engendered  
 in the coastes of *Cariak*, as in other prouinces of these regions,  
 and such as we haue spoken of before. Yet that there is one  
 founde here in nature much differinge from the other. This  
 beaste is of the byggenes of a greate moonkepe, but with a  
 tayle muche longer and bygger. It lyueth in the wooddes,  
 and remoueth from tree to tree in this maner. Hangynge by  
 the tayle vppon the braunche of a tree, & gatherynge strength  
 by swayynge her body twyse or thysle too and fro, she casteth  
 her selfe from branche to branche and so from tree to tree as  
 though she flew. An archer of owres hurt one of them. Who  
 perceauinge her selfe to be wounded, leapt downe from the  
 tree, and fiercely set on hym which gaue her the wounde, in  
 so muche that he was fayne to defende hym selfe with his  
 sword. And thus by chaunce cuttyng of one of her armes,  
 he tooke her, and with muche ado brought her to the ships  
 where within a whyle, shee waxed tame. Whyle shee was  
 thus kepte and bownde with cheynes, certeyne other of our  
 hunters hadde chased a wyld boze owte of the maryshes nere  
 vnto the sea syde. For hunger and delyre of fleshe, caused the  
 to take double pleasure in huntynge. In this meane tyme o  
 ther which remayned in the shippes, goinge a lande to recre  
 ate them selues, tooke this moonkey with them. Who, as

syde.

Trees gro  
 wyng in the  
 sea after a  
 straunge sort.

Plinie

A straunge  
 kynde of  
 moonkeys.

A moonkeye  
 seyghteth  
 with a man.

## The thyrd decade.

**A conflict betwene a monkey and a wyld boze.**

**The bodies of kynge dyed & reserued**

**Cerabaro.**

**Aburema.**

**Cheynes of golde.**

**Plentie of golde.**

**Fine villages rich in gold.**

**Crownes of beastes claws**

soone as thee had espied the boze, set up her byssels & made towarde her. The boze lykewyse shooke his byssels & whetted his teethe. The monkey furiously invaded the boze, mappynge her tayle about his body, and with her arme rescued of her victourer, helde hym so fast aboute the throte, that he was suffocate. These people of *Caria*, hse to dyve the deade bodies of theyr princes vppon hurdels, and so rescue them inuolued in the leaues of trees. As he went forwarde about twentie leagues from *Caria*, he founde a goulfe of such largenes that it conteyned .xii. leagues in compasse. In the mouth of this goulfe were foure lyttle Ilandes so nere together, that they made a safe haven to enter into the goulfe. This goulfe is the haven which we sayde before to be cauled *Cerybaro* of thynhabitantes. But they haue nowe learned that only the lande of the one syde therof, syngre on the ryght hande at the enterynge of the goulfe, is cauled by that name. But that on the lefte syde, is cauled *Aburema*. He saythe that all this goulfe is ful of fruteful Ilandes wel replenyshed with goodly trees: And the grounde of the sea to bee verye cleane without rockes, and commodious to cast anker: Lykewyse the sea of the goulfe to haue greate abundance of fysh: and the lande of both the sydes to bee inferior to none in frutfulness. At his fyrst arryvyng, he espied two of thynhabitantes haupngs cheynes about theyr neckes, made of ouches (which they caule *Quarines*) of base golde artificially wrought in the formes of Eagles, and lions, with dyuers other beastes and foules. Of the thys *Cariatians* whiche he brought with hym from *Caria*, he was enformed that the regions of *Cerabaro* and *Aburema* were rich in golde: And that the people of *Caria* haue all theyr golde frome thense for exchaunge of other of theyr thynge. They tolde hym also, that in the same regions there are foue byllages not farre from the sea syde, whyle inhabitants apply them selues onely to the gathering of gold. The names of these byllages are these: *Chirara*, *Purea*, *Chirara*, *Lureche*, *Alamea*. All the men of the prouince of *Cerabaro*, go naked, and are paynted with dyuers coloures. They take great pleasure in wearynge garlandes of flowers, and crownes made of the claws of Lions and Tygers. The women couer on ly theyr prync partes with a speller of goatampine cotton. Deuouringe from hence and aduynge byll by the same shore for

for the space of thre leagues, he came to another rynde,  
where he espyed aboute thre hundred naked men in a com-  
pany. When they sawe the shippes drawe neare the lande,  
they cryed owte aloud, with euell countenances takinge  
theyr worden swordes and halynge darts, takinge also  
water in theyr mouthes and spouryng the same ageynst our  
men: wherby they seemed to insinuate that they wolde re-  
ceiue no condicion of peace or haue ologh: to doo with them.  
Here he commaunded certeyne pieces of ordnanee to be shot  
of toward them: yet so to ouershute them, that none myght  
be hurt thereby. For he euer determyned to deale quietly and  
peaceably with these newe nations. At the noyse therfore of  
the gunnes and syght of the spher, they fell downe to the  
grounde, and despyed peace. Thus enteringe into further  
frendshippes, they exchaunged theyr cheyues and ouches of  
golde for glasse and haukes belles and such other marchan-  
dies. They vse drummes or tymbrels made of the shelles of  
certeyne sea fyshes, wherewith they encourage theym selues  
in the warres. In this tract are these seuen ryuers, *Acateba*,  
*Quireba*, *Zobroba*, *Riquistin*, *Vrida*, *Duribba*, *Baragus*, in all the whiche,  
golde is founde. They defende them selues ageynste rayne  
and heate with certeyne great leaues of trees in the shade of  
clokes. Departinge from hense, he searched the coastes of  
*Ebetez*, and *Embigar*, into the which faule the goodly ryuers of  
*Zoboran* and *Cubigar*: And here ceaseth the plenty and frui-  
fulness of golde, in the tracte of fiftie leagues or there aboute.  
From hense onely thre leagues distant, is the tocke whiche  
in the vnforsunate discourse of *Nicols*, we sayde was cauled  
of oware men *Pignonem*. But of thynhabitantes the Region is  
cauled *Vibba*. In this tracte also aboute fyre leagues frome  
hense, is the haven whiche *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus* (wher-  
of we haue spoken before) in the region whiche thynhabin-  
tes caule *Xagaguar*. This region is very populous: but they  
go all naked. The kynge is paynted with blacke colours: but  
all the people with redde. The kynge and seuen of his noble  
men, had euery of them a lytle plate of golde hangynge at  
theyr noses, hylles downe vnto theyr lippes. And this they  
take for a rumly ornamente. The menne inclose theyr priue  
members in a shell: And the women couer theyr with a syl-  
uer of gossampine cotton ryed about theyr loppes. In theyr  
gardens

Supposed  
people.

Suns make  
peace.

Seuen golde  
ryuers

More where  
the plenty of  
golde endeth

*Pignonem*.

*Vibba*.

*Portus Bellus*.

paynted  
people.

A strange

sight.

A shee in the  
sleeve of a  
codpiece.

## The thyrde decade.

Crocodiles of  
sweete sa-  
uour.

Alcayr or Ba-  
bilon in Egypt

Shippes ea-  
ten with  
wormes.

Alexandria in  
Egypte.

Broma.

Hiebra.

Beragua.

gardens they nooysse a frute muche lyke the nutte of a pine tree: the whiche (as we haue sayde in an other place) groweth on a shrubbe muche lyke vnto an archhocke: But the frute is muche softer, and meate for a kynge. Also certeyne trees whiche beare gourdes, wherof we haue spoken befoze. This tree, they caule *Hibero*. In these coastes they mette sumtymes with Crocodiles lyinge on the sandes, the whiche when they fled, or tooke the water, they lefte a very sweete sauour behynde them sweeter then milke or *Cassoreum*. When I was sente ambassadour for the catholike king of Castile to the Soltane of Babilon or Alcayr in Egypte, the inhabitants nere vnto the ryuer of *Nilus* coulde me the like of their female Crocodiles. Affyrmyng furthermoze that the fatte or sewette of them is equall in sweetnes with the pleasure of gummes of *Arabie*. But the Admirall was nowe at the length enforced of necessitye to departe from hense, as well for that he was no longer able to abyde the contrarpye and vyolente course of the water, as also that his shippes were daily moze and moze putrified and eaten thowgh with certeyne wormes whiche are engendred of the warmenes of the water in all those tractes nere vnto the Equinoctial line. The Venetians caule these wormes *Bissas*. The same are also engendred in two hauens of the cite of *Alexandria* in Egypt and destroye the shippes if they lye longe at anker. They are a cubit in length, and sumwhat moze: not passyng the quantitie of a fynger in bygnesse. The Spanysh mariner caueth this pestilence *Broma*. *Colonus* therfore whom befoze the great monsters of the sea coulde not feare, nowe fearyng this *Broma*, beyng also soore vered with the contrarpye faule of the sea, directed his course with the Ocean towarde the west, and came first to the ryuer *Hiebra*, distant onely two leagues from the ryuer of *Beragua*, because that was commodious to harborowe great shippes. This region is named after the ryuer, and is cauled *Beragua* the lesse; Bycause bothe the ryuers are in the dominion of the kyng, which inhabiteth the region of *Beragua*. But what chaunced vnto hym in this vyage on the ryghte hande and on the lefte, lette vs nowe declare. Whyle therfore *Colonus* the Admirall remayned yet in the ryuer *Hiebra*, he sent *Bertholomeus Colonus* his brother and lieutenant of *Hispaniola*, with the shyppe boates and thescoze and, viii.

men

men to the ryuer of *Beragus*, where the king of the region be-  
 inge naked and painted after the maner of the countrey, came  
 towarde them with a great multitude of men waypyng on  
 hym, but all vnarmed and without weapons, gyuinge also  
 signes of peace. When he approached neerer, and entered com-  
 munication with oware men, certeyne of his gentlemen nea-  
 rest aboute his person, remembreinge the maiestie of a king,  
 and that it stoode not with his honour to baryen stondeyng,  
 tooke a greatesoonne oware of the ryuer, w<sup>ch</sup> theynge an i<sup>n</sup> cub-  
 bynge it beayrdecently, & so put it vnder hym with humble  
 reuerence. The kyng thus spyryng, seemed with signes & to-  
 kens to insinuate that it shuld be lawfull for oware men to fear  
 the & biewe al the ryuers within his dominion. Wherefore, the  
 vi. day of the Ides of February, leauyng his barres with cer-  
 teyne of his company, he wente by lande a foote from the  
 bankes of *Beragus* vntyl he came to the ryuer of *Duraba*, whi-  
 che he assauredly to be richer in gold then eyther *Kiebra* or *Bera-  
 zus*. For gold is engendred in al the riuers of that land. In so  
 muche that amonge the rootes of the trees growyng by the  
 bankes of the ryuers, & amonge the stones left of the water,  
 also where so euer they dygged a hole or pyt in the grounde  
 not passe the deapthe of a handfull and a halfe, they founde  
 the earthe taken oware therof, myxt with golde. Where vpon  
 he determyned to fasten his foote there and to inhabyte.  
 Whiche theynge the people of the countrey perceauyng and  
 smellyng what inconueniencye and myschiefe myght thereof  
 ensue to their countrey if they shuld permytte straungers to  
 plant their habitation there, assembled a great array, and  
 with horrible oware crye assailed oware men (who had nowe  
 begonne to buylde houses) so desperately that they were  
 scarcely able to abyde the fyrre brunt. These naked barba-  
 rians at their fyrst appoche, vied onely synge and daries:  
 But when they came nearer to hande strookes, they foughte  
 with their wooden swoordes whiche they caule *us charis*, as  
 we haue sayd before. A man woulde not thinke what great  
 malice and wrath was kindred in their hartes agens oware  
 men: And with what desperate myndes they fought for the  
 defense of their libertie whiche they more esteeme then lyfe  
 or rycheffe. For they were nowe to boyde of all feare, and  
 conuenyng death, that they neyther feared longe bowes

how the king  
 of *Beragus*  
 enterreyned  
 the lycures  
 nauntie.

The reue-  
 rence to their  
 kyng.

solde in the  
 ryuer of *Du-  
 raba*.

Great plenty  
 of golde.

Synge and  
 daries.

Liberty more  
 esteemed than  
 ryches.

The thyrd detade.

or crosebowes, nor yet (whiche is mooste to be marueled) were any thyng discouraged at the terrible noyse of the gunnes shotte of from the Gypyes. They repyred once. But shortly after encreasynge their number, they returned more fiercely then at the fyrste. They woold haue byn contented to haue receyued oore men frendly as straungers, but not as inhabitours. The more instance that oore men were to remaine, so muche the greater multitude of bocherers flocked together dayly, disturbing the both nyght & daye sumtymes on the one syde & sumtymes on the other. The Gypys lying at anchor neare vnto the shore, warded them on the backe halfe. But at the length they were fayne to forsake this lande, and retourne backe the same way by the which they came. Thus with much dysculty and danger, they came to the Ilande of *Lanica* lyenge on the south syde of *Hispniola* and *Cuba*, with their Gypyes as full of holes as sieues, and so eaten with woodmes, as though they had byn bozed through with winnibles. The water entered so faste at the ryftes and holes, that if they had not with the paynfull labour of their handes empyed the same as faste, they were lyke to haue perished. Where as yet by this meanes they arriued at *Lanica*, althoughe in maner halfe deade. But their calamitie ceased not here. For as fast as their Gypyes leaked, their strength diminished so that they were no longer able to keepe them from synkynge. By reason wherof, faulynge into the handes of the barbarians, and inclosed withowte hope of departure, they led their lyues for the space of tenn monethes among the naked people more myserably then ever dyd *Acbe-menides* amonge the gyantes cauled *Cidopes*: rather lyuing the beinge eyther contented or satisfied with the strange meates of that Ilande: and that onely at such tymes as pleased the barbarians to gine them part of theirs. The deadly enmity and malice whiche these barbarous kinges beare one agaynst another, made greatly with oore men. For at suche tymes as they attempted warre agaynst their bocherers they woold sumtymes geue oore men parte of their breade to abyde them. But howe myserable and wretched a thyng it is to lyue onely with breade gotten by hegginge, yowre holyuells maye easily coniecture: Especially where all other accustomed food is lackynge, as wyne, oyle, fleshe, butter, cheese, and myke

The Spany-  
ardes are  
dyuyned to  
flight.

The Ilande  
of Jamaica.

A myserable  
case.

milke, wherwith the stomakes of oth<sup>r</sup> people of Europe haue  
 euer byn noozished euen from their cradelles. Therfore as  
 necessyty is subiecte to no lawe, so doothe it enforce men to  
 attempt desperate aduentures. And those the soner, which  
 by a certeyne nobylprie of nature do no further esteeme lyfe  
 then it is ioynd with summe felicity. *Bertholomeus Colonus* ther-  
 fore, intendynge rather to proue what god woold do with  
 hym and his companions in these extremities, then any lon-  
 ger to abide the same, commaunded *Diegus Mendez* his steward  
 with two guydes of that Ilande whome he had hyred with  
 promysse of great rewardes at their retourne, to enter in-  
 to one of their canoas and take their viage to *Hispaniola*.  
 Beynge thus tossed on the sea two and fty from rocke too  
 rocke by reason of the shortnesse and narrownes of the ca-  
 noa, they arriued at the length at the laste corner of *Hispa-*  
*niola*, beynge distant from *Jamaica* fortie leagues. Here his  
 guydes departynge from hym, returned ageine to *Colonus* for  
 the rewardes which he had promysed them. But *Diegus Men-*  
*dez* went on forwarde a foote vntyll he came to the cite cau-  
 led *Sanctus Dominicus* beynge the chiefe and heade cite of the  
 Ilande. The officers and rulers of *Hispaniola*, beinge enfor-  
 med of the matter, appoynted hym two shypes wherwith  
 he returned to his maister and coompanions. As he founde  
 them, soo came they to *Hispaniola*, verpe feeble and in maner  
 naked. What chaunced of them afterwarde, I knowe not  
 as yet. Lette vs nowe therfore leaue these particulers, and  
 speake sumwhat moze of generals. In al those tractes whi-  
 che we sayde here befoze to haue bynne found by *Colonus* the  
 Admyrall, bothe he hym selfe writeth, and all his coompa-  
 nyons of that vyage confesse, that the trees, herbes, and frui-  
 tes, are flozpyng and greene all the hole yeaere, and the ayer  
 so temperate and holesome, that of all his coompanye there  
 neuer fell one man sycke, nor yet were vered eyther with ex-  
 tremie coude or heate for the space of fyfte leagues from the  
 great hauch of *Cerabaro* to the ryuers of *Hiebra* and *Beragua*.  
 The inhabitants of *Cerabaro*, and the nations whiche are be-  
 twixte that and the sayde ryuers, applye not them selues to  
 the gatherynge of golde but onely at certeyne tymes of the  
 yeaere: And are very experte & cunnyng herein, as are oth<sup>r</sup>  
 myners of syluer and Iren. They knowe by longe experience

Necessytie  
 hath no lawe  
 howe farre  
 lyfe is to bee  
 esteemed.

A damage-  
 rous enter-  
 pryse.

*Sanctus Domi-*  
*nicus.*

Landes found  
 by *Colonus*.

Temperate  
 regions and  
 holisome aier

*Cerabaro.*  
*Hiebra.*  
*Beragua.*

Experte my-  
 ners.

E. ii.

in what

## The thyrde decade

A godly nature  
in golde.

Golde harvest.  
west.

hyghe and  
greate mountaynes.

Tyrhenium  
is now called  
Turcane.

Cap. J. Augusti  
ni.

Vraba.

Cerabaro.  
Fruitful mountaynes.

Apennini are  
mountaynes  
which diuise  
Italy into ii.  
partes.

Beragas.

The mountaynes of Beragua higher  
then the  
cloudes.

Montaynes  
of fiftie miles  
herygh.

In what places golde is mooste abundantly engendryed: as by the colour of the water of the ryuers, and such as faule fro the montaynes: And also by the colour of the earthe and stones. They beleue a certeyne godly nature to be in golde, for as muche as they neuer gather it excepte they vse certeyne religious expiations or pouerpynges, as to absteyn from women, and all kyndes of pleasures and delycate meates and drynkes, during all the tyme that their golden harned lasteth. They suppose that men do naturally lyue and dye as other beastes do, and therefore honour none other thyng as god. yet doo they praye to the soonne, and honour it when it ryseth. But lette vs now speake of the montaynes and situation of these landes. From all the sea banks of these regions, ceceding great and hyghe mountaynes are seene towarde the South; yet reachyng by a continuall tracte from the East into the west. By reason wherof I suppose that the two greate seas (wherof I haue spoken largely before) are deuided with these montaynes as it were with bulwarkes, leaste they shoulde soyne and repugne, as Italye deuideth the sea cauled *Tyrrhenium*, from the sea *Adriatyke*, which is now commonly cauled the goulfe of *Venes*. For whiche waye soo euer they sayled from the port cauled *Promontorium, S. Augustini* (whiche pertaineth to the *Portugales*) & prospecteth agaynst the sea *Atlantike* seven vnto *Vraba* and the haven *Cerabaro*, and to the furthest landes found hyther to westwarde, they had euer greate mountaynes in syght bothe nere hande and farr of, in all that longe tyme. These mountaynes were in summe place, smooth, pleasant and fruefull, full of goodly trees and herbes: And sumwher, hyghe, rogly, ful of rockes, and baten, as chauntyeth in the famous mountayne of *Taurus* in *Asia*, and also in dyuers coastes of our mountaynes of *Apennini*, and such other of lyke byggenesse. The rydgies also of these mountaynes are diuided with goodly and fayre balles. That part of the mountaynes which includeth the lymettes of *Beragua*, is thought to be hyghe then the cloudes, in so much that (as they say) the tops of them can seldome bee seene for the multitude of thicke cloudes which are beneath the same. *Colonus* the Admirall the fyrste synder of these regions, affirmeth that the toppes of the mountaynes of *Beragua* are moze then fiftie myles in hyghe. He sayth

sayeth fiththermore that in the same region at the rotes of the  
 mountaynes the way is open to the south sea, and comparably  
 it as it were betwene Venice and Genua, or Lanus as the Be-  
 nines wylt haue it cauled, whiche fable that they cite was  
 buylded of Lanus. Be a firmely also that this lande reacheth  
 fourth towarde the south: And that from hense it takerh the  
 begynnyng of breadth, lyke as from the Alpes owre of the  
 narrowe thpggh of Italy, we see the large and mayne landes  
 of fraunce, Germanye, and isunoyne, to the Sacmatians  
 and Scythians, even vnto the mountaynes and rockes of  
 Rhiphea and the frozen sea, and embrace therewith as with a  
 continuall bonde, all Tracia, and Grecia, with all that is  
 included within the promontorie of poynt of Miles and Hel-  
 lespontus southwarde, and the sea Euxinus and the marpythes  
 of Meotis in scythia northwarde. The Admirall supposeth  
 that on the lefte hande in saylyng towarde the weste, this  
 lande is ioynd to India beyonde the ryuer of Ganges: And  
 that on the ryght hande towarde the North, it bee extended  
 to the frozen sea, beyonde the Hyperboreans and the North  
 pole: So that both the seas (that is to meane that south sea  
 which we sayde to bee founde by Vascus, and owre Ocean)  
 shulde ioyne and meete in the corners of that land: And that  
 the waters of these seas doo not onely inclose and compasse  
 the same without diuision as Europe is inclosed with the  
 seas of Hellespontus and Tanais, with the frozen Ocean & owre  
 sea of Tyrrhenum with the Spanysh seas. But in my opini-  
 on, the vehement course of the Ocean toward the weste, doth  
 signifie and teete that the sayde two seas shulde not so ioyne  
 together: But rather that that land is adherent to the firme  
 landes towarde the North, as we haue sayde before. It  
 shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of the length hereof.  
 Let vs nowe therefore speake somewhat of the breadth of the  
 same, We haue made mention before howe the south sea is  
 diuided by narrowe lymittes from owre Ocean, as it was pro-  
 ued by the experience of Vascus Nunnes and his companions  
 which first made open the way thither. But as dyuersly as  
 the mountaynes of owre Alpes in Europe are sumwhete nar-  
 rowe and in some place brode, even so by the lyke prouidence  
 of nature, this lande in some parte thereof reacheth farre in  
 breadth, and is in other places constricted with narrowe lymittes  
 as from

Janus others  
 wyse cauled  
 Japhet, the  
 son of Noe.

Italy is lyke  
 vnto a legge  
 in the sea, &  
 the mount-  
 taynes of the  
 Alpes are in  
 the thyshe  
 thereof.

Colonus his  
 opinion of  
 the supposed  
 Continent.

By this con-  
 iecture, the  
 way shuld be  
 open to Ca-  
 thay by the  
 hyperborea

Looketh the  
 ingation of  
 Cabore. decs.  
 iii lib. vi.

The breadth  
 of the lande

## The thyrd decade.

The regions  
of Vraba and  
Beragua.

The greate  
riuer Marag:  
nonus.

The greate  
riuer Daba:  
ba, or sancty  
Iohannis.

The ryuers  
haue their in-  
crease from  
the sprynges  
of the moun-  
taynes.

The ryuer of  
Nilus in E-  
gypte.

marishes  
and desolate  
wayes.

A superstiti-  
ous opinion  
of the originall  
of Dabaiba.

res from sea to sea, with halleyes also in some places, wher-  
by men may passe from the one syde to the other. Where we  
haue descrybed the regions of Vraba and Beragua to bee situ-  
ate, these seas are diuided by smaule distaunce. Per ought  
we to thynke the region which the great ryuer of Maragnon  
runneth through, to bee very large if we shall graunt Marag:  
nonus to bee a ryuer and no sea, as the freshe waters of the  
same ought to perswade vs. For in suche narrowe caues of  
the earth, there can bee no swallowinge goulfes of such hyg-  
nesse as to receaue or nooryshe so great abundance of water.  
The lyke is also to bee suppoed of the great ryuer of Dabaiba  
which we sayde to bee from the corner of the goulfe of Vraba  
in some place of fortie fathomes depth, and sumwhere fiftie:  
Also thre myles in breadth, and so to faule into the sea. We  
must needes graunt that the earth is brode there, by the whi-  
che the ryuer passeth from the hyghe mountaynes of Dabaiba  
from the East and not from the west. They say that this ry-  
uer consisteth and taketh his encrease of foure other ryuers  
fauylng from the mountaynes of Dabaiba. Wyre men caule  
this ryuer *Flumen, s. Iohannis*. They say also that from hense it  
fauleth into the goulfe of Vraba by seuen mouthes as doothe  
the ryuer of Nilus into the sea of Egypte. Lykewyle that in  
the same region of Vraba there are in some places narrowe  
streightes not passynge fyftene leagues: and the same to bee  
saluage and without any passage by reason of dyuers ma-  
ryshes and desolate wayes, which the Latines caule *Lamas*:  
But the Spanyardes accordynge to theyr varietie, caule the  
*Tremedales, Trampales, Cenegales, Sumideros, and Zabondaderos*. But  
before we passe any further, it shall not bee greatly from our  
purpose to declare from whence these mountaynes of Dabaiba  
haue theyr name accordynge vnto chautiquities of thynhabi-  
tantes. They saye therefore that Dabaiba was a woman of  
greate magnanimitie and wyledome emonge theyr predice:  
ours in olde tyme: whom in her lyfe, all thynhabitantes  
of those prouinces did greatly reuerence, and beinge deade  
gaue her diuine honour and named the regio after her name,  
beleuyng that shee sendeth thunder and lyghnyng to de-  
stroy the feutes of the earth yf shee bee angered, and to send  
plentie if shee bee well pleased. This superstition hath byn  
perswaded them by a craftie kynde of men vnder pretense of  
religion

religion to thintent that they might enioye suche gyftes and offerings as were brought to the place where shee was honoured. This is sufficient for this purpose. They say furthermore that the marythes of the narrowe lande wherof we haue spoken, bynge forth great plentie of Crocodiles, dragons, hartes, and gnattes beinge very hurtfull. Therefore when so euer they take any iorney towarde the south, they go owte of the way towarde the mountaynes, and eschewe the regions neare vnto those perelous fennes or marythes. Some thinke that there is a valley lpyng that way that the ryuer runneth which owre men caule Río de los perdidos, that is, the ryuer of the lost men (so named by the misfortune whiche there befell to Nicuesa and his company) and not far distant from the haven Cerabaro whiche diuideth those mountaynes towarde the south. But let vs now synthe this booke with a fewe other thynges woorthy to bee noted. They say there: for that on the ryght hande and lefte hande from Dariens, there are twentie ryuers in all the whiche, greate plentie of golde is founde. Being demaunded what was the cause why they brought no greater abundance of gold from thence, they answered that they lacked myners: And that the men whiche they tooke with them from Spayne thither, were not accustomed to labour, but for the most parte brought by in the barres. This lande seemeth also to promette many precious stones. For besyde those whiche I sayde to bee founde neare vnto Caria and Sancte Martha, one Andreas Moralis a pylot (who had rauayled those coastes with Iohannes de la Cosa whyle he yet lyued) had a precious diamonde which he bought of a naked younge man in the region of Cumana in the prouince of Paria. This stone was as longe as two ioyntes of a mans mid dell fynger, and as bygge as the fyrst ioynte of the thumme: beinge also paynted on euery syde, consistynge of eyght squares perfectly formed by nature. They say that with this they made scarres in anuylls and hammers, and brake the teethe of sples, the stone remaynyng unpercythed. The younge man of Cumana, wore this stone aboute his necke emonge other ornaments, and soulede it to Andreas Moralis for syue of our colliect stones made of glasse of dyuers colours wherewith the ignorant younge man was greatly delectyd. They founde also certeyne topases on the shore, But the estimation of golde was so

dragons and  
crocodiles in  
the marishes.

The haven  
Cerabaro.

Twentie gol-  
den ryuers.

Precious  
stones.

a precious  
diamonde of  
exceedynge  
bignes.

Topases.

farre

the thyrde decade.

The Spany-  
erdes con-  
temne effemi-  
nate pleasures

Sweete sa-  
uours.

A similitude  
prouing great  
plentie of  
golde & preci-  
ous stones.  
The haue of  
Sancta Mar-  
tha.  
Caroli.

The heroical  
factes of the  
Spanyardenes.

facte entered into the heades of othere men, that they had no regarde to stones. Also the most part of the Spanyardenes, do labough them to scoone which vse to weare many stones: spect ally such as are common: Judginge it to bee an effeminate thyng, and moze meete for women then men. The noble me onely when they celebrate solene mariages, or set forth any triumphes, weare cheyns of gold byser with precious stones, and vse sayre apparell of sylke embrothered with golde intermire with pearles and precious stones: And not at other tymes. They thynke it no lesse effeminate for men to smell of the sweete sauours of Arabie: And iudge hym to bee infected with sum kynde of fylthy lechery, in whom they smell the sauour of muske or *Castoreum*. But lyke as by one apple taken from a tree, we may perceyue the tree to bee fruitfull, and by one sylke taken in a ryuer, we may knowe that sylke is ingendered in the same, euen so, by a lyttel gold, and by one stone, we ought to consyder that this lande bringeth forth the great plentie of golde and precious stones. What they haue found in the porte of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Caroli* when the hole nauyge passed thereby vnder the gouernance of *Petrus Arias* and his company with certayne other of the kynges of spaynes, I haue sufficiently declared in his plate. To be shorte therefore, all thynges do so flozyshe, growe, encrease, and prosper, that the laste are euer better then the fyrste. And surely to declare my opinion herin, what so euer hath here of force byn discovered by the famous trauayles of *Saturnus* and *Hercules*, with such other whos the antiquitie for their heroical factes honoured as goddes, seemeth but lyttell and obscure if it be compared to the Spanyardenes victoridus laboures.

This I byd you holynes fare well, desyringe you to certifie me howe you lyke these fyrste frutes of the *Ocean*, that being encouraged with youre exhortations,

I maye the gladlyer and with lesse tediousnesse write suche thynges as shal chaunce herafter.



Al suche luyunge creatures as vnder the cercle of the moone bringe forth any thyng, are accustomed by thynstincte of nature as soone as they are deliuered of their byrthe, eyther to close vpp the matrice, or at the leaste to bee quyet for a space. But oovre mooste frutefull Ocean and newe woorld,

engendereth and bringeth furthe dayly newe byrthes wherby men of great wytte, and especially suche as are studious of newe and meruelous thynges, may haue sumwhat at hand wherewith to feede their myndes. If yowre holynesse do a ke to what purpose is al this, ye shal vnderstand, that I had scarcely synnyshed the hystorie of suche thynges as chaunced to Vascus Nunnex and his companye in their vyage to the southe sea, when suddenly there came newe letters from Petrus Arias the newe gouernour whom the kynge had appoynted the yere before with an army of men and a nauye of shippes to sayle to these newe landes. He signifyeth by his letters, that he with his nauye and company, attyued all safely.

Furthermore, Iohannes Cabedus (whome yowre holynes at the requeste of the moste catholyke kynge had created byshoppe of that prouynce of Dariena) and thre other of the chiefe officers ioined in comission to be his assystance, as Alfonso de Ponte, Diego Marques, and Iohannes de Taura, confirmed the same letters and subscribed them with their names. The nauygation therfore of Petrus Arias, was in this maner. The daye before the Ides of Apryll, in the yere of Christe. 1514. he hopted vpp his sayles in the towne of saincte Lucar de Barrameda, lytuat in the mowthe of the ryuer Betis, whiche the Spaniards nowe caule Guadalchebir. The seven Ilandes of Canaria are about foure hundred myles distant from the place where this ryuer fauleth into the sea. Summe thinke that these are the Ilandes which the olde wyters did caule the Fortunate Ilandes. But other thinke the contrary. The name of these Ilandes, are these. The two whiche appere byrte in syghthe, are named Lanzelota and Fortisuentura. On the backehalte of these, lyeth Magna Canaria. or Gran Canaria. Beyond that is Tenerife: and Gomera sumwhat towarde the north frome that.

¶

Palma

The byshop  
of Dariena.

The nauygati  
on of Petrus  
Arias.

Saint Lucar.

The Iland of  
Canarie.

## The thyrdedeade.

Promission of  
fresh water  
and fuel.

The Island of  
Dominica.

Guadalupea,  
otherwys  
cauled Caru-  
cueria, or Que-  
raquiera.

The sea of  
herbes.

*Palm* and *Ferrea*, lye behynde as it were a bulwarke to all the other. *Petrus Arias* therfore, arrived at *Gomera* the eghthe daye after his departure, with a nauye of. xlii. shippes and a. xli. and foue hundred men, althoughe there were onely a thousand and two hundred assigned hym by the kynges letters. It is sayde furthermoze that he left behynd hym moze then two thousande herse penyue and syghyng that they also myght not be receaued, proferinge them selues to go at their owne charges. He taried. xli. dayes in *Gomera* to thintente to make prouysyon of fuell and freshe water: But chiefly to repayre his shippes beyng soze brosed with tempestes, and especially the gouernours shippe whiche had losse the rudder. For these Ilandes are a commodious restinge place for all suche as intende to attempte any nauygations in that mayne sea. Departyng from hense in the nones of Maye, he sawe no moze lande untill the thirde daye of June, at the whiche he arrived at *Dominica* an Islande of the *Canibales*, being distant from *Gomera* aboute eghthe hundred leagues. Here he remained foure dayes, makinge newe promission of frehe water and fuell, durynge whiche tyme he sawe no man nor yet any shippes of men: But founde plentie of sea crabbes and greate lizards. From hense he sayled by the Ilandes of *Matinina* (or therwyle cauled *Madanino*) *Guadalupea*, and *Galanta* (otherwyle cauled *Gakana*) of all whiche, we haue spoken in the fyrste decade. He passed also throughe the sea of herbes or weedes, continuing a long trecte. Yet nother he, nor *Colonus* the Admirall (who fyrste founde these Ilandes and sayled throughe this sea of weedes) haue declared anye reason howe these weedes shoulde come. Summe thynke the sea too be verye muddye there, and that these weedes are engendered in the bottome therof, and so beyng loosed, do ascende to the vppermostte parte of the water, as wee see oftencymes chaunce in certeyne stonyng pooles, and sumtymes also in greate ryuers. Other suppose that they are not engendered there, but to bee beaten from certeyne rockes by the violence of the water in tempestes. And thus they leaue the matter indowte: Neyther haue they yet any certeyne experyence whether they stycke faste and gyue place to the shippes, or wander loose vppon the water. But it is to bee thought that they are engendered there. For otherwyle they shulde bee drynched together

together on heapes by thympullsion of the hyppes euen as a beasome gathereth the sweppnges of a house, and shulde also lette the course of the hyppes. The fourth day after that he departed frome *Dominica*, the hyghe mountaynes covered with snowe (wherof we haue spoken in the seconde decade) appered vnto hym. They saye that there the seas runne as swyftely towarde the weste, as it were a ryuer faulping from the toppes of hyghe mountaynes: Although they sayled not directly toward the west, but inclined somewhat to the south. From these mountaynes fauleth the ryuer of *Saira*, famous by the slaughter of oboze men at such tyme as *Rodericus Colmenares* passed by those coastes as we haue sayde befoze. Ipketwyle many other sayre ryuers haue their originall from the same mountaynes. This prouynce (in the whiche is, also the regy-on of *Caramairi*) hath in it two notable hauens, of the which oboze men named the one *Carthago* or *Carthagena*, and the other *Sancta Martha*, the region wherof, thynhabitanes caule *Saturma*. The porte of *Sancta Martha*, is nearer to the montaines covered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales*; for it is at the rootes of the same montaines. But the haven of *Carthago*, is more westewarde aboute fyfte leagues. He writeth marueplous thynges of the haven of *Sancta Martha*, whiche they also confirme that came lately fro thēse: Of the which younge *Vesputius* is one to whō *Americus Vesputius* his vncke (being a *Florentine* bozne) left the exact knowlege of the mariners facultie, as it were by inheritance after his death for he was a very expert maister in the knowlege, of his carde, his compasse, and the eleuation of the pole starre with all that pertaineth thereto. This younge *Vesputius* was assigned by the kyng to bee one of the maisters of the gouernours shyppe, bicause he was cunnynge in iudgyng the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starre by the quadzante. For the charge of gouernynge the rudder, was chiefly commytted to one *Iohannes Serranus* a *Spaniarde*, who had oftentymes ouer runne those coastes. *Vesputius* is my bette familiar frende, and a wyttie younge man in whose company I take great pleasure, and therefore ble hym oftentymes for my gessie. He hath also made many wyages into these coastes, and diligently noted suche thynges as he hath seene. *Petrus Arlis* therefore writeth, and he confyrmeth the same, that thynhabitanes of these regy-

f. ii.

ons tooke

These mountaynes are cauled *Montes Niuales* or *Serra Neua*, decade ii. liber. i. c. li. The swyfte course of the sea towarde the west. The ryuer *Saira*. *Caramairi*. *Carthago*. *Saturma*.

mountaynes covered with snowe.

*Americus Vesputius*.

## The thyrde decade.

The stoutnes  
of the Barba-  
rians.

The Caniba-  
les feyghe in  
the water.

The vse of  
gunnes.

The genera-  
tion of thun-  
der and lyght-  
nyng.

Meteora.

Benemous  
arrowes

Thus tooke their originall of the Caribes or Canibales, as ap-  
peared by the desperate fiercenes and crueltie which they of-  
ten tymes shewed to oþre men when they passed by their coas-  
tes. Suche stoutenes and fortitude of mynde is naturallie  
engendered in these naked Barbarians, that they feared not  
to a Tayle oþre hole naup & to forþyd them to coome a land.  
They feyghe with benemous arrowes as we haue sayde be-  
fore. Perceaynge that oþre men contempned their threat-  
nynges, they ranne furiously into the sea, euen vpp to the  
brestes, noþyng fearynge eþher the bygnes or multitude  
of oþre shippes, but ceased not continually beinge thus in  
the water, to cast dartes and shure their benemous arrowes  
as thicke as hayle: In so muche that þowre men had bynne  
in great daunger if they had not byn defended by the cages  
or paulses of the shippes and their targettes. yet were two  
of them wounded whiche died shortly after. But this con-  
flicte continued so sharpe, that at the length oþre men were  
enforced to shute of their byggest pieces of ordinaunce with  
hayle shotte: At the slaughter and terrible noyse wherof the  
barbarians beyng soze discomfited and shaken with feare,  
thynkyng the same to be thunder and lyghenynge, turned  
their backes and fledde amayne. They greatly feare thun-  
der because these regyons are often tymes vexed with thun-  
der and lyghenynge by reason of the hyghe montaynes and  
neatenesse of the same to the region of the ayer wherin such  
fierie tempestes are engendered which the philosophers caule  
*Meteora*. And all be it that oþre men had nowe dyuer their  
enemies to flyght, and sawe them disparted and oþre of or-  
der, yet doubted they and were of dyuers opinions whether  
they shulde pursue them or not. On the one parte, some pic-  
ked them forwarde, and on the other syde feare caused them  
to caste many perelles, especially consyderyng the benemous  
arrowes whiche these barbarians canne direct so certeynely.  
To departe from theym with a dye foote (as saithe the pro-  
uerbe) with so great a naup and suche an armye, they repu-  
ted it as a thyng greatly soundynge to their reproche and  
dishonour. At the length therfore some ouercommyng feare,  
they pursued them and came to land with their shippe boates.  
The gouernoure of the naute, and also *Vesputius* doo wypte,  
that the haue is no lesse then thre leagues in compasse, be-  
inge

unge also safe withot rocks, and the water therof so cleere,  
 that a man may see pybble stones in the bottome twentie cu-  
 bettes deape. They saye lykewyse that there fauleth thoo  
 fayre ryuers of fre the water into the haueu : but the same to  
 bee meeter to beare the canoas of these prouinces then anye  
 bygger vessels. It is a delectable thyng to heare what they  
 tel of the plentie and varietie, and also of the pleasaunt tast  
 of the fyshes aswel of these riuers as of the sea there about.  
 By reason wherof they founde here many fysher boates and  
 nettes woonderfully wrought of the stalkes of cerreyne her-  
 bes or weedes dyed and tawed and wretched with cordes of  
 spunne go&amp;pine cotton. For the people of *Caramuri*, *Gaira*,  
 and *Saturna*, are very cunnynge in fyshynge, and ble to sell  
 fysh to theyr bozherers for exchaunge of suche thynges as  
 they lacke. When owre men had thus chased the Barbary-  
 ans from the sea coastes, and hadde now entered into theyr  
 houses, they assayled them with newe skymmes, especial-  
 ly when they sawe them faule to lackynge and spolyng, and  
 theyr wyues and chyldeyren taken captiue. Theyr housholde  
 stuffe was made of great reedes which growe on the sea ban-  
 kes, and the stalkes of cerreyne herbes beateu and afterward  
 made harde. The floures therof were strewed with herbes of  
 sundry coloures : And the waules hanged with a kynde of  
 taptre artificially made of go&amp;pine cotton, and wrought  
 with pictures of Lions, Tygers, and Eagles. The doores of  
 theyr houses and chambers were full of dyuers kyndes of  
 shells hangynge loose by smaule cordes, that beinge shaken  
 by the wynde they myght make a cerreyne rattelynge and al-  
 so a whystelynge noyse by gatherynge the wynde in theyr ho-  
 lowe places. For herein they haue greate delyte, and impute  
 this for a goodly ornamente. Dyuers haue shewed me many  
 woonderfull thynges of these regions : Especially one *Conza*.  
*us Fernandus Outedus* beinge one of the maiestrates appointed in  
 that office which the Spanyardes caule *Vedor*, who hath al-  
 so hether to entered further into the lande then any other. He  
 affirmeth that he chaunced vpon the fragmente of a saphire  
 bygger then the egge of a goose. And that in cerreyne hylls  
 where he traupled with thirtie men, he founde many of the  
 precious stones cauled *Smaragdes*, *calcidones*, and *Jaspers*,  
 besyde great pieces of amber of the montaines. He also with

Plentie of  
fysh.

Cunnynge  
fyshers.

Theyr houses  
holde stuffe.

Taptre.

A strange  
phantasy.

This is he  
whom Carda-  
nus praiseth.

Precious  
stones.  
The *Smas-  
ragde* is the  
strewemerode.

## The thyrd decade.

Another kind  
of amber is  
founde in  
whales.

Gold & bras  
file.

Marchasittes  
are flowers  
of metals, by  
the colours  
wherof, the  
kynedes of me-  
tals are kno-  
wen.

These locu-  
stes burne  
the come  
with toching  
and deuoure  
the residewe  
they are in  
India of. iii.  
foote length.  
The sayre re-  
gion of Cara-  
mairi.

Fruiteful mon-  
taynes.

Gardens.  
In iudres are  
nowe cauled  
Lumbardes,  
and Petruct,  
Tuscans.

dytters other do affirme that in the houses of sume of the Ca-  
nibales of these regions, they found the lyke precious stones  
set in golde and inclosed in the tapstry or arras (if it may soo  
bee cauled) wherewith they hange theyr houses. The same  
lande byngeth forth also many wooddes of brasile trees &  
great plentie of golde: In so much that in maner in al places  
they founde on the sea bankes and on the shoores, certeyne  
marchasittes in token of golde. *Fernandus Ouiedus* declarerh fur-  
thermore that in a certeyne region cauled *Zenu*, lyinge foure  
score and tenne myles from *Dariena* Eastwarde, they exercyse  
a straunge kynde of marchaundies. For in the houses of the  
inhabitanes, they founde greate chestes and baskets made  
of the twigges and leaues of certeyne trees apte for that pur-  
pose, beinge all full of gretehoppers, grylles, crabbes, or  
crefpythes: snayles also, and locustes whiche desawowe the  
fieldes of corne, all well dyed and salted. Beinge demaun-  
ded why they reserued such a multitude of these beastes, they  
answered that they keppe them to bee soulede to theyr bozther-  
ers which dwell further within the lande: And that for the  
exchange of these precious byrdes and salted spithes, they re-  
ceaued of them certeyne strange thynges wherin partly they  
take pleasure, and partly vse them for theyr necessary affay-  
ers. These people dwel not toggyher, but scattered here and  
there. The inhabitantes of *Caramairi*, seeme to dwel in an earth-  
ly Paradise, theyr region is so fayre and frutefull, withowt  
outragious heate or sharpe coulde, with lyttle difference of  
the length of day and nyght throughtowt all the yeare. Af-  
ter that oore men had thus dyuen the barbarians to fyght,  
they entered into a valley of two leagues in breadth & thre  
in length, extendynge to certeyne fruteful mountaynes ful of  
grasse, herbes, and trees, at the rootes wherof, lye two o-  
ther valleys towarde the ryght hande and the left, throughto-  
gh epyther of the which runneth a fayre ryuer, whercof the ryuer  
of *Gaira* is one, but vnto the other they haue yet gyuen noo  
name. In these valleys they founde manye fayre gardeyns  
and pleasaunte fyeldes watered with trenches distributed in  
marueylous order, with no lesse arte then oore Insubrians  
and Petrurians vse to water theyr fyeldes. Theyr common  
meate, is *Ages*, *Iucca*, *Malzium*, *Battata*, with suche other rootes  
and frutes of trees, and also suche spithes as they vse in the  
Islandes

Ilandes and other regions of these prouinces. They eate mans flesh: but seldome, bycause they meete not oftentymes with stranglers, except they goo forth of theyr owne dominions with a mayne army of purpose to hunt for men, when theyr rauenynge appetite pricketh them forwarde. For they absteyne from them selues, and eate none but suche as they take in the warres or otherwyse by chaunce. But suerly it is a miserable thyng to heare howe many myziades of men these fylthy and vnnaturall deuourers of mans flesh haue consumed, and lefte thousandes of moste fayre and frutfull Ilandes and regions desolate withowte menne: By reason wherof owre men founde so many Ilandes whiche for theyr fayrenesse and frutefulnessse myght seeme to bee certeyne earthly Paradyses, and yet were vtterly voyde of men. Hereby yowre holynesse may consider howe pernicious a kynde of men this is. We haue sayde before that the Ilande named *Sancti Iohannis* (which thynhabitanes caule *Burichena*) is nexte to *Hispaniola*. It is sayde that onely the *Canibales* which dwelle in the other Ilandes nere about this, as in the Ilande cauled *Hayhay* or *Sancte Crucis*, and in *Guadalupes* (otherwise cauled *Queraqueiera*, or *Carucuiera*) haue in owre tyme vpolently taken owte of the sayde Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, more then fyue thousande men to bee eaten. But let it suffice thus much to haue wandered by these monstrous bludsuckers. We will nowe therfore speake sumewhat of the rootes whereof they make theyr breade, forasmuch as the same shall hereafter bee fooode to Christian men in steede of breade made of wheate, and in the steade of rabythe with such other rootes as they haue byn accustomed to eate in Europe. We haue oftentymes sayde before that *Iucca* is a roote whereof the beste and moste delicate breade is made bothe in the firme lande of these regions, and also in the Ilandes. But howe it is tyllid or hurbanded, howe it groweth, and of howe dyuers kyndes it is, I haue not yet declared. Therefore, when they intende to plante this *Iucca*, they make a hole in the earth knys deape, and raise a heape of the earth taken owte of the same, fastnyng it lyke a square hedde of nyne foote breadth on euery syde, settinge twelue trunks of these rootes (beinge about a foote and a halfe longe a peece) in euery of the sayd heedes conteynynge thre rootes of a syde, so layde a slope, that the

Many countreys leste be solate by the fiercenes of the *Canibales*. One myziade is ten thousande.

A miserable hearynge.

Breade of rootes.

The maner of plantinge the roote *Iucca*.

endes

## The thyrd decade.

Earth turned  
into rootes.

Howe breade  
is made of  
rootes.

A strange  
sprunge.

Carabbi,

Ages and  
Battara.

Panicum is a  
grayne some-  
what lyke ryll.  
The Italians  
saule it w<sup>ch</sup>  
leso.

endes of them toyne in maner togyther in the center of myd-  
dest of the bedde within the grounde. Out of the topnes of  
the rootes and spaces betwene the same, spryng the toppes  
and blades of newe rootes, which by lyttle and lyttle encrea-  
sprunge, growe to the byggenes and length of a mans arme in  
the byrstone, and oftentymes as bygge as the thygh: So that  
by the tyme of theyr full ryppnes, in maner all the earthe of  
the heape, is converted into rootes. But they say that these  
rootes are not ripe in lesse tyme then a yeaer & a halfe: And  
that the longer they are suffered to growe euen vntyll twoo  
yeares complete, they are so muche the better and more per-  
fecte to make breade therof. When they are taken foorthe of  
the earth, they scrape them and asyle the with certeyne sharpe  
stones scrupnge for the same purpose: And thus lapinge the  
betwene two great stones, or puttyng them in a sacke made  
of the stalkes of certeyne rough herbes and smaule reedes,  
they presse them (as we do cheese or crabbes to drawe oute  
the iuse thereof) and so let them drye a daye before they eate  
them. The iuse or lyquoure, they cast away: for (as we haue  
sayde) it is deadly poyson in the Ilandes. yet is the iuse of  
suche as growe in the firme lande, holsome if it bee sodde, as  
is the whey of owre mylke. They saye that there are manye  
kynedes of this *Iucca*, wherof some are moze pleasaunte and  
delycate then the other, and are therefore reserved as it were  
to make fine manchet for the kynges owne tables. But the  
gentlemen eate of the meauer sorte, and the common people  
of the basest. The fynest they caule *Carabbi*, which they make  
rounde lyke cakes in certeyne presses before they seeth it or  
bake it. They saye furthermoze that there are lykewyle dy-  
uers kynedes of the rootes of *Ages* and *Battara*. But they vse  
these rather as frutes and dyshes of seruice, then to make  
breade therof, as we vse rapes, radysches, mustherons, naz-  
uies, perseneppes, and such lyke. In this case, they mooste  
especiallly esteeme the best kynde of *Battara*, which in pleasant  
tast and tendernes farre exceedeth owre mustherones. It shal  
suffice to haue sayde thus muche of rootes. We wyll nowe  
therfore speake of an other kynde of theyr breade. We decla-  
red before that they haue a kynde of grayne or pulle muche  
lyke vnto *Panicum*, but with sumwhat bygger graines, which  
they beate into meale vppon certeyne greafe hollowe stones  
with

with the labour of their handes when they lacke *Iucca*: And of this is made the more vulgar or common breade. It is sowne thise a yeaer, so that the fructifullnes of the grounde may beare it by reason of the equalitie of the tyme, whereof wee haue spoken sufficiently befoze. In these regions they founde also the graine of *Maizium*, and sundry kyndes of frutes of trees diligently planted and well husbanded. The waye betwene the regions of *Caramairi* and *saturna*, is fayre, brode, and ryghte foorth. They founde here also sundrye kyndes of waterpottes made of earthe of dyuers colours, in the whiche they bothe fetch and keepe frethe water. Lykewise sundry kyndes of iugges, godderdes, drynkynge cuppes, pottes, pannes, dysshes, and platters artisyfially made. When the gouernour had gyuen commaundement by proclamation, that thynhabitantes shulde eyther obey the Christian kyng and embrace omore religion, or elles to depart owt of their countrey, they answered with benemous arrowes. In this skymyshe, omore men tooke summe of theym: whereof clothyng the moste parte in faire apparell, they sente them ageyne to their owne company: But leadyng the resydue to the shippes to thynrent to shewe them the poure and magnyfyccence of the christians that they myght declare the same to their companions, therby to wyne their fauour, they appareled them lyke wyse and sente them after their felowes. Theye asseyne that in all the ryuers of these coastes, theye sawe great argumentes and tokens of golde. They founde here and there in their houses good store of hartes fleshe and boyes fleshe wherewith they fedde them selues dylcarely. They also, haue greate pientie of sundry kyndes of byrdes and foules, wherof they byynge bype many in their houses, summe for necessarye foode, and other for daynty dysshes as we do hennes and partriches. Omore men hereby coniecture that the ayer of these regions is heary holosome, for as muche as sleapyng all nyghte vnder the skyment on the bankes of the ryuers, none of them were at any tyme offended with reumes or heade ache by reason of any noysome hamoure or vapoure proceedinge from the earthe, ayer, or water. Omore men furthermore, founde there many great bothomes of golde samppine cotton ready spunne, and fardelles of dyuers kyndes of fethers, wherof they make them selues cresses and plumes after

the meaner the  
the equal  
length of day  
and nyght  
which is con  
tinually in re  
gions vnder  
the Equinoce  
tial lyne.

*Maizium*  
Earth of dy  
uers colours.

Golde in  
ryuers.  
hartes and  
boyes.  
foules.

Holosome ayer

Golde samppine  
cotton,  
fethers,

The thyerde decade.

Bowes and  
arrowes.

Deade bo-  
dies reserved

Ouches of la-  
ton.

Sonzalus Qui-  
edus, sayth  
that they gilt  
maruelously  
with the iuse  
of a certeyne  
herbe.  
whyte mar-  
ble.

The great ry-  
uer Maragno-  
nus. This  
ioyneth with  
the myghty  
ryuer cauled  
Flumen Ama-  
zonum, found  
of late.

Clothes of  
fethers.

mes after the maner of owre men of armes : also certeine clo-  
thes whiche they esteeme as mooste curly ornaments. They  
founde lyketowse an innumerable multitude of bowes and ar-  
rowes. The inhabitants also of these regions, in summe places  
ble to burne the carkefes of their pynces when theye are  
deade, and to reserue their bones buried with spyes in cer-  
teyne hylles. In other places, they onely dye theym and  
imbaume them with spyes and sweete gummes, and soo re-  
serue them in sepulchers in their owne houses. Somewhere  
also, they dye them, spye them, adorne them with precy-  
ous icwells and ouches, and so reuerently place them in cer-  
teyne tabernacles made for the same purpose in their owne  
palayces. When owre men had many of their tabellerts, bras-  
lettes, collers, and suche other ouches (whiche they caule  
Guanines) they founde them rather to bee made of laton then of  
golde: wherby they suppose that they haue bided to exchaunge  
their wares with summe craftie straungers whiche broughte  
thē those counterfect ouches to defraude them of their golde.  
For euen owre menne perceaued not the deceate untill they  
came to the meltynge. Furthermoze, certayne of owre buyl-  
ders wanderynge a lyttell way from the sea coastes, chaunc-  
ced to fynde certayne pyeces of white marble. Wherby they  
thynke that in tyme past summe straungers haue coome too  
those landes, whiche haue dygged marble oute of the moun-  
taines, and lefte those fragmentes on the plaine. There owre  
men learned that the ryuer *Maragnonus* descenderh from the  
montaynes covered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales* of *Serra*  
*Neuata*: And the same to bee encreased by many other ryuers  
whiche faule into it throughtout all the lowe and waterye  
regions by the whiche it runneth with so longe a tracte from  
the sayde montaynes into the sea: And this to bee the cause  
of the greatnesse therof. These thynges beyng thus brought  
to passe, the gouernour commaunded the trumpitour to blowe  
a retraire: Wherbypon they whiche were sente to lande (be-  
yng eue hundredeth in number) makynge a great shoute for  
ioye of their victoey, sette them selues in order of battayle,  
and so keping their array, returned to the shippes laden with  
spoyle of those prouinces, and bynyng in souldiers clothes  
of fethers, with faire plumes and crestes of variable colours.  
In this meane tyme haupnge repaired their shippes and fur-  
nyshed

nysshed the same with all necessaries, they loosed anker the xvi. daie of the Calendes of July, directynge their course to the haven of *Carthage*, in the whiche viage they destroyed and wasted certayne Ilandes of the Canibales lpyng in the wyape, accordynge as they were commaunded by the kynge. But the swifte course of the water deceaued bothe *Iohannes Serranus* the chiefe Pilot of the gouernours shyppe, and all the other, althoughe they made their boote that they perfectly knewe the nature therof. For they asseyne that in one night they were caried forty leaques beyonde their estimation,

The swifte  
course of the  
water.  
x. leaques in  
one nyght.

## The fyrre booke of the thirde Decade.



Ere muste we sumwhat digresse from cosmography, and make a philosophicall discours to searche the secrete causes of nature. For wheras they al asseyne with on consent, that the sea runneth there from the East to the weste as swyftly as it were a ryuer faulinge from hyghe mountaynes, I thoughte it not good to leete so great a matter shyppe vntou-

ched. The whiche while I consyder, I am drawn into no smaule ambyguite and doute, whether those waters haue their course whiche flowe with so coneynuall a tracte in circuit from the East, as thowghe they fledde to the west neuer to retourne, and yet neyther the weste therby any whitte the more fylled, nor the Easte emptied. If we shall saye that they faule to their centre (as is the nature of heuie thynges) and assigne the Equinoctiall lyne to be the centre (as summe asseyne) what centre shall we appointe to bee able to receaue so great aboundaunce of water? Or what circumference shall be founde weate? They whiche haue searched thoe coastes, haue yet founde no lykely reason to be trewe. Many thynke that there shoulde bee certeyne large straighes or enterances in the corner of that great lande whiche we described to bee eyght tymes bygger then *Italpe*, and the corner therof to be full of goulfes, wherby they suppose that summe straghtes shoulde passe through the same lpyng on the weste syde of the Ilande of *Cuba*: And that the sayde straghtes shoulde swallowe by those waters, and so conuey the same into the weste

B g, ii,

and

Sundry opynions why the sea runneth with so swyfte course from the East into the west.

The equinoctiall lyne.  
why all waters moue toward the south or Equinoctiall, reade *Cardanus de subtilis, liber. ii. de Elementis, Straghtes.*

## The thyrd decade.

As by the  
strayght of  
Magellanus.  
The north  
landes.

The frozen  
sea.

Sebastian.  
Cabot.

The Veneti-  
ans.  
The viage of  
Sebastian Ca-  
bot from Eng-  
lande to the  
frozen sea.  
Frost in the  
moneth of  
July.

Fretum Her-  
culeum, diu-  
deth Spayne  
& the moores  
and is now  
cauled the  
strayghtes  
of warrok.  
B: allas, or  
Terra Baccallat-  
rum.

and from thence ageyn into owre Easte Ocean, or north seas  
as summe thynke. Other wyll, that the goulfe of that great  
lande bee closed vpp: and the land to reache farre towarde  
the northe on the backe syde of Cuba: so that it embrace the  
northe landes whiche the frozen sea encompasseth vnder the  
northe pole: And that all the lande of those coastes, shoulde  
ioyne togyther as one firme lande: Wherby they coniecture  
that those waters shoulde bee turned aboute by the obiecte or  
resystaunce of that lande so bendynge towarde the north, as  
we see the waters, tourned aboute in the crooked bankes of  
certeyne ryuers. But this agreeth not in all poyntes. For they  
also whiche haue searched the frozen sea, and sayled frome  
thence into the weste, do lykewylse aspyme that those northe  
seas flowe continually towarde the weste, although nothing  
so swifely. These northe seas haue byn searched by one Se-  
bastian Cabot a Venetian boine, whom beinge yet but in ma-  
ner an infante, his parentes carped with them into Englande  
hauyng occasion to resorte thither for trade of marchandies,  
as is the maner of the Venetians too leaue no parte of the  
worlde vnsearched to obteyne richesse. He therefore furni-  
shed two shippes in England at his owne charges: And fyrst  
with thre hundred men, directed his course so farre toward  
the northe pole, that euen in the moneth of July he founde  
monstrous heapes of yse swymning on the sea, and in maner  
continuall day lyght. yet sawe he the lande in that tracte,  
free from yse, whiche had byn molten by heate of the sunne.  
Thus seyinge suche heapes of yse before hym he was enforced  
to tourne his sayles and folowe the weste, so coastynge wyll  
by the shyre, that he was thereby broughte so farre into the  
south by reason of the lande bendynge so muche southward  
that it was there almoste equall in latitude with the sea cau-  
led Fretum Herculeum, hauynge the north pole eleuate in maner  
in the same degree. He sayled lykewylse in this tracte so farre  
rowarde the weste, that he had the ylande of Cuba his lefte  
hande in maner in the same degree of longitude. As he tra-  
ueyled by the coastes of this greate lande (whiche he named  
Baccallatos) he sayeth that he founde the true course of the waters  
toward the west, but the same to ranne more softly and gent-  
ly then the swift waters whiche the Spanyardes founde  
in their navigations southward.

Wherefore

Wherefore, it is not onely more lyke to bee trewe, but oughte also of necessitie to bee concluded, that betwene both the landes hether to unbeknownen, there shulde bee certeyne great open places wherby the waters shulde thus continually passe from the East into the weste: which waters I suppose to bee dryuen about the globe of the earth by the vncstaunt mounyng and impulsion of the heauens: and not to bee swallowed by and cast owte ageyne by the breathyng of Demogorgon as some haue imagined because they see the seas by increase and decrease, to flowe and reflowe. Sebastian Cabot him selfe, named those landes *Bacallao*s, because that in the seas therabout he founde so great multitudes of certeyne bigge fyshes much lyke vnto tunies (which thinhabitanes caule *Bacallao*s) that they sumtymes stayed his shippes. He founde also the people of those regions couered with beastes skynnes: yet not without cause of reason.

He saythe also that there is greates plentye of beares in those regions, whiche vse to cate fyshes. For plungeinge theym selues into the water where they perceiue a multitude of these fyshes to lye, they fasten theyr clawes in theyr scales, and so drawe them to lande and cate them. So that (as he sayth) the beares beinge thus satisfied with fyshes, are not wayson to men. He declareth further, that in many places of these regions, he sawe great plentye of laton 'amonge thinhabitanes. Cabot is my very frende, whom I vse samplierly, and de lyte to haue hym sumtymes keepe mee company in myne owne house. For beinge cauled owte of England by the commaundement of the catholyke kynge of Castile after the death of Henry kynge of Englande the seuenth of that name, he was made one of owre counsaile and assistance as touchyng the afaire of the newe Indies, lookyng dayely for shippes to bee furnyshed for hym to discover this hyd secrete of nature. This vyage is appoynted to bee begunne in March in the yere next folowynge, beinge the yere of Christ M. D. XLIII. What shall succede, yf more holynes shalbe aduertised by my letters if god graunte me lyfe. Some of the Spanyardes denye that Cabot was the fyrst fynder of the lande of *Bacallao*s: And affirme that he went not so farre westwarde. But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus much of the goulfes & strayghes, and of Sebastian Cabot. Let vs nowe therefore

The mounyng of heuen causeth the sea to moue. Demogorgon is the spirite of the earth.

People couered with beastes skyns howe beares cate and cate fyshes of the sea.

perhappes this laton is copper which holdeth gold. For laton hath no myne, and is an artificer all metal and not natural. Cabot cauled owte of Englande into Spayne. The Second vyage of Cabot.

## Thethyrde decade.

The Ilandes  
of the Cany-  
bales.

The Ilande  
Fortis.  
Salte

A straunge  
thyng.

how Petrus  
Arias with  
the kynges  
navy arrived  
at Dariena.

howe Uas-  
chus recea-  
ued the new  
gouernour.

why these  
regions are  
called pro-  
uinces.

returne to the Spanparden. At this tyme, they let passe the hauch of *Carthago* vntouchyd, with all the Ilandes of the *Cannibales* there aboute, whiche they named *Insulas Sancti Bernardi*: Leapynge also behynde theyr backs, all the region of *Caraimari*. Heare by reason of a sudden tempeste, they were caste vpon the Ilande *Fortis*, beinge about fyfte leagues distant from the enteraunce of the goulfe of *Vraba*. In this Ilande, they founde in the houses of the inhabitants, many baskets made of certeyne greate sea reedes, ful of salte. For this Ilande hath in it many goodly salte bayes: by reason whereof they haue greate plentie of salte which they sell to other nations for such thynges as they stande in neede of. Not farre from hense, a great curlew as bygge as a stork came flying to the gouernours shippe, and suffered her selfe to bee leasely taken: which beinge carped about amonge all the shippes of the name, dyed shortly after. They sawe also a great multitude of the same kynde of foules on the shore a farre of. The gouernour his shippe whiche we sayde to haue losse the rudder beinge nowe fore broosed and in maner vnproffable, they lefte behynde to folowe at leasure. The nauie arrived at *Dariena* the twelfth day of the Calendes of July, and the gouernour his shippe (beinge voyde of men) was dyuen a lande in the same coastes within foure dayes after. The Spanparden whiche nowe inhabited *Dariena*, with theyr Capitayne and Lieutenant *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa* (of whom we haue largely made mention befoze) beinge certified of tharriual of *Petrus Arias* and his companye, wente soozthe thre myles to meete him, & receaued him honorably & regiliouly with the psalme *Te deum Laudamus*, giuinge thanks to god by whose safe conducte they were brought so prosperously thither to al theyr confortes. They receaued them gladly into theyr houses builded after the maner of those prouinces. I may well caule these regions, prouinces, a *Procul victis*, (that is) such as are overcome farre of, forasmuch as owre men doo nowe inhabite the same all the barbarous kynges and Idolatours beinge elected. They entercyphed them with such chere as they were able to make them: as with the frutes of those regions, and newe breadye bothe made of rootes and the grayne *Makium*. Other delicates to make by the feast, were of theyr owne stoz whiche they brought with theym in theyr shippes, as powdered

fle he

flenthe, salted fythe, and breade made of wheate. For they  
 brought with them many barrelles of wheate meale for the  
 same purpose. Here maye youre holynes not without iuste  
 cause of admiration beholde a kynges naue and great mul-  
 titude of Christians, inhabytyng not onely the regions situate  
 vnder the circle of heauen cauled *Tropicus Cancrī*, but also in  
 maner vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, contrary to thopinion of  
 the olde wynters, a fewe excepted. But after that they are  
 nowe mette togyther, let vs further declare what they deter-  
 myned to doo. Therefore, the daye after that the naue arri-  
 ued, there assembled a coompany of the Spanparden thinha-  
 bitoures of *Dariena*, to the number of foure hundred and fyf-  
 tie men. *Petrus Arias* the gouernour of the naue and his coom-  
 pany, conferred with them bothe priuily and openly of cer-  
 teyne articles wherof it was the kynges pleasure he shulde en-  
 quire: And most especially as concernyng such thynges wher-  
 of *Vaschus* the fyfte fynder and Admirall of the Sourhe sea,  
 made mentiō in his large letter sent frō *Dariena* to Spayn. In  
 this inquisition they founde all thynges to bee trewew, herof  
*Vaschus* had certifyed the kyng by his letters: And there vpon  
 concluded that in the dominions of *Comogra*, *Pocchorrosa*, &  
*Tumanana*, at thassignement of *Vaschus*, certeine fortresses shuld  
 bee erected forthwith to thintente there to plant theyr colo-  
 nie or habitation. To the better accomplisshement hereof,  
 they sent immediatly one *Iohannes Aiora* a noble younge gentel  
 man of *Corduba* and vnder Lieutenent, with foure hundred  
 men and foure carauelles and one other lytle shippe. Thus de-  
 partinge, he sayled fyrst directly to the haue of *Comogrus*, dy-  
 stant from *Dariena* aboute twentie and fyue leagues, as they  
 wyte in theyr last letters. Frome hense, he is appoynted to  
 sende a hundred and fyfte of his foure hundred, towarde  
 the South by a newe and ryghter way founde of late, by the  
 which (as they say) it is not past .xxvi. leagues from the pa-  
 laice of kyng *Comogrus* to the enterance of the goulfe of  
*Sancti Michaelis*. The residue of the foure hundred, shall re-  
 mayne there to bee an ayde and succour to all such as shall for-  
 ney to and fro. Those hundred and fyfte which are assigned  
 to go southwarde, take with them for interpreters certeine  
 of otre men which had lerned the sootherne language of the  
 bonde men which were gyuen to *Vaschus* when he ouerranne  
 those

Barrelles of  
meale.

habitable res-  
gions vnder  
the Equino-  
ctiall lyne.

where the  
newe gouer-  
nour planteth  
his habitatio

The viage of  
*Iohannes*  
*Aiora*.  
The haue  
of *Comogrus*

Sainte My-  
chaels goulfe

## The thyrd decade.

The haven  
Pocchorrosa.

A passynger  
shyppe.

kyng Tuma:  
nama.

Decurians  
are officers  
devided into  
tennes. &c.

kyng Daba:  
ba.

The gold my:  
nes of Daba:  
iba.

The pallaice  
of kyng Da:  
baiba.  
The gold my:  
nes of Daba:  
ba.

An erreure.

Expedition a:  
geinst kyng  
Dabaiba.

those regions, and also certeyne of the bondemen them selues which had nowe lerned the Spanysh tongue. They say that the haven of Pocchorrosa, is onely seuen leagues distant from the haven of Comogrus. In Pocchorrosa, he is assigned to leaue fyfte men with the lyghtest shyp which maye bee a passynger betwene them: that lyke as we vse poste horses by lande, so may they by this currant shippe, in shorte space certifie the Lieuerenaunt and thynhabitours of Dariena of suche thynges as shall chaunce. They entende also to buylde houses in the region of Tumanama. The palaice of kyng Tumanama, is distant from Pocchorrosa about twentie leagues. Of these foure hundred men, beinge of the owlde souldiers of Dariena and men of good experiance, fyfte weare appoynted to bee as it were Decurians, to guide and conducte the newe men from place to place to do their affaires. When they had thus sette all thynges in order, they thought it good to aduertise the king hereof, and therewith to certifie hym that in those prouinces there is a kyng named Dabaiba whose dominion is very riche in golde: But the same to be yet brouched by reason of his great power. His kingedome ioynerh to the seconde greater ryuer named Dabaiba after his name, whiche fauleth into the sea out of the corner of the goulfe of Vraha as we haue largely declared before. The common repozte is, that all the lande of his dominions is ryche in golde. The palayce of kyng Dabaiba is fyfte leagues distante from Dariena. Thynhabitantes saye that from the palaice, the golde mynes reache to the borders on euery syde. Albeit, owre men haue also golde mynes not to bee contempned, even within three leagues of Dariena, in the which they gather golde in many places at this presente: yet doo theye aspyre greater plentie to bee in the mynes of Dabaiba. In the bookes of owre fyrste trutes wyrtten to yowre holynes, we made mention of this Dabaiba, wherein owre men were decaued and myskooke the matter. For where they founde the fyfther men of kyng Dabaiba in the maryshes, they thought his region had byn there also. They determyned therfore to sende to kyng Dabaiba, three hundred choyse younge men to be chosen oute of the hole army as most apte to the warrres, and well furnished with all kyndes of armour and artillery, to thintent to go vnto hym and wyl hym, eyther frendly and peaceably to perswarte

mytte them to inhabyte parte of his kingdome with the fruit  
 tion of the golde mynes, or elles to bydde him battayle and  
 dyue hym owte of his countrey. In their letters, they often  
 tymes repete this for an argument of great pſychede to coome,  
 that they in maner dygged the grounde in noo place, but  
 founde the earthe mytte with sparkes and smaule graynes  
 of golde. They haue also aduertised the kynge that it ſhalbe  
 commodious to place inhabitours in the haven of *Sancta Mar-*  
*tha* in the region of *Saturna*, that it maye bee a place of refuge  
 for them that ſaple from the Ilande of *Dominica* from the whi-  
 che (as they ſaye) it is but foure or fyue dayes ſaylſyng to that  
 haven of the regyon of *Saturna*. And from the haven, but thre  
 dayes ſaylſyng to *Dariena*. But this is to bee underſtoode in go-  
 ynge and not in returnyng. For the returnyng from thence  
 is ſo laborious and difficulte by reaſon of the contrary courſe  
 of the water, that they ſeeme as it were to aſcende hyghe  
 montaynes and ſtepye ageynſte the poynte of *Neptunus*. This  
 ſtoppte courſe of the ſea towarde the Weſte, is not ſo violence  
 to them whiche retourne to Spayne from the Ilandes of  
*Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba*: Althoughe they alſo do labour ageynſte  
 the faule of the Ocean: The cauſe wherof is, that the ſea is  
 here verpe large, ſo that the waters haue their full ſcoope.  
 But in the tracte of *Paria*, the waters are conſtrayned toge-  
 ther by the bendynge ſydes of that great lande, and by the  
 multrude of Ilandes ſpyng ageynſte it, as the lyke is ſcene  
 in the ſtraighes or narrow ſeas of *Sicilie* where the violent  
 courſe of the waters cauſe the dangerous places of *ſcylla*  
 and *Charybdis*, by reaſon of thoſe narrow ſeas whiche contene  
*Ionium*, *Libicum*, and *Tirrhenum*. Colonus the fyrſt ſpyder of theſe  
 regyons, hath lefte in wyryng, that ſaylſyng from the I-  
 lande of *Guaniſſa*, and the prouynces of *Iala*, *Mala*, and *Cera-*  
*baro*, beyng regyons of the weſt marches of *Beragua*, he founde  
 the courſe of the water ſo vehemente and furious ageynſte  
 the fore parte of his ſhippe whyle he ſailed from thoſe coaſtes  
 towarde the Eaſte, that he coulde at no tyme touche the  
 grounde with his ſoundynge plummet, but that the contrar-  
 y violence of the water wolde beate it vppre from the bot-  
 tome. He aſſymeth alſo, that he coulde neuer in one hole  
 dape with a meately good wynde, wynde one myle of the  
 courſe of the water. And this is the cauſe why they are of-

Great plenty  
 of golde,

The regyon  
 of *Saturna*  
 The Ilande  
 of *Dominica*

*Dariena*.

Difficulte ſay-  
 lſyng ageynſt  
 the courſe of  
 the ſea,

The daunge-  
 rous ſtraigh-  
 tes of *ſcylla*  
 & *Charybdis*,

*Guaniſſa*.

*Iala*,

*Mala*.

*Cerabaro*.

*Beragua*.

The velle-  
 ment courſe  
 of the ſea fro  
 the eaſt to  
 the weſt.

D. h. i.

centimes

## The thyrd decade.

The north  
wynde.

Sancta Ma-  
ria Antiqua,  
the fyist ha-  
bitation of  
the spaniar-  
des in the  
fyine lande.  
Sardus the  
Ilande of  
Sardinia,  
The variety  
of regions ly-  
nge vnder  
one paralel,

By what mea-  
nes the sonne  
beames are  
cause of fer-  
uent heate.

The perniti-  
ous ayer of  
Darien.

tentymes enforced to sayle fyfte by the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*, and so into the mayne sea toward the North when they retorne to Spaine, that the North wyndes maye further their vyage whiche they can not bypge to passe by a directe course. But of the motions of the Ocean sea to and fro, this shal suffice. Let vs now therefore cherche what they write of *Dariena*, & of their habitation there, whiche they caule *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, planted on the sea bankes of *Dariena*. The situation of the place, hath no natural munition or defense: And the ayer is moze pestiferous then in *Sardus*. The Spanyshe inhabitants, are all pale & yelow, lyke vnto them that haue the yelow gyaundynges. Whiche neuertheles commeth not of the nature of the region as it is situate vnder the heauen. For in many regyons beyng vnder the selfe same degree of latitude, hauyng the pole of the same elenation, they fynd holsome & temperate ayer, in such places where as the earth byngeth forth fayre springes of water, or where holsome ryuers runne by bankes of pure earthe without mudde: but mozte especyally where they inhabyte the sydes of the hylles and not the valleyes. But that habytation whiche is on the bankes of the ryuer of *Dariena*, is situate in a deepe valley, and enuironed on euery syde with hyghe hylles: By reason wherof, it receaueth the soonne beames at noonetide directly perpendiclar ouer their heades, and are therefore soze vexed by reflection of the beames bothe before, behynde, and from the sydes. For it is the reflection of the soonne beames whiche causeth feruente heate, and not their accesse or nerenesse to the earth. Forasmuche as they are not passyble in them selues as dothe manifestly appeare by the snowe lyinge continually vnmolten vpon cerceyne hygh montaynes, as yowre holynesse knoweth ryghte well. The soonne beames therefore faulynge on the montaynes, are reflected downeward into the valley by reason of the oblique of the declynyng sydes of the hylles, as it were the faule of a greate rounde stone rowled from the toppe of a montayne. The valley therefore receaueth, both those beames whiche faule directly thereon, and also those whiche are reflected downeward from euery syde of the montaynes. Their habitation therefore in *Dariena*, is pernicious and unholsome onely of the particular nature of the place, & not by the sytuation of the regyon as it is placed vnder the heauen

heauen or feate to the soonne. The place is also contagious by the nature of the soyle, by reason it is compassed aboute with muddy and synkynge marfshes, thinflection wherof is not a lyttle encreased by the heate. The byllage it selfe, is in a marfsh, and in maner a standynge puddle, where, of the droppes faulynge from the handes of the bond men whyle they water the pauementes of their houses, roades are engendered immediatly, as I my selfe sawe in an other place the droppes of that water turne into flees in the soomer season. Furthermoze, where so euer they dygge the grounde the deapthe of a handefull and a halfe, there springeth owte ynholosome and corrupte water of the nature of the ryuer which runneth through the deepe & muddy chanel of the valley, and so fauleth into the sea. Now therefore they consulte of remouynge their habytation. Necessytye caused them fyrst to fasten their foote heate, bycause that they whiche fyrst arryued in those landes, were oppressed with suche vrgente hunger, that they had no respecte to chaunge the place although they were thus vexed by the contagion of the soyle and heate of the soonne, besyde the corrupte water and infectious ayer by reason of venemous vapours and exhalations rysynge from the same. An other great incommoditie was, that the place was destitute of a commodious haven, beyng three leagues distant from the mowthe of the goulfe. The waye is also roughe and difficulte to byngge vytrayles and other necessities from the sea. But lette vs now speake somewhat of other particuler thynges whiche chaunsed. Therefore shortly after that they weate arryued, there happened many thynges wherof they had no knowledge before. A certayne well learned phisytion of Auile, whome partly thauropyte of the byshoppe of *Dariena*, and partly the desire of golde had allured to those landes, was so scarred with lyghnyng in the nyghte season lyng in bedde with his wyfe, that the house and all the stuffe therein beyng sette on fyre and burnt, he and his wyfe beyng bothe soore scorched, ranne soore cryng and almoste naked, hardely escapyng the daunger of deache. At an other tyme, as certayne of them stode on the shoure, a great Crocodyle sodenly carped awaye a maye of a yeare and a halfe owlde, as a kyte shulde haue snatched hye a chicken: And this euen in

Toades and  
flees engen-  
dered of drop-  
pes of water,

Necessyte  
hath no lawe

A house sette  
on fyre with  
lyghnyng,

A dogge de-  
uoured of a  
crocodyle,  
*Tanquam canis*  
*in Niloe.*

## The thyrde decade

The byting  
of bannes.

Lyons and  
tygers,

Beastes wy-  
gger in  
their kynde,

How the go-  
uernour en-  
terteyned  
kyng Careta,

Note.

Dioms or  
Billa, are  
wormes whi-  
che destroy  
shippes,

the presence of theym all, where the myserable dogge cryed  
in bayne for the helpe of his master. In the night season  
they were tormented with the bytyng of bannes whiche are  
there soo noysome that if they bite any man in his sleape,  
they putte hym in daunger of lyfe, onely with drawyng  
of bludde: In so muche that summe haue dyed therof, fau-  
lyng as it were into a consumption through the malycious-  
nesse of the venemous wounde. If these bannes chaunce to  
fynde a cocke or a henne abroad in the nyght season, they  
bite them by the combes and so kyll them. They also whi-  
che wente laste into these regions, do wyte, that the lande  
is troubeled with Crocodyles, Lyons, and Tigers: But that  
they haue now deuised artes and ingens howe to take them.  
Likewyse that in the houses of their felowes, they founde  
the hydes and cases of suche Lyons and Tygers as they had  
kylled. They wyte furthermore, that by reason of the ranke-  
nesse and frerfulnesse of the grounde, kyne, swyne, and hoz-  
ses, doo maruelously increase in these regions, and growe to  
a muche bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the first  
broode. Of the excedyng hyghnesse of the trees with their  
fruites, of the garden herbes, fruites, plantes, and seedes  
whiche othere men broughte from Spayne and Colwed and tre  
the same in these regyons, lykewyse of the herres and othere  
foure footed beastes bothe tame and wyld, also of dyuers  
kyndes of foules, byrdes, and fylthes, they wyte euen as  
we haue declared in the decades before. Carra the kyng of  
the regyon of Cioba, was with them for the space of thre  
dayes: whome when they had frendly enterpeyned and shew-  
ed hym the secrete places of their shippes, their hozses al-  
so with their trappars, bardes, and othere furnimentes, be-  
syde many othere thinges whiche seemed straunge to hym,  
and had further delited his mynd with the harmony of their  
musycall instrumentes, and gyuen hym many rebardes, they  
dysmytted hym halfe amased with so muche admyzation.  
He signified vnto them, that their trees in that prouynce,  
of the planches wherof, if shippes were made, they shoulde  
bee safe from the woodmines of the sea whiche they cause  
mas. Howe these woodmines knowe and corrode the shippes,  
we haue declared before. Othere shippes are greatly troube-  
led with this plage if they lye longe in the haucens of these  
regyons

regions. But they asseyme that the woodde of this tree is  
 soo bytter, that the woozmes wyl not taste therof. There  
 is also an other tree peculiar to these landes: whose leaues  
 if they onely touche the bare in any place of a mannes body,  
 they cause greate blysters, and those soo malycious that ex-  
 cepte the same bee soorthwith healed with salte water or  
 fassynge spytte, they doo incontynently engender deadly  
 paynes. They saye lykewyse, that the sauour of the woodde  
 is presente popson: And that it can noo whither bee caryed  
 without daunger of lyfe. When thynhabitauntes of the  
 lande of Hispaniola had oftentymes attempted to shake of the  
 yoke of seruytude, and coulde neuer bynge the same to passe  
 neyther by open warre nor yet by pryue conspiraces, they  
 were determyned in the nyghte season to haue kyled oovre  
 men in their sleepe with the smoke of this woodde. But  
 when the Chyistian men had knowlledge hercof, they com-  
 pelled the pooze wretches to confesse their intent, and pu-  
 nished the chiefe aurours of the denyse. They haue also a  
 certayne herbe with the sauour wherof they are preferred  
 from the hurte of this venemous woodde so that they maye  
 beare it safely. Of these smaule thynges it shall suffice too  
 haue sayde thus muche. They looke dayly for many greater  
 thynges to certifye vs of from the Ilandes of the south sea.  
 For at suche tyme as the messenger whiche broughte ovr  
 letters departed from thense, *Petrus Arias* prepared an expedi-  
 tion to that ryche Ilande whiche lyeth in the mouthe of the  
 goulfe cauled *Sinus S. Michaelis*, and reacheth into the southe  
 sea, byng also lefte vntouched of *Vaschus* by reason that the  
 sea was at that tyme of the yeaere soze troubeled with tem-  
 pestes, as wee haue further declared in *Vaschus* his vyage to  
 the southe. Wee looke therfore dayly for greater thynges  
 then are hetherto past. For they haue nowe taken in hand  
 to subdue manye other prouynces, whiche wee suppose too  
 bee eyther verrey ryche, or to bynge furthe summe straunge  
 woozkes of nature. *Iohannes Diaz Solisus* of *Nebriſſa* (of whome  
 we haue made mention befoze) is sente by the froonte of the  
 cape or poynte of *Sancti Augustini* (whiche reacheth seven de-  
 grees beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, and pertyneth to the  
 dominion of the Portugales) to thintent to ouer runne the  
 southe tye from the backe halfe of *Paria*, *Cumana*, *Cuyubacoa*,  
 with

A venemous  
tree.

perhappes  
they: vene-  
mous arrows  
are made of  
this woodde  
or. 2c.

A preserna-  
tiue agaynst  
popson,

The Ilandes  
of the south  
sea,

The ryche I-  
land cauled  
Dices,

Cab. sancti  
Augustini,  
Of the euyl  
successe of  
these viages,  
reade decade  
iii, Liber, ix,

## The thyrde decade.

An expedition  
to destroy the  
Canibales,

Fogeda,

Looke, decad.  
14. Lib. ix,

with the hauens of *Carthago* and *sancta Martha*, of *Dariens* also and *Berigua*, that more perfecte and certeyne knowledge may bee had of those tractes. Furthemore, one *Iohannes Poncius* was sente forth with three shippes to destroye the *Canibales* bothe in the lande and *Ilandes* there aboute: as well that the nations of the more humane and innocent people maye at the length lyue without feare of that pestiferous generation, as also the better and more safely to searche the secreteates and rycheesse of those regions. Many other lykewise were sente dyuers and sundry wayes: as *Gasper Badaiocius* too searche the West partes: *Franciscus Bezerra*, to sayle by the corner of the goulfe: And *Valleius*, to passe by the mouthe or entrance therof to the East coastes of the goulfe to searche the secreteates of that lande, in the whiche *Fogeda* with his companye had of late begonne to plante their habitation, and had buylded a fortreffe and a byllage. *Badaiocius* departed fyrste frome *Dariens* with foure score souldiours well appoynted: Whome *Lodouicus Mercado* folowed with fyftee: To *Bezerra* were also fourestore assignyd, and three score and tenne to *Valleius*. Whether they shall arryue at safe and commodious hauens, or faule into vnfortunate statious, he only knoweth whose prouidence ruleth all: for as for vs men wee are included within the knowledge of thinges after they haue chaunced. Lette vs nowe therfore coome to other matters.

## The seuenthe booke of the thirde decade.

The navigati  
ons of An-  
dreas Mo-  
talia,



*Etrus Arias* the gouernour of the supposed continent, was scarcely entred into the mayne sea with his nauye onwarde on his vyage to *Dariens*. But he was aduertised that one *Andreas Moralis* a pilot who had oftentymes ouer runne the coastes of these new seas and the *Ilandes* of the same, was coome to the courtte to sell suche marchaundies as he broughthe with hym frome thence. This man had diligently searched the tracte of the supposed continent, and especyally thinner regyons of the *Ilande* of *Hispaniola*, wherunto he was appoynted by his

his brother *Nicolaus Onandus* (the gouernour of the Iland and chiefe Commendatory of the order of the knyghtes of *Alcantara*) because he was a wytty man and more apte to searche suche thynges then any other: So that with his owne handes he drew faire cardes and tables of suche regyons as hee discouered. Wherin as he hath bynne founde faythfull of suche as haue sense had better tryall hereof, so is he in most credyt emongest the best sorte. He therfore resorted to me as all they are accustomed to doo, whiche retourne from the Ocean. What I learned of hym and dyuers other of thynges heretofore vnknewen, I wyll nowe declare. The begynnyng of this narration, shalbe the particular description of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, forasmuche as it is the heade and as it weare the principall marke of all the lyberality of the Ocean, and hath a thousande and againe a thousande fayre, pleasant, bewtifull, and ryche *Nereides* whiche lye aboute it on euery syde, adournynge this their ladye and moother, as it were an other *Tethis* the wyfe of *Neptunus*, enuyronynge her aboute, and attendynge vppon her as their queene and patronesse. But of these *Nereides* (that is to saye, the Ilandes placed aboute her) we wyll speake more hereafter. Lette vs in the meane tyme declare sumwhat of the Ilande whiche olore men named *Margarita Diues* (whiche the Spanyardes caule *De las perlas*) beyng nowe well knowen, and lyinge in the southe sea in the goulfe cauled *Sinus Sancti Michaelis* (that is) sainte Michaels goulfe. This Iland hath presently brought to olore knowledge many straunge and woonderfull thynges and pponyseth no smaule hope of greater thynges in tyme to coome. In this is founde great plentie of pearles so fayre & great, that the sumptuous queene *Cleopatra* myght haue seemed to weare them in her crownes, chaynes, and brasser tes. Of the welkylthes wherin these are engendered, wee wyll speake sumwhat more in thende of this narration. But let vs nowe retorne to *Hispaniola* moste lyke vnto the earthly paradys. In the description hereof, we wyll begynne of the impossyion of dyuerse names: Then of the forme of the Ilande, temperate ayre and benefyciall heauen: And synally of the deuysyon of the regyons. Therfore for the ryghter proportionation of the names, yowre holynesse muste vnderstande that they are pronounced with thaccent, as yowre may knowe by the

A particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola

*Nereides* are nymphes of the sea, he meaneth *Hispaniola*, *Tethis* the wyfe of *Neptunus* and goddess of the sea, The Ilande of *Margarita Diues*, sainte Michaels goulfe

Great pearles

*Hispaniola* lyke vnto the earthly paradys,

## The thyrd decade.

The fyrst in-  
habitours of  
Hispaniola

Bardanus.  
Teucus.  
Troianum.  
Tritans,  
Sidonians:

Eneis.  
Latium.

Jerusalem

Mecha.  
The Ilandes  
of Canarie,

Betanchor,  
a  
Frenchman,

by the verge sette ouer the heddes of the bowels, as in the name of the Ilande *Matinino*, where the accente is in the last bowell, and the lyke to be vnderstoode in all other names. They saye therfore, that the fyrste inhabitours of the Ilande were transported in their *Canots* (that is boates made of one hole ppece of woodde) from the Ilande of *Matinino*, beyng lyke banyshted men dysuen from thense by reason of certayne contrary factions and diuisions emonge them selues, lyke as wee reade howe *Bardanus* came from *Corybo*, and *Teucus* from *Creta* into *Asia*, and that the regyon where they placed their habitation, was afterwarde cauled *Troianum*. The lyke wee reade howe the *Tritans* and *Sidonians* arryued with their nauye in *Libya* by the fabulous conduction of *Dido*. These *Matinians* in like maner beyng banyshted from their owne countrey, planted their fyrste habytation in that parte of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* whiche they caule *Cabonua*, vpon the banke of the ryuer named *Bahaboni*: As is redde in the begynnyng of the Romaynes that *Eneis* of *Troye* arryued in the region of *Italy* cauled *Latium* vppon the banks of the ryuer of *Tiber*. Within the mouthe of the ryuer of *Bahaboni*, lyeth an Ilande where it is sayde that thynhabitauntes buylded their fyrste howse whiche they named *Camoteia*. This howse they consecrated shortly after, and honoured the same reuerently with continual gyftes and monumentes, euen vntyl the comynge of otre men, lyke as the *Christians* haue euer relygyously honoured *Jerusalem* the fountayne and oryginall of otre faythe: As also the *Turkes* attribute the lyke to the cytie of *Mecha* in *Araby*, and thynhabytantes of thefortunate Ilandes (cauled the Ilandes of *Canarye*) to *Tyrma* buylded vppon a hyghe rocke from the whiche many were wounte with ioyfull myndes and songes to caste them selues downe headlonge, beyng perswaded by their priestes that the soules of all suche as so dyd for the loue of *Tyrma*, shulde thereby enioye eternall felycity. The conquerours of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, founde them yet remaynyng in that superstition, euen vntyll otre tyme: Now yet is the memozy of their sacryfices bitterly woyn awaye: The rocke also reserueth the owlde name vnto this daye. I haue also learned of late, that there yet remayneth in the Ilande summe of the faction of *Betanchor* the French man and fyrste that broughte the Ilandes

landes to good culture and ciuilitie beyng therto lycenced by the kynge of Castile as I haue sayde before. These doo yet (for the mosse parte) obserue bothe the language and maners of the frenschemen, although the eynes and successeurs of Betanchor, had soulede the two subdued Ilandes to certeyne men of Castile. yet thynhabitours whiche succeeded Betanchor, and buyldeed them houses and encreased their families there, do contynue to this daye: And lyue quietly and pleasauntly with the Spanyardes, not greued with the sharpe coulde of France. But lette vs nowe retorne to thynhabitantes of

Matinino and Hispaniola. The Ilande of Hispaniola was fyrste named by the fyrste inhabitours, Quizqueia, and then Haiti.

The fyrst names of this paniola.

And this not by chaunce, or at the pleasure of suche as diuised these names, but of credulitie and beleefe of summe great effecte. For Quizqueia, is as muche to saye as a great thinge: And that so great that none maye bee greater. They interpret also, that Quizqueia signifieth, large, vniuersall, or al,

in like signification as the Greekes named their god cauled Pan: Bycause that for the greatnes therof, these simple soules supposed it to bee the hole worlde: And that the soonne beames gaue lyghte to none other worlde but onely to this

Ilande with the other adiacente aboute the same: And therbyppon thoughte it most woorthy to bee cauled great, as the greatest of all other knowen to them. Haiti is as muche to saye by interpretation, as rough, sharpe, or craggie. But by a fyguratiue speache cauled denomination (wherby the hole is named by part) they named the hole Iland Haiti (that is) voyghe: For as muche as in many places the face of this

Iland is rough by reason of the craggie montaynes, horrible thicke wooddes, and terrible darke and diepe halleys enuyroned with great and highe montaynes, although it bee in

manye other places exceedyng beutifull and flozyspynge. Here muste wee sumwhat digresse from the order we are entered into. Perhaps your holynesste wyll maruell by what meanes these simple men shoulde of soo longe conynuance beate in minde suche principles, where as they haue no knowledge of letters. So it is therefore, that from the beginninge, their princes haue euer byn accustomed to committe their children to the gouernaunce of their wise men whiche they caule

Boitios, to bee instructed in knowledge, and to beare in memorye

The roughnesse of this paniola.

The maner of lernynge.

## The thynde decade

Ballets and  
rhymes.

Singing and  
daunceing.  
Songes of  
loue and moor-  
nyng.

Prophecies,

Note

They: famili-  
aritie with  
spirites

The deuyl is  
dryuen awaye  
by baptisme

more suche thynges as they lerne. They gyue them selues chieflye to two thynges: As generally to lerne thoziginnall and successe of thynges: And particularlye to cherishe the noble factes of their graundefathers great graundefathers and auncestours alwell in peace as in warre. These two thynges they haue of olde tyme composed in certeyne myters and ballettes in their language. These rhymes or ballettes, they caule *Areitos*. And as owre mynstrelles are accustomed too synge to the harpe or lute, so doo they in lyke maner synge these songes and daunce to the same, playinge on tymbrells made of shels of certen fyshes. These tymbrells they caule *Mazgwei*. They haue also songes and ballettes of loue: And othert of lamentations and moornyng: Summe also to encourage them to the warres, with euery of them their telones agreeable to the matter. They exerceple theym selues muche in daunceinge, wherein they are verie actyue and of greater agilitie then owre men, by reason they gyue them selues to nothyng so muche, and are not hyndered with apparell whiche is also the cause of their swiftenesse of foote. In their ballettes lesse them of their auncestours, they haue prophecies of the comminge of owre men into their countrey. These they synge with moornyng and as it were with gromyng, bewayle the losse of their lybertie and seruitude. For these prophecies make mention that there shoulde coome into the Ilande *Mazguacochios*, that is, men clothed in apparell, and armed with suche swoordes as shulde cutte a man in sunder at one stroke: vnder whose yoke their posteritie shulde bee subdued. And here I do not maruell that their predecessours coulde propheeye of the seruitude and bondage of their successyon, if it be true that is sayd of the familiaritie they haue with spirites whiche appeare to them in the night, wherof we haue largelye made mention in the nynt hooke of the first decade, where also wee haue entreated of their zemes (that is) their Idoles and Images of diuelles whiche they honoured. But they saye that sence these zemes were taken awaye by the Christians, the spirites haue no more appeared. Owre men ascribe this to the sygne of the crosse wherwith they defende theym selues from suche spirites. For they are nowe all censed and sanctified by the water of baptisme wherby they haue renounced the deuyl and are consecrated the holy members of Christ. They

They are vniuersally studious to knowe the boundes and lymettes of their regions and kingdomes: And especially their *Mitani* (that is) noble men. So that euen they are not bitterly ignorant in the surueyinge of their landes. The common people haue none other care then of settinge, sowynge, and plantynge. They are mooste experte fyllers, by reason that throughout the hole yeare, they are accustomed daylye to plouge them selues in the ryuers, so that in maner they lyue no lesse in the water then on the lande. They are also giuen to huntynge. For (as I haue sayde before) they haue twoo kyndes of foure footed beastes, wherof the one is lyttle creatures cauled *vtias*, and the other Serpentes named *Iuannas*, muche lyke vnto Crocodiles, of eyght foote length, of mooste pleasaunte taste, and lypynge on the lande. All the Ilandes nooythe innumerable byrdes and foules: As stocke doves, duckes, geese, hearons, byrde nolesse number of popingais then sparowes with vs. Euery kynge hath his subiectes diuided to sundrye affaires: As summe to huntynge, other to fyllynge, and other summe to husbandrye. But let vs now retorne to speake further of the names. We haue sayde that *Quixqueia* and *Haiti*, were the oulde names of this Ilande.

The hole Ilande was also cauled *Cipanga* of the region of the montaynes aboundynge with golde: Lyke as oure ancient poetes cauled all Itealpe *Lanium* of parte therof. Therfore as they cauled *Ausonia* and *Hesperia*, *Italie*, euen soo by the names of *Quixqueia*, *Haiti*, and *Cipanga*, they vnderstode the hole Ilande of *Hispaniola*. Oure men dyd fyrste name it *Isabella* of queene *Helisabeth* whiche in the Spanysh tounge is cauled *Isabelli*: And so named it of the fyrst Colonie where they planted their habitation vpon the banke nere vnto the sea on the Northe syde of the Ilande, as wee haue further declared in the fyrst decade. But of the names, this shall suffice. Lette vs nowe therfore speake of the forme of the Ilande. They whiche fyrste ouer ranne it, described it vnto me to bee lyke the leafe of a chestnute tree, with a goulfe toward the west syde, lypynge open ageynst the Ilande of *Cuba*. But the experte mynster *Andreas Moralis*, broughte me the forme therof sumwhat differynge from that. For from bothe the corners, as from the East angle and the West, he described it to be indented and eagen with many great goulfes, and the corners

Surueyers

They lyue as much in the water as on the lande

Serpentes  
A Crocodile  
is much lyke to our ewte  
or Lyserte  
Byrdes and  
foules  
Poppingayes

*Cipanga*.

*Italy* cauled  
*Lanium*

*Isabella*

The forme of  
the Ilande of  
*Hispaniola*

A particular  
carde of his-  
paniola.

hispaniola  
compared to  
italie,

The tempera-  
ture of hispa-  
niola.

The equinocti-  
all.

Could acci-  
dental, and  
not by the sy-  
tuation of the  
region,

Perpetuall  
springe and  
soomer,

Maruelous  
fruitfulness

to reache forth the very farre: and placeth manye large and safe hauens in the great goulfe on the East syde. But I trust shortly too to trauaile further herein, that a perfecte carde of the particular description of *hispaniola* maye bee sente vnto your holynesse. For they haue nowe drawne the Geographical description thereof in cardes, euen as your holynesse hath seene the forme and sytuation of Spayne and Italie with their montaines, valleyes, ryuers, cities, and colonies. Lette vs therfore without manifestnesse compare the Ilande of *hispaniola* to Italic, sumtyme the heade and queene of the hole worlde. For if wee consyder the quantitie, it shalbee founde lytle lesse, and muche moze fructfull. It reacheth from the East into the Weste, fyue hundred and forty myles accordynge to the computation of the later searchers: Althoughe the Admyrall sumythat increased this number as wee haue sayde in the fyrste decade. It is in breadth summe where, almoste thre hundred myles: And in summe places narrower where the corners are extended. But it is suerlye muche moze blessed and fortunate then Italie: Beyng for the mooste parte thereof so temperate and softsynge, that it is neyther vexed with sharpe coude, nor afflicted with immoderate heate. It hath bothe the sleepinges or conuersyons of the soonne (cauled *solfstia*) in maner equall with the Equinoctiall, with lytle difference betwene the length of the daye and nyght throughout all the yeare. For on the the south syde, the day ascendeth scarcely an houre in length aboue the nyghte, or contrary wyse. But the difference is moze on the north syde. yet are there summe regions in the Ilande in the whiche the coude is of sum force. But your holynesse muste vnderstonde this to bee incident by reason of the obiecte or nearenesse of the mountaines, as wee wyl moze largely declare hereafter. yet is not this coude so pearynge or sharpe, that thynhabitanes are molested with snowe or bytyng froste. In other places, the Ilande enioyeth perpetuall springe tyme, and is fortunate with continuall soomer and haruest. The trees flozpe there all the hole yeare: And the medowes contynue alway greene. All thynges are exceasyng fortunate, and growe to great perfection. How wonderfully all garden herbes and frutes doo encrease, soo that within the space of syxtene dayes after the seede is sowne, al herbes

herbes of smaule steames, as letteffe, bozage, rabythe, and  
 suche other, coome to their full ryppenesse: And also howe  
 herbes of the bygger sorte, as gourdes, melons, cucumers,  
 pompons, citrons, and suche other, coome to their perfection  
 in the space of thirtie dayes, wee haue sufficiently declared  
 elles where. Of the beastes transported out of Spaine the-  
 ther, wee haue sayde howe they growe too a muche greater  
 kynde: In so muche that when they faule into communica-  
 tion of the oxen or kyne, they compare them in bignesse to ele-  
 phantes, and swyne to mules: But this sumwhat by an ex-  
 cellyue kynde of speache. Wee haue also made mention how  
 their swynes fleshe is moze sauourye and of farre better and  
 moze pleasaunte taste and moze holsome then obores, by rea-  
 son they are fedde with the frutes of Myzobalane trees, and  
 other pleasaunte and nuryshynge frutes of that contrey, Oxen and  
Swyne of ex-  
ceedyng bys-  
nesse,  
 whiche growe there of them selues, as do with vs beeches,  
 holly, & okes. Wyne woold also prosper there with marue-  
 lous encrease, if they had any regard to the plantinge therof.  
 The lyke encrease cometh of wheate if it be sowed vpon  
 the mountaynes where the colde is of some strength: but not  
 in the playnes, by reason of to much fatnes and rankenes of  
 the grownde. It is in maner incredible to heare, that an eare  
 of wheate shuld bee bygger then a mans arme in the brawne,  
 and moze then a spanne in length, bearynge also moze then a  
 thousande graynes, as they all confesse with one voyce, and  
 earnestly affirme the same with othes. yet they say the bread  
 of the Ilande (cauled *Caxabbi* made of the roote of *Iucca*, to  
 bee moze holsome, because it is of easyer digestion, and is cul-  
 tured with lesse labour and greater increase. The residue of  
 the tyme which they spende not in setyngge and plantynge,  
 they bestowe in gatheringe of golde. They haue nowe suche  
 plentie of foure footed beastes, that horses and ore hydes with  
 sheepe skynnes and goate skyns and such other, are brought  
 from thence into Spayne: So that nowe the doughter in ma-  
 ny thynges helpeth and succureth her mother. Of the trees  
 of brasile, spices, the graine which coloureth scarlet in bright  
 shynnge redde, mastix, gossampine cotton, the precious me-  
 tall cauled *Electrum*, and such other commodities of this I-  
 lande, we haue spoken sufficiently before. What therefore  
 can chaunce moze happy vnto man vpon the earth, then there  
 It, iii. to lyue

Beastes

Oxen and  
Swyne of ex-  
ceedyng bys-  
nesse,Swyne fed  
with myzoba-  
lanes.

vines

wheats

An eare of  
wheate as  
bys as a mas  
arme in the  
brawneThe bread of  
the Ilande.

Solide,

Great plentie  
of cattayle,Brasile,  
mastyx,  
Gossampine  
Electrum,

## The thyrde decade.

Inconmodi-  
ties of intem-  
perat regions

holsome ayer  
and water

Golde euery  
where

The descripti-  
on of the in-  
ner partes of  
the Ilande,

The cite of s.  
Dominicke

The moun-  
taynes of  
Haiti

The moun-  
taynes of Ci-  
baou

to lyue where he neede not to bee dyspued to close chaumbres  
with sharpe coulde or sayntynge heate? For per in wynter  
eyther to bee laden with heauy apparell, or to burne the shin-  
nes with continuall sytryng at the fyre, which thynges make  
men oulde in short tyme by resoluinge the natural heate, wher-  
of a thousande diseases insue. They also a firme the ayer to  
bee very healthfull: and the waters of the ryuers to bee no  
lesse holsome, as they whiche haue theyr continuall course  
through the earth of the golden mynes. For there is in ma-  
ner no ryuer, no mountaynes, and but fewe playnes that are  
utterly without golde. But let vs nowe at the length come  
to the particular description of the inner partes of this blef-  
sed Ilande. We haue befoze declared howe it is in maner e-  
qually diuided with foure greete ryuers descendynge frome  
hygh mountaynes: wherof that which runneth towarde the  
East, is cauled *Iunna*, as that towarde the West is named *At-  
tibunicus*: The thyrde is *Naba* or *Haba* which runneth South-  
warde: The fourth is cauled *Iache*, and fauleth towarde the  
North. But this shippe master, hath brought an other des-  
cription obserued of chynhabitantes from the begynnynge.  
Let vs therfoze diuide the hole Ilande into fyne partes, cau-  
lynge the regions of euery prouince by theyr owlde names:  
and synally make mention of suche thynges as are woorthye  
memory in euery of them. The begynninge of the Ilande on  
the East syde, is conteyned in the prouince named *Caicimu*:  
so named for that in theyr language *Cimu*, signifieth the front  
or begynnynge of any thyng. After this, foloweth the pro-  
uince of *Huhabo*, and then *Cahabo*. The fourth is *Bainoa* & *Glacca-  
larim* conteyneth the west corner. But the last saue one, *Bainoa*  
is of larger boundes then the three other. *Caicimu* reacheth  
from the fyrst fronte of the Ilande to the ryuer *Hoxama*, whi-  
che runneth by the cite of saynt Dominicke. But towarde  
the North syde, it is ended at the rough mountaynes of *Hai-  
ti*. *Huhabo*, is included within the mountaynes *Haiti* and the  
ryuer *Iaciga*. *Cahabo* the thyrde prouince, conteyneth all that  
lyeth betwene *Cubabo* and *Dabatio*, euen vnto the mouth of the  
ryuer of *Iaccha* or *Iache* (one of the foure which diuide the I-  
lande equally) and ascendeth to the mountaynes of *Cibaua*,  
where the greatestte plentie of golde is founde: Wherof the  
which also the ryuer *Demahus* springeth: and ioyynge with  
the

the springes of the ryuer of Naiba, (being an other of the foure which diuiderh the Ilande towarde the South sea) faulceth to an other banke of the ryuer of saynt Dominicke. *Bainoa*, be-  
 gynneth at the confines of *Calabi*, and reacheth euen vnto the Ilande of *Cabini* which lieth neare vnto the sea bankes of the north syde of the Ilande where wee sayde that they erected the fyrst colonie or habitacion. The prouince of *Guacaciarima*, occupieth the remanent towarde the west. This they named *Guacaciarima*, bycause it is the extreme or vttermoſt parte of the Ilande. For *Iarima* in theyr language signifieth the tayle or ende of any thyng: And *Gua*, is an article whiche they vse often tymes in the names of thynges: And especially in the names of theyr kynges: as *Guarionexius*, and *Guaccanarillus*. In the prouince of *Caizimu*, are these regions: *Higuei*, *Guanama*, *Rey*, *re*, *Xagua*, *Aramana*, *Arabo*, *Haxoa*, *Macorix*, *Calacoa*, *Qualagua*, *Baguanimabo* and the rough mountaynes of *Hatti*. Here let vs speake sume what of theyr aspirations which they vse otherwyſe then the Latins doo. It is to bee noted that there is no aspiration in theyr bowels, which hath not the effecte of a consonant. So that they pronounce theyr aspirations moze vehemently then wee do the consonant. *f. pe*, all suche woordes as in their tonge are aspirate, are pronounced with lyke breath and spirite as is *f. p*. saying that herein the neather lyppe is not moued to thuppermoſt teethe. With open mouthes and makinge theyr brestes, they breath out these aspirations, *ba, be, bi, bo, bu*, as the Hebrewes and Arabians are accustomed to pronounce theyr. I fynde also that the Spanyardes vse the lyke vehemence in the aspirations of those woordes whiche they haue receaved of the Moores & Arabians which possessed Spaine, and continued there many yeares: As in these woordes: *Almo badda*, whiche signifieth a pyllowe or bolster: Also *Almohaxa*, that is, a horse combe: with dyuers such other woordes whiche they speake in maner with panting brestes and vehement spirite. I haue thought it good to reherſe these thynges, by cause amonge the Latines it often tymes soo chaunceth that onely the accent or aspiration, chaungeth the signification of the worde: as *bora*, for an houre, and *ora* for the plurale number of this worde or, which signifieth the mouth: Also *ora*, which signifieth regions or coastes. The lyke also chaunceth in the diuersitie of the accent, as *occido* I kyll, and *occi*  
 do I

The Ilande  
 of *Cabini*

Of prouinces  
 diuided into  
 regions

Of theyr aspira-  
 tions

The pronun-  
 ciation of the  
 hebrewes &  
 Arabians,  
 The moores  
 and Arabians  
 possessed  
 Spayne

howe the as-  
 piration chan-  
 geth the sig-  
 nification of  
 wordes

## The thynde decade.

Dyvers lan-  
guages in  
the Ilande

A greate caue  
in the rocke  
of a mount-  
ayne,

A dangerous  
enterpise

Rivers denou-  
red of caues,

to faule. Euen so in the language of these simple men, there are many rhymes to bee obscured. But let vs nowe returne to the description. In the prouince of Hubabo, are these regions: *Xamini*, *Cansibacoa*, *Cubabo*, with many other, the names wherof I haue not yet learned. The prouince of *Cababo*, comprehendeth these regions: *Magua*, and *Cacacubana*. The inhabitants of this region, haue a peculpar language much differinge from the common language of the Ilande, and are cauled *Macoryxes*. There is also an other region cauled *Cubanz*, whose language differeth from the other. Lykewyle the region of *Baiohaigua*, hath a dyuers tooenge. There are also other regions, as *Dahabon*, *Cyhabo*, and *Murabaho*. *Cotoy* is in the myddle of the Ilande. By this runneth the ryuer *Nizari*: And the mountaynes cauled *Mibaitin*, *Hozua*, and *Neibaynio*, confine with the same. In the prouince of *Bahoa*, are the regions of *Mizguana*, *Lagohuicho*, *Baurico*, *Dabaguna*, and *Atibuni*, so named of the ryuer: Also *Caunoa*, *Bukici*, *Dahabonici*, *Milaguariti*, *Atlei*, *Maccaxina*, *Gushabba*, *Aminici*, *Marien*, *Gurico*, *Amaguei*, *Karagua*, *Yaguana*, *Axxuei*, *Iacchi*, *Honoruoco*, *Diagua*, *Camsie*, and *Neibunio*. In *Guacoderima* the last prouince, these regions are comprehended: *Mauicario*, *Gushagua*, *Taquenaxabo*, *Nimica*, *Bahoa* the lesse, *Cashayni*, *Iamixi*, *Murabuxio*, *Zuana*, *Habacoa*, and *Ayjueros*. But let vs entreate somewhat of the particulars of the regions. In the prouince of *Cuicimu*, with in the great goulfe of the beginnyng, there is a greate caue in a hollowe rocke vnder the roote of a hygh mountayne, about twoo furlonges from the sea. The enterie of this caue is not much vnyke the doores of a great temple, beinge very large and turnyng many wayes. *Andreas Moralis* the shipmaster, at the commaundement of the gouernoure, tempted to searche the caue with the smaulest vessels. He sayth that by certeyne priue wayes, manye ryuers haue concourse to this caue as it were to a sinke or channell. After the experience here of, they ceased to manuaile whither other ryuers came whiche commyng fourescore and tenne myles, were swallowed vp, so that they appeared no more, nor yet fell into the sea by any knownen wayes. Some therfore they suppose that ryuers swallowed by by the holowe places of that stony mountayne, faule into this caue. As the shipmaster entered into the caue his shippe was almost swallowed. For he sayth that there are many whylepooles and rpynges or boylinges of the water,

fer, which make a violent conflict and horrible roynge one  
 encounteryng the other. Also many huge holes & holowe pla:  
 ces: So that what on the one syde with the whicle pooles, <sup>whirlpooles</sup>  
 on the other side with the boyling of the water, his sypp was <sup>and conflict</sup>  
 long in maner tossed vp and downe lyke a haule. It greatly  
 repented hym that he had entered, yet knewe he no way how  
 to come forth. He now wandered in darkenesse, as for the  
 obscurenesse of the caue into the which he was farre entered,  
 as also that in it were thicke cloudes engendered of the moist <sup>cloudes in</sup>  
 vapours proceeding of the conduct of the waters whiche co:  
 minually faule with great violence into the caue on euery side.  
 He comparerth the noyse of these waters, to the faule of the  
 famous ryuer of Nilus from the montaines of Ethyope. They <sup>The Catarac:</sup>  
 were al so deafe, that one could not here what an other said. <sup>tes of Nilus</sup>  
 But at the length with great daunger & feare, he came forth  
 of the caue as it had byn dwel of hel. Aboute three scoze mi:  
 les distance from the chiefe citie of saincte Dominicke, there  
 are certeyne hyghe montaynes vppon the toppes wherof is a  
 lake or standynge poole inaccessible, neuer yet scene of them <sup>A standynge</sup>  
 whiche came latelpe to the ylande, bothe by reason of the <sup>poole in the</sup>  
 roughnesse of the montaines, and also for that there is noo <sup>toppe of a</sup>  
 pathe or open waye to the toppes of the same. But at the <sup>hygh moun:</sup>  
 length the shyppe maister beinge conducted thither by one of  
 bynges, ascended to the toppes of the montaines and came  
 to the poole. Hee saith that the coulde is there of sum force.  
 And in token of wynter, hee founde ferne and bramble bus:  
 shes, whiche two, growe only in coulde regions. These mon:  
 tayne, they caule Ymixui Fibahano. This poole is of frethe  
 water three myles in compasse, and wel replenished with di:  
 uerse kindes of fshes. Many smale riuers or brookes faule  
 into it. It hath no passage oute, bycause it is on euery  
 syde enclosed with the toppes of montaynes. But  
 lette vs nowe speake of an other poole whiche  
 maye well bee cauled a sea in the mydlande,  
 and bee compared to the Caspian or  
 Hyrcanian sea in the fyne land of,  
 As: with certeyne other la:  
 kes and pooles of  
 frethe water.

The Caspian  
 and Hyrcanian  
 sea,

The

## The thyrde decade.

### The eyght booke of the thirde decade.



A great lake  
of soure and  
salte water.  
Swallowinge  
goulfes.

Sea fyshes  
in lakes of  
the midlande

The deuour-  
ynge fythe  
cauled Tibu-  
ronus.

The ryuers  
that faule in-  
to the lake.  
Caspium.

CC. springes  
within the  
space of a  
furlonge.

Amiracle.

The Indian  
language.

He prouynce of Balnoa beyng thise as bygge  
as the thire fyrst, that is, Caizcimu, Vbabo, and  
Caibabo, includeth a valley named Caiouani, in  
the whiche there is a lake of salte, soure, and  
hytter water, as wee reade of the sea cauled  
Caspium, lpyng in the firme lande betwene Sar-  
matia and Hircania. Wee haue therfore named it Caspium, al-  
thoughe it bee not in the region of Hircania. It hath manye  
swallowinge goulfes, by the whiche, bothe the water of the  
sea springeth into it, and also suche as faule into it from the  
montaines, are swallowed vpp. They thyncke that the ca-  
ues therof, are so large and deepe, that great fyshes of the  
sea passe by the same into the lake. Amonge these fyshes,  
there is one cauled Tiburonus whiche cutteth a man in sunder  
by the myddest at one snappe with his teethe, and deuoureth  
hym. In the ryuer Hozani, runnyng by the chiefe cite of  
saynete Dominicke, these Tiburoni do sumtymes coome from  
the sea and deuoure manye of thinhabitauntes: Especially  
suche as do dayly ploonge them selues in the water to thin-  
tent to keepe their bodyes verie cleane. The ryuers whiche  
faule into the lake, are these. From the Northe syde, Guan-  
nicabon: From the Southe, Xaccori: from the East, Guannabo.  
And from the West, Occoa. They saye that these ryuers are  
great and continuall: And that besyde these, there are. xx.  
other smaule ryuers whiche faule into this Caspium. Also on  
the Northe syde within a furlonge of the lake, there are a-  
bout two hundred springes, occuppyng lykewise aboute  
a furlonge in circuite, the water wherof is coude in soomer,  
freshe also, and holsome to bee dronke. These springes  
make a ryuer that can not bee waded ouer, whiche neare at  
hande ioynnyng with the other, fauleth into the lake. Here  
musse wee stape a whyle. The kynge of this regyon founde  
his wyfe prayng in a chapel builded by the Christians with-  
in the pprecincte of his dominion, and required her coompanie  
to satiffye his fleshely luste. His wyfe reproued hym, and  
put hym in remembraunce to haue respecte to the holpe place.  
The wordes whiche she spake to hym, were these: Teitoca,  
Teitoca,

*Techeta*: whiche is as muche to saye, as, bee quyet, bee quyet:

*Techeta cynato guamechyna*: That is, god wyl bee greatly angerie.

*Guamechyna*, spgnifyeth god, *Techeta* greatly, *Cynato* angrie.

But the husbände halpunge her by the arme, sayde: *Gusibba*,

that is, go: *Cynato macabuca guamechyna*: That is: what is that

to me if god be angerye? And with these woordes as he pro-

fered her violence, suddenlye he became dumme and lame.

Yet by this myracle beyng stricken with repentaunce, he euer

after ledde a religyious lyfe: In soo muche that from thense

foorth hee woold be neuer suffer the chapell to be swepte or

decked with any other mannes hande. By the same myracle,

manye of thinhabitaunces and all the Christians beyng mo-

ued, resorted deuoutly to the chappell. They take it in good

parte that the kynge suffered the reuenge of that reproche.

Lette vs nowe recourne to *Caspium*. That salte lake is tossed

with stormes and tempestes: And oftentymes drownech

smale shippes or fylsher boates, and swalower them vppe

with the maryners: In so muche that it hath not byn harde

of, that any man drownded by shypwreake, euer ploonged

vppe ageyne, or was caste on the shore, as commonly chaun-

ceeth of the deade bodyes of suche as are drownded in the sea.

These tempestes, are the deintie banquetes of the *Tiburones*.

This *Caspium*, is cauled *Hagueigabon*. In the myddest hereof,

lyeth an Ilande named *Guarizacca*, to the whiche they resorte

when they go a-fylshynge: But it is not cultured. There is

in the same playne, an other lake nexte vnto this, whose wa-

ter is myrte of salte and freshe: And is therfore nother apte

to bee drowneke, not yet to bee refused in vrgente necessitie.

This conteineth in length .xxv. miles, and in breadth eigh-

tyles: In summe places also nyne or ten. It receaueth ma-

nye ryuers whiche haue no passage oute of the same, but

are swallowed vppe as in the other. Water springeth out of

the sea into this also: but in no great quantitie, whiche is

the cause that it is so commyrt. In the same prouynce to-

warde the Weste syde, there is an other lake of freshe water,

not farre distant from *Caspium*. This thinhabitaunces caule

*Lainagua*. The same salte lake, hath on the North syde therof,

an other named *Gusocass*. This is but lyttle: as not past three

or foure myles in breadth, and one in length. The water of

this, maye well bee drowneke. On the southe syde of the salte

Is h.ii.

lake,

A kyng stricken dumme and lame by a myracle,

Such as are drownded in the lake are not cast vp ageyne.

The Ilande *Guarizacca* in the myddest of the poole, A lake of salt and freshe water.

A lake of freshe water

## The thyryde decade

lake, therelyeth an ocher named *Babbareo*, of thre myles in length and in maner rounde. The water of this is freshe as of the two other. This lake bycause it hath no passage oute nor yet any swatowynge goulfes, connepyth the superfluous waters to the sea if it be increased with the streames whiche faule sometimes more abundantly fro the montaines. This is in the region of *Xamara* in the prouince of *Bainoa*. There is an other cauled *Gnaniba*, lying betwene the East & the South nere vnto the syde of *Caspus*. This is ten myles in length and almoste rounde. There are furthermoze many other smaule standing pooles or lakes dispersed here and there in the Iland, whiche I wyll lerte passe lesse I shulde bee tedious in remainyng to longe in one thyng. I wyll therfore make an ende with this addition, that in all these, great plentie of fyre and foule is nourysht. All these lakes lye in a large playne, the whiche from the East reacheth into the West a hundred and twentie myles: beynge of breadth, *xliii.* myles where it is narrowest, and *xv.* where it is largest. Looking toward the West, it hath collaterally on the left hande the montaines of *Daiquani*: And on the ryght hande, the montaines, of *Cagua*, so cauled of the name of the vale it selfe. At the rootes of the montaines of *Cagua* toward the North syde, there lyeth another vale much longer & larger then that before named. For it containeth in length, almoste two hundred myles: And in bredth, *xxx.* wher it is largest, & about *xx.* wher it is narrowest. This vale in summe parce therof, is cauled *Maguana*: In another place, *Iguanu*, & elles where, *Hathathiei*. And forasmuche as wee haue here made mention of this parte of the vale named *Hathathiei*, wee wyll sumwhat digresse from the discourse of this description, and entreate of a thinge so straunge and maruelous, that the lyke hath not byn hard of. So it is therefore, that the kyng of this region named *Caramatexius*, taketh great pleasure in fysshinge. Into his nettes chanced a yongge fyf of the kynde of those huge monsters of the sea whiche inhabitaours caule *Manati*, not folinde I suppose in othere seas nor knowen to othere men before this tyme. This fyf is foure footed, and in shape lyke vnto a toxopole althoughe hee be not covered with a shel, but with scales: And those of such hardnesse & couched in suche order, that no arrowe can hurt hee, But scales are byf & defend with a thousand knobbes.

A lake of ten  
myles in  
length

A playne of a  
hundred and  
twenty miles

A playne of  
two hundred  
myles in  
length.

The maner  
ous fyfhe  
manati,

Her backe is playne, and her heade vterly lyke the heade of an ore. She lyueth both in the water and on the lande: She is slowe of mouyng: of condition meeke, gentell, asscypable and louing to mankind and of a marnelous sence or memorie as are the elephant and the delphyn. The king nozished this sythe certeine daies at home with the breade of the countrey, made of the roote of *Iucca* and *Panycke* with suche other rootes as men are accustomed to eate. For when she was yet but younge, he cast her into a poole or lake neare vnto his palaice there to bee fedde with hande. This lake also receaueth waters and casteth not the same forth againe. It was in tyme past cauled *Guaurabo*: But is now cauled the lake of *Manati* after the name of this sythe whiche wandered safelye in the same for the space of .xxv. yeares, and grew exceeding byg. What so euer is written of the Delphines of *Baian* or *Acrion*, are muche inferior to the dooinges of this sythe: which for her gentle nature they named *Matum*, that is gentle or noble. Wherefore when so euer any of the kynges familyers, especiallye suche as are knowne to her, resorte to the bankes of the lake and caule *Matum, Matum*, then she (as mynde full of suche benefites as she hath receaued of men) lyftech vp her heade and cometh to the place whither she is cauled, and there receaueth meate at the handes of suche as feede her. If any desirous to passe ouer the lake, make signes and tokens of theyr intente, she boweth her selfe to them, therewith as it were gentelly inuitynge them to amount vpon her, and conueyeth them safely ouer. It hath byn seene that this monstrous sythe hath at one tyme safelye carryed ouer tenn men singithe and playinge. But if by chaunce when she lyftech vp her heade she espyed any of the Christian men, she wolde immediatly ploung downe agayne into the water and refuse to obey, because she had once receaued iniury at the handes of a certeyne wanton younge man amonge the Christians, who hadde caste a sharpe darre at her, although she were muche hurte by reason of the hardenes of her skynne beinge rough and ful of thales and knobbes as we haue sayde. Yet dyd she beare in memorie thynurie she susteyned, with so gentell a retriunge requitynge thyngratitude of hym which had deliuered her so ingentelly. From that day when so euer she was cauled by any of her familyers, she wolde firste looke circumspect

A monster of the sea fedde with mans hande.

*Matum.*

A sythe carryeth men ouer the lake.

A marnelous thynge.

## The thyrd decade.

The ryuer  
Attibunicus.

The situation  
of the great  
vale.

The moun-  
taines of Ci-  
baua and Cai-  
guam.

The greates  
vale of Guari-  
onexius.

ly about her, least any were present appareled after the man-  
ner of the Christians. She wolde oftentimes play and wpe:  
fle hypon the banke with the kynges chamberlens: And es-  
pecially with a younge man whom the kyng fauoured well,  
beinge also accustomed to feede her. Shee wolde bee sume-  
tymes as pleasaunt and full of play as it had byn a moonkey  
or marmaset: And was of longe tyme a great comfort and co-  
lace to the hole Ilande. For no smaule confluence aswell of  
the Christians as of thynhabitantes, had dayly concourse to  
beholde so straunge a myracle of nature, the contemplation  
wherof was no lesse pleasaunt then woonderfull. They say  
that the meate of this kynde of fythe, is of good taste: And  
that many of them are engendered in the seas therabout. But  
at the length, this pleasaunt playfelowe was losse, and cari-  
ed into the sea by the great ryuer *Attibunicus*, one of the foure  
which diuide the Ilande. For at that tyme there chaunced so  
terrible a tempest of wind, & rayne, with such fluds enswyng  
that the like hath not lightly byn hard of. By reason of this  
tempest, the ryuer *Attibunicus* so ouerflowed the bankes, that  
it fylled the hole bale & myxt it selfe with all the other lakes.  
At which tyme also, this gentell *Matum* and pleasaunce com-  
panyon, folowynge the vehemente course and faule of the  
fluddes, was therby restored to his oulde moother and na-  
tyue waters, and sence that tyme neuer scene ageyne. Thus  
hauynge digressed sufficiently, let vs nowe coome to the situ-  
ation of the vale. It hath collaterally the mountaynes of  
*Cibaua* and *Caignam* which bynge it to the South sea. There  
is an other vale beyonde the mountaynes of *Cibaua* towarde  
the North. This is cauled the vale of *Guarionexius*, bycause  
that befoze the memorie of man, the prediceffours and ann-  
cestours of kyng *Guarionexius* to whom it is descended by righe  
of inheritaunce, were euer the lordes of the hole vale. Of  
this kyng, we haue spoken largely in the fyfth narration of  
the Ilande in the fyfth Decade. This vale is of length from  
the East to the West, a hundredeth and fourescore myles: And  
of breadth from the South to the North, thirtie myles wher  
it is narrowest, and fiftie where it is broadest. It begynneth  
from the region *Canobocoa* by the prouinces of *Hubabo* and *Cais-  
ho*: And endeth in the prouince of *Bainoa* and the region of *Ma-  
ricua*. It lyeth in the myddest betwene the mountaynes of *Ci-  
baua*

lands and the mountaynes of Cabonai and Caxacubana. There is no prouince nor any region, which is not notable by the multitude of mountaynes, frutesfulnes of vales, pleasauntnesse of hylles, and delectableness of playnes, with abundaunce of fayre ryuers runnyng through the same. There are no sides of mountaynes or hylles, no ryuers, which abound not with golde and delycate fyshes, except only one ryuer which from the originall therof, with the sprynges of the same breakyng forth of the mountaynes, commeth owt salte and so conuertyeth vntyll it perishe. This ryuer is cauled Babuan: and runneth through the myddle of the region Maguana in the prouince of Bainoa. They suppose that this ryuer hath made it selfe awaye vnder the grounde by some passages of playster or salte earthe. For there are in the Ilande many notable salte bayes, wherof we wyl speake more hereafter. We haue declared howe the Ilande is diuided by foure ryuers & foure prouinces. There is also an other partition, whiche is this. The hole Ilande consisteth of the tops of foure mountaines which diuide it by the myddest from the East to the weste. In all these is abundance of nooptyng moysture and greates plentie of golde: of the caues also of the whiche, the waters of al the riuers (into the which the caues emptye them selues) haue theyr originall and increase. There are lyke wyse in the horryble dennes, obscure and darke vales, and myghtie rockes of stone. There was neuer any noysome beaste founde in it: Nor yet any rauenyng foure footed beaste. No lyon, no beare no fierce tygers, no craftie foxes, nor deuouring wolues. Al thynges are blessed and fortunate: And nowe more fortunate, for that so many thousandes of men are receaued to bee the sheepe of Christes flocke, all theyr zemes and images of deuylles being reiected and vterly out of memorie. If I chaunce nowe and then in the discourse of this narration to repeat one thyng dyuers tymes or otherwise to make digression, I must desyre your holynes therewith not to bee offended. For whyle I see, heare, and wyte these thynges, mee seemeth that I am herewith so affected, that for verie toy I feelee my mynde stirred as it were with the spirit of Apollo as were the Sibylles, whereby I am enforced to repeat the same ageyne: Especially when I consyder howe farre the amplitude of owre religion spreadeth her wynges.

per

mountaynes,  
vales.  
hylles.  
playnes.  
Ryuers.  
Golde in all  
mountaynes,  
and golde and  
fysh in all  
ryuers.

Salte bayes.

howe the I-  
lande is diui-  
ded with  
mountaynes.  
Golde.  
The ryuers  
haue theyr in-  
crease from  
the caues of  
the moun-  
taynes  
No hurtful or  
raueninge  
beast in the  
Ilande.

The authors  
excuse.

## The thyrde decade.

Yet amonge these so many blessed and fortunate thynges,  
 this one greuereth me not a litle: That these simple poore  
 men neuer brought vp in labour, do dayly peryshe with intol-  
 lerable trauaile in the golde mynes: And are thereby brought  
 to such desperation, that many of them kyll them selues, ha-  
 uynge no regarde to the procreation of chyl dren. In so much  
 that women with chylde, perceauynge that they shall brynge  
 forth such as shalbe slaues to the Christians, vse medecines  
 to destroy theyr conception. And albeit that by the kynges  
 letters patentes it was decreed that they shalde bee set at li-  
 bertie, yet are they constrained to serue more then seemeth  
 conuenient for free men. The number of the poore wyretches  
 is wonderfully extenuate. They were once reckened to bee  
 aboue twelue hundred thousande heades: But wher they  
 are nowe, I abhorre to rehearse. We wyll therefore let this  
 passe: and returne to the pleasures of Hispaniola. In the moun-  
 tayne of Cibana, which are in maner in the myddest of the Is-  
 lande in the prouince of Caiabo (where we sayd to bee the grea-  
 test plentie of natvne golde) there is a region named Cotobi, si-  
 tuate in the cloudes, environed with the toppes of hyghe  
 mountaynes, and well inhabited. It consisteth of a playne  
 of .xxb. myles in length, and .xb. in breadth. This playne is  
 hygher then the toppes of other mountaynes: So that these  
 mountaynes, maye seeme to bee the chiefe and progenitours  
 of the other. This playne suffereth alterations of the foure  
 tymes of the yere: as the Springe, Sommer, Autumne, and  
 wynter. Here the herbes ware wythered, the trees loose  
 theyr leaues, and the medowes become hore: The whiche  
 thynges (as we haue sayde) chaunge not in other places of  
 the Islande, where they haue only the Spring and Autumne.  
 The soyle of this playne bryngeth forth ferne and bramble  
 bushes bearynge blacke berries or wylde raspes, which two  
 are tokens of coulde regions. Yet is it a fayre region: for the  
 coulde therof is not very sharpe: neyther dooth it a litle thin-  
 habitantes with froste or snowe. They argue the fructifullnes  
 of the region by the ferne, whose stalkes or steames are hyg-  
 ger then a spere or fanelen. The sydes of those mountaynes  
 are ryche in golde. yet is there none appoynted to dygge for  
 the same, because it shalbe needefull to haue apparelled my-  
 ners, and such as are vsed to labour, for thynhabitantes ly-  
 uynge

By what mea-  
 nes the peo-  
 ple of the Is-  
 land are gret-  
 ly consumed.

The pleasures  
 of Hispaniola.

The region  
 of Cotobi, si-  
 tuate in the  
 cloudes.  
 A playne in  
 the toppes of  
 mountaynes

The hygher,  
 the coulder.

Moderate  
 coulde in the  
 mountaynes.

Ferne of mar-  
 tielousobignes

Gold.

unge contented with litle, are but tender: And can not ther-  
foze abay with labour or abyde any coulde. There are two  
ryuers which runne through this region, and faule from the  
toppes of the present mountaynes. One of these is named Co-  
moxyx, whose course is towarde the West, and faulterh into  
the chanell of Naiba. The other is cauled Tiroctus: which run-  
nyuge towarde the East, ioyneth with the ryuer of Iunus. In  
the Ilande of Creta (nowe cauled Candie) as I passed by in  
my legacie to the Soldane of Alcaiz or Babylon in Egypte,  
the Venetians coulde me that there laye suche a region in the  
toppes of the mountaynes of Ida, whiche they affirme to bee  
more frutefull of wheate cozne then any other region of the  
Iland. But forasmuch as once the Cretenses rebelled agens  
the Venetians, and by reason of the streight and narrow way  
to the toppes therof, longe defended the region with armes  
against chauctozitie of the Senate, and at the length beinge  
forwerped with warres, rendered the same, the Senate com-  
maunded that it shulde bee lefte deserte, and the streightes of  
Chenteraunces to bee stopped, lest any shulde ascende to the  
region without their permissyon. Yet in the yeare of Christe  
M. D. ii. lycence was graunted to the husband men to tyll  
and manure the region, on suche condition that no suche as  
were apte to the warres, myght enter into the same. There  
is also an other region in Hispaniola named Cotohy after the  
same name. This diuiderh the boundes of the prouinces of  
Vbabo and Calabo. It hath mountaynes, vales, and plaines.  
But bycause it is baren, it is not muche inhabited. Yet is it  
richest in golde: For the originall of the abundaunce of gold,  
beginneth here: In so muche that it is not gathered in smaule  
graines and sparkes as in other places: but is founde hole,  
massie, and pure, emonge certaine softe stones and in the bai-  
nes of rockes, by breakynge the stones wherof, they folowe  
the baynes of golde. They haue founde by experience, that  
the bayne of golde is a lyuinge tree: And that the same by  
all wayes that it spreadeth & springerh from the roote by the  
softe pores and passages of the pearth, putterh forth bran-  
ches euen vnto the hyppermost part of the earth, & ceaseth not  
vntyl it discouer it selfe vnto the open ayer: At whiche time,  
it shewerh forth certaine bewtifull colours in the seeede of  
floures, rounde stones of golden earth in the seeede of frutes,

Al

and

Thinhab-  
tantes of his-  
paniola can  
abyde no la-  
bour nor  
coulede.

The Iland of  
Creta or Can-  
die, vnder the  
dominion of  
the Veneti-  
ans.

Pure and  
massie golde  
in the region  
of Cotohy.  
The bayne of  
golde, is a ly-  
uinge tree.

These colers  
or floures are  
cauled war-  
chasties,  
pyres.

## The thyrdē decade

and thynne plates in steede of leanes. These are they whiche are disparted throughout the hole Ilande by the course of the ryuers, eruptions of the sprynges owte of the montaynes, and violente faules of the fluddes. For they thincke that such graines are not engendered where they are gathered: especialy on the dry land: but otherwise in the ryuers. They say that the roote of the golde tree extendeth to the center of the earth & there taketh nourishment of increase. For the deeper that they dygge, they fynd the trunkes therof to be so muche the greater as farre as they maye folowe it for abundaunce of water springing in the montaynes. Of the branches of this tree, they fynde summe as smaule as a thynde, and other as bygge as a mannes fynger accordeinge to the largenesse or straghtnesse of the ryftes and clyftes. They haue sometimes chaunced vpon hole caues sustented and borne vp as it were with golden pylars: And this in the wayes by the whiche the branches ascende: The whiche beyng fylled with the substance of the trunkes creapyng from beneath, the branche maketh it selfe waye by whiche it maye passe owte. It is oftentimes diuided by encounteringe with sum kynde of harde stone. Yet is it in other clyftes nourished by the exhalacions and verrue of the roote. But now perhappes you will aske me what plentie of golde is brought from thence. You shall therfore vnderstande that onely owte of Hispaniola, the sum of foure hundred and sumtymes fyue hundred thousande dukates of gold is brought yearly into Spayne: as may be gathered by the fyfthe portion deuote to the kynges Exchequer, which amounteth to the sum of a hundred and fourescore, or fourescore and ten thousande Castellanes of golde, and sumtymes more. What is to bee thought of the Ilande of Cuba and Sancti Iohannis (otherwise cauled Baribona) beyng both very ryche in golde, we wyll declare further hereafter. To haue sayde thus muche of golde, it shall suffice. We wyll nowe therfore speake sumwhat of salte wherwith wee may season and reserue suche thynges as are bought with golde. In a region of the prouince of Balboa, in the montaynes of Dagua, about twelue myles distant from the salte lake cauled Caspius, there are salte bayes in the montaynes in a maner as hard as stoones, also clearer and whiter then cristall. There are lykewyse suche salte bayes whiche growe woonderfully in

The roote of the golden tree.

The branches of the golden tree.

Caues sustented with pylars of golde.

The stones of the golde mynes.

What gold is brought yearly from Hispaniola into Spayne.

Salte of the mountaynes, very hard and cleare.

the (now called *Cataloma*) in the territorie of the duke of *Cadiz*  
 the chiefe ruler in that region. But suche as knowe theym  
 bothe, asseyne that these of *Balboa* are mooste notable. They  
 saye also that this can not be clefte without wedges and bea- Salt as hard  
 telles of Iron. But that of *Lalant*, maye easlye bee broken as stone.  
 as I my selfe haue proued. They therfore compare this to su-  
 che stoones as may easlye bee broken: And the other to mar-  
 ble. In the prouince of *Caxima*, in the regions of *Iguanas*, *Ca-*  
*licos*, and *Guariagua*, there are springes whose waters are of Sprynges of  
 maruelous nature, beyng in the superfciall or uppermooste salt, frethe  
 parte, frethe: In the myddes, myxt of salte and frethe: and lower  
 And in the lowest parte, salte and lower. They thinke that water.  
 the salte water of the sea, is therewith owte softely, and the  
 frethe, to sprynke owte of the mountaynes. The one fauleth  
 downe and the other ryseth: & are not therfore so vniue: sal-  
 ly myxt wherby the one may betterly corrupt thother. If any  
 man laye his eare to the grounde neare to any of these spryn-  
 ges, he shal perceaue the ground there to bee so hollowe, that  
 the reboundyng noyse of a horsenman comynge may be harde  
 for the space of three myles, and a foote man one myle. In  
 the laste region toward the southe named *Guacuarima*, in the  
 lordshipp of *Zauana*, they say there are certeyne wyld men whi  
 che lyue in the caues & denues of the montaynes, contented  
 onely with wilde frutes. These men neuer vled the compa-  
 ny of any other: nor wyll by any meanes becoome tame.  
 They lyue without any certayne dwellynge places, and with  
 owte tyllage or culturyng of the grounde, as wee reade of  
 them whiche in oulde tyme lyued in the golden age. They say  
 also that these men are withoute any certayne language.  
 They are sumtymes seene. But owre men haue yet layde  
 handes on none of them. If at any tyme they coome to the  
 syght of men, and perceyue any makynge toward them, they  
 flye swifter then a harte. Ye they asseyne them to bee swifter  
 then grehounds. What one of these solitarie wanderers  
 dyd, it is worth the hearyng. So it is that owre men haryng  
 granges adioyning nere vnto the thicke woods, certen of the  
 repaired thither in the mooneth of Septerber in the yere M.  
 D. xiiii. In the meane tyme, one of these wyld men came  
 leapyng owte of the woodde. And approchynge sumwhat  
 toward them with smyling countenaunce, suddenly snatched

Salt as hard  
 as stone.

Sprynges of  
 salt, frethe  
 and lower  
 water.

holowe ca-  
 ues in the  
 grounde

Certeyne  
 wyld men ly-  
 uing in caues  
 and denues

men without  
 a certeyne  
 language

men as swift  
 as grehounds

A wyld man  
 runneth a-  
 way with a  
 chyld

## The thyrdē decade.

Pitchē of the  
rocke.

Pitchē of two  
kynndes of  
trees.  
The pine  
tree.  
The tree  
Copeia.

The leafe of  
a tree in the  
see of  
paper.

They beleue  
that leaues  
do speake.  
A pietie  
stone.

byppē a childe of therse beyngē the soonne of the owner of the graunge, whiche he begotte of a woman of the Ilande. He ranne awaye with the childe, and made signes to othere men to folowe hym. Many folowed aswel of othere men as of the naked inhabytantes, but all in vayne. Thus when the pleasaunt wanderer perceaued that the Christians ceased to pursue hym, he left the childe in a crosse waye by the whiche the swyneheardes were accustomed to dryue the swyne to their pasture. Shortly after, a swynehearde founde the chylde and brought hym home to his father yet tormentynge hym selfe for sorowe, supposynge that wyldē man to haue byn one of the kynde of the Canibales, and that his soonne was now deuoured. In the same Ilande they gather pytche whiche sweareth othere of the rockes, beyngē muche harder and souerter then the pitchē of the tree: and is therfore more commodious to calke or defende shippes agaynst the wooddies caused *Bromas*, wherof wee haue spoken largely before. This Ilande also byngēth fourth pitchē in two kynndes of trees, as in the Wyne tree and an other named *Copeia*. I neede not speake of the pyne tree, because it is engendered and knowen in maner euery where. Lett vs therfore speake sumwhat of the other tree cauled *Copeia*: Pitchē is lykewyse gathered of it as of the pyne tree: althoughe somme saye that it is gathered by distylling or droppynge of the woodde when it is burnt. It is a straunge thyngē to here of the leafe thereof: and how necessary prouision of nature is shewed in the same. It is to be thought that this is the tree in the leaues wherof the Chaldeans (beyngē the fyrste fynders of letters) expressed their myndes before the vse of paper was knowen. This leafe is a spanne in breadth and almost round. Othere men write in them with pyennes or needles or any suche instrumentes made of metall or woodde, in maner as well as on paper. It is to be laboghed at what othere men haue perswaded the people of the Ilande as to chynge this leafe. The simple soules beleue that at the commandement of othere men, leaues do speake and disclose secrettes. They were brought to this credulitie by this meanes. One of othere men dwellynge in the cite of *Dominica* the chiefe of the Ilande, deliuered to his seruante (beyng a man borne in the Ilande) certayne rosted conies, whiche they caule *Vras* beyngē no bygger then myse) wyllynge

Ipnge hym to carie the same to his frende whiche dwelte fur-  
 ther within the Ilande. This messenger, whether it were  
 that he was therto constrained through hunger, or empyed  
 by appetite, deuoured thre of the connyes by the waye.  
 He to whome they were sente, wit to his frynde in a lease  
 howe manye he receaued. When the mayster had looked a  
 while on the lease in the presence of the seruaunt, he sayde  
 thus vnto hym. Ah soonne, where is thy saythe? Coude  
 thy gredye appetye preyayle so muche with the as to cause  
 the to eate the connyes committed to thy fydeltye? The  
 poore wretche trembelynge and greatlye amased, confessed  
 his faute: And therewith desyred his mayster to tell hym  
 howe he knewe the trewth therof. This lease (quod he)  
 whiche thou broughtest me, hath coulde me all. Then hee  
 further rehearsed vnto hym the houre of his coomynge to  
 his frende, and lykelye of his departynge when hee re-  
 tourned. And thus they mercyly deceaue these seely soules  
 and keepe theym vnder obedyence: In so muche that they  
 take owe men for goddes, at whose commaundement lear-  
 nes doo disclose suche thynges as they thyncke mooste hyd  
 and secrete. Bothe the sydes of the lease receaueth the for-  
 mes of letters euen as dooeth owe paper. It is thyecker  
 then double parchement, and meruelous tonghe. While it  
 is yet storslyng and newe, it sheweth the letters whyte  
 in greene. And when it is dye, it becommeth whyte and  
 harde lyke a table of woodde: but the letters were yelow.  
 It dooeth not corrupte or putrifye: nor yet looseth the let-  
 ters thoughe it bee wette: nor by any other meanes excepte  
 it bee burnt. There is an other tree named *Xagus*: the iuse  
 of whose soure apple beyng of a darke redde colour, stay-  
 neth and colourerth what soo euer is touched therewith: And  
 that soo fyrmely, that noo waschyng canne take it awaye  
 for the space of twentie dayes. When the apple is full ripe,  
 the iuse looseth that strength. The apple is eaten, and of  
 good tast. There is also an herbe whose smoke (as we haue  
 rehersed the like befoze of a certen woodde) is deadly poison.  
 On a tyme when the kynges assembled rogether and conspi-  
 red the destruction of owe men, where as they durste not at-  
 tempre thenterpryse by open watre, they diuise was, prui-  
 ty to lay many bundels of those herbes in a certeyne house,  
 which

Ignorance  
 causeth ad-  
 miration.

The lease  
 wherein they  
 wyte.

A stronge co-  
 lour of the  
 iuse of an  
 apple.

An herbe  
 whose smoke  
 is posson.

## The thyrde decade.

whiche shortly after they intended to set on fyer, to thintent  
that othere men makynge haste to quenshe the same, myght  
take theyr death with the smoke therof. But theyr purposed  
practyse beinge betrayed, thantours of the diuise were pu-  
nysshed accordyngly. Nowe (moste holy father) for as much  
as yotore holynesse wyrteth that what so euer we haue writ-  
ten of the newe worlde, dooth please yowr ryght well, wee  
wyll reherse certeyne thynges owte of order, but not greatly  
from othere purpose. Of the settinge the rootes of *Maizium*,  
*Agis*, *Iucca*, *Battatas*, and such other beinge theyr common foode,  
and of thuse of the same, we haue spoken sufficiently before.  
But by what meanes they were fyrste applyed to the commo-  
dite of men, we haue not yet declared, We nowe therefore  
intende to entreate sumwhat hereof.

### The nyynth booke of the thyrde Decade.

The kyndes  
of frutes  
wherwith  
the inhabitan-  
tes lyued  
fyrst.



Necessitie  
the moother  
of all artes.

THEY saye that the fyrste inhabitants lyued  
contented with the rootes of dates, and *Ma-  
gucans*, which is an herbe muche lyke vnto  
that which is commonly cauled Sengrene or  
*Ospin*. Also the rootes of *Buaiegans*, whi-  
che are rounde and greate muche lyke vnto  
pusses of the earth or muskeromes. They  
did lykewise eate *Gusteros*, lyke vnto perseneppes: *Cibaios* lyke  
nuttres, *Cabaios* and *Maioanes*, lyke vnto onions, with dy-  
uers other suche rootes. They say that after many yeares, a  
certeyne *Bailion*, that is, a wyse oulde man, sawe vppon the  
bankes syde, a bushe lyke vnto fenel: and transplantyng the  
roote therof, brought it from wyldenes to a better kynde, by  
nooryshynge it in gardens. This was the begynnynge of  
*Iucca*, which at the fyrste was deadlye popson to all suche as  
dyd eate therof rawe. But for as muche as they perceaued it  
to bee of pleasaunte taste, they decernyned many wayes to  
proue the vse therof: And at the length founde by experience  
that beinge sodde or fryed, it was lesse hurtfull: by whiche  
meanes also, they came to the knowledge of the veneme ly-  
inge hyd in the iule of the roote. Thus by dryynge, saltyng,  
seasonynge, and otherwyse temperynge it, they brought it

to theyr fine breade which they caule *Cazabbi*, more delectable and holsome to the stomacke of manne then breade made of wheate, bycause it is of easyer digestion. The same is to bee vnderstoode of other rootes and the grayne of *Maizium* whiche they haue chosen for their chiefe meate amonge the seedes of nature, as we reade howe *Ceres* the daughter of *Saturnus*, gathered wheate and barley (with suche other corne as are nowe most in vse amonge men) in Egypte of certeyne graynes taken oute of the muddie dyuen from the mountaynes of *Ethiopia* by thincrease of the ryuer *Nilus*, and lefte in the plaine at such tyme as *Nilus* resorted ageyne to his chanell. For the which facte, we reade that the antiquitie gaue diuine honour to *Ceres*, who fyrst nourished and increased such chosen seedes. There are innumerable kyndes of *Ages*: the varietie wherof, is knowne by theyr leaues and aiores. One kynde of these, is cauled *Guaraguar*. This is whyte boothe within & without. An other named *Guaraguar* is of hyolet colour without & whyte within. The other kyndes of *Ages*, they caule *Zaxantios*. These are redde without and whyte within. *Squiquetes*, are whyte within and without. *Tunas*, is all together of hyolet colour. *Hobos* is yelow booth of skynne and inner substance. There is an other named *Atiburleix*: The skynne of this is of hyolet colour, and the substance whyte. *Aniguamar*, hath his skynne also of hyolet colour, and is whyte within. *Guaccaracca*, hath a whyte skynne, and the substance of hyolet colour. There are many other which are not yet brought to vs. But I feare me least in the rehearsall of these, I shal prouoke the spures of inuolitious persons ageynst me which wyll scozne these omdoinges for that we haue wyrtten of many such smaule thinges to a pryncce occupied in suche weyghety affayres, as vnto powre holpnes vppon whose shulders resteth the burthen of the hole Christian worlde. But I wolde aske of these many plaines, cious enuyers of other mens traunples, whether I shalme and such other famous wyrtters, when they dyrected and dedicated such thinges to kynges and prynces, intended only to proupte them to whom they consecrated the frute of theyr knowleage. They sumtymes intermypte famous thynges with obscure thynges, lyght with heauie, and greate with smaule, that by the foortheraunce of prynces, theyr vniuersall posteritie myght enioye the fruition of the knowleage of thynges.

and

The fine  
breade Ca:  
zabbi, made  
of the rootes  
of Zucca.

howe Ceres  
fyrst founde  
wheate and  
early in E:  
gypte.

The rootes  
of ages.

The antonre  
excute.

## The thyrde decade.

At other tymes also, beinge intent about particular thinges, and desyrous of newe thynges, they occupied them selues in the searchinge of particular tractes and coastes, with suche thynges as nature brought forth in the same, by this meanes to coome the better to more absolute and vniuersal knowledge. Let theym therefore contemne owre doinge: And wee wyll laugh to scoorne, not theyr ignorance and foolishnes, but pernicious curiosities: And therewith hauninge pitie of theyr frowarde dispositions, wyll commit theim to the venemous serpent of whom enuie tooke his fyrst originall. It shall in the meane tyme abundantly contente vs that these thynges do please yowre holynes: And that yowre doo not dispise owre simple vestures wherewith we haue only weaved together and not adourned, gathered and not described such maruelous thynges in the garnyng wherof, nature hath sufficiently shewed her cunnynge. Owre desyre is none other but herein for yowre sake to doo owre endeuoure that these thynges maye not peryshe. Let euery man take hereof what lyketh hym best. Of the sheepe or bullocke soule in the market, nothyng remayneth in the cunnynge, because the sulder pleaseth one, the legge an other, and the necke an other. Ye, some haue most phantasie to the bowels, and some to the feete. Thus hauninge enough wandered, lette vs returne to owre purpose and declare with what wordes they salute the kynges chyldren when they are fyrst bozne: or howe they apply the begynnynge of theyr lynes to the end: And why their kynges are cauled by many names. Therfore when the kyng hath a sonne bozne, such as dwel neare about his pallace or byllage, repayre to the queenes chamber, where one saluteth the newe bozne chyld with one name, and an other with another name. God saue the thowse shynynge lampe sayth one: An other canker hym bygght and cleare. Some name him the victourer of his enemies: and other some, the puissaunt conquerour descended of bludde royall, and bygghter then gold, with byuers other suche wayne names. Therfore lyke as euery of the Romane emperours was cauled *Adiabenicus, Parthicus, Armenicus, Dacicus, Gothicus, and Germanicus*, accordynge to the titles of theyr parentes and auncestours, euen so by thimposition of names inuented by other kynges, *Beucbicus Anacachod* the lord of the region of *Xaragza* (of whome and of the wyfe woman

By what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are bozne. The names and titles of the Romane Emperours.

Ana:

Anachsona his syster, we haue spoken largely in the fyrste Decade) was cauled by all these names solowynge: *Tureigun* *Hobin*: whiche is as muche to saye, as, a kynge synnyng as byght as lalon. *Starek*, that is, byghte. *Huibbo*, hyghneeste: *Duibeynequen*, a ryche fludde. With all these names and more then fortye other suche, dooeth kynge *Beuchius* magnifye hym selfe as often as he commaunderh any thyng to bee doone or causeth any proclamation to bee made in his name. If the cryer by neglygence leaue owte any of these names, the king thynketh it to sounde greatly to his contumely and reproche. The lyke is also of other. Howe fondely they vse them selues in makynge their testaments, wee wylle now declare. They leaue thinheritaunce of their kyngedomes to the eldest sonnnes of their eldest sisters. If shee fayle, to the eldest of the seconde syster and so of the thirde if the second also faile. For they are owte of doubte that those children coome of their bludde. But the children of their owne wyues, they counte to bee not legitimate. If there remaine none of their sisters children, they leaue thinheritaunce to their broothers. And if they faile, it descendeth to their owne sonnnes. Laste of all, if al these faile, they asygne it to the woorthiest, as to hym that is of greatest power in all the Ilande, that he may defende their subiecttes from their auncient enemyes. They take as many wyues as them lysteth. They suffer the best beloued of the kynges wyues, and concubynes to bee buried with hym. *Anachsona* the syster of *Beuchius* the kyng of *Xaragua*, being a woman of suche wisedome and cunnynge that in makynge of rhymes and balettes shee was counted a prophetesse amonge the beste, commaunded, that amonge all the wyues and concubynes of the kinge her brother, the fayrest (whose name was *Guanabattabenechina*) shulde be buried alyue with him, and two of her waytyng maydes with her. Shee wolde also haue appointed dyuers other to that offyce, if shee had not byn otherwise perswaded by the prayers of certeyne fryers of saincte *Fraunces* order whiche chaunced then to bee present. They saye that this *Guanabattabenechina* had none in all the Iland comparable to her in beawtie. She buried with her all her iewelles and thentrie of her best ornaumentes. Their custome is, to place besyde euery of them in their sepulchres, a cuppe full of water and a portion of the fyne breade of *Cas*

howe they  
make theyr  
testamentes

So dyd grea  
Alexander

The kynges  
wyues and  
concubines  
are buried  
with hym.

They burie  
theyr iewel  
with them.  
A dreame of  
an other lyfe  
after this.

## The thyrd decade

where it ray-  
neth but sel-  
dome.

*zabli.* In *Xaragus*, the region of this kynge *Beuchius*, and in *Hozua*, parte of the region of *Calabo*, also in the fayre vale of *salte* and freche lakes, and lykewise in the region of *Yaguino* in the prouynce of *Bainoa*, it rayneth but seldome. In al these regions are fosses or trenches made of oulde tyme, wherby they conueye the waters in order to water their fyeldes, with no lesse arte then doo thinhabitours of newe Carthage, and of the kyngedome of *Murcien* in *Spartaria* for the seldome faule of rayne. The region of *Maguana*, deuydeth the prouynce of

where it ray-  
neth much.

*Bainoa* from *Calabo*, and *Zauana* from *Guacacuarima*. In the deepe bales, they are troubled with raine more often then nedeth.

variable mo-  
tions of the  
elementes.

Also the confynes of the chiefe citie named *Saincte Dominike* are moister then is necessary. In other places, it rayneth moderately. There are therfore in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, dyvers & variable motions of the elementes, as we reade the lyke of manye other regions.

The colonies  
and vyllages  
which the  
Spanyarden  
haue buylded

Of their colonies or mantions which the Spaniardes haue erected in this Ilande we haue spoken sufficientely beefore. They haue sence that tyme buylded these vyllages: *Portus Plate*, *Portus Regalis*, *Lares*, *Villanoua*, *Azuam*, and *Salusterra*. Hauynge sayde thus muche of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* the moother and lade of the other

The other I-  
landes about  
Hispaniola,

Ilandes, and as it were *Tethys* the mooste bewtifull wyfe of *Neptunus* the god of the sea, let vs nowe entreate sumwhat of her *Nymphes* and faire *Nereides* which wate vppon her and

The Ilande  
Arethusa.

adourne her on euery syde. Wee wyll therfore begynne at the nearest cauled the newe *Arethusa*, soo named of the fontayne *Arethusa* in the Ilande of *Sicilie*. This is famous by reason of a spyng: but otherwyse vnpofytable. Oure men named it of late, *Duas Arbores*, bycause it hath onely twoo trees

A spyngerun-  
nyng vnder  
the sea frome  
Hispaniola to  
Arethusa.

groynge in it: nere vnto the whiche is a fountaine that cometh from the Ilande of *Hispaniola* throughe the secrete passages of the earth vnder the sea, and breaketh forth in this Ilande, as the ryuer *Alpheus* in *Achaia* runneth vnder the sea from the citie of *Elide*, and breaketh forth in the Ilande of *Sicilie* in the fontayne *Arethusa*. That the fontayne of this newe *Arethusa* hath his original from the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, it is manifest hereby, that the water is thewyngte otwe of the fountayne, byngeth with it the leaues of many trees whiche growe in *Hispaniola*, and not in this Ilande. They saye that the fontayne hath his originall from the ryuer *Yamiroa* in the region of *Guacacuarima* confynnyng with the land of *Zauana*.

This Ilande is not passe a myle in circuite, and commodious for sylther men. Directly towarde the East (as it were the porter keppynge the enterie to *Tethys*) lyeth the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyle cauled *Burichena*) wherof wee haue spoken largely before. This aboundeth with golde; and in fruitefull soile, is equall with her moother *Hispaniola*. In this are many colonies or mansions of Spaniardes, whiche applye them selues to gatherynge of golde. Towarde the west on the Northe syde, great *Cuba* (for the longenesse therof, longe supposed to be the continent or fyne lande) wardeth ower *Tethys* on the backe halfe. This is muche longer then *Hispaniola*: And from the East to the Weste, is diuided in the myddest with the circle cauled *Tropicus Canceri*. *Hispaniola* and the other lpyng on the South syde of this, are included almost in the mydde space betwene the sayde Tropicke and the Equinoctiall lyne, whiche many of the oulde writers supposed to bee inhabitable & desert by reason of the feruent heate of the soone in that clyme as they coniectured. But they were deceaued in their opinion. They asseyne that rycher golde mynes are founde in *Cuba* then in *Hispaniola*. They saye also that euen now while I wyte these thynges, there is golde gathered together ready to the meltyng, amountynge to the quantitie of a hundred and fourescore thousande Castellans of gold, an argument surely of great rycheffe. *Iamaica* is more towarde the Southe then these: And is a pleasaunte and fruitefull Ilande, of soyle apte for corne, grasses, and lettes, it consisteth of onely one mountayne. The inhabitants are warrglyke men and of good wytte. *Colonus* compared it to *Sicilie* in bygnesse. They whiche of late searched it more exactly, saye that it is sumwhat lesse: but not muche. It is thought to be without gold and pprecious stooness, as the like was supposed of *Cuba* at the begynnynge. The Ilande of *Guadalupea* (fyrist named *Caraqueira*) lpyng on the Southe syde of *Hispaniola*, is foure degrees nearer the Equinoctiall. It is eaten and indented with two goulfes (as in the reade of great Britayne now cauled Englande, and *Calidonia* now cauled Scotlande) beynge in maner two Ilandes. It hath famous portes. In this they founde that gumme whiche the Apothecaries caule *Anime Album*, whose fume is holesome against reumes and heauynesse of the heade. The tree whiche engendereth

The Iland of Sancti Iohannis.

The Ilande of Cuba.

habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall.

The ryche golde mynes of Cuba.

The Iland of Iamaica.

The Iland of Guadalupea.

England and Scotlande.

The gumme cauled Anime album.

## The thyrde decade.

Dates.

Pine trees.

The Canibales.

whereby it  
was thought  
that there  
were Ilandes  
of women,

hony in trees  
and rockes.

The Ilande  
desiderata.  
The Ilande  
Salanta.  
The Ilandes  
of Todos  
Sanctos or  
Barbata.

The Ilander  
monferratus

engendereth this gumme, beareth a fruite muche lyke to a date, beinge a spanne in length. When it is opened, it seemeth to conteyne a certayne sweete meale. As oure husbande men are accustomed to reserue cheskenuttes and suche other harde fruites all the wynter, soo do they the dates of this tree, beyng muche lyke vnto a fygge tree. They founde also in this Ilande, vyne trees of the beste kynde, and suche other deyntie dyshes of nature, wherof wee haue spoken largely befoze. Ye, they thyncke that inhabitauntes of other Ilandes, had their seedes of soo many pleasaunt frutes from hense. For the Canibales beinge a wylde and wanderynge people, and ouer runnyng all the countreys aboute them to hunte for mannes fleshe, were accustomed to bryng home with them what so euer they founde straunge or profitable in any place. They are intractable, and wylle admytte no straungiers. It shall therfore bee needefull to ouercoome them with great poure. For as well the women as men, are experte archiers, and vse to inuene their arrowes. When the men go forth of the lande a man huntynge, the women manfully defende their coastes ageynst suche as attempte to inuade the same. And hereby I suppose it was thought that there were Ilandes in the Ocean, inhabited onely with women, as *Colonus* the admirall hym selfe perswaded me, as I haue sayde in the fyrste decade. This Ilande hath also frutes full mountaynes and playnes, and notable ryuers. It nourysheth honye in trees, and in the caues of rockes, as in *Palma* one of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, honye is gathered among the briers and bramble bushes. Aboute .xxviii. myles Eastward from this Iland, lieth an Iland which oure men named *Desiderata*, beyng .xx. myles in circuite and verie fayre. Also aboute ten myles from *Guadalupea* towarde the Southe, lyeth the Ilande of *Salanta*, beyng thirrie myles in circuite and playne. It was so named for the neatenesse and bewtifulnes therof. Vyne myles distant from *Guadalupea* toward the East, there are fyve Imaule Ilandes named *Todos Sanctos* or *Barbata*. These are full of rockes and barren: yet necessarye to bee knowne to suche as vse to trauayle the seas of these coastes. Ageyne, from *Guadalupea* .xxv. myles towarde the Northe, there is an Ilande named *Monferratus*, conteynyng in circuite fortye myles, hauynge also in it a mountayne of notable heyghe.

height. The Ilande named Antipua, distaunte from Guadalupe thirtie myles, is aboute fortye myles in circuite. *Diegus Colonius* the soonne and heyre of *Christophorus Colonus*, tould me that his wyfe (whome he lefte in the Ilande of Hispaniola at his comming into Spaine to the courte) did write vnto hym, that of late emonge the Ilandes of the Canibales, there is one founde whiche aboundeth with golde. On the lefte syde of Hispaniola towarde the Southe, neare vnto the haven Botea, there lyeth an Ilande named *Portus Bellus*. They tell marvellous thynges of the monsters of the sea aboute this Ilande, and especially of the tortoyles. For they saye that they are bigger then greate rounde targettes. At suche tyme as the heate of nature moueth theym too generation, they coome foorth of the sea: And makynge a deepe pytte in the lande, they laye thre or foure hundred egges therein. When they haue thus emptied their bagge of conception, they putte as muche of the sande ageyne into the pytte, as maye suffice to couer the egges: And soo resorte ageyne to the sea, nothyng carefull of their succession. At the daye appoynted of nature to the procreation of these beastes, there creaketh owte a multitude of tortoyles, as it were pyssemares; stourmyng owte of an ante hyll: And this onely by the heate of the soonne withowte any helpe of their parentes. They saye that their egges are in maner as bygge as geese egges. They also compare the fleshe of these tortoyles, to be equall with beale in taste. There are besyde these, unnumerable Ilandes the whiche they haue not yet searched: nor yet is it greatly necessarye to syfte this meale so fynely. It maye suffice to vnderstand that there are large landes & many regions whiche shal hereafter receaue owre nations, tounes, and maners: and therewith embrace owre religion. The Trojans dydde not suddenly replenysh the Asia, the Tyrians Libia, nor the Greeces and Phoenices Spayne. As touchynge the Ilandes which lye on the north syde of Hispaniola, I haue let passe to speake. For albeit they are commodious for tyllage and sythynge, yet are they leste of the Spaniardes as poore and of litle value. We wyll nowe therefore take owre leaue of this olde Tetbis with her myghty and watery Nymphes: And receaue to owre newe acquaintance of the bewtifull ladye of the South sea ychely crowned with

The Ilande Antiqua,

The Ilande Portus Bellus Great Tortoyles.

The generation of Tortoyles.

The egges of Tortoyles.

Unnumerable Ilandes.

Trojans.  
Tyrians.  
Greeces.  
Phenicians.

The North Ilandes.  
The Ilandes of the South sea.

## The thyrde decade.

The Ilande of  
pearles.

wylde beastes  
must be tamed  
with the rod.

great pearles, the Ilande of *Dites* beinge ryche both in name and in treasure. In my epistell booke whiche I sente vnto yowre holynes this last yere, I declared howe *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa* the capitayne of them whiche passed ouer the dangerous mountaynes towarde the South sea, learned by repore that in the prospect of those coastes there laye an Ilande aboundynge with pearles of the greatest sorte: And that the kynge therof was ryche and of great power, infestynge with warres the other kynges his borderers, and especially *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus*. We declared further howe at that tyme it was left vntouched by reason of the ragynge tempestes whiche troubled that South sea thre moonethes in the yere. But it is nowe better knowne to oovre men, who haue nowe also brought that fierce kynge to humanitie: and conuerted hym from a cruell tyger to one of the meeke sheepe of Christes flocke sanctified with the water of baptisme with all his familie and kyngedome. It shall not therfore bee from oovre purpose to declare by the gouernaunce of what capitaines or by what meanes these thynges were so happely atchpyed.

## The tenth booke of the thyrde Decade.

An expeditio  
to the Ilande  
of *Dites* in  
the south sea



The Ilande of  
*Margaritea*.

*Os Draconis*,  
*Paris*.

In the accpyall of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour of *Daricna*, he gaue commaundment that one *Gaspas Moralis* shuld take in hande therpeditio to the Ilande of *Dites*. He therfore tooke his vyage fyrst to *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* kynges of the South, whom *Vaschus* beefore had conqyled and left fryndes to the *Christians*. They frendely and magnifycally enterreynd oovre men who prepared them a nauie of the kynges boates to passe ouer into this Ilande, which they caule *Dites* and not *Margarita* or *Margaritea*, although it abounde with pearles which in the latin tonge are cauled *Margarite*. For they fyrst cauled an other by this name, which lyeth next to the mouth of *Os Draconis* in the region of *Paris*, in the which also is founde greate plentie of pearles. *Gaspas* brought with hym onely threescore armed men to the Ilande, for that he coulede conuey ouer no greater number by reason of the smaulesnes and narrownes of theyr boates

boates or barkes which they caule *Culchas*, made of one hole  
piece of tymber as we haue sayde before. The kynge of the *Al conflict.*  
lande came forth ageinst them fiercely with cruell and threa-  
tenynge countenaunce, and with a great bande of armed men  
cryng in maner of a larme and in token of the battayle,  
*Guaxxauras*, *Guaxxauras*, which is as much to saye as, battayle a-  
geynst the enemye: And is as it beare a watch worde to giue  
thonsel, wherewith also they threwe theyr darters. For they  
haue not chuse of bowes. They were so obstinate and despe-  
rate that they assayled oovre men with foure *Guaxxauras*, that  
is, battayles. At the length oovre men with certeyne of *Chia-*  
*pes* and *Tumacchus* men (beinge oulde enemies to this kynge of  
the *Al* lande, gorte the vpper hande by reason they assayled  
the kynge suddenly and vnwares. Yet was he determynd to  
assemble a greater power, and once ageyne to attempt the for-  
tune of warre, but that he was otherwyle perswaded by the  
kinges his borthers which counceled him to gyue ouer and  
submyt hym selfe: sumtyme by the example of them selues and  
other threatenynge the destruction of his dooryngynge kynge-  
dome: And otherwhyles declarynge vnto hym the humani-  
tie and gentelnes of oovre men, by whose frendshipp he might  
obteyne honoure and quyetnes to hym and his: wyllng hym  
furthermoze to consider what chaunced vnto them which the  
yeare before resysted and aduencured the halsade of the bat-  
taye as dyd these kynges, *Poncha*, *Pocchorrosa*, *Quarequa*, *Chiapas*,  
and *Tumacchus* with such other. By these perswasions, the king  
submytted hym selfe and came freendely to oovre men whom  
he conducted to his palaice which they say to be maruelously  
adournd and princelyke. As soone as they entered into the  
pallaice, he brought forth a basket of curious woorkeman-  
shipp and full of pearles which he gaue them. The summe of  
these pearles amounted to the weyght of a hundred and ten  
poundes after .viii. vnces to the pounde. Beinge ageyne re-  
warded of oovre men with such tryffles as they brought with  
them of purpose, as garlandes of Thysall and glasse and o-  
ther counterfet stones of dyuers colours, with lookyng glaf-  
ses also and laton belles, and especially two or three *Al* Jren  
batches (which they more esteeme then great heapes of gold)  
he thought hym selfe abundantly recompensed. They laughe-  
oovre men to scozne that they wyll departe with so great and  
necessa: pe  
ares and bat-  
chers more  
esteemed the  
golde.

## The thyrde decade.

The kynges  
woordes.

Ilandes rich  
in golde and  
pearles.

℥. pounce  
weyght of  
perles yerely  
for a tribute.

plentie of  
hattes and  
counies.

necessarie a thyng for any summe of golde : a thynginge an  
are or harchet to bee profytable for manye bles of men : and  
that golde seruethe onely for wanton pleasures, and not to be  
greatly necessary. Beyng therfore ioyfull and gladd of the  
frendeshyppe of owre men, he tooke the capitaine by the hand  
and brought him with certeine of his familiars to the highest  
towe of his palaice, from whense they myght prospecte the  
mayne sea. Then castyng his eyes about hym on euery side,  
and lookyng towarde the East, he sayde vnto them. Be-  
holde here lyeth open befoze yowre the infynite sea extended  
beyond the soonne beames. Then tournyng hym toward the  
South and West, he sygnified vnto them that the lande  
whiche laye befoze their eyes, the toppes of whose great mon-  
taynes they myght see, was exceedyng large. Then com-  
myng somewhat neauer, he sayde : Beholde these Ilandes  
on the ryght hande and on the lefte, whiche all obeye vnto  
owre empyre, and are ryche, happye, and blessed, if yowe  
caule those landes blessed whiche abounde with golde and  
perle. Wee haue in this Ilande lytle plentie of golde : But  
the deepe places of all the seas aboute these Ilandes, are full  
of perles : wherof yowe shall receaue of me as many as yow  
wyl requyre, so that ye persyde in the bonde of frendeshyppe  
whiche yowe haue begonne. I greatly desyre yowre frendes-  
hyppe, and wolde gladly haue the fruition of yowre thyn-  
ges, whiche I sette muche more by then myllions of perles.  
yowe shall therfore haue no cause to doubte of any vnfayth-  
fulnesse or breach of frendeshyppe on my behalfe. Owre men  
gaue hym lyke friendly woordes : and encouraged hym with  
many fayre promysse to doo as he had sayde. When owre  
men were now in a redynesse to departe, they couenaunted  
with hym to paye yerely to the greate kyng of Castyle a  
hundred pounde weyghre of perles. He gladly agreed to  
their request, and tooke it for no great thyng : nor yet thought  
hym selfe any whitte the more to becoome tributarie. With  
this kyng they founde suche plentie of hattes and counies,  
that owre men stondyng in their houses myght kyll as ma-  
nye as them lyfe with their arrowes. They lyue heere verie  
pleasauntly, haupyng greate plentie of al thynges necessary.  
This Ilande is scarcely fyre degrees distant from the Equi-  
noctiall lyne. They haue the same maner of breade made of  
rootes

rootes and the graine of *Maizium*, and wyne made of seedes and frutes, euen as they haue in the region of *Comogra* and

wyne of frutes and seedes

This kynge is now baptised with all his familie and sub-

The kynge is baptised.

iectes. His despyre was at his baptisme, to bee named *Petrus*

*Arius* after the name of the gouernour. When oore men de-

The syfte part of perles due to the kynge.

parted, he accompanied them to the sea syde and furnysht

373 perles.

them with boates to retourn to the continent. Oore men

diuided the perles emonge them, reseruyng the syfte portion

to be deliuered to thospyers of the kynges *Exchequer* in those

A perle for a pope.

partes. They saye that these perles were maruelous precious,

faire, oriente, and exceedynge bygge: In so muche that they

broughte manye with theym bygger then haseell nuttes. Of

An other perle of great price.

what pryce and value they myghte bee, I consyder by one

perle the which *Paulus* predicaour to yowre holines, bowght

at the second hand of a marchant of *Venece* for foure & forty

thousande ducates, yet emonge those whiche were broughte

from this Ilande, there was one bought euen in *Dariena* for a

thousande and two hundredth Castellans of golde. This was

almost as bygge as a meane walnutte: And came at the length

to the handes of *Petrus Arius* the gouernour, who gaue it to

that noble and faithfull woman his wyfe, of whose maner

of departure with her husbande, wee haue made mention be-

foze. Wee muste then needes thinke that this was verpe pre-

cious which was bowght so deare emonge suche a multitude

of perles where they were not bowght by one at once, but by

poundes and at the least by ounces. It is also to be thought

that the *Venecian* marchaunte boughte his for no great sum

of mony in the East parts. But he soult it the dearer for that

A life and superfluous pleasures.

Dyers opinions of the generation of pearles.

## The thyrd decade.

herbes in the  
bottome of  
the sea,

A hundreth  
pearles in one  
shell fyfthe.

The matrice  
of the perle  
fyfthe.

The tyth of  
pearles.

places as it were medowes in the bottome of the sea, byn-  
gyng foorth an herbe muche lyke vnto thyme, and affyrme  
that they haue scene the same: And that they are engende-  
red, noyshted, and growe therein, as wee see thyncrease and  
succession of opsters to growe aboute them selues. Also that  
these fyfthes delyteth not in the conuersation or coompanye  
of the sea dogges: Nor yet to bee contented with onely one,  
twoo, or thre, or at the moste foure pearles: Affyrmyng that  
in the fyfthyng places of the kyng of this Ilande, there  
was founde a hundreth pearles in one fyfthe, the whiche *Cas-  
par Moralis* the capitayne hym selfe, and his coompanions,  
diligently numbered. For it pleased the kyng at their be-  
yng there & in their presence, to commaund his diuers to go  
a fyfthyng for those kynde of fyfthes. They compare the  
matrices of these fyfthes, to the places of conception in hen-  
nes, in the whiche their egges are engendered in great mul-  
titudes and clusters: And beleue that these fyfthes bynge  
foorth their byrth in lyke maner. For the better profe wher-  
of, they saye that they founde certayne pearles coomynge  
foorth of their marrees, as beyng nowe coome to the tyme  
of their full rypenesse, and moued by nature to coome owte  
of their mootheres wombe openyng it selfe in tyme conueni-  
ent. Lykewise that within a while after, they sawe other  
succeede in lyke maner. So that to conclud, they sawe sum  
coomynge foorth, and other summe yet abydinge the tyme  
of their perfection: whiche beyng complete, they also became  
loose and opened the matrice. They perceaued the pearles to  
bee inclosed in the myddest of their bellies, there to bee noys-  
hted and increase as an infante suckyng his mootheres pap-  
pes within her wombe, befoze hee moue to coome foorth of  
her pryncy places. And if it chaunce any of these shellyfthes to  
be founde scattered in the sande of the sea (as I my selfe haue  
scene opsters disparted on the shores in diuers places of the  
Ocean) they affyrme that they haue byn violently dyspuen thi-  
ther from the bottome of the sea by force of tempestes, and  
not to haue wandered thither of them selues. But, that they  
becoome white by the clearenesse of the moynyng dewe, or  
waie pelowe in troubled wether, or otherwyse that they  
seeme to reioyse in faire wether and cleare ayer, or contrary-  
wyse to bee as it were astonished and dymme in thunder and  
tempestes

tempestes, with suche other, the perfecte knowledge hereof is not to bee looked for at the handes of these vnlearned men whiche handell the matter but grossely, and enquire no further then occasion serueth. yet do they asserme by their experience and industrie of the dyuers, that the greatest pearles lye in the deepest places, they of the meane sorte hygher, and the least hyghest of all and nearer to the bymme of the water. And saye therfore that the greatest do not wander: but that they are created, nourished, and increase in the deepest places of the sea, whether fowle, dyuers, and that but seeldome dare aduenture to diue so deepe to gather them, as wel for feare of the sea crabbes whiche wander amonge these perle fyshes to feede of them, and for feare of other monsters of the sea, as also lest their byrthe shuld fayle them into long remayninge in the water. And this they saye to bee the cause why the olddest and therfore byggest sea muscles, inhabyte the deepest places from whence they are not lyghly moued by tempestes. Furthermore, howe muche the bygger and oulder these fyshes are, they say that in their larger matrices, the greater number and bygger pearles are founde: And that for this cause, there are fewer founde of the byggest sorte. They thyncke also, that when they fynde faule from their fyshes in the deepe places, they are deuoured of other fyshes, because they are not yet harde. Ageyne, the smailest differ from the byggest in a certayne swellynge or impostumation whiche the Spaniardes caule a tympane. For they denye that to be a pearle which in oulde muscles cleaueth fast to the shell: But that it is a warre, whiche beyng rased from the shell with a fyke, is rounde and bygght but onely of one syde, and not precious, beyng rather of the nature of the fysh it selfe, then of a pearle. They confesse that they haue scene certayne of these muscles cleauynge on rockes: yet these but fewe, and nothyng woorth. It is also to bee thought that the pearle fyshes or sea muscles whiche are founde in India, Arabie, the redde sea, or Tappobana, are ruled in suche order as the afore named famous autours haue written. For their opinion herein is not utterly to bee reiected, forasmuche as they were learned men and trauayled longe in the serchynge of these thynges. But wee haue nowe spoken sufficiently of these sea fyshes and of their egges which the fonde nylens

where the byggest, meane, and least pearles are engendred

Sea crabbes

The sea mus-  
cles wherein  
pearles are  
engendred.

## The thyerde decade

and wantonnesse of men haue made dearer then the egges of hennies or geese. Lette vs therfore entreate somewhat of other particular thynges whiche are coome to oðre knowledge of late. We haue elles where largely described the moontes of the goulfe of *Vraba*, with sundrye and variable regions diuided with the manyfolde goulfes of that sea. But as concerninge the West coastes in the whiche oðre men haue buylded houses and planted their habitations on the bankes of *Dariena*, I haue no newe matter to write. Yet as touching the East partes of the goulfe, I haue learned as foloweth. They saye that the vniuersal lande of the East region of the goulfe from the corner therof farre reachyng into the sea, and from the extreame or vnder moste mouthe of the same reachyng the waters of the sea whiche faule into it, euen vnto *Os Draconis* and *Paria*, is by one generall name cauled *Caribana*, of the *Caribes* or *Canibales* whiche are founde in euery region in this tracte. But from whence they had their particular originall, and howe leauynge their native soyle, they haue spredde their generation so farre lyke a pestiferous contagion, wee wyll nowe declare. Therfore from the fyrste fronte reachyng foorth into the sea (in whose tracte we said that *Fogeda* fastened his foote) toward the corner, about nyne myles distant, there lyeth a byllage of *Caribana* named *Futracca*. Three myles distant from this, is the byllage of *Vraba*, of the whiche it is thoughte that the hole goulfe tooke his name, because this byllage was once the heade of the kyngedome. Aboute fyre myles from this, is *Feti*. Nyne myles from *Feti* is *Zerema*: And about twelue myles from this, *Sorabe*. Oðre men founde all these byllages full of people, all the whiche gyue them selues onely to manhuntynge. In so muche that if they lacke enemyes ageynst whom they maye keepe warre, they exercise crueltie ageynst them selues, and eyther sleie the one the other, or elles dyue the vanquished to syghte. Whereby it is apparante that by these their continuall warres, and dyuyng the one the other oöte of their countreies, this infection hath gonne so farre nor onely on the fyrste lande, but also into the *Ilandes*. I was also aduertised of an other thyng the whiche to my iudgement, seemeth woorthye to bee putte in memorye. One *Corniles* a iudge in causes of lawe amonge the *Spany- ardes*

The regions  
of the East  
syde of the  
goulfe of *Vraba*.

The region  
of *Caribana*.

The original  
of the *Canibales*.

The byllages  
of *Caribana*.

manhunters.

ardes of *Darien*, sayth that on a tyme walkyng abrode with his booke in his hande, he met by the waye with a fugitive which had fledde from the great landes lyinge farre toward the weste, and remayned here wyth a kynge wyth whom he was enterteyned.

When this man perceaued the lawier lookyng on his booke, marueyllyng thereat, he came runnyng vnto him, and by interpretours of the kynge whom he serued, spake thus vnto him: Haue yowre also bookes wherein yowre may reserve thynges in perpetual memorye: And letters wherby yowre may declare yowre mynde to suche as are absent: And herewith desyred that the booke might bee opened vnto hym, supposyng that he shoulde therein haue founde the letters of his owne countrey.

But when he sawe theim vnto yke, he sayde further that in his countrey there were cities fortified with waules and concerned by lawes: and that the people also bled apparell.

But of what religion they were, I dyd not learne. Yet had othere men knowlege both by the woordes and signes of this fugitive, that they were circum-

cised. What nowe thinke yowre hereby (most holy father) what do yowre diuine may come hereof when tyme shall sub-

due al these vnder yowre throne: Let vs nowe entermynge certeyne smaule thynges amonge these great matters. I haue not thought good to pretermittre that which chaunced to Iohannes Solysius, who, to searche the South syde of the supposed

continent, departed with thre shippes from porte Ioppa (not farre distant from the Ilandes of Gades or Calis in the Ocean) the fourth day of the Ides of September in the yere. 1542.

What successe Iohannes Pontius had, whom the newe gouernour *Petrus Brias* appoynted to vanquish and destroy the Caribes or Canibales, deuourers of mans flesh. Also to what ende the vyages of the other capitaynes came, whiche were sent forth dyuers wayes at the same tyme: As *Gonzalus Bada-*

*ocus*, *Franciscus Bezerra*, and *Valleius*, Iohannes Solicius tooke the mat-  
ter in hande in an euill houre. He sayled beyonde the point of saynt Augustine, (which they caule *Cabo. s. Augustini*) toward the South syde of the supposed continent beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne.

For (as we haue sayde before) that point reacheth Southwarde to the seuenth degree of the South poole cauled the pole Antartike. He proceeded in that viage syxe hundred leaguens: And founde the lande from the pointe to

extende

Bookes.  
Loke in the  
begynnyng of  
the booke of  
the landes  
lately founde.

Circumcised  
people.

what chaunced to the Capitaines whiche the gouernour sent dyuers wayes,

Lookedecade  
iii. liber. vi.

The vyage of  
Iohannes Solicius.

*Cip. s. Augustini*

## The thyrde decade.

John Solysius  
is slaine of  
the Canibales.  
The fierces-  
nes of the Ca-  
nibales.

Brazell.

Johannes Pon-  
tius is repul-  
sed by the Ca-  
nibales.

extende so farre towarde the South beyonde the Equinocti-  
all, that he came to the thirtie degree of the South pole. As  
he sayled thus forwarde, haupnge nowe on his backe halfe  
the starres named *Caput Draconis*, (that is, the dragons heade)  
and the regions of *Park* lpyng northwarde frome hym, and  
prospectynge towarde the pole *Arctike*, he chaunced to faule  
into the handes of the fylthy Canibales. For these craftie  
fores seemed to make signes of peace, when in theyr mindes  
they conceaued a hope of a daintie banquet: And espyng their  
enemies a farre of, beganne to swalowe theyr spetle as their  
mouches watered for greedines of theyr pray. As unhappye  
*Solysius* descended with as many of his coompanie as coulde en-  
ter into the boate of the byggest shippe, loodenly a great mul-  
titude of thinhabitanes byuste forth vppon them, and slew  
them euery man with clubbes, euen in the syght of theyr fel-  
lowes. They caried away the boate, and in a moment broke  
it all to pyeces. Not one man escaped. Theyr furie not thus  
satisfied, they cutte the slayne men in peces euen vppon the  
shore where theyr felowes might beholde this horrible specta-  
cle from the sea. But they being stycken with feare throughe  
this exemple, durst not coome forth of theyr shippes, or di-  
uisse howe to reuenge the death of theyr Capitaine and coom-  
panyons. They departed therefore from these unfortunate  
coastes: And by the waye ladyng theyr shippes with *Brazell*  
returned home ageyne with losse and heauie chere. Of these  
thynges I was aduertysed of late by theyr owne letters.  
What they haue els doone, I shal haue moze particular know-  
leage hereafter. *Johannes Pontius* was also repulsed by the Cani-  
bales in the Glannde of *Guadalupes* beinge one of the chiefe I-  
landes of theyr habitation. For when they sawe oore men  
a farre of on the sea, they ley in ambushe loodenly to innade  
them when they shulde coome alande. Oore men sent forth  
a fewe foore men and with them theyr laundresses to walke  
theyr shertes and sheetes. For from the Glannde of *Ferre* be-  
yinge one of the Glanndes of *Canarie* (euen vnto this Glannde,  
for the space of foure thousande and twoo hundreth myles)  
they had seene no lande where they myght fynde any frethe  
water: for as muche as in all this large space, the Ocean is  
without Glanndes. At theyr commynge therfore to lande, the  
Canibales assailed them, caried awaye the women, and put the

the men to suche distresse that fewe of them escaped. By reason wherof, *Pontius* being greatly discomfited, durste not invade the *Canibales*, fearynge theyr venomed arrowes which these naked manhunters can direct most certenly. Thus good *Pontius* saylpyng of his purpose, was fayne to gyue ouer the *Canibales*, whome (beinge safe and vnder the house rouse) he threatened to banquyssh and destroy. Whether he went from thence, or what newe thynges he founde, I haue as yet no further knowleage. By these mylfortunes, *Solyfius* losse his lyfe, and *Pontius* his honour. Let vs nowe speake of an other whose enterpryse came to lyke purpose the same yere. *Iohannes Aiora* borne in the citie of *Corduba*, a man of noble parentage, sent in steade of the Licutenant (as we haue sayde) more courteous of golde then carefull of his charge or despyous of prayse for well deservynge, sought occasions of querelyng ageynst the kynges and spoyled many, violently extortynge golde of them ageynst ryght and equitie: And further handled them so extremely, that of frendes they became most cruel enemies: In so much that they ceased not with desperat myndes by all meanes they coulde to sleie othere men openly or priuily. By reason wherof it is coome to passe, that where before they bartered quirely exchanginge ware for ware, they are nowe fayne to doo all thynges by force of armes. When he had thus exacted a great quantitie of golde of them (as it is sayd) he fledde priuily and tooke away a shyppe with him by selth as the common rumoure goeth: Nor yet hethereto haue we hard whither he went or where he is arryued. Sum suspect that *Petrus Arias* the gouernour shulde consente to his departure because this *Iohannes Aiora* is brother to *Consalus Aiora* the kynges historiographer, a man booth lerned, and expert in the discipline of warre and so much the gouernours frend, that these two amonge a fewe, may be counted examples of rare amitie. I my selfe also am greatly bounde vnto theym bothe and haue longe enioyed theyr frendshippe. Yet shall I desyre them bothe to pardone me in declarynge my phantasie herein, that in all the turmoyles and tragicall affayres of the Ocean, nothyng hath so muche displeased me as the touerousnes of this man who hath so disturbed the pacified myndes of the kynges. Nowe emonge these troublous chaunces, let vs rehearse the variable fortune of *Consalus Badiocinus*,  
and

The yrage of  
*Iohannes*  
*Aiora*,  
Locke decade  
iii. liber, vi.

The lewde  
behauour of  
*John Aiora*.

## The thyrede decade.

The Variable  
fortune of So  
salus Badato:  
cius.

Cerabaro, De  
cade. iii. li. iii

The South  
sea.  
A league con-  
teyneth foure  
myles by sea  
and but three  
by lande.

The golden  
region of Coi-  
ba Dytes.

Sande myrre  
with golde.  
Howe they  
flaues are  
marked in the  
face.

His felowes, whose prosperous begynnynge, ended with  
unfortunate successe. *Gonsalus* therfore in the moneth of May  
in the yere of *Christe M. D. xv.* departed from *Dariena* with  
fourescore armed men, directynge his byage towarde the  
Southe, and restinge in no place untill he came to the regi-  
on of *Cerabaro* which owre men named *Gratia Dei*, distant from  
*Dariena* about a hundreth and fourescore myles: for they caule  
it threescore leagues. He spent certeyne dayes here in fidel-  
nesse: for he coulde neyther by sayre meanes nor by foule, al-  
lure the kynge of the regyon to coome to hym. While he laye  
thus idelly, there came to hym other fyfte men sente frome  
*Dariens* under the gouernauce of capytayne *Lodouicus Mercada*  
who departed from *Dariena* in the calendes of Maye, to thin-  
tent to searche thinner partes of those regyons. When they  
mette together, they determyned after consultation, to passe  
ouer the mountaynes lpyng towarde the Southe, euen vnto  
the Southe sea latelpe founde. Beholde nowe a wonderfull  
thyng: That in a lande of suche maruelous longitude in  
other places, they founde it here to bee onely aboute fyfte  
myles distant to the Southe sea: for they counte it, xvii. lea-  
gues, as the maner of the Spanyardes is to reken, and not  
by myles. yet saye they that a league consisteth of thre my-  
les by lande and foure by sea as wee haue noted before. In  
the toppes of the mountaynes and turnynge of the waters,  
they founde a kynge named *Iuana*, whose kyngedome is also  
named *Coiba* as is the regyon of kynge *Careta*, of whome we  
haue made mention elles where. But for as muche as the re-  
gion of this *Iuana*, is rycher in golde, they named it *Coiba Di-*  
*tes*, that is, *Coiba* the ryche. For, whersoeuer they dygged the  
grounde, whether it were on the drye lande or in the weate  
chanelles of the ryuers, they founde the sande whiche they  
caste forth, myrre with golde. *Iuana* fledde at the coom-  
ynge of owre men, and coulde neuer bee brought ageyne.  
They spoyled all the countrey neare aboute his palayce. wee  
had, they but lytle golde: for hee had, carped all his flutte  
with hym. Here they founde certeyne flaues marked in the  
faces after a straunge sorte. For with a sharpe pycke made  
eether of bone, or elles with a thorne, they make holes in  
their faces: and forthwith sprinklynge a powder thereon,  
they moiste the pounced place with a certeyne blacke or redde  
inise,

iuile, whose substance is of such tenacitie and clamminesse,  
 that it wyll neuer weare awaye. They brought these slaues  
 away with them. They saye that this iuile is of such sharpe-  
 nesse and purteth them to such payne, that for extreeme dor-  
 loure they haue no stomacke to their meate certayne dayes af-  
 ter. The kynges whiche take these slaues in their warres,  
 vse their helpe in seekynge for golde and in tyllage of the  
 grounde, euen as do othere men. From the pallaice of *Iuana*,  
 folowynge the course of the water aboute tenne myles to-  
 warde the Southe, they entered into the dominion of an other  
 kyng, whome othere men named the oulde man, bycause hee  
 was oulde, not passynge of his other name. In the regyon  
 of this kyng also, they founde golde in all places bothe on  
 the lande and in the ryuers. This region is verie fayre and  
 frutefull: and hath in it many famous ryuers. Departynge  
 from hense, in fyue dayes iorneye they came to a lande leste  
 desolate. They suppose that this was destroyed by ciuile dis-  
 corde for as muche as it is for the mooste parte frutefull, and  
 yet not inhabited. The fyfth daye, they sawe two men com-  
 mynge a farre of. These were laden with breade of *Mazum*,  
 whiche they carreyd on their shulders in sakes. Othere men  
 tooke them: and vnderstoode by them that there were two  
 kynges in that tract: The one was named *Periquete*, whose  
 dwelte neare vnto the sea. The others name was *Totonoga*.  
 This *Totonoga*, was blynde and dwelte in the continent. The  
 two men whiche they mette, were the fyfthers of *Totonoga*,  
 whome he had sente with certayne fardelles of fysh to *Peri-*  
*quete*, and had ageyne receaued breade of hym for exchaunge.  
 For thus do they communicate their commodities one with  
 an other by exchaunge, without chuse of wycked money.  
 By the conductynge of these two men, they came to kyng  
*Totonoga* dwellinge on the Weste syde of saynre *Michaelles*  
 goulfe in the Southe sea. They had of this kyng, the sum  
 of fyue thousande Castellans of golde bothe rude and artify-  
 cially wrought. Amonge those groumes of rude or natyue  
 golde, there was one founde of the weyghte of two Castel-  
 lans, whiche argued the plentifull rycheesse of the ground.  
 Followynge the same coastes by the sea syde toward the West,  
 they came to a kyng whose name was *Tanachuru*, of whome  
 they had golde amanyng to the weyghte of eight thousand

*golde.*

A fruteful re-  
gion lest deso-  
late by ciuile  
discorde.

kyng *Peri-*  
*quete.*

*S. Michael,*  
kyng *Toto-*  
*noga.*

Six thousand  
Castellans of  
golde.

kyng *Tara-*  
*curu,*

## The thyrde decade.

viii. thousand  
pesos of gold

kyng Pana-  
nome.

kyng Tabor.  
kyng Cheru.

liii. thousande  
pesos of gold  
Salte.

kyng Anata.  
xv. thousande  
pesos of gold

Theyr maner  
of warre.

Fourscore  
thousand Ca-  
stellans of  
golde.

kyng Scoria.  
kyng Pariza.

Basalus Bada-  
locius hath  
the ouerthiow  
and is spoy-  
led of great  
ryches of  
golde.

*Pesos.* Wee haue sayde before that *Pesos* is the weyghte of a Castellane not coyned. From hense they wente to the domi-  
nion of this kynges broother named *Pananome*, who fledde at  
their commyinge, and appered no moze afterwarde. They  
saye that his kyngdome is ryche in golde. They spoyled his  
pallaice in his absence. Syxe leaques from hense, they came  
to an other kyng named *Tabor*. ffrom thense they came to the  
kyng of *Cheru*. He frendly enterceyned owre men, and gaue  
them foure thousande *Pesos* of golde. He hathe in his do-  
minion many goodly salte bayes: the region also aboundeth  
with golde. About twelue myles from hense, they came to an  
other kyng cauled *Anata*, of whome they had, xv. thousande  
*Pesos* of golde whiche he had gotten of the kinges his bozther-  
ers whom he had vanquished by warre. A great part of this  
golde was in rude forme bycause it was molten when he see  
the kynges houses on fyre whom he spoyled. ffor they robbe  
and slep the one the other, sackynge and fpyng their villa-  
ges, and wastinge their countreys. They keepe warre barba-  
roushly and to bitter destruction, executing extrecme crueltie a-  
geinst them that haue the ouerthiowe. *Gonsalus Badaiocius* with  
his felowes, wandered at lybertie vntyll they came to this  
kyng: And had gathered great heapes of gold of other kin-  
ges. ffor, what in brassettes, collers, earinges, breste plates,  
helmettes, and certeine barres wherewith women beare vppe  
their brestes, they had gathered together in gold the sum of  
fourscore thousande Castellans, whiche they had obteyned  
partly by exchaunge for owre thinges where they founde the  
kinges their frendes, & otherwise by forceible meanes where  
they founde the contrary. They had gotten also forty slaues  
whose helpe they vsed both for cariage of their vitayles and  
bagagies in the steade of moiles or other beastes of burden,  
and also to relieue suche as were sycke and forweried by rea-  
son of their longe iorneyes and hunger. After these prospe-  
rous viages, they came by the dominion of kyng *Scoria*, to  
the palaice of a kyng named *Pariza*: where (fearyng no such  
thing) *Pariza* enclosed them with a great armye, and assayled  
them straggelyng and vnwares, in suche sorte that they had  
no leasure to put on their armure. He slewe and wounded a-  
bout fpyrie, and put the resydue to flyghe. They made suche  
hast, that they had no respect eyther to the gold they had ga-  
thered,

thered, or to their slaues: but leste all behynde them. Those  
 felwe that escaped, came to *Dariena*. The opinion of all wyse  
 men as concernynge the varyable and inconstant chaunces The Incon-  
 of fortune in humane thinges, were false, if al thinges shuld stance of  
 haue happened vnto them prosperously. For such is the na- fortune.  
 ture of this blynde goddesse, that she oftentimes delyteth in  
 the ouerthrowe of them whom she hath exalted: and takerh  
 plesure in confounding hygh thinges with lowe, and the con-  
 trary. Wee see this order to bee impermutable, that who soo  
 myll applie hym selfe to gather rootes, shall sumtymes meete  
 with sweete lyqueresse, and other whiles with soure cockle.  
 yett vnto *Pariza*: for he shall not longe leape in rest. The  
 gouernour him selfe was of late determined with thre hun-  
 dret and fyfte choise souldiers to reuenge the death of ower  
 men: But where as he by chaunce fell sycke, his poure went  
 forwarde vnder the conducting of his Lieutenant *Gaspar Spino-*  
*sa*, a Iudge in cases of lawe in *Dariena*. At the same time other  
 were sent forth to the Ilande of *Dites* to exacte the portion  
 of pearles lymited to the king for his tribute. What shal suc-  
 cede, tyme will bring to ower knowleage. The other two, at-  
 tempted thinhabitanes beyond the goulfe *Franciscus Bezerra* pas-  
 syng ouer by the corner of the goulfe and the mouthes of the  
 ryuer of *Dabaiba*, with two other capitaines and a hundreth  
 and fyfte souldiers well appointed, went to make warre vpon  
 the *Canibales* euen in *Caribana* their owne chiefeft domini-  
 on, toward the byllage of *Turufy*, wherof we haue made men-  
 tion befoze in the comming of *Fogeda*. They brought also with  
 them diuers engens of warre: as thre pieces of ordynance Sunacs.  
 whose shot were bygger then egges: Likewise forty archers,  
 and, xxb, hagbutters to thintent to reache the *Caniballes* a  
 farre of, and to preuent their venemed arrowes. But what  
 became of hym and his company, or where they arriued, we  
 haue yett no perfecte knowleage. Certaine which came of late  
 from *Dariena* to Spaine, reported that at their departure, they  
 of *Dariena* fode in great feare lest they also were tossed with  
 sum misfortune. The other capitaine *Valleius*, obteyned the  
 fore parte of the goulfe. But he passed ouer by an other waye  
 then dyd *Bezerra*. For he tooke the beginning of *Caribana*, and  
*Bezerra* the ende. *Valleius* returned ageine. But of the thre  
 scoze and ten men whiche he conueighed ouer with hym, hee  
 D o, ii,                      leste

The expediti-  
 on of Fraun-  
 ces Bezerra a  
 geynst the  
 Canibales.

Valleius repul-  
 sed of the Ca-  
 nibales.

## The thyrde decade

lefte fortye and eyght slaine emonge the Canibales. These are  
 the netbes whiche they bringe that came laste from *Dariena*.  
 There came to me the day before the Ides of October in this  
 yeaere M. D. xvi. *Rodericus Colmenares* (of whom we haue made  
 mention before) and one *Franciscus Delapuenta*. This *Franciscus*,  
 was one of the vnder capitaines of this bande, whose chiefe  
 capitaine was *Gonsalus Badaiocius* who hardly escaped the han-  
 des of kyng *Pariza*. These twoo capitaines therfore, *Rodericus*  
 and *Franciscus* who departed from *Dariena* immediatly after the  
 misfortune whiche befell to *Badaiocius* and his companye, do  
 both affirme, the one that he hath harde, and the other that  
 he hath seene, that in the Southe sea there are diuers Glan-  
 des lying westwarde from the Iland of *Dies* and saincte Mi-  
 chaels goulfe, in many of the which are trees engendred and  
 nourished which bring forth the same aromaticall fruites,  
 as doth the region of *Collocutea*. This lande of *Collocutea*, with  
 the regions of *Cochinus* and *Camemorus*, are the chiefe marre pla-  
 ces from whence the Portugales haue their spices. And here-  
 by do they coniecture that the land where the fruitfulness of  
 spyce begynneth, shulde not be farre from thense. In so much  
 that many of them whiche haue ouerrunne those coastes, do  
 onely desyre that leaue may be graunte them to seache fur-  
 ther, and that they wil of their owne charges frame and fur-  
 nish the shippes and aduenture the viage to seeke those Glan-  
 des and regions. They thinke it best that these shippes shulde be  
 made and prepared, euen in saincte Michaels goulfe: And  
 not to attempte this vyage by sainte Augustines point, which  
 waye were both longe and dyscultye, and ful of a thousande  
 daungers, and is saide to reache beyonde the forty degree of  
 the pole Antartike. The same *Franciscus*, being partener of the  
 trauailes and daungiers of *Gonsalus*, saithe that in ouer run-  
 ninge those landes, he founde great heardes of hartes and  
 wolde bozes: and that he toke many of them by an arte which  
 thinhabitantes taught him: whiche was to make pittes or  
 treches in their walkes, and to couer the same with boughes.  
 By this meanes also they deceaue al other kindes of wild and  
 foure footed beastes. But they take foules after the same man-  
 ner that we do: As focke dones with an other tame focke  
 done brought vp in their houses. These they tye by a stryng,  
 and suffer them to flye a litle among the trees. To the which  
 as other

The Glan-  
 des of the South  
 sea.

In this sea ly-  
 the Glan-  
 des of Molucca,  
 most frutefull  
 of spices.

*Collocutea*,  
*Cochinus* and  
*Camemorus*,  
 from whence  
 the Portuga-  
 les haue their  
 spices.

he meaneth  
 by the streight  
 of Magella-  
 nus.

howe they  
 take hartes  
 and wyde  
 bozes.

Stocke dones

As other birdes of their kind resort, they kil the with their arrowes. Otherwyse they take the with nettes in a bare place poured from trees & bushes: and scattering certeyne seedes rounde about that place, in the myddeste whereof they tye a tame foule or byrde of the kynde of them whiche they desyre to take. In lyke maner do they take popingiayes and other foules. But they say that popingiayes are so simple, that a great multitude of them wylle aye euen into the tree in whose boughes the fouler sytteth: & swarme about the tame chattering popingiaye, sufferinge them selues to bee easely taken. For they are so without feare of the syght of the fouler, that they tary whyle he cast the snare about theyr neckes, the other beinge nothyng feared hereby, though they see hym drawe them to hym with the snare, and put them in the bagge which he hath about hym for the same purpose. There is another kynde of foulyng, heretofore neuer harde of, and pleasant to consyder. We haue declared before howe that in certeyne of the Ilandes, and especially in Hispaniola, there are dyuers lakes or standyng pooles. In sume of these (beinge no deeper then men may wade ouer them) are scene great multitudes of water foules: as wel for that in the bottome of these lakes, there growe many herbes and weedes, as also that by reason of the heate of the sonne pearceinge to the naturall place of generation and corruption, where beinge doubled in force by redaction and preserved by moisture, there are engendered of the stymies of the earth and water, and by the providence of the vniuersall creator, innumerable lytle sylles, with a thousande sundry kyndes of frogges, wormes, knattes, lyes and such other. The foules which vse these lakes, are of dyuers kyndes: As duckes, geese, swannes, seemewes, gullles, and such other. We haue sayde also that in theyr orchardes they noyssh a tree which beareth a kynde of greate gourdes. Of these gourdes therfore well stopped leasse any water shulde enter in at theyr eyes and cause them to synke, they cast many in the salowe pooles: where, by theyr continual wanderyng and waueryng with the motions of the wynde and water, they put the foules out of suspection and feare. The fouler in the meane tyme, disguysinge hym selfe as it were with a visour, putteth a great gourde on his head much lyke to a helmer, with two holes neare about his eyes,

Theyr maner  
of foulyng.

Popingiayes  
are easely taken.

A strange  
kynde of foulyng.

Sylles and  
wormes engendered of slime

Foules.

Gourdes of  
the tree.

his

## The thyrde decade.

his face and hole heade besyde beinge couered therewith. And thus entereth he into the poole euen vnto the chynne. For beinge from theyr infancie exercised in swymmyng and accustomed to the waters, they refuse not to continue therein a longe space. The foules thynkynge this gourd to be one of the other that swymme vppon the water, the fouler goeth softly to the place wher he seeth the greatest flocke of foules: And with waggynge his heade, counterfeitinge the mouing of the waucrynge gourdes, drawethe neare to the foules: where softly puttyng forth his ryght hande, he suddenly snatcheth one by the legges and plungeth her into the water where he puttereth her into a bagge whiche he hath with hym of purpose. The other foules supposinge that this dyed into the water of her owne motion to seke for foode (as is their maner) are nothyng moued hereby, but go forwarde on their waye as before, vntyll they also faule into the same snare. I haue here for this cause entered into the declaration of theyr maner of huntynge and foulunge, that by these moze pleasaunt narrations I may sumwhat myrigate and assuage the horroure conceaued in yowre stomake by the former rehearfall of theyr bluddy actes and cruell maners. Lette vs nowe therfore speake sumwhat ageyn of the newe and later opinions as concernynge the swyfte course of the sea towarde the west about the coastes of *Paria*: also of the maner of gathering of golde in the golde myne of *Dariena*, as I was aduertised of late. And with these two quyet and peaceable thynge, we wyl make an ende of the tragical assayres of the Ocean: and therewith byd yowre holynes fare wel. So it is therfore that *Andreas Moralis* the pylot, and *Ouiedus* (of whom we haue made mention before) repayred to me, at my house in the towne of *Matrice*. As we met thus togyther, there arose a contention betwene them two, as concernynge this course of the Ocean. They both agree that these landes and regions perteynyng to the dominion of *Castile*, doo with one continuall tract and perpetuall bonde, embrace as one hole firme lande or continent al the mayne lande lyinge on the north syde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes, beinge also north west both from *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*. Yet as touchynge the course of the water, they varie in opinion. For *Andreas*, wyl that this vyolent course of water bee receaued in the lappe of the supposed continente whiche

Later opinions of the swift course of the Ocean towarde the west.

The continēt of firme land.

which bendeth so much and extendeth so farre towarde the North, as we haue said: And that by the object or resistance of the lande so bendynge and crookynge, the water shulde as it were rebounde in compasse, and by force thereof be dzyuen about the north syde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes excluded without the circle cauled *Tropicus Canceri*, where the largenes of the sea maye receaue the waters faulynge frome the narrowe streames, and therby represseth that inordinate course, by reason that the sea is there very large and great. I can compare his meanyng to nothyng more aptely then to the swyfte streame commyng forth of a mylle and faulynge into the myl poole. For in al suche places where waters runne with a byolent faule throughe narrowe chanelles, and are then receaued in large pooles, they are suddenly disparcelled and theyr violence broken: So that wheras before they seemed of such force as to ouerthrowe all thynges beinge in theyr waye, it can not then be perceaued which way they runne. The Admiral him selfe *Diegus Colonus*, sonne and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the fyrst fynder of these landes (who had nolue in commyng and goinge, foure tymes passed throughe these seas) beinge demanded of me what he founde or perceaued in saylynge too and fro, answered that there was muche difficultie in returninge the same way by the which they go. But wheras they fyrst take the waye by the mayne sea towarde the North befoze they directe theyr course to Spayne, he saythe that in that tract, he felt the shippe sumtymes a lytle dzyuen backe by the contrary course of the water. yet supposeth that this chauncerth onely by the ordinarie flowynge and reflowynge of the sea: And the same not to be enforced by the circumflection or course of the water reboundynge in compasse as we haue sayde. But thinketh rather, that this mayne lande or supposed continent, shulde sumwhere bee open: And that the sayde open place, shoulde bee as it were a gate, enterie, or streyght, diuidyng the North partes of that lande from the South: by the which also, the Ocean runnyng towarde the West, may by the rotation or impulsion of the heauens, bee dzyuen about the hole earth. *Ouledus* agreeth with *Andreas Moralis* as touchynge the continuall adherence and closenes of the sayde continente. yet neyther that the waters shulde so beate ageynst the bendynge backe of the West lande, or bee in  
suche

The Vyages  
of *Diegus  
Colonus*.

The Vyage  
from the new  
landes to  
Spayne.

## The thyrde decade.

The contrary  
course of wa-  
ters,

The poynt of  
the poie star.

The golde  
mynes of Da-  
riena and the  
maner of ga-  
therynge  
golde.

such sorte repulsed and dryuen into the mayne sea. Witte saith  
that he hath diligently consydered, that the waters runne  
from the deepest and myddest of the maine sea, towarde the  
West. Also that saylinge nere vnto the shore with smaule ves-  
selles, he founde the same waters to retorne ageine towarde  
the East. So that in the same place, they runne together with  
contrary course, as we oftentimes see the lyke to chaunce in  
rivers wherby the obiecte of the bankes, diuers whirlepooles  
and turnynge arysle in the water. By reason wherof, if any  
chaaffe, strawe, woodde, or any other thyng of lyght substance  
be cast in any suche places in ryuers, it foloweth that al such  
as runne with the water in the myddest of the chanell, pro-  
cede well forwarde: But suche as faule into the bendynge  
goulfes and indented margentes of the crooked bankes, are  
carped ouerthwart the chanell, and so wander about vntyll  
they meete with the ful and directte course of the ryuer. Thus  
haue we made yowre partener of suche thinges as they haue  
gyuen vs, and wryten their dyuers opinions. We wyll then  
gyue more certeyne reason, when more certeyne truth shalbe  
knownen. We must in the meane tyme, leane to opinions vntill  
the day coome appointed of god to reueale this secrete of na-  
ture, with the perfectte knowleage of the pointe of the pole  
starre. Hauyng sayd thus muche of the course of the Ocean,  
a bryefe declaration of the golde mynes of *Dariena*, shall close  
vppre oovre Decades and make an ende of oovre trauayles.  
Wee haue sayde, that nyne myles distant from *Dariena*, are  
the sydes of the hylles and the dyse playnes in the whiche  
golde is gathered bothe on the dyse lande, and also on the  
bankes and in the chanelles of ryuers. Therfore to all such  
as are wyllynge to gather golde, there is of ordinarie custome  
appointed to euery man by the suruoyers of the mynes, a  
square plocke of grounde conteyning twelue paces, at the ar-  
bitriment of the chooser, so that it bee not grounde already  
occupied, or leste of other. The portion of grounde beinge  
thus chosen (as it were assigned of the angures to buylde a  
temple) they inclose their names within the same, whose  
helpe the Christians vse in cullynge of their grounde and ga-  
therynge of golde, as we haue saide. These places appointed  
vnto them, they keepe as long as them lyffe. And if they per-  
ceauie tokens of lyttle golde, they requyre an other plocke of  
ground

ground of twelue pases to be assigned them, leauyng the first in commen. And this is thorder which the Spaniards inhabytynge *Dariena* obserue in gatheryng of golde. I suppose also that they vse the lyke order in other places: How be it, I haue not yet enquired so farre. It hath byn proued that these twelue pases of grounde, haue yelded to their choosers, the summe of fourescore Castellans of gold. And thus leade they theyr lyues in fulfyllynge the holy hunger of golde. But the more they spyl their handes with syndynge, the more increaseth their couetous desyre. The more woondde is layde to the spere, the more furiously rageth the flame. Unsatiabable couetousnesse is no more diminished with increase of rycheesse, then is the drynesse of the droppe satisfied with drinke. I sette passe manye thynges wherof I intende to write more largely in tyme conuenient, if I shall in the meane season vnderstande these to be acceptable vnto your holynes: my deuotion and obseruaunce to whose autoritie, hath caused me the gladlier to take this labour in hande. The prouidence of the eternall creatour of all thynges, graunt your holynes many prosperous yeares.

Oure inclosers wolde leaue no such commens.

*Aurifera Pans*

The disease of couetousnes.

The laste booke of Peter Martyr of Angleria, of the Landes and Ilandes largely founde: and of the maners of the inhabitantes of the same.



Have partly declared before in my decades how cerreine fugitines which came out of the large West landes arrived in the conynes of *Dariena*. And howe that maruelpunge at the bookes of those men, they declared that they sumtyme dwelt in regions whose inhabitantes vied suche ameyntes: and were ruled by politike lawes. Also that they had cities fortified with waules, and faire pallaces with streates well paved, and common places whither marchantes resort as to the burse or streete. These landes, oure men haue nowe founde. Therfore who were chautours hereof, or what successe they had herein, who so desirerh to knowe with the conditions of straunge regions and the maners of

Loke Decade 4. Liber. 1.

Cities fortified with waules.

## The thyrde decade.

The Iland of  
Cuba or Fer-  
nandina.

The Spani-  
ards of Cuba  
attempt new  
vyages.

The west an-  
gle of Cuba.

Note.

The Iland of  
Yucatana.

A great citie  
well buylded.

Temples.

Humane peo-  
ple.

the people, let hym giue diligent attendance to such thynges as folowe. Of the Iland of Cuba (nowe cauled *Fernandina*, ly-  
punge nexte vnto *Hispaniola* on the west syde, and yet sumwhat  
so bendynge towards the North that the circle cauled *Tropi-  
cus Canceri* deuideth it in the myddesse, wher as *Hispaniola* is dis-  
tante from the Tropike and declinynge certen degrees to-  
ward the Equinoctial line) we haue spoken sumwhat before.  
In this Iland of *Fernandina*, there are nowe fyve towncs erect-  
ed. Wherof, the chiefe is named *santiago* of saynt James the  
patrone of the Spanyardes. In this, there is native golde,  
found both in the mountaynes and ryuers. By reason wher-  
of they are daylye occupied in gathering & digging the same.  
But shortly after that I had finisshed my sayde booke, thre  
Spanyardes that were the most auncient citizens of Cuba, as  
*Franciscus Fernandes* of *Corduba*, *Lupus Orbo*, & *Christophorus Morantes*, de-  
termined to seeke newe landes, as the myndes of the Spa-  
nyardes are euer vnquiet and geuen to attempte great enter-  
prises. They furnished at their owne charges, thre of those  
shippes whiche they caule *Carauels*. And hauynge sycle ly-  
cence of *Diegus Velasquez* the gouernour of the Ilande, they de-  
parted with a hundredth and ten men from the West angle of  
Cuba. For this angle is mosse commodious to relieue shippes  
and to make prouision for freshe water and fuell. Thus they  
sayled continually fyve dayes and a halfe, betwene the West  
and the South, contented onely with the syght of the heauen  
and the water: durynge whiche tyme, they suppose that they  
sayled not past thre score and fyve myles. For they ley at an-  
ker all nyght where so they sawe the faulynge of the soonne rooke  
the day light from them, leasse by wanderynge in vnknoen  
seas, they myght chaunce to be cast vppon rockes or sandes.  
But at the length they chaunced vppon a great Ilande na-  
med *Yucatana*, whose begynnyng inhabitants caule *Eccan-  
piti*. Thre men went to the citie stodynge on the sea syde, the  
whiche for the bygues therof, they named *Cayrus* or *Alcair*.  
Inhabitantes entertained them very frendly. When they  
were entered into the citie, they maneypled to behold the hou-  
ses buylded lyke towres, magnificall temples, greates well  
paued, and great exercise of bying and sellynge by exchange  
of ware for ware. Their houses are ryther bylte of stone, or  
of bricke and lyme, and artificially wroughte. To the syde  
porches

porches of their houses and fyrst habitations, they ascend by  
ten or twelue steares. They are couered eyther with tyles,  
flates, reades, or stalkes of certeyne herbes. They gratified  
the one the other with mutuall gyftes. The barbarians gaue  
owre men many brooches and iewelles of golde, berpe sayre  
and of cunnyng woozkmanshyppe. Owre men recompensed  
them with vestures of sylke and woolle, counterfette stones,  
of coloured glasse and chrystall, haukes belles of laton, and  
suche other rewardes whiche they greatly esteemed for the  
straungenes of the same. They sette nought by lookynge  
glasses, because they haue certeyne stoones muche brighter.  
This nation is appareled after a thousande fashyons with  
vestures made of gossampyne cotten or bombage of dyuers  
coloures. The women are couered from the girdle to the heele  
haupnge dyuers fashions of veles aboute their heades and  
brestes, with great cautele least any parte of their legges or  
feete bee seene. They resorte muche to their temples: vnto  
the which the chiefe rulers haue the wayes paved from their  
owne houses. They are Idolatours and circumcised. They  
occupie their maner of exchaunginge, with muche fydellitie.  
They vse to adourne the heares of their brades, being deman-  
ded by thinterpretours of whom they receaued their circum-  
cisyon, they answered that there once passed an excedyng  
sayre man by their costes, who leste them that in token to  
remember hym. Other saye that a manne brighter then the  
soone, went emonge them and executed that offyce. But there  
is no certentie hereof. When owre men had remayned there  
certeyne dayes, they seemed to bee molestous to thynhabitan-  
tes accordyng to the common sayinge. The longer a gesse tar-  
rieth, the woozle is his enterreynement. The whiche thyng  
owre men perceauyng, they made the more hast awaye. Be-  
yng therfore prouided of all thynges necessary, they tooke  
their wyage directly towarde the west by the prouidence whiche  
the thynhabitauntes caule Comi and Maim. They ouer passed  
these regions takyng ouerly freche water and fuel in the same.  
The barbarians both men, women, and childien flocked to  
the sea syde, astonysed greatly to behold the huge bygynesse  
of the shippes. Owre men manuepled in maner no lesse to  
viuew their buyldynges and especially their temples square  
neare vnto the sea, and erected after the maner of towres.

Cunnyng arte  
spcers.

Appareled  
people.

Circumcised  
Idolaters.

Comi  
Maim.

## The thyrde decade

471

*Campechium.*

A towne of  
three thou-  
sand howses.

Plentie of  
beastes and  
fowles.

They: Idoles  
and Idolatry.

Houses of  
lime & stone.

Thus at the length haupng sayled about a hundred and ten myles, they thought it good to ley anchor in a prouince named *Campechium*, whose chiefe towne consisteth of thre thousande houses. Thinhabitantes came stompyng to the shippes: marueplyng exceedingly at the maner of saylinge, and at the sayles and other tackelnynges. But when they hard the thunder of the gunnes, sawe the smoke, and smelte the sauour of brimstone and fyre, they supposed that thunderboultes and lyghenynge had byn sente from god. The kynge receaued owre men honorably and broughte them into his pallapce: where he feasted them well after his maner. They are accustomed to eate fleshe, and haue great plentie of beastes and fowles: as peacocks, and other whiche they francke and fede in their houses: Also dyuers kyndes of wyld fowles of the mountaines, wooddes, and waters: Likewise partriches, quales, turtle doones, duckes, and geese. Of beastes, they haue connies, woolues, ypons, tigers, foxes, wyld boozes, hartes, and hares. After this banquet, the kynge with his traine and samylie brought owre men into a brode crosse way where many streates do meete. In this, they shewed them as it were a great and highe aulter buylded foure square of marble compacte together partly with the tounge clepe of *Babilon* cauled *Bitumen*, and partly with smaule stooncs. It had on euery syde foure steares. Vppon the altare was an Image of a man made of marble: and fast by it the Images of two beastes of unknowen shape, whiche seemed as thonghe they wolde with yanyng mouthes haue tozne in sunder the healy of the mannes Image. On the other syde stode a great serpent compacte of the sayde tounge clepe and smaule stooncs. This serpent beyng in length, xlviij. foote, and of the bygnesse of a large ore, seemed to deuour a lyon of marble, and was al by sparcked with freshe bludde. Barde by the altare, were thre postes fastned in the ground, the which thre other trauesed and were sustained with stones. In this place offenders were put to death: In token wherof they sawe innumerable arrowes steined with bludde, sum scatered, sum lying on heapes, and sum broken: Also a great number of mennes bones lying in a court or yerde nere vnto this funestall place. Their houses are here also builded of lime and stone. They named this king, *Lazarus*, bicause they attined at this laude on

saincte

Saint Lazarus day. Departing fro hence & directting theyr course  
 syl toward the West for the space of .xv. myles, they came to a  
 prouince named Aquanil, whose chiefe towne is cauled Mosco, &  
 the kynge thereof, Cupoton. He behelde oovre men with a fro-  
 warde countenaunce, and sought occasion to doo them sume  
 priuie mischief whyle they sought for freshe water. For he  
 made signes vnto them that on the further syde of the nexte  
 hyl, they shulde fynde sprynges of water, intendyng to haue  
 assayled them in that narrowe passage. But by the colouryng  
 of theyr forheades (as they are accustomed in theyr warres)  
 and by the bearynge of theyr bowes and other weapons, oovre  
 men perceaued theyr wplynes, and refused to go any further:  
 yet a thousande of the Barbarians assayled theym vnwares  
 and vnprepared. By reason wherof, they were put to flyght,  
 and dyuers of them slayne in the chafe. Many that fledde to  
 warde the shippes, were entangled in the mudde and mary-  
 shes nere vnto the shore. Twentie and two, were slayne with  
 arrowes, and the resydwel for the most parte, wounded. Fran-  
 ciscus Fernandes the gouernour of the nauie, receaued in this con-  
 flicte thre and thirtie woundes. And in maner none escaped  
 without hurt. If they had goune to the hylles whiche were  
 appoynted them, they had byn slayne euery man. They ther-  
 fore that escaped, returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* froms  
 whence they came, where they were receaued of theyr felows  
 with heauie chere. But when *Diegus Velasquez* the gouernour  
 of the Ilande, had intelligence hereof, he immediarly furny-  
 shed a newe nauie of foure Carauelles with thre hundredeth  
 men. Of this nauie he appoynted John Brisalua his neue,  
 to be the gouernour: And assigned for vnder capitaynes, Al-  
 phons Auila, Frances Montegio, and Peter Aluorado. For  
 the pylot he assigned Antonie Alaminio who had the regiment  
 of the first nauie. They attempted the same byage ageyne,  
 but declyned sumwhat more towards the South about thre-  
 score and tenne myles. Before they sawe any lande, they es-  
 pyed a towre a farre of, by the biewe wherof, they came to an  
 Ilande named *Coxumella*, from the whiche they smelte sweete  
 fauours proceedinge with the wynde, before they appoched  
 to the lande by the space of thre myles. They founde the I-  
 lande to be fourie and fve myles in circuite. It is playne and  
 of maruelous frutefull soyle. There is also golde in it, but it  
 is not

The prouince  
 Aquanil.  
 Mosco.

The Span-  
 ardes are put  
 to flyght and  
 many slayne.

An other ex-  
 pedition.

The Iland of  
 Coxumella.  
 Sweete fa-  
 uours.  
 A frutefull  
 Ilande.

## The thyrd decade.

Towres and  
temples.

Cozumella na  
med Sancta  
Cruz.

Idoles lyke  
beares.

Idolatrie.

Centell  
people.

Yucatan but  
fyue myles  
from Cozu-  
meilla.

is not engendered there, but brought thether from other regi-  
ons. It aboundeth with hony, frutes, and herbes: And hath  
also great plentie of fowles and foure footed beastes. Theyr  
order and maner of lyuynge, is in al thynges lyke vnto theyr  
of *Yucatan*. Lykewyse theyr howses, temples, stables, and ap-  
parell. In many of theyr houses, are great postes of marbre  
after the maner of olde buyldynge. They founde there, the  
foundations of certeyne olde towres ruinate: And one especial-  
ly with .xviii. steares ascendynge to it, after the maner of so-  
lemne temples. They manuepled greatly at olde shippes and  
maner of saylynge. At the fyrst, they wolde admyt no straun-  
gers: but shortly after, receaued them gentelly. Theyr chiefe  
ruler (whom olde men supposed to bee a preece) led them vp  
to the toppe of the towre, where they erected a banner and  
addicted the Ilande to the dominion of the kynge of Castyle,  
namyng it *Sancta Cruz*, because they entered into the same in  
the nones of Maye beinge then the feast of the holye crosse.  
They saye that it was cauled *Cozumella* of kynge *Cozumellus*,  
whose auncestours were the fyrst that inhabited the Ilande.  
In the towre, they founde many chambers furnished with I-  
mages, made both of earthe and marbre to the similitude of  
beares. These they caule vppon with a howlynge and lament-  
table songe, perfumynge thym with sweete odours, and other-  
wise honourynge them as theyr domesticall goddes. They  
are also circumcised. The kynge was in fayre apparel made  
of gossampine cotton curiously wrought. He was lame on  
the one foote by reason that as he once exercised hym selfe in  
swymmyng, a deuourynge fysh cauled *Tuberon*, byt of al the  
toes, of one of his feete. He entreated olde men very frend-  
ly and made them great chiere. After they had byn here thre  
dayes, they departed. And saylynge styll towarde the Weste,  
they espyed great mountaynes a farre of. But as they drew  
neare, they perceaued it to bee the Ilande of *Yucatan* beinge  
distant from *Cozumella* onely fyue myles. Directynge therfore  
theyr course towarde the south syde of *Yucatan*, they compas-  
sed it on that syde which lyeth nearest to the supposed contri-  
ent: yet could they not sayle rounde about it by reason of  
the multitude of rocks, shalowe places, and shelles of sande.  
Then Alaminus the pylot turned his sailes to the North side  
wherof he had better knowledge. Thus at the length, they  
came

came to the towne *Campechum* and kynge *Lazarus* with whom they had bin that attempted the fyrst voyage the ycare before. At the fyrst, they were gentlyly receaued, and requyred to resort to the towne. But shortly after, they repented that they had bydden them: and there vpon wylled them to stay about a stones cast from the towne, and to proccade no further.

When omore men desyred that they myght make prouision for freshe water before they departure, they assigned them to a certeyne well which they had leste behynde them. Declaringe further, that it shulde be lawfull for them to take water there or els no wheare. Omore men rested that nyght in the fylde adioynynge to the well. The which thynge the Barbarians suspectinge, assembled an army of thre thousande men, and encamped not farre from them. Bothe parties passed awaye the nyght without slepe. They fearynge leaste omore menne shulde breake into the towne: And omore men, least the Barbarians shulde inuade them suddenly, on the one parte with trumpettes, and on the other syde with the noyse of timbrels kept them still wakynge that were disposed to sleape. At the sprynge of the day, the Barbarians approached to omore mens campe & cauld for thinterpretours of *Cuba*, whose language is much agreable vnto theys. They had diuised to lyght a torch of frankensence and to place the same betwene bothe tharmies to thintent that if omore men dyd not depart before the torch were consumed, to stande to theyr perrell. The torch was wasted and the matter came to hand strokes. They slewe onely one of omore men with an arrowe bycause his target fayled hym. But many were wounded. After this conflict, omore men resorted to theyr ordinaunce which they had planted neare vnto the well. When they had discharged certeyne peeces, the Barbarians fledde backe into the towne.

Omore men were of fierce and greedy courage to haue pursued them, but that *Brissalua* the gouernour wolde not suffer the. From thence they proceeded to the last ende of *Iucutana*, which they founde to reache more then two hundred myles frome the East to the West. Here they founde a comodious haven and named it *Portus desideratus*. From hense they sayled to other landes, and came to the region nerre to *Iucutana* Westwarde, whiche they doubte whether it be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande: but thinke it rather to be annext to the continent

The Barbarians make resistance.

A conflict.

The length of Iucutana.

## The thyrd decade.

The region  
of Caluacam,  
or Oloan.

The ryuer  
Grifalua.

Targetts and  
brest plates  
of golde.

Armure of  
golde.

Experte arti-  
ficers.

Fyfte hokes  
of golde.

In this there is a gouln which they suppose to be incompa-  
sed with bothe the landes. But of this, there is no certentie.  
Thinhabitantes caule this region *Caluacam* or otherwise *Oloan*.  
They founde here also a great ryuer whiche by his violence  
course and faule, dyueth frethe water two myles into the sea.  
This they cauled *Grifalua* after the name of the gouernour.  
The barbarians marueilyng at the huge greaunte and mo-  
uyng of oware shippes, came swarming the banks on bothe  
sydes the ryuer, to the number of fyre thousande men armed  
with targettes and brest plates of golde, bowes and arrowes,  
brode swoordes of heauy woodde, and longe sauelens harden-  
ned at the endes with fyre: Thus stondynge in battayle caye  
to defende their coogges, and with proude countenaunces for-  
byddinge oware men to coome alande. Bothe parties watched  
al that nyght in armes. In the dawne of the day, oware men es-  
pied about a hundreth Canoes (whiche we haue saide to be  
their boates) full of armed men. Here also the language of  
thinterpreteurs of *Cuba* agreed well enoughe with thers.  
When they had admitted the peace profered them by thinter-  
preteurs, al the Canoes staied excepte one whiche approached  
toward the shippes. A certeyne ruler that was in this Canoa,  
demaunded of oware men what they fought in other mennes  
landes. They answered, golde. And that, for permutacion of  
other ware, and not of gift or vpolently. The Canoa returned  
and the ruler certified the kyng hereof, who came gladlye to  
the shippes. When he had saluted the gouernour, he cauled  
his chamberlen vnto hym, commaundyng him to bringe his  
armure and other oznaumes of golde wherewith he armed  
*Grifalua* from the toppe of the heade to the soule of the foote:  
In so myche that, what so euer any man of armes armed at  
all partes, is among vs accustomed to weare of Iren or Steele  
when he commeth in to the fielde, all suche kynde of furni-  
tures made of golde and wrought with woonderfull arte, the  
kyng gaue to the gouernour. He recompensed hym with bes-  
tures of spycke, clothe, linnen, and other of oware thinges. In  
the beginning of this *Lucatana*, when they sayled to *Cozumelle*,  
they chaunced vppon a Canoa of fyfther men to the number of  
nyne, fyllyng with hookes of golde. They tooke them all  
prisoners. One of them was knowen to this kyng, who pro-  
myssed the daye folowynge to sende the gouernour as muche  
gold

golde for his ransome as the man hym selfe wasted. But the gouernour denyed that he coulde release hym withoute the consent of his felowes: And therfore kept hym styll to proue what he coulde further knowe of hym. Departing from hense and saylunge styll westwarde, they founde a great gonlfe in the which thre smaule Ilandes were sytuat. Of these, they went to the byggest. But oh abhominable crueltie: oh most corrupted myndes of men, and deuelyshe impietie? Let euery godly man close the mouth of his stomake lest he be disturbed. They offer younge children of bothe kyndes to their Idoles of marble and earth. Amonge their Idoles of marble, there standeth a lyon hauynge a hole through the necke, into the whiche they poure the bludde of the miserable sacrifice, that it maye from thence runne downe into a syncke of marble. Lette vs nowe declare with what ceremonies they sacrifice the bludde of these poore wretches. They cutte not their throates, but open the very brestes of these selve soules and take owte their hartes yet pantynge, with the horte bludde wherof, they anoynte the toppes of their Idoles, and suffer the resydue to faule into the synke. This doone, they burne the harte and bowels, supposynge the smoke therof to be acceptable to their goddes. Of their Idoles, one is made to the shap of a man, bowynge downe his heade and lookynge toward the synke of bludde, as it were acceptynge the offeringe of the slayne sacrifice. They eate the fleshe of the armes, thighes, and legges, especially when they sacrifice an enemy taken in the warres. They founde a streame of congeled blud as though it had runne from a bouchery. For this myscheuous purpose, they bringe these wretches from the nexte Ilandes. They sawe also innumerable heades, and trunks of bodies thus manglede, besyde many other yet remaining hole and couered with certeine mattes. All the tractes of these regions abounde with golde and precious stones. One of owre men wanderynge in the Ilande, chaunced to fynde two water portes of alabastr artificially wrought and full of lyttle stones of dyuers colours. They saye also that they founde a stone of the value of two thousand Castilians of gold, whiche they sent to the gouernour. This Ilande they named the Iland of sacrifice. The inhabitants are circumcised. There are also other Ilandes sytuat about this Coluacana, or Caluacam, the

The Ilandes  
of Sacrifice.

Chyldren sa-  
crified to I-  
doles.  
Their Idoles  
of marble,

Gold and pre-  
cious stones.

A stone of  
great price,

## The thyrd decade.

Ilandes of  
women.

golde.

houses lyke  
towres.  
xx. greate  
townes in the  
prouince of  
Colluacana.  
Townes of  
xx. thousande  
houses.

The region  
of Palmaria.

A token of  
frendshipp.

priestes.

the whiche are inhabited onely with women lyuing without the coompanye of men after the maner of the *Amazones*. But they that ponder the matter moze wisely, thinke them rather to be certeyne women whiche haue bowed chasitie and professed a solitarie lyfe as the nunnes doo with vs, or as the virgins cauled *Vestales* or *Bona Dea*, were accustomed to do amonge the gentiles in oulde tyme. At certeyne tymes of the ycare, men of the other Ilandes resorte vnto them. But not for thynkent of generation, but moued with pittie to helpe them to dresse their gardens and tyll their grounde. The resorte goeth lykewise that there are other Ilandes of corrupte women to whom men resorte for carnall copulation: And that they cutte of one of the pappes of their women children least it shuld hinder their shootyng. Also that they kepe onely the women children and sende awaye the men children. Where men therfore drew nere to the shore of *Colluacana* where they quyerly exercised marchaundises with thynhabitaunces. The kyng gaue them a great potte of gold: Also bracelets, chaynes, brouches, with many oher iewelless, and al of gold. Where men ageyne on the other parte satysfied him with such stuffe as they had done other before. Here wolde they gladly haue planted a newe colonie or habitation, but that the gouernour wolde not permytte them, wherat they gruged not a lyttle. The houses and other edifyes of this prouynce, are buylded like vnto towres. It hath also, xx. greate townes in it. Of these they affirme that they haue scene sum consisting of moze then, xx. thousande houses, not ioyning together, but descuered with courtes and gardens. They haue also certeyne large market places encompassed with waules, and streates well paved. Likewise fornares and onens made of lyme and bricke. Furthermoze al sortes of handy craftes men & very cunning artificers. This kinges name was *Potanchanus*: & the region is cauled *Palmaria*. The towne where the king kepeth his court, containeth, xx. thousand houses. When they receaue any straungiers and make a leage of frendshyppe with them, they are accustomed with a knife made of a sharpe stone, to let them selues bludde in the tooonge, hande, arme, or sum other parte of the body: And this euen in the syght of them whom they admitte to frendshyp, in token that they are ready to shedde their bludde in their freyndes causes. Their priestes professe a vertuous lyfe, and liue vnmariied. What it is to

haue to do with women, no man knoweth befoze he be married. Fornication and adultery (which selde chaunce emonge the) they counte abhominat ion. The women are of maruelous chasticite. Surey noble maafter that he haue had one wife, may haue as many concubines as hym lyfeth. But a married woman taken in adulterie, is soulede of her husbände. But this onely to the prince: at whose handes it shal be lawfull for her kynselfolkes to redeeme her. It is not lawfull for suche as are not married, to sytte at the same table with them that are married, or to eate of the same dyshe or drinke of the same cup. In the moneth of August and September, they absteine. xxxv. dayes not onely from fleshe wherof they haue great plentie, but also from fysh and al other thinges that lyue by bludde: And durynge these daies, lyue onely with herbes and frutes. They reken twentie dayes to the moneth, and twentie monethes to the yeaere. Oure men consumed certeyne dayes here verpe pleasauntly. When they departed, coastynge styll by the same shore, they came to an other kyng whom they named *Quandus*. When he had intellygence that oure men desired golde, he brought forth certeyne plates of molten gold. But whē the gouernour signified vnto him by thinterpretors that he desyred great plentie of that metal, the day folowing he brought him a mannes Image of golde beinge a cubette in length: Also a fanne of golde, and an ydole of one of his domesticall goddes of curious woorkemanshyppe. Likewyse garlandes of stones of sundry colours, with many brette plates, brooches, and other kyndes of ornaments, and all of golde. He gaue hym furthermore abundaunce of delycate meates well salted and poudzed with spices. When he had required oure men to coome alande, he commaunded his seruantes with all speede to prepare a great multitude of branches of trees and to waite vpon oure men to his pallyce. As they went thus in order, sum behynde and sum befoze on bothe sydes, they seemed so to shadowe oure men with the bowes as thoughe they had gonne in a continuall arboure. The kyng hym selfe haupng a scepter in his hand, dyd sette them in their arraye, and sumtyme strike suche as were negligent in bearyng their bowes. They shewed them selues obedient in all thynges, and with graue countenance, humbled them selues to receaue his stripes. When he was demaunded

Chasticite.

The punishment of adultery.

marriage is honoured.

fastynge.

kyng *Quandus*.

Idoles, jewels, and ornaments of gold.

A q. ii.

where

## The thynde decade

Sold in mountaynes and ryuers

Their maner of gathering golde.

Sweete savours.

A stone of great pike.

where he had suche plentie of golde, he pointed with his fpynger to the next mountaynes, and to the ryuers descendyng from the same. They are so accustomed to the riuers and erer cised in swymming, that it is al one to them to lye in the water and on the lande. When they desyre to gather golde, they plunge theym selues in the ryuers and bynge from the botome therof, bothe their handes full of sande, whiche they tyng from hande to hande, they gather owte the graynes of golde. And by this meanes in the space of twoo houres, they fyll a reede as bygge as a mannes fpynger. Of the sweete saours of these landes, many thinges myght be spoken, the whiche bycause they make rather to the effeminate of the myndes of men, then for any necessarye purpose, I haue thought best to omitt them. The kynge also gaue the gouernour a younge virgine of twelue yeres of age, adourned with ryche and fayre iewelles. Of the stones whiche he had of this kynge, one was valued at twoo thousande Castellans of golde. Thus at the length they departed from this kyng, laden with golde and precious stones. *Grifalus* the gouernour, sente one of the Carauelles to his vncle *Diego Velasquez* gouernour of the *Islande of Cuba*, with messengers to desire hym the golde, iewelles, and other ornaments. The respydue in the meane tyme styll folowed the tracte toward the West. One of them in the whiche *Frauncis Montegius* the vnder gouernour was caried, sayled harde by the shore: and the other twoo kept aloofe within prospecte of the land. The inhabitants of these coastes also, no lesse marueplynge at the shippes then dyd the other, came with twelue Canoas to *Montegius*, desyringe hym by chinterpretours to coome alande, promysynge in the name of their kynge, that hee shoulde be honozably enterpayned. But *Montegius* answered that hee coulde not assente to their request bycause his companions were so farre from hym: yet dyd he gyue them certayne of owre thynges straunge vnto them, and thanks for their gentylnesse. Shortly after espyinge a great towne, they directed their course thicher. The inhabitants poynted them to coome alande, and came forth agaynst them with bowes & quyers ful of arrowes, brode wooddes made of heauy woode, and Jauclens hardned at the ende with fier. They shotte at owre men a farre of: And owre men dischar-

ged.

ged certeyne pieces of ordinaunce ageynst them. The Barbarians astonysht at the noyse of the gunnes, fledde amayne, and despyred peace. Here oovre mens bytayles began to fayle them, and theyr hyppes were brooked with longe wyages. Hauynge therfore founde and doone these thynges wherof we haue spoken, *Crisalua* returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* well contented, but so wers not his companions. We muste nowe diuerse sumwhat from this matter, and speake of another nauigation. And from thense wyll we returne to these landes which oovre men haue founde. So it is therfore, that *Diego Velasquez*, the gouernour of the Iland of *Fernandina*, about the same tyme that he had sent forth this nauie of foure Carauelles, he prepared an other nauigation of onely one Carauell and one bygantyne with fortie and fyue men. These exercised vyolent handes agaynst the inhabitants of those regions whete they arryued, thynkynge that they myght forceably drawe them to the dyggynge of golde bycause they were *Cassanite* Idolaters and circumcised. There are at the sea syde not farre from the supposed continent, many lyttle Ilandes of mosse fortunare and furefull soyle, wherof thre are thus named: *Guanapan*, *Guanguan*, and *Quintilla*. Oovre of one of these (which they named *Santa Marina*): they violently caried away thre hundred men and women which they thrust into the Carauell and returned immediatly to *Fernandina*, leauynge the bygantyne with xxv. of theyr felowes to thynke to hunt for more men. The haue where the Carauell fyrst arryued, is cauled *Carenas*, beinge distante from the angle of *Cuba* and the chiefe cite of *Sanctiago*, two hundred and fyfte myles. For this Ilande of *Cuba*, is very longe, reachyng in length from the East to the West, and situate directly vnder the circle cauled *Tropicus Canceri*, as we haue sayde before. Now shall you heare how fortune sought the reuenge of these pore wretches. Therfore as theyr keepers went aland and few remained in the Carauell, they perceyuing occasiō ministred wherby they myght recouer theyr libertie, loodeynely snatched by oovre mens weapons and stole fyve of them which yet remained in the Carauell, whyle the residue lepe into the sea. And by this meane the Barbarians possessed the Carauell which they had soone learned to rule, and thus returned to theyr owne countreys. But they sayled fyfte to the nexte Ilande where

Other viages  
from *Cuba* or  
*Fernandina*.

many Ilandes  
betwene *Cu*  
*ba* and the  
firme lande,

*Sanctiago*  
the chiefe ci-  
tie of *Cuba*.

The Barbari-  
ans slei the  
Spaniards  
with theyr  
owne wea-  
pons.

## The thynde decade.

where they burnt the Carauel and caried away the weapons with them. From hence they conueyed them selues to theyr owne countreys with the Canoas of this Ilande. Heare in lyke maner they pryuilie assayled them that were lefte with the brigantyne, and slewe many of them also. The residue that escaped, fledde to the brigantine where they betwayled theyr felowes deathes and counted theyr owne escape a victorie. On the shore not farre from the place where they suffered this misfortune, there is a tree, in the toppe wherof they set vp a crosse, and graued this inscription in the barke of the tree: *Vannuis Aldaricci*. There is a ryuer named *Darien*, on the banke wherof standeth the chiefe citie of the supposed continent. The gouernour therfore hauing intelligence herof, sent with all speede two shippes of warre well furnyshed, to the ayde of them that were lefte. But they were toyle to late: yet folowynge the viewe of the crosse, they came to the shore and redde the letters grauen on the tree, but durste not attempte fortune. Thus with all theyr hardie souldiers departinge from hence with despayre, they sayled to the nexte Ilande, out of the which they carped away by violence fyue hundred men and women, supposynge lykelyhode that they myght lawfully so doo: because they were Idolaters and circumcised. But the like chaunce happened vnto them when they landed at *Fernandina*. For the Barbarians espyinge oportunitie, sette vppon the Spaniardes in one of the shippes with theyr owne weapons and slewe theyr keepers. The residue that escaped, castynge them selues into the sea, swamme to the nexte carauell, and with theyr felowes assayled the carauell that was taken from them. This conflict was so sharpe, that for the space of foure houres, it was doubtfull whether parte shoulde obreyne the victorie. The Barbarians both men and women fought verie fiercely, aswell to recouer theyr libertie, as also to holde faste the praye whiche they had gotten. But in fine, the Spaniardes had the vpper hande by reason they were more experie in handelynge of theyr weapons and rulyng of theyr Carauell. The Barbarians beinge thus overcome, lepte into the sea: but the Spaniardes rooke theym ageyne with the shippe boates. About a hundredeth of the Barbarians perished, beinge partly drowned and partly slayne with the swoorde: And but fewe of the Spaniardes. These thynges thus

The chiefe citie of the supposed continent.

The Spaniardes are slayne ageyne with theyr owne weapons.

The Barbarians are slayne and put to flight.

thus pacified, the resydue of the Barbarians were carryed to the towne of *Sanctiago* and condemned to labour in the golde mynes. Shortly after they made ower a newe byage to an other of the Ilandes, whiche lye there about so thicke, that they commonly caule the number of them *Archipelagus*, as they in ower sea of *Ionicum* are cauled *Symplegades*. Here ower men were cruelly handeled: and as many of them as came alande eyther slayne or wounded. This Ilande they named *Florida*, bycause they arryued there on Easter day whiche the Spanyardes caule the *hoysstynge* day of the resurrection. They say also that in this tracte they sawe .xxvi. Ilandes which *Colonus* had ouerpasse: And the same so to lye aboute *Hispaniola* & *Cuba*, as though they warded them from the furie of the Ocean. In many of these they founde natie golde of lyke goodnes to that which is founde in *Granatum*. The inhabitants also weare many icwels, and haue many Images of theyr domesticall goddes made both of golde artificially wrought and also of woodde gylded. Francis Cheregatus brought one of theyr Idoles with hym, wherby may bee considered of what wytte and aptenes they are. It is a maruelous thyng to see what maner of rasers they haue, made of certeyne yelow stones cleare & transparent lyke vnto Crystal. With these they shaue and carue as though they were made of fine Steele. Wher the edges are blunte with longe exercise, they sharpen them not with a whetstone, or powder, or any other stone, but temper them onely with water. They haue also a thousande kindes of instrumentes or tooles and such other thynges of tyne denise, which were to longe to rehearse. Let vs therefore returne from whense we haue digressed, as to *Cozumella*, *Lucatana*, *Colluacana* or *Oloa*, beinge all landes lately founde, and so rich fruteful and pleasaunt, that they may in maner be compated to the earthly Paradyse. Therfore, after that it was known to ower men of howe greate momente these trattes were, the Spanyardes which inhabited the Ilande of *Cuba* Anuncius beinge the gouernour of the Ilande furnished a newe nauie of ten Carauelles and fyue hundred menne, with twosmaule brigantines, as it weare in the steade of lyght hoysmen or forerunners whose ayde they myght vse as scoutes to searche the wayes for daunger of rockes and shalow sandes or selfes. They shipte also certeyne horses, as fyue stoned horses,

An other vyage.

*Archipelagus*.  
A multitude of Ilandes.

xxvi. Ilandes about *Hispaniola* & *Cuba*.

Images of golde.

Rasers of stone.

Instrumentes and tooles.

Ilandes lyke vnto the earthly Paradyse.

An other vyage of .x. Carauels and a hundred men.

horses and mares.

## The thyrde decade.

**Fernando  
Cortesijs.**

**The Ilande of  
Cozumella,**

**Carpets and  
Sheetes.**

**Innumerable  
booke.**

**Circumcised  
Idolaters.**

**They Sacri-  
fice Chyldren**

horses and. xvi. mares apte for the warres. For their gene-  
rall gouernour and Admiral of the navy, they elected *Fernando  
Cortesijs* who at that tyme was the chiefe ruler of the citie of  
*Sanctiago*. For vnder capitaines, they appointed *Alfons Portu-  
carerijs*, *Francis Montegius*, *Alfons Auija*, *Alucredo Spatense*  
*John Velsquen*, & *Diegus Ordassus*. They all folowed the same  
wynde from the last angle of *Cuba* toward the west. As soone  
as *Frauncis Fernandes* of *Corduba*, and then *John Brit-  
salua* came within prospecte of the Ilande of *Sacrifices*  
(wherof we haue made mention before) suddenly a tempest of  
contrary wynde prohibited them to take lande and drowe  
them backwarde to *Cozumella* lyinge on the East syde of *Iuca-  
tana*. This Ilande hath onely one haven named *sainte Johns*  
porte. And hath in it, onely syre towne. Also none other  
water then in welles and cisterns, because it lacketh riuers  
and springes by reason it is plaine, conteynyng onely. xlv.  
myles in circuite. At the comynge of othere men, thinha-  
bitauntes fledde to the thicke woods, & forsoke their townes  
for feare. Othere men entered into their houses where they  
founde plentie of veytrales and many ornementes perpe-  
nyng to the furnyshynge of their houses, as hanginges and  
carpettes of dyuers colours, sheetes also of gossampine cot-  
ton (whiche they caule *Amaccas*) and muche apparell. They  
haue furthermore innumerable bookes, of the whiche with  
many other thinges sent to othere newe Emperour, we wyll  
speake more largely hereafter. The souldiers wandered a-  
bout the Ilande & viewe alchynge diligently, keepyn them  
selues still in battell raye, least they myght be sodenly inua-  
ded. They founde but a fewe of thinhabitauntes and onely  
one woman in their companie. By thinterpretours of *Cuba*  
and other whiche the Spaniardes tooke fyrst from *Iucata-  
na*, they perswaded the woman to caule the kynges that were  
absente. They came gladly & made a leage of frendshyp with  
othere men, wherby they were restored to their houses and a  
great parte of their stuffe. They are circumcised Idolatours,  
and sacrifice chyldren of bothe kyndes to their *Zemes*, which  
are the Images of their familiar and domesticall spirites  
whiche they honour as goddes. When I enquired of *Alaminus*  
the pilote, also of *Francis Montegius* and *Portu-  
carerijs*, from whense they had the chyldren they offered in sacrifice, they  
answered

answered that they bought them in the Ilandes therabout  
by exchange for golde and other of their trasycke. For in al  
this so large a space of land, the deuely be auerrie for the de-  
syre of wicked money, hath not yet oppressed th inhabitants.  
They saye the same also of the Ilandes lately founde, wher-  
of two are named *Deslam* and *Sestam*, whose inhabitants go  
naked: and for scarcenelle of children, sacrifice dogges whi-  
che they nourish as well for that purpose as also to eat as  
wee do conies. These dogges are dumme and can not barke,  
haunge snoutes lyke unto foxes. Suche as they destinate  
to eat, they geld while they are whelpes, wherby they ware  
very fat in the space of foure monethes. They reuerue al the  
bytches for increase, and but fewe dogges. More men dis-  
swaded them from these superstitions, declarynge how they  
were abhominable and detested of god. They were soone per-  
swaded and despyred a law whiche they myght folowe. More  
men therfore declared unto them that there was onely one  
god which made heauen & earth, the geuer of al good thyn-  
ges, beynge of one incomprehensyble substance vnder tripli-  
cite of person. As soone as they harde these woordes, they  
broke their *Zones*, and pared, scraped, and washed the paue-  
mentes and waules of their temples. More men gaue them  
a painted picture of the blessed byrgine whiche they placed  
reuerently in their temple, and aboue it a crosse to be hono-  
red in the remembraunce of god and man and the saluation  
of mankynde. They erected also an other great crosse of wod  
in the toppe of the temple, wher they oftentimes resorte  
together to honour the Image of the byrgine. Th inhabitants  
signified by thinterpretours that in the Iland of *Lucatana*  
not far from them, there were seue Christians captiues which  
in tyme past were dyuen thither by tempeste. The Ilande  
of *Cozumella*, is onely fyue miles distant from *Lucatana*. The go-  
uernour *Cort sus* being aduertised hereof, furnyshed ii. Carauels  
with fyrie me, wyllong the incontinent to direct their viage  
thither & to make serch for these me. They toke with the the  
interpretours of *Cozumella* (whose language agreeth with theirs  
with letters to the Christians if any myght be found. He fur-  
ther declared vnto they howe goodly a matter they shoulde  
bringe to passe if they coulde bringe away any of them. For  
he no wayes doubted but that by their information, he shuld  
be fully

The Ilandes  
of *Deslam* &  
*Sestam*.

Sacrifice of  
dogges.

They are  
soone persua-  
ded to owre  
religion.

The picture  
of the bles-  
sed byrgine

An other vy-  
age

## The thyrde decade.

be fully certified of the commodities of all those tracteres, and the maners of thynhabitauntes. Thus they departed with commaundement to retourne within the space of fyve dayes. But when they had remayned there now. viii. days, and hard no word of their Cozumellane interpreters whome they had sent alande with the message and letters, owre men returned to Cozumella without them, suspectyng that they were ether slaine or deteyned. And where as the hole nauye was now determyned to depart from Cozumella but that they were hyndered by contrary wynde, they sodenly espied towarde the weste a Canoas coomynge from Iucatans, and in it, one of the Chyistian captiues (named Hieronimus Aquilaris) who had lyued seuen yeares in that Ilande. With what ioye they embraced the one the other, the chance may declare. They were no lesse desyrous to heare, then he to tell of the myfortune whiche befell to hym and his coompanions. And here it shal not bee greatly from my purpose breifely to rehearse how the chynge chaunced. In my Decades I haue made mention of a certayne noble man named Valdivia, whome the Spanyardes whiche inhabited Dariens in the supposed continence of the goult of Vraba, sent to the Ilande of Hispaniola to colonus the Admiral and bicerox with the residue of the Senate and counsell there (to whom perteyneth the redyesse and orderynge of all thinges in these newe landes) to signifye vnto them in what extreme necessitie and penurie they lyued. Unhappy Valdivia therfore, takynge this matter in hand in an euell houre, was with a sudden and vyolent whielewinde, dryuen vpon certayne quicksandes in the prospecte of the Ilande of Iamaica, lyinge on the South syde of Hispaniola and Cuba. These blind and swalowyng sandes, the Spaniardes caule bypers: And that by good reason, because in them many thyppes are entangled, as the lycertes are implecate in the tayles of the bypers. While the Carauell thus wretched with the water, it was so bruite in sunder, that Valdivia with thirtie of his fellows, coude scarcely with muche difficultie descende into the thyppie boate: where, without oers, and without sayles, they were caried awaye by the vyolence of the water. For (as we haue said before in owre Decades) the seas do runne there continually with a vyolent course towarde the West. They wandered thus, xiii. dayes not knowyng whither they went.

Aquilaris,  
vii. yeares  
captiue in the  
Ilande of Ju-  
catana.

Valdivia.

The shippe  
wracke of  
Valdivia.

The quicke  
sandcs cau-  
se bypers.

The course  
of the sea to-  
warde the  
west.

not yet fyndynge any thyng to eate. Famen consumed seuen  
of them whiche were caste in the sea to feede the fshes. The  
resydue lykelike in maner consumed by famen and faulynge  
from one calamitie into an other, were driuen to *Lucanors* and  
fell into the handes of a cruell kynge who hewe *Valdinus* the  
gouernour with certayne of his felowes. And when hee had  
fyrst sacrificed them to his *Zemes*, shortly after he eate them  
with his frindes of that conspiracie. For they care onely their  
enemies and straungiers: And doo otherwile absteine from  
mannes fleshe. In this meane tyme, while *Hieronimus Aquillaris*  
with syxe of his felowes were referred to be sacrificed the  
thirde daye, they brooke their bandes, escaped the han-  
des of that cruell tyranne, and fledde to an other kynge be-  
yng his enemye, who receaued them, yet onely as bonde-  
men. It is a straunge thinge to heare of the moother of this  
*Aquillaris*. For as soone as she harde that her sonne was tau-  
len into the handes of the nations that eate mannes fleshe,  
she fell madde incontment: So that when so euer after, she  
sawe any meate roastyng at the fyre, or onely ready spitted to  
laye to the fyre, she cealed not to crye out in this maner. O  
me misse wretched moother: Behold the members of my son.  
But to returne to oovre purpose. When *Aquillaris* had now re-  
ceaued the gouernours letter sente by the *Coxumellane* mel-  
sengers, hee declared to the kynge his mayster (whose name  
was *Taxmarus*) what was their erraunt thither, and wherfore  
they were sent: vsyng in the meane tyme many large discour-  
ses in expresseynge the great poure and magnifycence of their  
kynge who had of late arriued in those coastes. Also of their  
humanitie and gentilnesse toward their frindes and suche as  
submytted them selues to them, and againe their rygour and  
fiercenesse ageynst suche as tooobernly eyther contemned them  
or denyed their requestes. With these woordes he broughte  
*Taxmarus* into suche feare, that the maister was now fayne to  
despyze his seruauant so to handell the matter that they myght  
quyetly enter into his dominion as his freendes and not as  
his enemies. *Aquillaris* promised in their behalfe that they shuld  
not onely coome in peace, but also to ayde hym ageynst his  
enemies if neede shulde so require. Wherbyppon hee dismissed  
*Aquillaris* and with hym thre of his families and compani-  
ons. Thus they sayled together from *Coxumella* to *Augustana* to  
the

*Valdinus* is  
sacrificed to  
Idoles.

howe *Aquill-*  
*laris* escaped

kynge *Tax-*  
*marus*.

## The thyrde decade

The mouth  
of a ryuer  
stoped with  
sande.

Turky Pens.

the ryuer whiche they had founde before in the fyrste byage: thither by the gouernante of Alamitus the pilot. They found the mouth of the ryuer stoped with sande, as wee reade of the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte when the wyndes (cauled etc.) blowe in summer and especially in the canicular dayes. Therefore where as they coulde not enter into the ryuer with the biggesse vesselles (although it bee otherwise apte to receaue great shippes) the gouernour raised two hundred men to be sette alande with the brigantynes and shyppe boates: wyllynge *Aquillaris* to offer peace to the inhabitants. They demanded what owre men required. *Aquillaris* answered, bytayles. There was a longe space of sande by the syde of the towne, whither they wylled them to relocate, promysynge to bynge them bytayles thither the daye folowynge. Oure men wente and they came accordynge to their promysse and brought with them eyght of their hennes beynge as bygge as peacockes, of brownysh colour, and not inferiour to peacockes in pleasaunte tast. They brought also as much bread made of *Mazium* (whiche is a graine not muche vnylike unto pampke) as wolde scarcely serue tenne hungry men: And here with despyed them to depart. But when they perceaued that owre men made no hast away, immediately there came a great companye of armed men towarde theym demaundynge what they had to do thus to wander in other mennes landes. Oure men made answer by *Aquillaris*, that they despyed peace, bytayles, and golde for erchaunge of other thinges. They answered ageyne, that they wolde nother peace nor warre with them. But threatened them to auoyde the lande excepte they wolde bee destroyed euey manne. Oure men sayde that they woulde not departe withoute sufficiente bytayles to mayntayne their souldyers.

They appoynted the day folowynge to bynge them more bytayles: but they brooke promysse, yet perceauing the second day that owre men were encamped on the sande and had reposed there that nyght, they brought them as much more bytayles, and commaunded them in the name of theyr kynge to departe. Oure men sayde that they were despyous to see the towne, and to haue yet more store of bytayles. The Barbarians denyed theyr request, and therewith departed whispyng and mutterynge amonge them selues. In the meane tyme

tyme olde men were styll so oppressed with hunger that they were enforced to seeke for meate. The gouernoure therefore sent his vnder capitaynes to lande with a hundredth and fiftie men. As they went disperced in dyuers companyes about the byllages of the countrey, the Barbarians met with one of theyr bandes, and put them to great distresse. But when theyr felowes beinge not farre from them, harde the noyse of theyr alarome, they came with all possible haste to theyr rescue. The gouernour on the other syde, placinge his ordinaunce in the byggantines and shippe boates, approached to the shore with the residue of his souldiers. The Barbarians lykewise, beinge redy furnished to the battaile, came runninge to the sea syde to disturbe them that they shulde not coome alande: And with theyr arrowes, wounded manye a farre of vnprepared. The gouernoure discharged aboute. xx. pieces of ordinaunce ageynste them: With the slaughter and terrible thunder, wherof, & with the flame of fyre and smel of brimstone, they were so astonished and put to such feare, that they fled and disperced lyke wyld beasts: whom olde men persuinge, entered into the towne which thynhabitantes forsooke in maner for feare of theyr owne men whom they sawe so dismayde. On the banke of this ryuer there is a towne of such portentous byggenes as I dare not speake. But Alaminus the pylot, sayth that it conteyneth in circuite fyue hundredth myles, and that it consisteth of. xxv. thousande houses. Summe make it somewhat lesse: But they all agree that it is exceedinge great and notable. The houses are diuided with gardens, and are buylded of lyme and stone verie artificially and of cunningge woodkemanhippe. To theyr haules, chambers, parlours, or other places of habitation, they ascende by tenne or twelue steares: And haue certeyne spaces betwene euery house: so that it is not lawfull for any to lade his neyghbours waules with rafters or beames. Theyr houses are sepe rate one from an other by the space of thyr houses: And are for the more parte couered with reede and thertche: And many also with slate or other stone. The barbarians them selues confessed that they were that day fortie thousande men at the battaile, which were vanquished of a fewe by reason of the newe and unknowen kynde of seyghthe with gunnes and howses. For the gouernour had imbarcked. xvi. howses which were

A confitee.

The Barbarians are put to flight.

The great towne of Panchana or Victoria.  
A towne of xxv. thousand houses.

Gunnes and howses.

also

## The thyrd decade.

The man &  
the horse.  
thought to  
be one beast.

*Centaurus.*

Palaces of  
marvelous  
bygnes and  
wel buylded.

They receue  
owre religio.

also at the battayle, and so fiercely assailed the Barbarians on the backehalfe, that they brake theyr array and scattered them as it had byn flockes of sheepe, ouerthrowing, wounding, and kyllinge them on euery syde. Whiche thyng the seely wretches so imputed to a miracle, that they had not the poure to occupie theyr weapons. For wheras before they had neuer seene any horses, they thought that the man on horsebacke and the horse, had byn all one beaste, as the antiquitie dyd fable of the monster *Centaurus*. Our men possessed the towne. xxi. dayes where they made good chere vnder couert, whyle the owners of the houses lay vnder the firmament and durst not assaile owre men who had placed them selues in the strongest parte of the towne, where some keppe continuall watche (least the Barbarians shulde suddenly inuade theim) whyle other gaue them selues to reste and sleepe. Whinhabitantes caule this towne *Potanchana*: But owre men for the victorie which they obteyned here, named it *Victoria*. It is a maruelous thyng to consider the greatenes, magnificence and finenes of the buyldinge of certeyne palaces they haue in the countrey to the which they resorte sumtymes for theyr solace and pastyme. These are curiously buylded with many pleasant diuises, as galleries, solars, turrets, portals, gutters with chambers boorded after the maner of owre wayncotte and well flowered. Foure of owre Spanyarde went into one of them of such greatnes, that they wandered in the same for the space of foure houres before they coulde fynde the waye out. At the length by thinterpretours and certeyne captiues owre men sent for the kynge and suche rulers as were, next vnder hym in autoritie, wyllyng them to submyt them selues and to come into the towne vnarmed. Byyinge the messengers further in commaundement to certifie them that in there so doinge, they wolde comen with them as concernynge conditions of peace, and restore them theyr towne. They came gladly, and entered euery man into his owne house vppon condition that they shulde euer thereafter absteyne from such ceremonies and horrible sacrifices of mans fleshe to deuils the mortal enemies to mankynd, whose ymages they honoured. And to directe the eyes of theyr mynnes to Ihesus owre god the maker of heauen and earth, who was borne into this world of a virgin, and suffered deathe on the crosse for the redemption

demption of mankynde. And synally to professe them selues subiectes to the great Chyrstian kynge of Spayne. They promysed both, and were instructed as farre as the shortnes of tyme wolde permitte. Being thus refozed, they recompensed oovre men with many rewardes: Supposynge suche men to be sent from heauen, which being so fewe in number, durst attempte battayle ageynst so great a multitude. They gaue oovre men also certeyne golde and twentie slaues. Departing therefore from hence, and coastynge styll alonge by the same shore, they came ageyne to the goulfe whiche *Alaminus* the pylot founde before vnder *Grisalus*. This they named *Bian Sancti Iohannis*, that is, Saynt Iohns goulfe: For *Bian* in the Spaynshe tonge signifyeth a goulfe. Here thynhabitanes refozted to them peaceably. Aboute a myle frome the shore, was a towne of a thousande and syue hundred houses situate vpon a hyll. They profered oovre men halfe the towne if they wolde dwel with them for euer. This perhaps they dyd the rather eyther fearynge the example of thynhabitanes of *Potamchana*, the fame wherof myght haue coome to theyr eares, or els hoppyng that vnder the shadowe of suche valiant menne, they myght obteyne ayde and succour ageynst theyr enemies and boztherers. For (as I haue sayde before) they dystrope one an other with continuall warre for the desyre to enlarge theyr dominions. Oovre men refused perpetuall habitation, and accepted theyr frendely profer for a tyme. As they came alande, the people folowed them on euery syde with bowes in theyr handes which they helde out oovre mens heades to defende them from the rayne as though they had walked in a continuall arbour. Here they encamped. And least the residue left in the shippes, shulde in the meane tyme waile llothefull with idleness, the gouernour gaue commaundement to *Alaminus* the pylot and *Francis Montegius* to searcho the west partes of that lande, whyle he reliued the wried souldiers and healed suche as were wounded. To them that went forward on this vyage, he assigned two brigantines with fiftie men. Vnto this goulfe, the course of the water was gentyl enough and moderate. But when they had sayled a litle further towarde the Weste, they founde the sea runnyng with so thicke a course as if it were a great ryuer faulynge from the tops of hygh mountaynes: In so much that in a shorte space of tyme it caried

A towne of a thousand & syue hundred houses.

An other vyage of two brigantines & fiftie men.

where the sea runneth swyftly from the East to the West.

## The thyrde decade.

A conflict be-  
twene the wa-  
ters coming  
from the west  
and from the  
south.

A dangerous  
and peincfull  
wyage.

The land of  
Colluacana.

The land of  
Baccalos or  
Baccalarum

Rych presen-  
tes of golde  
and precious  
stones.

It caried them fiftie myles from theyr felowes. When they were now entered into this violent streame of the water, they sawe on their left hand a large playne sea which mette with the course of the other waters faultynge from the weste. And lyke as two great ryuers that runne contrary wayes, make a vehement conlycte where they meete, so seemed the waters commyng from the Southe to resyst these waters as enemyes that had entered into the ryght or possession of an other. On the contrary parte, they sawe the lande reachynge farre bothe on the lefte hande and on the ryght. In this strife betwene the waters, they were so tossed on bothe sydes and entangled with whirlepooles, that they longe wretched with owte hope of lyfe. At the length with muche difficultie, turnynge the stemmes or forpartes of their shippes ageynst the streame from whence they came, and labourynge al that they myght with their oers and sayles, they coulde scarcely ouercoome the rage of the water: In so much that where as they thought that they had in one nyght sayled thoo myles, they founde that they were dysuen backe foure myles. yet at the length with goddes helpe, they overcame this daungerous conlycte. They spent. xxii. daies in this lyttle space of sea: And when they were now returned to their felowes, declared vnto them that that ende was the land of *Colluacana* whiche they adyudged to be parte of the supposyd continent. The lande whiche they sawe a farre of before their fale, they suppose eyther to be annexed to owre continent, or to bee ioyned to the large North regions cauled *Baccalos*, wherof we haue made mention in our Decades in the wyage of Sebastian Cabote. This matter is yet doubtfull. But wee trust it shall once bee better knowne. While Alaminus and Montegius searched these secretes, the kynge of the prouince (whose name was *Mulloxumam*) sent owre men by one of his chiefe offycers (beyng also his Lieutenaunt of the sayde towne) many ryche and goodly presentes of golde, syluer, and precious stones, sette and broughte after a marueylous straunge device and with no lesse cunnyng moorkemanshypp. Here they determined to sende messengers to owre newe Emperour to knowe his pleasure that they myght in this prouince plant a newe colonie or habitation. And this dyd they withoute chaduse of *Diego Velasquez* the gouernour of the Island of *Cuba*

*Fernandina*, who byrthe sente them forth with commaundement  
to retorne ageyne after they had searched these regions and  
obteyned plentie of golde. While they consulted hercof, they  
were of dyuers opinions. But the moste part alleaged that in  
this case it was not requysite to make the gouernour of their  
counsaile. Forasmuche as the matter shulde be referred to a  
higher Iudge, as to the kyng of Spaine him selfe. When they  
were thus agreed, they receaued byttrayles of the gentle kyng  
of the prouince, and assigned the place of their colonie twelue  
myles from the sayde towne, in a fruitful and holisome soile.  
For their generall gouernour, they elected *Cortesius* the gouer-  
nour of the nauye, against his wyll as sum saye. For other  
magistrates to gouerne the cite which they intended to build  
he choose *Portucariens* and *Montegius* of whome we haue  
made mention before. They chose also certeyne messengers  
to sende to the kyng by the conduction of *Alaminus* the pylot.  
Furthermore, foure of the princes of this prouince offered the  
selues wyllyngly to go with othere men into Spaine to thin-  
rent to see othere landes and that kynges whole poure is soo  
great and whose auctoritie reacheth so farre. They broughe  
lykewise two women with them, which serued & obeyed the in  
all thinges after the maner of theyr countrey. The people of  
this nation is of broune or yelowyshe colour. Bothe the men  
and the women haue pendauntes of gold and precious stones  
hanginge at their eares. The men also, boore their nether  
lyppes full of holes from the hypermoste parte of the lyppe  
euen vnto the nethermoste parte of the gumme. At these they  
hange certeyne rynges and plates of golde and syluer fastned  
to a smaule and thynne plate lyinge within betwene the lippe  
and the gumme. At the byggest hole in the myddest of the lip,  
there hangeth a rounde plate of syluer as brode as the coppe  
cauled a *Corolyne*, and as thicke as a mannes fynger. I do  
not remember that euer I sawe any thinge that seemed more  
fylthy in myne eye. Yet do they thynke that there is nothing  
more cumly vnder the circle of the moone. Wherby we may  
see howe vainely mankynde wandereth in his owne blynde-  
nesse. The *Ethiopian* thincketh the blacke colour to be fayrer  
then the white: And the white man thinketh otherwise. They  
that are pointed, thinke that more decent then to weare a bush  
and they that weare beardes, iudge it a deformitie to be shau-  
en.

A newe colo-  
nie.

This Cortes-  
ius hath writ-  
ten a booke of  
these thinges

They weare  
rynges and  
plates at  
their lyppes.

The dyuers  
phantasies of  
men.

Syluer.

Note where  
gold and syl-  
uer are engē-  
dered.

I thinke this  
laton to be  
sum kynde of  
pure copper.  
or els copper  
that holdeth  
goide. For la-  
ton is an arti-  
ficial metal, &  
hath no natu-  
rall myne.  
They booke

then. As appetite therfore moueth, and not as reason persua-  
deth, men runne after vanities: And every prouynce is ruled  
by their owne sense, as writeth saint Ierome. From whence  
they haue their golde, we haue spoken sufficiently before.  
But as afore men manuepled where they had their syluer,  
they shewed them certayne high mountaynes whiche are con-  
tinually couered with snowe sayunge that at certeyne tymes  
of the yere, the onely toppes are seene bare bicause the snow  
is there molten by reason of the thicke and warme cloudes.  
The playnes therfore, or mylde, softe, and pleasaunt moun-  
taynes seeme to bynge forth the golde: And the rough crag-  
gye mountaynes with their coude valleyes, are the places  
where syluer is engendered. They haue also laton, wherof  
they make such maces and hammers as are used in the war-  
res. Dyggynge mattookes also, and spades: for they haue  
nother Iren nor Steele. But lette vs nowe speake of the pre-  
sentes sent into Spayne to the kyng: and firste of the booke.  
These procuratours therfore of the newe colonie of the pro-  
uynce of *Collusiana*, among other their presentes, brought al-  
so a great number of bookes, the leaues wherof are made of  
the inner ryndes or barkes of trees, thinner then eyther that  
of the elme or of the salowe. Theser they smere or annoint with  
the pytche of molten Bitumen, and while they be softe, exprend  
them to what forme them lysteth. When they be coude and  
harde, they rubbe them ouer with a certeyne playster. It is  
so be thoughte that they beate the playster into fine floure,  
and so temperynge it with sum byndynge moister, to make  
a cruste therewith vpon the leaues, wheron they wyte  
with any sharpe instrument, and blotte the same againe with  
a sponge or sum suche other thynge, as marchaunt men and  
noble mens stewardes are accustomed to do with their wy-  
tyng tables made of the woodde of fygge trees. The leaues  
of their booke are not set in order after the maner of doores,  
but are extended many cubettes in length. The matters whi-  
che they wyte, are conteyned in square tables: Not loose,  
but so bounde together with the tounge and flexible cley cau-  
led Bitumen, that they seeme lyke wooodden tables whiche had  
byn vnder the handes of cunnyng bookebynders. Which way  
so ener the booke lyeth open, there are two leaues seene and  
two sydes written, with as many lpyng hyd vnder them, ex-  
cepte the booke be unfoulded in length. For vnder one leafe

there are many leaues toynd together. The formes of their letters are nothyng lyke vnto ooures. But are muche more crooked and entangled, lyke vnto fysshhookes, knottes, snazes, flares, disc, fyles, and suche other muche lyke vnto the Egyptian letters, and written in lynes lyke vnto ooures. Here and there betwene the lynes, are pictured the shapen of men & dyuers beastes: And especially the Images of kynges and other noble men. Wherby it is to be thought that in suche bookes, the factes of their kynges are conteyned, as wee see the lyke emonge vs howe oure printers expresse the summe of histories in pictures, that men may therby be the more allured to bye suche bookes. The couerynges of their bookes are also artifycially wrought and paynted. When they are writte, they seeme to differre nothyng from ooures in forme. In these bookes are furthermoze comprehended their lawes, rites of ceremonies and sacrifices, annotations of Astro- nomie, accomptes, computations of tymes, with the maner of grafpnge, sowynge, and other thynges pertainyng to husbandry. They begynne the yeare from the goynge downe of the sevene starres cauled *Vergilke* or *Pleiades*: And counte theyr monethes accordyng to the moones. They name a moneth, *Tona*, of the moone. For in theyr language, they caule the moone *Tona*, they reken the dayes by the soones. Therefore as many daies as they name, they saye, so many soones. The soone in their tonge, is cauled *Tonatico*. They distribute the yeare (without any reason why) into twentie monethes: And the moneth into as many dayes. The temples whiche they frequent, they adourne with golden hangynges and other ornaments of golde and syluer with precious stones intermixte. At the springe of the daye, they perfume their temples with frankensence and make their prayers before they take in hande any other busynesse. But oh horrible crueltie. For inhabitauntes of all these tractes also, doo sacrifice chyldren to their Idoles in lyke maner as wee haue sayde before. At suche tyme as the seedes lye in the ground, and when the corne begynneth to shewe forth the eare, they destinate to their *Zenes* suche bondmen as they haue bought, or suche captiues as they haue taken in the warres, which they sacrifice after that they haue made them great chiere and decked them in precious apparell. Also before they sacrifice these

Theyr letters

what is con-  
teyned in  
theyr bookes.

Temples  
richly adour-  
ned.

prayer.

They sacri-  
fice chyldren  
& captiues.

## The thynde decade.

**A wronge  
way to heauē**

**Bluddy gods**

**Villa Ricca**

**Sivilla Nova.**

**The force of  
an owlde cr-  
four.**

**They priests  
lyue chaste.**

**Faggots of  
bones.**

poore wretches, they lead them about the towne whyle al the people salute them humbly and reuerently, assymyng that in shorte space, they shalbe receaued into the companye of the goddes. They honour their *Zemes* with an other sharp kind of deuotion: For they lete them selues bludde, epyther in the tonge, lyps, eares legges, thyghes, or brest, which they take in their handes and hurle it vpppe towarde heauen, soo that with the faule therof the pavement of the temple is all beset with bludde, wherby they thincke that their goddes are well pleased. From the newe colonie (cauled *Villa Ricca*) nyne myles distante, there is a towne of. xv. thousande houses, whiche thynhabitauntes caule *Cemobal*, but owre men named it *Sybilla*. The kynge of this towne had fyue men whiche he reserued to be sacrificyd. Whom when owre men wold haue deliuered, the kynge made humble request to them, sayinge that if they tooke awaye suche men as he had conecrated to be offered to the goddes, they shulde byynge hitte destruction to hym and all his kyngdome. For if owre sacrificys (sayd he) do cease, owre *Zemes* wyll take suche displeasure with vs that they wyll suffer owre corne, graffes, and frutes, to bee consumed of woozmes, scortched with drowth, destroyed with fluddes, or blasted with lychtynge. Owre men perceauynge his readinesse hersin, thought it beste to chose the least cruel, perceauynge that it was yet no tyme to disquyete their myndes, and therfore suffered them to exercise their accustomed ceremonies. And althoughe their priestes promysed them immortal glorie, eternall felicitye, and perpetuall conuersation with the goddes after the stormy daves of this lyfe, yet do they with heauy countenances glue eare to their promisses, and had rather be sette at lybertie. Their priestes are named *Quines* in the plurell number, and *Quin* in the singular. They leade a pure and chaste lyfe: And are honoured of the people with feare and reuerence. They make faggots of the bones of their enemyes which they haue taken in the warres, and hange vpppe the same at the feete of their *Zemes*, as tokens of the victories obteyned by their fauour. So these they adde certayne titles and superscriptions as testimonies of the same. This is straunge and woozthy to be noted, that when their children are a yeaue olde, the priestes in their temples with deuoute ceremonies and murmuringe woozdes,

poore

poize water in forme of a crosse vpon their heades with a cruet, whereby they seeme to baptise them. Neyther do they as the Jewes and Turkes, thinke their temples polluted if any of a straunge religyon bee present at their sacrificyes and other solemnities. Wee haue nowr spoken sufficiently of their bookes, temples, and superstitions. Lette vs nowe therfore coome to the other presentes which were brought to the kynge. Amonge these, there were twoo broode and rounde plates (whiche summe haue named the Images of the soonne and moone) the one of siluer and the other of gold in largeness and roundnesse muche lyke to the stones of hand mylles: yet but thynne, and in maner bothe of one circumference, that is. xxviii. spannes in circuite.

That of golde is of the weyght of thre thousande and .liiij. hundredeth Castellans, where as wee haue sayde before that a Castellane is a coyne of golde which weyeth more then a Du cate by a trient, that is the thyrd parte of a pounce. In the center of this, was the Image of a kynge of halfe a cuberte longe, sittyng in a trone and appareled to the knee, lyke vnto a maumerte, with such countenaunce as oovre paynters are wonte to paynte fayries or sprites. About the Image, were the Mapes of trees and floures, so that it seemed to sytte as though it had byn in a fielde. The other of syluer, was made to the same similitude, beinge also in maner of the same weyght, and both of pure metall. They brought lykewyse certeyne graynes of rude golde (that is, suche as was neuer molten) about the byggenes of fyrches or the pulse cauled linctels in token of plentie of natue golde. Also two cheynes of golde, wherof the one conteyned .liiij. lynkes in the whiche were set two hundredeth threescore and twoo fayre and cleare redde stones, and yet no rubyes: furthermore, a hundredeth fourescore and thre greene stones, and yet no emeraldes. Nevertheless, these are in lyke estimation with them as the other are with vs. At the edge of this cheine, there hange .xxviiij. golden belles, haupnge betwene euery of them, foure iewels of precious stones inclosed in golde, at euery of the which in lyke maner hange certeyne spangels of golde. The other cheyne consisteth onely of foure golden lynkes, beset rounde about with a hundredeth and two redde stones, and a hundredeth threescore and twelue greene stones, with .xxvi. golden belles,

curiously

A fygure of  
baptisme.

The presentes  
sent into  
Spayne to  
the kynge.  
Two Images  
of gold and  
syluer.

Two cheynes  
of gold mar-  
uelously byse-  
with precious  
stones and  
jewels.

## The thyerde decade.

**Baskyns.**

**Myters.**

**How can we  
then call the  
beastly or  
Barbarous.**

**If they had  
chaged their  
gold for owre  
Ire, they had  
not so soone  
byn subdued.  
Quylles.**

**Helmets.**

**A byrde.**

**Speares.**

**A scepter.  
A braselet.  
Shooes.**

curiously wrought and placed in comely order. In the verye myddest of the cheyne, are ten great precious stones inclosed in golde, at the whiche also hange a hundrethe golden pendantes of cunnyngge woorkemanhippe. They brought furthermoze twelue paire of leather baskynnes of diuers colours, summe imbroythered with gold and summe with syluer, with plates and iewelless of golde and precious stones inclosed, and at euery of them certayne golden belles. Also certeyne myters beset with precious stones of dyuerse colours, emonge the whiche summe are blewelike vnto saphires. Of crestes, gerdles, and fannes made of feathers, I woorde not what I shalde saye. But surely if euer the wyttes and inuentions of men haue deserued honoure or commendacion in suche artes, these seeme moste woorthye to bee had in admiration.

I do not maruaile at golde and precious stones. But am in manner astonysed to see the woorkemanhippe excell the substance. For I haue with woonderfyll eyes behelde a thousande formes and similitudes, of the which I am not able to write. And in my iudgement, I neuer sawe any thing whose bewtie myght so allure the eyes of men. As they manuepled at the naturall bewtie of the feathers of owre peacocks and pheasantes, so dyd we no lesse maruel at the artifcial bewtie of suche thinges as they make of feathers and quilles impaled with golde. For I sawe in manye of their woorkes, all manner of naturall colours even in the quilles wherof they make suche instrumentes. They brought also two helmettes garnysht with precious stones of a whiter than blew colour. One of these is edged with belles and plates of golde, and vnder euery bell two knobbes of golde. The other, besyde the stones wherewith it is couered, is lykewyse edged with xxv. golden belles and knobbes: & hath on the crest, a greene bird with the feete, bylle, and eyes, of golde. Also foure speares mucht lyke vnto fronte speares or yele speares, the woodde wherof is all couered with quilles of diuers colours manerly ioynted with golden wyers and plates intermyxt. Euery of these speares haue thre pikes, whose edges or teeth are all of precious stones made faste with wyers of golde. Of like woorkmanship they brought a great scepter beset with precious stones and belles of gold, also a braselet of gold, and shooes made of a hartes skynne, sowd & imbroythered with  
wyers,

golde wyers, with a white sole beneth. Furthermore a glasse of a bryght blew stone, and an other of white, both enclosed in golde. Likewise a precious stone of the kynde of them that are cauled *sphinges*, inclosed in golde. Furthermore the heade of a great lysarde, two great shelles, two duckes, the shapen of diuers other byrdes, foules, and fysshes, and all of masse golde. Furthermore. xxiii. rounde and square targettes, shieldes, and buckelers of golde, and syue of syluer. Also a triple crowne of plates and wyers of golde marueylously wrought with quilles and fethers of diuers colours, hauing on the fronte a plate of golde on the whiche is grauen the Image of the Idole *Zemes*. About this Image, hange foure other plates like crosses of gold in the whiche are grauen the heades of diuers beastes, as Lyons, tigers, woulues, and such other. They brought also the symilitudes of certeyne beastes made summe of rodde of wygges, and sum of woodde with the beastes owne skynnes thereon, and garnyshe with collers of laron belles. Likewise diuers shieres becaued of gossampyne cotton of sundry colours, wherof two are ryche ly frynged with golde and precious stones, and three other with quilles and fethers intermyrte with gossampyne cotton of sundry colours and chekered lyke the panes of a chesse boarde. Sum are on the one syde, of blacke, white, and redde colours: and on the other syde, plaine without any varietie. Other sum, are brought in lyke maner with variable colours with a wheele or circle of blacke in the myddell intermyrte with shynning fethers and sparkes of golde lyke starres. They brought also cloth of Aras or Verdure of marueylous work: manshyppes. Likewise a souldiers cloke suche as their prynces weare in the warres, with certeyne pryue coates of fence, and sundry iumentes perceyning to their heades, with also many suche other thynges more bewtiful to the eye then ryche or precious, wherof to enreate particularly, it shoulde be more tedious then prosyable. I lette passe here also to speake of many particular nauigations and of the traualles and daungers whiche they susteyned in the same, with the monstres and secretes of nature they sawe: whiche are all conteyned in the registers of oure Senate of the saynes of India, oure of the whiche I haue selected these fewe annotations, suche as seemed to me mosse meete to bee published.

For.

Glasses.

Byrdes, foules,  
les, & fysshes  
of golde.  
Targettes, &c.  
of gold.  
A crowne of  
golde.

Crosses.

Images of  
beastes.  
Shieres.

Cloth of Aras:  
ras.  
A souldiers  
clocke.

Registers of  
the saynes of  
India.

## The thyrd decade.

Thantonitie  
of the Lieue-  
tenaunt.

The Spany-  
ardes of Da-  
riena.

Sancta Maria  
Antiqua.

Petrus Arias  
whom the  
Spanyarden  
name pedria-  
rias.  
This sea the  
spanyarden  
caule Wardel  
Sur.

Notwithstanding these ryche and goodly presentes, yet were they that brought them, and also Cortesius the gouernour of the nauye and auncour of erectinge their newe colonie in those remote regions, adiudged by the Senate to haue doon ageinst ryght and equitie, in that they attempted the same withoute the aduice of the gouernour of the Ilande of Cuba who sente them forth by the kynges auctoritie, where as they dyd other thinges besyde their commissyon, y<sup>e</sup> although they wente to the kyng, not fyrst knowynge his pleasure whom the kyng had substitute his Lieutenaut in that Ilande. In so muche that by his procuratour, he accused them before the Senate as fugitiue theues and traytours. They on the other parte alleaged that they had dooen the kyng better seruyce then he: And that they had shewed sufficient obedience in appealing to the kyng as the hygher Iudge. But the gouernour required by the vertue of his commission and the kinges letters patentes that they myght be headed for their disobedience ageinst hym whom they knewe to be auctorised by the kyng. They againe replied that they had not offended the kyng, but rather deserued rewarde for their great dangiers and trauailes. Bothe the rewarde and punishment were deferred, and a daye appointed when bothe parties shoulde bee hard. Lette vs now therfore coome to the Spaniardes of Dariena, th inhabitours of the goulfe of Uraba in the supposed Continent. We haue sayde before that Dariena is a ryuer runnyng towards the Weste syde of the goulfe of Uraba. On the banke of this ryuer, the Spaniardes planted their fyrst colonie or habitation after they had banquished kyng Chemacus. This colonie they named Sancta Maria Antiqua, by reason of a howe whiche they made to the virgine Marie in the tyme of the battaile ageynst Chemacus. To these (as wee haue made mention in the ende of othere decades) was Petrus Arias sente with a thousande and two hundred men at the request of Vascus Nunnez Balboa, who was then the gouernour of Dariena, and the fyrst that found and discovered the large South sea heretofore unknowen. Wee haue also declared how at the arryual of Petrus Arias the newe gouernour, he deuided his armye into Centurions, that is, capitaines ouer hundredes, whom hee sent forth byuers waies. What tragedies folowed hereof, I wylle absolue in fewe wordes, because all are horrible and vnpleasaut

unpleasaunte. For sence we synphed oovre Decades, there hath byn none other then kyllynge, slepyng, murtherynge and accusynge. The kynge made *Vaschus* gouernoure but durynge his pleasure. His courage was such, and his factes so notorious, that he coulde not longe abyde the haupnes of *Petrus Arias*. To bee breefe, they faulynge oovre and discorde founded al thynges. *John Tacedus* the pulpitte feyer of the order of saynt Frances, dyd his vttermoste endeour to make them frendes, prompyng vnto *Vaschus* the dowghter of *Petrus Arias* to wyfe. But no meanes coulde be founde howe these two which bore the chiefe rule, myght bee brought to agreement. At the length the matter grewe to such extremitie, that *Petrus Arias* synpyng occasion of querelynge ageynste *Vaschus*, sent proccesse to the maiestates of the towne, wherby he commaunded them to strangle *Vaschus*, and fyue other which were chiefe capitaynes vnder hym: All agynge that they and their confederates conspired to rebel in the South sea: And that *Vaschus* hym selfe for that intente, had buylded and furnished foure shippes to search the south coastes of the supposed continent: Also that to his thre hundred and companions which he had with hym, he shulde speake woordes of this effecte as foloweth. My frendes, and felowes of my longe peynes and trauayles: Howe longe shall we be subiecte to the commaundement of other, sythe wee haue bydden the byunt and ouercumme thencerpise for the whiche this newe gouernour was sent with so great a multitude: Who can any longer abyde his pryde and insolentie: Lette vs therfore for howe these coastes whpyther so euer fortune shall dyue vs: And amonge these so many pleasaunt and fruteful prouinces of this large lande, let vs chose one in the whiche wee maye with libertie spende that portion of oovre lyues which yet remaineth. Who can synde vs, or shalbe able to profer vs hyolence: When these of the lyke woordes were declared to *Petrus Arias*, he sente to the Southe partes for *Vaschus*, wyllynge hym by the vertue of his commission to repayre to him forthwith. *Vaschus* obeyed, and at his comynge was caste in pryson: yet constantly denyng that euer he intended any suche thyng. Wytnelles were brought ageynst hym, and his wordes rehearfed from the begynnyng. To conclude, he was iudged woorthy death, and was put to execution. And this

Contention  
betwene *Vaschus*  
and *Petrus Arias*.

*Petrus Arias*  
commandeth  
that *Vaschus*  
be put to  
death.

*Vaschus* is  
accused.

*Vaschus* is  
put to death.

## The thyrde decade

is the rewarde wherewith the blynde goddessse oftentimes recompenseth such as haue susteyned great traunayles and daungours to bee hyghly in her fauoure. *Petrus Arias* leauynge his wyfe in *Dariena*, embarked hym selfe in the shippes left of *Vaschus*, to thintent to searche those coastes. But whether he be returned or not, we haue yet no certeyne knowleage. He hath also his fortune, yet is there an other gouernour assigned, whose name is *Lupus Sost*, the viccrope of the Ilandes of *Canarie*. What stomake *Petrus Arias* may haue yf he returne, let good men iudge. There was nothyng doone vnder hym woorthy glorie. Some thynke that he was at the begynnyng to slacke and negligent in his office, and not seuerely in correctynge errours and misorders. But we wyll leaue him and rehearse sumwhat wherof we haue byn lately informed as touchynge the great and deepe ryuer of *Dabaiba*, the whiche for the greatnes and largenes therof, oore men named *Granzdis*, that is, great, as we haue noted in oore Decades. This ryuer faulterh into the furthest corner of the goulfe of *Uraba* by seuen portes or moouthes as dooth the ryuer of *Nilus* into the Egyptian sea, whose large description yowe may also reade in oore Decades. That the mountaynes on euery syde about this ryuer, are ryche in golde, we haue learned by thinformacion of thinhabitantes, of whom we made diligent inquisition. *Vaschus*, and besyde hym other gouernoures and Lienerenautes, haue fourtymes entered into this ryuer with theyr armyes in battayle array, and with dyuers kyndes of shippes fyrste for the space of fortye myles, then fyrte, and at the last fourescore, at an other tyme also ouerthwarre the ryuer. Oifamefull chaunce and derestable cowardenes of oore men. A naked nation encounterynge with them that had apparell, the armed ageynste the vnarmed, had the ouerthrowe in manner in all condietes, and were other all slayne or wounded. They vse inueniented arrowes, and are suche experthe archers, that if they espye any place of theyr enemy bare or vnarmed, they wyll not lyghtly faile to stryke him there. They vse also many dartes, which in the tyme of the battayle they hurle so thicke a farre of, that they take the lyght of the sonne fro theyr enemies as it were with a clowde. They haue lykewise brode and longe swoordes made of a heauie and harde kinde of woodde, wherewith they feyght fiercely neare at hande.

Watchus

*Petrus Arias*

*Lupus Sost*

The great ryuer of *Dabaiba* or *Grandis*

The goulfe of *Uraba*.

The ryche mountaynes of *Dabaiba*.

Fierce & warlike people.

*Dartes*.

Swoordes of heauie wood.

Vaschus hym selfe receaued many woundes in encounterynge with them. And thus by reason of the fiercenes of these barbarians, the ryuer of *Dabaiba* is yet leste vnsearched. We wil nowe speake samwhat moze of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* (which the Spanyardes caule *Spagnuola*) the moother and chiefe of al other landes or Ilandes wherof we entended to wyre. In it the Senate is now restored, and fyue Judges assigned to giue lawes to all thynhabitauntes of those tractes. But in shorte tyme, they shall cease gatherynge of golde although there bee greate plentie: by reason they shall lacke labourers and mynners, forasmuch as thynhabitauntes whose helpe they vsed herein, are brought to a smaule number, consumed partly by warre, and many moze by faimen that yeare that they dygged by the rootes wherof they made theyr beste breade, and leste of sowynge theyr grayne of *Maizium* which is theyr common foode, supposinge herchy to haue dyuen oore men wote of the Ilande, who had by trayles sente them from Spayne. A great number of them also, dyed of newe and straunge diseases which in the yeare of Chryste a thousande fyue hundredeth and. xviij. consumed theym lyke rotten sheepe.

And (so sape the truch) oore mens vnfaciable desyre of gold, so oppressed these poore wretches with extreme labour and toyle, where as before they lyued pleasauntly and at lybertie, gyuen onely to playes and pastymes as dauncynge, fpyshynge, foulynge, and huntynge of lyttle connies, that many of them perished cuen for verpe anguyr of mynde, the whiche (with their vnaccustomed labour) are thynges of them selues suffy- cient to engender many newe diseases. But the kynge and the Senate haue nowe determyned that they be reduced to a people, and to gyue them selues onely to increase, and repla- ge of the gound: And that onely such as are bought or ta- ken wote of other regions, bee appointed to labour in the golde mynes. But it shall suffyce to haue sayde thus muche of the pestiferous hunger of golde. Therfore to speake of o- ther matters: It is a marueylous thyng to consyder howe all thynges increase and prosper in this Ilande. There are nowe. xxviii suger presses wherewith greate plentie of suger is made. The canes or recdes wherin the suger groweth, are bygger and hygher then in any other place: And are as bygge as a mans arme in the brayne, and higher then the

*Hispaniola.*  
Quiedus wyre  
teth that they  
are nowe. v.  
monasteries.

Newe and  
straunge disea-  
ses.

The suger of  
*Hispaniola*.

Suger of *Ma-*  
*leuna*.

## The thyrd decade.

A token of  
maruelous  
fruitfulness.

Cattayle.

wheate.

vines.

Cassia fistula.

Brasyle.  
Myrobalanes.

nature of a man, by the halfe. This is moze woonderfull,  
that where as in Valencia in Spaine (where a great quantitie  
of suger is made yearly) where so euer they applye them  
selues to the great increase thereof, yet doth euery roote bring  
foorth the not pastie syue, or syre, or at the moste seven of those  
redes: whereas in Hispaniola one roote beareth twentie, and  
oftentymes thirtie. Foure footed beastes and cattayle, are  
marueylously increased in this Ilande. And albeit that the  
rauenynge hunger of golde hath hitherto greatly hyndered  
othre men from tyllage of the ground, yet is there great plentie  
of wheate, whiche prospereth so wel that it yeldeth sum  
tyme a hundred fowle: And this especially on the hylles or  
rydges of the mountaynes prospectynge towarde the North.  
Vines do also increase here with no lesse fruitfulness. What  
shuld I speake of the trees that beare *Cassia fistula*, brought first  
into this Iland from the other Ilandes neare vnto the suppo  
sed Continent, as we haue noted in ovr decades? There is  
nowe suche plentie hercof, that after a fewe yeares we shall  
haue a pounce of the price that wee paye nowe for an ounce.  
Of the brasyle and myrobalane trees, with other innumerable  
privileges and benefites whiche nature hath plentifully  
giuen to this blessed Iland, we haue spoken suffi  
ciently in ovr decades, yet haue I thought good  
to reapeate part of the same, because I thinke  
that the wittes of many readers haue dis  
tracted from the weyght of great af  
faires, to the recordation of such  
pleasaunt thynges. And yet I do not  
doe not suche thynges as  
are sauerie, engendered  
redyousnesse, soo that a precious mate  
riall bee adourned with a  
precious besture,  
H. J. R. J. S.

EXEMPLAR BVLLAE SEV  
DONATIONIS, AVTORITATE  
CVIVS, EPISCOPVS ROMANVS ALEXAN-  
der eius nominis sextus, concessit et donauit Castella-  
lae regibus & suis successoribus, regiones & Insu-  
las noui orbis in Oceano occidentali.

Hispanorum nauigationibus  
reperitas ..



ALEXANDER EPISCOPVS,  
seruus seruorum Dei, Charissimo in  
Christo filio Ferdinando Regi, et  
Charissimæ in Christo filiaæ Eliza-  
beth Reginaæ Castellæ, Legionis,

Aragonum, Sicilia, et Granata, illustribus, salute  
tem et Apostolicam benedictionem.

Inter cætera Diuinæ maiestati beneplacita opera  
et cordis nostri desiderabilia, illud profecto potissi-  
mū existit vt fides catholica & Christiana religio no-  
stris præsertim temporibus exaltetur ac vbilibet  
ampliatur ac dilatetur, animarumq; salus procure-  
tur, ac barbaræ nationes deprimantur et ad fidē  
ipsam reducantur. Vnde cum ad hanc sacram Pe-  
tri sedem Diuina fauente clementia (meritis licet im-  
paribus) euocati fueremus, cognoscentes vos tanq̃  
veros catholicos reges et principes: quales semper  
fuisse nouimus, & a vobis præclare gesta, toti pene

orbi notissima demonstrant, nedum id exoptare, sed  
omni conatu, studio, et diligentia, nullis laboribus,  
nullis impensis, nullisq; parcendo periculis, etiam  
proprium sanguinem effundendo efficere, ac omnem  
animum vestrum, omnesq; conatus ad hoc iam du-  
dum dedicasse, quemadmodum recuperato regni  
Granatæ a tyrannis de Sarracenorum hodiernis tem-  
poribus per vos, cum tanta Diuini nominis gloria  
facta, testatur. Digne ducimur non immerito, et  
debemus illa vobis etiam sponte, ac fauorabiliter con-  
cedere, per quæ huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile ab  
immortali deo acceptum propositum, indies feruen-  
tiori animo ad ipsius dei honorem et Imperij Chris-  
tiani propagationem, prosequi valeatis. Sane acce-  
pimus q; vos qui dudum animum proposueratis a-  
liquas insulas et terras firmas remotas et incognitas,  
ac per alios hætenus non repertas, quarere et inue-  
nire, vt illarum incolas et habitatores ad colendum  
redemptorem nostrum et fidem catholicam profi-  
tendum reduceretis, hætenus in expugnatione et re-  
cuperatione ipsius regni Granatæ plurimum occu-  
pati, huiusmodi sanctum et laudabile propositum  
vestrum ad optatum finem perducere nequiuiſtis:  
Sed tamen sicut Domino placuit, regno predicto  
recuperato, volentes desiderium vestrum adimplere,  
dilectum filium Christophorum Cololum virum  
vtiq;

vtiq; dignum et plurimum commendatum ac tanto negotio aptum, cum nauigijs et hominibus: d similia instructis, non sine maximis laboribus, ac periculis, et expensis destinastis vt terras firmas et Insulas remotas et incognitas, huiusmodi per mare vbi haftenus nauigatum non fuerat, diligenter inquireret. Qui tandem (Diuino auxilio facta extrema diligentia in mari Oceano nauigantes) certas insulas remotissimas et etiam terras firmas quæ per alios haftenus repertæ non fuerant, inuenerunt. In quibus plurimæ gentes pacifice viuentes, et (vt asseritur) nudi incedentes, nec carnibus vescentes, inhabitant: Et vt præfati nuncij vestri possunt opinari, gentes ipsæ in Insulis et terris prædictis habitantes, credunt vnum deum creatorem in Cœlis esse, ac ad fidem catholicam amplexandum et bonis moribus imbuendum, satis apti videntur: Spesq; habetur, qd si erudirentur, nomen Saluatoris Domini nostri Iesu Christi in terris et insulis prædictis facile inducetur. Ac præfatus Christophorus in vna ex principalibus Insulis prædictis, iam vnã turrin. satis munitam, in qua certos Christianos qui secum iuerant, in custodiam et vt alias Insulas ac terras firmas remotas et incognitas inquirerent posuit, construi et ædificari fecit. In quibus quidem Insulis et terris iam repertis, aurum, aromata, et aliæ quamplurimæ  
res.

res, præciosæ diuersi generis et diuersæ qualitatis reperiuntur. Vnde omnibus diligenter, et præsertim fidei catholicæ exaltatione et dilatatione (prout decet Catholicos Reges et Principes) consideratis, more progenitorum vestrorum claræ memoriæ Regum, terras firmas et insulas prædictas, illarumq; incolas et habitatores, vobis diuina fauente clementia subiicere et ad fidem Catholicam reducere proposuistis.

Nos itaq; huiusmodi vestrum sanctum et laudabile propositum plurimum in domino commendantes, ac cupientes vt illud ad debitum finem perducat, et ipsum nomen saluatoris nostri in partibus illis inducatur, hortamus vos quamplurimum in domino, et per sacri lauacri susceptionem, qua mandatis Apostolicis obligati estis, et p viscera misericordiæ Domini nostri Iesu Christi attente requirimus, vt cum expeditionem huiusmodi omnino prosequi et assumere prona mente orthodoxæ fidei zelo intendatis, populos in huiusmodi Insulis et terris degentes, ad Christianam religionē suscipiendum inducere velitis et debeatis, nec pericula nec labores vllō vnq; tempore vos deterreant, firma spe fiduciaq; conceptis q; Deus omnipotens conatus vestros foeliciter prosequetur. Et vt tantī negotij prouintiam Apostolicæ gratiæ largitate donati, liberius et audacius assumatis, motu proprio non ad vestram vel

alterius pro vobis super hoc nobis oblata petitionis instantiam, sed de nostra mera liberalitate, et ex certa scientia, ac de Apostolicæ potestatis plenitudine, omnes Insulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas versus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et construendo vnam lineam a polo Arctico, scilicet Septentrione, ad polum Antarcticum, scilicet Meridiem, siue terræ firmæ et insulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ sint versus Indiam aut versus aliam quamcunq; partē quæ linea distet a qualibet Insularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis versus Occidentem et Meridiem. Itaq; omnes Insulæ et terræ firmæ repertæ et reperiendæ, detectæ et detegendæ a præfata linea versis Occidentem et Meridiem, quæ per alium Regem aut Principem Christianum non fuerint actualiter possessæ vsq; ad diem natiuitatis Domini nostri Iesu Christi proxime præteritum, a quo incipit annus præsens Milleßimus Quadringentesimus Nonogessimus tercius, quando fuerunt per nuncios et capitaneos vestros inuentæ aliquæ prædictarum Insularum, Autoritate omnipotentis Dei nobis in beato Petro concessa, ac vicariatus Iesu Christi qua fungimur in terris, cum omnibus illarum dominijs, ciuitatibus, castris, locis, et villis, iuribusq; et iurisdictionibus ac pertinentijs vniuersis,

vobis heredibusq; et successoribus vestris (Castellæ  
et Legionis regibus) in perpetuum tenore præsentis  
um donamus, concedimus, et assignamus: Vosq;  
et hæredes ac successores præatos illarum Domi-  
nos, cum plena, libera, et omnimoda potestate, au-  
toritate, et iurisdictione, facimus, constituimus, et  
deputamus. Decernentes nihilo minus per huius-  
modi donationem, concessionem, et assignationem  
nostram, nullo Christiano Principi qui actualiter  
præfatas Insulas et terras firmas possederit vsq; ad  
prædictum diem natiuitatis Domini nostri Iesu  
Christi ius quæsitum, sublatum intelligi posse aut  
auferri debere.

Et insuper mandamus vobis in virtutæ sanctæ  
obedientiæ (vt sicut pollicemini et non dubitamus  
pro vestra maxima deuotione et regia magnanimitate  
vos esse facturos) ad terras firmas et Insulas  
prædictas, viros probos et Deum timentes, doctos,  
peritos, et expertos ad instruendum incolas et ha-  
bitatores præfatos in fide Chatholica et bonis mo-  
ribus imbuendum, destinare debeatis, omnem de-  
bitam diligentiam in præmissis adhibentes. A qui-  
buscumq; personis, cuiuscunq; dignitatis, etiam im-  
perialis et regalis status, gradus, ordinis vel condi-  
tionis, sub excommunicationis latæ sententiæ pœna  
quam eo ipso si contra fecerint incurrant, districtius

inhia

inhibemus ne ad Insulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas versus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et construendo lineam a polo Arctico ad polum Antarcticum, siuæ terræ firmæ et Insulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ sint versus Indiam aut versus aliam quamcunq; partem quæ linea distet a qualibet Insularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis versus Occidentem et Meridiem vt præfertur, pro mercibus habendis vel quauis alia causa accedere præsumat absq; vestra auctoritate et successorum vestrorum prædictorum licentia speciali: Non obstantibus constitutionibus et ordinationibus Apostolicis, cæterisq; quibuscunq; in illo in quo imperia et dominationes et bona cuncta procedunt: Confidentes q; dirigente Domino actus vestros, si huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile propositum prosecutioni, breui tempore cum foelicitate et gloria totius populi Christiani, vestri labores et conatus exitum foelicissimum consequentur. Verum quia difficile foret præsentis literas ad singula quæq; loca in quibus expediens fuerit deferri, volumus ac motu et scientia similibus decernimus, q; illarum transsumptis manu publici notarij inderogati subscriptis, et sigillo alicuius personæ in ecclesiastica dignitate constitutæ, seu curiæ ecclesiasticæ munitis, ea prorsus

V u. ii.

fides

671  
fides in iudicio et extra ac alias vbilibet adhibeatur,  
quæ præsentibus adhiberetur, si essent adhibitæ vel  
ostensæ.

Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc pagi-  
nam nostræ commendationis, hortationis, requisita-  
tionis, donationis, concessionis, assignationis, con-  
stitutionis, deputationis, decreti, mandati, inhibi-  
tionis, et voluntatis infringere vel ei ausu te-  
merario contraire. Si quis autem hoc at-  
tentare præsumperit, indignationem  
omnipotentis Dei, ac beatorum  
Petri et Pauli Apostolorum  
eius, se nouerit in-  
cursurum.

Datum Romæ apud sanctum Pe-  
trum: Anno incarnationis Do-  
minicæ. 1493. quarto nonas  
Maij: Pontificatus  
nostri anno  
primo.

The coppie of the Bull or donation, by chauntorie wher  
of, Pope Alexander the fyrte of that name, gaue and  
graunted to the kynges of Castyle and theyr succes-  
sours the Regions and Ilandes founde in the  
Weste Ocean sea by the navigations of  
the Spanyardes.



Alexander by Hoppe, the seruaunte of the ser-  
uauntes of God: To oure moste deare belo-  
ued sonne in Christ Kyng Ferdinand, And  
to oure deare beloued daughter in Christ  
Elizabeth Queene of Castyle, Legion, Ara-  
gon, Sicilie, and Granata, most noble Prin-  
ces, Bretynge and Apostolical benediction.

Amonge other woorkes acceptable to the diuine maiestie  
and accordynge to oure hartes desyre, this certeinly is the  
chiefe, that the Catholyke fayth and Christian religion, spe-  
cially in this oure tyme may in all places bee crasted, ampli-  
fied, and enlarged, wherby the health of soules may be pro-  
cured, and the Barbarous nations subdued and brought to  
the fayth. And therefore wheras by the fauoure of gods cle-  
mencie (although not without equall desertes) we are cauled  
to this holy seate of Peter, and vnderstandynge you to bee  
true Catholyke Princes as we haue cuer knowne you, and  
as youre noble and woorthy factes haue declared in maner to  
the hole worlde in that with all your Audie, diligence, and  
industrie, you haue spared no trauayles, charges, or perils,  
aduenturyng euen the shedding of your owne bludde, with  
applyng your hole myndes and endeuours here vnto, as  
your noble expeditions achyued in recoueryng the kyngdome  
of Granata from the tyrannie of the Saracens in these our  
dayes, doo playnely declare your factes with so great glozpe  
of the diuine name. For the whiche as we thinke you woorthy,  
so ought we of oure owne free wyl fauorably to graunt  
you all thynges wherby you maye dayely with more seruent  
myndes to the honoure of god and enlargynge the Christian  
empire, prosecute your deuoute and laudable purpose most ac-  
ceptable to the immortall God. We are credably informed  
that wheras of late you were determyned to seeke and synde-  
recte nye Ilandes & firme landes farre remote and vknowne  
and

## The bull or donation

(and not heretofore found by any other) to chintent to bringe  
thinhabitauntes of the same to honoure oovre redemer and to  
professe the catholpke fayth, you haue hethereto byn much oc-  
cupied in thexpugnation and reconuerie of the kyngedome of  
Granata, by reason wherEOF youme coulde not bringe youre  
sayde laudable purpose to thende despyed. Neuertheleste as  
it hath pleased almyghy god, the foresayde kyngedome be-  
inge reconuered, wyllpng toaccomplyshe your sayde desyre, you  
haue, not without great laboure, perelles, and charges, ap-  
pointed oovre welbeloued sonne Christopher Colonus (a man  
certes wel commended as moste worthy and apte for so great  
a matter) well furnyshed with men and shippes and other ne-  
cessaries, to seeke (by the sea where hereterto no manne hath  
sayled) suche firme landes and ylandes farre remote and hi-  
thereto vnknowne. Who (by gods helpe) makynge diligente  
searche in the Ocean sea, haue founde certeyne remote ylan-  
des and firme landes whiche were not heretofore founde by  
any other. In the which (as is sayde) many nations inhabite  
lyuynge peaceably and goynge naked, not accustomed to eate  
fleete. And as farre as youre messengers can coniecture,  
the nations inhabitynge the foresayde landes and ylandes,  
belue that there is one god creatoure in heauen: and seeme  
apte to be brought to chimbasinge of the catholpke faythe  
and to be imbued with good maners: by reason wherEOF, we  
may hope that if they be well instructed, they may easely bee  
induced to receaue the name of oovre sauour Iesu Christ. We  
are further aduertised that the forenamed Christopher hath  
nowe builded and erected a fortresse with good munition in  
one of the foresayde principall ylandes in the which he hath  
placed a garrison of certeyne of the Christian men that wente  
thither with him: aswell to chintent to defende the same, as  
also to searche other ylandes and firme landes farre remote  
and yet vnknowne. We also vnderstande, that in these lan-  
des and ylandes lately founde, is great plentie of golde and  
spices, with dyuers and many other precious thynges of sun-  
dry kyndes and qualities. Therfore al thynges diligently con-  
sidered (especially chimplifynge and enlargynge of the catho-  
like fayth, as it behoueth catholike pynces folowynge the  
exmples of youre noble progenitours ol famous memorie)  
wheras youme are determyned by the fauour of almyghtie god

to

to subdue and bringe to the catholyke fayth thynhabitauntes  
of the foresayde landes and Ilandes.

Wee greatly commendynge this yowre godly and laudable  
purpose in ovr lord, and desirous to haue the same broughe  
to a dewe ende, and the name of ovr sauoure to be knowne  
in those partes, doo exhorde yowe in ovr Lord and by the  
receauynge of yowre holy baptisme wherby yowe are bounde  
to Apostolicall obedience, and earnestly requyre yowe by the  
bowels of mercy of ovr Lord Iesu Christ, that when yowe  
intende for the zeale of the Catholyke faythe to prosecute the  
sayde expedition to reduce the people of the foresayde landes  
and Ilandes to the Christian religion, yowe shall spare no la-  
bours at any tyme, or bee deterred with any perils, concea-  
lynge firme hope and confidence that the omnipotent godde  
wyll gyue good successe to yowre godly attemptes. And that  
beinge autorysed by the priuilege of the Apostolycall grace,  
yowe may the more freely and bouldly take vpon yowe then  
therpyple of so greate a matter, we of ovr owne motion, and  
not eyther at yowre request or at the instant petition of any o-  
ther person, but of ovr owne mere liberalitie and certeyne  
science, and by the fulnesse of Apostolycall power, doo gyue,  
graunt, and assigne to yowe, yowre heires and successours,  
al the firme landes & Ilandes founde or to be found, discovered  
or to be discovered toward the West & South, drawyng a line  
frothe pole Arctike to the pole Antartike (that is) fro the north  
to the Southe: Conteynyng in this donation, what so euer  
firme landes or Ilandes are founde or to bee founde toward  
India, or toward any other parte what so euer it bee, beinge  
distant from, or without the foresayd lyne drawen a hundred  
leagues toward the West and South from any of the Ilan-  
des which are commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*.  
All the Ilandes therfore and firme landes, founde and to be  
founde, discovered and to be discovered from the sayde lyne  
toward the West and South, such as haue not actually bin  
heretofore possesed by any other Christian kynge or pryncce  
vntyll the daye of the natiuitie of ovr Lord Iesu Christ  
laste passe, from the which begynnerh this present yeare be-  
inge the yeare of ovr Lord, M. CCC. lxxxiii. when so-  
euer any such shall be founde by your messengers & capytaines,

Wee by the autoritie of almyghtie God graunted vnto vs.

## The bull or donation

In sapienter, and by the office which we beare on the earth in the steede of Iesu Christe, doo for ever by the tenure of these presentes, gyfte, graunte, assigne, unto you, your heires, and successours (the kynges of Castyle and Legion) all those landes and Ilandes, with theyr dominions, territories, cities, castels, towres, places, and byllages, with all the ryght, and iurisdictiones therunto perteynyng: constitutyng, assignyng, and deputyng, you, your heires, and successours the lordes thereof, with full and free poure, autoritie, and iurisdiction. Decreeinge neuerthelesse by this othere donation, graunt, and assignation, that from no Christian Prince whiche actually hath possessed the foresayde Ilandes and firme landes unto the day of the natiuite of othere lord before sayde theyr ryght obteyned to bee vnderstande hereby to be taken away, or that it ought to be taken away.

Furthermore wee commaunde you in the vertue of holy obedience (as you haue promysed, and as wee doubt not you will doo vpon mere deuotion and princely magnanimitie) to sende to the sayde firme landes and Ilandes, honeste, vertuous, and lerned men, suche as feare God, and are able to instructe the inhabitants in the Catholyke fayth and good manners, applyinge all theyr possible diligence in the premises.

We furthermore strenghtly inhibite all maner of persons, of what state, degree, order, or condition so euer they bee, although of Imperiall and regall dignitie, vnder the payne of the sentence of excommunication whiche they shall incurre if they doo to the contrary, that they in no case presume without speciall licence of you, your heires, and successours, to trauaile for marchaundies or for any other cause, to the sayde landes or Ilandes, founde or to bee found, discovered, or to bee discovered, toward the west & south, drawing a line fro the pole Arctike to the pole Antartike, whether the firme lands & Ilandes found & to be found, be situate toward India or toward any other parte beinge distant from the lyne drawn a hundred leagues toward the west from any of the Ilandes commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*: Notwithstanding constitutions, decrees, and Apostolycall ordinances what so euer they are to the contrary: In him from whom Emperres, dominions, and all good thynges doo procede: Trustyng that almyghtie god directyng you enter

piles

prizes, yf yowre folowe yowre godly and laudable attemptes,  
yowre laboures and trauayles herein, shall in shorte tyme ob-  
teyne a happy ende with felicitie and glozie of all Christian  
people. But forasmuch as it shulde bee a thyng of great dif-  
ficultie these letters to bee caried to all suche places as shuld  
bee expedient, we wyll, and of lyke motion and knowleage  
doo decree that whither so euer the same shalbe sent, or wher  
so euer they shalbe receaued with the subscription of a com-  
mon notarie therunto requyred, with the seale of any person  
constitute in ecclesiasticall dignitie, or suche as are autorysed  
by the ecclesiasticall courte, the same sayth and credite to bee  
gyuen thereunto in iudgement or els wher, as shulde bee ex-  
hibyted to these presentes.

It shall therefore bee lawefull for no man to infringe or  
rathely to contrarie this letter of obre commendation, exhor-  
tacion, requeste, donatyon, graunte, assignation, constitu-  
tion, deputacion, decree, commaundement, inhibiti-  
on, and determination. And yf any shall presume  
to attempte the same, he owght to knowe that  
he shall thereby incurre the indignation  
of almyghtie God and his holye  
Apostles Peter and

Paule. (.)

(:)(\*)

**I** Given at Rome at saynt Peters: In the  
yeare of thincarnation of owre Lord  
M, cccc. LXXXIII. The fourth  
day of the moneth of Maye,  
the fyrste yeare of  
owre seate,

( ) ( )

0

Et. l.

## To the reader.



Although amonge dyuers which haue wrytten of the Ocean and Weste Indies, there is none to be compared to Peter Martyr of Angleria, in declaringe by philosophical discourses the secrete causes of naturall affectes bothe as touchynge the lande, the sea, the starres, and other straunge woorkes of nature, yet forasmuche as of later dayes those countreys haue byn better known and searched, and dyuers suche particular and notable thynges founde as are conteyned in the hystories of later wryters, amonge the number of whom, Gonzalus Ferdinandus Oviedus, (whom lerned Cardanus compareth to the ancient wryters) is doubteles the chiefe, I haue therfore thought good to ioyne to the Decades of Peter Martyr certeyne notable thynges which I haue gathered owte of his booke intituled the Summarie or abbigement of his generall hystorie of the west Indies wrytten in the firme lande of the same in the citie of Sancta Maria Antiqua in Dariena (where he dwelte and was gouernoure many yeares) And dedicated to The Emperours maiestie, as maye appeare by the epistle followinge.

To the most hygh and myghtie prince Charles the fyfte of that name: Emperour of Rome, Kyng of Spayne, and of the two Sicillies, of bothe the sydes of the streight of Faro, Kyng of Hierusalem and Hungarie, Duke of Burgonie and Earle of Flaunders, Lorde and inheritor of the firme lande and Ilandes of the Weste Ocean. &c. Gonzalus Ferdinandus Oviedus his most humble seruant  
wysheth health and perpetual felicitie.



These thynges whiche principally pferue and mayntayne the woorkes of nature in the memories of men, are hystories and bookes composed of the same. Amonge the whiche certes those are esteemed moste trewe and autentike which haue byn wrytten by wyttie and experient men.

men well-trauayled in the worlde, as faythfull wytnesses of  
 suche thynges as they haue partly scene and byn partly in-  
 formed by credible persons. Of this mynde and opinion was  
 Plinie, who better then any other autoure hath wyrtten in  
 xxxvii. bookes al that pertyneth to the naturall hystorie, con-  
 teyned al in one volume dedicated to Vespasian Theemperour.  
 Wherein, as a prudente historiographer, he declarerh suche  
 thynges as he had harde: Attributyng the seconde autoritie  
 to suche as he had redde in autoures that wrote before hym:  
 And thyzdely ioyned to the same hystorie, such thynges as he  
 hym selfe had scene as moste certeyne testimonie. Whose exem-  
 ple I folowynge, wyl in this my bzeefe summarie reduce and  
 represent to your maiesties memorie such thynges as I haue  
 scene in your Emppre of the West Indies alwell in the Is-  
 landes as in the firme lande of the Ocean sea, where I haue  
 serued nowe moze then twelue yeares in the place of suruoy-  
 er of the golde mynes by the commaundemente of the Catho-  
 lyke kynge Don Fernando the fyfte of that name and graundfa-  
 ther vnto your maiestie, to whom god gaue great fame and  
 glorie. Sense whose death also I haue lykwis serued and  
 trust whyle the rest of my lyfe yet remayneth, to serue your  
 maiestie as shall please you to commaunde. As touchynge  
 which thynges and such other lyke, I haue more largely wit-  
 ten in a hystorie begunne as sone as my age was ripe to take  
 suche matters in hande. Wherein furthermoze I haue made  
 mention of suche thynges as haue chaunced in Spaine, from  
 the yeare. 1494. vnto this tyme. Addynge also thereunto  
 suche thynges woorthy memorie as I haue obserued in other  
 realmes and prouinces where I haue trauayled. And haue  
 likewise particularly wyrtten the lyues and woorthy actes of  
 the catholyke Princes of famous memorie Don Ferdinando and  
 lady Elizabeth his wyfe to theyr last dayes. After whose fru-  
 ition of heauently Paradyse, I haue noted suche thynges as  
 haue chaunced in your most fortunate succession. Not omit-  
 tyng particularly to wypte a large booke of such thynges as  
 haue seemed moste woorthy to bee noted as touchynge your  
 maiesties Indies. But for asmuche as that volume remaineth  
 in the citie of San. Domingo in the Islande of Hispaniola where I  
 dwell and am placed in houtholde with wyfe, chyliden,  
 and famelie, I haue brought no more with me of that my wy-  
 tyng

## The epistle.

tynges then I beare in memorie. Determyninge notwithstandinge  
 dynges for yowre maiesties recreation to make a breefe rehear  
 sall of certeyne notable thynges wherof I haue more largely  
 entreated in my sayde general historie, and such as may seeme  
 moste woorthie to bee redde of yowre maiestie. Of the which,  
 although a great parte haue byn wyrtten by other who haue  
 also scene the same, yet perhappes they are not so exactly and  
 particularly described as of me, forasmuche as in maner all  
 that traually into these Indies haue greater respecte to luke  
 and gayne then diligently to searche the woorkes of nature  
 toherunto I haue byn euer naturally inclyned, and haue ther  
 fore with all possible endeuour applyed myne eyes and intel  
 ligence to fynde the same. And this presente Summarie shall  
 not bee contrary or dyuers from my larger historie wherin (as  
 I haue sayde) I haue more amplye declared these thynges:  
 but shal onely more breiefely expresse the effect therof vntyl such  
 tyme as Godde shal restore me to myne owne house, where I  
 may accomplishe and fynishe my sayd general historie. Where  
 vnto to geue the fyrst principle, I say that Don Christopher  
 Colonus (as it is well knowen) beinge the fyrste Admyrall of  
 this India, discovered the same in the dayes of the Catho  
 lyke kynge Don Ferdinando and the ladye Elizabeth his  
 wyfe, graundfather and graundmother vnto yowre maiestie:  
 In the yere. 1491. And came to *Barzalona* in the yere  
 1492. with the fyrst Indians and other shewes and proofes  
 of the great ryches and notice of this west Empire. The whiche  
 gyfte and benefyte was suche, that it is vnto this daye,  
 one of the greatest that euer any subiect or seruant hath done  
 for his prince or countrey, as is manifeste to the hole worlde.  
 And to saue the trowth, this shall doubtlesse bee so commodi  
 ous and profitable vnto the hole realme of Spayne, that  
 I repute hym no good Castilian or Spanyarde that doothe  
 not recognise the same. And (as I haue sayde before) foras  
 much as in my sayde generall historie I haue more largely in  
 treated of these thynges, I intend at this present only breife  
 ly to rehearse certeyne especiall thynges, the whiche surely  
 are verie fewe in respecte of the thousandes that myght bee  
 sayde in this behalfe. Fyrst therfore I wyl speake somewhat  
 of the nauigation into these parties. Then of the generati  
 on of the nations whiche are founde in the same, with the  
 repres

rytes, customes, and cerimonies. Also of beastes, foules, byrdes, woozmes, sylbes, seas, ryuers, spynges, trees, plantes, herbes, and dyuers other thynges which are engendered boothe on the lande and in the water. And forasmuche as I am one of thorder and company of them that are appointed to returne into these regions to serue yowre maiestie, yf therfoze the thynges conteyned in this booke shall not bee distincte in such order as I promised to perfozme in my greater woozke. I desyre yowre maiestie to haue no respecte hereunto, but rather to consyder the noueltie of suche straunge thynges as I haue herein declared, whiche is the chiefe ende that moued me to write. Protestyng that in this Summarie I haue wrytten the trweth of suche thynges as coome to my remembraunce: wherof not onely I my selfe can testifye, but also diuers other woozthy and credible men which haue bin in those regions, and are nowe presente in yowre maiesties court. And thus it shal suffice to haue saide thus much vnto yowre maiestie in maner of a prohemie vnto this presente worke which I most humbly desyre yowre maiesties thankfully tacepte, as I haue wrytten it faythfully.

**Of the ordinary nauygation from Spayne  
to the Weste Indies.**



The nauygation whiche is commonly made from Spayne to the Weste India, is from Seuille, where yowre maiestie haue yowre house of contractation for those partes, with also yowre officers therunto perteynyng, of whom the capitaines take their passeporte and lycence. The patrones of suche shippes as are appoynted to these vyages, imbarke theym selues at *San Luea di Barameda*, where the ryuer *Cuadalciber* entereth into the Ocean sea. And from hence they folowe their course toward the Ilandes of Canarie. Of these seuen Ilandes, they commonly touche two, that is, eyther *Grancanaria* or *Gomera*. And here the shippes are furnyshed with freshe water, suell, cheefe, biese, and suche other thynges whiche may seeme requisite to be added to suche as they brynge with them oute of Spayne, from Spayne to these Ilandes, is commonly

eygh.

## The historie

eyght dayes saylinge, or lytle more or lesse. And when they  
 are arryued there, they haue sayled two hundereth and fyfte  
 leaues, whiche make a thousande myles, accompryng foure  
 myles to a leaque as is their maner to reckon by sea. Depar-  
 tyng from the sayde Ilandes to folowe their course, the ship-  
 pes tary. xxv. dayes, or a lytle more or lesse, before they see  
 the fyrste lande of the Ilandes that lye before that whiche  
 they caule *La Spagnuola* or *Hispaniola*. And the lande that is com-  
 monly fyrste scene, is one of these Ilandes whiche they caule  
*Ogni sancti Marigalante* (or *Galanta*) *La Desseada* (otherwise cauled *Des-  
 derata*) *Matunino*, *Dominica*, *Guadalupe*, *San. Christoual*, or summe other of  
 the Ilandes wherof there are a great multitude lying aboute  
 these aforesaide. yet it sumtymes so chaunceth that the ship-  
 pes passe withowte the syght of any of the sayde Ilandes, or  
 any other that are within that course vntyll they coome to  
 the Iland of *sancti Iohannis*. or *Hipaniola*, or *Iamaica*, or *Cuba*, whi-  
 che are before the other. It may also chaunce that they ouer-  
 passe all these likewise, vntyll they faule vppon the coastes  
 of the fyrme lande. But this chaunceth when the pylote is  
 not well practised in this nauigation or not perfecte in the  
 trewe carde. But makynge this viage with experte maryners  
 (wherof there is nowe great plentie) one of the sayde fyrste  
 Ilandes shall euer bee knowne. And from the Ilandes of  
*Tanarie* to one of the fyrste of these, the distaunce is nyne  
 hundredeth leaues by saylynge, or more. And from hense to  
 the cite of saynte Dominike which is in the Ilande of *Hispa-  
 niola*, is a hundredeth and fyfte leaues: So that from Spayne  
 hitherto, is a thousand and thre hundredeth leaues. yet for  
 asmuche as sumtimes the nauigation procedeth not so direct-  
 ly, but that it chaunceth to wander euer on the one syde or on  
 the other, wee may well saye that they haue nowe sayled a  
 thousande and fyue hundredeth leaues and more. And if the  
 nauigation be slowe by reason of summe hynderaunce, it com-  
 monly chaunceth to be fynished in. xxxv. or. xl. dayes. And  
 this happeneth for the moste parte, not accompryng the ex-  
 tremes: that is, eyther of them that haue slowe passage, or  
 of them that arryue in verie shorte tyme. For wee owghte to  
 consyder that which chaunceth most commonly. The returne  
 from those partes to Spayne, is not fynished without lon-  
 ger tyme, as in the space of. l. dayes, or a lytle more or lesse.

Reuer:

Neuerthelesse in this present yeare of. 1525. there came foure shippes from the Ilande of *San Dominico* to *Sainte Luca* in *Spaine*, in. xxv. dayes. But (as I haue sayd) we ought not to iudge of that whiche chaunceth seldome, but of that which happeneth most ordinarily. This nauigation is very safe and much blessed, euen vnto the sayd Ilande. And from this to the firme land, the shippes trauerse diuers wayes for the space of five, syxe, or seuen dayes saylynge, or more, accordyng to the partes or coastes whither they directe their vyages, forasmuche as the sayde fyne lande is verie great and large, and many nauigations and vyages are directed to dyuers partes of the same. Yet to the fyne land whiche is nearest to this Iland, and lyeth directly agaynst *San Dominico*, the passage is fynished in the fyne aforesayde. But it shalbe muche better to remytte all this to the carde of these nauigations and the newe Cosmographie, of the whiche no parte was knowen to *Ptolemy* or any other of the owlde wytters.

Of twoo notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies: And of the great rycheesse brought from thence into *Spayne*.



After my vniuersall description of the historie of the Indies, there cometh to my remembrance two thynges chiefly to be noted as touchyng the empire of this West Indies perceyvyng to the dominion of your maiesty. And these besyde the other particulars wherof I haue sufficiently spoken, are to be considered as thynges of great importaunce. Wherof, the one is the shortenesse of the way & with what expedition your maiesties shippes maye passe beyonde the mayne fyne lande of these Indies into the newe Southe sea cauled *Mare del Sur* lyng beyond the same. And this to thintent to coome to the Ilandes where the spices growe, besyde the other innumerable rycheesse of the kingedomes and signidities whiche confine with the sayde sea where are so many people and nations of dyuers tonges and maners. The other thinge, is to consider howe innumerable treasures are entered into *Spayne* by these

these Indies, as well that which commeth dayly from thence as also that is continually to be looked for, bothe of golde and perle & other marchaunties which are first brought into this yowre realme of Spaine before they are seene of other nations or traded into other realmes. Wherby not onely this yowre realme is greatly enriched, but also the benefyte thereof redoundeth to the great profyte of other countreys which are neare therunto. A testimonye of this, are the double ducades which yowre maiestie haue caused to be coyned, and are disparsed throughout the hole worlde. But after they are once passed out of this yowre realme, they neuer returne againe because they are the best curraunt money of the worlde. And therfore if after they haue byn in the handes of straungers they chaunce to be returned ageyne into Spaine, they coome disguised in an other habite, and are diminished of the goodnesse of their golde, with the stampe of yowre maiestie chaunged: So that if it were not for their suche defaeynges in other realmes for the cause aforesayde, there shulde not be founde so great quantitie of fyne golde of the coyne of any prynce in the worlde as of yowre maiesties. And the cause of all this, are yowre Indies.

Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkynge in theym.



This particular of the mynes of gold, is a thing greatly to be noted: And I maye muche better speake hereof then any other man, forasmuche as there are nowe twelue yeares paste sence I serued in the place of the surueier of the meltinge shoppes perteynyng to the golde mynes of the firme lande, and was the gouernour of the mynes of the Catholyke kyng Don Ferdinando, after whose departure from this lyfe, I serued longe in the same toome in the name of yowre maiestie: By reason wherof, I haue had great occasion to knowe howe golde is founde and brought oute of the mynes: And do knowe ryght well that this lande is exceedinge ryche: hauinge by my accompte and by the labour of my Indians and slaues, gathered and fyned a great portion of the same: and may therfore the better asseure this  
by

by testimonte of syght. For I am well assured that in no part of *Castilla del oro*, that is, golden Castile (otherwise cauled *Beragua*) no man coulde aske me of the mynes of golde, but that I darre haue bounde my selfe to haue discovered them in the space of ten leagues of the countrey where it shalbe haue byn demaunded me, and the same to bee verie ryche. For I was alowed all maner of charges to make seatche for the same. And although golde be founde in maner euery where in these regions of golden Castile, yet ought we not in euery place to bestowe the trauell, and charge to get it owte, bycause it is of lesse quantitie and goodnesse in sum place then in sum. And the myne or helyne whiche oughte to be folowed, oughte to bee in a place whiche may stande to saue muche of the charges of the labourers, and for the administration of other necessary thinges that the charges may bee recompensed with gaynes. For there is no doubte but that golde shalbe founde more or lesse in euery place. And the golde whiche is founde in golden Castile, is verie good, and of. xxii. caracres or better in fynesse. Furthermore, helyde this great quantitie of golde whiche I haue sayde to be founde in the mynes, there is also from day to day found or otherwise gotten, great treasure of suche wrought gold as hath byn in the custodie of the subburd Indians and their kynges, aswell of suche as they haue gauen for their fyne and raunsome, or otherwise as frendes to the Christians, helyde that whiche hath byn violently taken from the rebelles. But the greatest parte of the wrought gold whiche the Indians haue, is base and holdeth somewhat of copper. Of this they make bracelets and chaines and in the same they close their iewels whiche their women are accustomed to weare and esteeme more then all the riches of the worlde. The maner howe golde is gathered, is this, eyther of suche as is founde in *Zanana*, that is to saye in the plaines and riuers of the champian countrey being without trees, whether the earth be with grasse or without. Or of suche as is summymes founde on the land without the riuers in places where trees growe, so that to coome by the same, it shalbe requisite to cutte downe many and great trees. But after whiche so euer of these two maners it be founde, eyther in the riuers or ruptures or breaches of waters, or elles in the earth, I wyll shewe howe it is founde in bothe these places,

and howe it is seporate and pourged. Therfore when the myne or veine is discouered, this chaunceth by serchpynge and prouynge in suche places as by certeyne sygnes and token do appeare to sayfull men apte for the generation of golde and to holde golde. And when they haue founde it, they folowe the myne and labour it, whether it be in the ryuer or in the plaine as I haue sayde. And if it bee founde on the plaine, fyrst they make the place verie cleane where they intende to dygge. When they dygge eyght or ten foote in length and as muche in breadth: but they goo no deeper then a spanne or two, or more as shall seeme best to the maister of the myne, dyggyng equally. Then they washe all the earthe whiche they haue taken oute of the sayde space. And if herein they fynde any golde, they folowe it. And if not, they dygge a spanne deeper, and washe the earth as they dyd before. And if then also, they fynde nothyng, they continue in dyggyng and washyng the earth as before until they come to the hard rocke or stone. And if in fyne they fynd no gold there, they folowe no further to seeke golde in that place, but go to an other parte. And it is to be vnderstande, that when they haue founde the myne, they folowe it in digginge in the same measure in leuell and deapth untill they haue made an ende of all the myne which that place conteyneth, if it appere to be riche. This myne ought to consist of certen secte or pales in length or breadth accordyng to certeyne ordets determined. And within that compasse of earth, it is not lawfull for any other to dygge for golde. And where as endeth the myne of hym that fyrste founde the gold, immediatly it is lawfull for any other man that wyl, with a staffe to assigne hym selfe a place by the syde of the same, inclosyng it with stakes or pales as his owne. These mynes of *Zawina* (that is such as are found in the playnes) owght euery to bee sought neare to some ryuer or brooke or springe of water, or dyke, or standyng poole, to chende that the golde maye bee washed, for the whiche purpose they vse the laboure of certeyne Indians as they doo or ther in dygginge of the myne. And when they haue dygged oute the myne, they fyl certeyne traies with that earth, whiche the other Indians haue the charge immediatly to receaue at their handes, and to carie those trayes of earth to the water where it maye bee washed. yet do not they that byynge it, washe

haſte it, but deliuer it to other, puttynge it owte of their owne trays into theirs which they haue ready in their handes to receaue it. Theſe waſhers for the moſt parte, are the Indian women, bycauſe this woozke is of leſſe paine and trayayle then any other. Theſe women when they waſhe, are accuſtomed to ſpyre by the waters ſyde, with their legges in the water euen vpp to the knees or leſſe as the place ſeruech their purpoſe. And thus holdyng the trays with earth in their handes by the handles thereof, and puttyng the ſame into the water, they moue them rownde aboute after the maner of ſyſtyng, with a certeyne apteneſſe in ſuche ſorte that there entereth no more water into the trays then ſeruech their turne: And with the ſelfe ſame apte mouyng of their trays in the water, they euer auoyd the foule water with the earth owte of the one ſyde of the veſſell, and receaue in cleane water on the other ſide thereof. So that by this meanes by little and lytle, the water waſteth the earth as the lygher ſubſtance owte of the trays, and the golde as the heavier matter reſteth in the bottome of the ſame, beyng rounde and hollowe in the myddelt lyke vnto a harbars baſen. And when all the earth is auoyded, and the golde gathered together in the bottome of the trays, they putte it a parte, and returne to take more earth, whiche they waſhe continually as before. And thus they that labour in this woozke, do gather dayly ſuche portion of golde as ſhal pleaſe god to graunte to the partrons of theſe Indians and ſuche other as trauaile in the ſame. Furthermore, it is to bee noted that for euery two Indians that waſhe, it is requiſite that two other ſerue them to byng earth from the myne, and other two to breake the ſame ſmaule and fylle their trays therewith. Alſo beſyde theſe labourers, it is neceſſarye that there bee other people in the place where they woozke and reſte in the nyght. Theſe are ſuche as make their breade, and prouyde for byttayles and other neceſſaries. So that to conclud, there are in all, fyue perſons ordinarily aſſigned to euery traye of waſhers.

There is an other maner of woozkyng the mynes in riuers or brookes of runnyng waters. And this is, that in auyppoyng the water of his courſe, after that the beddes of the riuers are drye and betterlye emptied, they fynde golde amonge the breaches, cleftes, and ryftes of ſtones, and among

all that is in the bottome of the chanell, and where naturally the riuier runneth of greatest force. So that it chaunceth sum tyme, that when the bedde of the riuier is good and ryche, they fynde in it great quantitie of golde. And therefore some maner ought to vnderstande for a generall rule, as it appeareth in facte, that all golde is engendered in the toppes and hyghest places of the mountaynes: And in continuance of time is by lytle and lytle broughte downe to the vales and plaines by howes of rayne, and the faules of sprynges, riuers, and brookes hangge their originall in the mountaynes and descendynge from the same, notwithstandinge it bee oftentimes founde in the plaines farre from the mountaynes. But when it chaunceth to be founde in great quantitie, it is for the moste parte amonge the mountaynes and in the riuers, or their branches, more then in any other parte of the plaine. And in these two maners is it commonly founde moste abundantly. And for the better profe that golde is engendered on hyghe, and is broughte downe into the lowe places, I haue one great token therof whiche causeth me to beleue it for certeyne. And this is to consyder that coles neuer putrefie nor corrupte vnder the ground, if they be made of stronge woodde. Wherby it chaunceth that diggyng the earth by the fouldes or indented places of the mountaynes, or on the sydes, and breakynge a myne in the earth where it had not byn broken before, and hauing nowe dygged one or two or thre poles in measure, the myners founde certeyne coles of wood vnder the same leuel where they found gold. And this I saye in the earth whiche was taken for a myne: that is to saye, such as had not before byn opened for any myne. The which coles coulde not naturally bee engendred there, or enter in by any meanes. But when the superficiall parte of the earth was equal with the leuel where the coles were founde, it is lyke that the coles were left there by sum occasion of fyre, & that they fastned there in tyme, and that afterwarde in longe continuance of tyme, they were by lytle and lytle covered with the earth, which the often howers of rayne washed from the mountaynes, so that by the course of yeares the earth ouergrewe the coles vnto the sayde leuell and measure whiche had before tyme byn the superficiall parte of the earth where the coles and golde were founde together: wherby it maye appeare that

that the golde was no more engendered there then were the  
coles, but brought thither from the mountaynes by the fau-  
les of waters as we haue sayde : forasmuche as the moun-  
taynes are the matrices and bowels of all ryche metals. Fur-  
ther and besyde this, I say that in how much more the gold  
is gonne farre from the naturall place of his generation to  
the place where it is founde, it is so muche the more purified  
and fyned and of a better caracte. And the nearer that it is  
founde to his proper myne or vaine where it is engendered, it  
is so muche the baser, fouler, and more crude, and of a bas-  
ser alay and caracte, and dothe wast so much the more in mel-  
tynge, and remayneth more brickle. Sumetyme there are  
founde graynes of golde of greate quantitie and of greate  
weyght aboute the earth and sumetymes also vnder the earth.  
And the greatesse of all other that was founde to this daye  
in the Indies, was that which was loste in the sea about the  
Ilande *Beats*, whiche weyed thre thousande and two hun-  
dred Castellans of golde, which are in value four thousand  
a hundred, thirtie and eyght ducades of golde, which waye  
one *Arroua* and seven pounde, or .xxii. pounde after .xii. oun-  
ces to the pounde, whiche make threescore and foure markes  
of golde. And I sawe in the yere .1515. in the handes of  
Pythel Bassamonre treasurer to yovre maiestie, two graines  
of the which one wayde seven poundes, which are .xiii. mar-  
kes, and are in value aboute threescore and fyue ducades of  
golde every marke. The other was of .x. markes, which are  
fyue poundes of lyke value, and of very good golde of .xxii.  
caractes and better. There are also founde many other  
greate graynes, although not equall vnto these in byggenes.  
And forasmuche as I haue spoken of golde, I haue thought  
good to declare somewhat howe the Indians can very excel-  
lently gyfte suche vesselles of copper and base golde as they  
make. For they can gyue them so fayre and holystyng a co-  
loure, that all the masse whiche they gyfte, appeareth as  
though it were golde of .xxii. caractes and better. This coloure  
they gyue with a certeyne herbe as though it were brought  
by the arte of any golde smyth of Spayne or Italie, and wold  
of them bee esteemed as a thyng of greate ryches, and a se-  
crete maner of gyldeyng. And for as muche as I haue spo-  
ken sufficiently of the myne of golde, I wyl nowe speake  
somewhat

A marke, for  
pounde of  
viii ounces  
summa .xii. li.  
weyght .viii.  
ounces, after  
xii. ounces to  
the .li.

## The historie

sumwhat of copper because I haue made mention thereof. This met all is founde in many of the Ilandes of the Indies and also in the firme lande: And is founde dayly in greate quantitie holdynge sumwhat of golde. But for the desyre that oovre men haue to golde, they nothyng esteeme the copper, although there myght great commoditie and profute be had therby, and also by other metals whiche they nothyng regarde excepte syluer whiche is founde abundantly in that parte of the firme lande which is cauled newe Spayne. But of this it shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche, because I haue more particularly entreated of these thynges in my generall hystorie of India.

### Of the maner of fyshynge for perles.



The Indians exercise this kynde of fyshynge for the moste parte in the coastes of the North in Cubagua and Cumana. And manye of theyn which dwell in the houses of certeyne particular lordes in the Ilandes of San Dominico and Sancti Iohannis, resort to the Ilande of Cubagua for this purpose. Theyr custome is to go fyue, syxe, or seuen, or more in one of theyr canoes or barkes etly in the moornyng to some place in the sea there about where it appeareth vnto the that there shulde bee greate plentie of those shell fyshes (which some caule muscles and some oysters) wherin perles are engendered. And there they plunge them selues vnder the water, euen vnto the bottome, sayynge one that remainethe in the Canoa or boate which he keepeth styll in one place as neare as he can, lookynge for theyr retorne oovre of the water. And when one of them hath byn a good whyle vnder the water, he ryseth vp and commeth swymmyng to the boate, enterynge into the same, and leauynge there all the oysters, whiche he hath taken and brought with hym. For in these, are the perles founde. And when he hath there rested hym selfe a whyle, and eaten parte of the oysters, he returneth ageyne to the water, where he remainethe as longe as he can endure, and then ryseth ageyne, and swimmeth to the boate with his pray, where he resteth hym as before, and thus continueth course by course, as doo all the other in lyke maner, being all moste

moste experte swymmers and dyuers. And when the nyght draweth neare, they retorne to the Ilande to theyr houses, and presente all the oysters to the master or stewarde of the house of theyr lord who hath the charge of the sayde Indians. And when he hath gyuen them sumt what to eate, he layeth by the oysters in safe custodie butyll he haue a great quantite therof. Then hee caueth the same fysher men to open them. And they fynde in euery of theym pearles or her great or smaule, two or thre or foure, and sumtymes fyne and fyne, and many smaule graines accordyng to the lyberalitie of nature. They saue the pearles bothe smaule and great whiche they haue founde: And eether eate the oysters if they wyl, or caste them away, hauynge so great quantitie therof that they in maner abhorre them. These oysters are of hard fleshe, and not so pleasant in eatyng as are oysters of Spayne. This Ilande of *Cubagua* where this maner of fyshing is exercised, is in the Northe coaste, and is no bygger then the Iland of Zelande. Oftentymes the sea increaseth greatly, and muche more then the fyshers for pearles wold, bycause where as the place is very depe, a man can not naturally rest at the bottome by reason of the aboundaunce of aery substance whiche is in hym, as I haue oftentymes proued. For althoughe he may by byolence and force, descende to the bottome, yet are his feete lyfted vp agayne so that he can continue no tyme there. And therfore where the sea is verye deepe, these Indian fyshers vse to tye two great stoones aboute them with a corde, on euery syde one, by the weyght wherof they descend to the bottome and remayne there butyll them lyfeth to ryse againe: At which tyme they vnlose the stoones, and ryse vppre at their pleasure. But this their aprenesse and agilitie in swimming, is not the thyng that causeth men moste to maruaile: But rather to consyder howe many of them can stande in the bottome of the water for the space of one hole houre, and summe more or lesse, accordyng as one is more apte herunto then an other. An other thyng there is whiche seemeth to me very straunge. And this is, that where as I haue oftentymes demaunded of summe of these lordes of the Indians, if the place where they are accustomed to fyte for pearles beyng but lytle and narrowe, wyl not in shorte tyme bee vnterly withowt oysters if they consume them so faste, they al and w<sup>o</sup> red me,

## The hystorie

Of this reade  
more largely  
in the deca-  
des.

By the com-  
putation of ye  
mice. iiii. grat-  
nes make a  
cassette.

red me, that althoughe they bee consumed in one parte, yet if they go a fylling in an other parte or an other coaste of the Ilande, or at an other contrary wynd, and continue fylling there also vntill the oysters be lyke wyse consumed, and then retorne ageyne to the fyrste place, or any other place where they fyllbed befoze and empyied the same in lyke maner, they find the ageine as ful of oysters as though they had neuer bin fyllbed. Wherby we may iudge that these oysters eyrher res moue from one place to an other as do other fysshers, or elles that they are engendered and encrease in certeyne ordinarie places. This Iland of *Cumana* and *Cubagua* where they fysh for these perles, is in the twelue degree of the part of the said coaste which inclineth toward the North. Lyke wyse pearles are founde and gathered in the South sea cauled *Mare del Sur*. And the pearles of this sea are verpe bygge. yet not so bigge as they of the Ilande of pearles cauled *de las perlas*, or *Margavies*, whiche the Indians caule *Tararequi*, lyinge in the goulfe of saincte Michael, where greater pearles are founde and of greater pryce then in any other coaste of the North sea, in *Cumana*, or any other parte. I speake this as a trewe testimonie of syght, haupng byn longe in that South sea, and makinge curious inquisition to bee certainly informed of al that perteyneth to the fylling of pearles. From this Ilande of *Tararequi*, there was brought a pearle of the faithyon of a peare, wayinge. xxvi. carattes, whiche *Petrus Arias* had amonge a thousande and soo many poundes weight of other pearles whiche hee had when capitayne Gaspar Morales (befoze *Petrus Arias*) passed to the saide Ilande in the yere. 1515. whiche pearle was of great pryce. From the saide Ilande also, came a great and verpe rounde pearle, whiche I brought owte of that sea. This was as bygge as a smaule pellet of a stone bowe, and of the weight of. xxvi. carattes. I bought it in the cite of *Panama* in the sea of *Sur*: And paide for it lyxe hundred and fyftie tymes the weyght therof of good gold, and had it thre yeaeres in my custodie: and after my retorne into Spaine, sould it to therle of *Nauſao Marqueſe* of *Zenete*, great chamberleyn to powre maiestie, who gaue it to the *Marqueſe* his wyfe, the ladye *Mencia* of *Mendozza*. I thyncke verely that this pearle was the greatest, fayrest, and roundest that hath byn scene in those parties. For yolore

*Sur*.

that this ought to vnderstande that in the coaste of the Sea of  
*Sur*, there are founde a hundreth greate pearles rounde after  
the fashion of a peare, to one that is perfectly rounde and  
greate. This Ilande of *Tetarequi*, which the Christians caule  
the Ilande of pearles, & other caule it the Ilande of *Roures*,  
is founde in the eyght degree on the southe syde of the firme  
lande in the prouince of golden Castyle or *Beragud*. And these  
are the coastes of the firme lande where pearles are founde  
euē vnto this day. I vnderstande also that there are perles  
founde in the prouince and Ilandes of *Cartagenia*. And sence  
your maiestie appoynted me a gouernour and capytayne, I  
haue made further searche, and am aduertised that pearles  
are founde in dyuers other places as about the Iland of *Code*  
go which lyeth ageynst the mouth of that porte of the Ilande  
of *Cartagenia* which the Indians caul *Coro*. The which Iland  
and porte, are on the North syde in the tenth degree of the  
coastes of the firme lande.

**C** Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians  
haue with the deuyl, and howe they receaue  
answere of hym of thynges to coome.



When the Indians begynne theyr battayle, or  
go to any combat or attempte any other greate  
matter, they haue certeyne electe menne whom  
they reuerendely esteeme and caule them *Tequins*,  
whiche in theyr tongue is as muche to saye as  
masters. Notwithstandinge that they caule  
euery man that is cunnyng in any science, by the same name,  
as fyfthers, fowlers, hunters, or makers of nettes. These  
*Tequins* therefore, they caule the masters of theyr answers by  
cause they speake with *Tuyra*, that is the deuyl, and byng  
them aunswere what he saythe, eyther as touchyng suche  
thynges as they haue to doo or shall chaunce to them the day  
folowynge, or many dayes to coome. For the deuyl beinge  
so auncient an Astronomer, knowethe the tymes of thynges  
and seeth howe they are naturally directed and inclined. And  
makethe theym beleue that they come so to passe by his ordy-  
naunce, as though he were the lord and mouer of all that is  
and shalbe: And that he gyueth the day lyght and rayne: cau-  
seth

## The hystorie

seth tempest and ruleth the stations of tymes, gyuyng lyfe or takynge awaye lyfe at his pleasure. By reason wherof, the Indians being deceaued of hym, and seing also such effectes to coome certeynely to passe as he hath tolde them before, beleeue hym in all other thynges and honoure hym in many places with sacrifices of the bludde and liues of men and odoriferous spices. And when god disposeth the contrary to that whiche the deuell hath spoken in oracle wherby he is proued a lyer, he causerh the *Tequins* to perswade the people that he hath chaunged his mynde and sentence for summe of their synnes, or deuiseh summe suche lye as lyketh hym beste, beynge a skylfull maister in suche subtile and craftie deuises to deceyue the symple and ignorant people whiche hath smaule defence against so myghty and craftie an aduersarie. And as they caule the deuell *Tuyra*, so doo they in many places caule the Christians by the same name, thynkyng that they greatly honoure them thereby, as in dedde it is a name very feete and agreeable to many of them, haupnge layde aparte all honestie and vertue, lyuyng moze lyke dragons then men amonge these symple people.

Before thynhabitauntes of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* had receaued the Christian faith there was amonge them a secte of men whiche liued solytarily in the desertes and wooddes and ledde their lyfe in sylence and abstinence moze straighly then euer dyd the phylosophers of *Pythagoras* secte, absteynyng in lyke maner from the eatyng of al thynges that liue by bludde contented onely with suche frutes, herbes, and rootes as the desertes and wooddes mynistred vnto them to eate. The professors of this secte were cauled *Places*. They gaue them selues to the knowleage of naturall thynges, and vled certeine secrete magicall operations and superstitions wherby they had familiaritie with spirites whiche they allured into theyr olone bodies at suche tymes as they wolde take vppon them to tell of thynges to coome, whiche they dyd in maner as foloweth. When any of the kynges had occasyon to caule any of them owte of the desertes for this purpose, their custome was to sende them a porcion of their fyne breade of *Caxabbi* or *Maizium*, and with humble requeste and sure to desyre them to tell them of suche thynges as they woulde demaunde. After the request graunted and the place and daye appoynted, the *Places*

<sup>place</sup> cometh with twoo of his disciples waytynge on hym,  
 wherof the one byngeth with hym a bestell of a secrete wa-  
 ter, and the other a lytle syluer bell. When he commeth to  
 the place, he lyereth downe on a rounde seate made for hym  
 of purpose. Where haupnge his disciples the one standynge  
 on the one hande and the other on the other euen in the pre-  
 sence of the kyng and certeyne of his nobles (for the common  
 people are not admytted to these misteries) and turnynge his  
 face toward the deserte, he begynneth his inchauntment and  
 cauleth the spirit with loude voyce by certeyne names which  
 no man vnderstandeth but he and his disciples. After he hath  
 dooen thus a while, if the spirit yet deserte his commynge,  
 he dynketh of the sayde water, and therewith watterly hotte  
 and furious, and inueterly and turnerh his inchauntemēt,  
 and lettech hym selfe bludde with a thorne, marueilously tur-  
 moyleng hym selfe as wee reade of the furious Sybilles not  
 ceasynge vntill the spirit bee coome: who at his commynge  
 entereth into hym and ouerthroweth hym as it were a gre-  
 ybunde shulde ouerturne a squerell. Then for a space, he see-  
 meth to lye as though he were in great payne or in a rapte,  
 wonderfully tormentynge hym selfe, durynge whiche agonie,  
 the other disciple shaketh the syluer bell continually. Thus  
 when the agonie is passe and he lyeth quietly (yet withoute  
 any sence or feelyng) the kyng or summe other in his steade,  
 demaundeth of hym what he desyret to knowe, and the spi-  
 rit answereth by the mouth of the rapte <sup>Places</sup> with a directe  
 and perfecte answer to all poyntes. In so muche that on a  
 tyme certeyne Spanyardes beyng present at these misteries  
 with one of the kinges, and in the Spayne tounge demau-  
 dyng the <sup>Places</sup> of their shippes whiche they looked for owte  
 of Spayne, the spirit answered in the Indian toonge, and  
 toulde them what daye and houre the shippes departed from  
 Spayne, how many they were, and what they brought with:  
 owte saylunge in any poynte. If he be also demaunded of the  
 eclipse of the soonne or moone (whiche they greatly feare and  
 abhorre) he geueth a perfecte answer, and the lyke of tem-  
 pestes, famen, plentie, warre or peace, and suche other thin-  
 ges. When all the demaundes are synpshed, his disciples  
 caule hym aloude, rynging the syluer bell at his eare and blo-  
 wyng a certeyne powder into his nosehylles wherby he is

rapſed as it beare from a deade ſcape beinge yet ſumewhat  
heauy headed and ſaynt a good while after. Thus bringe he  
geyne rewarded of the kynge with more breade, he departed  
ageyne to the deſertes with his diſciples. But ſence the Chri-  
ſtian ſayth hath byn diſperſed throwghe oute of the Iſlandes,  
theſe deuyllyſhe practiſes haue ceaſed; and they of the mem-  
bers of the deuyl, are made the members of Chriſt by bap-  
tiſme, forſakynge the deuyl and his workes, with the vaine  
curioſitie of deſyre of knowlege of thynges to come, wher-  
of for the moſt part it is better to be ignorant then with ver-  
ation to knowe that which can not be auoyded.

Furthermore, in many places of the ſume lande, when  
any of the kynges dye, all his houſholde ſervantes, alſo well  
women as men which haue continually ſerued hym, kyll them-  
ſelues, beleauynge as they are taught by the deuyl, that  
they which kyll them ſelues when the kynge dyeth, go with  
hym to heauen and ſerue hym in the ſame place and office as  
they dyd before on the earth while he lyued. And that alſo  
that reſuſe ſo to doo, when after they dye by theiꝝ naturall  
death or otherwiſe, theiꝝ ſoules to dye with theiꝝ bodies  
and to bee diſſolued into aſhes and become nothyng aſide the  
ſoules of hogges, byrdes, or fiſhes or other brute beaſtes.  
And that only the other may enioy the priuileage of immorta-  
litie for euer to ſerue the kynge in heauen. And of this falſe  
opinion cometh it that they which ſowe corne or ſet rootes  
for the kynges breade, and gather the ſame, are accuſtomed  
to kyll them ſelues that they may enioy this priuileage in hea-  
uen. And for the ſame purpoſe, cauſe a portion of the graine  
of Maizum and a bundle of Iucca (wherof they breade is made)  
to bee buryed with them in theiꝝ graues that the ſame maye  
ſerue them in heauen if perhappes there ſhuld lacke ſeeds to  
ſowe. And therfore they take this with them to begyn with  
all, vntyl Tyra (who maketh them all theſe ſayre promiſſes)  
proude them of greater quantitie. This haue I my ſelfe ſene  
in the toppe of the mountaynes of Guaturo, where hauynge in-  
pyſon the kynge of that prouince (who rebelled from thobe-  
dience of powre maiestie) and demaundyng of hym to whom  
perreyned thoſe ſepulchres or graues whiche I ſawe in his  
houſe, he answered that they were of certeyne Iudians whi-  
che ſawe them ſelues at the death of his father. And becauſe  
they

they are oftentimes accustomed to burye greate quantities of  
brought golde with them, I caused two graues to bee ope-  
ned, wherein was nothyng fownde but a vessell full of the  
grayne of Maizium, and a bundell of Iucca as I haue sayde.  
And demaundayng the cause hereof of the kinge and the other  
Indians, they answered that they that were buried there,  
were the labourers of the grounde, and men skilful in sow-  
yng of seedes and makynge of breade, and seruauntes to the  
kynge's father. And to thende that they, soules shoulde not  
dye with theyr bodyes, they sowe them selues at the deathe  
of the kynge theyr master to lyue with hym in heauen. And  
to thincnt that they myght serue him there in the same office  
they reserued that Maizium and Iucca to sowe it in heauen.  
Wherunto I answered them in this maner. Beholde howe  
your *Tyrant* deceaueth you: And howe all that he teacheth  
you is false: you see howe in so long a tyme sence they are  
deade, they haue not yet taken awaye this Maizium and Iucca  
which is nowe putrified and woorth nothyng, and not lyke  
to bee sowne in heauen. To this the kynge replied, sayinge.  
In that they haue not taken it awaye nor sowne it in heauen,  
the cause is that they chaunced to fynde enowgh there, by rea-  
son wherof they had no neede of this. To this errour manie  
thynges were sayde which seemed of lytle force to remoue  
hym from his false opinion, and especially any such as at that  
age are occupped of the deuyl, whom they paynt of the selfe  
same forme and coloure as he appeereth vnto theym in diuers  
shapes and formes. They make also Images of golde, copper  
and woodde, to the same similitudes in terrible shapes and so  
variable as the paynters are accustomed to paynt them at the  
feete of saynte Michaell the archangell or in anye other place  
where they paynt them of most horrible portiture. Likewyse  
when the deuyl greatly intendeth to feare theym, he thre-  
neth to sende them great tempestes which they call *Furacans*  
or *Hurricanes*, and are so vehement that they ouerthrowe ma-  
ny houses and great trees. And I haue seene in montaynes  
full of many and great trees, that for the space of thre quar-  
ters of a league the mountayne hath beene subuerbed, and the  
trees ouerthrowen and plucked oute of the carthe with the  
rootes: a thyng doubtelesse so fearefull and terribble to be-  
hold, that it may verely appere to be doen by the hand of the  
deuill

## The hystorie

Demyll. And in this case the Christian men ought to consider with good reason, that in al places where the holy sacrament is reserved, the sayd tempestes are no moze so obstragious, or so perelous as they were wonte to bee.

**O**f the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled *Torrida zona* or the Equinocciall: and of the dyuers seasons of the yeaere.

**T**he landes and regions that are neare about the clymes of the Equinocciall lyne, are naturally hotte, althowghe they bee otherwise temperate by the diuine prouidence. And therfore suche heathe or fyre as is taken and kylled in these regions, can not bee preserved from putrefaction except it be roasted, sodden, or perboylde, the same daye that it is kylde. And wheras I haue sayde that such regions are naturally hot, and yet temperate by the prouidence of god, it is so in dedde. And therfore not without cause the auncient auctours were of opinion that the burnt lyne or *Torrida zona* where passeth the lyne of the Equinocciall, shoulde be inhabitable by reason the soonne hath greater dominion in that place then in any other of the sphere, remaynyng continually betwene the two tropykes of Cancer and Capricorne. For when in these regions the earth is opened or dygged fro the superficial parte therof to the depth of a mans heygth, it is founde temperate. And within this space, the trees and plantes fasten and spreade their rootes, and no dieper. Euen dyng the same as farre in breadth in the ground as do there branches in the ayer: And enter no dieper into the ground then I haue sayde, bycause that beneath the depth of the said space of a mans heygth, the earth is verie hotte, the upper parte beinge temperate and verie moyste aswell by reason of the aboundaunce of water whiche fauleth from heauen vpon that earth at certeyne ordinarie seasons of the yeaere, as also for the multitude of great ryuers, brookes, springes and marishes, wherby the myghrie and supreme lord which made these landes, hath moste prudently prouyded for the preservation of the same.

R. E. As

R. S. As touchyng this poynt whiche was vnknewen to the  
 owlde wyters, and without consideration wherof reason can not  
 perfectly conceaue howe temperate regions shulde be vnder the  
 Equinoctiall lyne. I haue thought good for the better manifestyng  
 of this recreate woorke of nature, to note owre of Cardanus his  
 booke de Elementis, howe all waters haue theyr courie toward the  
 South as to the lowest part of the earth. he wytteth therfore as  
 foloweth. The water was made of lesse quantitie then the earth  
 and only in maner in the superficiall parte therof, that place might  
 bee lesse for the habitation of beastes, and that water by his coulde  
 nesse myght temperate and not destroy the lyfe of beastes. And by  
 cause this generation of luyng creatures, was only necessary on  
 the superficiall partes of the earth in comparison to the hole, ther-  
 fore was the water made to occupie onely the superficiall parte, in  
 the which, metals, plantes, beastes, and fyshes shulde bee nury-  
 shed. And by cause there was great perell least it shulde be to much  
 consumed by the ayer and heate of the soenne, continuall mouinge  
 was loyded to it, wherby it gathereth coudenes and is preserued  
 from soderne resolution. For suche waters as doo not moue. doo  
 soone putrisie, and are easely resolued into ayer. By reason wherof  
 nature prouyded for the generation of water in coude places, as vn-  
 der the poles and mountaynes. And whereas the earth vnder the  
 Equinoctiall shulde otherwise for lacke of moyster haue bin to much  
 burned and scorched. nature also prouyded that that parte of the  
 earth shulde bee lowest, by reason whereof all waters haue theyr  
 courie toward the South to mitigate with moyster the extremitie of  
 heate which otherwise shulde haue bin intollerable in that cyme.  
 And by this reason, the famous ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, albeit it  
 haue his ouginal and springe, owre of the mountaynes of the mone  
 cauled Montes Lunae nere vnto the cyrcle of Capricorne, yet run-  
 nyng with all his braunches vnder and beyonde the Equinoctiall  
 cyrcle, it disparfeth thowgh owre the burnt line of Torrida zona, and  
 by the same vyoient course fauleth into owre sea nere vnto the cite  
 of Alexandria. It was necessary therfore that the greatest parte of  
 the coude and moyst element shulde haue recourse hyther and con-  
 syst there, wheras was the greatest necessity therof to temper the  
 heate of the soenne by moystyng and coolynge the earthe and the  
 ayer, as vnder the Equinoctiall. And herewith also hath most pri-  
 dent nature prouyded for the securitie and preseruacion of the pla-  
 ces lyng betwene bothe the extremities of heate and colde, as be-  
 twene the poles and the Equinoctiall. For the waters flowynge e-  
 uer one wayes and kpyng one course. no regions can be drowned  
 by fluddes; which thyng they well obserue that declynr fieldes  
 from inundations or overflowynges, and that take in hande to dye  
 vp many fhes. If therfore waters had not theyr courie and faul to-  
 warde places lowe or declynyng, the hole earth shulde bee ouer-  
 flowne as a marryfhes. And that the most declynyng parte shulde  
 bee toward the South, and sumwhat hygher about the poles, the  
 cause is aswell the consuming heate of the soenne in the South  
 partes, as the preferuyng coude of the hygh mountaynes nere to  
 the poles. For we haue els where proued that heate consumeth and  
 wasteth

## The hystorie

wasteth as coulede gathereth and preserueth. And for this cause that parte of the earthe that is nearest the poles, is, was, and euer shalbe highest, and likewise lowest in the midst furthest from the poles. And therefore it was not conuenient that the sonne shuld haue his course on euery syde, neither to the poles. For if it weare caried alyke to euery parte throughowt the worlde, it is necessary that the earth bee equall: and by that reason shulde it eyther bee altogether dried, or elles all overflowed with water. But where as this coulede not suffice to the free course of ryuers for the often intercoure of higher places lyinge in the waye, whereby ouerflowynges and stayes of waters and their corruption myght ensue, mooste prouydent nature hath gyuen this priuileage to water that it maye so muche ascende as it hath descended: that by this meanes passynge ouer mountaynes and hylles it maye at the length bee carryed into the sea, &c. by theerto Cardanus, lette vs nowe returne to the hystorie.

There are also many roughe and hyghe mountaynes with temperate ayer and pleasaunt, cleare, and moderate nightes. Of the whiche particularitie the auncient writers haupng no certeyne knowleage, affymed the said burnt lyne or *Torrida zona*, or Equinoctial to be naturally inhabitable. As touching which thing I am able to witnesse the contrary by testimonie of syght and feelyng as by most certeine senses, haupng liued many yeares in this regions, by reason wherof better credit ought to be giuen to me then to suche as haue grounded their opinion onely vpon coniectures. And to speake further of the sytuation of these regyons, yow shall vnderstande that the coaste of the North sea, beyng in the goulfe of *Vraba* and in the porte of *Dariena*, where the Shyppes arriue whiche coome oute of Spayne, is in the syxte degree and a halfe, and in the seuenth, and from syre and a halfe vnto eyght, excepte a smaule pointe which entereth into the sea toward the North. That pointe which of this land and new parte of the worlde lieth mooste toward the East, is the cape of saincte Augustine which is in the eight degree. So that the said goulfe of *Vraba* is distant from the Equinoctiall lyne, from a hundreth and twentie to a hundreth and thirtie leagues and thre quarters of a league after thacompte of. xlii. leagues and a halfe for euerye degree from pole to pole. And thus for a lytle more or lesse, goeth all the coaste. By reason wherof, in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and in all that course of the forsayde goulfe of *Vraba*, at all tymes of the yeare the dayes and nyghtes are in maner of equall length. And if there bee any difference

Difference betwene theym by reason of this smalle distance from the Equinoctial, it is so lytle, that in. xliiii. houres maynge a naturall daye, it canne not bee perceaued but by the iudgement of speculatiue men and suche as vnderstande the sphere. From hence the North starre is seene very lowe And when the starres which are cauled the wardenes of the north starre, are vnder the chariote, it can not bee seene, because it is vnder the horisontal. And whereas I haue sayde befoze that it rayneth in these regions at certeyne ordinarie tymes, it is so in deede. For it is wynter and summer there at contrary tymes to that whiche is in Spayne, where the greatest coule of froste and rayne is in December and January: And the greatest heate of sommer aboute saynt Iohannes daye at mydsommer or in the moneth of July. But in golden Castile or *Beragua*, it is contrary. For the sommer and tyme of greatest drowght and witholot rayne, is at Christmas and a moneth befoze and a moneth after. And the tyme when it rayneth most, is about midsommer and a moneth befoze and a moneth after. And this season whiche they caule wynter, is not for that it is any colder then, then at any other tyme of the yeare, or hotter at Christmas then at other seasons, the tyme in these regions being euer after one maner, but for that thae in this tyme which they caule wynter, the soonne is hyd from theyr syghes by reason of cloudes and rayne moze then at other tymes. yet forasmuch as for the moste parte of the yeare they lyue in a cleare, open, and temperate ayre, they sumtyme thynke and feele a lytle coule duryng the tyme of the said moist and cloudy ayre, althowgh it bee not coule in deede, or at the leaste suche coule as hath any sensible sharpenes.

¶ Of dyners particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foules, trees, &c.



Any other thynges myght be sayde, & much differeng from these wherof I haue spoken. But to lette passe the multitude of thynges whiche are as variable as the power of nature is infinite, and to speake of suche thynges as coome chiefly to my remembraunce as mooste woorthye to be noted, I wyll fyrste

A A a . i .

speake

## The hystorie

speake of certeyne lytle and troubelous beastes whiche maye  
seeme to bee engendered of nature to molest and bere menne,  
to sette them and gyue them to vnderstand howe smaul and  
hyle a thyng may offende and disquiete them, to chende that  
they maye remember the pyncepal ende for the whiche they  
were created, that is, to knowe theyr maker and procurer of  
theyr saluation by the waye whiche is open to all Christian  
men and all other whiche wyll open the eyes of theyr vnder-  
standynge. And although the thynges wherof wee entende  
nowe to speake may seeme hyle and lytle to bee esteemed, yet  
are they woorthie to bee noted and consydered to vnderstand  
the difference and variable woorkes of nature. So it is ther  
fore, that whereas in many partes of the firme lande by the  
whiche as well the Christians as Indians doe trauele, there are  
such marshes and waters in the way that they are fayne to  
go withowt breeches amonge the herbes and weedes, by rea-  
son wherof, certeyne smaule beastes or woormes (whiche they  
caule *Girapates*) much lyke vnto rypes, cleaue fast to theyr leg-  
ges. These woormes are as little as the pouder of bearen salt.  
And cleaue so fast that they can by no meanes be taken away  
except the place bee noughted with oyle. And after that the  
legges bee noughted with oyle, or the other partes  
where these lytle rypes are fastened, they scape the place  
with a knyfe and so take them away. But the Indians whi-  
che haue no oyle, smoke them and burne them with fyre, and  
abyde great paynes in takinge them awaye by this meanes.  
Of other lytle beastes which trouble men and are engender-  
ed in theyr heades or other partes of theyr bodies, I saye that  
the Christian men which trauele into these partes, haue them  
but seldome tymes, and that not past one or two, and this al-  
so very seldome. For passynge by the lyne of the Diameter  
where the compasse makethe difference of saylynge by the  
wynde cauled *Greco*, (that is North East) and *Magyral*, (that  
is South West) which is in the course of the Ilandes of *Azori*,  
they sayle but a lytle way folowing oore byage by the west,  
but that all the tyme which the Christians cary with them, or  
are engendered in theyr heades or other places of theyr bod-  
ies, dye and vnterly consume by lytle and lytle, and are  
not engendered in India excepte in the heades of lytle chyl-  
dren in those partes aswel amonge the chylidren of the Chris-  
tians

Indians which are borne there, as also amonge the natural Indians who haue theym commonly in theyr heades and sume tymes in other partes of theyr bodyes, and especially they of the prouince of *Cucua*, which is a region conceyninge more then a hundred leaques in length, and embraseth the one and the other coast of the North sea and of the East. When these Indians are infected with this fylthynes, they dresse and cleanse one an other. And they that exercise this, are for the moste parte women who eate all that they take: And haue herein such dexteritie by reason of theyr exercise, that othere men can not lyghly atteyne therunto. There is also another thyng greatly to bee considered. And this is how the Chilian men beinge there cleane frome this fylthynes of India, as well in theyr heades as the reste of theyr bodyes, yet when they retorne to coomme ageyne into Europe and begyn to aryue in that place of the Ocean sea where wee sayde befoze that the lyse dyed and forsoke them, suddenly in theyr repasyng by the same clyme (as though the lyse had carped for them in that place) they can by no meanes auoyde theym for the space of certeyne dayes although they change theyr shertes two or three tymes in a day. These lyse are at the fyrste as lytle as tyttes, and growe by lytle and lytle vntyl they bee of the byggeneesse that they are in Spayne. This haue I often tymes proued, hauyng nowre foure tymes passed the Ocean sea by this vyage.

Besyd these woozmes and vermyen wherof we haue spoken, there is another lytle micheuous woozme, whiche we may number amonge the kyndes of fleas, This pestilence the Indians call *Nigus*: And is much lesse then a flea. It perleth the fleshe of a man, and so launsereth or cutteth the same (while in the meane tyme it can nother bee scene nor taken) that firste sume it hath cutte of theyr handes, and from other theyr fiere vntyll the remedy was founde to annoynt the place with oyle and scrape it with a rasoure.

In the firme lande in golden Castyle or *Beragua*, there are many bypers lyke vnto them of Spayne. They that are bytten of them, dye in shorte space. For fewe lyue to the fourth day except present remedy. Of these, sume are of a lesse kind then other: And haue theyr taylor sumwhat rounde, and leape in the ayer to assaile men. And for this cause, sume call

## The hyſtorie

this kynde of bypers Tyro. Theyr bytyng is moſt venemous, and for the moſte parte incurable. One of theſe chanced to bite an Indian mayde whiche ſerued me in my houſe, to whome I cauſed the ſurgians to myniſter theyr ordinarie cure, but they coulde doo her no good, nor yet get one droppe of bludde owt of her, but only a yelow water, ſo that ſhe died the thyrde day for lacke of remedy as the like hath chaunced to dyuers other. This mayde was of thage of. xiii. yeares and ſpoke the Spanyſhe tooſe as yf ſhe had byn borne in Caſtyle. Shee ſayde that the byper whiche bytte her on the foote, was two ſpannes longe or lytle leſſe. And that to bite her ſhe lepte in the ayer for the ſpace of more then fyre paces, as I haue harde the lyke of other credible perſons.

Adders.

I haue alſo ſcene in the firme lande, a kynde of adders very ſmaule and of ſeuē or eyght foote longe. Theſe are ſo redde that in the nyght they appeare lyke burnyng cooles, and in the day ſeeme as redde as bludde. Theſe are alſo venemous, but not ſo much as the bypers. There are other much leſſe and ſhorter and blacker. Theſe coome owt of the ryuers and wander ſumtymes farre on the lande, and are lyke wyſe venemous. There are alſo other adders of a ruſſet colour. Theſe are ſumwhat bygger then the bypers, and are hurtful and venemous. There are lyke wyſe an other ſorte of manye coloures and very longe. Of theſe I ſawe one in the yeare of Chriſt 1515, in the Iſland of *Hiſpaniola* nere vnto the ſea coſtes at the foote of the mountaynes cauled *Pedernales*. When this adder was ſlayne, I meaſured her and founde her to be more then .xx. foote longe, and ſumwhat more then a mans byt in byggenes. And althoughe ſhe hadde thre or foure deadly woundes with a ſwoorde, yet dyed ſhe not nor ſoonke the ſame daye, in ſo much that her bludde continued warine all that tyme. There are alſo in the maryſhes and deſertes of the firme lande many other kyndes of lyſertes, dragons, and other dyuers kyndes of ſerpentes wherof I entende not here to ſpeake much, becauſe I haue more particularly entreated of theſe thynges in my generall hiſtorie of the Weſte Indyes.

Dragons.

Spyders.

There are alſo ſpiders of marueylous bygneſſe. And I haue ſcene ſumme with the body and legges, bygger then a mannes hande extended euery waye, And I ones ſawe one of ſuche bygneſſe, that onely her bodye was as bygge as a ſparowe

Sparowes, and full of that laune wherof they make their webbes. This was of a darke rustette coloure, with eyes greater then the eyes of a sparrow. They are venemous and of terrible shap to beholde. There are also scorpions and dyuers other suche venemous wormes. Wherby we maye see, that where as natural causes and influence of the planettes are of strongest activitie, they cease not to engender and byynge forth the bothe good and badde accordynge to the disposicion of the matter, whiche they also doo partely dispose as the philosophers affyrme.

Furthermore in the fyrme lande, there are manye toades being very noyous and hurtful by reason of their great multitude. They are not venemous. They are seene in greete abundance in *Dariens* where they are so hygge that when they dye in the time of drouth, the bones of sum of them (and especially the rybbes) are of suche greatnesse that they appere too bee the bones of cattes or of summe other beastes of the same hyggenesse. But as the waters diminish and the moysture consumeth in the tyme of drouth (as I haue sayde) they also consume therewith untill the yere nexte following when the rayne and moysture increase, at whiche tyme they are seene againe. Neuerthelesse, at this present, there is no such quantitie of them as was wonte to bee, by reason that as the land is better cultured by the Christians, as well by the fellynge of wooddes and shrubbes as also by the pasture of kine, horses, and other beastes, so is it apparent that this poyson diminisheth dayly, wherby that regyon becometh moze wholesome and pleasant. These toades synge after thre or foure sortes. For summe of them synge pleasantly: other, lyke owes of Spayne. Summe also whistle: and other summe make another maner of noyse. They are lykewyse of dyuers colours: as summe greene, summe rustette or grey, and summe almost blacke. But of all sortes, they are great, and fylthy, and noyous by reason of their great multitude: yet are they not venemous as I haue sayde.

There are also a straunge kynde of crabbes, whiche coome forth of certeyne holes of the earth that they them selues make. The head and bodye of these, make one rounde thing muche lyke unto the hooke of a fawkon: hauninge foure feete comynge out of the one syde and as many out of the other.

They

Crabbes,

## The hystorie

They haue also two mouthes like vnto a paire of smale pin-  
cers, the one bygger then the other, wherewith they byte, but  
do no great hurte bycause they are not venemous. Their skyn  
and bodye is smoothe and thynne as is the skynne of a man,  
saunge that it is sumwhat harder. Their colour is rustette  
or white, or blake, and walke sydelonge. They are very good  
to bee eaten: In so muche that the Christians traunapling by  
the fyne lande, haue byn greatly nuryshed by them bycause  
they are founde in maner euery where. In shap and foyme,  
they are muche lyke vnto the crabbe which we paynte for the  
sygne Cancer, and like vnto those which are found in Spaine  
in Andalusia in the ryuer Guadalebiber where it entereth into the  
sea, and in the sea coastes therabout, saunge that these are  
of the water and the other of the lande. They are sumtymes  
hurtefull, so that they that eate of them dye. But this chaun-  
ceth onely when they haue eaten any venemous thyng, or of  
the venemous apples wherewith the Canibale archers poyson  
their arrowes wherof I wyll speake hereafter. And for this  
cause the Christians take hede howe they eate of these crab-  
bes if they synde them neare vnto the sayd apple trees.

Serpentes  
cauled Juana-  
sl.

Furthermoze in these Indies, aswell in the fyne lande as  
in the Ilandes, there is founde a kynde of Serpentes, which  
they caule *V. V. anas*, which summe caule *Iuannas*. These are  
terrible and scarefull to syght, and yet not hurtefull. They  
are very delicate to bee earen, and it is not yet knowen whe-  
ther they be beastes of the lande or fyshes, bycause they lyue  
in the water, and wander in the woddes and on the lande.  
They haue foure feete, and are commonly bigger then conntes  
and in summe places bygger then orters, with taples lyke li-  
tartes or eutes. Their skynne is spotted, and of the same  
kynd of smothnesse or barenesse, although of dyuers colours.  
Upon the ridge of their backs, they haue many long prickes.  
Theyr teeth are very sharpe, and especially theyr fanges or  
dogge teeth. Their throttes are longe and large, reachyng  
from their beardes to their brestes, of the lyke skynne to  
the relydewe of their bodyes. They are dumme, and haue  
no voyce or make any noyse or crye although they bee kepte  
tyde to the foote of a chesse or any other thyng for the space  
of. xx. or. xxv. dayes without any thyng to eate or drynke,  
excepte they gyue them now and then a lyttle of the breade  
of

of Carabbi, or summe such other thynge. They haue foure feete, and their fore feete as longe as a mans fynger with clawes lyke the clawes of a byrde, but weaker, and suche as can not grasple or take holde of any thynge. They are muche better to bee eaten then to beholde. For seide that see them, wyll haue desyre to eate of them, by reason of their horrible shap. excepte suche as haue byn accustomed to the beastes of these regyons, whiche are moze horrible and fearefull, as this is not but onely in apparence. Their fleshe is of much better tast then the fleshe of connyes and moze holsome. For it hurteth none but onely such as haue had the frenche poxe. In so much that if they haue onely byn touched of that infyrmie, although they haue byn hole of longe tyme, neuerthelesse they feele hurte and complayne of the eatynge of these Iuamas, as hath byn often tymes proued by experiance.

There are founde in the fyne lande certeyne byrdes so lyttle that the hole body of one of theym is no bygger then the toppe of the byggest fynger of a mans hande: and yet is the hare body withowt the fethers not passe halfe so bygge. This byrde, besyde her lyttlenes, is of such velocitie and swyftnes in flying that who so seeth her fleying in the ayer, ca not ie her flap or heate her wynges after any other sort then do the dogges or hubble bees or betels: so that there is no man that seeth her fleye, that wold think her to be any other the a dovre. They make their nestes accordyng to the proportiō of their bygnes. And I haue seene that one of these byrdes with her neil put in a paire of gold weights, altogether hath waid no more the ii. Tomini, which are in poise. 24. grains, with the fethers with out the which she hulde haue wayed sumwhat lesse. And doubtlesse when I consider the fynesse of the clawes and fette of these byrdes, I knowe not wherunto I may better liken them then to the lyttle byrdes whiche the lyminers of bookes are accustomed to paynte on the margentes of church bookes and other bookes of deuine seruice. Their fethers are of many faire colours as golden yelow and greene beaide other variable colours. Their beake is verve longe for the proportion of theyr bodies: and as fyne and subtile as a sowynge nedle. They are very hardye: so that when they see a man clyme the tree where they haue theyr nests, they fleye at hys face and stryke hym in the eyes, connyng, gopnge, and retournynge.

Byrdes.

A very lyttle byrde.

With ſuch ſwiftnes, that no man wolde lightly beleue it that hath not ſeene it. And certainly theſe byrdes are ſo lyttle, that I durſt not haue made mention hereof if it were not that diuers other which haue ſeene them as wel as I, can beare witnes of my ſaying. They make their neſtes of ſtokes and heave of corten wherof there is great plentie in theſe regions, and ſerueth wel for their purpoſe. But as touching the byrdes, foules, and beaſtes of theſe Indies, bycauſe they are innumerable bothe lytle and greate, I intende not to ſpeake muche here, bycauſe I haue ſpoken moze largely hereof in my generall hyſtoyre of the Indies.

Beaſtes.

Bardati.

There is an other kynde of beaſtes ſcene in the firme land which ſeemed very ſtraunge and marueilous to the Chryſtian men to beholde, and muche diſſerynge from all other beaſtes which haue byn ſcene in other partes of the worlde. Theſe beaſtes are cauled *Bardati*: And are foure footed, hauing their taile and al the reſt of their bodies couered onely with a ſkyn lyke the coperture of a barbed horſe or the chekered ſkynne of a lyſarte or Crocodile, of colour betwene whyte and ruſſet, inclynynge ſumwhat moze to whyte. This beaſt, is of ſorme and ſhape much lyke to a barbed horſe with his barbes and ſtinkettes in all poyntes. And from vnder that which is the barbe and coperture, the tayle commeth forth, and the feete in their place, the necke alſo and the eares in their partes, and in ſyne all thynges in lyke ſorte as in a barbed courſer. They are of the bygues of one of theſe common dogges. They are not hurtfull. They are fylthy, and haue their habitation in certen hillockes of earthe where digginge with their feete they make their dens very deepe & the holes thereof in like manner as do connyes. They are verie excellent to be eaten, and are taken with nettes and ſum alſo killed with croſbowes. They are lykewiſe taken often tymes when the huſband men burie the stubble in ſowynge time, or to renewe the herbage for kyne and other beaſtes. I haue often times eaten of theiſe which ſemeth to me of better taſt then hyddes fleſhe, and holſome to be eaten. And if theſe beaſtes had euer byn ſcene in theſe partes of the woorld where the firſt barbed horſes had their original, no man wold iudge but that the ſorme and faſhion of the coperture of horſes furniſhed for the warres was fyrſt deuſed by the ſyght of theſe beaſtes.

Thei

There is also in the firme lande an other beaste cauled *Or* *so Formigaro*. that is, the Ante beare. This beaste in heare and colour, is much lyke to the beare of Spayne, and in maner of the same makynge saue that he hath a much longer snowe and is of euylly spght. They are often tymes taken only with stauces without any other weapon, and are not hurtful. They are also taken with dogges bycause they are not naturally armed althowgh they byre sumwhat. They are founde for the mosse parte about and neare to the hyllockes where are great abundaunce of antes. For in these regions is engendered a certeyne kynde of antes very lytle and blacke, in the fyldest and playnes where as growe no trees, where by thinsinct of nature these antes separate them selues to engender far from the wooddes for feare of these beares: The whiche bycause they are fearefull, vyle, and vnarmed (as I haue sayde) they keepe euer in places full of trees vntyll very famen and necessitie, or the great desire that they haue to fiede of these antes, cause them to coomme out of the wooddes to hunte for them. These antes make a hyllocke of earth to the heygth of a man, or sumwhat moze or lesse, and as bygge as a great chest, and sumtymes as bygge as a buite or a hogges head, and as hard as a stone: So that they seeme as thowgh they were stones set by to lymytte thendes and confines of certeyne landes. Within these hyllockes made of most harde earth, are innumerable and infinite lytle antes, the which may bee gathered by buishelles when the hyllocke is broken. The which when it is sumtymes moysted by rayne and then dreyed ageyne by the heate of the soonne, it breaketh and hath certeyne smault ryftes as lytle and subyle as the edge of a knyfe. And it seemeth that nature hath gyuen sense to these Antes to fynde such a matter of earth wherewith they may make the sayde hyllocke of suche hardenes that it may seeme a stronge pauement made of lyme and stone. And wheras I haue proued and caused sum of them to bee broken, I haue founde them of suche hardenes as if I had not seene I coude not haue beleaued: In so muche that they coude scarcely bee broken with pykes of Iren: So stronge fortresses doo these lytle beastes make for theyr sauegarde ageynst theyr aduersarie the beare, who is chiefly nuryshed by them, and gyuen them as an enemy, *Non e alcuna* *scorpyge* to the common prouerbe which sayeth, *persona*

## The hystorie

*persona si libera, a chinanchi il suo Bargello:* That is, there is no mā so free that hath not his persecutour or pynne enemy. And here whē I consyder the maruelous prouidence which nature hath gyuen to these lytle boddies, I caule to remembraunce the wicke sentence of Plinie, where speakyng of such lytle beastes, he sayth thus. Why doo we maruaile at the towebearynge shoulers of Elephantes, and not rather where nature hath placed so many senses and suche industry in suche lytle boddies? where is hearynge, smellynge, seeinge, and feelynge, ye, where are the haynes & arteries (withouth which no beast can lyue or moue) in these so lytle boddies whereof sume are so smaule that theyr hole boddies can scarcely be sene of owre eyes, what shall we then saye of the partes of the same? yet euen amonge these are there many of such sagacitie and industry as the lyke is not sene in beastes of greater quantitie, no nor yet in man, &c. But to returne to the hystorie. This enemy which nature hath gyuen to these lytle beastes, useth this maner to assaile them. When he resorteth to the hyllocke where the antes lye hid as in theyr fortreffe, he putteth his too[n]ge to one of the ryftes wherof we haue spoken being as subtylle as the edge of a sword, and there with continuall lyckynge, maketh the place moyst, the some and froth of his mouth beinge of such propertie that by continual lycking the place, it enlargeth the ryfte in such sort by lytle and lytle, that at the length he easely putteth in his too[n]ge whiche he hath very longe and thynne, and much disproportionate to his bodie. And when he hath thus made free passage for his too[n]ge into the hyllocke to put it easely in and out at his pleasure, then he thrusteth it into the hole as farre as he can reache, and so letteth it reste a good space vntyl a great quantitie of the antes (whose nature reioyseth in heate and moysture) haue laden his tonge and as many as he can conteyne in the holownesse therof: at which tyme he suddely draweth it into his mouth and eateth them, and returneth ageyne to the same practise immediatly vntyl he haue eaten as many as hym lyketh, or as longe as he can reache any with his tonge. The death of this beast, is fylthy and vnsauery. But by reason of the extreme thytes and necessitie that the Christian men were put to at theyr fyrst commynge into these partes, they were enforced to proue al thynges and so fel to theatrynge of these

these beastes. But when they had founde more delycate meates, they fell into hatred with this. These antes haue thaperaunce of the place of theyr enteraunce into the hyllocke, vnder the grounde. And this at so lytle a hole that it could hardely be founde yf certeyne of them were not seene to passe in and out. But by this way the beates coulde haue no such poute to hurte them as aboue at the sayde ryftes as I haue sayde. There is an other strange beaste whiche by a name of contrary effecte, the Spanyardes caule *Cagnuolo leggiero*, that is the lyght dogge, wheras it is one of the sloweste beastes in the worlde, and so heauy and dull in mouyng that it canne scarcely go fyftie pases in a hole day. These beastes are in the firme lande, and are very straunge to beholde for the disproportion that they haue to all other beastes. They are abowte two spannes in length when they are growne to theyr full byggenesse. But when they are very younge, they are sumwhat more grosse then longe. They haue foure subtyle fiere, and in euery of them foure clawes lyke vnto byrdes, and ioyned togyther. yet are nother theyr clawes or theyr fiere able to susteyne theyr bodyes from the grounde. By reason wherof and by the heauynesse of theyr boddies, they drawe theyr bellies on the grounde. Theyr neckes are hygh and streyght and all equall lyke the pisse of a mortar, which is altogether equall euen vnto the toppe withowt makynge any proportion or similitude of a headde, or any dyfference excepte in the noddle. And in the toppes of theyr neckes, they haue verpe rounde faces much lyke vnto owles: And haue a marke of theyr owne heare after the maner of a cyrcle whiche makethe theyr faces seeme sumwhat more longe then large. They haue smaule eyes and rounde: And nostrylles lyke vnto monkeys. They haue lytle mouthes, and moue theyr neckes frome one syde to an other as though they were astonysht. Theyr chiefe desyre and delyte is to cleane and stycke faste vnto trees or sume other thyng whereby they may clyme alofte. And therfore for the moste parte, these beastes are founde vppon trees wherunto cleauynge fast, they mounte vp by lytle and lytle, steypinge them selues by theyr longe clawes. The colour of theyr heare, is betwene russet and whyte, and of the proper colour of the heare of a weasel. They haue no tayles, and theyr boyle is much dyfferynge frome other beastes: for

A strange  
beast whiche  
seemeth a  
kynd of Cha-  
meleon.

## The hystorie

they syng onely in the nyght : And that continually frome tyme to tyme syngynge euer syre notes one hygher then an other, so faulynge with the same that the fyrste note is the hyghest and the other in a baler tone as yf a man shuld say La, sol, fa, mi, re, vt. So this beast sayth, Ha, ba, ba, ba, ba ba. And doubtrelesse, it seemeth vnto me, that as I haue sayde in the chapiter of the beaste cauled *Bardath*, that those beastes mighte bee thoriginall and document to imbarbe horses, euen so the fyrste inuente of musycke myght seme by the hearynge of this beast to haue the fyrst principles of that science rather then by any other thyng in the worlde. But nowe to retorne to the hystorie : I say that in a trowte space after this beaste hath soonge and hath paused a whyle, he returneth ageyne to the selfe same songe, and doth this only in the nyght and not in the day. By reason wherof and also bycause of her euill syght, I thynke her to bee a nyght beaste and the frende of darkenesse. Sumtymes the Christian menne synde these beastes and bynge theym home to theyr hostes, where also they creepe all abowre with theyr naturall slowenesse, in so much that nother for threatenynge or pryckynge they wyl moue any faster then theyr natural and accustomed pace. And yf they synde any trees, they creepe thither immediatly, and mouate to the toppe of the hyghest bzaunche thereof, where they remaine continually for the space of eyght, or tenne, or twentie dayes without eatynge of any thinge as farre as any man can iudge. And wheras I my selfe haue kepte theym in my house, I coulde neuer perceaue other but that they lyue onely of aper. And of the same opinion are in maner all men of those regions, bycause they haue neuer scene them eate any thyng, but euer turne theyr heades and mouthes towarde that parte where the wynde bloweth most : whereby may bee consydered that they take moste pleasure in the aper. They byte not, nor yet can byte, hauing very lyttle mouthes. They are not venemous or rayous any way; but altogether brutishe and vterly unprofytable and without commoditie yet knowen to men; sayynge onely to mooue theyr myndes to contemplate thynfinite poure of god, who delyreth in the varietie of creatures, whereby appeareth the poure of his incomprehensible wisdom and maiestie so farre to exceede the capacite of mans vnderstandynge.

In these regions there are likewise found certeyne foules  
 or byrdes which the Indians caule *Alcatraz*. These are much  
 bigger then geese. The greatest parte of theyr fethers are of  
 russet colour, and in some partes yelow. Theyr bylles or  
 beakes are of two spannes in length and verie large neare to  
 the heade, and growynge smaule toward the poynte. They  
 haue greate and large throates: And are much lyke to a foule  
 which I sawe in Flaunders in Brusselles in yowre maiesties  
 pallaice which the Flemynghes caule *Haina*. And I remember  
 that when yowr maiestie dynd one day in yowre great haule  
 there was brought to yowre maiesties presence a chauderne of  
 water with certeyne fyshes alyue, which the sayde foule did  
 eate by hole. And I thynke verely that that foule was a foule  
 of the sea because the had fierte lyke foules of the water as  
 haue also these *Alcatraz*, which are liketypse to ules of the sea:  
 and of such greatnesse that I haue seene a hole core of a man  
 put into the throates of one of theym in *Panama* in the yere  
 1521. And forasmuch as in that coaste of *Panama*, there pas-  
 seth and aperyth a greate multitude of these *Alcatraz* beinge a  
 thyng very notable, I wyll declare the maner hereof as not  
 onely I, but also dyuers other now presente in yowre ma-  
 iesties court haue often tymes seene. Yowre maiestie shall  
 therfore vnderstande that in this place (as I haue sayde be-  
 fore) the sea of *sur* ryseth and fauleth two leagues and more  
 from fyve houres to fyve houres: so that when it increaseth,  
 the water of the sea arryueyth so neare to the houses of *Panama*  
 as doth oovre sea (cauled *Mare Mediterraneum*) in Barzalona or in  
 Naples. And when the sayd increasyng of the sea commeth,  
 there commeth also therewith such a multitude of the smaule  
 fyshes cauled sardynes, that it is so marueylous a thyng to  
 beholde, that no man wolde belue it that hath not seene it.  
 In so much that the *Cacique*, (that is) the kynge of that land  
 at such tyme as I dwelt there, was bounde dayly as he was  
 commaunded by yowre maiesties gouernour, to bynge or dy-  
 naryly thre canoas or barkes full of the sayde sardynes and  
 to vnlade the same in the markette place, whiche were after-  
 warde by the rules of the citie diuided amonge the Christian  
 men without any coste or charge to any of them. In so much  
 that yf the people had bin a much greater multitude then they  
 were, and as many as are at this presente in *Toledo* or more,  
 and

Foules, and  
 byrdes.

*Alcatraz*.

*Panama*.

## The hystorie

and had none other thyng to lyue by, they myght haue byn sufficiently sustented by these sardynes, bysye thourplus which shulde haue remayned. But to retorne to the foules wherof we haue spoken. As the sea commeth, and the sardynes with the same, even so lykewyse coome the sayde *Alcatrazzi* therewith: and flye continually ouer it in suche a multytude, that they appeare to couer thupper parte or shoure of the water. And thus continue in mountynge and faulynge from the ayer to the water, and from the water to the ayer duringe all the tyme of theyr flythyng. And as soone as they haue taken any of these sardynes, they flye aboute the water and cate them incontinently, and suddelyly retorne ageyne to the water for more, continuing thus course by course with out ceasynge. In lyke maner when the sea fauleth, they folowe there flythyng as I haue sayde. There goethe also in the company of these foules, an other kynde of foules cauled *Codainforata*, (that is) the forked taylor, wherof I haue made mention befoze. And as soone as the *Alcatraz* mounteth from the water with her pray of the sardynes, suddelyly this *Codainforata* gyueth her so many strokes, and so persecuteth her, that she causeth her to let faule the sardynes which she hath in her mouth. The which as soone as they are faulne, and befoze they yet touch the water, the *Codainforata* catcheth them even in the faule, in suche sorte that it is a great pleasure to beholde the combatte betwene them all the daye longe. The number of these *Alcatrazzi* is such, that the Chyistian menne are accustomed to send to certeyne Ilandes and rockes which are neare abowte *Panama*, with theyr boates or barks to take these *Alcatrazzi* whyle they are yet younge and can not flye: and kyll as many of them with snaues as they wyll, butyll they haue therewith laden theyr barks or canoas. These younge ones are so fatte and wel fedde that they can not be eaten. And are taken for none other intent but only to make grease for candels to burne in the nyght, for the whiche purpose it serueth very well: and gyueth a cleare lycht, and burneth easely. After this maner and for this purpose, innumerable of themare kylde. And yet it seemeth that the number of them that flye for sardynes doo dayly increase.

*Passer semple*

There are other foules cauled *Passere semple*: that is, simple sparowes. These are sumwhat lesse then semewes: and haue theyr

theye flete lyke vnto great malardes: And stande in the water sumtymes. And when the theyppes sayle fyftie or a hundred leagues abowte the Ilandes, these foules beholdinge the theyppes commyng towarde them, breake theye syght and faule downe vpon the sayle yardes, mastes, and cables therof. And are so simple and folye that they tary vntyll they maye easely be taken with mens handes, and were therefore cauled of the maryners simple sparowes. They are blacke, and vpon their blacke, haue theye headde and shoulers of fethers of a darke russet coloure. They are not good to bee eaten, although the mariners haue sumtimes bin inforced to eate the.

There is an other kynde of byrdes in the fyne lande, which the Christians caule *Picuti*, because they haue very great beakes in respect of the lytlenesse of theye boddies: For theye beakes are very heauy and waye more then theye hole boddies bysye. These byrdes are no bygger then quayles, but haue a much greater buttiment of fethers, in so much that theye fethers are more then theye boddies. Theye fethers are very fayre and of many variable coloures. Theye beakes are a quarter of a yarde in length or more, and bendyng downe towarde the earthe, and thre syngers brode neare vnto the heade. Theye tonges are very quilles, wherwith they make a greate hyllynge. They make holes in trees with theye beakes, in the which they make theye nestes. And surely these byrdes are maruelous to beholde for the great difference whiche they haue from all other byrdes that I haue scene, as wel for theye tooenges (which are quilles as I haue sayde) as also for the strangenesse of theye syght and disproportion of their greate beakes in respect of the rest of theye boddies. There are no byrdes founde that proude better for the safegarde of theye younge in the tyme of theye breedynge to bee withoute daunger of wylde catres that they enter not into theye nestes to destroye theye egges or younge. And this aswell by the straunge maner of buyldyng theye nestes, as also by theye owne defence. And therfore when they perceauie that the catres appoche towarde them, they enter into theye nestes: and holdyng theye beakes towarde thentranche of the same, stande at theye defence, and so bere the catres that they cause them to leaue theye enterpyle.

*Picuti*

There are also other byrdes or sparowes, whiche the Christians

## The hystorie

Foly the spa-  
rowes,

Christians by contrary effect caule *Matti*, that is fooles. Where as neuerthelesse there is no byrde that sheweth more wyse and craftie in defendynge her younge from perell. These byrdes are lyttle and in maner blacke, and somewhat bygger then owre thynthes. They haue certeyne whyte feathers in theyr neckes, and the lyke sagacitie or sharpnes of sense as haue the byrdes or pyes cauled *Gazzuole*. They seldome tymes lichte vppon the earth. They make theyr nestes in trees separated from other, because the wyldc cattles (cauled *Mammoni*) are accustomed to leape frome tree to tree, not descendynge to the grounde for feare of other beastes, excepte when they are enforced by thyrste to coomme downe to drynke at suche tymes as they are sure not to bee molested. And for this cause doo not these byrdes make theyr nestes but in trees farre diuyled from other. They make them of a cubette in length or more, after the maner of bagges or lytle sackes, large at the bottome, and growynge narrower and narrower toward the mouth whereby they are fastened: haupnge the hole whereae they enter into the sacke, of such byggnes as may onely suffice to receaue them. And to thende that the cattles maye not deuoure theyr younge yf they chaunce to mounce vppon the trees where they haue theyr nestes, they vse an other craftie, which is, to make theyr nestes in thicke bzaunches of trees, and to defende the same with sharpe and stronge thoznes implycate and set in such order that no man is able to make the lyke. So that the cattles can by no meares put theyr legges into the hole of the nese to take owt the younge byrdes, as well for the sharpnes of the thoznes as also for the depth of the nestes, in the bottome wherof, the younge birdes rest with owt daunger of theyr enemye. For sum of theyr nestes beyng three or foure spannes in lengthe, the legge of the catte can not reache to the bottome therof. They vse also an other pollicie: which is, to make many of theyr nestes in one tree. The which they doo for one of these two causes: that is, that eyther of theyr owne naturall disposition they are accustomed to go in great multitudes, & reioyse in the company of theyr owne generation as do the byrdes which we caule stares, or elles to thintent that yf it shoulde so chaunce that the cattles shoulde clyme the trees where they make theyr nestes, they might bee a greater company to resyste and molest the cattles,

at whose approach they make a feareful and terrible cry, wher  
by the cattes are put to flyght.

Furthermoze, in the firme land, and in the Flandes, there  
are certeyne byrdes cauled *Piche* or *Gaxzuole*, somewhat lyke  
vnto those which we caule woodwaules, or woodpeckes, be-  
inge lesse then owt of Spayne. These are altogether blacke,  
and go hoppyng and leapyng. Theyr beakes are also blacke  
and of the same fallhyon as are the poppingiays beakes. They  
haue longe tayles, and are somewhat bygger then stares.

There are other byrdes cauled *Pintadelli*, whiche are lyke *Pintadelli*  
vnto certeyne greene byrdes whiche the Italyans caule *Frin-*  
*guelli*: and are of seuen coloures. These byrdes for feare of the  
cattes, are euer woonte to make theyr nestes ouer the bankes  
of ryuers or the sea, where the braunches of trees so reache  
ouer the water that with a lytle weyght they maye bowe  
downe to the water. Theyr nestes are made so neare the top-  
pes of the braunches that when the cattes coome theron, the  
braunches bende towarde the water, and the cattes turne  
backe ageyne for feare of faulynge. For althoughe no beaste  
in the worlde bee more malicious then this, yet whereas the  
mooste parte of beastes are naturally inclyned to swimme, this  
catt hath no maner of aptenesse thereunto, and is therefore  
soone drowned or strangled in the water, and by a pyruie  
sense of nature feareth the daunger which he can not escape.  
These byrdes make theyr nestes in suche sorte, that althowgh  
they bee weete and fylled with water, yet doo they so sudden-  
ly ryse vp ageyne, that the younge byrdes are not thereby  
hurte or drowned.

There are also many nyghtyngales and other byrdes whi-  
che syng maruelously with great melodie and dyfference in  
syngynge. These byrdes are of maruelous dyuers coloures  
the one from the other. Sum are altogether yelowe, and sum  
other of so excellent, delectable, and hygge a coloure as it  
weare a rubye. Other are also of dyuers and variable co-  
loures: sum of fewe coloures, and other sume all of one co-  
loure: beinge all so fayre and beuotifull, that in byghynesse  
and syngynge they excell all that are seene in Spayne, or Ita-  
ly or other prouinces of Europe. Many of these are taken  
with nettes, lyme twygges, and spynges of dyuers sortes.  
Dyuers other sortes of greate foules lyke vnto Eagles, Great fowles  
and

## The hystorie

And suche other as lyue of pray, are founde in the firme lande of suche diuersitie, that it is in maner impossible to descrybe them all particularly. And forasmuche as I haue moze largely intreated hereof in my generall hystorie of the Indies, I thinke it not requysite here to make anye further mention of the same,

### Of trees, fruites, and plantes,

*Cocus,*



Here is bothe in the firme lande and the Ilands a certeyne tree cauled *Cocus*, beinge a kynde of date trees and hauynge theyr leaues of the selfe same greatnesse as haue the date trees which beare dates, but dyffer much in their growynge. For the leaues of this *Cocus* growe oute of the trunks of the tree as doo the syngers out of the hande, wreathynge them selues one within an other and so spreadynge abrode. These trees are hygh and are founde in great plentie in the coaste of the sea of *Ser*, in the prouince of *Cacique Chimar*. These date trees byynge furth a frute after this sorte. Beinge altogether vnite as it groweth on the tree, it is of greater circumference then the heade of a man. And fro the superficiall parte to the myddest which is the frute, it is inuolued and couered with many webs much lyke vnto those hyrdes of towne whiche they vse in *Andalusia*. Of this towne or webbe, the East Indians make a certeyne kynde of clothe of three or foure sortes, and cordes for the sayles of shippes. But in these Indies of yowr maiestie, they passe not for these cordes or this clothe that maye be made of the frute of *Cocus*, by reason of the great plentie that they haue of the bombage or cotton of the gossampine trees. The frute which is in the myddest of the sayde towne, is (as I haue sayde) as hygge as a mans fyfte, and sumtymes thysse as hygge and moze. It is in forme, lyke vnto a walnutte, or sum other rounde thyng sumwhat moze longe then large, and very harde. The rynde or barke herof, is as thicke as the cyrcle of letters of a riale of plate. And within, there cleauerh faste to the rynde of the nutte a carnositie or substaunce of cooznel, of the thychkenesse of halfe a synger or of the least synger of the hande: And is verpe whyte, lyke vnto a sayre Almonde, and of better taste

AND

and more pleasaunt. When this fruite is chewed, there remaine certeyne crummes as do the lyke of almondes. yet if it bee swallowed downe, it is not vnpleasaunt. For although that after the icicle or moysture bee gonne downe the throte before the sayde crummes bee swallowed, the reste which is eaten seeme somewhat sharpe or sober, yet both it not so greatly offende the taste as to bee cast away. Whyle this *Cocus* is yet frethe and newly taken from the tree, they vse not to eate of the sayde carnositie and frute: But firste beatynge it very much, and then straynyng it, they drawe a mylke thereof, much better and sweeter then is the mylke of beastes, and of much substance: The which the Christian men of those regions put in the tortes or cakes which they make of the grayne of Maizium wherof they make theyr breade, or in other breade as we put breade in porrage: So that by reason of the sayde mylke of *Cocus*, the tortes are more excellent to be eaten with out offence to the stomake. They are so pleasaunte to the taste, and leaue it as well satisfied as though it had byn delighted with many delicate dishes. But to proceede further, whome maiestie shall vnderstand, that in the place of the stone or coornell, there is in the myddell of the sayde carnositie, a voyde place, which neuerthelesse is full of a most cleare and excellent water, in such quantitie as maye fyll a greate egge shell, or more or lesse accordynge to the byggenesse of the *Cocus*. The which water surely, is the moste substantial, excellent and precious to be dronke, that maye bee founde in the worlde. In so much that in the momente when it passeth the palate of the mouth and begynneth to goo downe the throte it seemeth that frome the sole of the foote to the crowne of the headde, there is no parte of the boddye but that feeler the great comfort therby: as it is doubtlesse one of the most excellent thynges that may be tasted vpon the earth, and suche as I am not able by wytyng or toonge to expresse. And to proceede yet further, I say that when the meate of this frute is taken from the vessell thereof, the vessell remaineth as fayre and nette as though it were pullyshed: and is without, of colour inclynng towards blacke, and shyneth or glystereth very fayre. And is within of no lesse delicatenesse. Suche as haue accustomed to drynke in these vesselles, and haue bynne troubled with the disease caused the frettinge of the guttes,

I haue seene one of these frutes opened, the which when it was hole, yf it were shaken the water was harde shogge there in as it were in a bottle, but in tyme it consumed and was partly congeled into a saite substance,

## The hystorie

say that they haue by experience founde it a maruelous remedie ageynst that disease: And that it breakethe the stone and prouoketh vrine. This frute was cauled *Cocus* for this cause, that when it is taken from the place where it cleaueth faste to the tree, there are seene two holes, and aboue them two other naturall holes, which altogether, doo represent the giese and fygure of the cottes cauled *Mumone*, that is, munnkeys, when they crye: whiche crye the Indians caule *Coca*: But in very deede, this tree is a kynd of date trees: and hath the same effecte to heale fretynge of the guttes, that *Plinie* describeth all kyndes of date trees to haue.

Great trees.

There are furthermore in the firme lande, trees of suche byggenesse that I dare not speake thereof but in place where I haue so many wytnesses which haue seene the same as well as I. I say therfore, that a league from *Dariena* or the citie of *Sancti Maria Antiqua*, there passeth a ryuer very large & deepe, which is cauled *Cuti*: ouer the which the Indians had layde a greate tree so trauersinge the same that it was in the steade of a bydge, the which I my selfe with dyuers other that are at this present in yowre maiesties court, haue often tymes passed ouer. And forasmuch as the sayde tree had lyne longe there, and by the great weight therof was so thronke downe: warde and partely couered with water that none could passe ouer it but were weete to the knee, I being then in the yeare 1522. thofficial of Justice in that citie at yowre maiesties appoyntemente, caused an other greate tree to bee layde in that place whiche in lyke maner trauersed the ryuer and reached more the fiftie foote ouer the further syde. This tree was exceeding greate, and rested aboue the water more then thood cubytes. In the faule, it cast downe all suche other trees as were within the reache therof: And discovered certeyne bynnes whiche were so laden with blacke grapes of pleasaunte taste, that they satysfied more then fiftie persons whiche eate theyr fylle therof. This tree in the thickest parte therof, was more then syxtene spannes thicke: And was neuerthelesse but lyttle in respect of many other trees which are founde in this prouince. For the Indians of the coaste and prouince of *Carengia*, make barks or boates therof (whiche they caule *Canoas*) of such byggenesse, beinge all of one hole tree, that some conteyne a hundreth men, some a hundreth and thirrie, and

tyme more, hauninge neuerthelesse suche boyde space within  
 the same, that there is lesse sufficiente roome to passe to and  
 fro through owt all the *Canoa*. Sum of these are so large by  
 syde the length, that they conteyne more then tenne or twelue  
 spannes in breadth, and sayle with twoo sayles as with the  
 master sayle and the trinkette which they make of verrey good  
 cotton. The greatest trees that I haue scene in these partes  
 or in anye other regions, was in the prouince of *Quatro*, the  
 kynge wherof rebellynge from thobedience of yowre maiestie,  
 was persued by me and taken pysoner: At whiche tyme I  
 with my company, passed ouer a very hygh mountayne ful of  
 great trees, in the toppe wherof we founde one tree whiche  
 had three rootes or rather diuisions of the roote aboute the  
 earth in foyme of a tryangle or triuette: so that betwene euery  
 foote of this triangle or three feete, there was a space of  
 twentie foote betwene euery foote. And this of such heyghe  
 aboute the earth, that a laden carte of those wherewith they  
 are accustomed to hyngge home corne in the tyme of harvest in  
 the kyngedome of *Toledo* in Spayne, myght easely haue pas-  
 sed throught euery of those particions or wyndowes whiche  
 were betwene the three feete of the sayd tree. From the earth  
 vppwarde to the trunke of the tree, the open places of the dy-  
 uisions betwene these three feete, were of suche heyghe from  
 the grounde, that a footeman with a iauelyn was not able  
 to reache to the place where the sayde feete ioynd together  
 in the trunke or body of the tree which grew of great heighe  
 in one piece and one hole body, or euer it spredde in bzaun-  
 ches, which it did not before it excedded in heyghe the towre  
 of saynt Romane in the cite of *Toledo*: from whiche heyghe  
 and vppwarde, it sprede very greate and stronge bzaunches.  
 Amonge certeyne Spanyardes which clymed this tree, I my  
 selfe was one. And when I was ascended to the place where  
 it begunne to sprede the branches, it was a maruelous thing  
 to beholde a greate countrey of suche trees towarde the pro-  
 uince of *Abrayme*. This tree was easy to clyme, by reason of  
 certeyne *Besubi* (wherof I haue spoken before) which grew  
 wreathed aboute the tree in suche foire that they seemed to  
 make a scalyng ladder. Euery of the foresayde three feete  
 which bore the boddie of the tree, was twentie spannes in  
 thychenesse. And where they ioynd al together aboute in the  
 trunkes

A maruelous  
 tree.

## The hystorie

trunke or boddye of the tree, the principall trunke was more then fortye and fyue spannes in circuite. I named the mountayne where these trees grow, the mountayne of three footed trees. And this which I haue nowe declared, was seene of all the companye that was there with me when (as I haue sayde before) I tooke kynge *Guaturo* prisoner in the yere 1522. Many thynges more myght here bee spoken as touchynge this matter, as also howe there are many other excellent trees founde of dyuers sortes and difference, as sweete Cedar trees, blacke date trees, and many other: of the which sum are so heauy that they can not stonde aboute the water but synke immediatly to the bottome. And other ageyne as light as a corke. As touchynge all whiche thynges I haue wyrtten more largely in my generall hystorie of the Indies.

kyndlynge of  
fyre without  
fyre,

And forasmuch as at this present I haue entered to intreate of trees, before I passe any further to other thynges, I wyl declare the maner howe the Indians kyndle fyre, only with woodde and without fyre, the maner wherof is this. They take a peece of woodde of two spannes in lengthe, as bygge as the leasse fynger of a mans hande, or as an arrowe well pullyshed, and of a stronge kynde of woodde whiche they keepe onely for this purpose. And where they intende to kyndle any fyre, they take two other peeces of woodde of the dryest and lyghtest that they can fynde, and bynde them fast together one with an other as close as two fyngers ioyned. In the myddest or betwene these, they put the poynt of the fyrste lyttle staffe made of harde and stronge wood which they hold in theyr handes by the toppe thereof, and turne or rubbe it rounde aboute continually in one place betwene the two peeces of woodde which they bounde together vppon the earthe, which by that incessant rubbingge and chafynge, are in short space kyndeled and take fyre.

putrified  
woodde shyn-  
nyng in the  
nyght,

I haue also thought good here to speake sumwhat of such thynges as comme to my remembraunce of certeyne trees which are founde in this lande, and sumetyme also the lyke haue bynne seene in Spayne. These are certeyne putrified troonkes which haue lyne so longe rottyng on the earth that they are verie whyle and shyne in the nyght lyke burnynge fyrebrandes. And when the Spanyardes fynde any of this woodde, and intende pryncipally in the nyght to make warre and

innade

Inuade any prouince when case so requyrezeth that it shalbe necessary to go in the nyght in suche places where they knowe not the way, the formost Christian man whiche guydethe the waye, associate with an Indian to directe hym therein, taketh a lytle starre of the sayde woodde, which he putteth in his cappe hangynge behynde on his shoulders, by the lyght wherof he that foloweth nexte to him, directeth his iourney, who also in lyke maner beareth an other starre behynde hym, by the shynynge wherof the thyrde foloweth the same waye, and in lyke maner do al the rest, so that by this meanes none are losse or stragle owte of the way. And forasmuche as this lyght is not seene very farre, it is the better pollicie for the Christians because they are not thereby disclosed before they inuade theyr enemies.

Furthermoze as touchynge the natures of trees, one particular thyng seemeth woorthy to bee noted, wherof Plinie maketh mention in his natural hystorye where he saythe that there are certeyne trees which conserue euer greene and neuer lose theyr leaues, as the baye tree, the Cedar, the orange tree, and the olyue tree with such other, of the whiche in all togyther he nameth not passe fyue or syxe. To this purpose, I saye, that in the Ilandes of these Indies, and also in the firme lande, it is a thyng of muche difficultie to fynde twoo trees that lose or cast theyr leaues at any tyme. For althowgh I haue diligently searched to knowe the trewth hereof, yet haue I not seene any that lose theyr leaues, eyther of theym which we haue brought owte of Spayne into these regions, as Orange trees, Limons, Ceders, Palmes, or date trees and Pomegranate trees, or of any other in these regions excepte onely *Cassa*, which loseth his leaues and hath a greater thyng appropriate to it selfe onely: which is, that whereas all other trees and plantes of India spreade theyr roottes no deeper in the earth then the depth of a mans heygth or sume what more, not descendyng any further into the ground by reason of the greate heate which is found beneath that depth, yet dooth *Cassa* pearce further into the grounde vntyl it fynd water: whiche by the Philosophers opinion shoulde be the cause of a thynne and watery radycall moystre to suche thynges as drabe theyr nuryshment therof, as fat and vncleuous groundes with temperate heate, yelde a fast & firme moystre

Plinie.

Trees which continue euer greene.

*Cassa*.

A secreate thyng.

Radycall moystre.

## The hystorie

to suche thynges as growe in them, whiche is the cause that suche trees lose not theyr leaues, as the sayde thynne and water. The moysture is cause of the contrarie, as appeareth by the sayde effecte which is seene onely in *Cassia*, and none other tree or plance in all these parties.

### C Of Reedes or Canes.



Haue not thought it conuenient in the chapture before to speake of that whereof I intende now to intreate of reedes or canes to thincence that I woolde not mengle theym with plantes or trees, beinge thynges of the selues woorty to bee particularly obserued. So it is therfore, that in the firme land there are many sortes of reedes, so that in many places they make theyr howses therof, couerynge them with the toppes of the same, and makynge theyr waules of them in lyke maner, as I haue sayde before. And amonge these kyndes of reedes, there is one so greate, that the canes therof are as hygge as a mans legge in the knee, and thre spannes in length frome ioynt to ioynt or more: in so much that euery of them is of capacitie to conteyne a lytle bucket of water. In this kynde, there are founde sum greater and sum lesse, of the which sum they vse to make quyuers for arrowes. There is founde another kynde which suerly is marueplous, beyng lytle hygger then a faulen, the canes whereof are longer then two spannes. These reedes growe one farre from an other, as sum tymes twentie or thirtie paces, and sumetymes alio two or thre leaques. They growe in maner in all prouynces in the Indies: And growe nere to very hygh trees whereunto they leane, and creepe vp to the toppes of theyr braunches, which they imbrase and descende ageyne downe to the earth. Theyr canes are full of mosse cleare water without any maner of tast or sauoure eyther of the canes or of any other thyng: And suche as yf it were taken owte of the freesthelle springe in the worlde. Nor yet is it knowen that euer it hurte any that dronke therof. For it hath oftentimes so chaunced that as the Chyssen men haue traauayled in these regions in desolate wayes where for lacke of water they haue byn in great daunger.

ger to dye for thysse, they haue escaped that perell by reason that they founde the sayde reedes, of the water of whose canes they haue dronke a great quantitie without any hurte thereof enstoyng. Therefore when they fynde these in any place, they make water vesselles of the canes therof, and carry as many of them full of water as may suffice for one dayes ior nay. And sumtyme they carry so many, that they take for euery man two or thre quartes of water which may serue them for many dayes because it doth not corrupte, but remayneth still freshe and good.

There are also certeine plantes which the Christians call *Platani*. These are as hygh as trees, and become as bygge in the trunk as the knee of a man or more. From the foote to the toppe, they beare certeyne longe and large leaues, beinge more then thre spannes in largenes, and about ten or twelue in length: The whiche when they are broken of the wynde, the stalke remayneth hole in the myddest. In the myddeste of this plant in the hyghest parte thereof, there groweth a cluster with forrie or fyfte *Platans* about it, euery of them beinge a spanne and a halfe in length, and as bygge as a mans arme in the smaile, or more or lesse accordyng to the goodnesse of the soyle where they growe. They haue a rynde not very thicke, and easy to bee broken: being within altogether full of a substance lyke vnto the marve of the bone of an ore as it appeareth when the rynde or barke is taken frome the same. This cluster owghyt to bee taken from the plant, when any one of the *Platans* begynne to appere yelow. At which tyme they take it and hange it in theyr houses where all the cluster wareth rype with all his *Platans*. This cluster is a very good frute: And when it is opened and the rynde taken of, there are founde within it many good drye fygges which beyng tasted or stewed in an oven in a close pot or sum such other thynge, are of pleasaunte taste muche lyke the conserve of hony. They putrefie not on the sea so soone as sume other frutes do: but continue fyfteene dayes and more yf they bee gathered sumwhat greene. They seeme more delycate on the sea then on the lande, not for that they any thynge increase in goodnesse on the sea, but because that whereas on the sea or ther thynge are lackyng wherof is plentie on the land, those meares seeme of beste taste which satisfie presente necessitie.

*Platani*

*Figges.*

DD . i .

This

## The hystorie

This troonke or spygge whiche byngeth forth the sayde cluster is a hole peare in growyng and bynyng forth frute. In whiche tyme it hath put forth rounde abowte it tenne or twelue spygges as bygge as the fyrst or principall, and multiplieth no lesse then the principall in bynyngge forth the clusters with frutes lyke wyse at theyr tyme, and also in bynyngge forth other and many spygges as is sayde beefore. From the which spygges or trunks, as soone as the cluster of the frute is taken away, the plante begynneth to dye and wyther, which then they take owt of the grounde bycause it doth none other then occupie it in wayne and without profyte. They are so many and doo so maruelously increase and multiplie, that it is a thyng in maner incredible. They are exceedinge moyste. In so much that when they are plucked by fro the place wher they grow, there issueth forth a great quantitie of water as well owt of the plante as owt of the place wher it growe: In suche sorte that all the moysture of the earth farre abowte, myght seeme to bee gathered to gyther abowte the trunk or blocke of the sayde plante: with the frutes wherof, the antes are so farre in loue, that they are seene in great multitudes in the branches of the plantes. So that for the multitude thereof it sumertyme so chauncerh that men are inforced to take away the plantans frome theyr possession. These frutes are founde at all tymes of the yeare.

*Tunas.*

There is also an other kynd of wyld plantes that groweth in the fyeldes: which I haue not seene but in the Ilande of Hispaniola, althowgh they be founde in other Ilandes of the Indies. These they caule *Tunas*. They growe of a thistle full of thornes, and bynge forth a frute muche lyke vnto great pygges, which haue a crowne lyke medlers, and are within of a hygge coloure, with graynes and the rynde lyke vnto a pygge. They are of good taske: And growe abundantly in the fyeldes in many places. They woozke a straunge effecte in suche as eate them. For if a manne eate two or three or more, they cause his vyne to bee of the verye coloure of bludde, which thyng chaunced vnto my selfe. At whiche tyme as I made water and sawe the colour of my vyne, I entered into a great suspition of my lyfe, beinge so astonysht for feare, that I thought the same had chaunced to me vpon some other cause. In so muche that cruelly my imagination myghte

myght haue doene me hurte, but that they whiche were with me dyd conforzte me immediatly, declarynge the cause therof as they knewe by experyence beynge auncient inhabitours in those regions.

There groweth also an other plante whiche the people of the countrey caule *Bibaos*. This putteyth forth certeyne greight branches and very brode leaues whiche the Indians vse for dyuers purposes. For in sum places they couer theyr houses with the leaues therof cowched and layde after the maner of ghetche, wherunto it serueth very well. Sumtymes also whē it rayneth, they cast these ouer theyr heades to defende them from the water. They make also certeyne chestes whiche they caule *Hauas*, weaued after a straunge sorte and intermixt with the leaues of this *Bibaos*. These chestes are wrought in such fort, that although it rayne vpon them, or they chaunce to faule into the water, yet are not such thynges wette as are within them. They are made of the branches of the sayde *Bibaos* with the leaues weaued togyther therewith. In these they keepe salte and other subtyle thynges. They vse theym also for an other purpose, which is this: That findyng them in the fieldes at such tyme as they haue scarceneste of vyttayles, they dygge vp the rootes of these plantes whyle they are yet younge, or eate the plante it selfe in that parte where it is moste tender, which is from a foote vnder the grounde, where it is as tender and whyte as a reede or bulrush.

And forasmuch as wec are nowe comynge to the end of this narration, it commeth to my rememberaunce to make mention of an other thyng which is not farre from my purpose. And this is howe the Indians do stayne or dye cloth of homeage cotton, or any other thyng which they intende to dye of dyuers coloures: as blacke, tawny, greene, blew, yelowe, and redde, whiche they doo with the barkes or ryndes, and leaues of certeyne trees, whiche they knowe by experyence to bee good for this practise. And by this arte they make coloures in such perfection and excellencie that no better can bee dyed. But this seemeth a straunge thyng, that they doo all this in one selfe same vessel: So that when they haue caused the sayde ryndes and leaues to boyle togyther, they make in the same vessel without any chaunge (as I haue sayde) as many coloures as they lysteth. Whiche thyng I suppose to

*Bibaos.*

*Hauas.*

Dyeing of cotton.

A straunge thyng.

D D D , ii.

comynge

## The hystorie

coomme to passe by the disposition of the colour whiche they haue fyrste gyuen to the thyng that they intende to dye or colour, whether it bee threede, webbe, or clothe, or any thyng that they intende to colour.

¶ Of venemous apples wherewith they  
poyson theyr arrowes.



**L**he apples wherewith the Indian Canibales inueneme theyr arrowes, growe on certeyne trees couered with many braunches and leaues beinge very greene and growyng thicke. They are laden with abundaunce of these euyl frutes, and haue theyr leaues lyke the leaues of a peare tree, but that they are lesse and rounder. The frute is much lyke the muscadell peares of the Ilande of Sicilie or Naples in forme and byggenesse: And are in sum partes steyned with redde spottes, and of very sweete sauoure. These trees for the moste parte, growe euery by the sea coastes and neare vnto the water: And are so fayre and of pleasaunte sauour, that there is no man that seethe theym but wyll desyre to eate therof.

Note.

Canibales archiers.

wherewith they inuenym theyr arrowes

Petrus Arias.

In so much that if it may bee spoken of any frute yett growyng on the earth, I wolde saye that this was the unhappy frute wherof oure fyrste parentes Adam and Eue tasted, wherby they both lost theyr felicitie and procured death to them & theyr posteritie. Of these frutes, and of the greate antes whose byrpyng causeth swellynge (whereof I haue spoken els where) and of the cutes or lylartes, and byppers, and such other venemous thynges, the Canibales which are the chiefe archiers amonge the Indians, are accustomed to poyson theyr arrowes wherewith they kyll all that they wounde.

These venemes they mengle together and make thereof a blacke masse or composition which appereth lyke vnto very blacke pytche. Of this poyson I caused a great quantitie to be burnt in *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in a place two leagues and more within the lande, with a greate multitude of theyr inuenemed arrowes and other munition, with also the house wherein they were reserued. This was in the yeare. 1514. at suche tyme as tharmy arriued there with capitayne *Pedro Arias de villa* at the

the commaundemente of the Catholyke kynge Don Ferdinando. But to retorne to the hystory. These apples(as I haue said) growe neare vnto the sea. And wheras the Christians which serue your maiestie in these parties, suppose that there is no remedy so profitable for such as are wounded with these arrows, as is the water of the sea if the wounde be much washed therewith, by which meanes sum haue escaped although but fewe, yet to save the trowthe, albeit the water of the sea haue a certeyne causlike qualitie agaynst popson, it is not a sufficient remedy in this case: nor yet to this day haue the Christians perceaued that of fiske that haue byn wounded, thre haue recovered. But that your maiestie may the better consider the force of the veneme of these trees, youe shall further vnderstande that yf a man doo but repose hym selfe to sleepe a lytle whyle vnder the shadow of the same, he hath his head and eyes so swolne when he wakeneth, that the eye lyddes are toynd with the chekes. And if it chaunce one droppe or more of the dewe of the sayde tree to faule into the eye, it utterly destroyeth the syght. The pestilent nature of this tree is such that it can not bee declared in fewe woordes. Of these there groweth greate plentie in the goulfe of *Vraba* towards the North coast on the Weste and East syde. The wood of these trees when it burneth, maketh so greate a smoke that noo man is able to abyde it, by reason it causeth so greate a payne in the headde.

The water of  
the sea.

The goulfe of  
*Vraba*.

Amonge other trees which are in these Indies as well in the Ilandes as in the firme lande, there is an other kynde which they caule *Xigua*, wherof there is greate plentie. They are very hygh and streyght, and fayre to beholde. Of these they vse to make pykes and tauclens of dyuers lengthes and byggenesse. They are of a fayre colour betwene russette and whyte. This tree byngeth forth a greate frute as bygge as a papauer or poppie and much lyke therunto. It is very good to be eaten when it is ripe. Swete of this they gette a very cleare water wherewith they washe theyr legges and sume tymes all theyr boddyes when they feele theyr flesh to werpe, fayne, or loose. The which water, bysides that it hath a very dyngne qualitie, it hath also this propertie, that what so euer it toucheth, it scyneth it blacke by lytle and lytle vntyll it be as blacke as giete, which colour can not be taken away

*Xigua*

## The hystorie

in lesse space then tenne or twelue dayes. And if the nayle bee but touched therewith, it is so steeled that it can by no meanes bee taken away vntyll it epyther faile of, or growe owt and bee clypped away by lyttle and lyttle, as I my selfe haue oftentimes scene by experience.

Hobi.  
Sum thynke  
these to be mi  
robalaues.

There is an other kynde of trees which they caule Hobi. These are very great and fayre, & caule holtsome aper where they growe and a pleasaunt shadow, and are founde in great abundaunce. Theyr frute is very good, and of good tast and sauoure, and much lyke vnto certeyne damsons or prunes be inge lyttle and yelow. But theyr stone is very great: by reason wherof they haue but lyttle meate. Theyr barke or rinde boyled in water, maketh a holtsome bathe for the legges, by cause it bindeth and steperth the loosenesse of the flesshe so sensibly that it is a marueyle to consyder. It is suerly a holtsome and excellent bathe ageynst such fayntnesse: And is the beste tree that may bee founde in those parties to sleepe vnder. For it causeth no heauynesse of the headd as doo dyuers other trees. Whiche thyng I speake because the Christians are muche accustomed in those regions to lye in the fyeldes. It is therfore a common practise amonge them, that where so euer they fynd these trees, there they spreade theyr mattresses and beddes wherein they sleepe.

Date trees,

Thinhabitan  
tes of the sea  
of Sur.

There are also a kynde of hygge date trees and full of thornes. The woodde of these is moste excellent: beinge very blacke, and thynnyng, and so heauy that no parte thereof can swimme aboute the water, but synketh immediatly to the bottome. Of this woodde they make theyr arrowes and dartes: Also iauelyns, speares, and pykes. And I sawe pykes, because that in the coastes of the sea of Sur, beyonde Esquegua and Vracha, the Indians vse great and longe pykes made of the woodde of these date trees. Of the same lykelysse they make clubbes and swoordes and dyuers other weapons. Also hesselles and housholde stuffe of dyuers sortes very fayre and commodious. Furthermoze of this woodde the Christians vse to make dyuers muscalle instrumentes, as clarifimbals, lutes, gyterns, and suche other, the whiche byspide theyr fayre thyngye coloure lyke vnto giere, are also of a good sounde and very durable by reason of the hardenesse of the woodde.

After that I haue sayde thus much of trees and plantes,  
I haue

I haue thought good also to speake sumwhat of herbes. you shall therefore vnderstande that in these Indies there is an herbe much lyke vnto a yelowe lylie, abowte whose leaues there growe and creepe certeyne cordes oz laces. as the lyke is partly seene in the herbe which we caule lased saucry. But these of the Indies are muche bygger, and longer : and so stronge that they tye they hangynge beddes thereby whiche they caule *Hamacas* wherof we haue spoken elswhere. These cordes, they caule *Cabuia* and *Henequen*, which are al one thing saupnge that *Henequen* is lesse and of a fyner substaunce as it were line : And the other is grosser lyke the wycke oz thoste of hempe, and is imperfecte in comparison to the other. They are of coloure betwene whyte and yelowe lyke vnto abarne, and sum also whyte. With *Henequen* whiche is the moste subtyle and fyne threede, the Indians sawe in sunder fetters, cheynes, oz barres of Iren in this maner. They moue the threede of *Henequen* vppon the iren which they intende to sawe oz cutte, drawynge the one hande after the other as doo they that sawe, putynge euer nowe and then a portion of fyne sande vppon the threede, oz on the place oz parte of the Iren where they continue rubbynge the sayde threede. So that yf the threede be woine, they take an other, and continue in theyr woork as befoze vntyl they haue cutte in sunder the iren although it bee neuer so bygge : and cut it as yf it were a tender thyng and easye to bee sawne.

And for asmuch as the leaues of trees may bee counted amonge herbes, I wyll here speake sumwhat of the qualitie of the leaues of certeyne trees which are founde in the Iland of *Hispaniola*. These trees are so full of thornes, that there is no tree oz plante that seemeth moze wyld and deformed : so that I can not well determyne whether they bee trees oz plantes. They haue certeyne bzaunches full of large and deformed leaues, which bzaunches were fyrste leaues lyke vnto the other. As the bzaunches made of these leaues growe foorthe in length, there commeth other leaues of them. So that in fine it is a difficult thyng to describethe the forme of these trees except the same shulde bee doone by a paynter wherby the eye myght conceaue that wherein the tooonge sayleth in this behalfe. The leaues of this tree are of such vertue, that beyng well beaten and spreadde vppon a cloth after the maner of a playster

An herb that beareth the cordes.

*Cabuia* & *Henequen*.

A straig thinge.

Leaves.

A leafe of great vertue.

playster

## The hystorie

playster, and so layde to a legge or arme that is broken in many pieces, it healeth it in fyfene dayes, and maketh it as hole as though it had neuer byn broken. Duryng the tyme of this operation, it cleaueth so fast to the flesh that it can not without much difficultie bee taken away. But as soone as it hath healed the soie and wrought his operation, it looseth it selfe from the place where it was layde, as I my selfe and dyuers other which haue proued it, knowe by experience

### Of fyshes and of the maner of fyshynge.



In the sea coastes of the firme lande, there are dyuers and sundry kyndes of fyshes muche differynge in shape and forme. And althoughe it be impossible to speake of all, yet wyl I make mention of sum. And fyrst to begynne at Sardynes, yowre shall vnderstande that there is founde a kynde of these fyshes very large and with redde rayles, beinge a very delicate fysh. The beste kyndes of other fyshes are these: Moxarre, Diabace, Biettes, Dabaos, Thon backes, and Salmones. All these and dyuers other which I don or now remember, are taken in great quantitie in ryuers. There are yshelwyse taken very good creuylles. There are also founde in the sea, certeyne other fyshes: as soles, mackelless, turbuttes, Palamite, Lixze, Polpi, Chieppe, Xaibas, Locustes, Dysters, erccadyng great Tortoyles, and Tiburoni of marvelous byggennesse: Also Manates, and Murene, and manye other fyshes which haue no names in oure language. And these of such diuersitie and quantitie as can not bee expressed without large wyrtynge and longe tyme. But to let passe to intreate particularly of the multitude of fyshes, I intende to speake chiefly and sumwhat largely of thre sores of most notable fyshes: wherof the fyrst is, the great Tortoyles, the seconde is cauled Tiburon, and the thyrde Manate. And to begynne at the fyrst, I saye that in the Ilande of Cuba, are founde great Tortoyles (which are certeyne shell fyshes) of such byggennesse that tenne or fyfene men are scarcely able to lyfte one of them out of the water, as I haue byn informed of credible persons dwellynge in the same Ilande. But

Tiburons.  
Manates

Great Tortoy  
les,

of that which I my selfe haue seene, I can testifie that in the  
firme lande in the byllage of Acla there are of this sorte sum  
taken and kylled of suche bypggenes that sixe men with much  
difficultie coulde scarcely drabe them owte of the water. And  
commonly the least sorte of them are as much as two men may  
cary at a burden. That which I sawe lifted vp by fyre men,  
had her shell a yerde and a quarter in length, and in breadth  
more then fyne yardes. The maner of takynge them. is this.  
It sumtymes chaunceth that in theyr greate nettes (whiche  
they caule shoote nettes) there are founde certeyne Toxopoles  
of the common sorte in great quantities. And when they  
coome owte of the sea and bringe forth theyr egges and go  
rogyther by companies from the sea to scade on the lande,  
the Christians or Indians folowe theyr steppes whiche they  
fynde in the lande, and soone ouertake them bycause they are  
very heauy and slowe in goynge, although they make all the  
haste they can to returne to the sea as soone as they espie any  
boddie. When they that pursue them haue ouertaken them,  
they put a stake or stake vnder theyr legges and ouerturke the  
on theyr backs as they are yet runnyng, so that they can go  
no further nor yet ryle ageyne or turne. And thus they suffer  
them to lye styll whyle they folowe after the reste which they  
ouerturke in lyke maner: And by this meanes take very ma-  
nye at suche tymes as they coome furth of the sea as I haue  
sayde. This fyfthe is very excellent and holosome to be eaten,  
and of good taste. The seconde of the three fyfthes wherof I  
haue spoken, is the Tiburon. This is a very greate fyfthe and  
very quicke and swifte in the water, and a cruell deuourer.  
These are often tymes taken, as well when the shippes are vn-  
der sayle in the Ocean, as also when they lye at anker, or at  
any other time, and especially the leaste kynd of these fyfthes.  
When the shippes are vnder sayle, the biggest sorte are taken  
after this maner. When the Tiburon seeth the shippe sailinge  
he foloweth it stoppynge behynde. The which thinges the  
mariners seeinge, cast furthe all the fyfthe of the shippe into  
the sea for the fyfthe to eate, who neuerthelesse foloweth the  
with equal pace although they make neuer suche haste wyth  
full wynd and sailes, and waloweth on euery syde and about  
the shippe: And thus foloweth it sumetyme for the space of  
a hundredth and fyftie leagues and more. And when the ma-  
riners

## The hystorie

riners are disposed to take them, they cast doone by the sterne  
 of the shippe, a hoke of yren as bigge as the biggest finger of  
 a mans hande of thre spannes in lengthe and crooked like a  
 fyfthe hooke with beardes accordinge to the bignesse thereof,  
 and fastened to an iren chayne of fyue or syxe linkes neare vnto  
 to thende, and from thence tyed with a greate rope, fastening  
 also on the hooke for a bayte, a piece of sum fische, or hogges  
 flesh, or sum other flesh, or the bouwelles and intralles of  
 an other Tiburon whiche they haue taken before, whiche may  
 easely bee doone, for I haue seene nyne taken in one day.  
 And if they wold haue taken moze, they myght also. Thus  
 when the Tiburon hath pleasauntly folowed the ship a longe  
 biage, at the lengthe he swalloweth the baite with the hooke.  
 And as well by his stryuinge to flye or escape, as also by the  
 swyfte passage of the shippe, the hooke ouerthwarteth and  
 catcheth hold of his chappes. The which fische whe it is take,  
 it is of suche huge biggenesse that twelue or fyfeteene men  
 are scarcely able to drawe it out of the water and lifte it into  
 the shippe: Where one of the mariners gyueth it many knoe-  
 kes on the headde with a clubbe or beetle until he haue slaine  
 it. They are sumtymes founde of tenne or twelue foute long,  
 and of fyue, syxe, or seuen spannes in breadth where they are  
 broadest. They haue very greate and wyde mouthes to the pro-  
 portion of the reste of the boddies, and haue two rowes of  
 teethe the one sumewhat separate from the other, of cruell  
 shape & standing very thicke. When they haue slayne this  
 fyfthe, they cutte the boddy therof in smaule pices, and put  
 it to drye, hangynge it thre or foure dayes at the cozdes of  
 the sayle clothes to drye in the wynde, and then eat it. It  
 is doubtelesse a good fyfthe and of greate commoditie to serue  
 the shippes for vitalles for many dayes. The leaste of these  
 fyfthes are mosse holsome and tender. It hath a skinne much  
 like to the skynne of a sole, wherunto the sayde Tiburon is  
 like in shape. Which I saye because Plinie hath made men-  
 tion of none of these thre fishes among the number of them  
 wherof he wyrteth in his natural historie. These Tiburons  
 coomme furth of the sea and enter into the ryuers, where they  
 are no lesse perelous then greate lifartes or Crocodiles wher-  
 of I haue spoken largely before. For they deuoure men, kine,  
 and hofses, euen as doo the Crocodiles, They are very daun-  
gerous

Plinie.

Crocodyles.

getous in certeyne wasthyng places or pooles by the ryuers  
 rydes, and where they haue deuoured at other tymes. Dy-  
 uers other fyshes both greate and smaule, of sundry sortes  
 and kyndes are accustomed to folowe the shippes goynge by:  
 der sayle, of the which I wyl speake sumwhat when I haue  
 wyrtten of Manate which is the chyde of the thre whereof Manates.  
 I haue promysed to entreate. Manate therefore, is a fysh  
 of the sea, of the byggest sorte, and muche greater then the  
 Tburon in length and breadth: And is very brutyshe and  
 vyle, so that it appeareth in forme lyke vnto one of those  
 great vesselles made of goates skynnes wherin they vse to ca-  
 ry newe wyne in *Medina de Campo* or in *Arenudo*. The headde of  
 this beaſt is lyke the head of an oxe, with also lyke eyes. And  
 hath in the place of armes, two great stumps wherewith he  
 stymmeth. It is a very gentle and tame beaſt: And cometh  
 oft tymes out of the water to the next shore where if he find  
 ny herbes or grasse, he feedeth therof. More men are accus-  
 tomed to kyl many of these and dyuers other good fyshes with  
 theyr crossebowes, pursuinge them in barkes or Canoas, by  
 cause they stymme in maner about the water. The whiche  
 thynge when they see, they drawe them with a hooke tyde at  
 a smaule corde, but sumwhat stronge. As the fysh syeth a-  
 way, the archer lettereth go and prolongeth the corde by lyt-  
 tle and lyttle vntyll he haue lette it go many fathams. At the  
 ende of the corde, there is tyde a corke or a piece of lyght  
 woodde. And when the fysh is goone a lyttle way, & hath  
 coloured the water with his bludde, and feeleth hym selfe to  
 faynt and drawe towarde thende of his lyfe, he resorte the to  
 the shore, and the archer foloweth gatherynge by his corde:  
 wherof whyle there yet remaine sixe or epyght fathams or sum  
 what more or lesse, he draweth it towarde the lande, and  
 draweth the fysh therewith by litle and lyttle as the waues  
 of the sea helpe hym to doo it the more easely. When with  
 the helpe of the reste of his companie he lyfteth this greate  
 beaſt out of the water to the lande, beinge of such bygnelle  
 that to conuey it from thence to the citie, it shalbe requysite to  
 haue a cartte with a good yoke of oxen, and sumtymes more,  
 accordyng as these fyshes are of byggenesse, sum being much  
 greater then other sum in the same kynde as is scene of other  
 beaſtes. Sumtymes they lyft these fyshes into the Canoa or  
 barke

## The hystorie

barke, without drawynge them to the lande as before. For as soone as they are slayne, they flote aboue the water. And I beleue verely that this fyfthe is one of the best in the world to the taste, and the lykett unto scethe. Especially so lyke unto biese, that who so hath not seene it hole, can iudge it to bee none other when he seerthe it in pieces then verye biese of beale. And is cerreynty so lyke unto scethe, that all the men in the world may herein bee deceaued. The taste lyke wyfe, is lyke unto the tast of very good beale, and lasteth longe yf it bee poudered. So that in fine, the base of these parties, is by no meanes lyke unto this. This Manate, hath a cerceine stone or rather bone in his headde within the brayne, which is of qualicie greatly appropriate ageynste the disease of the stone, if it bee burnt and grounde into smaule powder, and taken fastynge in the mornynge when the payne is felte, in such quantitie as may lye vpon a penne with a drawght of good wyte wyne. For beyng thus taken three or foure mornynge, it acquietereth the greif as dyuers haue tolde me whiche haue proued it trewe. And I my selfe by testimonie of sight, doo wytnesse that I haue seene this stone fought of dyuers for this effecte.

The fyfthe  
Manate.

A remedy a-  
geynst the  
stone.

The sworde  
fyfthe.

Tunnye.

Turbue.

There are also dyuers other fyfthes as bygge as this Manate: Amonge the which there is one cauled *Vibullus*. This fyfthe beareth in the toppe of his headde, a sworde beinge on euery syde full of many sharpe teeth. This sworde is naturally very harde & stronge, of foure or fyue spannes in length and of proportion accordynge to the same byggenes. And for this cause is this fyfthe cauled *Spada*: that is the sworde fyfthe. Of this kynde sum are found as lytle as sardines: and other so greate, that two yokes of oxen are scarcely able to drawe them on a carre. But whereas before, I haue promysed to speake of other fyfthes which are taken in these seas whyle the shippes are vnder sayle, I wyl not forget to speake of the Tunnye which is a great and good fyfthe, and is ofentymes taken and kylde with troute speares and hookes cast in the water when they play and stymme aboute the shippes. In lyke maner also are taken many turbuts which are very good fyfthes as are lyghly in all the sea.

And here is to bee noted, that in the greate Ocean sea, there is a straunge thyng to bee considered, whiche all that haue

haue byn in the Indies affirme to bee true. And this is, that lyke as on the lande there are sum prouinces fertile and fruitful, and sum barren, euen so dooth the lyke chaunce in the sea: So that at sum wyndes the shippes sayle fiftie or a hundredeth, or two hundredeth leagues and more, without taking or seinge of one fythe. And ageyne in the selfe same Ocean, in sum places, all the water is seene tremble by the mouyng of the fythes, where they are taken abundantly.

Note.

It commeth further to my remembraunce to speake sum what of the flyinge of fythes, which is doubtlesse a straunge thyng to beholde, and is after this maner. When the shippes sayle by the greates Ocean folowynge theyr wyage, there cymeth sumtymes on the one syde or on the other, many companies of certeyn lytle fythes, of the which the byggest is no greater then a sardyne: and soo diminish the lesse and lesse from that quantitie that sum of them are very lytle. These are cauled *Volatori*: that is, flyinge fythes. They cyme by great companies and flockes in such multitudes that it is an astonishment to beholde them. Sumtymes they cyme but lytle from the water: & (as it chaunceth) continew one syght for the space of a hundredeth pases and sumtymes more or lesse before they faule ageyne into the sea. Sumtymes also they faule into the shippes. And I remember that on an encuyng when all the company in the shippe were on theyr knees syngynge *salve regina* in the highest parte of the Castell of the poope, and sayled with a full wynde, there passed by vs a focke of these flyinge fythes: and came so neare vs that many of them fell into the shippe, amonge the which, two or three fell hard by me which I tooke aloue in my hande: so that I myght well perceauie that they were as bigge as sardynes and of the same quantitie, haunye two wynges or quylles growynge out of theyr synnes, lyke vnto those wherewith all fythes swimme in ryuers. These wynges are as longe as the fythes theyr selues. As longe as theyr wynges are moyste, they beate them vp in the ayer. But as soone as they are drye, they can continew thei syght no further then as I haue sayde before, but faule immediatly into the sea, and so cyme ageyne, and flye as before from place to place.

flyinge fythes.

It

## The hystorie

The Iland of  
Bermuda.

Not to hie for  
the pye, nor to  
lowe fro: the  
crowe.

In the yere, A thousand fyue hundredeth fiftene, when I came fyrst to informe your maiestye of the state of the thynge Indya, and was the yere folowynge in Flaunders in the tyme of your moste fortunate successe in these your kynge: domes of Aragonie and Castyle, wheras at that byage I say led aboute the Iland <sup>Bermuda</sup> otherwyse cauled Garza, beyng the furthest of all the Ilandes that are founde at this daye in the worlde, and arryvyng there at the deapthe of eight ycardes of water, and dystant from the land as farre as the shotte of a piece of ordynance, I determined to sende some of the shyppe to lande as well to make searche of suche thynge as were there, as also to leaue in the Ilande certayne hogges for increase. But the tyme not seruyng my purpose by reason of contrarie wynde, I could byng my shippes no nearer the Ilande beyng twelue leagues in lenger and fyve in breadth and about thyrty in circuite, lying in the thyrty thre & degre of the northe syde. Whyle I remayned here, I sawe a strepe and combatte betwene these sypinge fyshes and the fyshes named gylte heades, and the foules cauled seamewes and cozmozantes, whych suerly seemed vnto me a thynge of as greate pleasure and solace as coulde bee deuysed, whyle the gylte heades swamme on the bynne of the water and sum tymes lyfted their shulders aboue the same to rayse the swymmyng fyshes out of the water to dyue them to syght, and folowe them swymming to the place where they faule to take and eate them sodaynly. Agayne on the other syde, the seamewes and cozmozantes, take manye of these sypinge fyshes: so that by this meanes theye are nother safe in the ayre nor in the water. In the selfe same perrell and daunger doo men lyue in this mortall lyfe wherein is no certayne securtye ne: ther in hygh estate nor in lowe. Which thynge suerly ought to put vs in remembraunce of that blessed and safe resting place whych god hath prepared for such as loue hym, who shall acquyre and synne the trauayles of this troubelous worlde wherein are so manye daungours, and byng them to that eternall lyfe where they shall fynde eternall securtye and reste. But to returne to the hystorie: these byrdes and foules whych I sawe, were of the Ilande of <sup>Bermuda</sup> nere vnto the whych I sawe these sypinge fyshes. For they coulde bee of no other lande, forasmuche as they are not accustomed

to wander farre frome the coastes where they are bredde.

Of thincrease and decrease, (that is) rpylunge and  
faullpyng of our Ocean sea and Southe sea  
caulled the sea of *sur*.



Wyll nothe speake of certeyne thynges whiche  
che are seene in the prouynce, or at the leaste  
in the cite of golden Castyle otherwyse caul-  
led *Betagua*, and in the coastes of the North sea  
and of the South sea caulled the sea of *sur*.

*Betagua*

Not omitting to note one synguler and mer-  
uelous thyng which I haue consydered of  
the Ocean sea. wherof hytherto no cosmogra-  
pher, pylote or maryner or any other haue satisfyd me.

I say therfore as it is well knowen to your maiestye and all  
such as haue knowlege of the Ocean sea, that this greate  
Ocean casteth from it selfe the sea *Mediterraneum* by the mouthe  
of the straight of *Sibilterra*: in the which the water from thend  
and furtheste parte of that sea, euen vnto the mouth of the  
sayde straight, eyther in the East towarde the coaste common-  
lye cauled *Leuante*, or in any other parte of the sayde sea *Me-*  
*diterraneum*, the sea doothe not so faule nor increase as reason  
wolde iudge for so greate a sea. But increaseth verry lyttle  
and a smaule space.ouertheleste, withoute the mouthe of  
the straight in the mayne Ocean, it increaseth and fauleth  
verry muche and a great space of grounde from syre houres to  
syre houres, as in all the coastes of Spayne, Britanny, Flan-  
ders, Germanye and England. The selfe same Ocean sea in  
the syrie lande newly founde, in the coastes of the same ly-  
pyng towarde the North, dothe neyther rpyle nor faule, nor  
lykewyse in the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba* and all the other  
Ilandes of the same sea lyeing towarde the north, for the  
space of thye thousande leaques, but ouelye in lyke maner as  
doothe the sea *Mediterraneum* in *Italye*: whiche is in maner no-  
thyng in respect to that increase and decrease whiche the  
sayde Ocean hath in the coastes of Spayne and Flaunders.  
But this is yet a greater thyng, that also the selfe same  
Ocean in the coastes of the sayde syrie lande lyeing towarde  
the South in the cite of *Panama*, and also in the coaste of that  
land

The west  
Ocean.  
The sea *Me-*  
*diterraneum*.

*Hispaniola*  
*Cuba*,

The South  
sea.

The power  
and wisdom  
of god is seene  
in his crea-  
tures.

lande whiche lyethe towarde the East and Weste frome that  
citie, as in the Ilande of pearles or *Margarita* whiche the *Ju-*  
*dians* caule *Tarrarequi*, and also in *Taboga* and *Oroque*, and in all  
other Ilandes of the southe sea of *sur*, the water rylseth and  
fauleth so much, that when it fauleth it goth in maner olw of  
syghte, which thyng I my selfe haue seene oftentymes.  
And here your maiestie may note another thyng, that from  
the north sea to the southe sea beyng of such difference  
the one from the other in rylsyng and faulyng, yet is the lan-  
de that deuydeth theym not paste eyghtene or twente lea-  
gues in breadthe frome coaste to coaste. So that bothe the  
sayde seas beyng all one Ocean this strange effecte is a  
thyng worthy greatly to bee considered of al such as haue  
inclination and desyre to knowe the secrete woorkes of na-  
ture wherein the infinite powre and wylsome of god is seene  
to bee such as may allure all good natures to reuerence and  
loue to diuine a maiestie. And whereas by the demonstrations  
of lerned men I am not satisfyed of the natural cause hereof,  
I content my selfe to knowe and beleue that he which hath  
made these thynges, dooth knowe this and many other whi-  
che he hath not granted to the reason of man to comprehend,  
much lesse to so base a wyl as myne is. They therefore that  
are of greater vnderstandyng, shall searche the cause hereof,  
for them and for me, forasmuch as I haue onely put the mat-  
ter in question as a wytnesse that haue seene the experience of  
the thyng.

Of the straght or narrow passage of the lande lyng be-  
twene the North and South sea, by the whiche spyes  
way much sooner and easier be brought from the I-  
landes of *Molucca* into *Spayne* by the West Ocea-  
an then by that way whereby the *Portugales*  
sayle into East India.



I hath byn an opinion amonge the *Cosmogra-*  
*phers* and *pylottes* of late tyme, and other  
which haue had practise in thynges touchyng  
the sea, that there shulde bee a straght of wa-  
ter passyng from the North sea of the firme, in-  
to the South sea of *sur*, whiche neuerthelesse  
hath

hath not byn scene nor founde to this daye. And suerlye yf  
there be any suche strayght, we that inhabite those partes do  
thinke the same shoulde bee rather of lande then of water. For  
the tyne lande in sum partes therof is so straght and nar-  
rowe that the Indyans saye that frome the mountaynes of  
the prouynce of *Esquegua* or *Vrraca*, (whych are betwene the one *Esquegua*  
sea and the other) If a man ascend to the toppe of the moun-  
taines and looke towarde the North, he maye see the wa-  
ter of the North sea of the prouynce of *Beragua*. And ageyne  
lookynge the contrarie waye, may on the other syde towarde  
the Southe, see the sea of *sur* and the prouynces whych  
comfynne with it, as doo the terrytoyes of the two Lozdes  
or kynges of the sayde prouynces of *Vrraca* and *Esquegua*. And I  
beleue that if it bee as the Indyans saye, of al that is hether-  
to knowen, this is the narrowest straght of the tyne lande,  
whiche I sume asseyne to bee full of rough mountaynes. Yet  
doo I not take it for a better waye, or so shorte as is that  
whych is made from the porte cauled *Nomen dei* (whiche is in  
the North sea) vnto the newe cite of *Panama* beyng in the *Panama*  
coaste and on the banke of the sea of *sur*. Whiche waye is like  
wyse very rough ful of thicke wods, mountaines, ryuers, val-  
leys, and verye diffyculte to passe through, and can not bee  
doone withowt greate laboure and trauayle. Sum measure  
this waye in this part, to bee from sea to sea .xxviii. leaques,  
whych I suppose to bee rather .xx. nor for that it is any more  
by measure, but bicause it is rough and dyffyculte as I haue  
sayde, and as I haue founde it by experyence hauynge nowe  
twyse passed that way by foote: countynge from the porte and  
village of *Nomen Dei* vnto the dominion of the Cacique of *Iuana*  
ga otherwyse cauled *Capira*. viii. leaques: And from thense  
to the ryuer of *Chagre*, other .viii. leaques. So that at this  
ryuer beinge .xvi. leaques from the sayde porte, endeth the  
roughnesse of the way. Then from hense to the marvelous  
brydge are two leaques: And beyonde that, other two vnto  
the porte of *Panama*: So that all togyther in my iudgemente,  
make .xx. leaques. And if therfore this nauigation may bee  
founde in the South sea for the trade of spices (as we trust in  
God) to bee brought from thense to the sayde porte of *Panama*  
(as is possible enough) they may afterwarde easly passe to the  
North sea notwithstandinge the difficultie of the waye of  
the

## The hystorie

the .xxx. leagues aforesayde. Whiche thyng I affirme as a man well trauayled in these regions, hauynge twyle on my fete passed ouer this straght in the yeare .1521. as I haue sayde. It is furthermore to bee vnderstode, that it is a marueilous facilitie to byng spices by this way which I wil now declare. From *Panama* to the ryuer of *Chagre*, are foure leagues of good and sayre way by the which carges may passe at pleasure by reason that the mountaynes are but fewe and lytle, and that the greatestte parte of these foure leagues is a playne grounde voyde of trees. And when the carges are coomme to the sayde ryuer, the spices may bee carped in barkes and pinnacles. For this ryuer entereth into the North sea spue .xvi. leagues lower then the port of *Nomen dei*, and emptieth it selfe in the sea nere vnto an Ilande cauled *Bastimento*, where is a very good and safe port. Your maiestie may now therfore consider howe great a thyng and what commoditie it maye bee to conuey spices this way, forasmuch as the ryuer of *Chagre* hauynge his originall only two leagues from the South sea, contineweth his course & emptieth it selfe into the other North sea. This ryuer runneth fast and is very greare, and so commodious for this purpose as may be thought or desyred. The marueilous bridge made by the worke of nature, being two leagues beyonde the sayd ryuer, and other twoo leagues on this syde the porte of *Panama*, so lyng in the mydde way betwene them both, is framed naturally in such sort that none which passe by this biage see any such bridge or thynke that there is any such buyldyng in that place vntyll they bee in the toppe therof in the way toward *Panama*. But as soone as they are on the bydge, lookynge towarde the ryght hande, they see a lytle ryuer vnder them which hath his chancell distant from the fete of them that walke ouer it, the space of twoo speares length or moze. The water of this ryuer is very shallowe, not passyng the depth of a mans legge to the kneec: and is in breadth betwene thyrtye and fortye pases: and faulterhe into the ryuer of *Chagre*. Towarde the ryght hand standyng on this bydge, there is nothyng scene but great trees. The largenesse of the bydge, conteyneth .xv. pases: and the length therof about threescore or fourtescore pases. The arche is so made of moste harde stone, that no man can beholde it without admiration, beinge made by the hyghe and omnipotent

The Ilande  
Bastimento.

The marue-  
lous bridge.

rent creature of all thynges. But to retorne to speake sum-  
what more of the conueying of spices, I say that when it shal  
please almyghy god that this nauigation aforesayde shal bee  
founde by the good fortune of yowre maiestie, and that the  
spices of the Ilandes of the South Sea (which may also bee  
otherwyse cauled the Ocean of the East India in the whiche  
are the Ilandes of *Molucca*) shalbe brought to the sayd coaste  
and the porte of *Panama*, and bee conueyed from thence (as we  
haue sayde) by the firme lande with cartes vnto the ryuer of  
*Chagre*, and from thence into this ovr other sea of the North,  
from whence they may afterward bee brought into Spayne,  
I say that by this meanes the vyage shal bee shortened more  
then seven thousande leaques, with muche lesse daunger then  
is by the viage nowe vsed by the way of Commendator of *Ap-  
sa* capitayne vnder yowre maiestie, who this present yeare at-  
tempted a vyage to the place of the sayde spices. And not on-  
ly the way is thus much shortened, but also a thyrde parte of  
the tyme is abbreviate. To conclude therfore, if any had he-  
therto attempted this vyage by the sea of *sur*, to seeke the I-  
landes of spices, I am of firme opinion that they shuld haue  
byn founde longe sence, as doubtelesse they maye bee by the  
reasons of Cosmographie.

The Ilandes  
of *Molucca*.

The commo-  
dities of this  
viage.

Some thynges that are of one kynde, dyffer in forme  
and qualitie, accordynge to the nature of the place  
where they are engendred or growe. And of the  
beastes cauled Tygers.



In the firme lande are founde many terribble  
beastes which sum thinke to be Tygers. Which  
thyng neuerthelesse, I dare not affirme, con-  
siderynge what auctoures doo wyte of the  
lyghenes and agilitie of the Tyger, whereas  
this beast beyng other wyse in shape very like  
vnto a Tyger, is notwithstandinge very slowe. Yet trwe it  
is, that accordynge to the manayples of the worlde and diffe-  
rences which naturall thynges haue in dyuers regions vnder  
heauen and dyuers constellations of the same vnder the whi-  
che they are created, wee see that sum suche plantes and her-  
bes as are hurtfull in one countrey, are harmelesse and hol-  
Tigers.

plantes and  
herbes.

## The hystorie

Birdes.

Men.

Sheepe.

Bulles.

Tiger.

Battes.

Plinie.

the Tiger.

Some in other regions. And byrdes which in one prouince are of good taste, are in other so vnlausery that they may not bee eaten. Men likewise which in sum countreys are blacke, are in other places whyte: and yet are both these and they men.

Even so may it bee that Tygers are lyght in sum region as they whyte, and maye neuerthelesse bee slowe and heauy in these Indies of your maiestie wherof we speake. The sheepe of Arabie drawe theyr tayles longe and bigge on the ground, and the bulles of Egypt haue theyr heare growynge towarde theyr headdes: yet are those sheepe and these bulles. Men in sum countreys are hardy and of good courage, and in other naturally fearefull and brutyshe. All these thynges and many more which may bee sayde to this purpose, are easy to bee proued and woorthy to bee belened of suche as haue redde of the lyke in autours or traauayled the worlde, wherby theyr owne syght may teache them the experience of these thynges wherof I speake. It is also manifest, that *Izcca* wherof they make theyr breade in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is deadly poison yf it bee eaten greene with the iuse: And yet hath it no suche propertie in the firme land where I haue eaten it many times & found it to bee a good frute. The bats of Spayne although they bite, yet are they not venemous. But in the firme lande many dye that are bytten of them. And in this fourme may so many thynges bee sayde that tyme shall not suffice to wyte, wheras my intent is only to proue that this beast may be a Tiger or of the kind of Tigers although it be not of such lyghtnesse and swiftnes as are they wherof Plinie and other autours speake, discrybynge it to bee one of the swyfteste beastes of the lande, and that the ryuer of *Tigris* for the swifte course therof was cauled by that name. The first Spaniardes which sawe this Tyger in the firme lande, dyd so name it. Of the kynde of these was that which Don Diego Columbo the Admirall sent your maiestie owre of newe Spayne to *Toledo*. Theyr heades are lyke to the heades of Lyons or Lions, but greater. The rest of all theyr boddies and theyr legges, are full of blacke spottes one nere unto an other and diuided with a circumference or frynge of redde colour shewing as it were a fayre woork and correspondente picture. About theyr croopes or hynder partes, they haue these spots bydgest: and lesse and lesse towarde theyr bellies, legges, and heades

heades. That which was brought to Toledo, was younge and but lytle, and by my estimation, of thage of thre yeares. But in the firme lande there are many founde of greater quantitie. For I haue scene sum of thre spannes in heygth, and more then fyue in length. They are beastes of greate force, with strong legges, and well armed with nayles and fanges which be caule dogge teeth. They are so fierce that in my iudgement no reall lyon of the byggest sorte is so stronge or fierce. Of these, there are many founde in the firme land whiche deuour many of the Indians & do much hurte otherwyle. But syns the comming of the Christians, many haue byn kylde with Crossebowes after this maner. As soone as the archer hath knowlege of the haunt of any of these Tygers, he gothe searchoyng theyr trafe with his crossebowe and with a lytle hounde or beagle and not with a greehounde, bycause this beaust wolde soone kyll any dogge that wolde venter on hym. When the hounde hath founde the Tyger, he runneth about hym bayinge continually, and approcheth so neare hym snappinge and grynnyng with so quicke flyinge and returnyng, that he hereby so molested this fierce beaust that he dyuerthe hym to take the next tree, at the foote whereof he remaineth styl bayinge and the Tyger grynnyng and shewyng his teeth, whyle in the meane tyme the archer commeth neare, and .xii. or .xiiii. pases of, stryketh hym with the querele of his crossebowe in the breste, and dyeth incontinent, leauynge the Tyger in his trauayle for lyfe and death, bytyng the tree and eatinghe earth for firceneste. Then within the space of twoo or thre hours or the day folowynge, the archer returneth thither, and with his dogge fyndeth the place where he lyeth deade.

The huntynge  
of tigers.

In the yeare, 1522. I with the other rulers & magistratres of the citie of *Sancta Marks Antiqua* in *Dariena*, toke order in our counsaile, A rewarde of foure or fyue pieces of golde to be giuen to every man that kylde any of these Tygers: by reason wherof many were kylde in shorte space both with crossebowes and also with dyuers snares and ingens. But to conclude, I wyll not obstynately stand in opynion whether these beastes bee Tygers or Panthers, or of the number of any other such beastes of spotted heare, or also peradventure sum other newe beaust vnknewen to the olde wyters as were many

A rewarde for  
kyllynge of ti  
gers.

## The hystorie

many other wherof I haue spoken in this booke. Of which chynge, I doo not greatly meruaile, for asmuche as vnto owt tyme thys greate parte of the worlde was vnknoen to the antiquitie: In so muche that none of the wyters of that age, nor yet Ptolomie in his Cosmographie, or any other sence hym, haue made any mention herof, vntill the yere Ad myrall Don Chrysstophere Colonus discovered the same.

Colonus com-  
pared to her-  
cules.

The pillars  
of hercules.

the straighes  
of Sibilterra.

Note.

PLVS VLTRA.

howe farre  
The mperous  
maiestie exel-  
leth hercules.

A chynge doutelesse without comparyson muche greater then that whiche is sayd of Hercules, that he syde gaue thence-  
rance of the sea *Mediterraneum* into the Ocean, whiche the  
Greces coulde neuer doo befoze hym. And herof rylethe the  
fable that the mountaynes of Calpe and Abila (which are di-  
rectly one agaynst an other in the strayght of *Sibilterra*, the one  
beyng in Spayne and the other in Affricke) were ioyned togi-  
ther befoze they were opened by Hercules, who erected those  
hys pylers whiche your maiestie gyue in token of pychemy-  
nence and lyke enterpryses with lykewyse these hys wordes  
PLVS VLTRA: wordes doutelesse worthy for so greate an  
vniuersall an Emperoure, and not conuenient for any other  
Pryncce. Forasmuche as your holy Catholyke Maiestie haue  
spredde them in so straunge and remote regyons, so manye  
thoulande leagues further than euer dyd Hercules. And cer-  
teynlye syr, If there had byn an Image of golde made in the  
praysse and fame of *Colonus*, he had as well deserued it as any  
of those men to whom for theyr noble enterpryse the antiquy-  
tie gaue deuyne honoure, if he had byn in their tyme. But  
to retorne to the matter wherof I began to speake: I neede  
say no more of the forme of thys beaste, for as muche as your  
Maiestie haue seene that whych is yet alyue in *Toledo*. And  
suerly the keeper of your Maiesties lyons, who hath taken vp-  
pon hym the charge to tame this beaste, myght better haue be-  
stowed his paynes in an other chynge that myght haue bynne  
more profitable for the safe garde of his lyfe bycause this Ty-  
ger beinge yet but younge, wyl dayly bee stronger and fiercer  
and increase in malice. The Indians (and especially they of  
the firme lande in the prouince whiche the Catholyke Kyng  
Don Ferdinando commaunded to bee cauled golden Castyle)  
caule this beaste *Ochi*. This thinge is straunge that chaunced  
of late: that wheras the Tiger wherof we haue made mention  
befoze, wolde haue kylde his keeper that then kept hym in a  
cage

A tiger made  
same.

cage, was in fewe dayes after made so tame that he ledde her  
tyed only with a smaule corde and playde with her so family-  
arly that I maruayled greatly to see it, yet not without cer-  
teyne beleefe that this frendshyp wyll not laste longe without  
daunger of lyfe to the keeper, forasmuch as suerly these beas-  
tes are not meete to bee amonge men for they? fiercenes and  
cruell nature that can not bee tamed.

¶ Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the  
firme lande, and of they? women.

**T**he maners and customes of these Indians, are  
dyuers in diuers prouinces. Sum of them take  
as many wyues as them lyke, and other lyue  
with one wyfe whome they forsake not with-  
out consent of both parties, which chauncethe  
especially when they haue no chyldren. The no-  
bilitie aswel men as women, repute it infamous to toyne with  
any of base parentage or strangers, except Christians, whom  
they count noble men by reason of they? valientnes, although  
they put a difference betwene the common sorte and the other  
to whom they shewe obedience, countynge it for a great mat-  
ter and an honorable thyng yf they bee beloued of any of the.  
In so much that yf they knowe any Christian man carnally,  
they keepe they? sayth to hym, so that he bee not longe ab-  
sent farre from them, for they? intent is not to bee widewes  
or to lyue chaste lyke religious women. Many of theym haue  
this custome, that when they perceaue that they are with  
chylde, they take an herbe wherewith they destroy that is con-  
ceaued. For they say that only wel aged women shulde beare  
chyliden, and that they wyl not so beare they? pleasures and  
defozme they? boddies with bearynge of chyliden, wherby  
they? teares becoome loose and hangynge which thyng they  
greatly dyspayle. When they are deliuered of they? chyliden  
they go to the ryuer and washe them. Whiche doone, they?  
bludde and purgation ceaseth immediatly. And when after  
this they haue a fewe days absteyned fro the company of men,  
they becommen so straght as they say which haue had carnall  
familiaritie with them, that such as vse them, can not with-  
out much difficultie satisfie they? appetite. They also whiche  
neuer had chyliden, are euer as byrgins. In sum partes they  
weare

The Indian  
women.

The men of  
India.

beare certeyne litle apertis rounde about them befoze and behynde as lowe as to theyr knees and hammes, wherewith they couer theyr priuie partes, and are naked all theyr boddie bysye. The principall men beare theyr priuities in a holowe pye of golde: but the common sort haue them inclosed in the shelles of certeyne great welkes, and are bysye bitterly naked. For they thynke it no more shame to haue theyr cods seene then any other parte of theyr boddies. And in many prouinces bothe the men and women go utterly naked without any such couerture at al. In the prouince of *Ciuea* they call a man *Obuy*, and a woman *Ira*: which name is not greatly disagreeable to many both of theyr women and of owtres.

These Indians geue great honour and reuerence to theyr *Cacique* (that is) theyr kynges and rulers. The principall *Cacique*, hath twelue of his most stronge Indians appoynted to beare hym when he remoueth to any place, or gothe abrod for his pleasure. Two of them cary hym lpytyng vpon a longe piece of woodde which is naturally as lyght as they can fynd. The other tenne folowe nexte vnto hym as foote men. They keepe continually a trottyng pace with hym on theyr shulders. When the twoo that cary hym are weery, other twoo cocomme in theyr places without any disturbance or stey. And thus if the way bee playne, they cary hym in this maner for the space of .xv. or .xx. leaques in one day. The Indians that are assigned to this office, are for the moste parte slaues or *Naboriti*, that is, such as are bounde to continuall seruice.

I haue also noted that when the Indians perceauie them selues to bee troubled with to much bludde, they lette them selues blud in the calves of theyr legges & byawnes of theyr armes. This doo they with a very sharpe stone, and sumtymes with the smaule toothe of a byper, or with a sharpe recde or thorne.

All the Indians are commonly without beardes: In so much that it is in maner a maruayle to see any of them ether men or women to haue any downe or heare on theyr faces or other partes of theyr boddies. Albeit, I sawe the *Cacique* of the prouince of *Caturapa* who had heare on his face and other partes of his boddie, as had also his wyfe in suche places as women are accustomed to haue. This *Cacique* had a great part of his body paynted with a blacke colour which neuer fadeth: And is much lyke vnto that wherewith the *Moyses* paynt them selues.

The kyng is borne on mens backs.

Lettinge of bludde.

They haue no beardes.

They paynte theyr bodies.

selues in Barberie in token of nobilitie. But the Moores are  
 paynted specially on theyr bysage and throte and certeyne  
 other partes. Likewyse the principall Indians vse these  
 payntynge on theyr armes and brestes, but not on theyr by-  
 sages, bycause amonge them the slaues are so marked. Wher  
 the Indians of certeyne prouinces go to the battayle (espect-  
 ally the Caniball archers) they carry certeyne helles of greate  
 welkes of the sea which they blowe and make therewith greate  
 sounde muche lyke the noyse of hornes. They carry also cer-  
 teyne tymbrels which they vse in the steade of drummes. Also  
 they carry plumes of feathers, and certeyne armure of golde:  
 especially greate and rounde pieces on theyr bysches and Collin-  
 ets on there armes. Likewyse other pieces whiche they put  
 on theyr heades and other partes of theyr bodyes. For they  
 esteeme nothyng so much as to appeare galante in the wars,  
 and to go in most comely order: that they can deuyse, glyste-  
 ryng with precious stones, iewelles, golde, and feathers. Of  
 the leade of these welkes or perewinkles, they make certeyne  
 lytle beades of diuers sortes and colours. They make also  
 lytle brassellets whiche they mengle with gaudes of golde.  
 These they towle about there armes from the elbowe to the  
 wryste of the hande. The lyke also doo they on theyr legges  
 from the knee to the soles of theyr feete in token of nobilitie.  
 Especially theyr noble women in dyuers prouinces are ac-  
 customed to weare such Jewelles, and haue theyr neckes in ma-  
 nner laden therewith. These beades and Jewels and such other  
 trynkettes, they call *Caquiras*. Wherof these also, they weare  
 certeyne rynges of golde at theyr eares and nostrilles which  
 they boze full of holes on both sides, so that the ringes hange  
 vppon theyr lippes. Sum of these Indians, are poulde and  
 rounded. Albeit, commonly both the men and women take it  
 for a decent thyng to weare longe heare, which the women  
 weare to the myddelt of theyr shulders and cut it equally, es-  
 pecially about theyr browes. This doo they with certeyne  
 harde stones which they keepe for the same purpose. The prin-  
 cipall women when they reates faule or become loose, beare  
 them vp with barres of golde of the length of a spanne and a  
 halfe, wel wrought, and of such byggeneite that sum of them  
 way more then two hundred Castilians or ducades of golde.  
 These barres haue holes at both endes, wherewith they tye

The Canibal-  
 les.

Armure of  
 golde.

Their galan-  
 ties in the  
 warres.

Their Jewels

howe the wo-  
 men beare vpon  
 their eares,  
 with barres  
 of golde.

two small cordes made of cotton at euery ende of the barres. One of these cordes gorch ouer the Shulder, and the other vnder the arme holes where they tye both together, so that by this meanes the barre beareth by theyr teates. Sum of these chiefe women go to the battayle with theyr husbandes, or when theyr them selues are regentes in any prouinces, in the which they haue all thynges at commaundement and execute the office of generall capitaynes, and cause them selues to be carryed on mens barks in lyke maner as doo the Laciques of whom I haue spoken before.

The stature and colour of the Indians.

The Indians cauled Coronati.

The Glande of gigantes.

Lucas.

These Indians of the firme lande are muche of the same stature and colour as are they of the Glandes. They are for the most part of the colour of an olyue. If there bee any other difference, it is more in byggnesse then otherwyse. And especially they that are cauled Coronati, are stronger and bygger then any other that I haue seene in these parties, except those of the Glande of gigantes which are on the south syde of the Glande of Hispania nere vnto the coastes of the firme lande: And lykewyse certeyne other which they caule Yucatos which are on the north syde. All which chieflly, although they bee no gigantes, yet are they doubtlesse the byggest of the Indy: and that are knowen to this day, and commonly bygger then the Flemynges: and especially many of them as well women as men, are of very hyghe stature, and are all archiers, bothe men and women. These Coronati inhabite thirtie leagues in length by these coastes from the poynt of Canos to the greete ryuer which they caule Guadachibir nere vnto Sancta Maria de gracia. As I trauesed by those coastes, I fylled a butte of frehe water of that ryuer fyre leagues in the sea frome the mouthe therof where it fauleth into the sea. They are cauled Coronati (that is crowned) because theyr heare is entie round by theyr teates, and poulde lower a great compasse abowte the crowne much lyke the fryers of saynt Augustines order. And because I haue spoken of theyr maner of wearynge theyr heare, here cometh to my remembrance a thyng which I haue oftentimes noted in these Indians. And this is, that they haue the bones of the scullis of theyr heades foure tymes thicker and much stronger then ours. So that in coming to hand strokes with them, it shalbe requisite not to strike them on the heades with wooddes, for so haue many wooddes bene broken

The scullis of the Indians heades.

broken on theyr heades with lyttle hurt doone. And to haue sayde thus much of theyr customes and maners, it shal suffice for this tyme, because I haue more largely treated herof in my generall hypozie of the Indies. yet haue I nocher there nor here spoken much of that parte of the firme lande whiche is cauled *Nova Hispania* (that is, newe Spayne whereof the *Islande of Lucatana* is part) forasmuche as *Ferdinando Cortese* hath wyrtten a large booke thereof.

Of the houses of these Indians, I haue spoken sufficient ly elsewhere. yet haue I thought good to informe your maiestie of the buyldynge and houses which the Christians haue made in dyuers places in the firme lande. They buylde them nowe thetfore with tynne solars or loftes, and with loopes and wyndowes to open and shutte. Also with strange ymber and very fayre bozdes. In suche sorte that any noble man maye wel and pleasantly bee lodged in tyn of them. And amonge other, I my selfe caused one to bee builded in the cite of *Sancta Maria Antigua in Darien*, whiche coste me more then a thousande and fyue hundredeth Castellians: being of such sort that I may well interceyne and commodiously lodge any Lorde or noble man, reseruyng also a parte for my selfe and my famelie. For in this may many householdes bee kepte both above and beneath. It hath also a fayre garden with many orange trees bothe sweete and sowre: Ceders also, and Lemondes, of the which there is nowe great plentie in the houses of the Christians. On one syde of the garden, there runneth a fayre ryuer. The situation is very pleasant, with a good and hote some aper, and a fayre prospecte abowte the ryuer. In fine, where trulle is that in fewe yeares al thynges in these regions shall growe to a better state accordynge to the holy intention of your maiestie.

Of the chiefe *Islandes Hispaniola* and *Cuba*.

**T**he Indians which at this present inhabite the *Islande of Hispaniola*, are but fewe in number, and the Christians not so many as theyr ought to bee forasmuche as many of them that were in this *Islande*, are gonne to other *Islandes* and to the fyrry lande. For beyng so the

*New Spaine.*

*The houses of the Christians in India*

*Darien.*

*Garden.*

*The ryuer.*

*Islands.*

## The hystorie

men are desirous of newe thinges.

The commonnes of this Ilande Englande and Sicilie.

Gold mines, Cotton, Cassia.

Suger.

Plantes and herbes.

Great thinges hindered by respecte of presente gaires.

moste parte younge men bymariied, and desirous dayly to see newe thinges wherin mans nature delicteth, they were not willinge to continue longe in one place: especially seeinge daile other newe landes discovered where they thought there might sooner fynde there riches by beinge present at the firste spoyle. Wherin neuerthelesse their hope deceaued many of them, and especially suche as had houses and habitacions in this Ilande, for I certepnly beleue, contrarye my selfe hererin with the Iudgement of many other, that if any one wyse had no more sightes then only this Ilande, it shuld in shorte tyme bee suche as not to giue place eyther to Sicilie or Englande: wheras euen at this present there is nothyng wherefo:e it shulde malice their prosperitie not beinge inserte oute to them in any flicite, that in manner the heauens can graunte to any lande: beinge furthermore suche as maye enrich many prynces and byngdomes by reason of manye riche golde mines that are in it of the beste golde that is founde in this day in the worlde, and in greatest quantite. In this Ilande, nature of her selfe byngeth furthe suche aboundance of cotton that if it were wrought and maynteyned there shuld be more and better then in any parte of the worlde. There is so greates plentie of excellent Cassia that a greates quantite is brought from thence into Spayne: from whence it is caried to dyuers partes of the worlde. It increaseth so muche that it is a marvelous thinge to consider. In this are manye by the sheppes wher suger is wroughte, and that of such perfectenes and goodnes, and in suche quantite that shippes come laden therewith yearly into Spayne. All suche seedes, settes, or plantes, as are brought out of Spayne and planted in this Ilande, becommen muche better, bigger, and of greater increas then they are in any parte of owre Europe. And if it chaunce otherwyle that sumetymes they prosper not so well, the cause is that they which shulde tyll and husband the grounde, and sow and plant in dewe seasons, haue no respect hereunto, beinge impatient whyle the wheate and bynes were ripe, beinge gyven to wanderynge and other affayres of present gaires (as I haue sayd) as searchyng the gold mines, fyshyng for pearles, and occuppyng marchaundises, with such other trades, for the greedy folowynge wherof, they neglecte and contempne both sowynge and plantynge. Suche frutes as are brought owte of Spayne, into this Ilande, prof-

per maruelously and waze type all kyndes of the ycare: as herbes of all sortes very good and pleasaunt to bee eaten. Also many pomegranates of the best kynde, and oranges bothe sweete and sowre. Lykewylse many saye Lynones & ceders: and a great quantitie of all such as are of sharpe, sowre, and better taste. There are also many fygge trees whiche bynge furth theyr frute all the hole ycare. Lykewylse those kynd of date trees that beare dates: and dyuers other trees and plantes which were brought owt of Spayne thither.

Beastes doo also increase in lyke abundaunce: and especially the herdes of kyne are so augmented both in quantitie and number, that there are now many pastures of cattayle that haue more then two thousand heades of neate: and sum thre or foure thousand, and sum moze. Wylde these, there are very many that haue herdes of foure or fyue hundred. And trewth it is, that this yland hath better pasture for such cattayle then any other countrey in the worlde: also hollesome and cleare water and temperate ayer, by reason whereof the herdes of such beastes are much bygger, fatter, and also of better taste then owtis in Spayne bycause of the ranke pasture whos mofure is better digested in the herbe or grasse by the continuall and temperate heate of the soonne, wherby being made more fatte and vinctuous, it is of better and moze redfast nuryshment. For continuall and temperate heate, dooth not only drawe muche mofure owt of the earth to the nuryshment of such thynges as growe and are engendered in that clyme, but dooth also by moderation preserve the same from resolution and putrefaction, digestynge also and conden saynge or thickenynge the sayde mofure nuryshment into a gummie and vinctuous substance as is seene in all suche thynges as growe in those regions. And this is the only naturall cause as well that owtayne great beastes and of longe lyfe (as the Elephant and Rhinoceros with such other) are engendered only in regions nere vnto the Equinocall, as also that the leaues of such trees as growe there, doo not wither or faule, vntyll they bee thruste owt by other, accordynge to the verse of the poete which sayth: Et nata pira piris, et ficus in ficibus exiit. That is in effecte peares growe vpon peares, and fygges vpon fygges. Plinie also wyrieth, that suche trees are neuer infected with the disease of trees that the Latines

Oranges.  
pomegranates.

figges at the  
ycare.  
Dates.

Beastes.

Great herdes  
of cattail.

Good pasture.

The effecte of  
continual and  
moderate  
heate.

The cause of  
fatte nurysh-  
ment.

Beastes of  
longe lyfe in  
regions a-  
bout the E-  
quinocall  
line  
Trees whose  
leaves doe  
not wither

cause

The cancer  
of the tree

Longe lynde  
men in India.

Paradise  
neare the e  
quinocctial line

Sheepe and  
hogges

Dogges and  
cattes becom  
wyld

The situation  
of hispaniola.

The citie of  
sandomenico

cause, whiche we may call the moyme of cancer, being  
but a certeyne putrefaction by reason of a waterye murther  
ment not well consolidate. The same thyng hath bynne the  
cause that certeyne Philosophers considerynge also that  
man is the hottest and moyste beast that is (which is the best  
complexion) as also that men lyue longeste in certeyne partes  
of India nere the Equinoctiall (where per to this day Summe  
liue to thage of a hundred and fiftie yeares) were of opinion  
that yf mankynde had any begynnynge on the earth, that  
place owght by good reason to be vnder or not farre from the  
Equinoctiall lyne for the causes aforesayde. Sum of the di-  
uines also bypon lyke consideration haue thought it agreeable  
that theyr Paradyse shulde bee about the same within the pre-  
cincte of those ryuers which are named in the booke of Gene-  
sis. But to lette passe these thynges and to returne to the  
hystorie.

In this Islande furthermore, are many sheepe and a great  
number of hogges: of the which (as also of the wyne) manye  
are become wyld: And lyke wyse many dogges and cattes of  
those which were brought out of Spayne. These (and espe-  
cially the dogges) doo much hurte amonge the cattayle by rea-  
son of the negligence of the hearde men.

There are also many horses, mares, and mules, and such  
other beastes as serue thuse of men in Spayne, and are much  
greater then they of the fyrste brode brought thither out of  
Spayne. Sum places of the Islande are inhabited, although  
not so many as were requisite: Of the which I wyl saye no  
more but that all the regions of the Islande are so well situate  
that in the course of tyme all thynges shall comme to greater  
perfection by reason of the rychesse and pleasantnesse of  
the countrey and fertilitye of the soyle.

But nowe to speake sumwhat of the principall and chiefe  
place of the Islande, which is the citie of San Domenico: I saye  
that as touchynge the buildynges, there is no citie in Spaine  
so muche for so muche (no not Barcelona whiche I haue often  
tymes seene) that is to bee preferred before this generallye.  
For the houses of San Domenico, are for the most parte of stone  
as are they of Barcelona: or of so strong and well wrought  
earth that it maketh a singuler & stronge byndyng. The situa-  
tion is muche better then that of Barcelona by reason that the  
streets are

are much larger and playner, and without comparyson more directe and straight furth, for beinge buylded notw in othe tyme, by lye the commoditie of the place of the foundation, the streates were also directed with corde, compasse and measure, wherein it excelleth al the citie that I haue seene. It hath the sea so nere, that of one syde there is no morespac between the fra and the citie then the waules. And this is about tyrie pales where it is furthest of. On this syde, the waters of the sea beare vppon the naturall stoncs and sayre coaste. On the other parte, hard by the syde and at the foote of the houses, passeth the ryuer *Oxama* whiche is a marueylous pozie wherein laden shippes ryle very nere to the lande and in manner vnder the house wyndowes, & no further from the mouth of the ryuer where it entereth into the sea, then is from the foote of the hyll of *Monkye* to the monastery of saynt frances or to the lodge of *Barlarena*. In the myddest of this space in the citie, is the fortress and castle, vnder the which and iwen tic pales distant from the same, passe the shippes to arple sum what further in the same ryuer. From the entraunce of the shippes vntyll they cast anchor, they sayle no further from the houses of the citie then thyrtye or fortye pales, because of this syde of the citie the habitation is nere to the ryuer. The port or hauen also, is so sayre and commodious to defraight or burlade shippes as the syke is founde but in fewe places of the worlde. The chimneyes that are in this citie, are aboue fyre hundred in number, and such houses as I haue spoken of before. Of the which sum are so sayre and large that they maye well receaue and lodge any lord or noble manne of Spayne with his trayne and familie. And especially that which Don Diego Colon viceroi vnder your maiestie hath in this citie, is such that I haue no man in Spayne that hath the syke by a quarter in goodnesse comperynge all the commodities of the same. Aske wyle the situation therrof, as beinge aboue the sayde pozie and altogether of stone and hauege many sayre and large roomes with as goodly a pierspect of the lande and sea as maye be deuysed, seemeth vnto me so magnificent and princelyke that your maiestie maye bee as well lodged therin as in any of the mooste exquisite builded houses of Spayne. There is also a cathedrall church buylded of lare where as well the byshop accordyng to his rightie, as also the canones are wel indued. This church is wel buylded of stone

The river of  
sama

The hauen

A cathedrall  
churche and  
monasterie in  
Hispania.

An hospitale.

and lyme, and of good worke man shyppe. There are further more three monasteries bearing the name of saynt Dominike, saynt Francis, and saynt Marie of Merceda: The whiche are all well hapned although he be so far from ye as they of Spayne. But speakinge with our preiudice of any other religious monasterie, yowre maiestie may bee well assured that in these three monasteries, god is as wel serued as in any other religious house with men of holy lypunge and vertuous example. There is also a very good hospitall for the ayde and succour of poore people, whiche was founde by Michaell Balla- ment theasurer to yowr maiestie. To conclude, this cite fro day to day increaseth in welth and good order, alwel for that the sayde Admirall and viceroy with the lord Chauncelour and counsaile appoynted there by yowr maiestie, haue theyr continuall abydinge here, as also that the richest men of the Ilande resorte hyther for theyr moste commodious habitation and trade of such marchaundies as are eyther brought out of Spayne or sent hyther from this Iland which now so aboundeth in many thynges that it serueth Spayne with many commodities, as it were with vsury requityng such benefites as it fyrst receaued from thence.

The people

The people of this Ilande are commonly of somewhat lesse stature then are the Spanyardes, and of a tanyng or cleare browne colour. They haue wyues of theyr owne, and absteyne from theyr dowghters, sisters, and mothers. They haue large forheades, longe blacke heare, and no beades or heare in any other parts of theyr bodies alwel me as women, except very fewe as perhaps scarcely one amonge a thousand. They go as naked as they were borne, excepte that on the partes which may not with honestie bee seene, they weare a certeyne lease as brode as a mans hande, which neuerthelesse is not kepte close with suche diligence but that sometymes a man may see that they thynke sufficiently hydde.

No wormes

In this Ilande are certeyne glo woormes that wyne in the nyght as doo owres. But are muche bygger and gyue a greater lyght: In so much that when the men of the Ilande goe any iorneyes in the nyght, they beare summe of these woormes made fast abowt theyr fiere and beade, in suche sorte that he that shulde see them a farre and ignorant of the thyng, wolde bee greatly astonysht therat. By the lyght of these also, the women

Women woodke in theyr houses in the night. These woodmes they caule *Cicuas*: They lyght lasterly for the space of thre dayes, and diminissheth as they begynne to dye vp.

There is also a kynd of crows whose breath synkerh in the moynynge and is sweete at after noone. The excrement which they auoyde, is a lypynge worme.

Crowes syn-  
kyng and  
sweete.

As touchynge other thynges of this Ilande wherof Peter Martyr hath more largely intreated in his Decades, I haue thought it superfluous to repeat the same ageyne owte of this hypoxie of Gonzalus Ferdinandus: but haue here gathered only suche thynges as epyther are not touched of Peter Martyr, or not so largely declared: as I haue doone the lyke in all other notable thynges which I haue collected owte of this Summarie of Gonzalus.

C Of the Ilande of Cuba and other.



f the Ilande of Cuba and the other, as the Ilandes of *sanchi Iohannis* and *Iamaica*, the same maye bee sayde in maner in all thynges as before of *Hispaniola* although not so largely. yet in lesse quantitie doo they brynge forth the lyke thynges: as gold, copper, cattayle, trees plantes, fysshes, and such other of the whiche wee haue spoken there.

Sayne Iohn  
his Ilande.  
*Iamaica*.

In Cuba, is a certeyne kynde of *partiches* beinge verpe litle, with theyr fethers much of the colour of turtle doones: but are of muche better taste to bee eaten. They are taken in great number. And beinge brought wyld into the houses, they becoome as tame within the space of thre or foure dayes as though they had byn hatched there. They becommme exceadynge fatte in thort space, and are doubtelesse the most delicate and pleasaunt meate that euer I haue eaten. But to let passe many other thynges that myght here bee sayde, and to sprake of two maruelous thynges which are in this Iland of Cuba: wherof the one is, that a valley conteynyng two or thre leagues in length betwene two mountaynes, is full of a kynde of very harde stones of suche perfecte roundenesse and lyke vnto pelletes of gunnes that no arte can make better or more exactly polisshed. Of these, sum are as smaule

*partiches*.

pelletes for  
gunnes  
wrought by  
nature.

## The hystorie

as pelletes for handegunnes : and other so increasynge bygger and bygger from that quantitie, that they may serue for all sortes of artyllerie althoughe they bee of byggenesse to receaue one or two or moze quintales of powder, euery quintale concepnynge one hundredth weyght : or of what other quantitie so euer they bee. These pelletes are founde through oute al the balley within the earth as in a myne, which they digge and take oute such as they neede of all sortes.

A fountayne  
of the pyche  
of Bitumen.

The other marueylous thinge of this Island is this : That farre from the sea, there stteth out of a mountayne a certeyne lycour much lyke the clep of Babilon cauled *Bitumen* or lyke vnto pytche in great quantitie and such as is very commodious for the calkynge of shippes. This faultereth continually from the rocke and runneth into the sea in suche abundance that it is seene flotynge aboute the water on euery side of the sea there about as it is dyscuen from place to place by the wynde or course of the water.

Quintus Cursius

Bitumen of  
Babilon.

Panuco

Quintus Cursius wyrteth in his hystorie, that great Alexander came to the citie of *Memi* where is a great caue or denne in the which is a sprynge or fountayne that continually auoydethe a great quantitie of *Bitumen* in such sort that it is an easy thing to beleue that the stones of the walles of Babilon myght be layde therewith accordynge as the sayde auctoure wyrteth. I haue seene this myne of *Bitumen*, not only in the Island of *Cuba*, but also such an other in newe Spayne, which was founde of late in the prouince of *Panuco* where it is much better then the other of *Cuba*, as I haue seene by experience in calkynge of shippes.

C Of the lande of *Baccaleos* cauled *Terra Baccalearum*, situate on the North syde of the firme lande.



*Baccaleos.*

Shortly after that your Maiestie came to the citie of *Toledo*, there arryued in the moneth of *November*, *Steven Gomes* the pylot who the yere before of 1524. by the commaundement of your maiestie sayled to the North partes and founde a greate parte of lande continueate from that which is cauled *Baccaleos* discoursynge towarde the West to the .xl. and .xli. degree, fro whence he broughte

certeyne Indians (for so caule wee all the nations of the newe founde landes) of the whiche he brought sum with hym from thence who are yet in Toledo at this present, and of greater nature then other of the firme lande as they are commonlye. Theyr colour is much lyke thother of the firme lande. They are great archers, and go couered with the skynnes of dyuers beastes both wyld and tame. In this lande are many excellent fures, as martens, sables, and such other ryche fures of the which the sayde pilote brought summe with hym into Spayne. They haue syluer and copper, and certeyne other metalles. They are Idolaters and honour the soonne and moone, and are seduced with suche superstitions and errours as are they of the firme.

Judians.

Ryche fures  
and syluer.

Idolaters.

And to haue wytten thus muche, it maye suffice of suche thynges as haue semed to me most woorthye to be noted in the Sumarie of Gonzalus Ferdinandus wytten to Thēperoursmalesie

Of other notable thynges gathered owte of dyuers autours: And fyrste of the vniuersal carde and newe worlde.

**T**he hole globe or compase of the earth was dyuided by the auncient wytters into thre partes, as Europa, Affrica, and Asia: whiche partes conteyne in longitude .180. degrees, begynnynge the fyrst degree at the Ilandes of Canarie. And conteyne in latitude toward the North .63. degrees, begynnynge the fyrste degree frome the Equinoctiall: And .10. degrees toward the South. All the reste of the longitude which conteyneth other .180. degrees, is discovered of late tyme, as the West India cauled the newe worlde, bycause none of the owlde autours had any knowlege or made any mention therof. All that therfore is cauled newe which is Westwarde from the Ilandes of Canarie. And thus accomptynge these .180. degrees toward the East discovered in owlde tyme, with the other .180. degrees discovered of late dayes, they make .360. degrees, which is al the circle of the Equinoctiall in the sphere. Also the part aboue the .63. degrees of the North latitude, was founde by men of late tyme, as Norway and Brutlande with many other provinces.

West India  
the newe  
worlde.

The circumference  
of the  
Equinoctiall  
lyne.  
The North  
regions.

## The hystorie

**The South  
regions.**

vinces. Likewise the part more south then 15. degrees of latitude, was discovered of late dayes, although Ariane and Plinie say that it was known in olde tyme: whiche yf it were, yet had they no suche particular description thereof as we haue in these dayes.

¶ A discourse of the voyage made by the Spaniards  
rounde aboute the worlde.



he voyage made by the Spaniards rounde about the worlde, is one of the greatest and most marueplous thynges that hath bynne known to olde tyme. And although in many thynges we excell olde aunciente predecessors, in this especiall wee so farre ex-

\* \* \* \*

**Don Peter  
Martyr.**

ceede all they inuentions, that the lyke hath not heretofore byn known to this day. This voyage was written particularly by Don Peter Martyr of Angleria being one of the counsaile of Theemperours Indies, to whom also was committed the writing of the history and examination of all suche as returned from thence into Spayne to the cite of Seville, in the yeare. M. D. xxii. But sendyng it to Rome to bee printed in that miserable tyme when the cite was sacked it was lost and not founde to this day or any memory tyme: nyng therof, sayng suche as sum that redde the same haue bozne in mynde. And amonge other notable thynges by hym written as touchyng that voyage, this is one, that the Spaniards haupyng sayled about thre yeaeres and one moneth, and the most of them notyng the dayes, day by day (as is the maner of all them that sayle by the Ocean) they founde when they were returned to Spayne, that they had loste one daye: So that at they arryual at the porte of Seville beinge the seuenth day of September, was by they accompt but the sixth day. And where as Don Peter Martyr declared the strange effecte of this thyng to a certeyne excellent man who for his singuler lernyng was greatly aduanced to honoure in his common welthe and made Theemperours ambassadoure, this worthy gentelman who was also a greare Philosopher and Astronomer, answered that it coulde not otherwyle chaunce into them haupyng sayled thre yeaeres continually, euer for  
loopyng

**Don. sacked**

**A day lost in  
three yeaeres  
and one mo.  
geth.**

loyng the soonne towarde the West. And sayde furthermo<sup>re</sup>  
 that they of olde tyme obserued that all suche as sayled be-  
 hynde the soonne towarde the West, dyd greatly lengthen the  
 day. And albeit that the sayde booke of Peter Martyr is pe-  
 rished, yet hath not fortune permitted that the memorie of  
 so woorthy and marueylous an enterpryse shulde utterly bee  
 extincte: forasmuch as a cerreyne noble gentleman of the cy-  
 tie of Vincenza in Italie, cauled master Antonie Pigafetta  
 (who beinge one of the coompanie of that vyage and after  
 his returne into Spayne in the Shippe Victoria, was made  
 knyght of the Rhodes) wrote a particular and large booke  
 thereof which he gaue to Theemperours Maiestie, and sente a  
 coppie of the same into Fraunce to the lady Regente moother  
 vnto the frenche kynge, who committed it to an excellent phi-  
 losopher cauled master *Jacobus Faber*, hauyng longe studied in  
 Italy, wyllyng him to translate it into the frenche tooenge.  
 This booke therefore was printed fyrst in the frenche tooenge  
 and then in the Italian, with also an epistle to the Cardinall  
 of Salsepurge as touchyng the same viage, written by *Mar-*  
*imilian Transiluan* secretarie to Theemperours Maiestie, in  
 the yere. 1522. And doubtelesse amonge al the cities of I-  
 talie, the citie of Vincenza may herein much glozie, that beside  
 the ancient nobilitie and many excellent and rare wyttes whi-  
 che it hath bred, hath furth aswell in learnyng as discipline  
 of warre, it hath also had so woorthy and valiaunt a gentle-  
 man as was the sayde master Antonie Pigafetta, who hauyng  
 compased abowte the ball or globe of the worlde, hath lyke-  
 wyse described that vyage particularly. For the whiche his  
 so noble and woonderfull an enterpryse so happily archiued,  
 if the same had byn doone in the olde tyme when the myrre  
 of the Grekes and Romans flozished, he shulde doubtelesse  
 haue byn rewarded with an Image of marble or golde erect-  
 ed in a place of honoure in perpetuall memorie and for a sin-  
 gular exemple of his vertue to the posteritie. In fine, this may  
 we boldly affirme, that the antiquitie had neuer such know-  
 lege of the worlde whiche the soonne compaseth abowte in  
 xxiiii. hours, as we haue at this presente by chindullrye of  
 men of this owre age. But before I speake any thyng of the  
 viage, I haue thought it good fyrst to adde hereunto, the E-  
 pistle of *Marimilian Transiluan* which he wrote to the Car-  
 dinall

*Antonie Pi-*  
*gafetta.*

*Jacobus Faber.*

*Marimilian*  
*Transiluan*

The reward  
 of noble en-  
 terpryse.

The antique  
 had no  
 suche know-  
 lege of the  
 worlde as  
 we haue.

## The vyage rounde

of small of Salſepurge as a pꛛeface to his ſayde booke,

¶ The Epiſtle of Maximilian Tranſilwane, ſecretarie to The Emperours maieſtie: wyrtten to the ryght honorable and reuerende lord, the lord Cardinall of Salſepurge, of the marueplous and woonderfull nauigation made by the Spanyardeſ rounde about the worlde in the peare of Chriſt, M. D. xix.

The Ilandes  
of Molucca.

Aurea Cherſo-  
neſus.  
Malacca.  
Spices.

The Ilandes  
of Spices in  
known in  
owld tyme.



In theſe daies my moſt honorable and reuerend lord, returned one of thoſe fine ſhippes which the yeaꛛe befoꛛe Themperours beinge at Sarazgola in Spayne, were at his maieſties commaundement ſent to the newe worlde heretofore vnknown vnto vs, to ſeek the Ilandes of ſpices. Foꛛ albeit the Portugales byꛛnge vs great quantitie of ſpices from that parte of Eaſte India which in owld tyme was cauled Aurea Cherſoneſus (where is nowe thought to bee the greate and ryche citie of Malacca) yet in Eaſte India growe none of thoſe ſpices excepte pepper. Foꛛ other ſpices, as Sinamome, cloues, nutmegges, and mace, (which is the huſke that couereth the ſhell of the nutte) are brought from other farre countreys & fro Ilandes ſcarſely known by theꛛ names. From the which Ilandes they are brought in ſhipps oꛛ barkes made withowt any iꛛen tooles, and tyed togyther with cordes of date trees: with rounde ſayles lykewiſe made of the ſmaule twigges of the branches of date trees weaved togyther. Theſe barkes they caule *Giunche*: with the which barkes and ſayles, they make theꛛ vyages with onely one wynde in the ſearne oꛛ contrarywiſe.

Neꛛther yet is it a thyꛛng greatly to bee maruepled at that theſe Ilandes where the ſpices growe haue byn vnknown ſo many worldeſ paſt vnto owre tyme, foꛛasmuch as all ſuch thyꛛnges as vnto this day haue byn wyrtten of owld autours of the places where ſpices growe, are all fabulous and falſe: In ſo muche that the countreys where they affirme theꛛm to growe, are nowe certeynely founde to bee further from the place where they growe in dedde, then we are from them. Foꛛ lettynge paſſe many other thyꛛnges that are wyrtten, I wyl ſpeake

speake only of this which *Herodotus* (otherwile a famous author) affirmeth that *Sinamome*, is founde in the toppes of the nestes of certeyne byrdes and foules that bynge it frome farre countreys, & especially the *Phenyx*, the which I knowe no man that euer hath seene. But *Plinie* who myght more certeynely affirme thynges by reason that befoze his tyme many thynges were knowne and discovered by the nauigations of great *Alexander* and other, sayth that *Sinamome* groweth in that parte of *Ethiope* which the people inhabite cauled *Trogloditi*. Neuerthelss it is nowe founde that *Sinamome* groweth very farre from all *Ethiope* and muche further frome the *Trogloditi* whiche dwell in caues vnder the grounde. But to othere men which are nowe returned from those partes and the *Ilandes* of spices, hauynge also good knowlege of *Ethiope*, it was necessarie to passe farre beyonde *Ethiope* befoze they coome to these *Ilandes*, and to compasse abowte the whole worlde, and many tymes vnder the greatest circumference of heauen. The which nauigation made by them, being the most marueylous thyng that euer was doone by man vppen the earth sence the fyrst creation of the worlde, and neuer founde befoze, or knowen, or attempted by any other, I haue deliberated faithfully to wyte to powre honorable lordshippe and to declare the hole successe therof. As touchynge which matter, I haue with all diligence made inquisition to knowe the trewth aswell by relation of the *Capitayne* of that shyppe as also by conference with euery of the maryners that returned with hym. All which, gaue the selfe same information both to *Emperours* maiestie and dyuers other: And this with such faithfulness and sinceritie, that not only they are iudged of all men to haue declared the trewth in all thynges, but haue thereby also gyven vs certeyne knowlege that all that hath byther to byn sayde or wyritten of owlde autours as touchynge these thynges, are false and fabulous. For who wyll beleue that men are found with only one legge. Or with such fiere whole shadowe couereth theyr bodyes? Or men of a cubite height, and other such lyke, beinge rather monsters then men? Of the which, next the *Spanyarden* who in othere tyme saylyng by the *Ocean* sea, haue discovered al the coastes of the lande toward the West both vnder and aboue the *Equinoctiall*, no; the *Portugales* who compassynge abowt al *Africke* haue passed by all the *Easte* and lyke wyle discovered all those

*Herodotus.*  
*Sinamome.*

The *Phenyx*.  
*Plinie.*

The nauigation of great *Alexander.*  
*Ethiope.*  
*Trogloditi.*

The nauigation abowte the worlde.

The owlde autours reported.

monsters.  
The vyages of the *Spanyarden* and *Portugales.*

## The vyage rounde

*sinus Magnus.*

those coastes into the great goulfe cauled *sinus Magnus*, no; yet the Spanyardes in this they; laste nauigation, in the which they compased abowt the hole earth, dyd neuer in any of their vyages wytte of such monsters: which doubtlesse they wold not haue ompted if they myght haue had certeyne knowelege therof. But nowe intendencyng to speake of the whole worlde, I wyl not bee longe in my p;eface, but begynne my narration as foloweth.

A b;iefe declaration of the vyage or nauigation made abowt the worlde. Gathered owt of a large booke wyrtten hereof by master Antonie Wygafetta Vincentine, knyght of the Rhodes and one of the coompanye of that vyage in the which, *Ferdinando Magellanes* a Portugale (whom sum caule *Magellanus*) was generall Capitayne of the nauie.

*Sebastian Munster.*



*The Ilandes of Molucca.*

Although *Sebastian Munster* in his vnsuccessful Cosmographie in the fyfthe booke of the landes of the greater Asia (which I translated into Englyshe abowt two yeaeres sence) hath wyrtten of the vyage of *Magellanus*, declaringe therein howe the Spanyardes by the West, and the Portugales by the East, layying to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, compased the hole globe of the worlde betwene them, yet haue I here thought it good to make a b;iefe repetition of this vyage, addyng hereunto byuers notable thynges which were not touched of *Munster*, as I haue gathered them owt of the bookes of *Antonie Wygafetta* and *Transiluanus* wyrtten of the same vyage. For altho; it in deede it was a straunge and woonderful thyng that the Spanyardes and Portugales compased the hole circumference of the worlde betwene them, yet is it moze marueylous that the same was doone with one shippe and one coompanye of men as dyd the Spanyardes in this vyage, who keepyng they; continuall course by the Weste, returned into Spayne by the East. A thyng doubtlesse so much moze woonderfull and strange then yf they had returned from the halfe circumference by the same way they went. In howe muche they were igno;ante

Ignorante in the vyage neuer attempted before, belyde the thousande daungtours and perylls whiche they were daylye lyke to faule into, alwell by wanderynge in vnknowen coastes as also by faulynge into the hands of the Portugales by whose dominions in the East, they shulde needes passe of necessite, not trauynge to theyr gentelnesse for the controuerisie which had byn longe betwene them for the Ilandes of Molucca. I wyll therefore (as I haue sayde) make a brieue rehearsall of this vyage from the begynnyng to the endynge: Omittynge neuerthelesse many notable thynges whiche are more largely described in the bookes of Maximilianus Transiluanus and Antonius Pigafetta.

The tenth day of August, in the yere of oure lord 1492. xix. Ferdinando Magalanes departed from the porte of Suile in Spayne with a nauie of syue shippes and two hundredeth thirtie and seuen men, wel furnished with all thynges necessarie. And saylynge southe by the ryuer of Guadabiber which runneth from the sayde porte into the sea, they came southe to a place named Ciouan Dulfarax where are manie byllages of the Moores: And from thence arryued at a castell of the Duke of Medina Sidonia, where is the porte from whiche they enter into the sea and to the cape saynte Vincent beinge distant from the Equinoctiall. xxxvii. degrees, and from the sayde port .x. leaques, and is from thence to Suile betwene xvii. and .xx. leaques. Here they remayned certeyne dayes to make newe prouision of such thynges as they lacked.

Departynge from hense the .xx. daye of September, they arryued the .xxvi. day of the same moneth at one of the Ilandes of Canarie cauled Tenerife, beinge. xxv. degrees about the Equinoctiall. In one of these Ilandes is none other water but that is continually engendered of a clowde which appeareth dayly at noone tyme as though it descended from heauen and compasseth about a certeyne great tree from whose branches distilleth greate abundaunce of water, and fauleth in streames from the roote of the same into certeyne trenches and cisternes made and placed to receaue it. This water serueth sufficiently all inhabitauntes and cattayle of the Ilande. The lyke thinge is also seene in the Iland of saynt Thomas, lyinge directly vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

The thyrde day of October about mydnyght, the capytayne

Controuerisie  
betwene the  
Spanyarden  
and Portuga  
les.

Ferdinando  
Magalanes.

The Cape of  
saynt Vincent

The Ilandes  
of Canarie.

water engin  
dered of a  
clowde.

The Iland of  
saynt Tho  
mas.

## The vyage rounde

Capo verde,

Guinea in  
Ethiophe.  
Serrations,

Fythes and  
monsters of  
the sea.

The fyers of  
saints helene  
& S. Nicolas.  
A tempest.

The naturall  
cause of such  
fyers as faule  
in the shypes.

Cardanus.

Two kyndes  
of fyers engendered of exhalations.

Trewe fyre  
& false fyre.

sayne commaunded theyn to lyght fyrebrandes and to hoyle  
vp theyr sayles directyng theyn course towarde the South,  
saylunge betwene Capo Verde of Affryke and the Ilandes ly-  
inge abowt the same, beinge from the Equinoctiall. xliii. de-  
grees and a halfe. They sayled thus, manye dayes in the  
syght of the coaste of Guinea, of Ethiophe, where is the moun-  
tayne cauled *Serra Lione* beinge .viii. degrees aboue the Equi-  
noctiall. In this coast they had no manner of contrary wynde  
but a great calme and sayle wether for the space of thre score  
and tenne dayes, in the which they came vnder the Equinoec-  
tiall lyne. In this vyage they sawe manye straunge fythes  
and monsters of the sea, besyde an other straunge thyng whi-  
che appeared vnto them. For there appeared in theyr shypes  
certeyne flames of fyre burnyng very cleare, which they caul  
saynt Helen and saynt Nicolas. These appeared as though  
they had byn vppon the mast of the shypes, in suche cleare-  
nesse that they tooke away theyr sight for the space of a quar-  
ter of an houre: by reason wherof, they so wardered out of  
theyr course and were dyspersed in sunder, that they in maner  
dispayred to meete ageyne. But as God wolde, the sea and  
tempest beinge quieted, they came safely to theyr determined  
course. And before I speake any further of the vyage, I haue  
here thought good to saye sumewhat of these straunge fyers,  
which sum ignorant folkes thynke to bee spirites or suche o-  
ther phantasies wheras they are but naturall thynges proce-  
dyng of naturall causes and engendered of certeyne exhal-  
ations. Of these therfore, the greate philosopher of olde  
tyme Hieronimus Cardanus in his seconde booke de subtilitate, wy-  
teth in this maner.

There are two maner of fyers engendered of exhalations  
wherof the one is hurtfull and the other without hurte. That  
which is hurtful, is fyre in dedde, engendered of malicious &  
venemous vapours which in successe of tyme take fyre as apt  
matters to be kyndeled. The other kynd, is no trewe fyre, but  
lyke the matter that is in such owle putrified wod as giueth  
the thynge of fyre without the substance or qualite ther-  
of. Of the kynde of trewe fyre, is the fyre haule or starre com-  
monly cauled saynt Helen which is sumtyme scene abowt the  
males of shypes, beinge of suche fyery nature that it sum-  
tyme melterh brassen vesselles, and is a token of drownyng,  
for

Forasmuch as this chaunceth only in great tempestes. For the vapoure or exhalation whereof this fyre is engendered, can not bee dyuient togyther or compacte in forme of fyre, but of a grosse vapoure and by a great poure of wynde, and is therfore a token of imminent perell: As on the contrary parte, the lyke fyres cauled in owlde tyme *Castor and Pollux*, and nowe named the two lyghtes of saynt Peter and saynt Nicolas whiche for the most parte faule on the cables of the shippes, leapinge from one to an other with a certeyne fluterynge noise lyke byrdes, are a token of securitie and of the tempeste ouerpassed. For they are but vapoures cleauynge to the cables: which in successe of tyme, the fyre passynge from one to an other, appere in the similitude of a lyght candell. They are a token of securitie because they are lytle, not slowe or grosse, whereby they myght haue toyued altogpyther in one, and byn thereby more malicious and lasted longer, whereas beinge many and but lytle, they are the sooner consumed. Bertherto *Cassidamus*. But let vs nowe retorne to the vpage.

When they had sayled passe the Equinoctiall lyne, they lost the syght of the north starre, and sayled by southwester vntyll they came to a lande named the lande of *Bresil* whiche sum caule *Bresilia*, beinge .xxii. degrees and a halfe toward the south pole or pole Antartique. This lande is continuat and one firme lande with the cape of saynte Augustine whiche is .viii. degrees from the Equinoctiall. In this lande they were refreshed with many good frutes of innumerable kindes, and founde here also very good sugar canes and diuers kyndes of beastes and other thynges which I omitte for breuitie. They entered into this hauen on saynt Lucies day: where the sonne beinge there *Zenith* (that is the poynt of heauen directly ouer theyr heades) they felte greater heate that daye then when they were vnder the Equinoctiall line. This lande of *Brazil* is very large and great: and bygger then all Spayne, Portugal, Fraunce, and Italic: and is mosse abundaunte in all thynges. The people of this countrey praye to noo maner of thinge: but liue by thynstincte of nature, and to thage of .Lxx. and .L. yeares. Bothe the men and women go naked, and dwell in certeyne longe houses. They are very docible, and soone allured to the Chyistian fayth.

Thertene dayes after that they arriued at the sayd port,

III. ii.

they

*Castor and Pollux.*  
The lyghtes  
of saynt Peter  
and saynte  
Nicolas.

They lost the  
syght of the  
North starre.  
The lande of  
*Bresile*,  
The South  
pole.

Sugar.

The greater  
nesse of the  
land of *Brazile*.

## The vyage rounde

they departed from this lande and sayled to the .xxviii. degree and a halfe toward the pole Antartike where they founde a great ryuer of fre The water and certeyne Canibales. Of these they sawe one owt of theiꝝ shippes, of stature as bigge as a gigante, hauynge a voyce lyke a bul. Owt men pursued them, but they were so swift of foote that they could not ouertake them. Abowt the mouth of this ryuer, are seuen Ilandes, in the byggest wherof, they founde certeyne precious stones, and cauled it the cape of saynt Marie. The Spanyardes thought that by this ryuer they might haue passed into the south sea. But they were deceaued in theiꝝ opinion. For there was none other passage then by the ryuer which is, xvii. leaques large in the mouth.

Canibales.

Giantes.

Insula gemmarum.

Cape S. Marie.

The pole In  
artike.  
Seefe:  
Sea woolues

Thus folowynge this coaste by the tracte of the lande toward the pole Antartike, they came to a place where were two Ilandes replenished with giese and woolues of the sea which sum thynke to bee those wythes that wee caule pikes. These were in such number that in an houre all the fyue shippes myght haue byn lade with giese beinge all of blacke colour, and such as can not dye. They lyue of fythe and are so fatte that they could scarcelye see them. They haue noo feathers but a certeyn downe: and theiꝝ byls like rauens byls. These woolues of the sea are of dyuers coloures, and of the byggeneite of calves, with theiꝝ heades of golden coloure. Here were they in great daungious by tempest. But as soone as the thre spers cauled saynte Helen, saynte Nicolas, and saynt Clare, appered vpon the cabells of the shippes, suddeynly the tempest and furie of the wyndes ceased.

The .xlii. degree of the  
south pole.

Giantes.

Departynge frome hence, they sayled to the .49. degree and a halfe vnder the pole Antartike: where beinge wynter, they were inforced to remayne there for the space of two monethes, all which tyme they sawe no man except that one daye by chaunce they espyed a man of the stature of a gigante, who came to the haven daunsyng and syngynge, and shortly after seemed to cast dust ouer his head. The capitayne sente one of his men to the shore with the shippe boate, who made the lyke signe of peace. The which thynge the gigante seinge, was owt of feare and came with the capitaynes seruante to his presence into a lyttle Ilande. When he sawe the capitayne with certeyne of his company abowt hym, he was greatly

greatly amazed and made signes beldyng bype his bande to heauen, signifyinge thereby that othere men came from thence. This giant was to bygge, that the heade of one of our men of a meane stature, came but to his waste. He was of good corporature and well made in all partes of his bodie, with a large bysage paynted with dyuers coloures, but for the most parte yelow. Upon his cheekes were paynted two hartes, and redde circles abowt his eyes. The heare of his headde was coloured whyte, and his apparell was the skynne of a beaste sowde together. This beaste (as seemed unto us) had a large heade and great eares lyke unto a mule, with the body of a camel and tayle of a horse. The feete of the giant were foulded in the sayde skynne after the maner of shoes. He had in his hande, a bygge and shorte bowe, the stringe whereof was made of a synewe of that beaste. He had also a bundell of longe arrowes made of reedes feathered after the maner of owes, typte with sharpe stones in the steade of iron heades.

The Capitayne caused him to cate and drynke, and gaue him many thynges, and amonge other a greate lookinge glasse: In the which as soone as he sawe his owne lyknesse, was suddenly afrayde and started backe with such violence that he ouerthrewe two that stode nearest abowte hym. When the Capitayne had thus giuen hym certeyne haukes belles and other great belles, with also a lookinge glasse, a combe, and a payre of beades of glasse, he sente hym to lande with foure of his owne men well armed.

Shortely after, they sawe an other gigante of sumwhat greater stature, with his bowe and arrowes in his hande. As he drew neare unto otre menne, he layde his hande on his heade and poynted by towarde heauen, and otre men dyd the lyke. The Capitayne sente his shyppe boate to bygge him to a lyttle Islande beinge in the haven. This gigante was verye tractable and pleasaunt. He loonge and daunced: and in his daunsyng lefte the printe of his feete on the grownde. Here mayned longe with otre men who named hym *Iohan*. He coulde wel speake and playnely pronounce these wordes: *Iesus Ave Maria, Iohannes*, euen as we doe, but with a bygge voyce.

The capitayne gaue hym a shert of lynnen clothe, and a coate of whyte woollen clothe: Also a cappe, a combe, a lookinge glasse, with dyuers such other thynges, and so sente hym to his company. The day folowyng, he reioyced agayne to the

The bygges  
of the giants.

An other  
giant.

shyppe.

## The vyage rounde

Gyppes, and brought with hym one of those greafe beastes, which he gaue the capitayne. But after that daye they neuer sawe hym moze, supposynge hym to bee slayne of his owne company for the conuersion he had with oware men.

**Four other  
giantes.**

**Two gigantes  
are taken by  
a pollicie.**

**The deuyl  
Setebos.**

**Deuyls ap-  
pere to the gy-  
antes when  
they dye.**

**Patagoni.**

After other .xv. dayes were paste, there came foure other gigantes without any weapons, but had hydde theyr bowes and arrowes in certeyne bushes. The capitayne returned two of these whiche were yongest and beste made. He tooke them by a deceyte in this maner, that grypyng them knyues, beares, lookyng glasses, belles, beades of crytall, & suche other tryfels, he so fylled theyr handes that they coulde hold no moze. Then caused two payre of shakels of iren to bee put on theyr legges, makynge signes that he wolde also gyue them those chaynes: which they lyked very wel bycause they were made of byght and shynnyng metal. And wheras they could not cary them bycause theyr handes were full, the other gigantes wolde haue caryed them: but the Capitayne wolde not suffer them. When they felte the shakels faste aboute theyr legges, they begynne to doubt: but the Capitayne dyd put them in comferte and badde them stande still. In tyme when they sawe how they were deceaued they roared lyke bulles and cryed vpon theyr greafe deuyl Setebos to helpe them. Being thus taken, they were immediatly seporate and put in sundry Gyppes. They coulde neuer bynde the handes of the other two, Yet was one of them with much difficultie ouerthrowne by nyne of oware men, and his handes bownde: but he suddenly loosed hym selfe and fledde, as dyd also the other that came with them. In theyr flyng, they shot of theyr arrowes and slawe one of oware men. They say that when any of them dye, there appere .x. or .xii. deuyls leapyng and daunsyng about the bodye of the deade, and seme to haue theyr bodyes paynted with dyuers colours. And that amonge other, there is one scene bygger then the residue, who maketh great mirth and reioysyng. This greafe deuyl they caule Setebos, and caule the litle cheleule. One of these gigantes which they toke, declared by signes that he had scene deuyls with two hornes aboute theyr heades, with longe heare downe to theyr feete: And that they call furth fyre at theyr throates both befoze and behynde. The Capitayne named these people Patagoni. The most part of them weare the skynnes of suche beastes wherof I haue spoken befoze: And haue no houses of continuance but,

but make certeyne corages whiche they couer with the sayde skynnes, and cary them from place to place. They lyue of rauens flesh and a certeyne swete roote whiche they caule *Capar*. One of these which they had in theyr shippes, dyd cate at one meale a basket. of byskette, and drunke a howle of water at a draught.

They remayned fyue monethes in this porte of saint Iulian, where certeyne of the vnder capitaynes conspirynge the death of theyr general, were hanged and quartered: Amonge whom the treasurer Luigo of Mendoza was one. Certeyne of the other conspiratours, he left in the sayd land of *Patagonia*.

Departynge from hense to the 52. degree toward the pole Antarrike lackynge a thyrde parte, where they founde a ryuer of freshe water and good fysh. Theyr shippes were here in great daungion. They remayned twod monethes in this porte where they made newe prouision of freshe water, fuell, and fysh. Here the Capitayne caused all his men to bee confessed.

Approchynge to the 52. degrees, they founde the straighe now called the straighe of Magellanus, beinge in sum place 6. x. leagues in length: and in breadth sumwhere very large and in other places lyttle more then halfe a league in bredth. On both the sydes of this straghte, are great and hygh mountaynes couered with snowe, beyonde the whiche is the enteraunce into the sea of *sur*. This enteraunce the Capitayne named *Mare Pacificum*. Here one of the shippes stole away pryuelie and returned into Spaine. In this was one of the giantes who dyed as soone as he felt the heate that is abowte the Equinoctiall lyne.

When the Capitayne *Magallanes* was past the straighe and sawe the way open to the other mayne sea, he was so gladde therof that for ioy the teares fell from his eyes, and named the poynt of the lande from whense he fyrst sawe that sea, *Capo Desiderato*.

Supposing that the shyp which stole away had byn losse, they erected a crose vppon the top of a hyghe hill to directe their course in the straighe yf it were theyr chaunce to coome that way. They founde that in this straghte in the moneth of October the wyght was not past foure houres longe. They found in this straghte at euery thre myles, a safe haven and exche-

leng

The giantes feedynge.

They conspire ageynst theyr Capitayne.

Confession.

The straighe of magellanus.

The South sea.  
*Mare pacificum*.

The giantes died for heat.

*Capo Desiderato*.

Short nights in the moneth of October.

## The vyage rounde

cellent water to drynke: woodde also and fythe, and greate  
plentie of goo<sup>e</sup> herbes. They thynke that there is not a sayree  
strayght in the worlde. Here also they sawe certeyne flynge  
fythes.

Flying fythes

The gyantes  
language.

The gyant is  
baptised.

Three mo-  
nethes sayt  
lyng without  
the syght of  
lande.  
Extreme fa-  
men.

Diseases of  
famen.

The other gigante which remayned with them in the shyp,  
named breade Tapar: water, Oli: redde clothe, Thereraredd  
colour, Cheiche: blacke colour, Amel: And spoke al his wo-  
rdes in the throte. On a tyme, as one made a crosse before him  
and kyled it, shewynge it vnto hym, he suddely cryed se-  
tebos, and declared by signes that if they made any more cros-  
ses, Setebos wold enter into his body and make him bryn. But  
when in fine he sawe no hurte comie thereof, he tooke the  
crosse and imbrased and kyled it oftentymes, desyringe that  
he myght bee a Chyistian before his deatch. He was therfore  
baptised and named paulc.

Departynge out of this strayght into the sea cauled *Mare  
Pacificum* the xxviii. day of Nouember in the yeaere. 1520. they  
sayled thre monethes and. xx. dayes before they sawe any  
lande. And haurnge in this tyme consumed all theyr byttee  
and other byttayles, they fell into suche necessitie that they  
were inforced to eate the poulder that remayned thereof beinge  
nowe full of woodmes and synkyng like pisse by reason of  
the salte water. Theyr freshe water was also putrified and  
become yelowe. They dyd eate skynnes and pieces of lether  
which were foulded aboue certeyne great ropes of the shypes.  
But these skynnes beinge made verpe harde by reason of the  
soonne, rayne and wynde, they hunge them by a corde in the  
sea for the space of foure or fve dayes to mollifie them, and  
sodde them and eate them. By reason of this famen and vntu-  
clene feedynge, summe of theyr gummes grewe so euill theyr  
teethe, that they dyed miserably for hunger. And by this oc-  
casion dyed. xix. men, and also the gianc with an Indian of  
the lande of Brasile otherwyse cauled *Terra de papagalli*, that is  
the lande of poppingayes. Besyde these that dyed. xxv. or. xxx.  
were so sicke that they were not able to doo any seruice with  
theyr handes or armes for feeblenesse: So that there was in  
maner none without sum disease. In these thre monethes &  
xx. dayes, they sayled foure thousande leaques in one goulfe  
by the sayde sea cauled *Pacificum* (that is) peaceable, whiche  
may well bee so cauled forasmuch as in all this tyme haurng

no spghe of any lande, they had no misfortune of wynde or any other tempest. Durynge this tyme also, they discovered only two little Ilandes inhabited, where they sawe nothing but birdes and trees, and therefore named theym unfortunate Ilandes, beinge one from the other abowte two hundred leaques distante. The firste of these Ilandes is from the Equinoctial toward the pole Antartike. xv. degrees, and the other spue. Theyr sailinge was in suche sorte that they sailed daily betwene. l. lx. to .lxx. leaques. So that in tyme, if god of his mercy had not gyven them good wether, it was necessary that in this too greate a sea they shuld all have dyed for hunger. Whiche neverthelesse they escaped soo hardely, that it may bee doubted whether euer the like viage may be attempted with so good successe.

They considered in this navigation that the pole Antartike hath no notable starre after the sorte of the pole Arctike. But they sawe many starres gathered together, whiche are like two cloudes one separate a litle from an other, and sum what darke in the myddest. Betwene these, are two starres not very bigge, nor muche shynninge, whiche moue a litle: And these two are the pole Antartike. The needell of theyr compasse varied sumwhat, and turned euer toward the pole Arctike. Neverthelesse, had no suche force as when it is in these partes of the pole Arctike. In so muche that it was necessary to helpe the needle with the lode stone (sommonly cauled the adamante) befoze they could saile therewith, because it moued not as it doothe when it is in these othere partes. When they were in the myddest of the goulfe, they sawe a crosse of five cleare starres directly toward the West, eand of equall distance the one from the other.

Unfortunate  
Ilandes.

what they  
sailed dayly

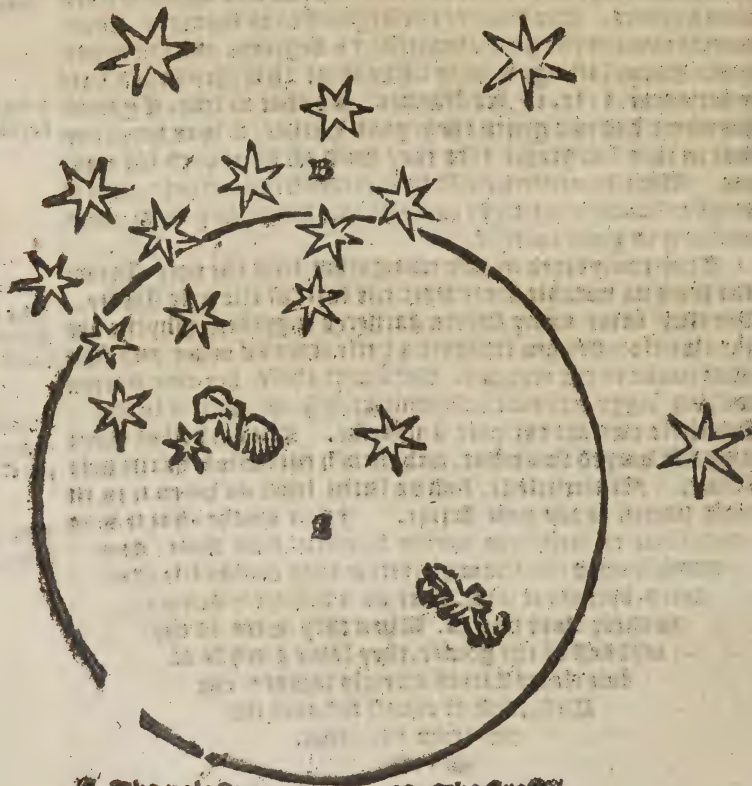
The starres  
abowt the  
south pole.

The needle  
of the compass  
pale.

The lode  
stone.

# The vyage rounde

The order of the Starrs about the pole Antartike, summe haue figured in this maner.



The pole Antartike,

The Cross

In these dayes they sayled betwene the West and South  
 so farre that they approached to the Equinoctiall line, & were  
 in longitude from the place from whence they first departed,  
 a hundredeth and twentie degrees. In this course they sayled  
 by two Ilandes of exceedynge height, wherof the one named  
 Cipanghu, is. *xx.* degrees from the pole Antartike: And the o-  
 ther named *Sumbdit*. *xx.* degrees. When they were past the  
 Equinoctiall line, they sayled betwene the West and South:  
 west at the quarter of the West towards the South west more  
 then a hundredeth leagues, changinge theyr sayles to the quar-  
 ter of the South west buttill they came to the. *xiii.* degrees a-  
 boue the Equinoctiall towards the pole Arctike, intendinge as  
 much as were possible, to approche to the cape cauled of the  
 olde myters *Canigara*: The whiche is not founde as the  
 olde Cosmographers haue discribed it, but is towards the  
 north about. *xii.* degrees as they afterwards vnderstode.

The Equi-  
 noctial line.

The Ilandes  
 of Cipanghu  
 and Sumbdit

When they had thus sayled *lxx.* leagues of this vyage in  
 the. *xii.* degree about the Equinoctial, and. *lxx.* degrees of  
 longitude (as I haue sayde) the xviij. day of March they dis-  
 covered a litle Ilande towards the north west, and two or  
 ther towards the south west: but the one was hygher and  
 bygger then the two other. In the bygger of these, the gene-  
 rall capitayne wolde haue rested hym selfe a while: but he  
 coulde not by reason the people of these Ilands resorted con-  
 tinually to the shippes with theyr canoas, and stole nowe one  
 thyng and nowe an other, in such sorte that our men could  
 take no rest, and therfore demaunded of the capitayne that  
 they myght stryke theyr sayles to bynne the shippes to land.  
 But the Capitayne beinge prouoked to anger, wente alande  
 with fortie armed men, and burnt about fiftie of theyr hou-  
 ses with many of theyr canoas: And slew also about fuen  
 men, and recovered a shyppe boare whiche the Barbarians  
 had stolne, and so departed solowynge his vyage. The Capi-  
 ayne named these Ilands *Insule Latronum*, that is, the Ilands  
 of theues. When our men had so wounded summe of theym  
 with arrowes that they were stryken throughe bothe sydes,  
 they pulled furth the arrowes not ceasynge to manueyle at the  
 tyll they fell downe deade: And yet coulde not the other so de-  
 part, but still followed the shippes with more then two hun-  
 dret of theyr boates, approachynge as nere to the shippes as  
 they

*Insule Latronum*

## The vyage rounde

they coulde, and proferinge oware men certeyne sylthes. As the shippes passed with full sayle in the myddle of theyr boates, they sawe in sum of them certeyne women lamenting and tearynge theyr heare, which oware men thought they did for the deathe of theyr husbandes. As farre as they could perceave, these people lyue at theyr owne libertie without anye ruler or gouvernour. They go naked and haue blacke beardes and blacke heare on theyr heades whiche they weare longe downe to theyr waistes. They are of the same stature that we are, and well made, of coloure lyke unto an olpue. Theyr women are well famozed with blacke and thicke heare on theyr heades reachyng to the grotonde. The menne coloure theyr teeth redde and blacke, which they esteeme a comely thyng. They annoynt theyr bodies and heare with the oyle of *Cocus*. Theyr boates are sum all blacke, sum whyte, and sum redde, and haue sayles made of the broade leaues of date trees sowed together. In the steade of a rudder, they vse a certeyne boorde boorde with a stafe in the toppe, and maye when they wyll, make the sterne the forecastell, or the forecastell the sterne. They sayle so swyftely that they seeme a farrre of, lyke Delapheus swymmyng above the water.

People with  
longe heare

Their coloure  
theyr teethe.

The Ilande  
is small.

The tenth day of March, in the yere. 1521. they wente alande bypon a lytle Ilande named *Zamal*. xxx. leaues distant from the Ilande of theues. Bycause this Ilande was not inhabited, they rested here a whyle, where the capytayne caused a pavilion to bee pyched for the sicke and crased men, and a hogge to bee kylde.

Wyne of date  
trees.

The xviii. day of Marche, they sawe a boate with nyne men comyng towarde them, shewyng theim selues ioyfull and reioysyng of theyr comyng. They brought many presentes with them, and seemed to bee people of much humanitie. They gaue the capytayne a great sylthe, and a great vessel of the wyne of those date trees whiche beare the frute *Cocus*. They made also signes that within the space of foure dayes, they wolde byng sylthe and dyuers soules and beasts as they dyd in dedde.

The marvellous  
frute  
*Cocus*.

This *Cocus* is a frute of certeyne date trees wherof they make breade, wyne, oyle, and vineget. They make wyne in this maner. They cutte a bygge braunche of the tree, & hange therat a reede as bigge as a mans legge, into the which drop

perch

peth a sweete licour from the tree lyke unto nethe wyhte wine  
 sumwhat tart, After the reede continew there from moynynge  
 tyll eueninge, and from eueninge to moynynge. The frute of  
 this tree cauled *Cocus*, is as bygge as the head of a man or  
 more. The tyffe rynde of this, is greene and of the thycke-  
 nesse of two fyngers, haupnge in it certeyne thredes wherof  
 they make cordes with the which they tye theyr boates. Un-  
 der this rynde, there is a thicke shell whiche they burne and  
 make powder therof and vse it as a remedie for certeyne disca-  
 ses. Under this shell, is a wyhte substaunce lyke the carnell  
 of a nutte being a synger in thickenesse, which they eate with  
 floure and sylle as wee doe breade. It hath the taste of an  
 almonde, and is vled in the steade of breade when it is bryed.  
 In the myddell of this carnell, is a cleare and sweete water,  
 beinge very holsome and cordiale. This water sumtyme con-  
 geleth and lyeth within the shell lyke an egge. When they in-  
 tende to make oyle hereof, they ley it to putrifie in water, and  
 boyle it vntyll it bee lyke oyle or liquide butter. When they  
 intende to make vineger, they suffer only the water to putri-  
 fie, and then set it to the soonne where it becommeth vineger  
 lyke vnto that which is made of wyhte wyne. And when they  
 mengle the carnell with the water which is in the myddell of  
 the frute, and streyne it thowre a cloth, they make a mylke  
 therof lyke vnto goates mylke. These date trees are lyke vnto  
 them that beare dates, but are not so full of knottes. With  
 the wyse of two of these date trees, a hole familie of tenn pe-  
 sons may bee maynteyned with wyne vnyng one hui. dayes,  
 and the other, other. hui. dayes: for they shulde els bee dyed  
 and wythered. These trees continue for the space of a hun-  
 dred yeares. This Ilande where they founde this humane  
 and gentell people, is cauled *Zuluan*, and is not very bygge.  
 About this Ilande they founde many other Ilandes, and  
 therefore named this sea *Archipelago di San Lazaro*, that is, the  
 great sea of saynte Lazarus, beinge tenn degrees about the  
 Equinoctiall towarde the pole, and. C. lxi. from the place  
 from whence they departed. The people of this Ilande are  
*Cupranis* thare is gentyles. They go naked sayng that they  
 couer theyr priate partes with a clothe made of the rynde of a  
 certeyne tree. The chiefest men, haue abowre theyr heades a  
 sylken cloth of needle woork. They are grosse and hode set  
 and

The Iland of  
Zuluan.

The sea cau-  
led Archipe-  
lago di San  
Lazaro.

Genylos.

## The vyage rounde

and of the colour of an olive. They annoynte theyr bodys  
with the oyle of Cacus to defend them ageynst the heate of the  
sunne and dynele of the wynde. The xxv. day of Marche,  
they departed from hense and directed theyr course betwene  
the Weste and South west, and sayled betwene foure Ilandes  
named Censlo, Huinangban, Hibusson, and Abarien, &c.

The Iland of  
Buthuan.

The xxviii. daye of Marche, they came to the Ilande of  
Buthuan where they were honorably interceypted of the kynge  
and the prince his sonne who gaue them muche golde and  
spices. The capitayne gaue the kynge a vesture of red clothe  
and an other of pelowe made after the Turke The sathyon,  
and also a red cappe. And gaue likewise to other that came  
with hym, certeyne knyves, glasses, and beades of cristalle.  
After that, the capitayne had shewed the kynge the secrettes  
of his shippe and suche marchaundies as he had therein, he  
caused a peece of ordinaunce suddenly to bee shot of, wherewith  
the kynge was greatly amased until the capitayne comforted  
hym. Then the Capitaine commaunded one of his men to be  
armed from the heade to the foote, and caused thre other to  
strike hym with theyr swordes, wherewith the kynge marva-  
led greatly, and sayde to thinterpretoure (who was a slave  
borne in Malacha) that one of those armed men was able to  
encounter with a hundred of his men. But he marva-  
pled muche more when the capitaine told hym by thinterpretoure  
howe he founde the straight by the compasse and lode stone,  
and howe many dayes they were without sight of any lande.  
Then askynge licence to departe, the capitayne sente two of  
his men with him, of the whiche Antonie Digafetta was one.  
When the kynge sawe Antonie Digafetta write the names of  
many thynges, and afterwarde rehearse them ageyne, he mar-  
va-pled yet more, makynge signes that suche men descended  
from heauen. The kynge brought them firste to his pallaice  
where he interceypted them honorably and gaue them manye  
gyftes, as dyd also the prince in his pallaice beyng in an o-  
ther Ilande named Caleghan.

The Iland of  
Caleghan.

plente of  
golde.

As they spsted a certeyne myne of earthe in the kynges  
Ilande, they founde pecies of golde, sum as bigge as nuttes  
and other as bigge as egges. All the kynges heiffelles were  
of golde, and his house well furnyshed. In all the hole na-  
tion there was no man of coomlier personage then the kynge.

De

He had his heare long downe to his shulders, and very blake, with a baile of silke rowled aboute his head, and two greate ringes of golde hanginge at his eares. He had aboute his myddle, a clothe wroughte of cotton and silke impaled with golde, and reachinge downe to his knees. On his one syde, he had a long dager with a haffe of golde, and the other of a fayre kynde of carued woodde. He had on euery finger, thre ringes of golde, and had his bodie annoynted with oyle of Rozar and Benjamin. The natural coloure of his face was like vnto the coloure of an oliue. And all his bodye by lye paynted with diuers colours. The kynges name was Raia Colambu, and the Prince was cauled Raia Siagu.

The kyng of  
Buthuan.

The laste day of Marche neare vnto Easter, the capitaine caused his preesse to say masse, and sente to the kinge by thyn-  
terpreter, that his commyng a lande at that tyme was not  
to dyne with hym, but only to heare masse. The Capitayne  
came alande with fiftie of his men in theyr best apparel with  
dote weapons or harnesse, and all the resydue well armed.  
Befoze the boates came to lande, he caused sixe pieces of or-  
dinaunce to be shotte of in token of peace, and so came aland,  
wher the two kinges embraced hym, and accompanyd hym  
to the place appoynted for masse to be sayde not farre frome  
the sea syde. Sun what befoze the beginnyng of masse, the  
Capitayne sprynkeled the kynges with damaske water.

masse.

When the preesse was at mid masse at the offitorie, the kings  
profered them selues to go to kysse the crosse with the capy-  
taine, but offered nothynge. At the tyme of sacring when  
the preesse lifed vpp the bodie of Christ, and the Christians  
kneeled downe and helde vpp their handes ioyned together,  
the kinges dyd the like also with greate reuerence. In the  
meane tyme, whyle certeyne of the Christians were at the com-  
munion, a haunt egunne was shotte of to signifie vnto them  
that were in the shippes, to discharge all theyr ordinaunce.

When masse was tynished, the Capitaine caused certeyne of  
his men to put on theyr harnesse and to make a combat with  
theyr naked swoordes, wherat the kynges tooke great plea-  
sure. This doone, the Capitaine cauld a crosse to be broughe  
forth, with nayles and a crowne of thornes, gyvinge com-  
maundement to all his men to gyue reuerence therunto, and  
signifyinge to the kynges by thyninterpreter that that banner  
was

A combatte.

The Crosse  
and crowne  
of thornes.

## The vyage rounde

was giuen hym by The mperoure his lord and master, with commaundement to leaue the same in al places where he came to the great commeditie and profits of all such as wolde reuerently receaue it as an assured token of frendship: And that he wold therfore leaue it there aswel to accomplysh his lords commaundement, as also that if at any tyme any shippes of Chyistians shulde chaunce to come that way, shulde by seing that crosse perceaue that othere men had byn well enterpnyed there, and wolde therfore not onely abstepne from doing them any hurte or displeasure, but also helpe to ayde them agynste theyr enemies. And that therfore it shulde bee requisite to erecte that crosse vpon the toppe of the hyghesse mountayne that myght bee seene from the sea on euery syde. Also to pray vnto it reuerently. And that in so doinge, they shulde not bee hurte with thunder, lychtnyng, or tempestes. When the kynges harde these wordes, they gaue the Capitayne great chaunces, promysinge gladly to obserue and fulfill all suche thynges as he required. Then the Capitayne demaunded whether they were Moores or gentyles. They answered that they had none other kynde of religion, but that lyfing vppon theyr handes toynded together and theyr faces toward heauen, they called vpon theyr god Akba, whiche answere lyked the Capitayne very well, because the gentyles are sooner perswaded to othere sayth then the Moores, &c.

Moores and  
gentyles.

many Ilands

The Iland of  
Messana.

battes as  
bygge as  
Eagles.  
fowles with  
bones.

Departynge frome hence, they came to the Ilandes of Zelon, Zubuth, Messana, and Calaghan, by the conduct of certeyn pylottes of the sayde kynges. Of these, Zubuth is the beste, and hath the trade of beste traffique. In the Ilande of Messana, they founde dogges, catties, hogges, hennes, goates, ryke, ginger, Cocus, mylle, panpke, barlye, rygges, oranges, waxe, and golde in greate quantite. This Ilande is aboute the Equinoctiall towarde othere poise, is. degrees twoo thyrde partes: and. 162. degrees frome the place frome whense they departed. They remayned in this Ilande for the space of. viii. dayes, and then directed theyr vyage towarde the north west, and passed betwene these fyue Ilandes, Zelon, Bohol, Cangbu, Barba, and Calaghan. In this Ilande of Calaghan, are certeyn great battes as bygge as Eagles, of the which they toke one. They are good to bee eaten, and of taste muche lyke a henne. There are also stocke dooues, turtle dooues, poppingtaves, and certeyn fowles as bygge as hennes. These fowles haue lytle bones

boyses, and lay great egges, which they couer a cubet depe the  
in the sande, by the heate whereof and berine of the sunnes *egges hat-*  
they are hatch'd, and the younge bydes creepe owte of the *ched in sand.*  
saide by them selues. From the Ilandes of Messana to Catighan  
are .xx. leagues saylinge towarde the West. And by cause the  
kyng of Messana couide not solowethe shippes, they tary-  
ed so; him about the Ilandes of Polo, Nicobon, and Foxon, whire  
the Capitaïne tooke hym into his shippe with certeyne of his  
principall men, and so solowed they; by age towarde the I-  
lande of Zubur, whiche is abowte fiftie leagues distante from  
Catighan.

The .viij. day of Aprill abowte noone, they entered into  
the port of Zubur. And passyng by many bylages and habi-  
tations in trees, they came to the cite, where the Capitaïne  
haue commaundment to the maryners to styke they; sayles  
to let them selues in order in maner of battayle ray, causing  
all the ordinaunce to bee shotte of, wherewith all the people  
were put in greate feare. After this, the Capitaïne sent an  
ambassadoure with thinterpretoure to the kyng of Zubur. *The kyng of*  
When they approached nere to the cite, they founde the kyng *zubur.*  
with a great company of men so; astonysed at the noyse of  
the gunnes, But thinterpretour aduertised them that it was  
the custome of owre men in al suche places wher; they coome,  
to discharge they; ordinaunce in token of frendshyppe and to  
honour the lord of the cite. With which wordes the kyng  
and his company were well quicted. After this, thinterpre-  
tour declared that his master was the Capitaïne of the ships  
of the greatest Prince in the worlde, and that they were to  
discouer the Ilandes of Malucca: And further; that hearyng  
of his good name and fame by the reposite of the kyng of Mes-  
sana, they determyned to visite hym and to haue byttayles  
so; exchange of they; marchaundies. The kyng answered  
that he was well contented therewith, and that they were har-  
tely welcomme. Neuerthelste, that it was a custome in that  
place, that all such shippes as entered into that haven, shuld  
pay tribute: And that there were not many dayes passe, sence  
a shyppe laden with golde and slaues dyd so paye. In token  
wherof, he caused to coome before hym certeyne marchaunties  
of that company whiche yet remayned with hym. To this  
thinterpretour answered, that so;asmuch as his lord was  
the Capitaïne of so myghty a Prince, he neuer paye tribute

The Ilande  
of zubur.

The kyng of  
zubur.

A shyp laden  
with gold  
and slaues.

## The vyage rounde

to any kyng in the worlde, and wolde not now begynne. Wyllynge hym to take this for a resolute answer, that if he wolde accepte the peace that was profered hym, he shulde enjoy it, And if he rather desyred warre, he shoulde haue his handes full. When thinterpzetour had sayde these wordes, one of the sayde marchauntes (who was a Mooze) spake to the kyng in this maner. *CATAIA China*: that is. Take heed sy. For these men are they that haue conquered Calicut, Malaca, and all the greater India: and are of suche poure that yf powe intreate them otherwyle then well, powe may to late knowe what they are able to doo moze then they haue doone at Calicut and Malaca. When thinterpzetour harde these wordes, he sayde that the kyng his lord was of much greater puissance and moze dominions, and lord of moze shippes then was the kyng of Portugale: declarynge further that he was kyng of Spayne and Emperour of all Christendome. Addynge hereunto that yf he wolde not bee his frende, he wolde hereafter sende thither suche a poure of armed men as shulde destroy his contrey. The Mooze conferred all these wordes with the kyng, who sayde that he wolde further deliberate with his counsaile, and gve them a full answer the daye folowynge. In the meane tyme he sente them certeyne byttayles and wyne. When all these thynges were declared to the kyng of Malana who was the chiefe there about nexte unto hym, and lord of many Ilandes, he wente alande and repayred to the kyng of Zubu and declared unto hym the great humanitie and curtesie of the generall Capitayne. Shortely after, the Capitayne sente certeyn of his men with thinterpzetour to the kyng of Zubu to knowe his pleasure and what answer he wolde make them. As they wente towarde the court, they mette the kyng commynge in the streete accompanied with many of his chiefe men. He caused olde men to sit downe by him, and demaunded of them if there were any moze then one Capitayne in theyr compaignie: And whether it were theyr requeste that he shulde pay tribute to the Emperour. They answered that they desyred none other thyng but that they myght exercise marchaundies with them, and to barter ware for ware. The kyng made answer that he was well content therewith: Wyllynge the Capitayne in token of frendshipp to sende him a litle of the blud of his ryght arme, affirmynge that he wold do the lyke. After

Calicut.  
Malaca.

Shedding of  
bludde is a to-  
ken of frend-  
shyppe

After this the kynge of Messana with the kynge of Zubu his neute (who was the prince) and certeyne other of his gentylmen, came to the Hyppes and brought the Capitayne many goodly presentes. They entered into greate amitie, and had large communication of many thynges. The Capitayne perswaded them to the Christian fayth, which they gladly embraced, and tooke such pleasure in hearynge the articles of oure beliefe, that the teares fell from theyr eyes for ioye. They were baptised, and shortly after all the people of the Ilande. They esteeme nothyng more precious then drynking glasses of Venice worke.

When they came to the cite, they founde the kyng in his pallace sittynge vppon a floure of Auorie made of the leaues of date trees wrought after a curious diuise lyke a certeyne kynde of mattes. He had vppon his body, none other apparel but only a cloth of bombasine cotton hangynge before his priuie partes. On his heade, he had a bayle of needle worke: and aboute his necke a chaine of greate price. At his eares, hunge two rynge of golde wherein were inclosed many precious stones. He was but of smaule stature, but somewhat grosse, and had the residue of his body paynted with dyuers coloures wherof sum were lyke vnto flamynge fyre. Before hym, he had two vesselles made of the fine earth cauled Porcellina, with sodden egges. Also four vesselles of Porcellana full of wyne made of date trees, and couered with many odoriferous herbes. The prince brought them to his house, where he had foure daughters verie well fauoured and whyte lyke owres. He caused them to daunce all naked, and therewith to synge, and play on certeyne tymbrells made of metall.

At this tyme it so chaunced that one of the Spanyardes dyed in one of the Hyppes. And when certeyne of theyr company desired the kynge to geue them leaue to burie hym on the land, he answered that forasmuch as he and all his, were at the commaundement of theyr kynge and master, how much more ought the grounde so to bee.

They greatly marueyled at the ceremonies perteynyng to the maner of oure funeralles, and honoured the crosses whiche were set at bothe thesides the graue.

They lyue with iustice, and vse waighes and measures. Theyr houses are made of Timber and sawne boordes: and

II. ii.

are

The kynge of  
Zubut is baptised.

The kynge of  
Zubut his apparel.

well fauoured  
women.

## The vyage founden

are so buylded aboue the grownde vppon proppes and pylles, that they ascende to the same by certeyne staires. Under theyr houses, they keepe theyr hogges and hennes.

Barterynge

Pesus what.

They breake  
theyr Idoles  
and erecte  
the crosse.

Fyue hun-  
drieth men  
baptised.

The queene  
of zabut.

When they came to barterynge, they gaue golde, ryte, hogges, hennes, and dyuers other thynges for sume of oware trysels of smalle value. They gaue tenne pesos of golde for xvi. poundes weyght of iren. One pesus is in halfe a ducate and a halfe. The Sunday folowynge, the kynge was baptised with great solemnitie. At which tyme, the Capitayne admonyshted him before not to bee afrayde at the shooptyng of of the ordinaunce, because it was theyr custome so to doo as such solemne feastes. After this, the Capitayne caused them to breake all theyr Idoles, and to set vpp the crosse in dyuers places, prayynge to the same bothe mornynge and euenynge kneelynge on theyr knees and holdynge vp theyr handes ioyned together. The kynge in his baptisme, was named Charles after the Emperours name, and the pryncce, Ferdinando after the name of his maiesties brother. The kynge of Malana was named John, and the Moore Christopher. To all other they gaue such names as are commonly vsed in Christen dome. And thus befoze masse was begunne, were fyue hundred men baptised. When masse was synnished, the Capitayne inuited the kynge to dyne with him in his shyppe, and at his commynge, caused the ordinaunce to bee discharged.

The queene was also baptised with fortye of her gentilewomen, and her daughter the prynces wife. The queene was be-rypyunge and laye, haunynge her body couered with a white cloth. Her lippes were redde, and she had on her head a hat, on the toppe wherof was a triple crowne much lyke the popes. This crowne & the hat, were made of the leues of dates trees.

Within the space of viii. dayes, thynhabitauntes of the Islands were baptised excepte one vyllage of Idolaters who wolde not herein obey the kynes commaundement. Wherevpon the Capitayne sent certeyne of his menne thither, who burnt the towne and erecte a crosse in that place because the people of the vyllage were gentyles (that is) Idolaters. But if they had byn Moores (that is) Machumeticus, they wold haue erecte a pyller of stone, because the Moores are more booberne and harder to bee conuerred then are the gentyles.

When the queene came to the place where she shuld heare masse

masse, then came forth with great pompe, and solemnitie, ha-  
 yunge goinge before her three younge damoyselles, and three  
 men with theyr cappes in theyr handes, whom shee followed  
 appaerled in whyte and blacke, with a great bayle of silke  
 vpon her heade fringed aboute with golde, whiche covered  
 her harte and hunge downe to her shoulders. Shee had also  
 a great traine of women followinge her, bringe all barefoot  
 red and naked, excepte that vpon theyr heades and priue  
 partes, they wore certeyne bayles of silke, and hadde theyr  
 heare spredd.

Before the kynge of Zuhut was baptised, he was named  
 Raia Humatun. When the Capitayne demanded of hym  
 why all the Idoles in the Ilande were not burnt accordyng  
 to his promise, he answered that they esteemed the no more  
 as goddes, but only made sacrifice to them for the Idoles  
 boother who was very sycke, and as noble and mystie a  
 man as was in the Ilande. The Capitayne answered that if  
 he wolde burne all his Idoles and beleue faythfully in Christ,  
 and bee baptised, he shulde be immediately restored to health,  
 and that he wolde els geue them leave to strepe of his heade.  
 By these wordes and persuasions of the Capitayne, he re-  
 ceaued such hope of health, that after he was baptised he felt  
 no more greefe of his disease. And this was a manifest myra-  
 cle wrought in owre tyme whereby dyuers infidels were con-  
 uerted to owre fayth, and theyr Idoles destroyed, and also  
 theyr altars ouerthrowen on the which they were accus-  
 tomed to cate the sacrificed beeste. The people of the Ilande  
 pay the kynge a portion of vitayles for theyr tribute by all  
 theyr cities and byllages.

Not farre from this Ilande of Zuhut, is the Iland of Ma-  
 than, whose inhabitants vse maruelous ceremonies in theyr  
 sacrifices to the soone and burying the deade. They weare  
 rynges of golde about theyr priue members. The Ilande is  
 gouerned by two princes wherof the one is named Zulu, and  
 the other Cilapulan. And whereas this Cilapulan refused to pay  
 tribute to the kynge of Spayne, the Capitayne wrote agaynst  
 hym in his owne person with .lx. of his menne armed with  
 coates of mayle and helmettes. Cilapulan diuided his army  
 into three battayles, hauyng in every battaile two thousand  
 and fiftie men armed with bowes, arrowes, dartes and saue-  
 lins.

The queene  
 of Zuhut  
 and her  
 attendants

to be  
 baptised

the  
 capitayne  
 and his  
 soldiers

A miracle

the  
 capitayne  
 and his  
 soldiers

The Iland of  
 Mathan.

to be  
 baptised

the  
 capitayne  
 and his  
 soldiers

## The vyage rounde

ling hardened at the poyntes with syer. This continued longe and warpe. But the Capitayne beinge a valient man and pre-  
**The capitaine** magellanus is slayne. synged hym selfe in the brunt of the barrayle, was sore wound-  
 ed and slayne, forasmuch as the moste of the Barbarians di-  
 rected all theyr force agens hym. Besyde the Capitayne,  
 were slayne of oore men abowt. viii. or. ix. Of the Barba-  
 rians, were. xv. slayne and many sore wounded. After the deach  
 of the Capitayne, they chose two other in his place, of the  
 which one was Doardo Barbella a Portugale, and the o-  
 ther John Serrano who was shortly after betrayde by thins  
 interpreter and taken prisoner with dyuers other.

Certeine dayes before the Capitaynes deach, they hadde  
 knowledge of the Ilandes of Molucca whiche they chiefly  
 sought. Departynge therfore from the Ilande of Machan,  
**The Ilande of** they sayled farre and came to the cape of an other Ilande na-  
**Bobol.** med Bobol. In the myddest of this mayne sea (whiche they  
 named Archipelagus) they consulted to burne the shyppe named  
**They burne** Conception, bycause they were nowe fewe in number, and to  
**one of they** furnishe the other two shippes with thartillerie therof. Thus  
**shippes.** directynge theyr course towarde Southewest, they came to  
 an other Ilande named *Paulloghon*, where they founde blacke  
**Blacke men.** men lyke vnto the Saracins. Shortly after, they arriued at  
 an other great Iland, whose kyng named Raia Calauar, in-  
 treated them very frendely in all thynges as dyd the kyng of  
**The Ilande** Mellana. This Ilande is ryche in golde, and hath plentie of  
**of Chippit.** ryffe, gynger, hogges, goates, hennes, and dyuers other  
 thynges. It is named Chippit, and is. viii. degrees aboute the  
 Equinoctiall line towarde oore pole: And in longitude from  
 the place from whens they first departed. 170. degrees: And  
 abowt. 50. leaques from Zubu.

Departynge frome hense they came to an other Iland na-  
**The Iland of** med Caghaan beinge 40. leaques frome Chippit as they sayled  
**Caghaan.** betwene the weste and Southe weste. This Ilande is ve-  
 ry greate, and in maner uninhabited. The people are moores,  
 and were banished oore of the Ilande of Burnei whiche sum  
 caule Porne.

Frome this Ilande abowt xxv. leaques betwene the west  
 and northe weste, they founde a maruelous fearefull Ilande  
**The Iland of** named *Pulaoan*, beinge towarde oore pole aboute the Equino-  
**Pulaoan.** ctiall ix. degrees and a thirde parte: And C. lxxix. degrees and  
 a thyrde

a third parte in longitude frome the place of theyr departing.

Frome this Ilande .x. leagues towarde the South weste, they sawe an other Ilande whiche seemed to them sumtymes to mounce as they sayled by the coastes therof. As they were enteringe into the porte, there arose a boyssious and darke tempeste which ceased as soone as the fiere of the thre sayntes (wherof we haue spoken before) appeared vppon the cabells. Frome the beginnunge of this Ilande to the porte, are fyue leagues. This Ilande is greate and riche: and the chiefe citie therof conteyneth .xxv. thousande houses. The kynge inre- reyned oboze men very frendlye, and sent them byslyde many other presentes, two elephantes trapped with silke to bring them to his pallace that brought the presentes which the Capytaynes sent hym. He hath a magnyficalle courte and a greate garde. Also a multitude of concubynes. He is a moore, and is named Baia Siripada. He is a kynge of great poure, and hath vnder hym many other kynges, Ilandes, and cities. This Ilande of Burnei is aboute the Equinoctiall toward oboze pole fyue degrees and a quarter. And in longitude frome the place of theyr departing .C. lxxvi. degrees and two thirde partes.

Departinge frome Burnei, they came to an Ilande cauled Cimbunon, beinge .viii. degrees above the Equinoctiall lyne. Here they remayned .xl. days to calke theyr shippes and furnyssh them with freische water and fuell whiche was to them great payne and trauayle because they were in maner all bare footed, theyr shoes and in maner theyr other apparell beinge woene by reason of the longe vyage. In the wooddes of this Ilande, they founde a tree whose leanes as soone as they faule on the grounde, doo sturre and remoue frome place to place as though they were aloue. They are muche lyke the leanes of a mulbery tree: And haue on euery syde as it were two short and blunt fiere. When they are cut or broken, there is no bludde scene come furth of them. Yet when any of them are touched, they suddenyely moue and starte away. Antonie Pigafetta kepte one of them in a platter for the space of .viii. dayes. And euer when he touched it, it ranne rounde aboute the platter. He supposeth that they lue only by ayer.

Departynge from hence, they directed theyr course by the Weste quarter towarde the Southeaste, to fynde the Ilandes

The Iland of  
Burnei, or po  
ne.

A great citie.

Elephanes

The Iland of  
Cimbunon.

Leanes of  
trees which  
seeme to lue.

of

of Molucca, and Taples not farre from certeyne mountaynes  
 where they founde the sea full of great weedes and herbes.  
 From hence, they came to the Ilandes of Zola and Taghina,  
 in the which are founde peccles of exceeding biggenesse.  
 Following they coude toward the north East, they came  
 to a great Iste named Manglano, lyinge aboue the Ilandes of  
 Maluan and Callian where they tooke a canoa of certeyne of  
 this habitantes by whome being informed of the Ilandes of  
 Molucca they left they coude towarde the north East, and  
 followed the South east more unto a cape of the Iland of Bu-  
 ghian, they were aduertised for certeyne that on the bankes of  
 a certeyne river, there dwelte men ouergrowen with heare,  
 and of high stature. Following till they coude by the south east, and pass-  
 yng by many small Ilandes, they came to the Ilandes of  
 Molucca the xij. dayes of Nouember and the xxv. moneth  
 after theyr departure out of Spayne. Beinge therfore ioy-  
 full and giuing thanks vnto god, they discharged all theyr  
 ordynance. In the coaste of all these Ilandes, euen vnto  
 the Ilandes of Molucca, soundyng with theyr plummet, they  
 founde the deapthe of the sea to bee no lesse then a hundred  
 and two fathoms, which is contrary to the sayinge of the Por-  
 tugales who sayme that no shyppe can passe that way with-  
 out great daungionce by reason of the halowes and rocks  
 or Melanes and for the darkenelle which the cloudes cause in  
 the heauen. All which thyngs they sayned to thynke that  
 none other shoulde haue knowellege of theyr vyages.  
 The xxv. day of Nouember in the yere. 1521, before  
 the risinge of the sonne, they entered into the port of the  
 Ilande of Tidore, being one of the chiefe Ilandes of Molucca,  
 where they were honorably receyued of the kynge who de-  
 clared that he had longe before seene a spgne in heauen that  
 certeyn shippes shuld comie from a farre contrey to the I-  
 landes of Molucca. And that wheras for the better certificat  
 therof he considered the fashions of the moone, he sawe theyr  
 in the companyng of owle shippes, and that we were the men  
 whome he seemed to see in the same. Whereupon he profered  
 hym selfe to enter into league offrendshyppe with the kynge  
 of Spayne, and to accepte owle men as his brotherne and  
 chyldren, wyllyng them to come aborde as into theyr owne  
 houses.

A sea full of  
 weedes and  
 peccles.

men ouer-  
 grown with  
 heare.

The Ilandes  
 of Molucca.

The portu-  
 gales are re-  
 proued.

Tidore one of  
 the Ilandes  
 of Molucca.

A vision in  
 the planettes

houses. Also that for theyr commynge, that Ilande shulde no more bee cauled Tidore, but Castile for the greate loue whiche he bore to theyr kynge to whom he reputed as his lord and master. This kynge is a Moore, and is named Raja Sultan Bauzo.

The Ilandes of Molucca are fve in number, & are thus named: Tarenate, Tidore, Mutir, Macchian, and Bacchian. Of these, Tarenate is the chiefest.

Directly agaynst the Ilande of Tidore, there is an other great Ilande named Gilolo, inhabited of Moores and Gentyles. The Moores haue two kynges, of the which one hath fyre hundred chylzen, & the other fyre hundred and fiftie. The Gentyles kepe not so many women as doo the Moores no; yet lyue in such superstitions. They praye to the fyre thynge that they meete in the moynynge when they go furth of theyr houses, and honoure that as theyr god for that day. The kynge of the gentyles is very ryche in golde. In the sayde Ilande of Gilolo, are recedes as bygge as a mans legge, and full of cleare water holsome to bee drunke.

The xii. daye of Nouember, the kynge of Tidore appointed othere men a ware house in the cite where they might sell theyr marchaundies. Theyr maner of exchange was in this sort. For tenne yardes of good redde cloth, they had one Bahar of cloues, whiche amounteth to foure Cantari and fyre pounce weight: And one Cantar is a hundred pounce weight. For x. yardes of cloth sumwhat woorse then the other, they receaued in Lambie, one Bahar. For xxx. dynt kynge cuppes of glasse, they had one Bahar. For xlii. Canthyls of quicke syluer, one Bahar. They came dayly to the shippes with many of theyr barkes full of goates, hennes, pygges of a spanne longe, also the frute cauled Cocus, with dyuers other kyndes of byrtales in such quantitie that it was a maraculous thynge to beholde. They furnished also theyr shippes with frethe water which is hotte as it is theweth owt of the springe, but is very coude when it hath stood a while in an other place. It springeth from the mountaynes on the which the cloue trees growe. They sawe a cloude ryle in manner dayly, which compasseth about the sayde mountaynes.

The kynge of the Ilande of Bacchian, sente the kynge of Spayne two deade byrdes of straunge forme. They were of the byggenes of turtle deoues, with lyttle heades and longe

bylles:

The fyve I-landes of molucca.

Tarenate.

The Iland of Gilolo.

Moores & gentyles.

Golde.

water in recedes.

Theyr maner of bartering.

water of a straunge qualitie.

Byrdes of a straunge forme.

## The vyage rounde

bylles: also longe and smaule legges and no wynges, but in the strade therof certeyne longe fethers of diuers colours, and sayles lyke turtle doques. All the other fethers are of one colour much lyke unto raven, except those of the wynges. They flye not but when the wynde bloweth. These Moores are of opinion that these byrdes comme frome the heauenlye Paradyse, and therfore caule them *Manucoddians*, that is the byrdes of god.

When they were determyned to depart from the Ilandes of Molucca, certeyne kynges of the Ilandes accompanied the with theyr canoas, and conducted them to an Ilande called *Mare* where they refreshed theyr wyppes with freche water and fuel. The kynges sent them precious manie matters presentes: and embzasyng e more menne, departed with the teares in theyr eyes: And e more men for theyr last farewell, shotte of all theyr ordinaunce. When in the Ilande of *Mare*, they perceaued that one of theyr wyppes leached and toke water very soze: wherby they were inforced to tary there three dayes. But seinge that they coulde fynde no remedie for the same but in longe tyme, they determined to leaue it, gyuyng order that if afterwarde it coulde bee repayed, they shoulde turne into Spayne as well as they coulde.

In all the Ilandes of Molucca is founde cloues, ginger, byrde of the roote of *Sagu*, ryle, goates, sheepe, hennes, sygges, almondes, sweete pomegranates and sowre, oranges, lemondes, and hony which is made of certeyne flies lesse then antes: Also canes of suger, oyle of *Focus*, mellons, gourdes, and a marvellous coulde frute which they name *Casmulicat* and dyuers other frutes. Furthermoze whyte and redde popinglayes, and other of variable coloures. It is not paste fiftie yeares sence the moores byrde inhabited anye of these Ilands, which were befoze inhabited only with geyles.

The Ilande of *Tidore*, is about the Equinoctiall line toward e more pole, about 27. minutes: And in longitude from the place from whence they departed, 171. degrees. And from the Archipelagus in the which is the Iland of *Zamal* which our men named the Iland of theeues, 17. degrees and a halfe, and runneth to the quarter of south south west, and north north east. *Ternate*, is vnder the Equinoctiall line foure minutes vnder the pole Antartike. *Mutir*, is directly vnder the Equinoctiall line, *Macchian* is, 36. minutes toward the pole Antartike, and

They leane  
one of theyr  
wyppes be-  
hyned them.

The Ilandes  
of Molucca.

Hony of Ayes.

popinglayes.

The Iland of  
Tidore.

Ternate,  
Mutir.

Macchian.

and *Bacchan* one degree. These Ilandes are lyke foure sharpe mountaynes, except *Macchian* which is not sharpe. The byggest of all these, is *Bacchan*.

Departynge from the Iland of *Mare* and directyng the course towarde the south west, with onely. xlvi. men in theppes and. xlii. Indians, they passed by the Ilandes of *Thacouan*, *Agoma*, *Sico*, *Bioghi*, *Laphi*, *Sulacho*, *Lumatola*, *Tencum*, *Buru*, *Ambon*, *Budia*, *Celatur*, *Benaia*, *Ambalao*, *Wandan*, *Zorobua*, *Zolot*, *Rocenamor*, *Galian*, and *Mailua*, with dyuers other Ilandes both great and smalle, of *Mooges*, *Gentyles*, and *Canibales*. More men remayned xv. dayes in the Ilande of *Mailua* to repayre theppes in certeyne places where it tooke water. All the fieldes of this Ilande is full of longe and rounde pepper, and is situate toward the pole Antartike vnder the Equinoctiall line, liiii. degrees and a halfe, and is in the longitude of. 169. degrees and 40. minutes.

The pilote which more men brought owt of the Ilandes of *Molucca*, toulde them that not farre from thence, was an Iland named *Aructio* in the which are men and women not past a cubite in height, hauninge eares of such byggennesse that they lye vpon one and couer them with the other. But more men wolde not sayle thither, bothe bycause the wynde and course of the sea was agaynst theym, and also for that they gaue no credite to his reporte.

The. xxv. day of January in the yere. 1522. they departed from *Mailua*, and the day folowynge, arryued at a greete Iland named *Timor*, beinge fife leagues distant from *Mailua* betwene the south and south west. In this Ilande is founde the woodde of whyte sanders and ginger, and dyuers kindes of frutes. Also sundry kyndes of beastes, and plentie of byrtayle and golde. They of the Ilandes of *Giua*, *Molucca*, and *Loxon*, resort to this Ilande for sanders. The inhabitants are gentyles. They say that when they go to cut the woodde of sanders, the deuyl appeareth to them in dyuers formes and asketh theym what they haue neede of: And that after this vision, many of them are longe sicke. In al the Ilandes of this Archipelagus, rayneth the disease of saynt Job (whiche wee caule the frenche poxe) more then in any other place in the worlde.

*Bacchan*

many Ilands

The Iland of  
*Mailua*.  
Pepper.

Lytle men  
with longe  
eares.

The Iland of  
*Timor*.

whyte sanders and ginger.

The deuyl  
appeareth.

Saynt Job  
his disease.

## The vyage rounde

Cinamome

The Ilandes  
of Ciaua,  
Malacca.

The greate  
goulfe of  
China.

The cape of  
Malacca.

The names  
of many regi-  
ons.

Reubarbe.

The greate  
kyng of Chi-  
na.

The greater  
India.

Farre from this Ilande betwene the west and north west they came to an Ilande named *Eude*, in the whiche growethe great plentie of *Sinamome*. In this tracte are founde many Ilandes lying in order as it were one directly behynde, an other, even vnto the Ilande of the greater *Ciaua*, named *Ciaua maior*, and vnto the cape of *Malacca*, beinge in East India. *Ciaua* the lesse, is as hygge as the Ilande of *Madera*, and is but halfe a league distant from *Ciaua maior*. Here they were informed that about *Ciaua maior* toward the north, is a great goulfe cauled the goulfe of *ebina*, in the which are trees of exceeding byggenesse, inhabited with foules of such greatenes that they carry great beastes in the ayer. The frutes of these trees are as hygge as cucummers.

The cape of *Malacca* is one degree and a halfe about the Equinoctiall line toward the pole Arctike. On the East side of this cape, runneth a very longe coaste in the which are many regions and cities wherof sum are cauled by these names, *Cingipora* which is the cape. Also *Paban*, *Calantan*, *Pakani*, *Braslin*, *Bencu*, *Longon*, and *Odia* wherin is the cite in the which dwelleth the kyng of *Sian* named *Zacabedera*. They cities are builded as towres are, and subiecte to the kyng of *Sian*. After the realme of *Sian*, are the regions of *Lungoma* & *Campa* where *Reubarbe* groweth, of the which are dyuers opinions, some supposynge it to bee a roote, and other a putrified tree, affirming that yf it were not putrified, it shulde not haue so great a sauour. They caule it *Osama*. Next vnto this, is found the great *China*, whose kyng is thought to bee the greatest prince in the worlde, and is named *Santoa Raia*. Furthermore, al that is written hereafter of this kyng and these regions, they learned by thinformacion of a *Moor* that was in the Ilande of *Timor*. He affirmed that the sayde kyng hath threescore and tenne crowned kynges vnder his empyre, and hath a poze in the sea named *Canthan*; And two principal cities named *Nauchin* and *Commulaba* where he remaineth hym selfe, and hath ever foure of his chiefe princes lying about his pallace on euery syde, toward the East, Weste, Northe, and South giuinge dylygent attendaunce what is doone in euery of they quarters. All the princes of the greater India (cauled *India Maior*,) and of that wherof I haue spoken before, are obedient to this kyng. And in token that they are trewe subiectes

subiectes, they keepe in theyr pallaices which are in the midst of theyr cities, the beaste cauled *Linx*, being fayrer then a lyon, And is the great kynges signette, whiche all suche as intende to go to *China*, beate with them sealed in warr oz on a piece of Iuerie for theyr safe conducte, without the which they may not enter into the hauein.

When any of his kyngs rebell oz are disobedient, he causeth them to bee sene, and salted and dyed at the soonne: Then to bee stuffed with chaffe, and sette vppon sum hygh thyng in the myddest of the chiefe Arcade of the citie where all the people may see it. He neuer suffereth his owne person to bee openly seene to any man. But when his noble men of the courte are desyrous to see hym, he commeth doونه frome his pallaice into a ryche pauplyon accompanied with fyre of his principall concubynes appareyled with lyke vestures as is he hymselfe. All this way he is not seene by reason of the pauplyon. When he hath passed through the pauplyon, he entereth into a serpent named *Nagha*, being the most marueylous and ryche woork of the worlde, and placed in the greatest courte of the pallaice. When the kyng entereth in to this with the womē, to thintent that he may not be knowē among them, he causeth the sayd noble men only to looke in at a glasse which is in the breste of the serpent, where they see the kyng amonge the women, but can not dicerne which is he. He ioyneith in mariage with his syster that the blud royall bee not mixt with any other. His pallaice is emiored with seven large walles, the one being farre distant frō the other: And hath in every such circuite tenn thousande men for the garrison of his pallaice, who haue theyr watchinge dayes appoynted them course by course with freshe men in theyr places, and thus keepe theyr watch continually both daye and nyght. In this pallaice are .lxxix. haules, in the which is an infinite number of women that serue the kyng hauyng euer lyght torches in theyr handes for the greater magnyficence. He that wolde see all the pallaice, shoulde spend a hole day therein. Amonge other, there are foure principal haules where summyes the kyng gyueth audience to his noble men. Of these, one is couered both aboue and beneath with metall, an other all ouer with syluer, the thyrde with gold, and the fourth with pearles and precious stones.

These

The beaste  
cauled *linx*.

The punishement of rebellles.

The kyng is not seene but at a glasse.

A thyng of strange woorkmanshyypp.

The kyng maryeth his syster.  
his pallaice.

A marueylous garde.

women serue the kyng.

Foure marueylous haules

## The vyage rounde

The people  
of China.

The Crosse.

The greate  
kynge of mien  
CATHAY.

The sea of  
Lanchidol.

Malacca.

The Island of  
Sumatra.

Pegu.

Bengala.

Calicut.

Canonor.

Goa.

Cambala.

Ormuz.

East India.

Cap. de Buona.

Speranza.

The port of  
Mozambique.

These people of China are whyte menne, appareled as we are, and eate theyr meate on tables as wee doo. They haue the crosse in sum estimation, but knowe not the cause whye.

Beyonde the coaste of China, are dyuers other nations and people as Chenchii where pearles and cynamon are founde. Also the people named Lichii, where reyneth the great kynge of Sien, haung vnder hym .xxii. kynges, and is subiecte to the kynge of China. Here is also founde the great cite of CATHAY in the East, and dyuers other nations in the sayd firme land, of the which sum are byrysthe and bestiall which vse to kyl and eate theyr parentes when they are owld, thinking thereby that they shall reuenge in them. All these people are gentles.

The .xi. day of February in the yeare .1522. they departed from the Island of Timor and were ingulphed by chance in the great sea cauled Lanchidol, and tooke theyr course betwene the weste and south weste, leaunge the northe coastes on theyr ryght hand, fearyng least if they shuld sayle toward the firme land, they myght see scene of the portugales who are of great power in Malacca: and therfore dyrected theyr course withynde the Island of Sumatra cauled in owld tyme Taprobana: Leaung also on theyr ryght hand vpon the firm land, the prouinces and regions of Pegu, Bengala, Calicut, Canonor, Goa, Cambala, the goulfe of the Islande of Ormuz, and all the coastes of the greater India. And more safely to passe the cape of Buona Speranza being aboue Astryke, they sayled about .xlii. degrees toward the pole Antartike, and remayned seuen weekes aboue that cape with many fetches compassyng the wynd with theyr sayles continually alofte, because they had a west and north weste wynd in the proos of theyr shyppe which wolde not suffer them to passe. The cape of Buona Speranza, is toward the pole Antartik beneth the Equinoctiall line .xxxi. degrees and a halfe: and .1600. leaues from the cape of Malacca: And is the greatestte and moste daungyerous cape that is founde at thys day in all the worlde.

When they had by these perels overpassed thys cape, certeyne of them as well for lacke of bytayles as also by reason of sykenesse, were mynded to sayle to a haue of the Portugales named Monzambique aboue Astryke. But the other answered that they wold rather dye then go to any other place then directly to Spayne, They folowed theyr course therefore saylunge

saylunge towarde the Southweſt two monethes continually without touching at any porte: In whiche tyme there dyed abowte. xxi. of theſe company, whom they caſt into the ſea. And ſurely if god of his infinite mercie had not preſerued the reſidue in tyme, they hadde all dyed of famine.

In ſine, beinge enforced of neceſſitie, and halfe of theſe company dead, they ſayled to one of the Iſlandes of *Capo Verde* cauled *Inſula Sancti Iacobi*, that is, ſaynte James Iſlande, pertaining to the kyng of Portugal. Where, as loone as they arriued, they ſent certeyne alande in the ſhippe boate for byt rayles, declaringe to the Portugales with all loue and favour what neceſſitie they were dyuen to and what miſeries and trauayles they had ſuſteyned, informinge them further of theſe marueylous viage and ſuche thynges as they hadde ſcene in both the Eaſt and Weſt India, with ſuch other gentle wordes wherby they obteyned certeyne meaſures of riſe. But when afterwarde. xiii. of theſe returned for more ryſe, they were deteyned: Whereuppon the reſte whiche remayned in the ſhippe, fearynge the lyke chaunce, departed with full ſayles, and the. vii. day of September with the helpe of god entered into the haven of *San Lucar* nere vnto *Seuile*, where diſcharginge all theſe ordinaunce for ioy, they wente immediately to the greates church in theſe ſherres and barefooted with a torche before them to gyue thankes to almyghy god who had brought them ſafe to theſe owne countrey, and reſtozed them to theſe wyues and chyldren.

As touchinge thende of this viage, *Transiluanus* wyrteth ſumewhat more largely as foloweth.

The other ſhippe which they lefte behynde them to bee repayred, returned afterwarde by the Archipelagus aforeſayde and by the great ſea to the coaſtes of the firme of the weſt India, and arriued at a region of the ſame beinge ageynſt *Dariens*, where the South ſea of *Sur* is ſeperate but by a lyttle ſpace of lande from the Weſte Ocean in the which are the Iſlandes of *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba*, and other Iſlandes of the Spanyardes. The other ſhippe which returned into Spayne by compaſing about the hole bowle of the worlde by the coaſtes of Eaſt India and Affrike, departyng from the Iſland of *Tidore*, and ſaylunge euer on this ſyde the Equinoctiall, dyd not fynde the cape of *Cattigara* beinge aboute Asia, and (by the deſcription

famen,

*Capo Verde.*  
*S. James*  
*Iſlande.*

The ingratitude of the Portugales.

The port of *ſaynt Lucar* nere vnto *Seuile*.

what became of the other ſhippe, *Dariens*.

The cape of *Cattigara*.

of

## The vyage rounde

**Ptolome.**

**The vyage  
hardly per-  
formed.**

**They bye  
slaves for  
lacke of helpe**

**mariners  
woorthy im-  
mortal fame.  
Argonauti.  
The viage of  
Jason to wyn  
the golden  
fleese.**

**The shyppe  
more woorthy  
fame then  
owld Argo  
of Grecia.  
The vyage**

of Ptolome) rechyng many degrees beyonde the Equinoctial. But hauynge sayled many dayes by the marne sea, they came to the cape of *Buona Speranza* and frome thence to the *Ilandes* of *Capo verde*, where their shyppe beinge sooze brouled by reason of the longe biage, leaked and tooke water, in suche sorte that the mariners beinge nowe but fewe in number, and those also weake and feeble by reason of longe sickenesse and hunger, were not able both to dzye the pooimpe continually and otherwyle gouerne the shippe: and were therfore of necessitie inforced to goo alande at the *Ilande* of *Sainte James* to bye theym cerreyne slaves to helpe thaim. But beinge destitute of money, according to the custome of the mariners, they profered them cloues for theyr slaves. The which thyng when it came to the eares of the *Portugale* that was Capitayne of that *Ilande*, he cast. xlii. of them in prison, Wherby the residue that remainned in the shippe (beinge nowe but. xliii. in number) were put in such feare that they departed immediately without rescuing theyr felowes, and sayled continually both by daye and by nyght by the coastes of *Affrike*, and came in fine to *Spayne* the. vi. day of *September* in the yere, 1522. and arryued at the porte nere vnto *Stulle* the. xli. moneth after they departed from the *Ilande* of *Tidore*. Mariners doubtlesse more woorthy to bee celebratzed with eternal memoire then they whiche in owld tyme were cauled *Argonauti* that sayled with *Jason* to win the golden fleese in the region of *Cholebis* and the riuer of *Phasis* in the greare sea of *Pontus*. And the shyppe it selfe, more woorthye to bee placed amonge the starres then that owld *Argo* which departynge out of *Grecia*, sayled to the ende of that great sea. For this owre marueylous shyppe, takynge her byage from the *Straightes* of *Sibilterra* and saylynge by the greate *Ocean* towarde the South and pole *Antarctike*, and turnynge from thence to the Weste, folowed that course so farre that passynge vnder the great circumference of the worlde, shee came into the *East*, and frome thence ageyne into the *Weste*, not by returnynge backe warde, but still saylynge forwarde, so compasyng abowt the hault of the worlde vnder the hole circumference of heauen vntill shee were miraculously restozed to her natue region of *Spayne* and house of *Stulle*.

Of the prices of precious stones and Spices, wch they  
weightes and measures as they are accustomed to bee  
soulde bothe of the Moores and the gentyles:

And of the places where they growe.



As much as in dyuers places of this historie,  
menton is made of precious stones, I haue  
thought good to declare somewhat aswell of  
theyr prices as of the places of theyr generatt  
on, that wee may not utterly bee ignorant of  
the thinges which we so greatly esteeme and  
hpe to deare.

Of the Rubie.

The Rubies growe in India: and are founde for the most  
part in a ryuer named Pegu. These are of the best kind  
and finest, whiche they of the lande of Malabar caule  
Runpelo, and are well soule if they bee fayre and cleane  
without sportes. The Indians to know theyr finenesse, put  
them vppon theyr tongues, coumptynge that to bee best that  
is coudest and most harde. And to see theyr finenesse, they  
take them vp with a peece of ware by the sharpest poynt: and  
lookynge agens the lyght, espie in theim euery smaule spot  
or flake. They are also founde in certeyne deepe fosses or pit  
tes which are made in mountaynes that are beyonde the said  
ryuer. They are scoured and made cleane in the countrey of  
Pegu. Yet can they not square and polyshe them. But for  
this purpose sende them to dyuers other countreys, and espec  
ally to Malacate, Marlinga, Calicut, and the region of Ma  
labar, where are many cunnynge Lapidaries.

And to gyue poe intelligence of the value of these stones,  
we shall vnderstande that this woorde Fanan, signifieth a  
weighte somewhat more then two of oure carattes: And .xi.  
Fanans and a quarter, is one Mitigal: And .vi. Mitigales  
and a halfe, make one vnce. This Fanan, is also a kynde of  
money which is in value, one ryale of syluer. And therefore  
after this accompte I say that

Eyght fine rubies of the weyght of one Fanan (which are in  
all, aboue two carattes) are in value.

Four rubies that wey one fanan, are worth

Two that wey one fanan

Fanan .x.

Fanan .xx.

Fanan .xl.

One caratte  
is .iii. graines

which is  
one crown  
of golde

Ann, 1,

Duc

## The prices of

One that weyth thre quarters of one fanan	Fanan xxx.
One that weyth one fanan	Fanan l.
One that weyth one fanan and a quarter.	Fanan lxx.
One that weyth one fanan and a halfe	Fanan C.
One that weyth one fanan and thre quarters	Fanan C l.
One that weyth two fanans.	Fanan CC.
One that weyth two fanans and a quarter.	Fanan CC l.
One that weyth two fanans and a halfe	Fanan. ccc.
One that weyth two fanans and thre quarters.	Fanan ccc l.
Of thre fanans	Fanan cccc.
Of thre and a quarter	Fanan D.
Of thre and a halfe	Fanan D l.
Of thre and thre quarters.	Fanan. Dc.
Of thre and thre quarters and a halfe	Fanan Dc xx.
Of foure fanans	Fanan Dcl.
Of foure and a quarter	Fanan D cc.
Of foure and a halfe	Fanan D cccc.
Of fyue fanans	Fanan M.
Of fyue and a halfe	Fanan M cc.
Of fyue fanans, which are about xii. carattes.	Fanan M D.

which make .150. crownes of golde.  
And these are commonly the prices of perfecte Rubies. But  
suche as are not perfecte, and haue any spottes in them, or  
are not of good colour, are of lesse prys accordynge to the ar  
bitriment and estimation of the byer.

### Of the Rubies which growe in the Ilande of Zeilam.

**I**n the Ilande of Zeilam, beinge in the seconde India, are  
founde many Rubies which the Indians name *Manicus*, the  
greatest parte wherof do not arrive to the perfection of the  
other aforesayde in colour, because they are redde as though  
they were washed, and of a fleshy colour. yet are they very  
coude and harde. The perfecteste of theym are greatly esteem  
ed amonge the people of the Ilande, and reserved only for  
the kynge hym selfe if they bee of any great quantitie. When  
his jewellers fynde any bygge piece of this rocke of the beste  
kynde, they put it in fyre for the space of certeyne houres.  
Which if it cooime out of the fyre incorrupte, it becommeth  
of the colour of a burnynge cole, and was therfore cauled of  
the Greekes, Anthrax, which signifieth a burnynge cole. The  
same

Came that the Greekes caule Anthrax, the Latines caule *bunculus*. These they greatly esteeme. When the kyng of Sas-  
singa can get any of theym, he causeth a fine hole to bee boor-  
ed in the undermost part of them to the myddest: And suffer-  
eth none of the to passe out of his realme: especially if they  
haue byn tryed by the sayde profe. These are of greater hac-  
lue then the other of Segu, if they bee in theyr naturall per-  
fection and cleanness.

Of these, one that weith a carratte (whiche is halfe a fanan)  
is woorth in Calcut, *Fanan xxx.*  
One of two carattes *Fanan. lxx.*  
Of thre carattes. *Fanan. c l.*

Of thre carattes and a halfe *Fanan. c c.*

Of foure carattes *Fanan. ccc.*

Of foure carattes and a halfe *Fanan. ccc l.*

Of fyue carattes *Fanan. cccc.*

Of fyue carattes and a halfe *Fanan. ccccl.*

Of sixe carattes *Fanan. Dxx.*

Of sixe carattes and a halfe *Fanan. Dlx.*

Of seuen carattes *Fanan. Dcxxx.*

Of seuen carattes and a halfe *Fanan. Dcxl.*

One of. viii. carattes that hath bynne wel proued in the fier,  
is woorth *Fanan Dccc.*

Of. viii. carattes and a halfe *Fanan Dcccc.*

One such of tenne carattes *Fanan M ccc.*

One of. x. carattes and a halfe *Fanan M dc.*

Of. xii. carattes *Fanan Mxx.*

Of. xiiii. carattes *Fanan Mxxx.*

Of. xvi. carattes *Fanan 6000.*

{ which are  
iii. crowes  
of golde

Of the kynde of Rubies,  
cauled Spinelle.

There is also founde an other kynde of Rubies which we  
caule Spinelle and the Indians, Caropus. They growe  
in the selfe same countrey of Segu where as are the fine  
Rubies: And are found in the mountaynes in the vpper crust  
or skine of the earth. These are not so fine nor of so good co-  
lour as are the trewe Rubies: But haue somewhat the colour  
of a granate which we commonly caule a garnet. yet of these

R R n, ii, such

## The prices of

suche as are perfecte in theyr colour, are of value halfe less then trewe Rubies.

### C Of the Rubies cauled Balassi.

**B**alassi, are of the kyndes of Rubies, but are not so harde. Theyr colour is sumtyme lyke a rose, and sume are in manner whyte. They growe in Balassia, whiche is a region within the firme lande aboue Pegu and Bengala: And are brought from thence by marchauntes of the Moores to Calicut where they are brought and polished: And are sold of the same price that are Spinelle.

### C Of the Diamundes of the owlde myne.

**T**hese Diamundes are founde in the eyrie India in a kyngdome of the Moores named Decan, from whense they are brought to other regions. There are also founde other Diamundes whiche are not so good, but sumer what whyte, and are cauled Diamundes of the newe myne which is in the kyngedome of Parsinga. They of the owlde myne, are not polished in India, but in other places. There are made lykewyse in India, other false Diamundes of Rubies, Topases, and whyte Saphires, whiche appere to be fine: and are also founde in the Ilande of Zeilam. These stones differ in none other, sauyng that they haue losse their naturall colour. Of these, summe are founde that haue halfe the colour of Rubies, and other of Saphires: other also of the colour of a Topase. Other haue all these colours mingled together. They boze a fine hole in these throughe the myddest, wherby they appere lyke the eyes of a catte. Of the whyttest, they make many smaule diamundes whiche can not be knowne from the trewe, sauyng by touchinge of such as are skilfull in that practise. They are sold by a poyle of weight which they caule Mangiat, which wayerth two Tarrre, and two thyrdes, which amount to two thyrdes of thirde partes of one caratte. For foure Tarrres, wey one fanan whiche is about two carattes.

Whe Diamundes that wey one mangiat (which is two thirde partes of a caratte) are in value.

which are thre crownes of golde.

fanan xxx.

lyre

ht. Diamundes that wey one mangiar	Fanan	xl.
Four that wey one mangiar	Fanan	lx.
Two that wey one mangiar	Fanan	lxx.
One that wey one mangiar	Fanan	lxx.
One of one mangiar and a quarter	Fanan	clxx.
One of one mangiar and a halfe	Fanan	clxx.
Of one mangiar and thre quarters	Fanan	clxx.
Of two mangiars	Fanan	ccxx.
Of two mangiars and a quarter	Fanan	ccxx.
Of two mangiars and a halfe	Fanan	ccxx.
Of two mangiars and thre quarters full perfect	Fanan	420
Of thre mangiars of lyke perfection	Fanan	cccl.
Of thre mangiars and a halfe	Fanan	ccclxx.
Of foure mangiars	Fanan	dl.
Of fyve mangiars	Fanan	decl.
Of fyve mangiars	Fanan	decc.
Of seven mangiars.	Fanan	dlcc.
Of eyght mangiars.	Fanan	dlccc.

And thus they proccede, increasynge the pryce as they increase in weight.

Of Saphires.

In the Ilande of Zeilam are founde the beste and moste ierwe Saphires, beinge very harde and fine, and of the coloure of azure. They are of pryce as foloweth.

One that wey one caratte is of value	Fanan	70.
Which are abowe two marcells of syluer.		
One of the weight of two carattes	Fanan	100.
Of thre carattes	Fanan	150.
Of foure carattes	Fanan	200.
Of fyve carattes	Fanan	250.
Of fyve carattes	Fanan	300.
Of seven carattes	Fanan	350.
Of eyght carattes	Fanan	400.
Of nyne carattes	Fanan	450.
Of tenne carattes	Fanan	500.
Of xi. carattes	Fanan	550.
Of xii. carattes	Fanan	600.
Of xiii. carattes in all perfection of coloure	Fanan	650.
Of xiiii. carattes.	Fanan	700.

A marcell, is a syluer come of venice, of xi. vnces. iii. d. with fine, wherof ten make an yne

Of

## The pryces of

Of. xh. carattes

Of. xvi. carattes

Of. xiii. carattes

One that weigheth a mitigal, which is, x. fanans and a quarter  
that is about xiii. carattes

Lyke wyse in the ylande of Zeilan, is founde an other sorte  
of Saphires which they caule *Quingelinam*. These are not so  
stronge, of darker colour and of much lesse value then are the  
other of the best kynde, wherof one is woorth xiii. of these of  
equall poise.

Also in the kyngedome of Marlinga, in  
a mountayne aboue Bacanoz and Mangaloz, is founde an o-  
ther sorte of Saphires more tender and of woorse colour, whi-  
che they caule *Luganolam*. These are sumwhat whyre and  
of smaule value: So that the most perfect of this kynde, wey-  
inge xx. carattes, is not woorth one ducate. They colour is  
inclinyng sumwhat to yelow. There is lyke wyse founde an  
other kynde of Saphires vppon the sea coastes of the kyng-  
dome of Calicut, in a place named Capucar. These the Indi-  
ans caule *Carahatonilam*. They are of a darke asure colour not  
shynynge but in the cleare ayre. They are also tender and brie-  
ble, and of smaule estimation amonge the Indians. They  
seeme on the one syde lyke glasse.

### Of Topasies.

**T**he natural Topasies, growe in the ylande of Zeilan,  
and are named of the Indians *Purceragay*. It is a harde  
and fine stone: and of equall estimation with the Bur-  
hie and the Saphire, because all these three are of one kynde.  
The perfectest colour of this, is yelow lyke vnto fine beate-  
n golde. And if it bee perfect and cleane, whether it bee greene  
or lytle, it is woorth in Calicut as much fine gold as it wey-  
eth. But if it bee not perfect, it is woorth the weight of gold  
the fanan, which is lesse by the halfe. And if it bee in maner  
whyre, it is woorth much lesse. And of these, are smaule di-  
amundes counterfecte.

### Of Turquestes.

**T**urquestes are founde in Grece a place of Sitch Jsmach.  
They mine is a dyce earth that is founde vpon a black  
stone

Stone, which the Moores take of in smaule pieces, and carpe them to the Island of Dimus, from whence they are brought to dyuers partes of the worlde by sea and by lande. The Indians caule them *Perofo*. They are soft stones, of smaule weight and not much coulde. And to knowe that they are good and true, in the day they shall appere of the verie colour of the Turquelle: and in the nyght by the lyght, they shall appere greene. They that are not so perfect, doo not so change their colour to the light. If these stones bee cleane and of fine colour, they haue vnderneath in the bottome, a blacke stone, vpon the which they growe. And if any lytle bayne ryle vpon the layde stone, it shalbe the better. And to knowe more certainly that they are true Turquelles, they put on the toppes of them a lytle quicke lime tempered with water after the maner of an oynment. So that if the quicke lime appere coloured, they are iudged perfecte, and are of valie as foloweth.

One that weith one caratte,	is worth in Malabar. Fanan. xv.
One of two carattes	Fanan. xli.
Of foure carattes	Fanan. xc.
Of. vi. carattes	Fanan. cxi.
Of. viii. carattes	Fanan. ccc.
Of. x. carattes	Fanan. ccc.
Of. xii. carattes	Fanan. ccc.
Of. xiiii. carattes	Fanan. ccc.

Of greater then these they make none accompte bycause they are lyghter pieces and of greater circuite. These of the byggest sorte the Moores carie into the kyngedome of Guzrath.

¶ Of Iacintes. y<sup>e</sup>ll. whi<sup>t</sup>

**I**acintes growe in the Islande of Zeilam. They are tender stones and yelow. They are best that are of diuerse colour. The greatest part of these, haue in them certeine pimples or barbutis, whiche diminish the fayrnesse. And they that are in the perfection cleane from this deformitie, are neuertheless of smaule valie: For in Calicut where they are polished, they that bey enotahan are worth no more then halfe a fanan. And they of, ybi. fanans, are not worth ybi. fanans.

There

## The pryces of

There are also founde other stones lyke unto cattes eyes, as Chrysolites, and Amethystes, whiche they doo not muche esteeme because they are of smaule value, as also the stones cauled *Gisgonze*.

### Of Smaragdes or Emeraldes.

**S**maragdes growe in the countrey of Babilon, where the Indians caule the sea *Diegu*. They grow also in other partes of India. They are stones of fayre greene colour, and are lyght and tender. Of these stones, many are counterfected. But looking on them curiously towards the lyght, the counterfected shewe certeyne bubbls, as dooth glasse. But in the trewe, there is no such seene. But rather there appeareth to the eye a certeyne verdour shynynge lyke the beames of the soonne. And beinge rubbed vppon the touche stone, they leaue the coloure of copper. And the Smaragde of this sorte is the best and most trewe: And is in value in Calicut, as much as a diamunde and sumwhat more: And this not by weyght, but by greatenesse, because the diamunde quantitie for quantitie, is of greater weyght then the Smaragde. There is lykelyse founde an other kynde of Smaragdes, whiche are greene stones, but not so much esteemed. Nevertheless, the Indians reserue these to set them forth with other precious stones. They leaue not any greene coloure vppon the touche.

**Of dyuers kyndes of Spices, where they growe, what they are woorth in Calicut, and whither they are caried from thence.**

### Of Pepper.



Pepper in all the kyngedome of Malabar and Calicut pepper groweth: and is sold in Calicut by every CC. Bahars, fine, for CCxx fanans, every fanan (as I haue sayde) beinge in value, one ryal of place of Spayne: which is as muche as one marcell of syluer

In Venice, Bahar, weith foure cantares of the owld weighe of Portugale, by the whiche they sell all spices in Lisbona. Cantar, is in Venecce. L. xii. ponde weyght of the grose ponde (beinge .xxviii. vnces) and of the subyle ponde. L. lxxviii. So that the sayde. 712. poundes of Venecce subyle, wyl cost abowt. xx. frenche crownes of golde: which amount to abowt two *Marchetti* (whiche make one peny) the ponde. They pay also to the kyng of Calicut for custome. xii. fanans every Bahar by the lode. They that bye them, are accustomed to bypge them to Cambaia, Persia, Aden, and Mecha, and from thence to Alcayre and Alexandria. Nowe they pay custome to the kyng of Portugale after the rate of. 6562. *Maruedies* the Bahar, which are. 193. fanans. *Maruedies* are Spanyshe copnes wherof. vi. go to a peny. This doo they partly bycause there appereth no more so greate diuersitie of marchautes to bye them, and partly by the agreement which the sayde kyng of Portugale made with those kynges, and the Moores, and marchautes of the countrey of Malabar.

Much pepper groweth lykewyse in the Ilande of Sumatra nere vnto Malaca, which is sayzer and bygger then that of Malabar, but not so good and stronge. This is brought from Bengala to China, and summe parte to Mecha, priuile and by selfe, vnwares to the Portugales which wolde not otherwyse suffer them to passe. It is woorth in Sumatra, from. iiii. C. vnto. vii. C. maraudis the cantar of Portugale, of the newe weighe. And frome the newe to the owld weight in Portugale, the difference is, thoo vnces in the ponde weight. For the owld ponde consisteth of. xiiii. vnces: and the newe ponde of. xvi. vnces.

### Of Cloues.

Cloues growe in the Ilandes of Molucca, from whence they are brought to Malacha, and then to Calicut and the countrey of Malabar. They are woorth in Calicut every bahar (which is. 712. poundes of the subyle ponde of Venecce) from. 500. to. 600. fanans (which are abowre syfte frenche crownes, which are in value abowte. xii. marchetti the ponde weight. And beinge cleane from stalkes & harkes are in value 700. fanans. To cary theym frome thence into

D D O. I.

other

## The prices of

other regions, they paye for pasporte. xlviii. fanans the bahar, which is woorth in Malacca from. x. to. xiiii. ducades accordinge to the rate and custome of the marchauntes,

### Of Cinamome.

**C**inamome of the best sort, groweth in the Ilande of Zeilam: and in the countrey of Malabar, groweth the woorth. That of the beste kynde, is of smaule price in Zeilam. But in Calicut (if it bee choise and freshe, it is woorth CCC. fanans the bahar, whiche are aboute five marchetto the ponde.

### Of Ginger cauled Beledi.

**G**inger Beledi, groweth on euery syde aboute Calicut from syxe to nine myles: And is woorth the bahar. xl. fanans, and sumtymes fiftie, whiche is lesse then one marchetto the ponde.

They brynge it from the mountaynes and out of the contrey to the cite, where they sell it by retayle to the Indian marchauntes, who gather it together in great quantitie and keepe it to such tyme as the Moores shippes arriue there, to whom they sell it, by the price of. xc. fanans, to. Cx. whiche is lesse then two marchetto the pound, because the weight is greater.

### Of Ginger Mechino.

**G**inger Mechino groweth, begynnynge from the mountayne of Deli, vnto Cananor. It is smaule, and not so whyte nor so good as the other. It is woorth the bahar in Cananor, aboute. lx. fanans whiche is aboute one marchetto the ponde. They pay for the bahar syxe fanans in money for the custome. It is sould vnclensed or vnpurged.

### Of greene Ginger in conserues.

**I**n Bengala is founde greare plentie of Ginger Beledi, of the whiche they make muche Ginger in conserues with sugar, and carie it in stone pots from Martabani to bee sould in the countrey of Malabar. And is woorth the farazuela which

(which is. xxi. poundes and syre vnces) after the rate of. xlii  
 lb. oz. xvi. fanans.

That that is freshe and made in conserues, is woorth in Calicut. xxv. fanans the farazuola, because suger is dere there. Greene ginger to put in conserues, is woorth in Calicut three quarters of one fanan the farazuola, which is abowte twoo poundes for one marchetto.

**C** Of the Apothecaries drugges: And of what price they are in Calicut and Malabar,

**L** Acca of Martaban, if it bee of the beste, is woorth the farazuola, which is. xxi. pounce weyght and syre vnces of Portugale after. xvi. vnces the pounce (whiche is abowte. xl. pounce weyght of the subyle pounce of Venice) And is in value. xviii. fanans: whiche are. xviii. marcells of syluer. For one fanan, is in value abowte one marcell of syluer.

Acca of the contrey, is woorth the farazuola Fanan xli.  
 Bozace that is good and in great pieces is woorth the farazuola. Fanan. xxx. to. xl. & li

Camphire that is grosse in cakes, is woorth the farazuola Fanan. lxx. to. lxxx.

Camphire to sannoyn Idoles, \* \* \*  
 Camphire for theyr chyldren to eate, is woorth the myrrigal. Fanan iii.

Aguila is woorth the farazuola Fanan. ccc. to. cccc.

Lignum aloë, blacke, heauy, and fine, is woorth Fanan. lxx.

Muske of the best is woorth the vnce Fanan xxxvi.

Beniamin of the beste, is woorth the farazuola Fanan lxx.

Tamarindi being newe, are woorth the farazuola Fanan. lxxx.

Calamus aromaticus, the farazuola Fanan xli.

Endego to dye lilke, trewe & good, the farazuola Fanan. xxx

Girre, the farazuola. Fanan. xviii. to. xx.

Frankensence good and in graynes, is woorth the farazuola Fanan xv.

Frankensence in paste of the basest sorte, the faraz. Fanan. lxx.

Ambzacan oz amber greese that is good, is woorth the metical Fanan ii. to. iii.

Myrabolanes in cōserue of suger, the faraz. Fanan. xvi. to. xxv  
 D D o ii LaTia,

## The prices of

<p> <i>Cassia</i>, fresche and good, the farazuola. <span style="float: right;">Fanan one &amp; a halfe</span>  <i>Redde Sanders</i>, the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan. v. to. vi.</span>  <i>Whyte Sanders</i> and citrine; whiche growe in the Ilande of  <i>Timor</i>, the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan. xl. to. lx.</span>  <i>Spikenarde</i>, fresche and good, the faraz. <span style="float: right;">Fanan xxx. to. xl.</span>  <i>Mutte megges</i>, whiche coome frome the Ilande of <i>Bandan</i>              where the bahar is woorth from. viii. to. x. fanans, (which              importe. vi. poundes weight to the marchetto) are woorth              in <i>Calicut</i>, the faraz. <span style="float: right;">Fanan x. to. xii.</span>              Ace which is brought from the Ilande of <i>Bandan</i> where              the Bahar is woorth fiftie fanans (which importe abowt one              marchetto to the ponde are woorth in <i>Calicut</i> the farazu:              ola. <span style="float: right;">Fanan xxv. to. xxx.</span>  <i>Turbithes</i>, are woorth the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan xiii.</span>  <i>Woozme seede</i> of the best kynde, cauled <i>Semenzina</i>, is woorth              the farazuola. <span style="float: right;">Fanan xv.</span>  <i>Zerumba</i>, the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan ii.</span>  <i>Zedoaria</i>, the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan i.</span>  <i>Gumme Serapine</i>, the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan xx.</span>  <i>Aloe cicotrine</i>, the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan xviii.</span>  <i>Cardamome</i> in graynes, the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan xx.</span>  <i>Iacubarbe</i> groweth abundantly in the countrey of <i>Malabar</i>:              And that which commeth from <i>China</i> by <i>Malacha</i>, is worth              the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan xl. to. l.</span>  <i>Mirabolani emblici</i>, the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan ii.</span>  <i>Mirabolani helirici</i>, the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan one &amp; a halfe.</span>  <i>Mirabolani citrini &amp; chebuli</i>, which are al of one sort. <span style="float: right;">Fa. ii.</span>  <i>Mirabolani Jndi</i>, which are of the same citrine trees <span style="float: right;">Fa. iii.</span>  <i>Turia</i>, the farazuola <span style="float: right;">Fanan xxx.</span>  <i>Tububes</i> which growe in the Ilande of <i>Jana</i> or <i>Biaua</i>, are              there of smaule price, and sould by measure without weight.  <i>Opium</i> which is brought from the cite of <i>Aden</i> where it is              made, is woorth in <i>Calicut</i> the faraz. <span style="float: right;">Fanan. cclxxx. to. cccxx.</span>  <i>Opium</i> of an other sort which is made in <i>Lambaia</i> is woorth              the farazuola, <span style="float: right;">Fanan cc. to. ccl.</span> </p>	
---	--

Seedes kyll  
lysc.

Of the weyghtes of *Portugale* and *Jndia* :

And howe they agree.

**T**he pound of the old weight, conteyneth. xiii. vnces.  
 The pound of the newe weight conteyneth. xvi. vnces.  
xiii.

bill. cantares of the owlde weyght, make. vii. of the newe.  
And euery newe cantare, is of .L. xxviii. poundes after .xvi.  
vnces to the pounce

Euery owlde cantare, conteyneth thre quarters and a halfe  
of the newe cantar: And is of .L. xxviii. poundes, after .xiii.  
vnces the pounce.

One farazuola, is. xxii. poundes of. xiiii. vnces, and. vi. vn-  
ces more, with two fifte partes.

Twentie farazuoles, are one Bahar.

One bahar is. iiii. cantares of the owld weight of Portugale:  
All the Spices and drugges, and all suche other thynges as  
coome fro India, are sould in Portugale by the owld weighe  
and all the reste by the newe weyght.

¶ Hereby may we well consider that as we owght to reioyse  
and gyue god thanks for the abundaunce of al these thynges  
whiche he causeth the earth so plentifully to bynge forth to  
store vnto vs, so may we lament the abuse of men whose couetous-  
nesse causeth great dearth and scarcenesse in the myddest of a  
bundaunce: herein no lesse offending the lawe of nature then  
doo such as by wychecraft intermingle poyson with thynges  
created for the health of man, or by inchauntment corrupt the  
seedes in the ground: yf rather as the vnnatural mother who  
destroyeth the chyld whom she hath longe nuryshed.

¶ Of the Dooues of the Ilande  
of Madaga.



Adamus wyrteth, that before the Portuga-  
les came to this Ilande, it was ouergrown  
with trees and inhabited. yet were there ma-  
ny beastes, and great plentie of dooues which  
were vnto them without feare of man because they  
had neuer seene any men before, nor yet were  
accustomed to bee put in feare. In so much that they stode syl  
whyle snares were put aboute theyr neckes with longe rods  
and poles. The which thyng he sayth he hath also seene in  
other Ilandes. There are many ryche men in this Ilande,  
and great abundaunce of syluer, because the hole Ilande is  
in maner one gardeyne.

## The pryces of

Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas vnder  
the Equinoctiall line.



The chiefest occupacion and liuynge of this Ilande, is the makynge of sugar, which they sell yearely to the shippes that comme for it out of Spayne and Portugale laden with buttes of meale and flour, also wyne, oyle, cheese, leather, swoozdes, cuppes of glasse, beades, certeyne scaruels of the fine whyte earthe cauled porcellana, of the which are made the earthen dyshes of the woozke of Maiolica. And if it were not that such byttayles and prouisions were brought them out of Spaine and Portugale, the whyte marchauntes which dwell in that Ilande (perteynyng to the dominion of the kynge of Portugale) shulde not bee able to lyue there, forasmuch as they are not accustomed to eate such meates as doo the Ethiopians or Negros. And therfore the Portugales whiche inhabite this Ilande, haue certeyne blacke slaues of Guinea, Benin, and Manicongo, which they set to tyl and labour the grounde and make sugar. Amonge these whyte inhabitauntes, there are many ryche men which haue .150. or .200. and sum .300. blacke slaues of men and women to tyl the grounde and doo other laborious woozkes. This Ilande was discovered four score yeaeres sence by the nauigations of the Portugales and was vnknewen to the olde wyrters. It lyeth in the greete goulfe of Affrike in the .30. degree of longitude from the West to the East, and is in maner rounde. It is of largenesse from side to syde .17. Italia myles, (that is to say) one degree. The horizontal line of the Iland, passeth by the two poles, Arctike and Antarcyke: and hath euer the day equall with the nyghe without any sensible difference, whether the son bee in Cancer or in Capricorne. The starre of the pole Arctike, is there vnsyble: But the wardens are seene sumwhat to moue about: And the starres cauled the Croisse, are seene very hyghe. Of this Ilande with the other landes and Ilandes lyinge betwene Portugale and the same, a certeyne pplotte of Portugale hath wyrtten a goodly hyage to Conte Rimondo,

**T**he debate and stryfe betwene the Spanyardes and  
Portugales, for the diuision of the Indies and  
the trade of Spices: and also for the Ilands  
of Molucca, which sum caule Malucas.  
Wrytten in the Spanyshe too[n]ge by  
Francisco Lopez de Gomara.



Emperours maiestie was verye gladde that  
the Malucas and Ilands of the spicerie were  
discovered: and that he myght passe vnto  
them thzough his owne countreys withoute  
any pzeiudice or hurte to the Portugales:  
And bycause also that Almanzor, Luzzu, and  
Cozala which were the lordes of the spicerie,

themed them selues to bee his frendes and became tributaries  
to hym. He also gaue certeyne gyftes and rewarde to John  
Sebastian for his greaie paynes and good seruiue, forasmuch  
as he craued a rewarde for the good newes that the Ilandes  
of the Malucas and other Ilandes ryther and greater then  
they, were found to bee in his part of those countreys which  
perterneyed vnto hym accor[d]yng to the popes bull. And here-  
by it came to passe that there was great contention and strife  
betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales abowte the  
spicerie and the diuision of the Indies by reason of the re-  
turne of John Sebastian and thinfozmation whiche he gaue  
therof. Who also affirmed that the Portugales had neuer  
any enteraunce befoze that tyme into those Ilandes. Here by  
pon, the counsaile for the Indies, aduertised the Emperoure  
to maynteyne his acrete for those partes, and to take the trade  
of spices into his owne hand, forasmuch as it was his owne  
of deuotie, as well for that those Ilandes fell on his parte, as  
also that he had nowe founde passage and waye thzough his  
west Indies into those regions. And finally to consyder that  
he shulde thereby obteyne and gette to him selfe greaie reue-  
nues besyde thinzchynge of his subiectes and realmes, and  
that with smaile coaste and charge. The Emperoure beinge  
thus aduertised of the truth, tooke it for good counsaile, and  
commaunded all thynges herunto apperteynyng to bee fur-  
nished accor[d]yngely. In this meane tyme, when kynge  
John of Portugale had knowleage what the Emperour deter-  
mynd

John Sebasti-  
an.

The cause of  
contention.

The trade of  
spice perter-  
neyth to the Em-  
peroure.

John kynge of  
Portugale.

## The pryces of

mynded to doo, and the speedy hast his counsaile made for the  
performace herof, and of the comynge home of John Se-  
bastian of Cane, with thinformacion he made, what of stout-  
nesse of mynde and what for greafe, was puffed up with an-  
ger as were also the reste of the Portugales, comynge as  
thorough they wolde haue plucked downe the skye with their  
handes, not a lytle fearynge leaste they shulde lose the trade  
of spices, if the Spanyarden shulde once put in theyr foote.  
Wheruppon the kyng immediatly made supplication to the em-  
peroure, not to set forward any thynge butt it were deter-  
mynd to whether of theym those Ilandes shulde belonge:  
And that he wolde not so muche endamage hym as to cause  
him to lise the trade of spices which was so commodious and  
profitable to hym. And finally to auoyde thoccasion of mur-  
ther and bloodshed whiche were lyke to ensue thereof, of the  
Spanyarden and Portugales thynnes shulde meete together.  
The emperoure althowghe he knewe that all this was but to  
make delays and prolongynge of tyme, yet was he gladde to  
haue it tryed by iustice for the better iustificacion of his cause  
and ryght. In fine, both parties were agreed to appoynt let-  
ted men, Cosmographers and pylots whiche shulde determine  
the controuersie betwene them: promysynge on bothe parties  
to abyde and stande to the sentence and determination made  
by those persons appoynted and swoyne to iudge indiffer-  
rentely.

The trade of  
Spices.

The contro-  
uersie deter-  
mined by Cos-  
mographers  
and pylots.

¶ The reparticion and diuision of the Indies  
and newe worlde betwene the Spany-  
arden and the Portugales.



His matter concernynge the trade of spices and  
the newe worlde of the Indies, by reason of  
the great ryches therof was of greafe impor-  
taunce and very difficultie to bee limited and  
drawen forth by lines. By reason wherof,  
it was necessarie and convenient to seeke wyle  
& woorthypful men expert in nauigations, in Cosmographie,  
and the mathematicall sciences. The emperoure for his syde,  
chose and named for iudges of the possession, the licentiate  
Acuna, one of the kynges counsaile. Also the licentiate Barri-  
entos

The arby-  
trers on the  
Emperours  
syde.

entos of the counsaile of the orders: The licentiate Pedro Manuel auditour of the courte of the Chancerie in Vallado-  
 liz. For iudges of the propertie, he chose Don Fernando  
 Colonno the sonne of Christopher Colonus: Also doctor  
 Sancho Salaya, Peter Ruiz of Villegas, fryer Thomas Du-  
 ran, Simon of Alcazaua, and John Sebastian of Cano. His  
 aduocate & attorney, he made the licentiate John Rodriguez  
 of Pila: & for his fyscal doctor Ribera, & his secretarie, Bar-  
 thalome Ruiz of Castaneda. He also apoynted that Sebastian  
 Cabore, Steuē Gomes, Runnio Garcia, Diego Buero, being  
 al expert pilots & cunning in making cardes for the sea, shuld  
 be present, & bypnge forth theyr globes and mappes with  
 other instrumentes necessarie to declare the situation of the  
 ylandes of the Malucas abowt the which was al the conten-  
 tion and stryfe. But order was taken that they shulde shewe  
 theyr myndes on neyther syde, nor enter into the company  
 of the other but when they were cauled. Al these and diuers  
 other, wente togyther to a towne cauled Badaioz: and as  
 many Portugales came to Elbes, or rather more. For they  
 brought with them two fiscals and two aduocates. The  
 principall of theym, was the licentiate Antonie de Alencado,  
 Diego Lopes of Sequeyza the clark of the weightes and re-  
 ceptes, who had before byn gouernour in India. Also Beral-  
 tonso of Melo, clerke: Simon of Taurira, with dyuers other  
 whose names I knowe not. Before they mette togyther, the  
 one parte remaynyng at Badaioz and the other in Elbes,  
 there was much a doo amonge them beefore they coulde agree  
 vppon the place where they shulde mete and who shuld speke  
 fyrste. For the Portugales doo greatly weighe suche circum-  
 stances. At the last, they concluded to meete togyther at Laya  
 a lytle cyuer which diuideth Castile from Portugale, stan-  
 dyng in the mydde way betwene Badaioz and Elbes. And  
 when they were assembled togyther one day at Badaioz and  
 an other daye at Elbes and saluted the one the other, for the  
 parties were sworne that they shulde procede and speake ac-  
 cordinge to truth, iustice, and equite. The Portugales re-  
 fused Simon de Alcazaua because he was a Portugale: and  
 fryer Thomas Duran because he had sumetyme byn preacher  
 to theyr kynge: So that Simon was by consent put owte of  
 the company, in whose roome was placed master Antonie of  
 Alca:

Sebastian  
Cabore.

Instrumentes  
of Cosmogra-  
phie.  
The ylandes  
of Maluca.

The arbiters  
on the Por-  
tugales syde.

The place  
where they  
mette.

The order of  
theyr proces.

The Portuga-  
les.

Contention  
for drawinge  
the line of  
the division.

Howe the  
Portugals  
were decea-  
sed.

The Spany-  
ardes allega-  
tions.

Samatra,  
Malacha,  
China,  
Magallanes.

Buena Vista.

The Ilandes  
of Cabo Ver-  
de.

Alcaraz. yet fell they not to reasonyng the matter untill the  
fryer was put out. They were manye dayes in beholdyng  
globes, mappes, and cardes of the sea, and hearyng what  
myght bee sayde, both sydes allcagyng for the ryght which  
they pretended. But the Portugales standyng in bayne con-  
tention, sayde very angrily the Ilandes of Maluca wherup-  
pon they meetyng and reasonyng was at that presente, fell  
of theyr parte and was of theyr conquest. And that they both  
had byn there, and had them in theyr possession before John  
Sebastian had euer scene them. Likewise that the line shulde  
bee drawen from the Ilande of Bonauilla, or the Iland call-  
ed de la Sal, which are the most Easterly Ilandes from Ca-  
bouerde, and not from the Ilande of Santanton or saynt An-  
tonie, which lyeth towarde the West, and are. lxxx. leaques  
the one from the other. Al this was no more but to contend:  
and the other of the Malucas, is untwelve. But they that  
haue a natyghtie matter must set it forth with woordes and  
hazelyng. Here they founde howe greatly they were decea-  
ued in that they demaunded that the line shulde bee drawen  
thre hundredeth. lxx. leaques more to the West from the Ilan-  
des of Cabouerde (as appeareth hereafter) and not one hun-  
dredeth accordyng to thassignement of the popes bul. The Spa-  
nyardes on the contrary parte affirmed and made demonstra-  
tion, that not only the Ilandes of Burney, Bilolo, Zubut,  
and Tidoze, with the other Ilandes of the Malucas. But  
aswell Samatra, Malacha, and a great parte of China, shulde  
belonge to the Castilians: and that those countreys fell on  
theyr syde and on the parte of theyr conquest: Also that Ma-  
gallanes and John Sebastian were the fyrste Christian men  
that founde them and obteyned them for Themperour, as the  
letters and presentes of Almanzor doo testifie. And although  
the Portugales had byn there fyrste, yet wente they thither  
after the donation of the pope: neyther got they any ryght or  
iuste title thereby. For although they shulde drawe the line  
by Buena Vista, what inconuenience shulde folowe therof,  
sith aswell by the one way as the other, the Ilandes of the  
Malucas must pertyne to the Castilians: yea and moreouer,  
the Ilandes of Cabo verde shulde also pertyne to the Casti-  
ans, forsomuch as drawyng the line by Buena Vista, the I-  
landes of the Malucas doo remayne within the line on the  
Empyours

Emperours syde. They continued in these controuerſies for the ſpace of two moonethes without anye reſolution or ende made. For the Portugales prolonged and put off the matter, ſying from the ſentence with cauillations and could reaſons to chende that they myght diſſolue that aſſemble without any conſluſion or determination: for ſo it ſtoode them vppon. The Caſtilians which were the Iudges of the proprietie, drew a line in the great globe three hundredeth and. lxx. leagues from ſaynt Antonies Iſlande, ſpyng by Weſte Cabo Verde accordyng to the intreatie and determination whiche was agreed vppon betwene the Catholike princes and the kynge of Portugale. Theſe iudges gaue ſentence vppon this matter, tauſyng the contrary parte before them vpon the brydge of Lapa in the yeare. 1524. The Portugales coulde neyther diſturbe or deferre the ſentence, nor yet wolde they alowe it to bee iuſt and accordyng to ryght: ſayinge that there was not ſufficient proceſſe made that they ſhulde paſſe to the gyupng of ſentence. And ſo departed threatenynge to ſley the Caſtilians as many as they ſhulde fynde in the Iſlandes of the Malucas. For they knewe ryght well that theyr contreremen the Portugales had already taken the ſhyppes cauled the Trinite and had alſo taken the Caſtilians in Tidore. Then alſo departed ſwore men, takynge theyr iorney to the courtte gyupng vpon the Emperour all theyr wyrtyngeſ and declaration what they had doone. And accordyng to this declaration muſt bee ſigned and marked all globes and mappes which good Coſmographers and maſters doe make. The line alſo of the reparticion and laſt diuiſion of the newe world of the Indies, ought to paſſe (lyttle more or leſſe) by the poyntes of Humos and Buen Abriſgo, as I haue ſayde in an other place. And thus ſhall it appeare evidently that the Iſlandes of Spices, and alſo the greates Iſlande of Zamorra, do pertyne to Caſtile. But the lande of Braſile pertyneth to the kynge of Portugale where the cape of ſaynt Auguſtine is, beinge. viii. degrees beneath the Equinoctiall. This lande reacheth from the poynte of Humos to the poynte of Buen Abriſgo: and is in lengthe North and South. viii. hundredeth leagues. Beinge alſo ſum way two hundredeth leagues Eaſt and Weſt.

And hereafter theſe ſerious matters, wee wyll rehearſe one mery thyng, which was this. It ſo chaunced that as

The Portugales cauillations.

The line of diuiſion.

The ſentence.

The Portugales threaten death to the Caſtilians

The line of the laſt diuiſion.

The great Iſlande of Zamorra. The lande of Braſile, pertyneth to the Portugales.

A mery tale.

## Contencion for

Frances de Melo, Diego Lopes of Sequeyia, and other of those Portugales of this assemble, walked by the ryuer syde of Guadiana, a lyttle boy who stode keepynge his mothers clothes which she had washed, demaunded of theym whether they were those men that parted the world with Theemperour And as they answered, yea: heooke vp his shert and shewed them his bare arse, sayinge: Doomme and drawe yowre line here throughe the myddest. Which sayinge was afterwarde in euery mans mouth and laughed at in the towne of Badajoz: yea euen amonge the commissioners them selues, of whosum were angry, and summe mannyple at the sayinge of the chylde.

### The cause and autoritie wherby they divided the Indies.

The golde  
myne of Gui-  
nea.

Alonso kynge  
of Portugale.  
Sold for  
thynges of  
small value.

Contencion  
for the kyn-  
dome of  
Castile.

warre agens  
the Moores  
of Granada.  
The conque-  
stes of the  
Portugales in  
Africke.  
pope Alex-  
ander.



The Castilians and Portugales had longe deba-  
ted and reasoned abowt the golde myne of Gui-  
nea which was found in the yeare of owre lord  
1471, in the tyme of the reigne of Don Alonso  
Kynge of Portugale the firste of that name.  
This was a matter of greate importaunce. For  
the negros or blacke Moores, for thynges of no value, gaue  
golde by hole handfuls whiche was at that tyme when the  
sayde Kynge of Portugale pretended title and clayme to the  
kingedome of Castile in the right of his wyfe Quene Joha  
(cauled the excellent) ageynste the Catholike princes Isabel  
and Don fernando whose it was in deede. But that stryfe  
was ended as sone as Don fernando had vanquished Don  
Alonso at a place cauled Temulos not farrefrom Toro, which  
place Don fernando chose rather to make warre ageinst the  
Moores of Granada, then to bye and sell with the blacke  
Moores of Guinea. And thus the Portugales remained with  
the conquest of Affricke from the streightes forward: whiche  
began whete the infante of Portugale. Don Henrique (sonne  
to kynge John the Bastarde and master of Auis) dyd bepyune  
to enlarge it. When pope Alexander the, vi. (bringe a valen-  
tinian bozne) had knowleage hereof, he mynded to gyue the  
Indies to the kinges of Castile withowt any preiudice to the  
Portugales who had conquered the sea coastes of Affricke.

These

These Indies, the pope gaue of his owne mynde withoute the motion of anye other, with this burden and charge that they shulde conuert the Idolatours to the faythe of Chryste: And commaunded a line or meridian to bee drawen North and South from one hundredeth leagues Westwarde beyond one of the Ilandes of Cabo Verde towarde the Weste, bycause the Spanyardes shulde not meddle in Affryke partynynge to the conquest of the Portugales, to thauopdyng of all stryfe betwene them. Kyng John of Portugale, the seconde of that name, was greatly offended when he redde the bull and donation of the pope, althowgh his owne ambassadours had made the selfe same request vnto his holynesse. He also found hym selfe agreed with the Catholyke princes Isabell and Fernando, that they had shortened the course of the landes he had discovered, depriuyng hym of the rychesse which belonged to hym. And therefore refused to stande to the popes bull in this case: despyng the Catholyke princes Isabell and Fernando to graunt him three hundredeth leagues more to the Weste, besyde the one hundredeth which they had graunted before: and therewith sent his shippes to kepe the coastes of Affryke. The princes Catholyke were content to satisfie his mynde and to please hym accordyng to theyr gentle nature and for the aliance that was betwene them: And in fine, with the consent and agerment of the pope, graunted thow hundredeth, lxx. leagues more then the bull made mention of: At Tozdelillas the. vii. day of June, in the yere of our lord 1494. And wheras our kynges thought that they shulde haue lost grounde in graunynge so many leagues that way, they woonne by that meanes the Ilandes of the Malucas with many other ryche Ilandes. The kyng of Portugale also, herein deceaued him selfe or was deceaued of his whom he put in trust, hauynge no certeyne knowlege of the situation of the Ilandes of the riche Spicery in demaundyng that which the kyng dyd demaunde. For it hadde byn better for hym to haue requested the three hundredeth and lxx. leagues rather Eastwarde from the Ilandes of Cabo Verde then towarde the West. And yet for all that, I doubte whether the Malucas shulde haue faulen within his conquest accordyng to the ordinatie accompte and dimension which the pylors and Cosmographers doo make. And after this maner they

divided

The pope  
maketh the  
division.

The kyng of  
Portugale res-  
fuseth to  
stand to the  
popes bull.

The agree-  
ment of the  
last division.

wherin the  
Portugales  
were deceas-  
ed.

## Contencion for

diuided the Indies betwene them by chantage of the pope  
for the auoydng of further strepe and contention.

Howe and by what occasion Thempourne layde  
the Ilandes of the Malucas to pledge to the  
kyng of Portugale.



When the kyng of Portugale Don Iuan the  
thyrde of that name, had knowleage that the  
Cosmographers and pylotes of Castile hadde  
drawen the line from the place before named,  
and that he could not denye the truth, fearing  
also therby to lise the trade of Spices, made  
sure and request to Thempourne that he shulde not send furth  
Loaisa nor Sebastian Cabote to the Malucas, and that the  
Castilians shulde not attempte the trade of spices nor see such  
euyls and miseries as his capitaynes had shewed in those I-  
landes to them that aduentured that viage with Magallanes.  
Which thynge he greatly couered, although he payde all the  
charges of those two scerres, and made other great bargens.  
In the meane tyme, Thempourne maryed the Lady Isabell  
syster to kyng John: and kyng John maryed the lady Ca-  
tharine sister to Thempourne: whereby this matter wared  
coude although the kyng ceased not to speake hereof, euer  
mouynge the partition. Thempourne by the meanes of a cer-  
taine Biscaigne that was with Magallanes in the gouernours  
shyppe, had knowleage what the Portugales had doone to  
the Castilians in the Iland of Tidoze, wherof he tooke great  
displeasure, and brought the sayde maryner face to face be-  
fore thambassadours of Portugale, who denyed all that he  
sayde, one of them beinge the chiefe capitayne and gouernour  
of India when the Portugales tooke the Castilians in Tidoze  
and robbed them of theyr Cloues and Cinamome and such  
other thynge as they had in the shyppe named the Trinitie.  
But as the kyng of Portugales trade was greace, and more  
necessitie greater, in the meane tyme Thempourne (who was  
nowe goinge into Italie to bee crowned in the yeare. 1529)  
gagied the Malucas and the spicerie to the kyng of Portu-  
gale

Sebastian  
Cabote.

Thempourne  
and the kyng  
of portugale  
soynded in ali-  
ance by ma-  
riage.

The portu-  
gales robbed  
the Castilians

The corona-  
tion of Them-  
perour.

gale for three hundred and fiftie thousande ducades with-  
 out any tyme determined otherwyse then the controuerſie  
 was defined vppon the brydge of the ryuer of Taya : for the  
 which thynge, kynge John punished the licentiate Azuendo  
 because he payde the money with out declaration of the tyme.  
 The couenaunt of the pledge was blindly made and greatly  
 ageynst the myndes of the Castellians, as men that wel vnder-  
 stood the profite, commoditie, and rychesse of that trade :  
 Affirmyng that the trade of spices myght haue byn rented  
 for one yere or for two, for syxe tymes as much as the kynge  
 gaue for it. Peter Ruiz of Villegas who was thys caused  
 to the bargeyne, as once at Granada and an other tyme at  
 Madrid, sayde that it had byn muche better to haue pledged  
 Estremadura or Serena, or other greater landes and cities, ra-  
 ther then the Malucas, Zamorra, or Malaga, or other riche  
 landes and ryuers in the East not yet well knowne : for as  
 muche as it maye so chaunce, that eyther by continuance of  
 tyme, or aliance, the pledge myght bee forgotten as thowgh  
 it perteyned to the ryght of Portugale. In fine, The Emperour  
 considered not the iewel that he pledged, nor the kynge what  
 he receaued. The Emperour was often tymes counsayled to re-  
 lease the pledge of those Ilandes in consideration of the great  
 bantage he myght haue thereby in fewe yeres. Furthermore,  
 in the yere. 1548. the procuratours of Cortes being in Val-  
 ladolid, made petition to The Emperour to surrender the spices  
 to the kyngedome of Castile for. vii. yeres, and that they  
 wold repay to the kynge of Portugale his .350. thousand crow-  
 nes, and after those yeres, restore the trade to the crowne,  
 that his maiestie myght inioye the same as was  
 agreed at the begynnynge. But The Emperour  
 beinge then in flanders, sente wordes  
 to the counsaile that they shulde  
 not assent to Cortes his request,  
 nor speake any more hereof.  
 Wherat, summariepled,  
 other were fory, & all  
 held theyr peace.

The gageing  
 of the Ilandes  
 of Malucas.  
 Zamorra and  
 Malaga.

**O**f the Pole Antarctike and the starres about the same  
And of the qualitie of the regions and disposition of  
the Elementes about the Equinoctiall line.

Also certeyne secretes touchyng the  
arte of saylpyng.



Americus Vesputius in the Summarie of his  
vyages, wyrteth in this maner as foloweth.

Departynge frome Lisbona (commonlye  
cauled Lusheburne) the. viii. day of May, in  
the yere. 1501. we sayled first to the Ilands  
des of Canarie and from thense to Capouer:  
de which the Ethiopians or blacke Moores

caule Bisneghe: beinge. xiiii. degrees on this syde the Equino:  
ctiall line. From whense directynge owre course toward the  
South pole by the Southwest, we sawe no more land for the  
space of thre moonethes and thre dayes. Of whiche tyme  
durynge. xl. dayes, we had cruell fortune: In so muche that  
for that space, the heauen in maner neuer ceased thunderyng  
torynge, and lyghenynge with terrible noyse, and fearefull  
lyghes of fyer exhalacions flyng about in the ayer, and  
in maner continuall showers of rayne with darke cloudes co:  
ueryng the heauen in such sorte that aswell in the day as in  
the nyght we coulde see none otherwyse but as when the  
moone giueth no lyght by reason of thicke and darke cloudes  
The sea was in lyke case vnquieted with surgies and mon:  
sters. After these greuous & cruel days, it pleased god to haue  
compassion on ovr lines. For wee suddenly espied land wher  
by we recovered ovr spirites and strength. This land which  
wee founde, is from Capo Verde. 700. leaques, although I:  
suppose that we sayled more then. 800. by reason of the cruel  
tempest and ignorance of the Spylottes and mariners wher:  
by wee were lyke to haue byn cast away. For wee were in  
suche daungerous places wanderyng in vnknown coastes,  
that if I had not byn skylfull in the science of Cosmographie  
we had surely perished, forasmuch as there was not one py:  
lot that knewe where wee were by the space of fiftie leaques.  
In so much that if I had not in tyme prouided for the safe:  
garde of myne owne lyfe and them that were with me, with  
my quadzant and Astrolabie instrumentes of Astronomie, wee  
had

Capouerde  
Befenegha.

A tempest.

The igno:  
rance of py:  
lotes and ma:  
riners.

The vse of  
Cosmogra:  
phie.

The vse of  
the quadzant  
and Astrola:  
bie.

had syl wandered lyke blynde men. But when in fine I had persuaded the pylots by demonstrations perceyninge to that arte, they gaue me great honour and confessed that the ordinarie pilottes and mariners ignozant in Cosmographi, are not to bee compared to men of speculative knowleage. &c.

Wee sayled by the coaste of the sayde lande, 600. leaques And went oftentymes alande where wee were frendely and honorably interceypted of thinhabitauntes: In so much that considerynge theyr innocent nature, we sumtymes remayned with them. xv. or. xx. dayes. This firme lande begynneth be ponde the Equinoctiall line. liiii. degrees towarde the pole Antartike. Wee sayled so farre by the sayde coaste that wee passed the wynter Tropicke towarde the pole Antartike by xlii. degrees and a halfe, where we had the Horizontal line eleuate fiftie degrees. Such thynges as I sawe there, are not yet knowen to men of oltre tyme: as the people, theyr customes and maners, the fertilitie of the lande, the goodnes of the ayer, the saundurable influence of heauen and the planettes, and especially the order of the starres of the eyght sphere in the inferioure hemispheric or lower halfe circle of heauen towarde and about the South pole, wherof neyther the olde or newe wytters haue made any mention to this daye.

To wypte particularly of the commodities and felicities of these regions, it wolde requyre rather a holt volume then a booke: And that such, as if Plinie had had knowleage of these thynges, he myght greatly haue increased his bookes of naturall histories. The trees gyue from them continually such sweere sauours as can scarcely bee imagined: And on euery part put furth such gummies, liquours, and iufes, that yf we knewe theyr vertues, I suppose we myght fynde in them marueylous medicins against diseases and to mainteyne health. And suerly in my opinion, yf there bee any earthely Paradyse in the worlde, it can not bee farre from these regions of the south, where the heauen is so beneficiall and the elementes so temperate that they are neyther hytten with coude in wynter, nor molested with heate in summer. The ayer also and the heauen is seldome darkened with cloudes, so that the dayes and nyghtes are euer cleare. yet haue they sumtymes moyst dewes in the moornyng and euening for the

The pole  
Antartike.

The starres  
about the  
south pole.

most pleas-  
ant : fructfull  
regions.

The earthlye  
paradyse.

Continual  
temperance.

moyst dewes

## Of the pole Antartike.

Starres vn.  
knowne to vs

The vse of  
Geometrie.

Notable stars  
in the inferi-  
our hemis-  
phere.

space of three houres, whereby the ground is marneplously  
refreshed. Likewise the firmament is marneplously about-  
ned with certeyne starres which are not knowne to vs, wher-  
of I noted abowt. xx. to bee of suche clearenesse as are the  
starres of Venus and Jupiter when they are nere vnto vs.  
And whereas haupnge the knowlege of Geometrie, I consti-  
dered theyr circuite and dyuers motions, and also measured  
theyr circumference and diameter, I am well assured that  
they are much greater then men thynke them to bee. Amonge  
other, I sawe three starres cauled Canopi, wherof two were  
exceedynge cleare, and the thyrde sumwhat darke. The pole  
Antartike hath nother the greate beare nor the lyttle as is  
seene abowt oure pole. But hath foure starres whiche com-  
passe it abowt in forme of a quadrangle.

\*      \*

\*      \*

When these are hydden, there is seene on the lesse syde  
a byghe Canopus of three starres of notable greatnesse, wher-  
e beinge in the myddest of heauen, representeth this figure.

\*

\*      \*

Most byghe  
and shynynge  
starres.

Lettes vnto

After these, succede three other shynynge starres, wherof  
that which is in the myddest, is of measure. xii. degrees and  
a halfe in circumference. And in the myddest of these, is seene  
an other byghe Canopus. After this, folowe. vi. other shynynge  
starres which in byghenesse passe al other that are in  
the eyght sphere. Of these, that that is in the myddest in the  
superficiall part of the sayde sphere, hath the measure of his  
circumference. xxxii. degrees. After these foloweth an other  
great Canopus, but sumwhat darke. All these are seene in  
the parte of heauen cauled *Via Lactea*, that is the mylke waye:  
And beinge ioyned to the meridian line, shewe this fygure  
here folowynge.

I sawe

\* \* \* \*

\*

\*

I sawe also there manye other starres, the dyuers motions wherof diligently obserued, I made a particular booke of the same, wherein I made mention of al such notable thyngs as I sawe and had knoweledge of, in this navigacion. The whiche booke I deliuered to the kynges maiestie, trustynge that he wyl shortly restore it me ageyne. In this hemispherie of halfe compasse of the heauen, I diligently considered many thynges which are contrarie to thoppinions of philosophers. And amonge other thynges, I sawe a whyte raynebowe about mydnyght, wheras other affirme that it hath foure colours of the foure elementes, as redde of the fyre, greene of the earth, whyte of the ayer, and blew of the water. But Aristotle in his booke intituled *Meteora*, is of another opinion. For he sayth that the raynebowe is a reflection of the beames of the soonne in the vapoure of a clowde directly ageynste the soonne, as the shynynge of the same on the water, is reflected on a waile: And that the sayde clowde or vapoure tempereth the heate of the soonne: and beinge resolued into rayne, maketh the grounde fertile, and pouergeth the ayer. Also that is a token of abundaunt moysture. By reason wherof, sum are of opinion that it shall not appeare xl. yeares before the ende of the worlde, which shalbe a token of the dyuynesse of the elementes approchyng to the tyme of theyr conflagration or consumyng by fyre. It is a pledge of peace betwene god and men, and is euer directly ouer ageynst the soonne. It is the fore neuer scene in the South, because the soonne is neuer in the North. Neuerthelesse, Plinie sayth, that after the Equinoctial in Autumne, it is scene at al houres. And thus much haue I gathered ower of the commentaries of Landinus vpon the fourth booke of Virgyl his *Eneades*, because I wold defraude no man of his trauayle. I sawe the sayd raynebowe twoo or thre tymes. And not I onely, but also many other which were in my company. Likewise wee sawe the newe moone the selfe same day that she ioyned with the soonne. Wee sawe furthermoze vapours and burnynge flames flynge

The inferiour hemispherie.

The raynebowe.

Aristotle his opinion of the raynebowe.

A strange opinion.

The newe moone.

## Of the pole Antartike.

ffery exhalations.  
hemispheria.

about heauen euery nyght. A lytle before, I cauled this countrey by the name of Hemispherium (that is) the halfe sphere. Which neuerthelesse can not bee so named but by spekyng improperlie in comparyson of owtres. Yet forasmuche as it seemeth to represente suche a forme, I haue improperly so named it.

Lisbona.

The fourth  
part of the  
worlde.

Departynge therfore from Lisbona (as I haue sayde) beinge from the Equinoctiall line towarde the North about .xl. degrees, wee sayled to this countrey whiche is beyonde the Equinoctiall. l. degrees: All which summe, maketh the number of. lxxx. beinge the fourth part of the greatest circle accordynge to the trewe reason of the number taught by the owlde autours. And by this demonstration it is manifest that wee measured the fourth parte of the worlde: Forasmuch as we that dwell in Lisbona on this syde the Equinoctiall line about .xl. degrees towarde the North, sayled from thence lxxx. degrees in lengthe meridionale angularly by an ouerthwart line, to the inhabitantes. l. degrees beyond the Equinoctiall. And that the thynge may bee more playnely vnderstande, imagine a perpendicular line to faule from the poyntes of heauen which are Zenith (that is the pycke ouer the head) to vs both standynge vpryght in the places of owre owne habitacions: and an other ryght line to bee drawne frome owre Zenith to theys: Then grauntyng vs to bee in the ryght line in comparyson to them, it must of necessitie folowe

that they are in the ouerthwart line as halfe Antipodes in comparyson to vs: In suche sorte

that the figure of the sayde lines make a triangle which is the quarter or fourth parte of the hole circle, as appea-

reth more playnely by

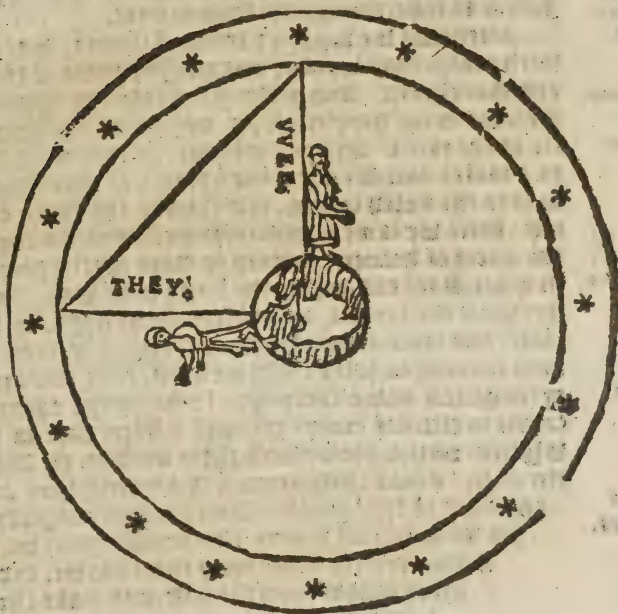
the fygure here

folowynge.

Owtre

OVER ZENITH:

THEY, ZENITH,



## Of the pole Antartike.

**A**s touching the starres and reasons of Cosmographie, I haue gathered thus much out of the vyage of Americus Vesputius. And haue thought good to ioyn hereunto that whiche Andreas de Corsali writeth in his vyage to East India as concernynge the same matter.

The vyage  
of Andreas  
de Corsali.

The Equinoctial line.  
Cap. de Speranza.

The starres  
of the vnder  
hemispherie.

Cloudes as  
howe the  
south pole.

A crosse of  
fyue starres.

After that we departed frome Lisbona, wee sayled euer with prosperous wynde, not passynge out of the Southeast and Southwest. And passynge beyonde the Equinoctial line, we were in the heyght of. 37. degrees of the other halfe circle of the earth. And trauesynge the cape of Bona Speranza a coude and wyndy clime because at that tyme the soonne was in the north signes, wee founde the nyght of. xiiii. houres. Here we sawe a marueylous order of starres, so that in the parte of heauen contrary to owre northe pole, to knowe in what place and degre the south pole was, we tooke the day with the soonne, and obserued the nyght with the Astrolabe, and sawe manifestly twoo cloudes of reasonable bygnesse mouynge about the place of the pole continually nowe rysynge and nowe faulynge, so keepynge theyr continuall course in circular mouynge, with a starre euer in the myddest which is turned about with them aboute. xi. degrees frome the pole. Aboue these appeareth a marueylous crosse in the myddest of fyue notable starres which compasse it aboute (as doth charles wayne the northe pole) with other starres whiche moue with them aboute. xxx. degrees distant from the pole, and make their course in. xiiii. houres. This crosse is so fayre and beuotifull, that none other heuenly signe may be compared to it as may appare by this fygure.

A. The



A. The pole Antarctic,

B. The Cross.

Betherto Andreas de Corsali.

## Of the pole Antartike.

The coastes  
of Ethiope.  
Golde in E-  
thiope.

The vyage  
of Aloisius  
Cadamustus.

The chariote  
of the south  
pole.

The wynter  
showt the  
Equinoctiall.

Raine and  
clowdes.

Thunder &  
lyghtnyng.

hot showres  
of rayne.

The day, and  
ryspnge of  
the soonne.

**O**f the lyke matters, and of the straunge rysynge of the soonne in the moornyng, and of the dyuers seasons of the yeaere and motions of the Elementes in the coaste of Ethiope about the ryuer of Senega, and the riche region of Gambia where plentie of golde is founde, somewhat beyonde Capo Verde, Aloisius Cadamustus wyrteth in this effecte.

Durynge the tyme that wee remayned vppon the mouth of the ryuer, we sawe the north starre but once: which appered very lowe aboue the sea the height of a iauclen. We saw also fyre cleare, bygght, and great starres berce lowe aboue the sea. And considerynge theyr stations with oore com- passe, we founde them to stande ryght south, figured in this maner.

\*  
\* \* \* \*  
\*

**W**e iudged them to bee the chariote or wayne of the south: But we sawe not the principall starre, as we coulde not by good reason, except we shuld first lose the syght of the north pole. In this place wee founde the nyght of the length of a .xi. houres and a halfe: And the day of .xii. houres and a halfe at the begynnynge of July. This countrey is euer hotte al times of the yeaere. yet is there a certeyne varietie which they caule wynter. For from the moneth of July to October, it rayneth continually in maner dayly about none after this sorte. There ryse continually certeyne clowdes aboue the lande betwene the northeast and the south east, or from the east and southeast with greate thunderynge and lyghtnyng and exceedynge great showres of raine. At this tyme the Ethiopians begynne to sowe theyr seedes. They lyue commonly with hony, herbes, rootes, fleshe, and mylke. I had also intelligence that in this region by reason of the great heate of the aye, the water that raineth is hotter: And that the soonne rysynge in the moornyng, makethe no cleare daylyght as it dooth with vs: But that halfe an houre after the rysynge, it appeareth troubeled, dymme and smoky. The whiche thynge, I knowe not to proceade of any other cause then of the lowenesse of the grounde in this contrey beyng without mountaynes.

A dis:

## Of Moscouie and Cathay. 249

A discourse of dyuers byages and wayes by the whiche  
Spices, Precious stones, and golde were brought in owlde  
tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the world.  
Also of the byage to CATHAY and East India by the north  
sea: And of certeyne secretes touchynge the same byage,  
declared by the duke of Moscouie his ambassadoure to  
an excellent lerned gentelman of Italic, named Gale-  
atius Battigarius. Lykewyse of the byages of  
that woorthy owlde man Sebastian Cabote,  
per liuyng in Englande, and at this  
present the governour of the com-  
pany of the marchantes of Ca-  
thay in the citie of  
London.



It is doubtesse a marueylous thyng to con-  
sider what chaunges and alterations were  
caused in all the Romane Empire by the  
Gothes and Vandales, and other Barbari-  
ans into Italy. For by theyr inuasions were  
extinguyshed all artes and sciences, and all  
trades of Marchaundies that were vsed in dy-  
uers partes of the worlde. The desolation and ignoraunce  
which ensued hereof, continued as it were a clowde of perpe-  
tuall darkenesse amonge men for the space of foure hundred  
yeares and more, in so much that none durst aduenture to go  
any whyther owte of theyr owne native countreys: whereas  
before thincursions of the sayde Barbarians when the Ro-  
mane Empire floreyshed, they might safely passe the seas to al  
partes of East India which was at that time as wel knownen  
and frequented as it is now by the nauigations of the por-  
tugales. And that this is trewe, it is manifest by that which  
Strabo wyrteth, who was in the tyme of Augustus and Ti-  
berius. For speakynge of the greatnesse and ryches of the ci-  
tie of Alexandria in Egypte (gouerned then as a prouince of  
the Romanes) he wyrteth thus. This only place of Egypte,  
is apte to receaue all thynges that coome by sea, by reason of  
the commoditie of the haven: And lykewyse all such thynges  
as are brought by lande, by reason of the ryuer of Nilus  
wherby they may bee easely conueyde to Alexandria, beinge  
R R r. i. by

The romane  
empire.

iii. hundred  
yeares of ig-  
noraunce.

East India  
well knowen  
in owld time,

Strabo.

The great ry-  
chesse of E-  
gypte.

The citie of  
Alexandria.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay. ○

by these commodities the rycheſt cite of marchauntes that is in the worlde.

**Marceplona  
rycheſſe.**

**The gouer-  
naunce and  
reuenues of  
the Romans.  
Troglo-ditica,  
and India.  
The goulfe  
of Arabie.**

**Ethiopo.**

**Rich customs**

**The rycheſſe  
which were  
brought in  
owle tyme  
from India.  
and the red  
ſea.**

**The commiſ-  
ſion of Them-  
perours Mar-  
cus and Com-  
modus.**

The reuenues of Egypt are ſo great, that Marcus Tullius ſayth in one of his orations, that kynge Tolomeus Lina- med Auleta, the father of queene Cleopatra, had of reuenues twelue thouſande and ſyue hundredth talentes, which are ſe- uen millions and a halfe of golde. If therfore this kynge had ſo great reuenues when Egypt was gouerned of ſo ſeue and ſo negligently, what myght it then bee woorth to the Roma- nes by whom it was gouerned with great diligence, & theyr trade of marchandies greatly increaſed by the traffike of Tro- gloditica and India? wheras in tyme paſte there could hard- ly bee founde. xx. ſhyppes togyther that durſe enter into the goulfe of Arabie, or ſeue theyr proos withowt the mouth of the ſame. But at this preſent, great nauies ſayle togyther in to India and to the furtheſt partes of Ethiopo from whence are brought many ryche and precious marchandies into Egypt and are carped from thence into other countreys. And by this meanes are the cuſtomes redoubled alſo by ſuche thynges as are brought thyrther, as alſo by ſuche as are carped frome thence, forſmuch as greates cuſtomes arriue of thynges of great value. And that by this byage, infinite and precious marchandies were brought from the redde ſea and India, and thoſe of dyuers other ſortes then are knowne in othere tyme, it appeareth by the fourth volume of the ciuile lawe wherin is deſcribed the commiſſion of Themperours Marcus and Commodus, with the rehearſall of all ſuche ſuffe and marchandies wherof cuſtome ſhuld bee payde in the redde ſea by ſuch as had the ſame in fee ferme, as were payde the cu- ſtomes of all other prouinces perreynynge to the Romane Em- pyre: and they are theſe folowynge.

**Cinamome.  
Longe pepper.  
Whyte pepper.  
Cloues.  
Cloſus.  
Cancamo.  
Spikenarde.  
Caſſia.  
Sweete perfumes.**

**Xilocaſſia.  
Aſic.  
Amome.  
Binger.  
Malabattrum.  
Ammoniac.  
Balbane.  
Laſter.  
Agarike,**

**Summe**

Gumme of Arabie,	Berille.
Cardamome,	Cilindro.
Ellocinamome.	Glaues.
Carpesio.	Cloth of Sarmatia.
Sylkes of dyuers sortes.	The sylke cauled Metara.
Linnen cloth.	Vestures of sylke.
Skyppes and fures of Par-	Dyed cloth and sylke.
thia and Babilon.	Carbasi.
Iuery.	Sylke threeder.
Woodde of Heben.	Selded men.
Precious stones.	Hoppingiapes.
Perles.	Lions of India.
Jewels of Sardonica.	Leopardes.
Ceraunia.	Panthers.
Calamus Aromaticus.	Purple.

Also that iuise oz liquour which is gathered of wolfe and of the heare of the Indians.

By these woordes it dooth appeare that in old tyme the sayde nauigation by the way of the redde sea, was wel known and muche frequented, and perhappes more then it is at this present. In so much that the auncient kynges of Egypte consideringe the great profyte of the customes they had by the biages of the red sea, & wylling to make the same more easy & commodious, attempted to make a fosse oz chanel which shulde begynne in the lasse parte of the sayde sea, where was a citie named Arsinoe (which perhappes is that that is now cauled Sues) and shulde haue reached to a branche of the ryuer of Nilus named Pelusio, which emptieth it selfe in omore sea towarde the East about the citie of Damiatra. They determined also to make thre causeis oz hyghe wayes by lande, which shulde passe from the sayde branche to the citie of Arsinoe: but they founde this to difficulte to byng to passe.

In fine, kyng Tolomeus surnamed Philadelphus, ordeyned an other way: as to sayle bypon Nilus ageynst the course of the ryuer vnto the citie of Copto, and from thence to passe by a deserte countrey vntyll they coome about the redde sea to a citie named Berenice oz Egiormo, where they imbarcked all theyr marchaundies and wares for India, Ethiope, and Arabie, as appeareth by the wyrrynges first of Strabo (who wyrteth that he was in Egypte) and then by Plinie who was in

The great riches the kynges of Egypte had by causes.

The noble enterprises of the kynges of Egypte. Arsinoe. Damiatra. pelusio.

Nilus. Copto.

Berenice.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

A nauigable  
trench made  
from Egypte  
to the red sea

Lakes Amari.

Kynge Seso-  
stre.  
Kynge Psam-  
miticus.  
Kynge Darius

Kynge Ptole-  
meus.

The cite pe-  
ros.

what plynne  
writeth of the  
nauigable  
trench.

The large-  
nesse and len-  
gthe of the  
trench.

the tyme of Domitian. Strabo also speaking of the sayd foote  
or trench which was made toward the red sea, wyrteth thus

There is a trench that goth toward the red sea and the  
goulfe of Arabie, and to the cite of Arsinoe, which sum call  
Cleopatrida: and passeth by the lakes named Amari (that is)  
bitter, because in deede they were fyrst bytter. But after that  
this trench was made and the ryuer entered in, they became  
swete, and are at this present full of foules of the water by  
reason of theyr pleasauntnesse. This trench was fyrst begun  
by kynge Sesostris, before the battayle of Troy. Sum saye  
that it was begunne by kynge Psammiticus, whyle he was a  
chylde: And that by reason of his death, it was left imper-  
fect: Also that afterwarde, kynge Darius succeeded in the  
same enterpryse, who wold haue finished it, but yet brought  
it not to thende because he was informed that the redde sea  
was hygher then Egypt: And that if this lande diuptynge  
bothe the seas, were opened, all Egypte shulde bee drowned  
thereby. Kynge Tolomeus wold in deede haue finished it: but  
yet left it shut at the hed that he myght when he wolde, sayle  
to the other sea and returne without perell. Here is the cite  
of Arsinoe: And nere vnto that, the cite cauled Heroum in  
the vttermoost part of the goulfe of Arabie toward Egypt with  
many portes and habitacions. Plinie likewise speakynge of  
this trench, sayeth. In the furthest part of the goulfe of Ara-  
bie, is a porte cauled Danco, fro whence they determynd to  
byrge a nauigable trench vnto the ryuer of Nilus, where as  
is the fyrst Delta. Betwene the sayde sea and Nilus, there is  
a streight of lande of the length of. lxxi. myles. The first that  
attempted this thyng, was Sesostris kynge of Egypte: and  
after hym Darius kynge of the Persians, whome Tolomeus  
folowed, who made a trench a hundredth foote large, &. xxx.  
foote deepe, beinge thre hundredth myles in lengthe vnto the  
lakes named Amari, and durst proceede no further for feare  
of inundation, hauynge knowelceage that the redde sea was  
hygher by thre cubites then al the countrey of Egypt. Other  
say that this was not the cause: but that he doubted that yf  
he shulde haue let the sea coome any further, all the water of  
Nilus shulde haue byn therby corrupted, which onely myn-  
neth drynke to all Egypte. But notwithstandinge all these  
thynges aforesayde, all this byage is frequented by lande  
from

from Egypte to the redde sea, in which passage are thre caues of hyghe wayes. The fyrst begynnerh at the mouth of Nilus named Isclius. All which way is by the sandes: In so much that if there were not certeyne hyghe reedes fyrst in the earth to shewe the ryght way, the caues could not be founde by reason the wynde euer couereth it with sande. The second caue is two myles from the mountayne Cassius. And this also in the ende of. lx. myles, cometh vppon the way of caues of Isclius, inhabited with certeyne Arabians cauled Antei. The thyrde begynnerh at Berro, named Adiplon: and passeth by the same Arabians, for the space of. lx. myles sum: what shorter, but full of rough mountaynes and great scarfenesse of water. All these caues, leade the way to the cite of Arsinoe, buylded by Tolomeus Philadelphus in the goulfe Carandja by the red sea. This Ptolomeus was the fyrst that searched al that parte of the red sea which is cauled Trogloditica. Of this trenche described of Strabo and Plinie, there are seene certeyne tokens remaynyng at this present as they affirme which haue byn at Sues beyonde the cite of Alcaz otherwyse cauled Babylon in Egypte. But the marchauntes that of later dayes traauyle this viage by lande, ryde through the dry & baren desertes on camels toth by day and by night: directyng the way by the starres and compase as do marchauntes on the sea, and carryng with them water sufficient for many dayes iorneyes. The places of Arabie and India named of Strabo and Plinie, are the selfe same where the Portugales practise the trade at this daye, as the maners and customes of the Indians doo yet declare. For euen at this present the women vse to burne theym selues alyue with the brade bodies of theyr husbandes. Which thyng (as wyrteth Strabo in his. x. booke) they dyd in olde tyme by a lawe, for this consideration that sumtyme being in loue with other they forsooke or poisoned theyr husbandes. And forasmuch as accordyng to this custome, the olde poete Propertius (who lyued abowt a hundredeth yeres before thincarnation of Christ) hath in his boke made mention of the contention that was amonge the Indian women which of them shuld bee burned alyue with theyr husbandes, I haue thought good to subscribe his verses, whiche are these.

The viage by lande from Egypte to the red sea.

What kynge Ptolomeus discovered.

Alcaze.

The viage to East India frequented in owld tyme. The customes and maners of the Indians.

## Of Moscoule and Cathay.

*Radix Pois lex funeris una maritis;  
Quos aurora suis rubra colorat equis.  
Munus ubi mortifero iacta est fax ultima lecto,  
Vxorum suis stat pia turba comis;  
Et certamen habent lechi, quæ viua sequatur.  
Coniugium, pudor est non licuisse mori.  
Ardent victrices, Et flamine pectora præbent,  
Imponuntq; suis ora perusta viris.*

The vyage to  
Cathay.

Rycharde  
Chauunceler.

As routhynge these vyages both by sea and by lande to East India & Cathay, many thynge are wyrtten very largely by dyuers autours which I omitt bycause they pertyne not so much vnto vs as doth the viage attempted to CATHAY by the north seas and the coastes of Moscouia discovered in oovre tyme by the viage of that excellent ponge man Rychard Chaunceler no lesse lerned in all mathematicall sciences then an expert pylotte, in the yere of oovre lord. 1554.

A lerned dis-  
course of dy-  
uers vyages.

The vyages  
of the portu-  
gales.  
The woulde  
hangynge on  
the ayer.  
What is kno-  
wen of the lo-  
wer hemis-  
pherie.  
The lande of  
Basilie.  
Peru.  
The charge  
& dewtie of  
Christian pun-  
ces.  
Note.

As concernynge this vyage, I haue thought good to declare the communication which was betwene the sayde lerned man Galeatus Butrigarius, and that great philosopher and noble gentelman of Italic named Hieronimus Fracastor, as I fynde wyrtten in the Italian hypoxies of navigations. As they were therfore conferrynge in matters of learnynge, and reasonynge of the science of Cosmographi, the sayde lerned man haupnge in his hande an instrument of Astronomie, declared with a large oration howe muche the worlde was bounde to the kynges of Portugale, rehearsynge the noble factes doone by them in India, and what landes and Ilandes they had discovered. and how by theyr navigations they made the whole worlde hange in the ayer. He further declared what parts of the baul of the earth remained yet vndiscovered. And sayde that of the landes of the inferior hemispherie or halfe compasse of the baule towarde the pole Antartike, there was nothynge knowne but that lyttle of the coaste of Brasilia vnto the streight of Magellanus. Also a part of Peru: And a lyttle aboue Affrike towarde the cape of Bona Speranza. Also that he marueyled withowte measure that this thynge was no better considered of Christian Princes to who god hath deputed this charge, haupng euer on theyr counsaill men of great lernynge which may informe them of this thing beinge so marueplous and noble wherebp they maye obteyne glorie

glozie and fame by vertue, and bee impuled amonge men as  
 goddes, by better demerites then euer were Hercules & great  
 Alexander who trauayled only into India: and that by ma:  
 kynge the men of this owre hemispherie knowen to theym  
 of the other halfe compase of the baule beneth vs, they might  
 by the tytle of this enterpryse, withowt comparyson farre ex  
 cell all the noble factes that euer were doone by Julius Ce:  
 sar or any other of the Romane Emperours. Which thynge  
 they myght safely byynge to passe by assignynge colonies to in  
 habite byuers places of that hemispherie, in lyke maner as  
 dyd the Romanes in prouinces newly subdued. Whereby  
 they myght not only obteyne great ryches, but also enlarge  
 the Chyistian fapth and Empire to the glory of god and confu:  
 sion of infidels. After this, he spake of the Ilande of saynt  
 Laurence, cauled in owlde tyme Madagascar, which is grea:  
 ter then the realme of Castile and Portugale, and reachethe  
 from the. xii. degree towarde the pole Antartike, vnto the  
 xxvi. degree and a halfe, lyinge Northeaste frome the cape of  
 Bona Speranza and partly vnder the line of Tropicus Capri:  
 corni: beinge well inhabited and of temperate ayer, with a:  
 bundaunce of all thynge necessarie for the lyfe of man, and  
 one of the most excellent Ilandes that is founde this daye in  
 the worlde: And that neuerthelesse there is nothynge know:  
 en therof, except only a fewe smaule hauens by the sea side,  
 as the lyke ignorance remayneth of the greatest part of the I:  
 landes of Taprobana, Biaua the more and the lesse, and infi:  
 nite other. Then begynninge to speake of the partes of  
 owre pole, he caused the booke of plinie to bee brought him  
 where diligently ponderynge the. lxxvii. chapiture of the se:  
 conde booke, he founde where he reherseth the hystorie of Co:  
 nelius Nepos, by these wordes: That in his tyme, one Cu:  
 drus escappynge the handes of kynge Aathyro, departed fro  
 the goulfe of Arabie and came by sea to the Ilande of Calise.  
 Declarynge further, that wheras this narration was many  
 yeaeres reputed for a fable, was nowt in owre tyme by the ver:  
 tue of the Portugales, kdcowen to bee trewe: And that lyke:  
 wyse the same Cornelius Nepos reciteth that at the tyme  
 when Quintus Metellus Celer was proconsul or licutenant  
 for the Romans in sfracce, the kynge of Sucua gaue hym  
 certeyne Indians which saylinge out of India for marchan:  
 dies,

Hercules and  
Alexander.

The colonies  
of the Ro:  
mans in regi:  
ons subdued.

The great I:  
land of saynt  
Laurence or  
Madagascar.

The Ilandes  
of Taproba:  
na or Biaua.  
plinie.

The hystorie  
of Cornelius  
Nepos.

Shypps of In:  
dia ouen in:  
to the sea of  
Sermene.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

An enterprise  
wherby prin-  
ces may ob-  
teyne trewe  
fame and  
glory.  
Cathay disco-  
uered by war-  
rus paulus.

The citie of  
Lubyke.

The kyng of  
Polonie.

The duke of  
Moscouia.

An ambassa-  
dour from the  
duke of Mos-  
couia.

dies, were by tempest dyuen to the coastes of Germanie. When he had redde these wordes, he proceeded, sayinge that the same thyng might bee verified nowe in owt tyme if the princes which confine vppon that sea wolde endeouore theyr industry and diligence to bypunge it to passe. And that there coulde not any navigation bee imagined so commodious and profitable to all Christendome as this myght bee yf by this way the byage shulde bee founde open to India to come to the ryche countrey of CATHAY which was discovered now two hundred yeres sence by Marcus Paulus. Then taking the globe in his hande, he made demonstration that this byage shulde bee very thorte in respect of that which the Portugales now folowe, and also of that which the Spaniards may attempte to the Ilandes of Moluca. He declared further more that the citie of Lubyke beinge ryche and of great poure, and situate vppon the sea of Germanie, and also accustomed with continuall navigations to trauaile the sea of Norwaye and Gothlande, and lykewyse the ryght noble kyng of Polonie whose dominions with his realme of Lituania, extende to the sayde sea, shulde be apte to discover this secrete. But that aboue all other, the duke of Moscouia, shulde performe the same with greater commoditie and more facilitie then any other prince. And here slepyng a whyle, he began to speake ageyne and sayde. Nowe forasmuch as we are come to this passe, mee thynke it shulde seeme a great discurrecie if I shuld not helpe you all that I knowe as touchyng this byage, wherof I greatly mused with my selfe many yeres by occasion of the wordes of Plinie. Whereas therefore beinge a younge man, I was in Germanie in the citie of Augusta, it so chaunced that in those dayes there came thither an ambassadour of the duke of Moscouia, a man singularly learned both in the Greeke toonge and the Latine, and of good experience in worldely thynges, hauing byn sent to dyuers places by the sayde prince, and one of his counsaile. Of whose learninge beinge aduertised, I sought his acquayntance. And talkinge with hym one day of these Indians dyuen by fortune to the coastes of Germanie, and of the byage that myght bee discovered by the North sea to the Ilandes of spices, I perceived that at the fyrste he marueyled exceedingly, as at a thyng that he coulde neuer haue imagined, But restyng a whyle

whyle in maner astonished in his secrete phantasie, he took  
great pleasure therein, and sayde. Forasmuch as the Portu-  
gales haue nowe compassed abowt all the south partes suppo-  
sed in owlde tyme to bee inaccessible by reason of great heate,  
why shulde wee not certainly thynke that the lyke maye bee  
done abowt this parte of the north withowt feare of coulde,  
especially to men borne & brought vp in that clime: yet proce-  
dyng further, he said, that if his prince and master, had men  
that wolde animate hym to discover this byage, there was no  
prince in Christendome that myght do it with more facilitie.  
Then caulpyng for a mappe in which was the description of  
Moscouia and the prouinces subiecte to the same, he decla-  
red that from the citie of Moscouia or Mosca going towarde  
the northeast for the space of lx. myles, they come to the ry-  
uer of Volochda, and afterwarde by that, and folowynge the  
course therof, to the citie of Utiug, so cauled bycause the ry-  
uer of Jug fauleth into the ryuer of Succana, where they lose  
theyr owne names and make the great ryuer Duina: And by  
that, leapyng on the ryght hande the citie of Colmogor, they  
sayle vnto the north Ocean. The which waye, althoughe it  
bee a longe tracte, as more then. 300. myles, neuerthelesse he  
sayde that in sommer it myght commodiously bee sayled: And  
that wheras it fauleth into the sea, there are infinite woods  
of goodly trees apte to make shippes. And the place so con-  
uenient for this purpose, that shipwryghtes and other skylful  
workemen for all thynges hereunto apperteynyng, may eas-  
sely coome out of Germanie. Also that the men which are vs-  
ed to traunyle the sea of Germanie abowt the coastes of  
Sorthlande, shulde bee best and most apte to attempte this en-  
terpryse, bycause they are indurate to abyde coulde, hunger,  
and labour. He sayde furthermore, that in the court of his  
prince, they haue much knowleage of the great cane of Ca-  
thay, by reason of the continuall warres they haue with the  
Tartars, of whos the greatest part gyue obedience to the said  
great Cane as to theyr chiefe Emperoure. He made also de-  
monstration in the sayde carde by the northeast, that beinge  
past the prouince of Iermia and the ryuer Iescora (whiche  
fauleth into the north sea) and certeyne mountaynes named  
Catena Mundi, there is thenteraunce into the prouince of obdo-  
ra, whereas is Vecchiadozo and the ryuer Obo, whiche also  
fauleth

The woordes  
of the ambassa-  
dour of Mos-  
couia.

The way fro  
Moscouia to  
the north Oce-  
an & Cathay.

Volochda.  
Utiug.  
Succana.  
Duina.  
Colmogor.  
The north  
Ocean.

Greate  
wooddes.

Sorthlande.

The Mosco-  
uies haue  
knowleage of  
the greate  
cane of Ca-  
thay.  
Iermia.  
Iescora.  
Catena mundi.  
Obdora.  
Vecchiadozo.  
Obo.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

The lake  
Chetkey.  
The Tartars

The citie of  
Cantelo.

Note this se-  
crete.

Difficult tra-  
uerynge in  
Moscouia.

Commendati-  
on of the Spa-  
niardes and  
Portugales.

The hystorie  
of Paulus  
Centurio.  
Of this reade  
more at large  
in the booke  
of paulus Jo-  
nius.

Alice may  
do more with  
sum then ver-  
tue.

The Caspian  
sea.  
Riga.  
Livonia.

faulerth into the sayd sea, and is the furthest boether of Them-  
pire of the Prince of Moscouia. The sayd ryuer hath his ori-  
ginall in a greate lake, cauled Chethai, which is the fyrste ha-  
bitacion of the Tartars that paye tribute to the greate Kane.  
And from this lake for the space of two monethes wyage (as  
they were credably informed by certeine Tartares taken in the  
warres) is the most noble citie of Cambalu, bringe one of the  
chiefest in the dominion of the greate Kane, whom sum caule  
the great Cham. He also affirmed, that if shippes shulde bee  
made on the coastes of the sayd sea, and sayle on the backe  
halfe of the coast therof (which he knewe by many relations  
made to his Prince, to reach infinitely toward the north east)  
they shulde doubtlesse in solowynge the same, easely discou-  
er that countrey. Unto these wordes he added, that although  
there were greate difficultie in Moscouia, by reason that the  
wyage to the sayd sea is full of thicke wooddes and waters  
which in the summer make great maryshes and impossible to  
bee trauelyed, aswell for lacke of wytrayles whiche can not  
there be founde, not for certeyne dayes, but for the space of  
certeyne monethes, the place beinge desolate without inha-  
bitaunces. neuerthelesse he sayde that yf there were with his  
Prince, only two Spanyardes or Portugales to whome the  
charge of this wyage shulde bee comytted, he no wayes doub-  
ted but that they wolde solewe it and fynde it, forasmuch as  
with great ingenuosnesse and inestimable patience, these na-  
tions haue overcome much greater difficulties then are these  
which are but lytle in conparison to those that they haue o-  
uerpassed and doo ouerpasse in all theyr wyages to India. He  
proccaded declarynge that not many yeares sence, there came  
to the court of his Prince, an ambassadour frome pope Leo,  
named master Paulo Centurione a Genuese vnder dyuers pre-  
tenses. But the principall occasion of his comynge, was,  
becaus he had conceaued greate indignation and hatred a-  
gainst the Portugales: And therfore intended to proue yf he  
coulde open any wyage by lande wherby spices myght bee  
brought from India by the lande of Tartaria, or by the sea  
Caspium (otherwyse cauled Hyrcanum) to Moscouia: And  
from thence to bee brought in shippes by the ryuer Riga, whi-  
che runnyng by the countrey of Livonia, faulerth into the sea  
of Germanie. And that his Prince gaue eare vnto hym: and  
cauled

caused the sayde viage to bee attempted by certeine noble men of Lords, of the Tartars confininge nexte vnto hym. But the warres whiche were then betwene them, and the greates desertes which they shulde of necessity ouerpaſſe, made them feare of theyr enterpryse: which if it had bin purposed by the coastes of this owre north sea, it myght haue bin easely supplied. The sayde Ambaſadour continued his narration, sayinge that no man ought to doubt of that sea but that it may bee sayled syxe monethes in the yeare, forasmuch as the days are then very longe in that clime, and herby reason of continuall reuerberation of the beames of the sonne and shorte nyghtes. And that this thynge were as well woorthie to be proued, as any other nauigation wherby many partes of the worlde heretofore vnknewen, haue bin discovered & brought to ciuilitie. And here makinge an ende of this talke, he said: Let vs nowe omitte this parte of Moscouia with his coulde, and speake sumwhat of that parte of the newe worlde in whiche is the lande of Brytons cauled *Terra Britonum*, and *Baccalaos* or *Terra Baccalarum*, where in the yeare .1534. and .1535. Iaquies Cartier in two vyages made with three great French gallies, founde the great and large countreys named *Canada*, *Dehelaga*, and *Sanguenai*: which reach from the xlv. to the li. degree, beinge well inhabited and pleasaunte countreys, and named by hym *Roſa ſfrancia*. And here ſtepyng a while and lſtyng vppon his handes, he sayde: Oh what doo the Chriſtian Princes meane that in ſuch landes diſcouered they do not aſſigne certeine colonies to inhabite the ſame to bringe theſe people (whom god hath ſo bleſſed with natural gyftes) to better ciuilitie and to embrace owre religion, then the which, nothynge can bee more acceptaible to god? The ſayd regions alſo, beinge ſo fayre and frutefull, with plentie of all ſortes of corne, herbes, frutes, woodde, ſpices, beaſtes, metals, and ryuers of ſuche greatneſſe that ſhyppes maye ſayle more then .180. myles vppon one of theym, beinge on bothe ſydes infinitely inhabited: And to cauſe the gouernours of the ſayde colonies to ſearch whether that lande toward the north named *Terra de Laborador*, doo ioyne as one ſtreme lande with *Norwayne*: Or whether there bee any ſtreight or open place of ſea as is moſte lyke there ſhulde bee, forasmuch as it is to bee thought that the ſayde Indians dyuen by fortune

S S. II.

abowte

The Tartars  
of Londo  
Desertes.  
The viage by  
the north ſea.

The woorthynesse  
of this  
vyage.

The viages  
of the French  
men to the  
land of Baccalaos.

pleasaunte  
countreys,  
New ſfrance.

Apoſtrophe  
to the Chriſtian  
princes.

Great ryuers.

A thynge woorthie  
to be ſearched.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

The way to  
Cathay and  
the Ilandes  
of Maluca by  
the northwest  
A notable en-  
terpryse.

The noble en-  
terpryse of An-  
toni di Mendo-  
za, Viceroy  
of Mexico.

The discou-  
rynge of the  
northwest  
partes.

Shippes say-  
linge from  
Cathay by  
the north by-  
perborea sea  
to the coastes  
of the north-  
west part of  
the lande of  
Saccalaes.  
Cathay.

The sea from  
new Fraunce  
or Terra Bri-  
tannia to Ca-  
thay.

A notable  
booke.

aboute the coastes of Norway, came by that streight of sea,  
to the coastes of Germanie: And by the sayde streight to saile  
northwest to discouere the landes and countreys of CATHAY,  
and from thence to sayle to the Ilandes of Malucca. And  
these surely shoulde be enterpryses able to make men immortall.  
The whiche thynge, that ryght woorthy gentelman master  
Antony di Mendoza consideringe by the singular herite and  
magnanimitie that is in hym, attempted to put this thynge  
in practyse. For beinge viceroy of the countrey of Mexico (so  
named of the great citie Mexico otherwise cauled Temistitan,  
nowe cauled newe Spayne, being in the .xx. degree aboute the  
Equinoctiall, and parte of the sayde firme lande, he sent cer-  
teyne of his capitaynes by lande, and also a nauie of Shippes  
by sea, to search this secrete. And I remember that when I  
was in fflaunders in the Emperours court, I sawe his letter  
wrytten in the yeare. 1541. and dated from Mexico: wherein  
was declared howe towarde the northwest, he had founde the  
kingdome of *Sere Citta* (that is) *Seven Cities*, whereas is  
that cauled *Tiucula* by the reuerend father *Barro da Riza*: &  
howe beyonde the sayde kingdome yet further towarde the  
Northwest, Capitayne *Francesco Masques* of *Cozonado*, ha-  
uynge ouerpasse great desertes, came to the sea syde where  
he founde certeyne Shippes which sayled by that sea with mar-  
chaundises, and had in theyr baner vppon the proos of theyr  
Shippes, certeyne foules made of golde and soluer which they  
of Mexico caule *Alcatrazzi*: And that theyr mariners shewed  
by signes that they were. xxx. dayes saylinge in comynge  
to that haue: whereby he vnderstode that these Shippes could  
bee of none other countrey then of Cathay, forasmuch as it is  
situate on the contrary parte of the sayde lande discouered.  
The sayde master Antonie wrote furthermore, that by the o-  
pinion of men well practised, there was discouered so greate  
a space of that countrey vnto the sayd sea, that it passed. 950.  
leagues, which make. 2850. myles. And doubtesse if the  
frenche men in this theyr newe Fraunce, wolde haue passed  
by lande towarde the sayd northwest and by north, they shuld  
also haue founde the sea whereby they myght haue sayled to  
Cathay. But aboute all thynge, this seemed vnto me mooste  
woorthy of commendation, that the sayde master Antonie  
wrote in his letter that he had made a booke of al the natural  
and

and marueylous thynges whiche they founde in searchoyng these countreys, with also the measures of landes and altitudes of degrees: A worke doublelesse which sheweth a princely and magnificall mynde, whereby wee may conceaue that yf god had gyuen hym the charge of the other hemispherie, he wolde oz now e haue made it better knowne to vs. The which thyng, I suppose no man doth greatly esteeme at this time: beinge neuerthelesse the greatest and most glorioys enterpryse that may bee imagined.

And here makinge a certeyne pause, and turnyng hym selfe towarde vs, he sayde: Doo you not vnderstande to this purpose howe to passe to India toward the north west wind, as dyd of late a citizen of Venese, so valiente a man, and so well practysed in all thynges pertynyng to navigations and the science of Cosmographie, that at this present he hath not his lyke in Spayne, in so much that for his vertues he is preferred aboue all other pylottes that sayle to the west Indies, who may not passe thither without his licence, and is therefore cauled *Piloto Maggiore* (that is) the graunde pylote. And when wee sayde that wee knewe him not, he proceeded, sayinge, that beinge certeyne yeares in the cite of Siniile, and desirous to haue some knowledge of the navigations of the Spanyardes, it was toulde hym that there was in the cite a valient man, a Venecian bozne, named Sebastian Cabote, who had the charge of those thynges, beinge an expert man in that science, and one that coulde make outdes for the sea with his owne hande. And that by this reporte, seekinge his acquaintance, he founde hym a very gentell person, who enterreyned hym frendly and shewed him many thynges, and amonge other a large mapp of the worlde with certeine particular navigations as well of the Portugales as of the Spanyardes. And that he spake further vnto hym, in this effecte. When my father departed from Venese many yeares sence to dwell in Englande to folowe the trade of marchaundies, he took me with hym to the cite of London whyle I was very yonge, yet hauyng neuerthelesse some knowledge of letters of humane and of the sphere. And when my father dyed in that tyme when newes were broghe that Don Christopher Columbus Venese, had discovered the coastes of India, whereof was great talke in all the courts of kynge Henry the seventh

who

A great and  
glorious en-  
terpryse.

Sebastian Ca-  
bote the grad  
pilot of the  
west Indies.

Commendari-  
on of Sebasti-  
an Cabote.

Sebastian Ca-  
bote tould me  
that he was  
borne in Bry-  
stowe. & that  
at .iii. yeare  
ould he was  
caried with  
his father to  
Venice and so  
returned a-  
gayne into  
England with  
his father af-  
ter certeyne  
yeares: wher  
by he was  
thought to  
haue bin borne  
in Venice.

## Of Moscoule and Cathay.

The first vy-  
age of Seba-  
stian Cabote.

The lande of  
Florida.

The secende  
vyage of Ca-  
bote to the  
land of Bra-  
zile, and Rio  
della Plata.

Cabote coulde  
not find in a  
region with-  
in this ryuer  
he soweth  
graynes of

who then reigned: In so much that all men with great admi-  
ration affirmed it to bee a thynge more diuine then humane,  
to sayle by the Weste into the East where spices growe, by a  
way that was neuer knowne before. By which fame and re-  
pöte, there increased in my harte a greate flame of desyre to  
attempte sum notable thynge. And vnderstandyng by reason  
of the sphere, that if I shulde sayle by the way of the north:  
west wynde, I shulde by a shorter tracte coomme to India, I  
thereuppon caused the kyng to bee aduertised of my diuise,  
who immediatly commaunded two carauels to bee furnyshed  
with all thynges apperteynyng to the vyage, which was as  
farre as I remember, in the yere. 1496. in the begynnyng  
of summer. Begynnyng therfore to saile towarde Northwest,  
not thynkyng to fynde any other lande then that of CATHAY,  
and from thence to turne towarde India. But after certeyne  
dayes, I founde that the lande ranne towarde the Northe,  
which was to me a great displeasure. Neuerthelesse, sayling  
alonge by the coast to see if I could fynde any goulfe that tur-  
ned, I founde the lande still continet to the 56. degree bur-  
der owre pole. And seinge that there the coast turned toward  
the East, dispaynyng to fynde the passage, I turned backe a  
gyre, and sayled downe by the coast of that lande towarde  
the Equinoctiall (ouer with intent to fynde the sayde passage  
to India) and came to that parte of this firme lande whiche  
is now called FLORIDA. Where, my tryteples sayling,  
I departed from thence and returned into England, where I  
founde great troubles amonge the people, and preparauce  
for warres in Scotlande: by reason whereof, there was no  
more consideration had to this vyage: Whereuppon I wente  
into Spayne to the Catholyke kyng, and quene Elizabeth:  
who beinge aduertised what I had doone, interceped me,  
and at theyr charges furnyshed certeyne shippes wherewith  
they caused me to sayle to discover the coastes of Brasile,  
where I founde an exceedyng great and large ryuer, named  
at this present, Rio della Plata, (that is) the ryuer of syluer, into  
the which I sayled, and folowed it into the firme lande more  
then fyre hundred leaques, fyndyng it eury where verpe-  
sayle and inhabited with infinite people, which with admi-  
ration came runnyng dayly to owre shippes. Into this ry-  
uer, runne so many other riuers, that it is in manner incredible.

After

After this, I made many other voyages which I now pretermitte. And werynge owde, I gyue my selfe to rest from such treuayles because there are now many younge and lusty pilottes and mariners of good experience, by whose forwardnesse I doo reioyse in the fruites of my labours, and rest with the charge of this office as you see. And this is as much as I haue understoode of master Sebastian Cabote, as I haue gathered owte of dyuers navigations wyrtten in the Italian tooonge.

And wheras I haue before made mention howe Moscouia was in olde tyme discovered by Richard Chanceler in his biage toward Cathay by the direction and information of the sayd master Sebastian: he longe before had this secret in his mynde, I shall not neede here to describe that biage, forasmuche as the same is largely and saythfully wyrtten in the Laten tongue by that learned younge man Clement Adams scole master to the Durnes henchmen, as he receaued it at the mouth of the sayd Richard Chanceler. Nevertheless I haue thought good here to speake sumwhat of Moscouia as I haue receiued in the booke of Iohn Sabel wyrtten in the Latyn tooonge to the right noble Prince Ferdinando Archduke of Austria and Infant of Spayne, of the manners and religion of the Moscouites, as he was partly instructed by the ambassadors of the Duke of Moscouie sent into Spayne to Iohn Perceus narche in the yere. M. D. XX. V. He wyrteth therfore as foloweth.

I thinke it petye conueniente to speake sumwhat of the name of this region wherby it is cauled at this day, and how it was cauled in olde tyme. Consyderinge therfore the maner of the Grecke and latine monuments with the histories of later tyme, I perceaue it to be a thyng which requieth no smaule iudgement of wytte and lernynge. For we see in howe olde tyme the names of thynges are chaunged, as are also the manners of men. I fynde therefore that those people whom at this day we commonly caule Moscouites, were in yore past (as wyrteth Plinie) cauled Roxolani, whom nevertheless by chaunge of one letter, Ptoleme in his right table of Europe, cauleth Rosolani as dooth also Strabo. They were also many yeres cauled Rutheni. And are that people which sumtyme sought manfully agaynst the Capitaynes

were in September, and gathered therof. I thousand in December as wyrteth also Francisco Lopez

The voyage to Moscouia.

The historye of Moscouia.

The dyuers names of Moscouia.

Roxolani.  
Ro'olani.  
Rutheni.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

The ryuer  
Mosco.

The ryuer  
Bozisthenes.

The Emperour  
of Cathay.

The frose sea

Lacus Croni-  
cus.  
Saturnia.

Amaltheum.

The dominio  
of the duke of  
Moscouia.

The citie of  
Moscouia.

The chiefe  
citie of Mos-  
couia.

of Methridates as Strabo wyrteth. They were cauled Mos-  
couites of the chiefe citie of al the prouince named Moscouia  
or Mosca: or (as Colaterane saith) of the riuer Mosco. They  
were sumtyme gouerned by duke Johan, whose wyfe was  
Helena of the lynage of Themperours of Constantinople of  
the noble famelie of the Paleologi. Beyond these Borolai-  
nos, Strabo sayth there is no lande inhabited. These Ruthe-  
nians therfore or Moscouites, are people of the northeaste  
parte of the worlde from vs: And are determined with the li-  
mettes of the great ryuer Bozisthenes of Scythia, on the one  
syde with the Lituanians and Polonians, and on the other  
syde with the Tartars who cease not to breke them with conti-  
nuall warres and incursions. Especially the great Emperour  
Cham of Cathay the chiefe Prince of the Tartars, residente  
by the sea syde in Taurico Chersoneso, molesteth them with  
fere warres. They are towarde the north syde inclosed with  
the frosen sea, the lande of whose coastes beinge verie large,  
perteyneth in maner all to the dominion of the duke of Mosco-  
uia. This sea is it which the owlde wyrters caule Lacus Croni-  
cus, so named of the Greeke worde Cronos, which the Latines  
caule Saturnus whom they sayne to bee an owlde man, of com-  
plexion coulde and slowe, and thereby name all such thynges  
as are coulde and slowe, Cronica, as by lyke reason they dyd  
this northe sea which beinge in maner euer frosen, is slowe  
and coulde and in maner immouable. And for lyke considera-  
tion (as saythe Plinie) Bethens nameth it in the Scythian  
toonge, Amaltheum, whiche woorde signifieth as muche as  
congeled or frosen. But that I wander not farre frome my  
purpose: The empire and dominion of the duke of Moscouie re-  
cheth so farre that it comprehendeth certeyne partes of Asia  
and also of Europe. The citie of Moscouia or Mosca, is coun-  
ted twyle as hygge as Colonia Agrippina as they saythfully  
repozte which knowe bothe. Unto this they haue also an o-  
ther not vnequall in hyggenesse cauled Gladimer. Also Bles-  
couia, Monogradia, Smolne, and Osker, al which they all  
hastadours affirme to bee of princely and magnificall buyl-  
dynges, and strongly defended with waules bothe of brycke  
and square stone. Of these, Blescouia is strongest and emited  
ned with thire waules. Other which they haue innumerable  
are not so famous as are these wherof this duke of Moscouia  
and

and Emperoure of Russia taketh this inscription of his litle. For euen at this present, when so euer eyther by his ambassadours or his letters, he dooth signifie hym selfe to bee Emperoure of Moscouie, his is accustomed to vse this litle. *Basilius* by the grace of god Emperoure of all Russia and greate Duke of Fladamer, Moscouie, Rouigrade, Blescouia, Smolne, and Oriser. &c. And this is the tytle whereby the sayde ambassadours saluted yowre maiestie in the name of great *Basilius* when they began theyr oration. This prince of Moscouie hath vnder hym princes of many prouinces and those of great poure: Of the which, that owlde whyte bearded man whom this Emperour of the Ruthians sente for his ambassadoure to Theemperours maiestie into Spayne, is not one of the least. For euen he when necessitie of warre requyret, is accustomed to make for his Emperour a bande of xxx thousande horsemen. But this is to theyr singular commendation that they are so obedient to theyr prince in al thynges, that beinge commoned by hym by neuer so meane an herald, they obey incontinent as if it were to god, thynkyng nothinge more glorioys then to dye in the quarrell of theyr prince. By reason of which obedience, they are able in short tyme, to assemble an army of two or thre hundredeth thousande men agens theyr enemies eyther the Tartars or the greate Cham: And haue hereby obteyned great victories and triumphes as well agens the Turkes as the Tartars by the excedyng multitude of theyr horsemen and continual experience in warres. At such time as Theemperour *Maximilian* made a league with them, they kept warre agens the kynge of Polonie. They vse not only bowes and darters after the maner of the Parthians, but haue also the vse of gunnes as we haue. And to bee briefe, onely the Moscouites maye seme that nation whiche hath not felte the commodities of peace: In so muche that yf theyr region were not strongly defended by the nature of the place beinge impregnable, it had or nowe byn often tymes conquered. Theyr language agreeth much with the roonge of the Boyenians, Troarians, and Sclauons: so that the Sclauon dooth playnly vnderstande the Moscouite, although the Moscouian roonge be a more rude and hard phrase of speech. The historiographers wyte that the Sclauons roonge tooke the name of the confusion whiche was in Babel in the tyme

The duke of Moscouia z Emperour of Russia.  
The duke of Moscouia his tytle.

Duke *Basilius*.

Their poure.

Theyr obedience to theyr prince.

Theyr wars z conquestes.

Gunnes.

On'y the moscouites haue not felt the commodities of peace.

Theyr language.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

of that stowt hunter Remzoth of whome mention is made in the Genesis. But I can not enowgh marueyle at this thing, that whereas betwene Dalmatia (now called Sclauonia) and Moscouia, both the Pannonies are situate, yet the northward standynge, the Hungarians toonge nor hyngre agreeth with the Moscouites. Wherby wee may contereure that these nations were sumtymes diuided by legions, and that they came out of Dalmatia thither: whiche thynge also Volateranus affirmeth, sayinge that the language of the Ruthenians (whiche are the Moscouites) is Semidalmatica (that is) halfe Sclauone. Whoe so euer it bee, this is certeyne that the Bohemians, Croatians, Sclauons, and Moscouites, agree in language as wee perceaued by thinterpretours which yowre maiestie had then in yowre court. For whereas the sayde interpretours were bozne amonge the Croatians and Sclauons and none of them had euer byn in Moscouia, or beefore that tyme had any conuersation with them, yet dyd they well vnderstande the ambassadours woordes.

There are in Moscouia, wooddes of exceedynge byggenesse, in the which blacke woodues and whyte beares are hunted. The cause wherof may bee the extreme cold of the north, which dooth greatly alter the complexions of beastes, and is the mother of whytenesse as the Philosophers affirme. They haue also great plentie of bees, wherby they haue such abundance of hony and ware that it is with them of small price. When the commoditie of theyr countrey is neglected by reason of longe warres, theyr chiefe aduantage whereby they haue all thynges necessarie towarde theyr lyuynge, is the gaines which they haue by theyr ryche furies, as Sables, Marternes, Luzernes, most whyte armyns, and such other which they sell to marchauntes of dyuers countreys. They bye and sell with simple faythe of woordes exchaungynge ware for ware withowt any curious bondes or cautels. And albeit they haue the vse of both golde and syluer monyes, yet doo they for the most part exchaunge theyr furies for futes and other thynges necessarie to mainteine theyr lyfe. There are also sum people vnder the dominion of this Emperour, which haue neither wyne nor wheate, but lyue only by fleshe and mylke as doo the wylde Tartars theyr boztherers which dwel in woods by the coastes of the frozen sea. These people are but the,

and

Dalmatia.

Pannonia.  
Hungarie.

Theyr origi-  
nal.

The Sclauo  
toonge rea-  
cheth farre.

Great woods  
white beares  
and blacke  
woodues,

Abundance of  
hony and  
ware.

Rych furies.

Theyr maner  
of bargenyng

Rude & wylde  
people.

Tartares.

and lyue in maner lyke wylde beastes. But they of the citie of Mosca and Mouigraide, and other cities, are ciuile people: and agree with vs in eatynge of fysh and fleshe althowgh theyr maner of coquerie is in many thynges differynge frome owres. Volaterane wyrieth that the Ruthenians vse money vncopned. And inquirynge further, I was informed that the money of Hungary is much currant with them. But this is chiefly to bee considered, that they imbrace the Christian fayth which they asseme to haue byn preached to them fyrs<sup>t</sup> by saynt Andzewe thapostle and broother to Simon Peter. Such doctrine also as vnder Constantine the greate, in the ycare. CCC. xliiii. was concluded in the fyrs<sup>t</sup> generall counsaile holden in the citie of Nicene in Bithynia, and there determined by. CCC. xliiii. bysshoppes, and also such as hath byn wyrtten and taloght by the Greeke doctoures Basilus Magnus and Chrysostomus, they beleue to bee so holy, firme and sincere, that they thinke it no moze lawfull one heare to transgresse or go backe from the same, then from the gospell of Christ. For theyr constancie and modestie is such, that no man dare caule those thynges into question which haue once byn decised by holy fathers in theyr general counsailes. They doo therfore with a moze constante mynde perseuer in theyr fyrs<sup>t</sup> fayth which they receaued of saynt Andzewe thapostle and his succellours and holy fathers, that doo manye of vs bringe diuided into scismes and sectes whiche thyng neuer chauncerth amonge them. But if any difficultie chaunce to rise as touchynge the fayth or custome of religion, all is referred to the archbyshoppe and other bysshoppes as to bee defined by theyr spirite: not permyttinge any iudgemente to the inconstant and ignozant people. Theyr archebyshoppe is residente in the citie of Mosca, where also Theemperoure keepethe his court. They haue lykelyle dyuers other byshops: as one in Mouigraia, where also Isodorus was byshop vnder pope Eugenius. They haue an other in Rosciua, an other in Sushali, an other in Oriseri: also in Smolne, in Belan, in Tolmum, and in Wolut, all which haue theyr dioces. They acknowledge theyr Archebyshop as the chiefe. Before the patri arche of Constantinople was oppressed by the Tiranni of the Turkes, this archebyshoppe recognised hym as his superioure. In so much that this duke of Moscouia and Em-

Ciulle people  
in cities.

Theyr money

They abraze  
the Christian  
fayth whiche  
they receaued  
of the Apo-  
stles.

The counsaile  
of Nicene.  
Basilus mag-  
nus.  
Chrysostomus

Theyr constā-  
cie in theyr  
religion.

The bysshops  
define co-  
trouerfies in  
religion.

Theyr  
byshops.

The Arche-  
byshoppe.  
The patri-  
arke of Con-  
stantinople.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

A notable ex-  
emple of a  
Christian  
pauce,

Their reli-  
gion.

A monasterie  
of. ccc. muns-  
kes

Presbites.

masse.

A mysteric.

The prima-  
tue church.

A straunge  
custome.

perour of Russia, not vnnayndefull hereof but a diligente ob-  
seruer of his accustomed religion, dooth at this daye yearely  
sende a certeyne appende in maner of almes to the patriarche  
of Constantinople, that he may with more quiete mynd looke  
for thende of this his Egyptian seruitude vntyll it shal please  
almighty god to restore hym to his former church and auto-  
ritie. For he iudgeth it much impietie, if he shulde nowe for-  
saue hym whose predicatorres haue ruled and gouerned so  
many churches, and of whom the fayth and religion of so ma-  
ny regions and prouinces haue depended.

But to speake briefly of theyr religion, they agree in ma-  
ny thynges with vs, and in sum thynges folow the Greeces.  
They haue munkes and religious men. Not farre from the ci-  
tie of Mosca, they haue a great monasterie in the whiche are  
three hundred munkes lpyunge vnder the rule of Basilus  
Magnus in the which is also the sepulcher of S. Sergius the  
abbot. They obserue theyr vowe of chastitie which none may  
breake that haue once professed. yet such as haue married vir-  
gins of good fame, may bee admitted to thorder of presthod,  
but may neuer bee a munke. The prestes and byshopps whiche  
are admitted to orders vnmarrid, may neuer after bee married:  
noz yet such as haue wiues, mary againe when they are dead,  
but liue in perpetual chastitie. Such as committe adulterie or  
fornication, are greedously punysshed by the byshoppes and  
deprived of the benefices. They celebrate masse after the ma-  
ner of the Greeces which differeth from oures in dyuers thin-  
ges, as in fermented breade after the maner of the Greeces.  
They put in the chalice as much water as redde wine, which  
water they vse to heate, bycause (not withowt a great myste-  
rie) there is helowed furth of the syde of oure lord, both blud  
and water, which wee ought by good reason to thynke was  
not withowt heate: for els shulde it scarcely haue byn iudged  
for a miracle. In fine, they asseme that all theyr customes  
and rytes are accorpynge to the institutions of the primatyue  
church and the doctrine of Basilus Magnus, and Chrysosto-  
mus. In this thyng they dyffer greatly from vs, that they  
minister the communion to younge children of three yeares of  
age, which they doo with fermented breade dypte in a sponer  
full of wyne, and geue it them for the bodye and bludde of  
Christe.

A briefe

A brieue description of Moscouia after the later  
wyters, as Sebastian Munster and  
Iacobus Bassaldus.



The prouince of Moscouia, is so named by the  
ryuer Mosco which passeth by the metropoliz  
tane citie of Moscouia cauled Mosca by the  
name of the ryuer Mosco. This prouince was  
cauled of the olde wyters, Sarmatia Asiati-  
ca. The boztherers or confines to the Mosco-  
mians on the one syde towarde the East, are the Tartars cau-  
led Nogai, and the Scianbanians, with the Zagatians. To-  
warde the West, the prouinces of Lymonia and Lituania. To-  
warde the South, the ryuer of Tanais and the people consti-  
tuting with the ryuer Volga, cauled of the olde wyters Rha.  
And towarde the North, the Ocean sea cauled the Scythian  
sea, and the region of Laponia. Moscouia is in maner all  
playne and full of marishes, wooddes, and many very great  
ryuers wherof the ryuer of Volga is the principal. Sum caul  
this Aedyl, as the olde autours named it Rha. It beginneth  
at the great lake cauled Lacus Albus (that is) the white lake  
and runneth into the sea of Bachau, named of the aunciente  
wyters, the sea Caspium or Hircanum. Under the domini-  
on of Moscouia, are certeyne regions and dukedoomes: as  
Alba Russia (that is) whyte Russia. Also Colmogoza, Pleσκο-  
nia, Baluida, Rouogardia, with also manye places of the  
Tartars which are subiecte to the duke of Moscouia. The  
chiefe cities of Moscouia, are Mosca, Pleσκοnia, Rouogar-  
dia, Colmogoza, Orogaria, Viatra, Smolensker, Perestauia,  
Cologna, Volodemaria, Rossauia, and Cassam. The people  
of Moscouia are Christians, and haue greate abudaunce of  
hony and waxe: also ryche fures, as Sabels, Marternes,  
foynes, Calaber, and dyuers other. All the Tartars  
which inhabite towarde the East beyonde the ryuer of Vol-  
ga, haue no dwellynge places, nor yet cities or castels. But  
cary about with theym certeyne cartes or wagens covered  
with beastes hydes, under the whiche they rest, as wee do in  
owre houses,

Sarmatia asi-  
atica.

The Scythi-  
an Ocean.

The ryuer of  
Volga.  
Lacus albus.

The Caspian  
sea.

Their chiefe  
cities.

The wyde  
Tartars.

They

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

**Horzas.**

They remoue together in great companies whiche they call Horzas. They are warlike people and good horsemen, and are all Macometistes.

**The bygnes of the cite of Moscouia.**

Sebastian Munster in his booke of *Uniuersall Cosmographie*, wyrteth that the cite of Mosca or Mosconia containeth in circuite, xiiii. myles, and that it is twyse as bygge as the cite of Praga in Bohemie. Of the countrey of Mosconia, bytyme other prouinces subiecte to the same, he wyrteth thus. It extendeth in largenesse foure hundred myles, and is rich in syluer. It is lawfull for no man to go out of the realme or come in without the dukes letters. It is playne without mountaynes, and ful of wooddes and maryshes. The beastes there by reason of the coulde, are lesse then in other countreis more southwarde. In the myddest of the cite of Mosca beinge situate in a playne, there is a castell with. xvii. towres and thre bulwarkes so stronge and fayre, that the lyke are scarcely seene in any other place. There are also in the castell xvi. churches, and thre very large courtes in the which the noble men of the courte haue theyr lodgynges. The dukes pallaice is buylded after the maner of the Italian buyldyng, and very fayre, but not great. Theyr drynke is mede & beere as is the maner of the moste parte of the people that inhabite the North partes of the woodde.

**Syluer.**  
**The region of Moscouia.**

**Beastes.**

**A fayre and stronge castel in the cite of Mosca.**

**The dukes pallaice.**

**Theyr drynke**

**They are gyven to dronkenesse.**

**Corn and grayne.**

**Stoues.**

**The famous ryuer of Tanais.**

They are excedyngely gyven to dronkenesse. Yet (as some saye) the princes of the lande are prohibite in paine of death to abstaine from such stronge drynkes as are of force to inebriate, except at certeyne tymes when licence is graunted theym, as twyse or thryse in the yere. They plowe the grownde with horses and plowes of woodde. Theyr corne and other grayne by reason of longe coulde, doo seldome ware ripe on the ground by reason wherof they are sumtimes inforced to ripe and drye them in theyr skounes and hotte houses, and then grynd the. They lacke wyne and oyle. Mosconia is extended vnto Turham and Tzelia which are in Scythia. The famous ryuer of Tanais, the Moscouites caule Don, haung his springes and originall in Mosconia in the dukedome of Rezensc. It ryseth out of a grownde that is playne, baren, muddy, full of maryshes and wooddes. And where it proceadeth toward the East to the mountaynes of Scythia and Tartarie, it bendeth to the south: and commyng to the maryshes of Meotis it

it fauleth into them. The ryuer of Volga (sumetyme cauled Iaha, and nowe cauled of the Tartars Edel) runneth toward the north certeyne myles, to whom is ioyned the ryuer Occa or Ocha, flowynge out of Moscouia, and then bendyng in: to the South and increased with many other ryuers, fauleth into the sea Euxinum, which diuideth Europe and Asia.

The woodde or forest cauled Hircania sylua, occupieth a smal portion of Moscouia. Yet is it sumwhere inhabited, and by the longe labour of men made thinner and barer of trees. In that parte that lyeth toward Russia, is a kynde of greate and fierce bulles cauled Uri or Bisontes, as wyrteth Paulus Iouius. There are also Alces muche lyke vnto hartes, with longe snoures of fleshe and longe legges withowt any bowinge of theyr hour or pasternes. These beastes, the Moscouites caule Lozzi, and the Almaynes Helenes. The iornaye that is betwene Vlna of Lithuania by Smolenske to Mosca, is trauallyd in wynter on sledes by the snowe congeled by longe froste, and made very styppery and compacte lyke Ise by reason of much wearynge and treadynge, by meanes wher of this vyage is performed with incredible celeritie. But in the sommer, the playne countreys can not bee ouercome with out difficulte labour. For when the snowe begynneth to bee dissolued by continuall heate, it causeth maryshes and quarmyes inextricable and daungerous both for horse and man, were it not for certeyne causeyes made of tymber with in manner infinite labour. The region of Moscouia (as I haue said) beareth neyther bynes nor olyue trees, nor yet any other trees that bere any apples or frutes of very plesant or swete sauour or taste except chery trees, for as much as al tender frutes & trees are burnte of the coude blastes of the North wynde. Yet doo the fieldes beare all kyndes of cozne, as wheate and the grayne cauled Siligo, wherof the fynest kynde of breade is made: also mylle and panyke, whiche the Italians caule Melica: Likewyse all kyndes of pulse, as beanes, peason, rares, and suche other. But theyr chife haruest consisteth of hony and waxe, forasmuch as the hole region is replenished with fructfull bees which make most swete hony, not in the husbande mens hyues, but euen in holowe trees. And hereby commeth it to passe that both in the wooddes and shadowed launes, are seene many swarmes of bees hangynge on the

The maryshes of Messtia.  
Volga.  
Ocha.

The sea Euxinum.

The forest of Hircania.  
Uri.  
Alces.

They trauallyd in wynter on sledes.

Causeyes of tymber.

Trees and frutes.

Corne and grayne.

Hony in wodes and trees.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

Lakes or  
pooles of  
hony.

A man almost  
drowned in  
hony.

A maruellous  
chaunce.

Beares feede  
of hony and  
bees.

Beares in-  
uade bulles.

The beares  
hyrth.

the bowes of trees, so that it shall not bee necessarie to caule them together or charme theym with the sounde of basens. There are oftentimes founde greate masses of hony combes, conserued in trees of the owlde hony forsaken of bees, foral: much as the husband men can not steke euery tree in so great and large wooddes: In so much that in the flockes or bodie of excedynge great and holowe trees, are sumtymes founde great pooles or lakes of hony. Demetrius chambelladour of the duke of Moscouia whom he sene to the byshop of Rome not many yeares sence, made relation that a husbände man of the contrey not farre from the place where he remayned, see: kynge in the wooddes for hony, descended into a greate hol: lowe tree full of hony into the which he slypte vp to the brest, and lyued there only with hony for the space of two dayes, caulpyng in wayne for helpe in that deserte of wooddes. And that in fine dyspayrnyng of helpe, he escaped by a maruellous chaunce, beinge drawen owt by a great beare that descended into the tree, with her loynes downeward after the maner of men. For when the man (as present necessitie and oportunitie serued) perceaued the beare to bee within his reache, he suddainly clasped her about the loynes with his armes, and with a terrible crye prouoked the beast to inforce her strength to leape owt of the tree, and therewith to drawe hym owt, as it chaunced in deede.

These regions abound with beares whiche euery where seeke both hony and bees, not only herewith to fyl theyr bel: lies, but also to helpe theyr syght. For theyr eyes are oftentymes dulled, and theyr mouthes wounded of the bees: both which greeces are eased by eatynge of hony. They haue wear: kest heades, as lions haue strongest. In so much that when (beinge therto inforced) they cast theim selues downe heade: longe from any rockes, they couer theyr heades with theyr fiete, and lye for a tyme astonyshed and halfe deade with knockes. They walke sumtyme on two fiete, and spoyle trees backward. Sumtyme also they inuade bulles, & to hange on them with al theyr fiete, that they wey r the with weight. The beare (as sayth Plinie) byyngeth furth her byrth the xxx day and oftentimes two. Theyr byrth is a certeyne whyre masse of flethe withowt forme and little bigger then a mouse withowt eyes, and withowt heare, with onely the nayles or claws

slaves commynge forth. But the damme with continuall  
lyckynge, by litle and litle figurthe the informe byrthe.  
When she entereth into the denne whiche she hath chosen,  
she creepeth thither with her belly vppwarde lesse the place  
shulde bee founde by the steppes of her fiere. And being there  
deliuered of her byrthe, remainethe in the same place for the  
space of. xiiii. dayes immoueable as wyreth Aristoteles. They  
lyue without meate fortye dayes, and for that tyme susteyne  
them selues only by lyckynge and suckynge theyr ryght foote.  
At the lengthe chauncynge to fynde meate, they fyll theym  
selues so full, that they remedy that surfecte by vompte whi-  
che they prouoke by eatynge of antes. Theyr byrthe is op-  
pressed with so heauy a scape for the space of . xiiii. dayes,  
that it can not bee rayled cyther with prickinge or woundes,  
and in the meane tyme growe exceedynge fat. After. xiiii.  
dayes they wake from sleepe, and begyn to licke and sucke  
the soles of theyr fore fiere and lyue thereby for a space: Nor  
yet is it apparent that they liue by any other meate vntyll the  
sprynge tyme of the yere. At whiche tyme begynnynge to  
runne abroad, they feede of the tender buds and younge sprig-  
ges or bzaunches of trees, and other herbes correspondente to  
theyr lyppes.

Before fife hundred yeres, the Moscouites honoured  
the goddes of the gentyles: And then spysie receaued the  
Christian faith when the byshoppes of Grecia began to dis-  
sent from the church of the Latines: and therfore receaued  
the rites of the Greekes. They minister the sacrament with  
fermented breade vnder both kyndes: And thinke that the  
soules of deade menne are not helped with the suffragies of  
preeles, nor yet by the deuotion of theyr frendes or kinsfol-  
kes: Also that the place of Purgatorie is a fable. In the  
tyme of the diuine seruice, the hyatorie of the miracles of  
Christe and the Epistels of saynt Paule are rehearsed out of  
the pulpitte. Beyond Moscouia, are manye people whiche  
they caule Scythians, and are partely subiecte to the Prince  
of Moscouia. These are they which duke Iuan subdued, as  
are the people of Berm, Balkird, Eziremissa, Iuhra, Coze-  
la, and Bermiska. These people were Idolatours before the  
duke compelled theym to bapisme, and appoynted a byshop  
ouer them named Streuen, whom the Barbarians after the  
U v. i. departure

The beares  
denne.

Beares lyue  
without  
meate. xl.  
dayes.

The sleape  
of beares.

The religion  
of the mosco-  
uites.

The Scythi-  
ans subiecte  
to the duke  
of Moscouia.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

departure of the duke, fledde alpine and newe. But the duke returnyng shortly after, afflicted them sore and assigned them a newe byshoppe.

It is here also to bee noted that the olde Cosmograpers sayned that in these regions towarde the North pole, there shuld bee certeyne great mountaynes which they cauled Ripheos & Hyperbozeos, which neuerthelesse are not founde in nature. It is also a fable that the ryuers of Tanais and Motham doo springe out of hygh mountaynes, wheras it is apparent that both these ryuers and many other, haue theyr originall in the playnes.

It was then  
an opinion  
that al riuers  
springe owte  
of mountaines  
The frutefull  
region of Col  
mogora.  
The great ri-  
uer Diuidna.

wheate with  
owt plowing

The ryuer of  
Zuga.  
Utiuga.

Furres.

The naturall  
cause of  
much hony in  
coud regions.  
Summes and  
spices in hot  
countreys.

Floures in  
coudle regions

Nexte to Moscouia, is the frutefull region of Colmogora throught the whiche runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge the greatest that is knowen in the north partes of the world. This ryuer increaseth at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, ouerfloweth the feldes round about, and with abundaunce of fatte moysture, resisteth the couldenesse of the ayer. Wherfore some in the grounde, groweth abundantly without plowynge: and fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, springeth, groweth, and ryppeth with woonderfull celeritie of halpynge nature.

Into the ryuer of Diuidna runneth the ryuer of Zuga: And in the very angle or corner where they meete, is a famous marie towne named Utiuga, beinge a hundred and fyftie myles distant from the chiefe citie of Mosca. To this marie towne from the hygher countreys, are sent the precious furies of marternes, fables, woolues and such other whiche are exchaunged for dyuers other kyndes of wares and marchaundies. Hythero Munsterus.

And forasmuche as many doo maruaile that suche plentie of hony shuld bee in so coole a countrey, I haue thought good to declare the reason and naturall cause hereof. It is therfore to be considered that lyke as spices, gums, & odoriferous frutes are engendered in hot regions by continuall heate durynge al the hole yeare withoute impression of the mortifying qualitie of cold wherby al thynges are constrained as they are dilated by heate, euen so in cold & moyst regions (whose moysture is thinner & more watery then in hot regions) are floures engendered more abundantly as caused by impression of lesse and fainter heate woorkynge in thynne matter

of

of waterythe moisure leste concocte then the matter of gummes and spices and other vinctuous frutes and trees growing in hotte regions. For althoughe (as Gunster saithe here before) the region of Molcouia beareth nother vines or oliues, or any other frutes of sweete sauoure by reason of the coulde-nesse therof, neuerthelste forasmuch as floures (wherof hony is chiefly gathered) may in sommer season growe abundantly in the playnes, marysshes, and wooddes, not onely on the grownde but also on trees in coulde regions, it is agreeable to good reason that great plentie of honye shulde bee in suche regions as abounde with floures, which are brought furthe with the fyrst degree of heate and fyrst approach of the sonne, as appeareth in the spryng tyme not onely by the springinge of floures in fyeldes and gardeynes, but also of blossomes of trees spryngyng before the leaues or frute, as the lyghter and thynner matter fyrste drawne owte with the loweste and leaste degree of heate, as the lyke is seene in the arte of syllynge wherby all thynne and lyght moystures are lyfted vp by the fyrst degree of the fyre: and the heupest and thickest moystures are drawne out with more vehement fyre. As we may therfore in this case compare the generation of floures to the heate of May, the generation of gummes to the heate of June and spices to the heate of July. Euen so in suche coulde regions whose sommer agreeth rather with the temperate heate and moysture of May then with the extreme heate of the other monethes, that heate is more apt to byngne forth abundance of floures as thynge caused by moderate heate, as playnely appeareth by theyr tast and sauoure in which is no sharpe qualitie of heate eyther byrnyng the tongue or offendyng the head as is in spices, gummes, and frutes of hotte regions. And as in cold and playne regions, moderate heate with abundance of moisure, are causes of the generation of floures (as I haue sayde) so lykelyse the length of the dayes and hottnesse and warmeneste of the nyghtes in sommer season in suche coulde regions, is a greate helpe herunto. Cardanus wytteth in his booke *De Plantis*, that bryamble & fearne growe not but in coulde regions, as dooth wheate in temperate regions. And that spices and hotte seedes, can not growe in coulde regions, forasmuch as beinge of thynne substaunce, they shalde soone be mortified & extinct by excessive cold, for (as he sayth) nothing

floures of  
trees.

Blossomes  
of trees.

An exemple  
of the de-  
grees of  
heate.

The genera-  
tion of floures  
by moderate  
heate.

Longe dayes  
and shorte  
nyghtes.

Bryamble and  
ferne.

Spices.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

The sauour  
of floures.

What plinie  
wryteth of  
hony.

Serino is o-  
therwyse cau-  
led Camicula,  
this is the  
dogge, of  
whom the ca-  
micular dogges  
haue theyr  
name.

What is hony

howe hony  
is corrupted.

Hony of great  
quantitie in  
North regies

can concocte, rype, and attenuate the substance of frutes w<sup>th</sup> out the helpe of a<sup>y</sup>er agreeable to the natures of such thynges as are brought forth in the same, althowgh it may doo this in rootes. But in maner all floures are of sweete sauour, for as much as the moysture that is in them, being thynne and but lytle, is by meane heate soone and easely concocte or made rype. Such also as are soone rype, are soone rotten according to the prouerbe.

Plinie, althowgh in the. xi. booke of his naturall hystorie. Cap. viii. he wryteth that hony is gathered of the floures of all trees and settes or plantes, except sozell and the herbe cauled *Chenopode* (whiche some caule goose foote) yet he affirmeth that it descendeth from the a<sup>y</sup>er: for in the. xii. chapyt<sup>r</sup> of the same booke, he wryteth thus.

Thus doommeth from the a<sup>y</sup>er at the rysynge of certeyne starrs, and especially at the rysynge of *Sirius*, and not before the rysynge of *Vergilike* (whiche are the seven starrs cauled *Pleades*) in the sprynge of the day. For then at the moornyng sprynge, the leaues of trees are founde moist with a fat dewe: In so much that such as haue bynne abrode vnder the firmamente at that tyme, haue theyr apparell annoynted with lyquoure and the heate of theyr headde clammy. And whether this bee the sweete of heauen, or as it were a certeyne sperryt of the starrs, eyther the iuise of the a<sup>y</sup>er pourgyng it selfe, I wolde it were pure, liquide, and simple of his owne nature as it fyssh fauleth from aboue. But nowe descendyng so far, and infested not only with such vnclene vapoures and exhalations, as it mereth w<sup>th</sup> by the way, but afterward also corrupted by the leaues of trees, herbes, and floures of sundrye tastes and qualities, and lykewyse aswel in stomackes of the bees (for they vomite it at theyr mouthes) as also by longe restyng the same in hynes, it neuerthelesse receynerh a great parte of the heauenly nature. &c. Ageyne in the. xiii. chapyt<sup>r</sup> of the same booke, he wryteth that in certeyne regions toward the north, as in sum places of *Germanie*, hony is found in such quantitie that there haue bynne seene hony combes of eyght foote longe, and blacke in the holowe parte. By the whiche woordes of Plinie, and by the principles of naturall philosophie, it dooth appere that abundaunce of hony shulde chiefly bee engendered in such regions where the heate of

Sonnus

Sommer is temperate and continuall as well by nyght as by day as it is not in hotte regions where the nyghtes be longe and coulde as is declared in the Decades. For lyke as suche thynges as are tynd by continuall heats, mouynge, and circulation, are hyndered by refrigeration or coulde (as appereth in the art of syllynge and hatchynge of egges) euen so by the action of temperate and continuall heate without interposition of contrarie and mortifyinge qualitie, crude thynges are in shorte tyme made rype, sower made sweete, thicke made thinne, heauie made lyght, grosse made subyle, harde made softe, deade made luyng, and in fine bodies made spirites, as manifestly appeareth in the marueylous woork of dygestion of luyng beastes, wherby the finest part of theyr nutriment is turned into bludde, and the finest of that bludde conuerted into spirites, as the like is also seene in the nuryshment of trees, plantes, and herbes, and all other thynges that growe on the ground, all whiche are moued, digested, subtiliate, attenuate, ryped, and made sweete by the action of this continuall heate wherof I haue spoken. To conclude therefore, if hony bee eyther the sweete of the starres, or the wyse engendered of subyle and fine vapoures rysinge frome the earth, and concocte or digested in the ayer by the sayd continuall and moderate heate, it may seme by good reason that the same shulde bee engendered in sommer season more abundantly in coulde regions then in hot, for the causes aforesayd. And that it may by autoritie and reason more manifestlye appeare both that the heate of sommer in coulde regions is continual (as I haue sayd) and also that the coulde in wynter is not there so intollerable to thynghabitauntes of those regions as other doo thynke, I haue thought good for the better declaration hereof to adde herunto what I haue gathered out of the booke of Zigelus wyrtten of the north regions,

hot nyghtes  
in coulde regions.

A similitude.

Natural heat  
dooth subyle  
and digest all  
thynges.

Subyle Vapours  
digest  
by heate

Could regions

Zigelus.

Of

**O**f the North regions and of the moderate and continuall  
 heate in coulde regions aswell in the nyght as in the  
 day in soomer season: Also howe those regi-  
 ons are habitable to thynhabitauntes of  
 the same, contrary to thoppinion  
 of the owlde wyrters.

iglerus.



**I**f this matter, ziglerus in his booke of the  
 North regions in the description of Scandia  
 wyrteth as foloweth.

Wee wyll intreate of this matter, not as  
 puttynge the same in question as byd the owlde  
 wyrters, nor gatherynge iudgement deducted  
 of reasons in way of argument, forasmuch as wee are alredy  
 moze certeyne by hystorie that these coulde regions are inhabi-  
 ted. Wee wyll fyrst therfore shewe by naturall reason and by  
 consideration of the sphere, declare how by the helpe of man  
 and arte, coulde regions are inhabited withowt damage or  
 destruction of lpyunge beastes: And wyll fyrste speake of the  
 qualitie of sommer, declarynge howe it is there augmented  
 yet intende I not to comprehend all that maye bee sayde in  
 this matter, but only rehearse such reasons and similitudes  
 as are most apparent and easy to bee vnderstoode.

The qualitie  
 of soomer in  
 coulde regions.

The course  
 of the sonne.

Vapours.

Short and  
 warme  
 nyghtes.

Scythlande

In such regions therfore, as are extended from the burne  
 line or Equinoctiall toward the north, as much as the sonne  
 rysethe hygher ouer theim, so muche are they the moze burnte  
 with heate, as Affrica, bycause it ryseth hygher ouer them as  
 they are nearest to the Equinoctiall: and tarynge with theim  
 so much the shorter time causeth shorter days, with longer &  
 colder nyghtes to restore the damage of the day past by reaso-  
 of the moisture consumed by vapour. But in such regions ouer  
 the which the sonne ryseth lower (as in Sarmatia) it remay-  
 neth there the longer in the day, and causeth so much the shorter  
 and warmer nyghtes, as receyvinge warme vapours of  
 the day past, which vapours helpe the woork of the day. I  
 speake as I haue founde by experience, saythe Upsalensis.  
 For I haue felt the sommer nyghtes scarcely tollerable for  
 heate in Scythlande, whereas I felte them coulde in Rome.  
 This benefite of thincrease of the day, doth augment so much  
 the moze in coulde regions as they are nearer the poles: and  
 ceaseth

ceaceth not buttill it coome directly ouer the center or poynte of the ares or arceltree of the worlde, where the sonne beinge at the hygheft in sommer, is eleuate aboūt .xliiii. degrees: In which regions, one continual day consisteth of. vi. monethes from the sprynge tyme by the standynge of the soonne (cauled Solstitium) in the signe of Cancer to Autumne. The soonne therfore, withowt any offence of the night, gyuerth his influence vppon those landes with heate that neuer ceaseth duringe that tyme, which maketh to the great increase of sommer by reason of continuance. We haue now therfore thought good to gather by a certeyne coniecture howe greatly wee thinke the sommer to bee increased hereby.

One day of. vi. monethes.

howe the sommer is increased in cold regions.

Wee haue before declared howe hyghe the soonne is eleuate ouer the regions that are vnder the poles at the staye of the soonne: And so manye partes is it eleuate in Rome at the stay of the soonne in wynter (that is) at the shortest day in the yeaere. But here, in the mydde wynter, the soonne at noone tyme is beneficiall, and byngeth forth floures, roses, and ieflourcs. I haue gathered sum in wynter in the moneth of December, not procured at home by humane arte, but growinge in open gardenes in maner in euery bedde vnder the bare heauen, brought forth only by the soonne. But this beniginitie of the soonne, continueth not past fiue houres in the natural day, forasmuch as the operation therof is extinct by the couldebess of the nyght folowynge. But if this benefite myght bee receaued withowt hinderance of the nyght, as it is vnder the poles, and so continue many monethes in hot regions vnto winter, it shulde suerlye bynge forth manye wonderfull thynges, if moysture fayled not. And by this condition thus propounded, wee may well conceaue that the Romane winter, althowgh it be not hotte, yet to be equal in heate to the full sprynge tyme in the same citie duringe the tyme of the sayde fiue houres. And thus by a similitude of the height of the soonne vnder both places, and of the known qualitie of the Romane heauen, and by the access of the soonne to such places where the longest day continueth certeyne monethes, wee maye gather that sommer in places vnder the pole, is lyke vnto and equall with the full Romane sprynge.

Rome.

Could nyghtes in hot regions.

The Romans wynter.

But the more difficulte question, is of the tyme of the. vi. monethes in the which the soonne leaueth those regions, and

One nyght of. vi. monethes.

## Of the north regions.

**Obiections.**

and goeth by the contrarie or ouerthwarte circle towarde the South in wynter. For they say that at that tyme, those regions are deformed with horrible darkenesse and nyghtes not increased, which may bee the cause that beastes can not seeke theyr foode. And that also the coulde shulde then bee intollerable: by which double euyls all thynges constrained shulde dye, so that no beaste were able to abyde thiniuries of wynter and famen insuinge therof: but that all beastes shulde perishe before the sommer folowynge, when they shulde bringe furth theyr broode or succession: And that for these causes, the sayde coulde clime shulde bee perpetually desolate and uninhabitable. To al which obiections, we answere in this maner

**The twy-  
lyghtes.**

**The lyght  
of the moone.**

**The myght  
vnder the  
pole.**

**A demonstra-  
tion.**

As touchynge the nyghtes not increased, I saye, that it was not conuenient to assume that for any reason. For not as the soonne fauleth, so suddely commeth the darke nyght but that the euenynge dooth substitute and prolonge the day longe after, as also the day spyngge or dawnyngge of the daye gyueth a certeyne lyght before the rysynge of the soonne: After the whiche, the residue of the nyght that receaueth no lyght by the sayde euenynge and moornyng twilightes, is accomplished by the lyght of the moone, so that the nyghtes are seldome vnaugmented. Let this bee an exemple proued by owre temperate regions, wherby we may vnderstande the condition of the nyght vnder the pole. Wherefore euen there also the twilightes helpe the nyght a longe tyme, as we wyl moze presently demonstrate. It is approued by the Astronomers, that the soonne descendynge from the highest halfe sphere by xliiii. paralels of the vnder horizon, makethe an ende of the twilight, so that at the lengthe the darke nyght succedeth: And that the soonne approachynge, and rysynge aboue the hyghest halfe sphere by as many paralels, dooth dimynishe the nyght and increase the twylyght. Ageyne, by the position or placinge of the sphere vnder the pole, the same is the horizontall that is the Equinoctiall. Those paralelles therefore that are paralels to the horizontal line, are also paralels to the Equinoctiall. So that the soonne descendynge there vnder the horizon, dooth not byynge darke nyghtes to those regions butyll it coomme to the paralele distant, xliiii. partes from the Equinoctiall,

**Other**

Other demonstrations hercof are made by certeyne fygures of Astronomie, whiche I wolde haue added hereunto but that I coulde not gette the same grauen or cutte.

Durynge the tyme of these sayde syxe moonethes of darke- nesse vnder the pole, the nyght is destitute of the benefite of the soonne and the sayde twylyghthes, onely for the space of thre moonethes, in the whiche the soonne goeth and retur- neth by the portion of the ouerthwart circle. But yet neyther this tyme of thre moonethes is withowt remedy frome hear- nen. For the moone with her full globe increased in lyghte, hath accesse at that tyme, and illuminateth the moonethes lackynge lyght, euery one by them selues, halfe the course of the moonethe: by whose benefite it commeth to passe that the night, named as vnaugmented, possesseth those regions no longer then one mooneth and a halfe, neyther that contri- nually or al at one tyme: but this also diuided into thre sortes of shorter nyghtes, of the whiche euery one endureth for the space of twoo weekes, and are illuminate of the moone accor- dyngly. And this is the reason conceaued of the poure of the sphere wherby we testifie that the sommers and nyghtes vnder the pole, are tollerable to lyuynge beastes.

But wee wyl not declare by other remedies of nature and arte, that this coulde so greatly feared, is moze remitte & tollerable then othere opinion: so that compared to the nature of such beastes as liue there, it may bee abydden. And there is no doubt but there are auncours of moze antiquitie then that age in the which any thyng was exactly knowen or disco- uered of the north regions. The owlde wyters therfore per- suaded onely by naked coniecture, dydde gather what they myght determine of those places: Or rather by the estimati- on of heauen, the which, bycause they felte it to bee hardely tollerable to them selues, and lesse to men borne in the clyme of Egypte and Brecia, tooke thetby an argument of the hole habitable earth. The hy storie of Strabo is knowen, that a porce of brasse which was broken in sunder with frosen wa- ter, was brought from Pontus and shewed in Delphis in to- ken of a greuous wynter. Here therfore, they that so great- ly feared the winter (such as chaunceth to the earth vnder the xliiii. paralele) and therfore consecrated that broken pot to the temple of Apollo, what coulde such men truly define vpon regions so farre withowt that paralele, whether they

xxx. i,

were

The moone,

Remedies of  
nature & art.

The owlde  
wyters per-  
suaded by  
coniecture.

A brassen pot  
broken wuh  
frost.

## Of the north regions.

**Spithes of  
the North  
seas.**

**The North  
sea.**

**The qualitie  
of water.**

**The lande**

**The diuine  
providence in  
moderatynge  
the elements**

were inhabited or not? But such as folowed these, being contented with thinuocations of the olde autours, and borne in maner vnder the same qualitie of heauen, persisted wyllynge-ly in the same opinion, with more confidence then considera-  
tion of the thynges wherof wee nowe intreate: so lyghly was that opinion receaued as touching the inhabitable clime vnder the poles. But we with better confidence and faith (forasmuch as we are not instructed with conjectures) intend to stande ageynst the sentence of the olde autours: Affirming the north regions within the coulde clime to bee inhabited with hearynges, coddres, haddockes, and brettres, tunnyes, and other great spithes, with thynfinite number wherof, tables are furnyshed through a great parte of Europe: Al thogh they are taken in the north sea extended beyonde our knowe-  
ledge. This sea at certeyne tymes of the yeare, poureth furth his plentifulnesse, or rather dyspueth furth his increase to seke newe mansions, and are here taken in theyr passage. Fur-  
thermore also, even the mouthes of the river of Ayber receaue a spith as a newe gost sent from the north sea. This swamme theyle through Fraunce and thwile through Spayne: Quere passed the Ligurian and Tuscan sea to communicate her selfe to the cite of Rome. The lakes also and ryuers of those re-  
gions are replenyshed with spith. In so much that no poure of coulde is able to extinguysh the thyncrease of the yeare folow-  
inge, and the succession reparable so many hundred yeares. And I playnely thinke, that yf it shulde of necessity folowe, that one of these two elements, the earthe and the water, shulde be destructive to lyuynge creatures, the water shulde chiefly haue wrought this effect. But this is founde so trac-  
table, that in the deepe wynter, both that increase is brought furth, and spithynge is also exercised. The lande is lykwise inhabited with lyke plentifulnesse. But that we wander not to farre: Let the sayth hereof rest in the exposition folowynge, wherein we intend to declare howe by the poure of nature and industry of man, this commoditie may cooime to passe. Ther-  
fore as touchynge nature, wee suppose that the diuine prou-  
dence hath made nothyng uncommunicable, but to haue gy-  
uen such order to all thynges wherby euery thyng maye bee tollerable to the nexte. The extremities of the elements con-  
sent with theyr nexte. The ayer is grosse abowt the earth and  
water:

Water: But thinne and hotte abowt the fyre. By this prouidence of nature, the uttermost sea is very salte. And salte (as wyntereth Plinie) yeldeth the fatnesse of oyle. But oyle, by a certeyne natue heate, is of properie agreable to fyre. The sea then, beinge all of such qualitie, pouereth furth it selfe far bppon the extreme landes, wherby by reason of the salteneſſe therof, it moneth and ſtereth by generatiue heate, as by fatnesſe it nuryſheth the fecunditie of thynges generate. It gynneth this fruitfulnes to the earth at certeyne fluds, although the earth alſo it ſelfe, haue in his inner bowels the ſame line: ly and nuryſhthyng heate, wherby not only the venues, caues and holowe places, but alſo ſpynges of water are made warme: And this ſo much the more, in howe muche the wynter is more vehement. This thyng dooth more appere by this exemple, that the mountaynes of Norway and Suchlande are fruitful of metals, in the which, ſyluer and copper are concocted and molten into veynes, which can ſcarſely bee doctine in fornares. By this reaſon alſo, the vapours and hotte exhalations perceringe the earthe and the waters, and throughte both thoſe natures breathyng furth into the ayer, tempereth the qualitie of heauen and maketh it tollerable to beaſtes, as wyntereth the huge byggeneſſe of the whales in thoſe ſeas, with the ſtrength of bodie and longe lyfe of ſuche beaſtes as liue on the lande: whiche thyng coude not bee, excepte all thynges were there commodiouſly nuryſhed by the benefite of the heauen and the ayer. For nothyng that in the tyme of increaſe is hyndered by any iniurie, or that is euilly fedde all the tyme it lyueth, can proſper well. Neyther are ſuch thynges as lyue there, offended with theyr naturall wynter as thowgh an Egyptian or Ethiopian were ſuddeynly conueyed into thoſe coulde regions. For they were in longe tyme by lyttle and lyttle broughte fyrſt acquainted with the nature of that heauen, as may be proued both by the lyfe of man and by the hystorie of holy ſcripture. They that were led from Aſſyria, Sophtania, and that famous towne of Babilon toward the north partes of the worlde in the fyrſt diſperſion of nations, dyd not immediatly paſſe to the extreme boundes, but planted theyr habitations fyrſt vnder a myddle heaue betwene both, as in Thracia and Pontus, where theyr poſteritie was accustomed the better to ſuſteyne the rygoure of Scythia and Tanais

The nature of the ſea.

Salte.

Generatiue heate.

Owtwarde couldis cauſe of inwards heate.

Metals.

vapours and exhalations.

whales.

Beaſtes.

herby maye bee conſidered the cauſe of the deathe of our men that ſayle directly to Syria.

No paſſage from one extreme to another but by a meane.

## Of the north regions.

Caves and  
dennes.

Valleys.

The best  
furies.  
Sables.

Beastes that  
lye hyd in  
wynter.

All beastes  
haue the na-  
ture of the  
place where  
they are en-  
gendered.

nais, as he: at cometh from winter to somer, maye the better after abyde He and snowe beinge fyrst hardened ther: to by the frostes of Autumne. In lyke maner mortall men, accustomed to beare the hardeneste of places nexte vnto theym, were therby at the length more confirmed to susteyne the extremes. And here also, if any sharpenesse remaine that maye seeme intollerable, nature hath prouyded for the same with other remedies. For the lande and sea, hath gyuen vnto beastes, deepe and large caves, dennes, and other holowe places and secrete corners in mountaynes and rockes bothe on the lande and by the sea bankes, in the which are euer conteyned warme vapoures so much the more intent and vehement, in howe much they are the more constrained by extreme cold. Nature hath also gyuen valleys diuerced and defended frome the north wyndes. Shee hath lykewise couered beastes with haire so much the thicker in howe much the vehemencie of cold is greater: by reason wherof the best and rycheest furies are broughte frome those regions, as Sables whose price is growne to great excele nexte vnto gold and precious stones, and are esteemed princely ornaments. The beastes that beare these furies, are hunted chiefly in wynter (which thyng is more straunge) because they haire is thenne thicker and cleueth faster to the skyn. Howe greuous then shall we thinke the winter to bee there where this lytle beast lyueth so well, and where the hunters may search the dennes and hauntes of such beastes throwghe the wooddes and snowe? But suche beastes the condition of whose bodies is so tender that they are not able to abyde thiniurie of coulde, eyther lye hydde in wynter, or chaunge theyr habitation, as do certeyne beastes also in owre clime. Nature hath furthermore gyuen remedie to man bothe by arte and industry to defende him selfe both a brode and at home. Abrode, with a thicke vesture, and the same well dowbeled. At home, with large fyres on hartches, chymneys, and in stoues for the day, with close chambers, and couches, softe and warme beddes for the nyght: by which the remedies they mitigate the winters which seeme vigorous to strangers, althowghe they are to inhabitauntes more tollerable then owre opinion, as in deede by the fyrst natural mixture or composition of theyr bodies, such thinges are agreeable to them as seeme very harde to other. The lion in Affrike  
and

and the beare in Sarmatia, are fiercer as in theyr presente strength and vigour: but translated into a contrary heauen, are of lesse strength and courage. The foule cauled Ciconia (which some thinke to bee the Horke) dooth not tary the winter: yet doo the cranes coo mine at that tyme.

The Scythian wyll accuse the Romane heauen as inducinge fevers, wheras neuertheles there is none more holloome. Such as haue byn tenderly brought vp, if they coo mine suddently in to the campe, can not away with hunger, watchynge, heate, passages throwgh ryuers, battayles, sieges, and assaults. But the old soldier exercised in the warres, heeth these as meditations of the fildes, as hardened thereto by longe experience. He that hath byn accustomed to the hardshipp of the citie, and wyll attempte the sayinge of the poet Virgil, *Nudus aris, sero nudus*, that is, naked and bare withowt house & home, shall to his perell make an ende of the verse, *Libello figura ferrea* (that is) he shall haue the coulde ague. Suchethynges therfore as seeme harde vnto vs, beinge accustomed by litle and litle, becomme more tollerable: In so much that this exercise of suferance by such degrees, dooth oftentimes grow to prodigious effectes faere beyonde owre expectation. And thus wee seeme to haue made sufficient demonstration, by heauen, nature, and arte, wherby it may appere that no part of the lande or sea is denyed to luyng creatures. The reader may also perceaue how large matter of reasons and examples may bee opened, for the declaringe of owre opinion wherewith we rest. Let therfore thauthoritie of the ancient authors gyue place, and the consent of the newe wyriters agree to this history, not as nowe at the length comprehended. Whereas before many hundreth yeares Germanie and Scandia had entercourse of marchandises not severed by the large goulfe of Bothnia, but as nowe by owre commentaries brought to light. And hauing sayde thus much in manner of a preface, we wyll nowe procede to wyte of the north regions.

## ¶ Schondia.

Schondia, Schondania, or Schondenmarchia, is as much to say as sayre Dania or sayre Denmarke. Plinie in one place, nameth it Scandia, and in an other, Scandunavia if there bee no faute in the exemplers,

what erer:  
cise may doo.

cise maketh  
masteries.

Scandia.

Scone, is  
sayre in the  
duch roonge.

## Of the north regions.

The fertilitie  
of Scandia.

He meaneth  
Diodorus Si-  
culus.

Thinuations  
of the Gothes

Transilvania

It was named Schondia, by reason of the fayrenesse and frute-  
fulnesse therof. And this aswell for that in beneficiall hea-  
uen, fertilitie of grownde, commoditie of hauens and marre  
townes, abundaunce of ryuers and spythe, plentie of beastes,  
great quantitie of metall, as golde, syluer, copper, and leade,  
diligent culturyng the grounde, with townes and cities wel  
inhabited and gouerned by ciuile lawes, it gyueth the place to  
none other fortunate region. This was in maner vnknown  
to the owlde Greekes and Latins as may appeare by this ar-  
gumente that with one consente they affirmed that in these  
north regions the cold zone or cline, was condemned to per-  
petuall snowe, intollerable to all lyuing creatures. For few  
of the haue made mention herof as to be inhabited. Amonge  
whom Plinie as one of the chiefe, sayth in his fourth booke,  
that Schondania is of vnknewen byggenesse: and only that  
portion therof to be known which is inhabited with the na-  
tion of the Hilleuones in fiftie byllages. Neither yet is Eni-  
gia lesse in opinion. Other more auncient then Plinie, haue  
placed most fortunate regions, with men of longe lyfe (whi-  
che the Greekes caule *Macrobios*) and of mosse innocent beha-  
uour vnder the tracte of those landes: and that there came  
from thence to Delphos, cerreyne religious virginnes with  
holmes and gyftes consecrated to Apollo: And furthermore  
that that nation obserued this institution vntyll the sayde  
virgins were violatod of them of whome they were receaued  
as straungers. These are most cleare testimonies of Antiqui-  
tie, both of the greatnesse of Schondia, and the people that  
inhabite the same, althowgh they were sence vnknewen, as  
lyke as the Gothes departyng from these north landes al-  
thowgh they obteyned. The empire of the regions aboue the  
marillhes of Aeoris and the coastes of the sea Euxinus, with  
the realme of Denmarke (wherof that is thought to bee a por-  
tion which is nowe cauled Transilvania) and the bankes of  
the ryuer of Danubius, and in fine invaded the Romane Em-  
pire, yet were not the regions wel known from whence they  
tooke theyr originall. Therefore lyke as parte of the owlde  
wyriters are vn sufficient to certifie of othere narrati-  
ons as touchyng these landes vnknewen to them, Euen so  
the other parte which excluded the same as vnhabitable, are  
so bee conuincid lesse theyr autopitic beinge admitted, shuld  
engender

enge under opinions not agreeable or conuenient to the nature of places. Sigismundus Liberus, in his commentaries of Moscouia, writeth thus. Scandia or Scandia, is no Island (as some haue thought) but parte of the continent or firme lande of Sueria, which by a longe tracte reacheth to Bothe lande: And that nowe the kynge of Denmarke possesseth a great parte therof. But whereas the writers of these thinges haue made Scandia greater then Suetia, & that the Bothes and Lumbardes came frome thence, they seeme in my opinion to comprehend these three kyngdomes as it were in one body, only vnder the name of Scandia, forasmuch as then, that parte of lande that lyeth betwene the sea Baltheum (whiche floweth by the coastes of Finlandia) and the frozen sea, was unknowne: And that by reason of so many marishes, innumerable ryuers, and intemperatnesse of heauen, it is yet rude vncultured, and lyttle knowne. Which thyng hath byn the cause that summe iudged all that was cauled by the name of Scandia, to bee one great Islande.

The Bothes  
and Lumbardes.

## C Gronlande.

**G**ronlande is interpreted greene lande: so cauled for the great increase and frutesfulnesse of pasture. By reason wherof, what great plentie of cattayle there is, it may hereby appere that at such tyme as wyppes may passe thither they set furth great heapes of cheese and butter to bee sould; wherby wee coniecture that the lande is not rough with barren mountaynes. It hath two Cathedrall Churches vnder thordinariation of Aldesia. To one of these, was of late yeares a byshop appoynted onely by the tittle of a suffragane in consideration that while the metropolitane dooth neglect the direction of religion for the distance of the place and difficult nauigation, the people is in maner faulne to gentilitie, beinge of them selfe of mouable wyttes and giuen to magical artes. For it is sayde that they (as also the people of Lapontia) doo rayle tempestes on the sea with magical inchauntmentes, and bynge such wyppes into daunger as they intende to spoile. They vse lyttle wyppes made of lether, and ase ageynste the brusinge of the sea and rockes, and with them assaile ether wyppes. Peter Martyr of Angleria, writeth in his Decades

frutesfull  
pasture.

Religion neglected.

Inchaunters

of

The vyage  
of Sebastian  
Cabote to the  
frozen sea.

Gronlande.

wardhus.

Lapponia &  
Gronlande.

Schoeni.

Cabote tould  
me that this  
Ile is of  
freshe wa-  
ter, and not  
of the sea.

A commixtio  
of salt water  
and freshe.

The sea be-  
twene Nor-  
way and Is-  
lande.

Terra Viridis.

of the Spanishe navigations, that Sebastian Cabote sayling from Englande continually towarde the north, folowed that course so farre that he chaunced vpon greate flakes of Ise in the mooneth of July: and that diuertynge from thence, he folowed the coaste by the shore bendynge towarde the South vntyl he came to the cline of the Ilande of Hispaniola aboue Cuba, an Iland of the Canibales. Which narracion hath giuen me occasion to extende Gronlande beyonde the promontory or cape of Huitlarch to the continente or firme lande of Lapponia aboue the castell of Wardhus: which chynge I did the rather for that the reuerende Archebysshoppe of Midzotlia, constantly affirmed that the sea bendeth there into the forme of a crooked elbowe. It agreeth herewith also, that the Lapotes consent with them in the lyke magical practises and doo neyther imbrace the Christian religion nor refuse it: wherby I haue thought this lykenesse of customes to bee betwene them because they toyne togyther in one continent. The distance lyke wyse, seemeth not to disagree, for betwene both these people, the distance is not full twoo hundredeth Schoeni, euery one being a space of grounde containing, lx. furlonges, which make. vii. myles and a halfe. It furthermore agreeth with this coniecture that Cabote chaunced into such Ise. And albeit as touchynge the mooneth of July, I wyll contend it is not well reherfed, no althowghe he had sayled vnder the pole, for such reasons as wee haue declared before to the contrary: neuerthelesse, that at sum tyme he sayled by Ise, this testifieth in that he sayled not by the mayne sea, but in places nere vnto the lande comprehending and imbrasyng the sea in forme of a goulfe, wheras for the same cause, the goulfe of Borghland is frozen because it is streyght & narrow, in the whiche also the lyttle quantitie of salt water is ouercome by the abundance of freshe water of many and greate ryuers that faule into the goulfe. But betwene Norwaye and Ilande, the sea is not frozen for the contrary cause, forasmuch as the poure of freshe water is there ouercome of the abundance of the salte water. There is a fame (but of vncerteyne autoritie) that the Spanyardes sayle at this presente to Gronlande, and to an other lande which they caule Terra viridis, that is, the greene lande, byingynge from thence suche wares as are founde in Gronlande. Towarde the north, it reacheth to the  
unknown

unknowne lande vnder the pole, from whence also the cheues  
and robbers of the Wigmei come into this lande. Whiche  
is an argument that the regions vnder the pole are inhabited  
and almost enuironed with the sea, as are they whiche the  
Cosmographers caule Thersonnelli or Peninsula (that is) also  
most Ilandes.

The description of Gronlande.

The description of the East Iyde whiche lyeth  
towards Norway.

Wardhus castell.	54.	70.	30.
Towards the North.	53.	30.	71.
The first extention.	40.	71.	30.
The seconde extention.	28.	72.	40.
Witsfarch, promont.	22.	67.	
The extention.	5.	61.	45.

It is continued from thence by the coastes of the lande of Baccallaos.

Towards the west and north, it is terminated with an unknowne  
ende of landes and seas.

## Ilande.

Ilande is interpreted the lande of Ise, and is cauled of  
the owlde mytters Thyle. It is extended betwene the  
south and the north almost two hundred schoenes in lon-  
gitude. It is for the most part full of mountaynes and un-  
cultured. But in the playnes it hath suche frutefull pastures,  
that they are sayne sumtymes to dyue the beastes from their  
feedynge lest they shulde bee suffocate with so much fatnes.  
This Ilande is famous by the strange miracles of nature, of  
the which Sars Grammaticus in his hystorie of Denmarke,  
and Plinius Bothus in his description of the north landes,  
doe make mention. There are in it thre mountaynes of mar-  
ueylous height the toppes whereof are covered with perpe-  
tuall snowe. But the nether partes of them, are of lyke na-  
ture to the mountayne Etna in the Ilande of Sicilie boyl-  
ing with continuall flames of fyre and castynge furth bymstone.  
One of these is named Helga, and the other Mons Crucis (that  
is) the mounte of the crosse. The thyrde is named Becla:  
whose flames neyther consume flaxe or towne, matters moste  
apt to take fyre, nor yet are quenched with water. And with

Ilande can-  
led Thyle.

Schoeni is  
lx. furlonges.

miracles of  
nature in  
Ilande.

Three marue-  
lous mount-  
taynes.

helgate,  
hecia.

## Of the north regions.

**Strange Vi-  
sions,**

**Ile.**

**Purgatory.**

**A strange  
thyng.**

**Four Springs  
of contrary  
nature.**

**Abundaunce  
of brimstone.  
Dyed fyre**

**Scarfeness of  
corne.**

lyke force as the shotte of great artillerie is driven furth by violence of fyre, euen so by the commixtion and repugnance of fyre, coulde, and brimstone, greate stones are here throwne into the ayer. Here vnto these mountaynes are thre chynkes or open places in the earthe of honge byggennesse and suche depth (especially at the mounte Hecla) that no syght can attayne therto. But to such as looke into them, there fyrt appere men as thowgh they were drowned and yet breathyng furth theyr soules: who beinge exhorted by theyr frendes to resorte to theyr owne, they aunswere with moornyng voyce and greuous syghes, that they must departe frome thense to the mount Hecla, and therewith suddely vanysh the oore of syght. The floweth abowt the Ilande for the space of seuen or eyght moonethes, makynge by runnyng together a certeyn miserable waylinge and gronyng noyse not vnlyke the voyce of man. The inhabitants thynke, that in this Ile & the mounte Hecla, are the places where the euill soules of theyr people are tormented. If any man take a greate portiz or of this Ile, and kepe it as diligently as may bee in a close vessel or cofer, the same dooth so vanysh at the tyme when the other Ile abowt the Ilande dissoluerth, that not so much as one droppe of water or Ile can therof bee founde.

Not farre from these mountaynes reachyng toward the sea coastes, are foure springes of water of moste diuers and contrary nature. The fyrste, by reason of his perpetuall and feruente heate, suddely turneth all bodie that are caste therein, into stones, reseruyng neuerthelesse theyr fyrst forme and shape. The seconde, is of intollecable coulde. The thyrde is sweeter then hony, and most pleasaunte to quench the thyrst. The fourth is playne payson, pestilent, and deadely. There is furthermore in these springes suche abundaunce of brimstone, that a thousande pounde weight thereof is bought for lytle, as for the tenth parte of a ducate. Theyr chiefe wares, are dyed fyre, as soles, maydens, playces, salpas stockes, and such other which they exchange for wheat and such other thynges as are brought thither from Lubbeck Hamborow, and Amsterdam. For they haue oftentimes such scarfenesse of corne, that they vse dyed fyre in the steade of breade, althowgh in sommer the Ilande so dooryeth with greene and fructfull meadowes, that they are sayne sometimes to

to dyue theyr beastes from pasture leaste they shulde suffocate  
for to much fattennesse, as I haue sayde before. They make  
very good butter, and apte to bee bled in matters of physicke.  
There are founde dyuers kindes of good haukes, as faulcons  
gerfalcons, lanners, and sperhaukes. Also rauens, crows,  
beares, hares, and foxes, both whyte and blacke. They haue  
most swyfte horses: and such as runne. xxx. myles continual:  
ly withowt rest or bayte. They haue manye churches: and  
houses buylded of the bones of whales and other greate fyl:  
shes. The navigation is not open to this Ilande but in som:  
mer season: and that only for the space of foure moonethes,  
by reason of the coulede and yle whereby the passage is stop:  
ped. If any stryfe or debate aryse on the sea amonge the ma:  
riners for the commoditie of the haue, the gouernour of the  
place althowgh he haue knowleage therof, yet dooth he not  
pynnysh them, forasmuch as it apperteyneth not to his office  
to decreene such thynges as are doonne on the sea, but only on  
the lande. Shippes are there often tymes in great perell by  
reason of whales and such other monsters of the sea, excepte  
the mariners take good heede and keepe them farre frome the  
shyppes with the noyse of drummes, and emptie barrells cast  
into the sea. There are many mynstrels and other that play  
on instrumentes, with the swete noyse whereof, they vie  
to allure foules and fyshes to theyr nettes and snares. Many  
also, lye luykinge in caues and denues to auoyde the sharpe:  
nesse of coulede, as the Africanes doo the lyke to defend them  
selues from the heate. On the toppe of a certeyne mountayne  
cauled Wepzarch, (lyinge betwene Ilande and Gruntland  
or Bronlande) is erected a hyppmans quadrant of maruillous  
byggenesse, made by two pirates named Wunnigt & Dothorst  
in fauour of such as sayle by those coastes that they may ther  
by auoyde the dangerous places lyinge towarde Bronlande.  
The myddest of the Ilande, 7 30 65 30.  
The cite Harsol, &c. 7 40 60 42.

haukes.

white rauens.

houses of  
whales  
bones.The nauiga:  
tion to Iland

whales.

One thyng  
seruyng for  
contrary viesA shipmans  
quadrant.

## Laponia.

**T**he region of Laponia, was so named of the people that  
inhabite it. For the Germanys, caule all suche La:  
pones, as are simple or vnapt to thynges, This peo:  
ple

## Of the north regions,

People of  
great agilitie.

A strange  
apparell.

The cause of  
an owlede er-  
roure.

So doo the  
Tartars.

Plentie of  
wyld beastes

ple is of smaule stature, and of such agilitie of bodie, that ha-  
uynge theyr quyuers of arrowes gotten to them & theyr bowes  
in theyr handes, they can with a leape, caste them selues  
thorough a circle or hope of the diameter of a cubite. They  
seyght on foote, armed with bowes and arrowes after the  
maner of the Tartars. They are exercised in hurlyng the  
darte and shootynge from theyr youth: in so muche that they  
giue theyr chyldren no meate vntill they hit the marke they  
shoote at, as dyd in owlde tyme thynhabitaunces of the Is-  
landes cauled Balcares. They vse to make theyr apparell  
streight and close to theyr boddies that it hynder not theyr  
woorke. Theyr winter vestures are made of the hole skynnes  
of scales or beates artificially wrought & made supple. These  
they tye with a knote aboue theyr heades, leauynge onely  
two holes open to looke throughe, and haue all the residue of  
theyr bodies couered as though they were cowed in sackes,  
but that this beinge adapted to all partes of theyr bodies, is  
so made for commoditie and not for a punishment as the Ro-  
mans were accustomed to some parricides in sackes of leather  
with a cocke, an ape, and a serpent, and so to hurle them a-  
lyue all togyther into the ryuer of Tyber. And hereby I thinke  
it came to passe that in owlde tyme it was rashely beleued  
that in these regions there were men with rowgh & hery bodies  
wylde beastes, as parte made relation throughe ignorance,  
parte also takynge pleasure in rehearsall of suche thynges as  
are straunge to the hearers. The Lapones defended by this  
arte and industry, go abrode and withstande the sharpenes of  
wynter and the north wyndes, with all the iniuries of hea-  
uen. They haue no houses, but certeyne tabernacles like ten-  
tes or haies wherewith they passe from place to place & change  
theyr mansions. Sum of them liue after the maner of the peo-  
ple of Sarmatia cauled in owlde tyme Amaxobit, which vsed  
waynes in the steade of houses. They are much gyuen to hun-  
tynge: and haue such plentie of wylde beastes that they kylle  
them in maner in euery place. It is not lawfull for a wo-  
man to go furth of the tente at that doore by the whiche her  
husbande wente owte on huntynge the same daye: nor yet to  
touche with her hande any part of the beaste that is taken by  
her

tyll her husbände reache her on the spiere suche a portion of  
 flesh as he thinketh good. They tyll not the grounde. The  
 region nurpeth no kynde of serpentes: yett are there greate  
 and noysoome gnattes. They take spage in greate plentie:  
 by the commoditie wherof, they lyue after the maner of the  
 ethiopians cauled Ichthyophagi. For as these drie they fill he  
 with feruent heate, so doo they dye them with coulde, and  
 grynde or stampe them to powder as smaule as meale or floure  
 They haue such abun-dance of these spages, that they bound  
 great plentie therof in certeyne floze houses to cary them vn-  
 to other landes nere about them, as Moziborthnia & whyte  
 Russia. Theyr shippes are not made with nayles, but are tye  
 togither and made fast with cordes and wythches. With  
 these they sayle by the stoyf ryuers betwene the mountaines  
 of Laponia, beinge naked in sommer that they may the better  
 shynne in the tyme of perell, and gather together such wa-  
 res as are in danger to bee lost by Mithracks. Part of them  
 exercise handicraftes, as imbrotherynge and breapynge of  
 cloth interlaced with golde and syluer. Suche as haue di-  
 uersed any necessary arte, or doo increate and amende thyn-  
 nents of other, are openly honoured, and rewarded with a  
 besture, in the which is imbrothered an argument or token of  
 the thyng they deuised. And this remayneth to the posses-  
 sion of theyr famelic in token of theyr desertes. They frame  
 shippes, buylde houses, and make diuers sortes of householde  
 stuffe artificially, and transporte them to other places nere  
 aboute. They bye and sell bothe for exchange of wares  
 and for money. And this only by consent of both parties with-  
 out communicacion: yett not for lacke of wytt or for rude-  
 nesse of maners, but because they haue a peculiar language  
 vnknoen to theyr boztherers. It is a valiant nation, and  
 lyued longe free, and susteyned the warres of Norwaye and  
 Succia vntill at the length they submitted them selues, and  
 payde eyche furres for theyr tribute. They chose them selues  
 a gouerneur whom they caule a kynge: But the kyng of Suc-  
 cia gyueth hym autoritie and administracion. Neuerthe-  
 lesse, the people in theyr lutes and doubtfull causes, resorte  
 to Succia to haue theyr matters decised,

No serpents.

Great gnats.

Abun-dance  
of sylke.Ships with-  
out nayles.Science ho-  
noured.Bargemynge  
withoute  
woodes.

An

## Of the north regions.

No horses.

A beast of  
marueylous  
strength and  
swyftnesse.

What Schoe-  
nus is. luke  
61 Gronland.

The change  
of the house.

The owld au-  
tours cauled  
all the north  
people Scy-  
thyans.

Erasmus la-  
menteth this  
in his fyrste  
booke de ra-  
tione conciona-  
di, where he  
speaketh of  
the people  
cauled pilapii

In theyr iourneys, they goe not to any Inne, nor yet enter into any house, but lye all nyght vnder the firmament. They haue no horses; but in the steade of them, they take certeyne wild beastes which they caule Reen, beinge of the kinde byggene of a mule, with rough heare lyke an Asse, clouen feete, and branched hornes lyke a hart, but lower and with fewer antlerres. They wyll not abyde to bee rydden. But when they peitrels or drawynge collers are put on them, and they so ioynd to the charriotte or sleade, they runne in the space of. xliii. houres, a hundred and fiftie myles, or. xxx. scho- nos. The whiche space they take to chaunge the horizon thysle: that is thysle to come to the furthest signe or marke that they see a farr off. Whiche doubtesse is a token borth of the marueylous swyftnesse and great strength of these beastes beinge able to continewe runnyng for so great a space, in the meane whyle also spendynge sumtyme in feedynge. I suppose that this thynge was sumewhat knowen to the owld wy- ters, although receaued in maner by an obscure and doubtful fame. For they also wyte that certeyne Scythians doo ryde on hartes.

They neyther folowe the Christian religion, nor yet refuse it or are offended therewith as are the Jewes: but do sum- tymes receaue it fauorably to gratifie the princes to whome they obey. And that no more of them imbrace the Christian fayth, the faulte is sumwhat to bee imputed to the byshoppes and prelates that haue eyther reiected this cure and charge of instructynge the nation, or suffered the faith of Christ to be suffocate euen in the fyrst sprynge. For vnder the pretense of religion, they woulde haue aduanced theyr owne reuenues and overburthened the people by an intollerable exemple, none otherwysle here then in all Christendome, which thynge is doubtesse the cause of moste greuous defections. I harde John a byshoppe of Bohlande say this: We that gouerne the church of Upsalia, and haue vnder owre diocese a great parte of that nation, lyke as it is not conueniente to declare many thynge of owre vigilance and attendaunce ouer the flocke committed to owre charge, euen so absteynyng from myschecuous couerousnesse wherby religion is abused for lu- ker, we doo in all places owre diligent endeour that we mi- nister none occasion wherby this nation as offended by owre synnes

sinnes, maye bee the lesse wyllynge, to embrace the Christian  
 fayth. This is the state of the religion amonge the Lapones:  
 Although of theyr owne institution and custome receaued of  
 theyr prediceours, they are Idolatours, honourynge that  
 luyngge thyng that they meete fyrst in the moornynges, for the  
 god of that daye, and diuynge thereby theyr good lucke or  
 euill. They also erecte images of stone vpon the mountaines,  
 which they esteeme as goddes, attributing to them diuine ho-  
 nour. They solempne mariages, and begynne the same with  
 fyre and fynte, as with a myserie so aptely applied to the  
 image of stone as if it had byn receaued from the myddle of  
 Grecia. For in that they adhibite a myserie to fyre, as they  
 doo not this alone (forasmuche as the Romanes obserued the  
 same custome) euen so are they herein partly to be commended  
 in that they vse the ceremonies of so noble a people. The my-  
 serie of the fynte is no lesse to bee praysed, both forasmuche  
 as this is domesticall philosophie, and hath also a nere affi-  
 nitie and signification to these sonemnies. For as the fynte  
 hath in it fyre luyngge hydde whiche appeareth not but by mo-  
 uynge and force, so is there a secrete lyfe in both kyndes of  
 man and woman whiche by mutuall coniunction, commethe  
 furth to a luyngge byrth. They are furthermore experte in  
 chaunters. They tye three knottes on a strynge hangynge at  
 a whippe. When they lose one of these, they rayse tollerable  
 wyndes. When they lose an other, the wynde is more vehem-  
 ment. But by losynge the thyrde, they rayse playne tempestes  
 as in owlde tyme they were accustomed to rayse thunder and  
 lyghtrynynge. This arte doo they vse ageinst such as sayle by  
 theyr coastes, and stape or moue the ryuers and seas more or  
 lesse as they lyst to shewe fauoure or displeasure. They make  
 also of leade certeyne thozte magicall daries of the quantitie  
 and length of a synger. These they thowne ageynste such of  
 whome they desyre to bee reuenged, to places neuer so farre  
 distant. They are sumtimes so vexed with the canker on their  
 armes or legges that in the space of thre dayes, they dye  
 thirough the vehemencie of the payne. The sonne faileth very  
 litle in these regions: and pprolongeth one continuall nyghte  
 for the space of thre moonethes in wynter, durynge whiche  
 tyme they haue none other lyght but lyke vnto the daylyght  
 of euynynge and moornynges. This is very cleare, but con-  
 tinueth

Idolatrie.

A myserie of  
marriage in  
fyre & flint.Experte in  
chaunters.Magical  
daries.

The canker.

One nyght of  
thre moos-  
nethes.

## Of the north regions.

shineth but fewe houres, and is lyke the bryght shynynge of the moone. Therfore that day that the sonne returneth to the hemisphericke, they keepe holy day and make great myrry with solemne festiuitie. And these are the maners of this nation, not so brutish as woorthie therfore to be cauled Lapones for they vnaptnesse or simplicitie as when they lyued vnder theyr owne Empire and vied no familiaritie or intercourse with other nations and knewe not the commoditie of theyr owne thynges, neyther the price and estimation of theyr fures in othere regions, by reason whereof they coulde geat plentie of them for sum of othere wares of smaule value.

The boundes or limittes of Lapontia (beinge the extreme lande of Scandia knowne towarde the north pole) are extended towarde this parte of the North, to the world yet vnknewen to vs: And furthermore towarde the same parte of the nere most sea, accordynge to this description.

The first coaste, 70 72.

The coaste folowynge. 80 7.

That thar yet foloweth, 90 70.

plentie of  
sea fysh.

From the first shynynge places and shore houses of this sea, they carry forth to Nordbothnia and whyte Russia, landes confinynge to them, great plentie of fysh. Wherby we may coniecture that this sea is extended on euery syde toward the North. Towarde the weste, it is limited with the most inward goulfe of at the Castell of Wardhus at the degree.

wardhus.

Towarde the Southe, it is limited by a line drawn from thence vnto the degree.

## Norwegia or Norway.

**N**orway, is as muche to say as the Northwaye. This was sumtyme a Northynge kyngedome, whose dominion comprehended Denmarke, Sciselande and the Islandes farre about, vntill the domestical Empire was gouerned by the succession of inheritance. In the meane tyme while this gouernance ceased for lacke of debowtise, it was instituted by consent of the nobilitie that the kynges shuld be admitted by election: supposinge that they wolde with more equitie execute that office forasmuche as they were placed in the

the same by such auaritie, and not by obteynynge the kyngdome by fortune and newe aduancement. But it came so to passe, that as euery of them excelled in riches, ambition and fauour by consanguinitie, so were they in greater hope to obteyne the kyngdome: And were by this meanes diuided into factions, attemptyng also occasions to invade foraigne realmes wherby they might strengthen theyr parties. It is therefore at this present vnder the dominion of the Danes: who doo not only exact intollerable tributes, but also bypunge all theyr ryches and commodities into Denmarke, constitutyng the continuance of theyr gouernaunce in rhinfirmitie and pouertie of the subiectes: which exemple, sum other princes doo followe at this day in the Christian Empire. For after that the princes had forsaken suche vertues as shulde haue shyned in them, as to bee *Patres patrie* (that is) the fathers of theyr countreys, and that in the place hereof, onely the proude countenaunce of dominion remayned, which opened licentiousnesse to rhiniurie of the subiectes, this folowed therof, that wheras the Danes by this occasion had no further trust or ayde in the loue of the people, they provided for rhindempnitie of theyr owne estate by forcible extenuatinge the gooddes and poure of them whom they desired to kepe in subiection. This is the fortune of Norway, whose edefies, townes, and cities can not defende theyr auncient amplitude and dignitie: neyther is there any hope of repayryng the state. For there are no consultations admitted for the redress of the common welth: No man dare shewe his aduice or attempte any thing, vnccerteyne of the myndes and consent of other. To this difficultie, is added the qualitie of the place. For the Danes haue in theyr poure all the nauigations of Norway, whereby it may exercise no trade by sea, neyther cary furthe wares to other places. So that in fine it may seeme most vnforgunate, as lackynge the fauoure of heauen, the sea, and the lande. From hence is brought into all Europe a spūhe of the kindes of them whiche were caule haddokes or hakes indurate and dyed with coude, and bearen with clubbes or stocks, by reason wherof the Germainys caule them stockefylhe. The rakinge of these, is most commended in Januarie that they may bee sufficiently dyed and hardened with coude. For such as are taken in the more temperate monethes, doo corrupte and

kyngdomes  
destroyd by  
factions.

The Danes

The default  
of princes.

An exemple  
of tyranni.

The miserable  
state of  
Norway.

Stockfyll.

## Of the north regions,

putrifie: And are not meete to bee caried furth.

The description of the west coaste, with the parte thereof lyinge most towarde the north.

Ward hus (that is) the watche house, or watche towre.

It is a stronge castell or fortreffe appoynted to the Laponnes. The coaste folowynge, 48 50 70. Warthkar. &c.

All the coast from hence, and the places neare about unto the degree.

The Laponnes.

beinge sumtyme lesse desolate by the seditions and destruction of Norway, the Laponnes chose for theyr habitations, as commynge to a more beneficiall haue.

Shippes in daungour by reason of whales.

From the Castell of Wardhus, unto the degree. 40 30 64 10 all the coaste in the sprynge tyme is daungorous to passe, by reason of whales of such huge byggenesse that sum of theym growe to a hundredth cubites. For these fyndes at that tyme of the yeaere resort togyther for generation. Such shippes as chaunce to faule eyther vpon theyr bodies, or into suche whylepooles as they make by theyr vehement motions, are in great perell.

Castoreum.

The remedie to auoyde this daungour, is to poure into the sea Castoreum (that is) oyle made of the stones of the beaste cauled the Beuer, mengeld with water. For with this, the hole herde of whales vanyeth suddenly to the bottome of the sea: They make a terrible roynge: and haue two breathynge places in the hyghest parte of theyr forheades, standynge furth right a cubite in length, and are as brode at the endes, benge couered with a skynne, through the which they blow waters lyke fowes or stormes of raine. The prickes of theyr backes, are founde conteynynge thre els in circuite, and euery knatte betwene theym, of one elle. They are at the least of. lx. cubites in length: And are salted and kept in stowe houses. The greatest are vnprofitable to bee eaten by reason of theyr ranke and vnlauiery taste which can not bee qualified.

The roynge of whales.

whales salted and referred.

The citie of Adria.

Adria standing vpon the south syde of the sea banke, was the chiefe citie and metropolitane churche thowgh ouer all Norway, Iselande, Gronlande, and the Isles there about. This citie was noble at the fyrst vnder the Norway Empire of Norway, conteynge in circuite. xxiii. parishes, but

but it is now brought in maner to a village and is cauled in the Germanye tongue *Eutham*, as the house of the *Dyptides*. There remaineth at this daye a Cathedrall church in token of the ancient felicitie, beinge suche that in byggenesse & workmanship of wrought stone, the lyke is not in all Christendome. The greeles or compasse about the altar, was destroyed by fyre, and was repaired at the same tyme that we write this historie. The charge of the reparation, was estimated to bee seven thousande crownes: by which spawle portion, an estimate maye bee made of the excellencie of the hole Church.

A magnificall church.

The tracte of all the sea coastes Northward, is very quyet and meete. The sea is not frozen. The snowes indure not longe. This lande hath also a peculiar pestilence which they caule *Aem* or *Aemmer*. This is a lytle foure footed beaste; whose the byggenesse of a ratte with a spotted sayne. These faule hypon the grounde at certeyne tempestes and suddayne showers, not yet knowne from whence they comme, as whyther they are brought by the wyndes from remote Ilandes, or otherwise engendered of thicke and seculent cloudes. But this is well knowne, that as soone as they faule downe, greene graffe and herbes are founde in theyr bowels not yet digested. They consume all greene thynges as doo locustes: And such as they only byte, wyther and dye. This pestilence lyueth as longe as it dooth not taste of the graffe newelye spronghe. They comie togyther by flockes as doo swalowes: And at an old nare tyme, cyther dye by heapes with great infection of the lande (as by whose corruption the ayer is made pestiferous and molesterh the Norwegians with stynnyng in the headde and the iaundies) or are consumed of other beastes named *Aesrat*. Towarde the East, it is included with in the line that is drawen by the mountaynes whose endes or vttermoost boundes they are that lye towarde the south aboue the mouthes of the ryuer *Eytherta*. But that parte that lyeth towarde the north, passeth by the castel of *Wardhus*, and is extended to the unknowne lande of the *Lapones*.

Noysome beastes of vñ knowne generation.

The lake cauled *Qos*, and the Ilande of *Hossuen* in the myddest thereof, is in the degree.

45

30

61.

In this lake appeareth a straunge monster: which is, a serpent of honge byggenesse. And as to all other places of

wardhus.  
The vñ knowne lands of the Lapones.

A serpent of honge byggenesse.

## Of the north regions,

God warneth  
vs by signes  
of thynges to  
coome.

the worlde, blasynge starres doo portende thalutation and chaunge of thynges, so dooth this to Norway. It was scene of late (in the yeare of Christ M. D. xxii. apperynge farre aboue the water rowlynge lyke a greate pyller : And was by coniecture farre of, esteemed to bee of fiftie cubites in length. Shortely after folowed the reiectyng of Christiernus kynge of Denmarke. Suche other monstrous thynges are sayde to bee scene in dyuers places of the worlde. And doubtelesse excepte wee shulde thinke that the diuine prouidence haupnge mercie vpon mortall men, and hereby warnynge them of their offences, dooth sende suche straunge thynges (as also blasing starres and armies feyghthyng in the ayer, with suche other portentious monsters wherof no causes can bee founde by naturall thynges) we myght els suspecte that such syghtes were but imaginations of the sence of man deceaued.

The stregh-  
tes or boyling  
sea.

On the East side, are exceeding rough montaynes which admit no passage to Succia. The sea betwene Norway & the Ilandes, is cauled Tialleslund, Euripus, or the streights. The Ilande of Iosoth. whose myddest. 42 67 10.  
Langanas, whose myddest, 41 67 30.  
Vastral, whose myddest. 41 30 67 30.

Dangerous  
places in the  
sea.

The sea betwene these three Ilandes, is cauled Muscorstrom (that is) boylynge. At the rowlynge of the sea, it is swallowed into the caues, and is blowne owt ageyne at the redowynge, with no lesse violence then the streames of ryuers faule from mountaynes. This sea is nauigable buttill it bee lower then the mouthes of the rockes. Such as chaunce into it owt of delue tyme, are caried headlonge into whylepooles. The fragmentes of the lost ships, are seldome cast vp ageyne. But when they are caste vp, they are so brused and freted ageynste the rockes, that they seeme to bee ouergrowne with hore. This is the poure of nature, passyng the fabulous Simplegades and the fearefull Malca, with the dangerous places of Silla and Caribdis, and all other miracles that nature hath wrought in any other sea hitherto knowne to man.

Fruitfull I-  
landes about  
Norway.

The Ilandes about Norway, are of such fruitfull pasture, that they bynge not theyr beastes into the stables before the moneth of Nouēber : And do many places winter the abrode.

Golde and  
syluer.

### Succia, or Suethlande.

C Succia, is a kyngedome ryche in golde, syluer, copper, leade,

leade, Iren, fruyte, cattaple, and excedynge increase of fyfthe of the ryuers, lakes, and the sea. And hath no lesse plentie of such wyld beasts as are taken with huntinge.

Towarde the West, it is ended with the mountaynes of Roz: way from the Castell of Wardhus vnto thend. 51 63 40

wardhus  
castell.

Towarde the South, with the line from this ende vnto the degrees. 53. 30. 61. And frome thense vnto the de-

grees. 61. 60. 30. Aboue the goulfe of Suecia, toward the north, with the south ende of Lapponia from the castell of Wardhus vnto thende. 62. 70.

The goulfe  
of Suecia.

Towarde the East, it is ended with the line frome this ende vnto the degree. 63. 69. &c. Stockholme the chiefe

The citie of  
Stockholme.

citie. 64. 61. This is the chiefe mart towne of Suecia, and is strongly defended by arte and nature. It is situate in mariffhes after the maner of Venec: and was therefore caused Stockholme, forasmuche as beinge placed in the water, the fundation is fortified with stockes or piles. The sea entereth into it with two armes or branches of such largenes and depth that ships of great burden and with mayne sayles may enter by the same with theyr full freight. This suffered of late yeares greuous spoyle & destruction to the singular example of cruel hostilitie: And such, as the like hath not bin lightly shewed to any other citie receaued by league & composition.

In al the tract from Stockholme to the lake aboue the riuer of Dalekarle, which is in the degree. 56. 30. 63. 50. are most taines fruitful of good siluer, copper, and leade. They gette great ryches by the salmons and plentie of other fyfthes whiche they take in certeyne greate lakes.

Sold in could  
regions,  
fyfthe.

The dukedome of Agermannia, occupieth the north syde to the confines of Lapponia. This tract is ful of woods in the which they hunt the beasts cauled Uros or Bisontes, which in theyr tooonge they caule Elg, (that is) wilde asses. These are of such height, that the highest part of their backes are equal with the measure of a man holdynge vp his armes as hygh as he may reach. &c. Upsalia the chiefe citie. 62. 62. 30. here is buried the body of saynt Ericus kynge and martyr.

The beast  
cauled Uros  
or Elg.

Upsalia.

Copperdalia (that is) the copper valley, is a dukedome southwarde from the dukedome of Jemprta. Under this, is the valient nation of the people cauled Dalekarly.

Copperdalia.

Oplandia, is a dukedome & the nauil or middell of Scandia.

Oplandia.

The

## Of the north regions.

The citie of **Witcho**, on the north syde of the lake of **Agger**, was once a great citie and able to arme. xiii. thousande men to the warres: but is nowe browghe to a byllage.

All the tracte of **Oplandia**, hath mynes of syluer, copper, and Steele.

Of the Ilandes and rockes that lye aboute **Suecia**, the myddest is. 67 30 61 30.

**Byrdes.**

**Egges** reserved in salte.

These were cauled of the owlde wyrters **Done**, the reason of which name remaineth to this day. For there are in these innumerable multitudes of byrdes: In so muche that thinhabitauntes of the nere coaste, sayle thither in the mooneth of May whole the byrdes lye on theyr egges: which they steale and reserve them in salte for a longe tyme.

## Bothnia.

**precious fures.**

**fylthe.**

**B**othnia is so named of the precious fures of all sortes that are caried from thence into foraigne regions. For by these and theyr sylthynge, they have great commoditie. Salvions of the best sort are taken in these seas and are great ryches amonge these nations. Bothnia is divided into two partes, as **Nordbothnia**, and **South Bothnia**, cauled **Ostrobothnia**. **Nordbothnia**, is termined with the south ende of the **Lapones** unto the ende. 73 30 69.

Towarde the East, it is termined with this end and unto the degree. 78 30 68 20.

Towarde the West, with the line terminynge the East syde of **Suecia**: And towarde the Southe, with the residue of the goulfe of **Suecia** from thence that hath degrees. 63 69.

**Ostrobothnia**, towarde the East is termined from the said ende of the most East coaste. And towarde the South, with a line extended by the mountaynes frome this ende unto the degree. 71 66.

Towarde the north and weste, with part of the goulfe of **Suecia** &c.

## Gothia or Gothlande.

**G**OTHIA, is by interpretation good. For the holpe name of God, is in the Germanie tongue **Goth** (that is) Good. At what tyme the **Goths** bypon a general content,

consent, sent furth theyr offsprynge or succession to seeke newe states or countreys to inhabite, and when they possessed the coastes of Theoris and Asia, none of the olde wyriters haue made mention as farre as I knowe. But they haue byn knowne sence the tyme that the Romanes dilated theyr Emperre by Illirium (nowe cauled Slaunon) vnto the ryuer of Danubius. And were also famous from the tyme of Cesar Dictator and Octavianus Augustus by reason of theyr greate warres at Danubius beinge thurtermost bounde of The Empire. Reuerthelesse, in that renoume, what Gothia was, vnder what parte of heauen it was situate, or of whom the Gothes toke theyr original, it hath byn vnknewe almost to this age. This is termined towarde the north, with the south ende of Succia: And towarde the weste, with the other mountaynes of Norway, which continewe from the boundes of Succia to the mouthes of the ryuers of Trollera &c.

It hath many goodly towne, cities, castels, mines, &c. The cite of Wilba, being in the degree. 61 30 54 15. was an ancient and famous marre towne as is Venia in Italie at this day. But afterwarde beinge afflicted by thincursions of the pirates of the Danes and Moscouites, it was left desolate. There remayne to this day certeyne ruines whiche testifye the ancient nobilitie. In this place were the spiall stations of the Gothes that possessed Theoris. It is at this daye of fruitfull soyle, and famous by many goodly and stronge castels and monasteries. There is amonge other, a monasterie of the order of saynt Benedicte, in the which is a librarie of a booke two thousande booke of olde autours.

About the yeare of Christ fourscore and viii. the Gothes, vnto whom resorted a great multitude of other people of these northe partes of the worlde, as from Liuania, Prussia, Russia and Tartaria with diuers other contreys, makinge them dyuers kynges and capitaynes, dyd depopulate and byynge in subiection the more parte of Europe, invaded Italie, destroyed Rome, inhabited that parte of Italie now cauled Lumbardie, and lykewyse subdued the roialmes of Castile and Aragonne. Theyr warres contynued aboue three hundred yeares.

### Finland, and Cningia.

Finlandia, is as much to say as a fayre lande or fine land, so named for the fertilitie of the grownde, Plinie seemeth

Thynuations  
of the Gothes

The warre  
of the gothes  
ageynst the  
Romans.

The boundes  
of Gothland.

The cite of  
Wilba.

Danes and  
Moscouites.

A librarie of  
two thousand  
bookes.

The Gothes  
invaded Europe  
and destroyed  
Rome.

## Of the north regions.

Pannonia  
falsely taken  
for Finnonia.

to caule it Finnonia. For he saith that aboute the coastes of Finlande, are many Ilandes withowt names. Of the which there lyeth one before Scythia cauled Pannonia. The goulfe cauled Sinus Finnonicus, is so named at this day of the lande of Finnonia. Finnonia confineth with Scythia, and runneth withowt all Tanais (that is to say) withowt the limetes of Europe to the confines of Asia. But that the name of Finlande seemeth not to agree hereunto, the cause is that this place of Finnie is corrupted as are many other in this autour: So that from the name of Finnonia, or Phinnonia, it was a likely erreure to caule it Pannonia forasmuch as these woordes doo not greatly differ in wyprynge and sounde: so that the counterfecte name was soone put in the place of the trew name by hym that knewe Pannonia and redde that name before, beinge also ignorant of Phinnonia.

Eningia.

Eningia had in owlde tyme the tytle of a kingedome, it is of such largenesse. But hath nowe only the tytle of an inferior gouvrenoure, beinge under the dominion of the Slauons and vsyng the same tonge. In religion, it obserued the rites of the Greekes of late yeares, when it was vnder the gouernance of the Moscouites. But it is at this present vnder the kynge of Suecia and obserueth the institutions of the Occidentall church. Spanghe wyndes are brought thither in great plentie which the people vse merely and cherefully. It is terminated on the north syde, by the southe line of Ostrobotnia, and is extended by the mountaynes. Towarde the west, it is terminated with the sea of Finnonia accordyng to this description: and hath degrees.

71.

66. &c.

Spanghe  
wyndes.

Of the difference of regions and causes of greatesse  
cities, after the description of Hieronimus  
Cardanus. Liber. xi. de Subilitate.



There is an other difference of regions caused of coulde and heate. For suche as are neare vnto the poles, are vexed with so much coulde: And such as are vnder the line where the soonne is of greatesse force, are oppressed with heate. Such as are in the myddest betwene both, are nearest vnto temperatnesse. Under the pole, it is impossible that

that there shulde bee populous cities because the lande is barren, and the cariage or conueyaunce of frutes, bytcrayles, and other necessaries, is incommodious. By reason wherof, it is necessarie that thynhabitantes of suche regions lyue euer in continuall wanderynge from place to place, or els in smaule byllages. Suche as inhabite temperate regions, haue meane cities, aswell for that they haue moze commodious conueyaunce for necessaries, as also that they may dwell better and moze safely togyther then in byllages by reason of fortifying theyr towones with walles, and exercysyng of artes and occupations whereby the one maye the better helpe the other. Yet that owlde Rome (beinge in a temperate region) was of such incredible byggenesse, the cause was that it obteyned thence piere of the worlde, by reason wherof, all nations had confluence thither, and not the greatnesse of the walles. But it is necessarie that the greatest cities bee in hotte regions: fyrst, for that in such regions, parte of the soile is eyther barren yf it lacke water, or els most frutefull if it abounde with water. And for this inequalitye, when they fynde any place meete to susteyne a multitude, it foloweth of necessitie that greate cities bee buylde in such places by reason of great concourse of people resortyng to the same. An other greate cause is, that whereas in such regions, marchauntes come very farre to such commodious places, they passe through many deserte and perelous regions: So that it shalbe necessary for theyr better securitie, to coome in great companies as it were great armies. And therfore whereas such a societie is once knytte togyther in a commodious place, it shulde bee great hinderance alwell to thynhabitantes as to marchauntes if they shulde wander in incommodious places. And by this conuence, both of suche as dwell neare to suche places, and also of straungers and such as dwell farre of, it is necessarie that in continuance of tyme, smaule towones becoome greate cities, as are these: Quinsai, Singui, Cambalu, Memphis, Cairus, or Alcair, or thewylde cauled Babilon in Egypte. But if here any wyl obiecte Constantinople (in owlde tyme cauled Bizantium) being in a temperate region, althowgh it bee not to bee compared to such cities as are moze then. lx. myles in circuite, yet doo we aunswere hereunto, that the Turkes Empire is the cause of the greatnesse hereof, as wec sayde before of Rome.

The historie written in the latin tooenge by Paulus Jovius  
by Thoppe of Succria in Italie, of the legation or am-  
bassade of greate Basilus Prince of Moscouia, to  
pope Clement the. vii. of that name: In which  
is conteyned the description of Moscouia  
with the regions confininge abowte  
the same euen vnto the great &  
ryche Empire of Cathay.

Demetrius  
the ambassa-  
dour of Mos-  
couia.



Paulus Cen-  
turio.

Spices  
brought fro  
India to Mos-  
couia.

The ryuer  
Indus.

Intende fyrst briefly to describe the situa-  
on of the region which we plainly see to haue  
bin little known to Strabo and Ptolome, and  
then to procede in rehearsing the maners, cus-  
tomes and religion of the people. And this in  
maner in the lyke simple style and phrase of  
speache as the same was declared vnto vs by Demetrius the  
ambassador, a man not ignorant in the Latin tooenge, as  
from his youth brought vp in Linonia, where he learned the  
fyrst rudimentes of letters. And beinge growne to mans age,  
executed thoffice of an ambassadour into dyuers Christian pro-  
uinces. For wheras by reason of his approued faithfulness  
and industrie, he had before byn sent as oratour to the kyn-  
ges of Succia and Denmarke, and the great master of Rus-  
sia, he was at the last sente to Emperoure Maximilian, in  
whose court (beinge replenished with all sortes of menne)  
whyle he was conuersant, if any thyng of barbarous maners  
yet remayned in so docible and quiet a nature, the same was  
put away by framyng hym selfe to better ciuilitie. The cause  
of his legacie or ambassade, was gyuen by Paulus Centurio  
a Venuese, who when he had receaued letters commendatoy  
of pope Leo the tenth, and came to Moscouia for the trade of  
marchaundies, of his owne mynde conferred with the fami-  
liers of Duke Basilus as touchynge the conformation of the  
rites of both churches. He furthermore of great magnanimi-  
tie and in maner obtragious desire, sought howe by a newe  
and incredible viage, spices myght bee brought from India.  
For whyle before he had exercised the trade of marchaundies  
in Syria, Egypte, and Pontus, he knewe by fame that spices  
myght bee conueighed from the further India vp the riuer In-  
dus agaynst the course of the same, and from thence by a smal  
byage

byage by lande passinge ouer the mountaynes of Paropamisus, to bee caried to the riuer Orus in Bactria, which hauing his original almost from the same mountaynes from whence Indus dooth springe, and violently caryinge with it manye other ryuers, fauleth into the sea Hircanum or Caspium at the porte cauled Straua. And he earnestly affirmed that frome Straua, is an easy and safe nauigation vnto the marre tomtie of Citrachan or Astrachan and the mouth of the ryuer Wolga and from thence euer ageynst the course of the ryuers, as Wolga, Dicha, and Moscho, vnto the citie Moscha, and frome thence by lande to Riga and into the sea of Sarmatia and all the west regions. For he was vehemently and more then of equitie accented and prouoked by the iniuries of the Portugales, who haupnge by force of armes subdued a great parte of India, and possessed all the marre tomties, takynge holly into theyr handes all the trade of spices to bynge the same into Spayne, and neuerthelesse to sell them at a more greuous and intollerable price to the people of Europe then euer was hard of before: And furthermore kepte the coastes of the Indian sea so straightly with continuall nauiies, that those trades are thereby lesse of, which were before creased by the goulfe of Persia and towarde the ryuer of Euphrates, and also by the streightes of the sea of Arabia and the ryuer Nilus, and in fine by owre sea: by which trade all Asia and Europe was abundantly satisfied and better cheape then hath byn sence the Portugales had the trade in theyr handes with so manye incommodities of such longe viages wherby the spices are so corrupted by thinfecion of the poompe and other tythynesse of the shippes, that theyr naturall sauour, taste, and qualitie aswell hereby as by theyr longe reseruyng in the shoppes, sellers, and warehoules in Lusthburne, banythech and resolueth, so that reseruyng euer the freshest and neweste, they sel only the woozt and most corrupted. But Paulus, although in all places he earnestly and vehemently argued of these thinges, and spred great malice and hatred ageynst the Portugales, affirmynge that not only therby the customes and reuenues of princes shulde bee much greater if that byage might bee discovered, but also that spices myght bee better cheape bought at the handes of the Moscouites, yet coude he nothyng anaple in this sure, forasmuche as Duke Basilus

A A A a, ii,

thowght

Orus or: horina a ryuer of Asia, runneth through the desertes of Syria.

The sea Hircanum, is now cauled mare Tabarik or mare de Sala.

Citrachan or Astrachan.

Sarmatia is that greate countrey wherein is conteyned Russia Liouonia and Tartaria, & the north and East part of Polonia. Ageynst the Portugales. The trade of spices inowid tyme.

Spices corrupted.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

The Caspian  
sea.

Basilus wrote  
to Pope A:  
driane.

warres be-  
twene the  
Polones and  
Moscouites.

The seconde  
vyage of Paul-  
lus to Mosco-  
uia.

The pope  
persuadeth  
Basilus to  
acknowledge  
the Romane  
churche.

thought it not good to make open or disclose unto a straun-  
ger and unknowne man, those regions which give entrance  
to the sea Caspium and the kyngedomes of Persia. Paulus  
therefore excludynge all hope of further trauayle, and become  
nowe of a marchaunte an Ambassadoure, brought Basilus  
letters (pope Leo beinge nowe departed) to Adriane his suc-  
cessour, in the whiche he declared with honozable and reuer-  
rende wordes his good wyll and fauozable mynde towarde  
the byshop of Rome. For a fewe yeares before, Basilus (then  
keepynge warres agensse the Polones at such tyme as the  
generall counsaile was celebrare at Laterane) requyred by  
John, kyng of Denmarke (the father of Christierne who  
was of late expelled from his kyngedome) that safe passage  
myght bee graunted to thambassadors of Moscouia to go to  
Rome. But wheras it so chaunced, that kyng John and  
pope Julius dyed both in one day, whereby he lacked a conue-  
nient sequester or solicitor, he omitted his consultation as  
touchynge that legacie. After this, the warre waxed hot be-  
twene him and Sigismunde the kyng of Polonie: who obtel-  
nyng the victorie against the Moscouites at Bozithene, sup-  
plications were decreed in Rome for the overthrowe and ban-  
quishynge the enemies of the Christian faith, whiche thinge  
greatly alienated both kyng Basilus him selfe and all that  
nation from the byshop of Rome. But when Adriane the. vi.  
departed from this lyfe, and left Paulus nowe redie to his  
seconde vyage, his successor Clemente the. vii. perceayn-  
ge that Paulus still furiously reuolued and tossed in his vnquiet  
mynde that vyage towarde the East, sente hym ageyne with  
letters to Moscouia, by the which with propense and frend-  
ly persuasions, he exhorted Basilus to acknowledge the ma-  
iestie of the Romane churche, and to make a perpetuall leage  
and agreement in matters of religion, which thynge shuld be  
not only for the health of his soule, but also greatly to thins-  
crease of his honour: And further promysed, that by the holy  
autoritie of his office he wolde make hym a kyng and gyue  
hym kyngely ornamentes, if receyving the doctrine of the  
Brekes, he wolde conforme hym selfe to chautortie of the  
Romane churche. For Basilus despyred the name and tytle  
of a kynged y thassignation of the byshoppe of Rome, foras-  
much

much as he iudged that to apperteyne to the catholyke right and the byshoppes maiestie, of whome (as he knewe ryght well) euen Emperours them selues by an auncient custome haue receaued there insignes of honoure with the Diademe and scepter of the Romane Empire : althowghe it is sayde that he required the same of Emperour Maximiliane by many ambassades. Paulus therfore who with more prosperous iorneyes then great bantage, had from his youth traueled a greate parte of the world, althowgh he were nowe aged and sore vexed with the strangurie, came with a prosperous and speedy iornay to Moscouia, where he was gentely receaued of Basilus, and remayned in his courre for the space of two monethes. But in fine, mistrustynge his owne strength, and deterred by the difficultie of so greate a iorneye, when he had utterly put away all his imaginations and hope of this trade to India, returned to Rome with Demetrius thambassadour of Basilus, before we yet thowght that he had byn in Moscouia. The byshoppe commaunded that Demetrius shuld be lodged in the most magnificēt and princely part of the houses of Vatican, the routes of whose edifices are gilted and embowed, and the chambers richly furnyshed with sylken beddes and cloth of Arrete. Wyllynge furthermore that he shuld bee honozably receaued and bestowed with silke. He also assigned Francisus Cheregatus the byshoppe of Aprutium (a man that had often tymes byn ambassadoure to diuers regyes) to accompanie hym and shewe hym thorder and rites of othere religion with the monumentes and maners of the citie. Furthermore, when Demetrius had certeyne dayes rested and recreate him selfe, wasthyng away the sylth he had gathered by reason of the longe wyage, then apparelled with a fayre besture after the maner of his countrey, he was brought to the byshoppes presence, whom he honoured kneelynge with great humilitie and reuerence (as is the maner) and therewith presented vnto his holynes certeyne fures of Sables in his owne name and in the name of his prince, and also deliuered the letters of Basilus, which they before, and then the Illyrian or Slauon interpreter Nicolas Siceensis translated into the Latine tongue in this effecte as foloweth,

The Emperours receaue there diademe of the byshoppes of Rome.

Demetrius in certeynement at Rome.

Demetrius is brought to the popes presence.

To

## Moscouia and Cathay.

Basilus let-  
ters to pope  
Clement.

To pope Clemente heparde and teacher of the Romane churche, greate Basilus by the grace of God, lord, & npe: rour and dominatour of al Rulua, and great duke of Voloder: maria, Moscouia, Rouogrodia, Polcouia, Smolenia, Jitteria Jugoria, Perunia, Wetcha, Wolgaria. &c. Dominator & great prince of Rouogrodia in the lower cōtrei: Also of Cernigouia, Kazania, Wolotchia, Kezenia, Belchia, Kossouia, Jaro Slania, Belozeria, Wdozia, Obdozia, & Condiuia. &c. yow sent vnto vs Paulus Centurio a citize of Genua with letters wherby yowe do exhorte vs to ioine in poure and counsaile with yowe and other princes of Christsdome ageynst the enemies of the chri- stian faith: and that a free passage and redy way may bee ope- ned for bothe yowre ambassadours and ooures to coome and go to and fro, wherby by mutuall dewtie and indenuouce on both parties, we may haue knowleage of the state of thinges percepyng to the welch of vs both. Wee certes as we haue hether to happely by the ayde and helpe of almyghty god con- stantly and cōcessly resisted the cruell and wycked enemies of the Christian faith, so are we determind to doo hereafter. And are likewise redy to consente with other Christian prin- ces, and to graunt free passage into oure dominions. In con- sideration wherof, we haue sente vnto yowe oure faithfull seruaunt Demetrius Erasmus with these oure letters: and with hym haue remitted Paulus Centurio: desyringe yowe also shortly to dismitte Demetrius with safegarde and indem- nitye vnto the hosthers of oure dominions. And we wyl like wylse doo the same if yowe sende yowre ambassadoure with Demetrius, wherby both by communication and letters, wee may bee better certified of thorder and administration of such thynges as yowe require: so that beinge aduertised of the mindes & intent of al other Christian princes, we may also con- sult what is best to be done herein. Thus fare ye wel. Giuen in our dominion in our citie of Moscouia, in the yeare from the creation of the worlde, seven thousande and thye hun- dred, the thyrde day of Aprill.

But Demetrius, as he is experte in diuine and humane thynges, and especially of holy scripture, seemed to haue se- create commaundement of greater matters whiche we thinke he wyl shortly declare to the senate in priuate consultations. For he is nowe deliuered of the feuer into the whiche he fell  
by

by chaunge of ayer. and hath so recovered his strengthe and native colour, that beinge a man of threescore yeares of age, he was not only presente at the popes masse celebrated with great solemnitie in the honour of saynt Colmus and Damian but came also into the Senate at such tyme as Cardinall Campegius commynge fyrst from the legacie of Hannonia, was receaued of the pope and all the nobilitie of the cōurre: And furthermoze also bewed the temples of the holpe citie with the ruines of the Romane magnificence, and with woonderynge eyes behelde the lamentable decay of the auncient buildinges. So that we thinke that shortly after he hath declared his message, he shall returne to Moscouia with the byshop of Scazrentse the popes legate, not unrecompensed with iust rewards at the handes of his holynesse.

The name of the Moscouites is nowe newe, although the poete Lucane maketh mention of the Moschos confynge with the Sarmatians, and Iulius also placeth the Moschos at the springes of the great ryuer of Phasis in the region of Colchos about the sea Euxinus towarde the East. Theyr region hath very large boundes, and is extended from the altars of great Alexander about the springes of Tanais, to the extreme landes and north Ocean in maner vnder the North starres cauled charles wayne or the greates beate, beinge for the most parte playne and of feutfull pasture, but in sommer in many places full of marisshes. For whereas all that lande is replenyshed with many and great ryuers which are greatly increased by the winter snow and ise resolved by the heate of the soonne, the playnes and fyeldes are thereby overflowen with marisshes, and all iozneys incumbered with continuall waters and myrie slabbynesse vntyl by the benefite of the new wynter the ryuers and marisshes bee frosen ageyne, and giue safe passage to the sheades that are accustomed to iozney by the same. The woodde or forest of Bereynia (and not Hircania as is redde in sum false copies) occupieth a great parte of Moscouia, and is here and there inhabited, with houses buylded therein and so made thinner by the longe labour of men that it dooth not nowe shewe that horzour of thicke and impenetrable woods and laundes as many thinke it to haue. But beinge replenyshed with many wylde beastes, is so farre extended through Moscouia with a continual tracte betwene

Cardinall  
Campegius.

The ruines  
of Rome.

The descrip-  
tion of Mos-  
couia.

The altars  
of great Alex-  
ander.

marisshes in  
sommer.

The forest of  
Bereynia.

wylde beastes

the

## Moscouia and Cathay.

The Scythians  
an Ocean.

The beastes  
cauled Uri or  
Bilontes.

Belenes.

Of the Scythians and  
Tartars.  
Amarouii.

Hords.

The large do-  
minion of the  
Tartars.  
Cathay.

The Tartars  
of Europe.

The Tartars  
of Asia, are  
subiecte to  
the Duke of  
Moscouia.

the East and the North towarde the Scythian Ocean, that by the infinite greatnesse therof it hath deluded the hope of such as haue curiously searched thence of the same. In that parte that reacheth towarde Prussia, are founde the greare and fierce beastes cauled Uri, or Bilontes, of the kynde of bulles: Also Alces lyke unto hartes, whiche the Moscouites caule Lozzi, and are cauled of the Germanes Belenes. On the East syde of Moscouia, are the Scythians which are at this day cauled Tartars, a wanderinge nation, and at all ages famous in warres. In the stede of houses they be waggons couered with beastes hydes, whereby they were in owlde tyme cauled Amarouii. For cities and towncs, they be greate tentes and pavilions, not defended with trenches or wailes of tymber or stone, but inclosed with an innumerable multitude of archers on horsebacke. The Tartares are diuided by companies which they caule Hordas, which word in theyr toounge signifieth a consentynge compaignie of people gathered together in forme of a citie. Every Horda is gouerned by an Emperour whom eyther his parentage or warlike prowes hath promoted to that dignitie. For they oftentimes keepe warre with theyr boetherers and contende ambitiously and fiercely for dominion. It dooth hereby appere that they consist of innumerable Hordas, in that the Tartars possesse the most large desertes such vnto the famous citie of Cathay in the furthest Ocean in the East. They also that are neareste to the Moscouites, are knowen by theyr trade of marchaundises and often incursions. In Europe nere vnto the place cauled Promon Achilles in Taurica Chersoneso, are the Tartars cauled Pycopites, the dowghter of whose prince, Selymus The Emperour of the Turkes tooke to wyfe. These are most infest to the Polones, and wast the regions on euery syde betwene the ryuers of Borishenes and Tanais. They that in the same Taurica possesse Cassam a colonie of the Tigurijs (cauled in owlde tyme Theodosia) doo bothe in religion & al other thynges agree with the Turkes. But the Tartars that inhabite the regions of Asia betwene Tanais and Wolga, are subiecte to Basinus the kynge of the Moscouites, and chuse them a gouernour at his assignement. Amonge these, the Tatars afflicted with ciuile seditions, where as heretofore they were riche and of great poure, haue of late yeares losse theyr

dominio

dominion and dignitie. The Tartars that are beyonde the ryuer of volga, do religiously obserue the frendship of the Moscouites and professe them selues to be their subiectes. Beyond the Cassanites towarde the North, are the Sciambani, rich in heardes of cattaille and consistyng of a great multitude of men. After these, are Rogai, whiche obteyne at this daye the chiefe fame of ryches and warly aduayses. Theyr Horda, althowgh it bee most ample, yet hath it no emperoure, but is gouerned by the wysdome and vertue of the most ancient and valient men after the maner of the common wealthe of Venice. Beyond the Rogais sumwhat towarde the south and the Caspian sea, the noblest nation of the Tartars cauled Zaghathai, inhabite townes buylded of stone, and haue an exceeding greate and fayre citie cauled Samarcanda, which Icarartes the greate ryuer of Sogdiana runneth through, and passinge from thence about a hundred myles, fauleth into the Caspian sea. With these people in othe dayes, Ismael the Sophi and kynge of Persia haue often tymes kepte war with doubtfull successe: In so muche that fearyng the greatenesse of theyr poure which he respycted with all that he myghtr, he lefte Armenia and Taurisium the chiefe citie of the kynge: dome, for a pray to Selimus the bycrouer of one wyng of the battayle. From the citie of Samarcanda, descended Tamburlanes the myghtry Emperoure of the Tartars whome sum caule Tamberlanis. But Demetrius sayth that he shulde bee cauled Themircathla. Thys is he that abolyte the yeare of Chryste .M. CCC. lxxviii. subdued almost all the Easter partes of the worlde: And lastly with an innumerable multitude of men inuaded the Turkes dominions, with whom Baiasces Ottomanus their kynge, (and farther to the greate grandfather of this Solymann that nowe lyueth) metinge at Ancyra in the confines or marches of Galatia and Bithinia, gaue hym a foie battaile, in the whiche felle on the Turkes parte .20000. men, and Baiasces hym selfe was taken prisoner, whom Tamburlanes caused to bee locked in an iren cage and so caried hym abowte with hym through all Asia which he also conquered with a terrible army. He conquered al the landes betwene Tanais and Nilus, and in fine vanquished in battayle the great Soltane of Egypte, whom he chased beyonde Nilus, and rooke also the citie of Damascus.

The Tartars beyonde the ryuer of rioga.

Rogai.  
Sigismundus cauleth them Nagaystri.

The noblest nation of the Tartars.  
The ryuer Icarartes.

Ismael the Sophi, kynge of persia.

The citie of Samarcanda.

Tamburlanes, the myghtry Emperour of the Tartars.  
The conquestes of Tamburlanes.

Baiasces.

W B B b.

Frome

## Moscouia and Cathay.

This apparel  
they haue of  
the persians.

The Tartars  
traffike with  
the Moscoui-  
tes.

The tartars  
of the South  
syde of Mos-  
couia.

Sere and Roy  
olani.  
Russia.

Moscouia  
cauled white  
Russia.  
Lituania.  
Pusia.  
Liunia.  
Denmarke.  
Norway.  
Tuecia.  
The people  
of Lagonia.

Frome the region of these Tartars cauled Zagachei, is brought great plenty of silken apparel to the Moscouites. But the Tartars that inhabite the midland or inner regions, bringe none other wares then truckes or broues of thynne runnyng horses and clokes made of whyte feltes: also haies or tentes to withstande rhineries of coulde and rayne.

These they make very artificially and apte for the purpose. They receaue a gayne of the Moscouites, coates of cloth, and syluer monye, contynnyng all other bodely ornaments, and the furniture of superfluous housholde stuffe. For beyng defended ageynst the violence of weather and tempestes only with suche apparell and conuerue wherewith we haue spoken, they trust only to theyr arrowes which they shoot as well backe wards as yonge as when they assaile theyr enemies face to face. Albeit, when they determined to inuad Europ, theyr princes and capitaynes had helmetts coates of fensle, and hooked swordes which they bought of the Persians. Towarde the south, the boundes of Moscouia are termined by the same Tartars which possesse the playn regions nere vnto the Caspian sea aboute the marythes of Agotis in Asia, and aboute the ryuers of Borysthenes and Tanais in parte of Europe. The people cauled Roxolani, Sere, and Bastarne, inhabited these regions in olde tyme, of whom I thinke the name of Russia tooke originall. For they caule parte of Lituania, Russia the lower, wheras Moscouia it selfe, is cauled whyte Russia. Lituania therfore, lyeth on the North west syde of Moscouia. But towarde the full west the mayne landes of Russia and Liunia are ioyned to the confines or marches of Moscouia, where the Sarmatian sea breakynge furth of the streights of Cimbrica Chersonesus (nowe cauled Denmarke) is bordered with a crooked goulfe towarde the north. But in the furthest bankes of that Ocean where the large kyngdomes of Norwaye and Suecia are ioyned to the continent and almost enuironed with the sea, are the people cauled Lapones, a nation exceedinge rude, suspitious, and fearefull, shyng and astonysht at the syght of al straungiers & shypes. They knowe nether tentes nor apples, nor yet any benigntie epyther of heauen or earth. They proude them meate onely with horynge, and are appareled with the skynnes of wild beastes. They dwell in caues fylled with drye leaues, and in holom

holow trees consumed within eyther by fyre or rotten for age  
 Suche as dwell neare the sea syde, fynd the more luckly then  
 cunningly, and in the head of cruces, reserve in store fyres  
 dyed with smoke, They are of smaule stature of body, with  
 flatte visages, pale and wannye colour, and keep theyre of  
 foote. Their wittes or dispositions, are not known to the  
 Moscouites theyr brotherers, who thynke it therefore a man-  
 neste to assayle them with a smaule poure, and iudge it ney-  
 ther profitable nor glazious, with greate armies to invade a  
 poore and beggerly nation. They exchange the most whyte  
 fures which wee caule Armelines for other wares of byuers  
 sortes: yet so, that they lie the spyght and companie of all  
 marchauntes. For comparynge and sayynge theyr wares to-  
 gether, and leauynge theyr fures in a mydde place, they bar-  
 geyne with simple sayth, with absence and unknowen men.  
 Sum men of great credite and auctoritie, doo certifie that in a  
 region beyond the Lappones, betwene the west and the north  
 oppressed with perpetuall darkenes, is the nation of the peo-  
 ple cauled Pigmei, who beinge growen to theyr ful growthe,  
 doo scarcely excede the stature of owtchylidren of ten yeares  
 of age: It is a fearefull kynde of meane, and expresse theyr  
 wordes in such characteryng toze that they seeme to be so much  
 the more lyke vnto apes, in howe muche they dyffer in sence  
 and stature from men of iust heyght.

Towards the North, innumerable people are subiecte to  
 thempire of the Moscouites. Theyr regions extend to the  
 Scythian Ocean for the space of almoste thre moonthes  
 iorney.

Next vnto Moscouia, is the region of Colmogora aboun-  
 dyng with cruces. Through this runneth the ryuer of Vinid-  
 na beinge one of the greatest that is known in the North  
 partes, and gaue the name to an other lesse ryuer which bea-  
 reth furthe into the sea Balthicum. This increasynge at cer-  
 tayne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer Nilus, ouerflow-  
 eth the fyeldes and playnes, and with his fat and nourishinge  
 moysture, dooth maruelously relit the myntes of heauen and  
 the sharpe blastes of the North wynde. When it ysseth by rea-  
 son of molten snowe and greate shoures of rayne, it fauleth  
 into the Ocean by unknowen nations, and with so large a  
 trencher lyke vnto a greate sea, that it can not bee sayled ouer.

BBB b, ii.

Armeline fur  
 red.

Bargenynge  
 without wor-  
 des.

The darke re-  
 gion, by this  
 darke region  
 and the pig-  
 mei, is the  
 way to Ca-  
 thay by the  
 North sea.

The Scythian  
 Ocean.

The region  
 of colmogora.

The ryuer of  
 vinidna.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

In one day with a prosperous wynde. But when the waters are faulen, they leaue here and there large and fruitful glan-  
d's. For corne there cast on the ground, groweth without  
any helpe of the plowe, and with maruelous celeritie of har-  
rynge nature scarynge the helpe iniurie of the proude ryuer,  
dooth both spyngge and rype in short space.

The ryuer of  
Juga or Jug.

Ustinga.

The ryuer of  
Dwindna or  
Dwina.

The ryuer  
Suchana.

The frozen  
sea.

Into the ryuer Dwindna, runneth the ryuer Juga: And  
in the corner where they ioine together, is the famous mar-  
townte cauled Ustinga distant from the chiefe cite Mosca. vi.  
hundredth myles.

Note that whereas paulus jounis wyrteth here that the ryuer  
of Dwindna, otherwyse cauled Dwina, runneth throughe the region  
of Colmogor, it is to bee vnderstode that there are two ryuers of  
that name, the one on the Northeast syde of Moscouia toward the  
frozen sea, and the other on the south west syde faulynge into the sea  
Balthem, or the goulfe of Finnonia by the cite of Riga in Liuania.  
And forasmuch as the trewe knowlege of these and certeine other  
is very necessary for all such as shall trade into Moscouia or other re-  
gions in those coastes by the north sea, I haue thought good to  
make further declaration hereof as I haue founde in the hystorie of  
Moscouia, most faythfully and largely wyrtten by Sigismundus Li-  
berus who was wyse sent ambassadour into Moscouia, as fyrst by  
Marimban Theemperour, and then agayne by Ferdinando kyng of  
Hungary and Boheme. This haue I doone the rather, for that in  
all the mappes that I haue seene of Moscouia, there is no mention  
made of the ryuer of Dwina that runneth through the region of Col-  
mogor: and by the cite of the same name, although the prouince of  
Dwina bee in all cardes placed Northwarde from the ryuer of  
Usting or Succana, whiche is the same Dwina whereof we nowe  
speake, and wherof paulus jounis wyrteth, although it bee not so  
named but from the angle or corner where ioynynge with the ryuer  
of Jug and Suchana, it runneth Northwarde toward the cite of  
Colmogor, and from thence fauleth into the north or frozen sea, as  
shall hereafter more playnly appeare by the woordes of Sigismun-  
dus, that the one of these bee not taken for the other being so farre  
distant that great errour myght ensue by mistakynge the same, espe-  
cially bicause this wherof paulus jounis wyrteth is not by name ex-  
pressed in the cardes, but only the other, wherby the errour myght  
bee the greater. Of that therfore that runneth by the confines of  
Liuania and the cite of Riga, Sigismundus wyrteth in this maner.

The lake of Dwina, is distante from the spynges of Dousthe-  
nes, almost tenne myles, and as many from the maysthe of Fromo-  
wo. From it, a ryuer of the same name toward the west, distance  
from Ustina. xx. myles, runneth from thence toward the North,  
where by Riga the chiefe cite of Liuania. it fauleth into the Bala-  
mayne sea which the Moscouites caule tuareckoie more. It run-  
neth by Quitepsko, polozko, and Dunenburg, and not by plescouia  
as one hath wyrtten. This ryuer beinge for the moste part nauiga-  
ble, the Lyons caule Dwina.

Of the other Dwina wherof Paulus Jonius speaketh, he writeth as followeth.

The province of Dwina and the ryuer of the same name, is so named from the place where the ryuers of Suchana and Jug meete synge together, make one ryuer so called. For Dwina in the Moscovitea tongue, signifieth two. This ryuer by the course of a hundred myles, entereth into the North Ocean on that part where the sayde sea runneth by the coastes of Sweecia and Norwage, and divideth the Engrolande from the vnknewen lande. This province situate in the ful north, pertained in tyme past to the seignions of Nouogorede, from Moscouia to the mouthes of Dwina, are numbered CCC. myles: Alike as I have sayde, in the regions that are beyond Volga, the accompte of the iorney can not bee well obserued by reason of many maryshes, ryuers, and very greate wooddes that lye in the way. Yet are we led by coniecture to thinke it to bee scarcely two hundred myles: forasmuch as from Moscouia to Quolochda, from Quolochda to Ustyug somewhat into the East, and laste of all from Ustyug by the ryuer Dwina, is the ryght passage to the northe sea. This region, beyde the castel of Colmogor and the cite of Dwina, situate almost in the mydde way betwene the springes and mouthes of the ryuer, and the castell of Pienega standynge in the very mouthes of Dwina, is vntirely without townes and castels: yet hath it many Villages whiche are farre in sunder by reason of the barrenesse of the soyle, &c.

In an other place he writeth, that Suchana and Jug, after they are ioyned together in one, loose theyr lyke names and make the ryuer Dwina, &c. But lette vs nowe returne to the hystorie of Paulus Jonius.

Vnto Ullinga, from the Permiens, Decerrians, Inugrians, Ugolicans, and Winnegians, people inhabyrynge the north and northeast provinces, are brought the precious fures of Martens and Sables: Also the cates of wolues and foxes both white and blacke: And lykewyse the skynnes of the beastes called Cernari Lupi (that is) harre wolues, beinge engendered eyther of a wolfe and a hynde, or a harre and a byrch wolfe. These fures and skyns they exchange for dyuers other wares. The best kynde of sables and of the finest heare toherewith nowe the vestures of princes are lyned, and the tender neckes of delicate dames are covered with the exquisite similitude of the hyppinge brasse, are brought by the Permiens and Decerrians, whiche they them selues also receaue at the handes of other that inhabite the regions neare vnto the north Ocean. The Permiens and Decerrians, a lytle before owre tyme, dyd sacrifice to Idols after the manner of the Gentyles: but doo nowe acknowledge Chyche theyr God. The passage to the Inugrians, and Ugolicans, is by

Dwina and  
Suchana.

Gronland or  
Engroland,

Understand  
myles of Scer  
many, that is  
leagues.

Rych fures.

Lupi Cernari

Sables.

The mount  
taines called  
by the name

## Moscouia and Cathay.

Certaine colough mountaynes, which perhappes are they that in olde tyme were cauled Hyperbozei. In the toppes of these, are founde the beste kyndes of Falcons: whereof one kynde (cauled Herodum) is whyte with spotted feathers. There are also ierfalcones, sakers, and peregrines, whiche were unknowne to the ancient princes in theyr excessive and idle pleasures.

Beyonde those people whom I last named (beinge all tributaries to the kinges of Moscouia) are other nations the last of men, not knowne by any viages of the Moscouites, forasmuch as none of them have passed to the Ocean, and are therefore knowne onely by the fabulous narrations of marchantes: yet is it apparente that the ryuers of Diuidna or Dvina, draynynge with it innumerable other ryuers, runneth with a beuement course towards the north: and that the sea is there exceeding large: so that sayling by the coast on the ryght hande, shippes may haue passage from thence to Cathay as is thought by most lykely conjecture, excepte there be some lande in the waye. For the region of Cathay pertyneth to the extreme and furthest partes of the East, liuate almost in the paralell of Thracia, and knowne to the Portugals in India when they sayled neare hereunto by the regions of Sinara and Malacha to Aurea Chersonesus, and brought from thence certeyne vestures made of Sables skynnes, by which only argument it is apparente that the cite of Cathay is not farre from the coastes of Scythia.

Cathay.

Master Elliot  
cauleth Cathay the  
region of Auara.

The Gothes  
subuerted  
the Romane  
Empire.

The north re-  
gions con-  
spired agaynst  
the Romans.

Moscouia

But when Demetrius was demanded whether either by the monumentes of letters or by fame left them of theyr predecessours, they hadde any knowlege of the gothes who nowe more then a thousand yeares sence subuerted the empire of the Romane Emperours, and defaced the cite of Rome, he answered, that both the nation of the Gothes of the name of kynge Totilas theyr chiefe capitayne, was of famous memorie amonge them: And that dyuers nations of the north regions conspired to that expedition, and especiallye the Moscouites: Also that that armie increased of the confluence of the Barbarous Turkes and wanderynge Tartars: But that they were all cauled Gothes forasmuch as the Gothes that inhabited Scythia and Thelande, were the authors of that inuasion.

And

And with these boundes are the Moscovites inclosed on every side, whom we thinke to be those people that Ptolome cauled Modocas: but haue doubteless at this day their name of the river Mosco whiche runneth through the chiefe citie Mosca named also after the same. This is the most famous citie in Moscouia, as well for the situation thereof beinge in manner in the myddest of the region, as also for the commodious opportunitie of ryuers, multitude of houses, and strange fence of so fayre and goodly a castell. For the citie is extended with a large tracte of buyldynges by the bankes of the ryuer for the space of fyue myles. The houses are made all of tymbre, and are diuided into parlours, chambers, & kitchen of large roomes: yet neyther of vnseemely height or to lowe, but of decent measure and proportion. For they haue greete trees apte for the purpose brought from the foreste of Hercinia: of the which, made perfectly rounde like the masts of shippes, and so layde one vppon an other that they ioyne at the endes in right angles, where beinge made very fast and sure, they frame theyr houses thereof of maruelous strength with smaule charges and in verye short tyme. In manner all the houses haue priuate gardens as well for pleasure as commodity of herbes, wherby the circuite of the dispersed citie appeareth verye greate. All the wardes or quarters of the citie, haue theire peculiar chappells. But in the chiefeest and highest place thereof, is the Church of oure lady of ample and goodly workemanshippe, whiche Aristoteles of Bononie, a man of singular knowleadge and experience in architecture, buylded more then .lx. yeares sence. At the very head of the citie, a litle ryuer cauled Meglina which dyueth many cozne myles, entereth into the ryuer Moscus, and maketh almost an Island, in whose end is the castell with many strong towers and bullwarkes, buylded verye fayre by the diuise of Italian architects that are the masters of the kinges workes. In the fieldes about the citie, is an incredible multitude of hares and roe buckes, the which it is lawefull for no man to chase or persue with dogges or nettes excepte only certeyne of the kinges familiars and straunge ambassadours to whom he giueth licence by speciall commaundement. Almost thre partes of the citie is inuironed with two ryuers, and the rest with a large moire that receaueth plentie of water from the

The citie of Mosca.

Richard Chancelier coude me that these mastes are somewhat hollowe on the one syde, and that the hole syde of the next entereth into the same wherby they lye very close

The castel of Mosca.

white hares and roe buckes.

sayde

## Moscouia and Cathay.

sayde ryuers. The rite is also defended on the other syde with an other ryuer named Nausa, whiche fauleth also into Moscus a little beneath the citie. Furthermore Moscus runnyng towarde the South, fauleth into the ryuer Ocha or Ocha muche greater then it selfe at the towne Columna, and not very farre from thence Ocha it selfe increased with other ryuers, unladerly his streames in the famous riuier Volga, wher at the place where they ioyne, is situate the citie of Mouogrodia the lesse, so named in respecte of the greater citie of that name from whence was brought the firste colonie of the leste citie. Volga cauled in owlde tyme Rha, hath his originall of the greate marythes named the white lakes. These are aboue Moscouia betwene the North and the West, and sende furthe from them almost all the ryuers that are dispersed into dyuers regions on euery syde, as wee see of the Alpes from whose toppes and sprynges descend the waters of whose course the ryuers of Rhene, Rho, and Rodanum, haue they increase. For these marythes in the steade of mountaynes full of sprynges, minister abundant moysture, forasmuch as no mountaynes are yet founde in that region by the longe trauiayles of men, in so much that manye that haue byn studious of the owlde Cosmographie, suppose the Hyphean and Hyperbozean mountaynes so often mentioned of the ancient writers, to bee fabulous. From these marythes therfore, the ryuers of Dwina, Ocha, Moschus, Volga, Tanais, and Bozrysphenes, haue theyr originall. The Tartars caule Volga Edel: Tanais they caule Don: And Bozrysphenes is at this day cauled Reper. This, a lytle beneath Taurica, runneth into the sea Eurinus. Tanais is receaued of the marythes of Meotis at the noble marre towne Azoff. But Volga leaueynge the citie of Moscha towarde the South, and runnyng with a large circuite and greate wyndynges and creekes first towarde the Easte, then to the West, and lastly to the South, fauleth with a full streame into the Caspian or Hyrcan sea. Aboue the mouth of this, is a citie of the Tartars cauled Astrachan, which sum caule Astrachan, where marres are kepte by the marchauntes of Media, Armenia, and Persia. On the further banke of Volga, there is a towne of the Tartars cauled Casan, of the which the Horde of the Casanite Tartars tooke theyr name. It is distant from the mouth of Volga

The ryuer  
Ocha.

Volga.  
Mouogrodia.

Rha.

The whyte  
lakes.

The Hyphe-  
an & hyperbo-  
zean moun-  
taynes.

Tanais and  
Bozrysphenes.

The sea Eur-  
inus.

The Caspian  
sea.  
Astrachan.  
Media.  
Armenia.  
Persia.  
Casan.

the Caspian sea fyue hundred myles. Aboue Casan, xl. myles at the enterance of the ryuer Sura, Basilus that now reig-  
neth, buylded a towne cauled Surcium, to thintente that in  
those desertes, the marchauntes and traualiers which certifie  
the gouernours of the marches of the doinges of the Tartars  
and the maners of that vnquiet nation, may haue a safe man-  
tion amonge theyr customers.

The Emperours of Moscouia at dyuers tymes, cyther mo-  
ued therto by occasion of thynges presente, or for the desyre  
they had to nobilitate newe and obscure places, haue kepte  
the seate of theyr courte and Empire in dyuers citie. For  
Nouogrodia whiche lyeth towarde the Weste and the Lynon  
sea, not many yeares past, was the headde citie of Moscouia,  
& obteyned euery the chiefe dignitie by reason of the incredible  
number of houses and edifices, with the oportunitie of the  
large lake replenyshed with fysh, and also for the fame of  
the moste auncient and venerable temple whiche more then  
foure hundred yerres sence was dedicated to Sancta Sophia  
Christe the sonne of God, accordynge to the custome of the  
Emperours of Bizantium nowe cauled Constantinople. Nouo-  
grodia is oppressed in maner with continuall wynter and  
darkenesse of longe nyghtes. For it hath the pole Arctike ele-  
uate aboue the Horizon threescore and foure degrees: and is  
further from the Equinoctiall then Moscouia by almoste .vi.  
degrees. By whiche dyfference of heauen, it is sayde that at  
the soommer stepe of the soonne, it is burnt with continuall  
heate by reason of the horte nyghtes.

The citie also of Volodemaria, beinge more then twoo  
hundred myles distant from Mosca towarde the East, had  
the name of the chiefe citie and kynges towne, whither the  
seate of The Empire was translated by the valiant Emperours  
for necessarie considerations, that such ayde, furniture, and  
requisites as apperteyne to the warres myght bee neare at  
hande at suche tyme as they kepte continuall warre agaynst  
the Tartars theyr borderers. For it is situate withowt Vol-  
ga, on the bankes of the ryuer Olesma, whiche fauleth into  
Volga. But Moscha, aswell for those gyftes and commodi-  
ties whereof we haue spoken, as also that it is situate in the  
myddest of the most frequented place of all the region and Em-  
pire, and defended with the ryuer and Castell, hath in compar-

T C C. i.

ryon

Sura.  
Suriium.

Nouogrodia.

The temple  
of Sancta  
Sophia.The eleuatio  
of the pole at  
Nouogrodia,  
& Moscouia.heate by rea-  
son of short  
nyghtes.The citie of  
VolodemariaThe citie of  
Moscha.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

**Oroferis.**  
**Volga.**

**Riga.**

**The citie of**  
**Plescoua.**

**The citie of**  
**Lubeke.**

**Frome Rome**  
**to Moscoua.**

**Wynter tra-**  
**uayle by ice &**  
**snowe.**

**Mary shes in**  
**summer.**

**Other writ-**  
**ters denye**  
**this.**

ryson to other cities byn thowght moſte woorthy to bee eſteemed for the chiefe. **Moscha** is diſtant from **Rouogrodia** ſiue hundred myles: and almoſt in the mydd way is the citie of **Oroferis** (otherwyſe cauled **Othier** or **Tuuer**) bypon the ryuer of **Volga**. This ryuer neare vnto the fountaynes and ſpringes of the ſame, not yet increased by receauyng ſo many other ryuers, runneth but ſlowely and gently: And paſſeth from thence to **Rouogrodia** through many wooddes and deſolate playnes. Furthermoze frome **Rouogrodia** to **Riga** the net te pozte of the **Sarmatian** ſea, is the iornay of a thouſand myles lytle moze or leſſe: This tracte is thoughte to bee moze commodious then the other, bycauſe it hath manye towneſes and the citie of **Pleſcoua** in the waye, beinge imbraced with two ryuers. From **Riga** (percepyng to the dominion of the greate maſter of the warres of the **Lithons**) to the citie of **Lubeke** a pozte of **Bermame** in the goulfe of **Symblica Cherſoneſus** (nowe cauled **Denmarke**) are numbered aboute a thouſande myles of daungerous ſaylpyng.

From **Rome** to the citie of **Moscha**, the diſtance is knowne to bee two thouſande and ſyre hundred myles by the neareſt way paſſyng by **Raenna**, **Taruſium**, the **Alpes of Carnica**: **Allo Villacum**, **Moicum**, and **Vienna of Panonie**: and from thence (paſſyng ouer the ryuer of **Darubius**) to **Ormutium** of the **Marouians** and to **Tracouia** the chiefe citie of **Polonie**, are coumpted. xi. hundred myles. From **Tracouia** to **Vilna** the headde citie of **Lithuania**, are coumpted ſiue hundred myles: and as many from that citie to **Smolenzko** ſituate beyonde **Bozyſhenes**, from whence to **Moscha** are coumpted ſyre hundred myles. The iorneye frome **Vilna** by **Smolenzko** to **Moscha**, is trauayled in wynter with expedite ſteades and incredible celeritie bypon the ſnowes hardened with longe froſte and compacte lyke **Ile** by reaſon of muche wearyng. But in ſommer, the playnes can not bee ouerpaſſed but by difficulte and laborious trauayle. For when the ſnowes by the continuall heate of the ſoonne begyn to melte and diſſolue, they cauſe greate maryſhes and quampyes able to intangle bothe horſe and man, were it not that wayes are made throwgh the ſame with bydges and cauſeys of wood, and almoſt infinite labour.

In all the region of **Moscouia**, there is no bayne or mine of

of golde or syluer, or any other common metall excepte iron: neyther yet is there any token of precious stones. And therefore they bye all those thynges of straungers. Neuerthelesse, this inuice of nature is recompensed with abundaunce of rich furies, whose price by the wanton niscence of men is growne to such exccesse that the furies perceivinge to one sorte of apparel, are nowe soude for a thousande crownes. But the tyme hath byn that hese haue byn bought better chepe when the furthest nations of the north beinge ignorant of ower nysse finenesse and breathyng desyre toward effeminate and superfluous pleasures, exchanged the same with muche simplicitie often tymes for tryales and thynges of smaule value: In so muche that commonly the Hermians and Beccrians, were accustomed to gyue so many skynnes of Sables for an Iren axe or hatchet as beinge tyed harde together, the marchantes of Moscouia coulde drawe through the hole where the harte or handyll entereth into the same. But the Moscouites sende into all partes of Europe the best kynde of hare to make lynnen clothe, and hempe for ropes: Also many oxe hydes, and exceedinge great maies of ware.

They proudly denye that the Romane church obteyneth the principate and preeminent autoritie of all other.

They so abhorre the nation of the Jewes, that they detest the memorie of them, and wyll in no condition admitt them to dwell within theyr dominions: esteeming them as wycked and mischeuous people that haue of late tawght the Turkes to make gunnes. Besyde the bookes that they haue of the ancient Greeke doctours, they haue also the commentaries and homelies of saynt Ambrose, Augustine, Jerome, and Gregorie, translated into the Illirian or Slaun tongue whiche agreeeth with theyrs. For they vse bothe the Slaun tongue and letters, as doo also the Slauns, Dalmates, Bohemes, Polonses, and Lithuanes. This tongue is spredde further then any other at this day. For it is familiar at Constantinople in the court of the Emperours of the Turkes: and was of late harde in Egypte amonge the Mamalukes in the court of the Slaue of Alayre otherwyse called Scamphis or Babylon in Egypte. A greate number of bookes of holy scripture are translated into this tongue by thynndred of saynt Hierome and Tytilus. Furthermore, besyde the hydropies of

Rich furies.

The price of furies.

How many fables skynnes for an axe.

Flax.  
Oxe hydes,  
ware.

Thei abhorre the Jewes.

Their bokes and religion.

The Slaun tongue spread further then any other.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

Saynte Jor-  
gins was  
borne in Icol-  
mans howe  
couled *Accla-*  
*uonia.*

howe they  
number the  
yeares.

Fewe and  
simple lawes

The exercise  
of youth.

Shootinge.

The corpora-  
ture of the  
Moscowites.

Their fare.

they alone countreys, they haue also booke conteynyng the factes of great Alexander and the Romane Emperours, and lyke wyse of Marcus Antonius and Cleopatra. They haue no manner of knowlege of philosophie, Astronomie, or speculatiue phisicke with other liberall sciences: But such are taken for phisicians as professe that they haue often times obserued the vertue and qualite of sum vnknoen herbe.

They number the yeares, not from the byrth of Chryste, but from the begynnynge of the worlde. And this they begin to accounte, not from the monethe of Ianuary, but from September.

They haue fewe and simple lawes throughte owte all the kyngedome, made by the equite and conscience of thei prynces, and approued by the consent of wyse and good men: and are therfore greatly for the welthe and quyetnesse of the people forasmuch as it is not lawfull to peruerue them with any interpretations or cauillations of lawyers or attorneys. They punyssh theues, rouners, priuie pychers, and murtherers. When they examine malefactours, they poure a great quantitie of coulde water vpon suche as they suspecte, whiche they say to bee an intollerable kynde of torment. But sum tymes they manacle suche as are skoborne, and wyl not confesse apparent crymes.

Thei youth is exercised in dyuers kyndes of games and plays rescmbelng the warres, whereby they both practyse pollicie and increase thei strength. They vse runnyng both on horsebacke and afoote. Also runnyng at the rylte, wrestlyng, and especially shootynge. For they gyue rewardes to suche as excell therein.

The Moscovites are vniuersally of meane stature, yet very square set and myghtyly braced. They haue al grey eyes longe beardes, shorte legges, and bygge bellies. They ryde very shorte, and shote backwarde very cunnyngely euen as they lye. At home in thei houses, thei fare is rather plentiful then depntie. For thei tables are furnyshed for a smaule prce with all suche kyndes of meates as may bee desyzed of such as are gyue to most excessive gluttony. Hennes and duckes are bought for lytle syluer penie the pece. There is incredible plentie of beastes and cattayle bothe greate and smaule. The fleshe of biefe that is kylled in the myddeste of wynter,

wynter, is so congeled and frozen, that it putrifiethe not for the space of two moonethes. Theyr beste and moste delicate dyshes, are gotten by huntynge and hawkynge as with vs. For they take all sortes of wyld beastes with houndes and dyuers kyndes of nettes. And with falcons and cerues or eagles of a marueylous kynde whiche the region of Secerra byngeth furth vnto them, they take not only felines and wyld ducks, but also cranes and wyld swannes. They take also a foule of darke coloure abowte the byggenes of a goose with redde ouerbrowes, whose fleshe in taste passeth the pleasauntnesse of pheasauntes. These in the Moscouites tounge are cauled Tetrao, whiche I suppose to bee the same that Plinie cauleth Erybratao, knowne to the people of the Alpes, and especially to the Aherians which inhabite the laundes abowte the springes of the ryuer Abdua. The ryuer of Wolga minisreth vnto them great fyshes and of pleasaunte taste: especially surgions or rather a kynde of fysh lyke vnto surgions: whiche in the wynter season beinge inclosed in Ice, are longe reserved freshe and incorrupte. Of other kyndes of fyshes, they take in maner an incredible multitude in the whyte lakes whereof we haue spoken before. And wher as they utterly lacke natue wyne, they vse suche as are brought from other places. And this only in certeyne feastes and holy misteries. Especially the pleasaunte Maluastie of the Island of Ereta now cauled Candy, are had in moste honoure: and used eyther as medicens or for a shewe of excellen aboundaunce, forasmuche as it is in maner a miracle that wyne brought from Candy by the strenghtes of Hercules pillers and the Islandes of Bades, & tossed with such fuddes of the inclosed Ocean, shulde be dronke amonge the Scythian snowes in theyr native puritie and pleasauntnesse.

The common people drinke mede made of hony & hoppes sodden together, whiche they keepe longe in pyched barrells wher the goodnes increaseth with age. They vse also beere and ale as doo the Bermans and Polones. They are accustomed for delicatesse in sommer to coole theyr beere and mede with putrynge Ice therin, whiche the noble men reserve in theyr cellars in great quantite for the same purpose. Summe there are that delyte greatly in the iuse that is pressed owte of cherries before they bee full ripe: whiche they asseyme to haue

fleshe preserued longe by reason of coule. hawkynge and huntynge.

plentie of fysh.

fysh longe reserved in Ice.

wyne.

maluastie.

All the north parte of the firme lande was called Scythia and the people Scythians.

Drynke cooled with Ice.

wyne of cherries.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

haue the colour of cleare and ruddy wyne with a verie pleasant taste.

Their women.

Their wyues and women, are not with them in suche honour as they are in other nations. For they vse them in manner in the place of seruantes. The noble men and gentelmen, doo diligently obserue theyr walkes and haue an eye to their chastitie. They are seldom bydden furth to any feastes, neither are permitted to resorte to churches farre of, or to walke abroad without sum greate consideration. But the common sorte of women, are easily and for a smaule price, allured to lecherie euen of strangers: by reason wherof, the gentelmen doo lyttle or nothing esteeme them.

Thomas Paleologus.

John the father of kynge Basilus dyed more then .xx. yeares sence. He maryed Sophia the doughter of Thomas Paleologus who reigned farre in Beloponneus (now called Mozea) and was brother to the Emperoure of constantinople. Shee was then at Rome when Thomas her father was dyuen oute of Grecia by the Turckes. Of her were fyue chyldren borne, as Basilus hym selfe, George, Demetrius, Symeon, and Andreas. Basilus tooke to wyfe Salomonie the doughter of George Soboroniuss a man of singular fidelitie and wysdome & one of hys counsaile. The excellent vertues of which woman, only barrenesse obscured.

How the princes chuse theyr wyues.

When the prynces of Moscouia delibarat to marie, theyr custome is to haue choyse of all the vyrgynes in the realme, & to chuse suche as are of most fayre and bewtyfull bylage and personage with maners & vertues accordyng, to bee browghe before them. Which afterwarde they committe to certayne faythful men and graue matrones to bee furder viewed, in so muche that they leaue no parte of them vnserched. Of these, theye whome the pryncer moste lyketh, is pronounced worthy to bee hys wyfe, not without greate and carefull expectation of theyr parentes, luyng for that tyme betwene hope and feare. The other vyrgyns also which stood in election and contended in bewty and integritie of maners, are often tynys the same day to gratyfye the pryncer, maryed to hys noble men, gentelmen, and capytaynes: wherby it surpyses commeth to passe that whyle the prynces contemne the lynage of totall descente, suche as are borne of humble parentage, are craided to the degree of princely estate, In lyke maner as the Emperours

counts of the turkes were accustomed to bee chosen by cunly:  
ness of personage and warly prowes.

Basilus was under chage of forty and seven yeares, of  
cunly personage, singuler vertue, and princely qualities, by  
all meanes sudypus for the prosperitie and commodities of  
hys subiectes. Furthermoze in beneuolence, lyberalitie and  
good successe in hys daynges, to bee preferred before his pro-  
genitours. For when he hadde. vi. yeares kepte warre with  
the Tynons that moued. lxxii. confederate cities to the cause  
of that warre, he obteyned the victorie and departed with  
fewe conditions of peace rather gyuen then accepted. Also  
at the begynnyng of his reigne, he put the Polones to flight  
and tooke prisoner Constantine the capitayne of the Ruthens  
whom he brought to Moscouia tyed in chaynes. But shortly  
after at the tyuer Bozishenes aboue the cite of Orsa, he  
hym selfe was ouercome in a great battayle by the same Con-  
stantine whom he hadde dismissed: yet so, that the towne of  
Smolenzko whiche the Moscouites possessed before and was  
neare woonne by the Polens, coulde styll pertyne to the do-  
minions of Basilus. But agaynst the Tartars, and especy-  
ally the Tartars of Europe called the Paccopites, the Mos-  
couites haue often tymes kepte warre with good successe, in  
revenge of thynuries doote to them by theyr incursions.

Basilus is accustomed to hyng to the fild more then  
a hundred and fiftie thousande horsemen deuided into thre  
bandes and folowynge the banners or ensignes of theyr ca-  
pitaynes in order of battayle. On the banner of the kynges  
wyng, is figured the image of Josue the capitaine of the He-  
bryshes at whose prayer the soonne prolonged the daye and  
steyde his course as wytnesse the hystories of holpe scripture.  
Armies of footemen are in maner to no ble in those great wy-  
dernesses; as wel for theyr apparel beinge loose and longe, as  
also for the custome of theyr enemies, who in theyr warres  
truste rather to the swyftnesse of theyr lyght horses then to  
trye the matter in a pyght fyeelde.

Theyr horses are of lesse then meane stature: but verye  
stronge and swyfte. Theyr horsemen are armed with pykes,  
ryuettes, mases of yren and arrowes. Fewe haue hooked  
swoordes. Theyr bodies are defended with rounde targets  
after the maner of the Turkes of Asia: or with bendyng and  
coguardes

Duke Basilus.

war betwene  
the Polones  
and Moscouites.

war betwene  
the Moscouites  
and Tartars.

The moscouites  
army.  
Their banner.

Their horses  
and horsemen.

Their ar-  
mure.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

**Hargabush-  
ers.**

**Sunnes.**

**The prince  
dyneth open-  
ly.**

**Sigismundus  
sayth that  
much of this  
is golde.**

**The custodie  
of the cite.**

**The dukes  
court.**

**Souldyers  
wages of the  
common trea-  
sury.**

Coynarde targettes after the maner of the Greeces: Also whiche  
coates of mayle, byganynges, and sharpe helmerres. Basili-  
us dyd furthermore inspyte a band of hargabushiers on hors  
backe: and caused many greate brasse pieces to bee made by  
the woorkemanshype of certeyne Italyans: and the same with  
theyr stockes & wheeles to bee placed in the castell of Mosca.

The kynge hym selfe with pynctely magnyfyceunce & syn-  
guler familiaritie (wherewith neuerthelesse no parte of the ma-  
iestie of a kynge is byolare) is accustomed to dyne openly with  
hys noble men and straunge ambassadours in hys owne cham-  
ber of presence where is scene A meruelous quantite of syl-  
uer and gyfte plate standynge hypon two great and high cub-  
bardes in the same chamber. He hath not abowte hym any  
other garde for the custodie of hys person saunge only hys  
accustomed famylie. For watche and warde is dyligently  
kepte of the faythfull myltitude of the citisens: In so muche  
that euery warde or quarter of the cite is inclosed with gates  
rayles, and barres: neyther is it lawfull for any man rashely  
to walke in the cite in the nyght, or without lyght. All the  
courte consisteth of noble men, gentelmen, and choyse souldy-  
ers which are cauled olde of euery regyon by theyr towne  
and byllagies, and commaunded to wayte course by course at  
certeyne moonethes appoynted. Furthermore when warre  
is proclaymed, all the armie is collected bothe of the owlde  
souldiers and by musterynge of newe in all prouynces. For  
the lieutenantes and capytaynes of the armie, are accus-  
tomed in all citie to muster the youth, and to admytte to thoz-  
der of souldyers such as they thynke able to serue the tyme.  
Theyr wages is payde them of the common treasure of eue-  
ry prouynce which is gathered and partely payde also in the  
tyme of peace although it bee but lytle. But such as are assign-  
ed to the warres, are free from all tributes, and inioye cer-  
tein other priuilegies wherby they may the more gladly & cher-  
fully serue theyr kynge and defend theyr contrey. For in the  
tyme of warre, occasyon is mynystred to shewe trewe vertue  
and manhodde, where in so greate and necessarie an instituz-  
on, euery man accordynge to hys approued actiuite and in-  
genyous forwardnesse, may obteyne the fortune eyther of per-  
petuall honoure or ignominie,

Vix olim illa fides referentibus horrida regna  
 Moschorum, & Ponti, res glacialis erat.  
 Nunc Iouio autore, illi oculis lustramus, et vrbes,  
 Et nemora, et montes cernimus et fluuios.  
 Moschouia, monumenta Ioui, tua culturaeuoluens,  
 Cæpi alios mundos credere Democriti.

**C** Other notable thynges as concernynge Moscouia:  
 gathered out of the bookes of Sigismundus Li-  
 berus. Note that when he sayth  
 myles, he meaneth leagues.



From whence Russia had the name, there are  
 dyuers opinions. Some thynke that it was  
 so named of one Rustus the sonne or neie  
 of Iech the kynge of the Polons. Other af-  
 firme that it was so cauled of a cerreyne  
 olde coloure named Rustus not farre frome  
 Rouogozoda or Rouogardia the more.

Russia.

Some also thynke that it was so cauled of the browne colour  
 of the nation. But the Moscouians confute al these opinions  
 as vntrewe: Affirmyng that this nation was in olde tyme  
 cauled Rosseia as a nation dispersed, as the name it selfe  
 dooth declare. For Rosseia in the Ruthens tounge, doothe  
 signifie dispersed or scattered. The which thyng to be trew,  
 dyuers other people commyxt with thishabitauntes, and dy-  
 uers prouinces lying here and there betwene dyuers partes  
 of Russia doo playnely declare. But whensoeuer they  
 tooke theyr name, doubtesse all the people that vse the Sla-  
 uon tounge, and professe the fayth of Christ after the maner  
 of the Grekes, (cauled in theyr common language Russi, and  
 in the Latin tounge Rutheni) are increased to suche a multy-  
 tude that they haue eyther expelled all the nations that lye  
 betwene them, or drawne them to theyr maner of lyuynge, in  
 somuche that they are now cauled all Rutheni by one com-  
 mon name.

The browne  
 colour of the  
 Russes.

Rosseia.

The Slauon  
 tounge spee-  
 d. ly farre.

Furthermoze the Slauon tounge (whiche at this daye is  
 somewhat corruptly cauled Sclauon) runneth exceedyng far,  
 as vnto the Dalmates, Bosnianer, Croatians, Istrians,  
 DDD D, 1, and

## Moscouia and Cathay.

and by a longe tracte of the sea Adriatique vnto Forum Julii : Of the Carnians also whome the Venerians caule Charlos : and lyke wyse of the Carniolans and Carinthians vnto the ryuer Drauis : furthermoze of the Styrrians within Bregzium and by Quera vnto Danubius and from thence of the Myrians, Seruians, Bulgarians, and other inhabitynge euen vnto Constantinople : furthermoze of the Bohemians, Aufarians, Silesians, Morauians, and thynhabitauntes neare vnto the ryuer Vagus in the kyngedome of Hungarie : The Polons also and the Ruthenians whose Empire reacheth very farre : lyke wyse the Circasians and Quinquemontanians vnto Pontus : and is from thence vled in the north partes of Germanie amonge the remanent of the Wandales inhabitynge here and there. All whiche nations althowgh they acknowledge them selues to bee Sclauons, yet the Germanys taking the denomination only of the Wandales, caule al the that vled the Slaun tongue, Quenden, Quinden, or Quindyn.

Wandales.

The princes  
of Russia.

Of the Princes that now reigne in Russia, the chiefe is the great Duke of Moscouia who possesseth the greatest parte therof. The seconde is the great duke of Lithuania : and the thyrde the kyng of Polonie, who now obteyneth the domination of Polonie and Lithuania.

The duke of  
Moscouia.

In auctoritie and dominion ouer his subiectes, the prince of Moscouie passeth all the monarches of the worlde. For he deprieth all his noble men and gentelmen of al theyr holdes and munitions at his pleasure. He trusteth not his owne brotherne, but oppresseth all with lyke seruitude. In so muche that whome so euer he commaundeth eyther to remaine with hym in the court, or to goo to the warres, or sendeth on ambassage, they are compelled to bee at theyr owne charges, excepte the younge gentelmen the soonnes of the Boiatons, that is, the noble men of the lowest degree. He vsurpeth this auctoritie as well ouer the spiritualtie as the temporaltie : constitutynge what hym listeth of the goods and lyfe of al men. Of his counsilers there is not one that dare dissent from hym in any thyng. They openly confesse that the wyll of the prince is the wyll of god : and therfore caule hym the key bearer and chamberlen of god, and beleue him to bee the executoz of gods wyll. By reason wherof, the prince hym selfe when any petition is made to hym for the deliuerie of any aprise, is accustomed

accustomed to aunswere: When god commaundeth he shalbe deliuered. Likewise when any asketh a question of an vncerteyne or doubtfull thyng, theyr custome is to aunswere thus: God knoweth and the greate prince. It is vncerteyne whether the crueltie and fiercenes of the nation doo requyre so tyrannous a prince, or whether by the tyranny of the prince, the nation is made so fierce and cruell.

Basilus the sonne of John, was the fyrst that tooke bypon hym the name and title of a kynge in this maner: The great lord Basilus, by the grace of god kynge and lord of all Russia and the greate duke of Anolodimaria, Moscouia, Rouogardia. &c.

Furthermore, whereas now this prince is cauled an Emperour, I haue thought good to shewe the tytle and cause of this errour. Note therfore that Czar in the Ruthens tounge signifieth a kynge, whereas in the language of the Slauns, Polons, Bohemes, and other, the same woorde Czar, signifieth Cesar by whiche name Theemperours haue byn commonly cauled. For bothe they and the Slauns that are vnder the kyngdome of Hungarie, caule a kynge by an other name: as sum Cral, other Kyral, and sum Kozoll: but thinke that only an Emperoure is cauled Czar. Whereby it came to passe that the Ruthens or Moscouite interpreterours hearinge theyr prince to bee so cauled of straunge nations, began them selues also to name hym an Emperour, and thinke the name of Czar to bee more worthy then the name of a kynge, although they signifie all one thyng. But who so wyl reade all theyr histories and bookes of holy scripture, shall fynde that a kynge is cauled Czar, and an Emperour Kellar. By the lyke erroure Theemperour of the Turkes is cauled Czar, who neuertheless of antiquitie vsed no hygher tytle then the name of a kynge, expressed by this woorde Czar. And hereof the Turkes of Europe that vse the Slaun tounge, caule the cite of Constantinople Czargrad, (that is) the kynes cite.

Sum caule the prince of Moscouie the whyte kynge, whiche I thinke to procede of the whyte cappes, or other tytlemences they beare on theyr heades, lyke as they caule the kynge of Persia Kishpaula (that is) redde headde. He vseth the tytle of a kynge when he writeth or sendeth to Rome, the Emperour, the pope, the kynge of Sicilia and Denmarke, the

DDDD, ii.

greate

why the duke  
of Moscouia  
was cauled  
an Emperour

The greate  
Turke.

The whyte  
kynge.

The duke of  
Moscouia his  
tytle.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

greate master of Russia and Liouia, and also to the greate Turke as I haue byn credably informed: but he is not cauled kynge of any of them, excepte perhappes of the Liouins. Yet by reason of his later conquestes, sum haue thought hym worthy the name of a kynge or rather of an Emperour bycause he hath kynges vnder his Empire.

To the kynge of Polone, he bleth this cytle: The greate lord Basilus by the grace of god, lord of all Russia, and greate duke of Vuolodimeria, Moscouia, Nouogardia, &c. leaunge owte the cytle of a kynge. For none of them vouches safely to receaue the letters of the other augmented with any newe cytle, as I knewe by experience at my being in Moscouia, at which tyme Sigismundus the kynge of Polone sente hym his letters augmented with the cytle of the duke of Masouia, wherewith he was not a lyttle offended.

They glozie in theyr histories that befoze Vuolodimeria and Olha, the lande of Russia was baptised and blessed of saynt Andrewe thapostle of Chryst, assumpnge that he came from Grecia to the mouthes of the ryuer Borysthenes: and that he sayled vpp the ryuer to the mountaynes wherre as is nowe Chiouia: and that there he blessed all the lande and placed his crosse, prophesyinge also that the grace of god shulde bee greate there, and that there shulde bee many churches of Chrystian men: Lykewyse that he afterwarde came to the springes of Borysthenes vnto the great lake Vuolok, and by the ryuer Louat descended into the lake Ilmer: from whence by the ryuer Vuolcon whiche runneth owte of the same lake, he came to Nouogardia: and passed frome thence by the same ryuer to the lake Ladoga and the ryuer Dena, and so vnto the sea whiche they caule Quarezkoia, beinge the same that we caule the Germanye sea, betwene Quinlandia or Finlandia and Liouia, by the whiche he sayled to Rome, and was at the laste crucified for Chryste his gospel in Peloponnesus by the tyranny of Agus Antipater, as theyr crownacles make mention.

The Moscouites warres

The prince euery seconde or thyrde yere, causeth a muster to bee taken of the soornes of the Boiarons, and taketh an accompte bothe of theyr number and howe many horses and men euery of them is able to make: and then appoynteth a cetyrne

a certeyne stypende to suche as are able further to beare theyr owne charges in the warres. They haue seldome any rest or quyetnesse. For they eyther keepe warre with the Lithuanians, Linonians, Suetians, or Tartars of Casan. Or yf it so chaunce that the prynce keepe no warre, yet dooth he yeaue by appoynte garrisons of. xx. thousande menne in places about Tanais and Occa to represse the incursions and robberyes of the European Tartars cauled Hecopites.

As in other matters, euen so in the order of warrefare there is great diuersitie amonge men. For the Moscouian as soone as he begynneth to sype, thinketh of none other succour but putterh all his confidence therein. Beinge pursued or taken of his enemye, he neyther defenderh him selfe nor desireth pardon.

Dyers manners of dyuers people in the warre.

The Tartar cast of from his horse, spoyled of al his armure & weapons, and also soze wounded, defenderh hym selfe with handes, feete, and teethe, and by all meanes he may, vntyll his strength and spirite fayle hym.

The Turke, when he seeth hym selfe destitute of all helpe and hope to escape, doth humbly desyre pardon, casting away his weapons & armure, and reaching furth to the victourer his handes ioyned together to be bounde, hoppyng by captiuitie to saue his lyfe.

The Moscouites in placeinge theyr armye chuse them a large playne where the best of them pytch theyr tentes & the other make the certain arbours of bowdes fyr in the grounde, bendyng together the toppes thereof, whiche they couer with theyr clokes to defende them selues, theyr bowes, arrowes, saddyles, and other theyr necessaries from rayne. They put furth theyr horses to pasture, and for that cause haue theyr tentes so farre in sunder, which they forispe neyther with cartes or trenches or any other impedymment, excepte perhappes the place bee defended by nature as with wooddes, ryuers and marishes.

The moscouites army.

It may perhappes seme straunge howe he maynteyneth hym and hys so longe with so smaule an armye as I haue sayde. I wyl notwe therefore bresely declare theyre sparynge and frugalitie. Be that hath syre or sumtymes more horses, bleseth one of them as A packe horse to beare all theyr necessaries,

howe he maynteyneth his army.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

eyes. He hath also in a bagge of two or thre spanes longe, the flour or meale of the grayne cauled mylle: and .iiii. or v. poundes weyghte of stopnes as the powdered. He hath lykemyse A bagge of salte, myrte with pepper if he bee ryche. Furthermoze euery man carryeth with hym A hatchet, A fyre bore, and a brasen porte: so that if they chaunce to comme to any place where they can fynde no frutes, garlyke, onyons or as the, they kyndle a fyre and fylle theyr portes with water wherunto they put a spoonefull of meale with a quantitie of salte, and make pottage therof, wherewith the master and all hys seruantes lyue contented. But if the master bee very hungary he eateth all alone, and the seruantes are sumtymes enforced to faste for the space of two or thre dayes. And yf the master intende to face sumwhat moze delycately, then he addeth thereto a lytle portion of stopnes as the. I speake not thys of the best of them, but of suche as are of the meane sorte. The gouernours and capytaynes of tharmye, doo sumtymes bydde the poozer sorte to theyr tables: where theye feede them selues so wel, that they fast two or thre dayes after. When they haue frutes, garlyke, and onyons, theye can well forbeare all other meates. Wheredynge forwarde to the battayle, they put moze confydence in theyr multitude, and with what greate armyes they assayle theyr enemyes, the epyther in the strengthe and valyante. He of theyr souldyers, or in well instructyng theyr armye: and sygher better as farre of, then at hande: and therefore study howe to circumuent or inclose theyr enemyes and to assayle them on the backe halfe.

Instrumente  
of warre.

They haue many trumpiters: The which whyle they blow all at once after theyr maner, make A meruelous straunge noyse. They haue also an other kynde of instrumentes which they caule Szurna. These they blowe withoute ceasyng for the space of an houre together, so temperyng the same and holdyng in the wynd whyle they drawe moze, that the noyse seemeth continuall withoute intermyssion.

The moscouites and Tartars apparel.

They vse all one maner of appareyle: as longe coates withoute pleyghes and with narrowe beaues after the maner of the Hungaryans. These the Christians vse to burthen on the ryght syde: and the Tartars (wlinge the lyke) burthen them on the lefte syde. They weare redde and hozte buskins that reache not to theyr knees: and haue the soles thereof defended

fended with plates of Iren. In maner all theyr horyes are wrought with dyuers colours aboute the necke: and haue the collars and ruffes bysette with lyttle rounde haules lyke beades, of syluer or gylted copper, and sumtyme perles also. They gyrd them selues beneath the bellye euen as lowe as theyr priuy members, that they may seme more boozely which they greatly esteeme, as doo at thys day the Spanyardes, Italyans, and Almaynes.

The prouince of Moscouia is noether very large nor frut full, forasmuche as the fertilitye is hyndered with sandye grounde which eyther with to muche drynesse or moyster kyl: leth the cozne. Furthermore the immoderate and sharpe vntemperatenesse of the ayre while the coulde of the wynter ouercommethe the heate of the soonne, sumtymes dothe not suffer the cozne to rypp. For the coulde is there sumtyme so extreme, that lyke as with vs in sommer by reason of heate, such so there by extreme coulde the yearth hath many great chynkes or breaches. Water also cast into the ayre, and spet cle faulng from ous mouthe, are frosen befoze they touche the grounde. I my selfe, when I came therher in the yeare 1526. sawe the braunches of frutefull trees wythpyzed by the coulde of the wynter befoze, which was so extreme that many of theyr wagoners or caries (whom they caule Bonecz) were founde frosen to deathe in theyr leades. There were sum that at the same tyme leadyng and dryuyng theyr cartayle from the nexte villagies to Moscouia, dyed by the way with theyr beastes through the extremyte of the coulde. Furthermore, the same yeare many players that were accustomed to wander aboute the contrey with daunfng beares, were founde dead in the high wayes. Wylde beares also inforced therto by famyn, lefte the wooddes and ranne here and there into dyuers villagies and houses: At whose commygng while the men of the countrey forsooke theyr houses and fledd into the fieldes, manye of them perpyshed throughe the vehemencie of the coulde. Agayne, it sumtymes so chaunceth that in sommer the heate is as extreme: as in the yeare 1525. in the which almost al kynds of pulle and grayne were scorched and burne: and such a derty of cozne folowed that drought, that that which befoze was bawght for thre dengas, was afterwarde soulede for .xx. or .xxx. Furthermore also, manye

The prouince  
of Moscouia,

Extreme  
coulde.

Extreme  
heate in cold  
regions.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

nye billagies, wooddes, and stacks of corne, were sette on fyre by thextreame heate: The smoke wherof so fylled the regyon, that the eyes of many were soze hurte therby. There arose also as it were a darke and thycke myst without smoke which so molested the eys, that many losse theyr sight therby.

They soze and marylle the seades of melons with great diligence in certeyne raypled beddes mytte with doonge: wher by they fynde a remedy both ageynst extream cold and heat. For if the heate excede, they make certeyne ryftes in the beddes as it were breathyng places lest the seades shulde be suffocate with to muche heate. And if the cold be extreme it is tempered with the heate of the mucke or dunge.

Little  
beastes.

Theyr beastes are muche lesse then ours: yet not all without hornes as one hath written. For I haue there sene oxen, kyne, goates, and rammes all with hornes.

The cite of  
Moscouia or  
Mosca.

Not farre from the cite of Moscha, are certeyne monasteries which a farre off, seeme lyke vnto a cite. They saye that in this cite is an incredible number of houses: And that the fyrte yeare befoze my commynge thither, the prince caused them to be numbered, and founde them to be more then one and fortye thousande and fyue hundred houses. The cite is very large and wyde: and also very stabby and myrie. By reason wherof it hath many byddges and causeys.

Holsome  
ayr.

The ayre of the regyon is so holsome, that beyond the springes of Tanais, especially towarde the north and a great parte also towarde the East, the pestylence hath not byne harde of sence the memozye of man. yet haue they sumtimes a disease in theyr bowells and headdes not much vnylike the pestylence. This disease they caule a heate: wherwith suche as are taken, dye within fewe dayes.

A ryche  
pople.

Sum wyte that John the duke of Moscouia and sonne of Basilus, vnder the pretence of religion sacked & spoyled, the cite of Nouogardia: and caried with hym from thence to Moscouia thre hundredth leades laden with golde, syluer, and precious stones of the gooddes of the Archebyschoppe, the marchauntes, citisins, and straungiers.

The land of  
Solowki.

Solowki is an Ilande situate in the north sea. fiftie leagues from the continent betwene Dwina and the province of Corela. Howe farre it is dystant from Moscouia, can not be well knowne by reason of manys fennes, marishes, wooddes,

Wooddes, and desolate places lye in the way. Albeit, they say that it is not three hundred leagues from Moscouia, & two hundred from Bieloiesero. In this lande is made greate plenty of salte: and it hath in it a monasterie into the which it is not lawfull for any woman or birgyn to enter. There is also great spythynge for hearpyng. They say that here the sonne at the sommer Equinoctiall, shyneth continually excepte two houres.

Bieloiesero.

The lengthe of the day.

Demetriowe, is a citie with a castell, distant from Moscouia xii. leagues declining from the west somewhat toward the north. By this runneth the ryuer Iachoma that runneth in to the ryuer of Selt. Selt also receaueth the ryuer Dubna which unladerh it selfe in Volga. And by the commoditie of thus many ryuers, many riche marchaundies are brought without great labour or difficultie from the caspian sea by the ryuer Volga to Moscouia and byuers other prouinces & cities abowre the same.

The trade from Moscouia to the Caspian sea.

Bieloiesero, a citie with a castell, is situat at a lake of the same name. For Bieloiesero in the Moscouites tounge, signifieth a white lake. The citie standeth not in the lake as sum haue sayd. yet is it so enuironed with marshes that it may seeme to be inerpugnabile: In consideration wherof, the princes of Moscouia are accustomed to keepe theyr treasure there. Bieloiesero is from Moscouia, a hundred leagues, and as much from Pouogardia the great. The lake it selfe, is xii. leagues in length and as much in breadth: and hath (as they say) three hundred ryuers faulynge into it. The inhabitants of this place, haue a peculiyar language, although nowe in maner all speake the Moscouites tounge. The longest day here in the sommer Equinoctiall, is sayde to consyste of xix. houres. A man of greate name and credite toulde me, that at the begynnyng of the sprynge when the trees began nowe to bee greene, he wente in poste from Moscouia to Bieloiesero: And passynge ouer the ryuer Volga, founde the region there so covered with Ice and snow, that he was fayne to dispatch the residue of his iorney on sledges. And although the winter bee longer there, yet doo the frutes wake ripe and atygathered euen at the same tyme that they are in Moscouia. With in an arrowe shotte of the lake, there is an other lake that byyngeth forth bymstane, which a certē ryuer running out of

Bieloiesero or the whyte lakes.

Winterlike of temperamene in small bystance.

A lake of bymstone.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

the same, carryeth with it in great quantitie flooyng aboute the water lyke a scoomme. yet through the ignorance of the people, they haue no commoditie thereby.

The people that inhabite the regions lyinge farre north and east from Moscouia, exchange theyr furrer for apparel, knyues, needles, spoones, hatchets, and suche other necessa-  
*Exchange of furrer for other ware.* re wares. For they haue not the vse of golde and syluer.

**T**he description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lyinge North and East from Moscouia: As the way from Moscouia to the ryuer Perzora, and the prouince of Jugacia, or Iubra: And from thence to the ryuer Obi. Ipkewyle the description of other countreys and regions, euen vnto the Empire of the greace Cham of Cathay.

*The dominion of the duke of Moscouia.*

*Uolochda.  
werste.  
Uing.*



The dominion of the Prince of Moscouia reacheth farre towards the East and north vnto the places which we wyll nowe describe. As concernynge whiche thyng, I translated a booke that was presented vnto me in the Moscouitres tounge, and haue heere made a bypese recheafall of the same. I wyll fyrst therfore describe the iorney from Moscouia to Perzora, and so to Jugacia and Obi.

From Moscouia to the citie of Uolochda, are numbered fyftie Werstes, one Werst conteynynge almoste the space of an Italian myle. From Uolochda to Uising towards the righte hande descendynge with the course of the ryuer of Uolochda and Suchana with whom it ioyneth, are coumpred fyue hundredeth Werstes: where within two Werstes of the towne called Strelze and hard by the citie of Uising Suchana ioyneth. Jug which runneth from the south: from whose mouth vnto the springes of the same, are numbered fyue hundredeth Werstes.

Note that wheras here before the auctour numbereth but fyftie werstes from Moscouia to Uolochda, it semeth that the place is corrupted by the printers mistakyng one worde for an other, as Quinquaginta, which is fyftie, for Quingenta, which is fyue hundredeth. For the distance is no lesse from Moscouia to Uolochda, then is fro Uolochda to Uising, which is fyue hundred werstes.

But

But Suchana and Jug after they ioine together, lose thei  
 fyrst names and make bothe one ryuer named Dwina, by the  
 whiche the passage to the cite of Colmogor conceynerh fyue  
 hundredeth Werstes: from whence in the space of fyre dayes  
 iorney, Dwina entereth into the north Ocean at vi. mouthes,  
 And the greatestte parte of this iorney consisteth by nauigati:  
 on. For by lande, from Quolochda vnto Colmogor, passing  
 ouer the ryuer Quaga, are a thousande Werstes. Not farre  
 from Colmogor, the ryuer Pienega runnyng from the East  
 on the ryght hande for the space of seuen hundredeth Werstes,  
 fauleth into Dwina. From Dwina by the ryuer Pienega by  
 the space of two hundredeth Werstes, they coome to a place cau:  
 led Nicolai: from whence within halfe a werst, they haue  
 passage into the ryuer Kuluo, which hath his original from  
 a lake of the same name towarde the north, from whose sprin:  
 ges is. viii. dayes vyage to the mouth of the same where it  
 entereth into the Ocean.

Saylunge by the coastes of the ryght hande the sea, they  
 passe by the regions of Stanuwische, Calunczsch, and Apnu.  
 And saylunge about the promontorie or cape of Thorogofki  
 Rosz, Stanuwische, Laniench, and Tolsickh, they come  
 at the length into the ryuer Wexen, and from thence in the  
 space of fyre dayes to a byllage of the same name, standyng in  
 the mouth of the ryuer Pieza: by the which againe ascendyng  
 towarde the lefte hande and soomer East, they come to the  
 ryuer Piescova. From whence saylunge for the space of fyue  
 Werstes, they coomme into two lakes in the whiche are seene  
 two wayes: wherof one on the ryght syde, goeth to the ryuer  
 Rubicho, by the which they passe to the ryuer Circho. Other  
 by an other and shorter way, byng they shippes from the  
 lake directly into Circho: from whence, except they be hyn:  
 dered by tempest, they coomme in the space of three weekes  
 to the ryuer and mouth of Csilma, flowyng into the great ry:  
 uer Perzora, which in that place is two Werstes in breadthe.  
 Sayluyng from hence, they coomme in the space of fyre dayes  
 to the towne and castell of Pustoofero, neare vnto the which,  
 Perzora entereth into the north Ocean at fyre mouthes. The  
 inhabitants of this place, are men of simple wytt. They  
 receaued the fayth of Chryste, and were baptised in the yere  
 M. D. xviii.

Suchana.  
 Jug.  
 Colmogor.  
 Dwina.

Pienega.  
 Nicolai.

Kuluo.

The regions  
 by the North  
 sea.

Pieza.

Piescova.

Rubicho.

Circho.

Csilma.  
 Perzora.

Pustoofero.

Ura.

Singulus  
mundi.

Stzuchogora.

Potscherie-  
ma.

Camenipoias.

Samoged.

Foules and  
beastes.

Wylde people.

Poiassa.

Camen.  
Artawischa.  
Sibut.  
Lepin.Sossa.  
Ob.  
Kutaisko.

Quogolici.

from the mouth of Uralma unto the mouth of the ryuer Ura, goinge by Detzora, is one monethes wyage. Ura hath his springes in the mountayne Hoyas Semmoi, being on the left hande towarde the sommer East, and springeth oute of a great stone of the same mountayne, cauled Lamen. Woffchoi. From the springes of Ura to the mouthes of the same, are numbered more then a thousande Weekes. Furthermoze Detzora runneth from this south wynter parte, from whence ascendynge from the mouthes of Ura unto the mouthes of the ryuer Stzuchogora, is three weekes wyage. They that described this wyage, sayde that they rested betwene the mouthes of the ryuers of Stzuchogora and Potscherienma; and left they byttayles there whiche they brought with them from Russia. Beyond the ryuers of Detzora and Stzuchogora towarde the mountayne Camenipoias and the sea with the Ilandes there abowte and the castell of Hudoosero, are dyuers and innumerable nations whiche by one common name are cauled Samoged (that is) such as eat the fleshes. They haue great increate of foules, byrdes, & dyuers kyndes of beastes: as Sables, Martenes, Beuers, Otters, Hermelines, Squerels: and in the Ocean the beaste cauled Moys: Also Well, wyre beares, moolfes, hares, Aquwoodyant, great whales, and a fyfthe cauled Semfi, with dyuers other. The people of these nations, come not to Moscouia. For they are wylde, and kepe the company & societie of other men.

From the mouthes of Stzuchogora saylynge by the ryuer unto Poiassa, Artawischa, Lamen, and Poiassa the greater, is three weekes wyage. Furthermoze the ascendynge to the mounte Lamen, is thre dayes iorney: from the whiche, descendynge, they come to the ryuer Artawischa, and from thence to the ryuer Sibut, from whence they passe to the castell of Lepin, and from Lepin to the ryuer Sossa. The people that inhabite the region by this ryuer, are cauled Quogolici. Leaynge Sossa on the ryght hande, they come to the greete ryuer Ob, that springeth out of the lake Kutaisko, the whiche with all the haste they coule make, they coule scarcely passe ouer in one day, the ryuer beinge of such breadth that it reacheth fourescore Weekes. The people also that dwell abowt this ryuer, are cauled Quogolici and Ugritzshi, from the

the castell of Obra ascendyng by the ryuer of Obp, vnto the ryuer Jritsche into the which Sossa entereth, is thre monethes iorney. In these places are two castels named Jeroni and Tumen, keppe by certeyne lordes cauled knesi Juhorski. beinge tributaries to the greate duke of Moscouia as they say. Here are dyuers kyndes of beastes and fures.

Frome the mouth of the ryuer Jritsche to the Castell of Brustina, is two monethes iorney: from tohen to the lake Bitai by the ryuer Obp (whiche I sayde to haue his sprynges in this lake) is more then thre monethes iorney. From this lake come many blacke men, lackyng thuse of common spech. They bynge with them dyuers wares, and especially pearles and precious stones, whiche they sell to the people cauled Brustintzi and Serponowtzi. These haue theyr name of the castell Serponow, situate in the mountaynes of Lucomorpa beyonde the ryuer Obi. They say that to the men of Lucomorpa, chauncerh a marueylous thyng and incredible. For they asseme, that they dye yearly at the. xxvii. daye of November, beinge the feast of saynt George amonge the Moscouytes: and that at the nexte spryng abowte the. xliiii. daye of Apryll, they reuyue ageyne as doo frogges.

With these also, the people of Brustintzi and Serponowtzi, exercise a newe and straunge kynde of trade. For when the accustomed tyme of theyr dyng, or rather of sleapyng, approcherh, they leaue theyr wares in certeyne places appoynted, whiche the Brustintzi and Serponowtzi carye away leapyng other wares of equall value in theyr places: whiche if the deade men at the tyme of theyr reuyuyng perceaue to bee of an equall pryce, they requyre theyr owne ageyne: by reason wherof muche stryfe and fighting is betwene them.

From the ryuer of Obi descending toward the left hand, are the people cauled Calamt, which came thether from Obiowa and Bogofa. Beneath Obi, abowte Aurea Anus (that is the golden olde wyfe) are the ryuers Sossa, Beres, Qua, and Danadim, at which sprynges owte of the mountayne Camé, Walschega, Wotassa, and the rockes ioyng to the same. All the nations that inhabite from these ryuers to Aurea Anus, are subiecte to the prynce of Moscouia,

Jritsche.  
Jeron.  
Tumen.

Brustina.

Bitai.

Blacke men  
withowt  
speache.

Serpenowe.  
Lucomorpa.

men that  
yearly dye  
and reuyue.

A straunge  
trade of mar-  
chandises.

Obi.  
Calamt.

Ryuers.

Aurea

## Moscovia and Cathay.

*Aurea Anus.*

*Obdora.*

*Cossin.*

*Cassima.*

*Tachnia.*

*People of monstrous shape.  
A fyfthe lyke a man.  
Plinie wy-  
teth of the  
lyke fyfthe.*

*Aurea Anus* cauled in the *Moscovites* tounge *Slata Baba*, is an *Idole* at the mouthes of *Obi* in the prouince of *Obdora*, standynge on the furthest banke towarde the sea. Alonge by the bankes of *Obi* and the ryuers neare there about, are here and there many castells and fortrellies, all the lordes wherof are subiecte to the prince of *Moscovia*, as they say. They say also, or rather fable, that the *Idole* cauled *Aurea Anus*, is an *Image* lyke vnto an owlde wyfe hannyng a chyld in her lappe: and that there is nowe scene an other infante which they say to bee her newie: Also, that there are certeyne instrumentes that make a continuall sounde lyke the noyse of trumpettes. The which if it so bee, I thynke it to bee by reason of the wynde blowynge continually into the holowe places of those instrumentes.

The ryuer *Cossin*, fauleth out of the mountaynes into *Lucomoria*. In the mouth of thys, is a castell. Whither fro the spynges of the great ryuer *Cossin*, is two moonerthes by age. Furthemoze from the spynges of the same ryuer, the ryuer *Cassima* hath hys original: which runnyng thorough *Lucomoria*, fauleth into the great ryuer *Tachnia*, beyonde the which (as is sayde) dwell men of prodigious shape, of whom sum are ouergrowne with heare lyke wyld beasts: other haue heades lyke dogges, and other theyr faces in theyr byelles withowt neckes, and with longe handes also and withowt feete. There is lyke wyse in the ryuer *Tachnia*, a certeyne fyfthe with headde, eys, nose, mouth, handes, feete, & other members vnto of humane shape, and yet without any voyce, & pleasaunt to bee eaten as are other fyfthes.

All that I haue hether to reherfed, I haue translated out of the sayde iorney whiche was deliuered me in the *Moscovites* tounge. In the which perhappes sum thynges maye seeme fabulous and in maner incredible, as of the dooisme men and the deade reuyvynge, the *Aurea Anus* also, and the monstrous shapes of men, with the fyfthe of human forme: wherof althowgh I haue made dyligēt inquisition, yet could I knowe nothyng certeyne of any that had scene the same with theyr eys, neuerthelesse to gyue furthet occasion to other to searche the truth of these thynges, I haue thowght good to make mention hereof.

*Noss* in the *Moscovites* tounge signifieth a nose: and the  
foze

foze they caule all capes or poyntes of lande that reache into the sea, by the same name.

The mountaynes about the ryuer of Petzora, are cauled **mountaynes.**  
**Semnoi poyas,** or **Singulus mundi:** (that is) the gyrdle of the worlde, or of the yearth.

**Kitchay,** is a lake of whome the greate Chan of **CATHAY** whom the Moscouians caule **Czar Kytchaiski,** hath hys name. **The greate Chan of Cathay.**  
 For Chan in the Tartars language signifieth a kyng.

The places of **Lucomorza** nere vnto the sea, are saluage, full of wooddes, and inhabited withowt any houses. **Lucomoria.**  
 And albeit that the autour of thys iozney, sayd that many nations of **Lucomorza** are subiecte to the prynce of Moscouia, yet for asmuch as the kyngdome of **Tumen** is neare therunto, whose prince is a Tartar and named in theyr toung **Tumenski** **Czar** (that is) a kyng in **Tumen,** and hath of late doone great damage to the prynce of Moscouia, it is mosse lyke that these nations shulde rather bee subiecte vnto hym. **Tumen.**

Neare vnto the ryuer **Petzora,** (wherof mentiō is made in thys iozney) is the citie and castell of **Isapin** or **Isapinolo:** **Petzora.**  
**gorod,** whose inhabytauntes are named **Isapini,** and haue a private language differing from the Moscouites. Beyond thys ryuer, are creadyng hygh mountaynes, reachyng euē vnto the bankes: whose ridgies or toppes by reason of continuall wyndes, are in maner vterly barrayne withowt grass or frutes. And although in dyuers places they haue dyuers names, yet are they commonly cauled **Singulus Mundi,** (that is) the worlde. In these mountaynes doo ierfalcons breede, wherof I haue spoken befoze. There grow also Cedar trees, amonge the which are founde the best and blackest kynde of fables. And only these mountaynes are seene in all the domynions of the prynce of Moscouia, which perhappes are the same that the old wryters caule **Whipheos** or **Hyperbozeos,** so named of the Brecke woꝝde **Riper,** (that is) vnder: and **Bo:** **reas** (that is) the north. For by reason they are couered with continuall snow and froste, they can not withowt great difficultie bee traunayled: and reache so farre into the north, that they make the vnknowne land of **Engroneland.** **Engroneland.**  
 The duke of Moscouia **Basilus** the sonne of **Iohn,** sent on a tyme two of hys capitaynes named **Simeon** **Phedorowit** **Kurb:** **ski,** and **anes** **Peter** **Utschatoi,** to search the places beyonde these

## Moscouia and Cathay.

these mountaynes and to subdew the nations theraboutē.  
Kurbiki was yet alone at my being in Moscouia: and declared  
vnto me that he spent xviij. days in ascendyng the mountayn,  
and yet coulde not coome to the toppe therof, which in theyr  
tounge is cauled Stolz (that is) a pyller. Thys mountayne  
is extended into the Ocean vnto the mouthes of the ryuers of  
Dvina and Perzora. But nowe hauyng spoken thus muche  
of the sayd iorney, I wyll retourne to the domynions of Mos-  
couia with other regyons lyinge eastwarde and southe frome  
the same towarde the myghty Emprye of CATHAY. But  
I wyll first speake sumwhat brefely of the prouynce of Rezan  
and the famous ryuer of Tanais.

Stolz.

Cathay.

The fruitfull  
prouynce of  
Rezan.  
Jaroslau.

The prouynce of Rezan situate betwene the ryuers of Oc-  
ca and Tanais, hath a citie buylded of woodd not farre from  
the banke of Occa. There was tuit a castell named Jaros-  
lau, wherof there nowe remaineth nothynge but tokens of  
the olde ruine. Not farre from that citie, the ryuer Occa  
maketh an Ilande named Scrub: which was sumtyme a great  
dukedome, whose prince was subiect to none other. Thys  
prouynce of Rezan is more fruitfull then any other of the pro-  
uynces of Moscouia: In so muche that in thys (as they saye)  
euery grayne of wheate byngethe furthe two and sumtymes  
more eares: whose stalkes or strawes growe so thicke that  
horses can scarcely go through them, or quayles flye owt of  
them. There is greate plenty of honnye, fyshes, foules,  
byrdes, and wyld beasts. The frutes also do farre exceede  
the frutes of Moscouia. The people are bould & warlyk men.

Honny.

### Of the famous ryuer of Tanais.



Donco.  
Aloph.  
Capha.  
Constantino-  
ple.

Wome Moscouia vnto the castell of Jaros-  
lau, and beyonde for the space of almoste  
xxiii. leagues, vnto the ryuer of Tanais,  
at a place cauled Donco, where the mar-  
chauntes that trade to Aloph, Capha, and  
Constantynople, fraight theyr shippes: and  
thys for the moste parte in autumnne beyng  
a rayney tyme of the pear. For Tanais here at other tymes  
of the yere doth not so abounde with water as to beare  
shippes

Byppes of any burden. This famous ryuer of Tanais, dy-  
 upbeth Europe from Asia: and hath hys originall oz springes  
 almost. viii. leaques from the cite of Tulla toward the south  
 inclynping somewhat towards the East: and not owt of the  
 Rhiphean mountaynes as some haue wyrtten: But owt of  
 a great lake named Iwanowosero (that is) the lake of John:  
 being in length and breadth abowt. 1500. Werkes in a wood  
 whiche sum caule Dkonitzkilies, and other name it Jsepipha:  
 nowlies. And owt of this lake, springe the twoo greate ry-  
 uers of Schar and Tanais. Schar towards the West recea-  
 uynge into it the ryuer of Appa, runneth into the ryuer of Oc-  
 ca betwene the West and the north. But Tanais at the fyrste  
 runneth directly East: and continueth his course betwene the  
 kyngdomes of Casan and Astrachan within fyre oz seven  
 leaques of Wolga: And frome thense bendynge towards the  
 south, maketh the fennes oz marsthes of Meotis. Further-  
 more, next vnto his springes, is the cite of Tulla: and vpon  
 the banke of the ryuer almost three leaques aboue the  
 mouthes of the same, is the cite of Asof, which was fyrste  
 cauled Tanas. Foure dayes toyney aboue this, is a towne  
 cauled Achas, situate harde by the same ryuer: whiche the  
 Moscouites caule Don. I can not sufficiently praysse this ry-  
 uer for the exceedynge abundaunce of good fyshes, and faire  
 nestes of the regions on bothe sydes the bankes, with plentie  
 of holcoome herbes and sweete rootes, besyde dyuers and ma-  
 ny frutefull trees growynge in suche comly order as though  
 they had byn set of purpose in gardens oz archardes. There  
 is also in maner euery where suche plentie of wyld beastes,  
 that they may casely be slaine with arrowes: In so much that  
 suche a3 traunple by those regions, shal stand in neede of none  
 other thyng to mayntayne theyr lyfe but only fyre and salt.  
 In these partes, is no obseruation of myles, but of dayes toy-  
 neys. But as farre as I coulde conceiue, from the foun-  
 taines oz springes of Tanais vnto the mouthes of the same  
 toyneynge by lande, are almost fourescore leaques. And say-  
 ynge from Donco (frome whense I sayde that Tanais was  
 fyrste navigable) in Icarself. 11. dayes byage, they come to  
 the cite of Asof tributarie to the Turkes: which is (as they  
 say) fyue dayes toyney frome the streight of Tartaria, other-  
 wyse cauled Isacop. In this cite is a famous shate towne,  
 where Tanais is fyrste  
 nauygable.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

**The marke of** into the which resort many marchauntes of diuers nations,  
**Aloph.** and from diuers partes of the worlde. For, that all nations  
**Liberthe ally** may the gladlyer haue recourse thither, free libertie of bying  
**reith strangers** and sellunge is graunted vnto all; and that without the cite  
euery man may freely vse his owne and accustomed maner of  
lyuynge without punyshement.

**The altars of**  
**Alexander**  
**and Cesar.**

Of the altars of great Alexander and Julius Cesar whiche  
the many wyrrers make mention of in this place, or of theyr  
ruine, I coulde haue no certeyne knowlege of thynhabz  
tauntes or any other that had often tymes trauayled these pla-  
ces. Furthermore the souldyers whiche the prince of Mos-  
couia maynteyneth there yearly to oppresse thynursions of  
the Tartars, beinge of me demaunded hereof, answered that  
they neuer sawe or harde of any such thynge. Neuerthelesse,  
they sayde that about the mouthes of Tanais the lesse, foure  
dayes iorney from Aloph nere vnto a place cauled Sewerski,  
by the holy mountaynes, they sawe certeyne images of stone  
and marble. Tanais the lesse, hath his springes in the dukes  
dome of Sewerski; whereof it is cauled Donetz. Sewerski  
and faulterly into Tanais three dayes iorney about Aloph.

**The holy**  
**mountaynes.**  
**Tanais the**  
**lesse.**

**From Mosco**  
**uia to Aloph.**

But such as iorney from Moscouia to Aloph by lande, they  
passynge ouer Tanais about the owle and ruinate towne of  
Danco, doo somewhat turne from the south to the East: In  
the which place, if a ryght line bee drawen from the mouthes  
of Tanais to the springes of the same, Moscouia shalbe found  
to bee in Asia and not in Europe.

**Moscouia in**  
**Asia and not**  
**in Europe.**

**C** More directly from Moscouia  
to Cathay.

**The province**  
**of permia.**



The great and large province of Permia, is dy-  
stante from Moscouia two hundred and fyfte  
or (as sum say) three hundred leaques directly  
betwene the East and North: And hath a cite  
of the same name by the ryuer Wschora which  
runneth .x. leaques beneth Hamam. The ior-  
ney by lande can scarcely bee trauayled thither but in wynter  
by reason of many ryuers, marythes, and fennes. But in some-  
mer, this iorney is dispatched with more facilitie in boates or  
smale shippes by Auolochda, Wding, and the ryuer Wt-  
zechda

**Marythes in**  
**summer.**

reched which runneth into Dwina. xii. leagues from Taling.  
But they that go from Permia to Taling, muste sayle by the  
ryuer Wischora against the course of the streame: and passing  
ouer certeyne ryuers, sumtymes also comynge theyr boates  
into other ryuers by lande, they come at the length to Taling  
thre hundred leagues distant frome the citie of Permia.

There is smaile bfe of breade in this prouince. For theȝ  
yearely tribute, they pay to the pynce furrer & hoxles. They  
haue a priuate language, and letters of theȝ owne, whiche  
one Steuen a byſſhop (who confirmed them yet waucryng in  
the ſayth) dyd inuente. For befoze beinge yet infantes in the  
ſapth of Chryſte, they ſlewe and ſlepe an other byſſhop that  
was appoynted to inſtructe them. This Steuen afterwarde  
when Demetrius the ſonne of Iohn reigned, was taken for  
a ſaynte amonge the Ruthens. Of theſe people there per ce  
mayne many Idolatours here and there in the woods, whom  
the moonkes and heremites tharigo rhyther, doo not ceaſe to  
equiere from theȝ baynt errour. In the wynter they iorney  
in Artach as they doo in many places of Ruſſia. Artach, are  
cerreyne longe parentes of woodde of almoſt ſyre handfuls in  
length, whiche they make faſte to theȝ fiete with latches, &  
& therewith perfoyme theȝ iozneys with great celeritie. They  
uſe for this purpoſe greate dogges in the ſtede of other bea  
ſtes, with the which they cary theȝ ſarthels on ſeades, as  
other doo with hattes in other places, as we wyll further de  
clare hereafter. They ſay that that prouince toward the Eaſt  
confineth with the prouince cauled Tumen, percepyng to  
the Tarrars.

The situation of the province of Yugaria, is apparente by that which we haue sayde before. The Moscouites caule it Iuhra with an aspiration: and caule the people Iuhrici. This is that Yugaria from whense the Hungarians came in tyme past, possessed Pannonia, and vnder the conduct of Attila, subdued many prouinces of Europe: wherein the Moscouites doo greatly glozy, that a nation subiecte to them, inuaded and wasted a great parte of Europe. Georgius Parnus a greeke bozne, and a man of reputation with the Prince of Moscouia, wyllynge to ascribe to the ryght of his prince the great dukedome of Lithuania, and the kyngedome of Polonie with certeyne other dominions, coulde me that the Iuhra

Twining.

Tribute.  
Horses and  
horses.

monks and  
heremites.

patentes.

marcus' pau:  
lus wytteth  
that these  
dogges are  
almost as byg  
as a lles; and  
that they  
v'e fyre to  
one sheade.

**Zugaria.**

Hungaria.  
Pannonia.  
Sittia.

ff ff ff f. ii. Ricci oz

The hygher  
or superior  
Hungarye, is  
cauled Austri-  
a.  
polonie.  
Buda.

Furres.  
pearles and  
precious  
stones.

Sibier.

Apreolos,  
I thinke to be  
martens: yet  
sum thinke the  
to be squerels  
Sesnerus  
wytteth that  
the kynge of  
the Tartars,  
haue theie  
temes coue-  
red withowt  
wyth the  
skynnes of  
lyons: & with-  
in, with the  
skynnes of sa-  
bles and Er-  
mynes.

et of Hungary, bringe subiectes to the great duke of Moscouia, came furth of theyr owne countrey, and spide inhabited the regions aboue the fennes of Meotis, and then Dannonie which was afterwarde cauled Hungarie, by the ryuer of Danubius: Also, that in fine they possessed the region of Moza: uia so named, of the ryuer: and by the wyle Dollonte, so cauled of Dollé, which signifieth a playne. Furthermore that Buda was so cauled after the name of the brother of Attila. They say also that the Hungari vse the same tounge that doo the Hungarians. The which whether it be trew or not, I do not knowe. For althowgh I haue made diligent inquisition to knowe the truth hereof, yet coulde I fynde no man of that region with whom my seruante bringe expect in the Hungarian tounge myght speake. They also pay furres for theyr tributes to the pynce of Moscouia. And albeit that pearles and precious stones are broughte frome thence to Moscouia, yet are they not gathered in theyr Ocean, but in other places: especially about the coast of the Ocean nere vnto the mouthes of Dwina.

The prouince of Sibier, confineth with Permia and Tiatatka: The whiche, whether it haue any castels or cities, I doo not yet certepuly knowe. In this the ryuer Jaick hath his originall, and fauleth into the Caspian sea. They saye that this region is deserte because it lyeth so neare the Tartars: Or that if it bee in any parte inhabited, the same to be possessed of the Tatar Schichmamai. The inhabitants haue a peculiar language: and haue theyr chiefe gaynes by the furres of martens, whiche in saynes and grearnes, excell all the furres of that kynde that are founde in any other prouinces. yet coulde I haue no great plentie of them in Moscouia at my beinge there.

Note that longe after the writing of this booke, at Rycharde Chaunceler his tyme being in Moscouia, Duke John Uasiliuich that nowe raygnech, subdued all the Tartars with theyr regions and prouinces even vnto the great cite and mart towne of Astrachan & the Caspian sea. At the same tyme also, there was in the dukes court an ambassadour that came frome this prouince of Sibier: who declared that his father had byn sent ambassadour to the great Chan of Cathay. And that the great cite of Cambalu where the great Chan kepeth his court in winter, was in maner destroyed by Necromancie and magicall artes wherein the Cathaynes are very expert as wytteth Marcus Paulus Tienctus. Ther was also at the same tyme an ambassadour of the kynge of Persia cauled the great Sophie. His ambassadour was appareled all in carlet, and spake much to the duke in the behalfe of owre men, of whose kyngdome and trade he was not ignorant.

The people cauled Czeremisse, dwell in the wooddes be-  
neath Rouogardia the lower. They haue a peculiar language  
and are of the secte of Machumet. They were sumtyme sub-  
iecte to the kynge of Casan: but the greater part of them are  
nowe subiecte to the prince of Moscouia. Many of them at  
my beinge there, were brought to Moscouia, as suspected of  
rebellion. This nation doth inhabite a large region with holot  
houses from Quiathka and Quolochda, to the ryuer of Ikama  
All the nation as well women as men, are very stoupe of foote,  
and expert archers: wherein they so delite, that theyr bowes  
are in maner neuer out of theyr handes: and geue theyr chil-  
dren no meate vntyl they hye the marke they shoote at.

Czeremisse.

hribitacion  
withowt hon-  
ses.

Two leagues distante from Rouogardia the lower, were  
many houses to the similitude of a citie or towne, where they  
were accustomed to make salte. These a fewe yeares sence be-  
inge burnt of the Tartars, were restozed by the commande-  
ment of the prince.

Salte.

Mordwa, are people inhabytynge by the ryuer of Wolga  
on the south banke beneath Rouogardia the lower: And are in  
all thynges like vnto the Czeremisses but that they haue moze  
houses. And here endeth The empire of the Moscouites.

Note here that Mathias of Michou, in his booke of Sarmatia  
Asiatica, writeth that the dominion of the duke of Moscouia reacheth  
from the north west to the southeast fyue hundred myles of German-  
ie, which are more then leagues. For they affirme that a German  
myle is more then three Englyshe myles.

## Of the Tartars.

We wyll nowe adde hereunto sumwhat of the people  
confinynge with the Moscouites towarde the East:  
of the which the Tartars of Casan are the first. But  
before wee speake of them particularly, wee wyl fyrst reherse  
sumwhat of theyr maners and customes in generall.

The Tartars  
of Casan.

The Tartars are diuided into companies which they call  
Hordas, of the which the Horda of the Salwolhenfes is the  
chiefe in fame and multitude. For it is sayde that the other  
Hordas had theyr offsprynge and original of this. And albe-  
it that euery Horda hath his peculiar name, as the Salwol-  
henfes, Hecropenses, and Mahays with dyuers other being  
all Machumetans, yet doo they take it euill and count it re-  
proch to bee cauled Turkes: but wyll them selues to bee cau-  
led Bescermani, by the which name also the Turkes desyre to  
bee cauled.

Horda.

Bescermani.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

The Nature  
of the Tar-  
tars.

They abstaine  
from hogges  
flethe.  
Abstinence.

Uoracitie.

So doo the  
Turkes.

Jorneyng by  
the pole star.

Mares mylke

horse flethe  
eaten.

Clenly.

And as the Tartars inhabyte many prouynces teachynge far  
on euery syde, euen so in maners and order of lyuynge doo  
they not agree in all thynges. They are men of meane sta-  
ture, with broade and fat faces, holowe eyde, with roughe  
and thyck beardes, and poulde heades. Onely the noble  
men haue longe heare, and that exceedyng black, which they  
weare on both sydes theyr eares. They are stronge of bod-  
dy and stout of mynde: prone to leacherie, and that vnnatu-  
rall. They eate the fleathe of horyses, camells, and other  
beastes excepte hogges, from which they absteyne by a lawe.  
They can so abyde fastyng & hunger, that they sūtyme forbeare  
meate and sleepe for the space of foure days, occupied neuer:  
theleste aboute theyr necessary affayres. Ageyne when they  
gette any thyng to deuoure, they ingorge them selues beyond  
measure: and with that surfecte in maner recompense theyr  
former abstinence. And beyng thus oppressed with labour  
and meate, they sleepe continually for the space of thre  
or foure days withowt doyng any maner of worke or labour:  
durynge which tyme the Tyuons and Moscouites into whose  
domynions they are accustomed to make theyr incursions, al-  
sayle them vnwares thus oppressed with meate and sleepe,  
lyinge scattered here and there out of order withowt watch  
or warde. Also if when they ryde, they bee molested with  
hunger and thyriste, they vse to leete theyr horyses blud, and  
with drynkyng the same, satisfye theyr present necessyte,  
and aspyre theyr horyses to bee the better thereby. And bicause  
they all wander in vnknoen places, they vse to direct theyr  
iorneyes by the aspect of the starres, and especyally of the pole  
starre, which in theyr tounge they caule Selesnikoll, (that  
is) an iten nayle. They greatly delyte in mares mylke, and  
belene that it maketh men strong and fatte. They eate herbes  
very much: and especyally such as growe abowt Tanais.  
Fewe of them vse salte. When theyr kyniges dyscrepate any  
hytapes among them, they are accustomed to gyue one horyse  
or cowe to fortye men. Of the dayne beaste, the bowells and  
trypes are reserved for the chiefe men and capptaynes. These  
they heate at the fyre vntyll they may make out the doonge,  
and then deuoure them greedely. They sucke and lycke, not  
only theyr fyngers imbrued with fatte, but also theyr knyues  
and spykes wherewith they scrape the doong from the guttes.

The

The heades of horses are counted delycate dishes with them  
 as are bores heades with vs: and are reserued only for the  
 chiefe men. They horses (wherof they haue great abound-  
 daunce) are but smaule, and with short neckes: but very strong  
 and such as can wel away with labour & hunger. These they  
 fede with the branches & barkes of ryndes of trees & the rotes  
 of hearbes and weedes, wherby they accustomethem to hard  
 feedynge, and exerceple them to continuall labour: by reason  
 wherof (as say the Moscouytes) they horses are stwyfter  
 and more durable then any other. These kynde of horses,  
 they caule Bachmat. They haue none other saddells and sic-  
 koppes then of woodd, excepte suche as they epyther bye of the  
 Chyrsians, or take from them by violence. Least they horse  
 backes shulde bee hurte with theyr saddells, they vnderlaye  
 them with grasse and leaues of trees. They also passe ouer ry-  
 uers on horsebacke. But if when they syle, they feare the pur-  
 suynge of theyr enemyes, then castynge away theyr saddells,  
 apparelle, and all other impedymentes, reseruyng only theyr  
 armour and weapons they syle amayne and with greates  
 celeritye. Theyr women vse the same  
 kynde of apparell that doo the men withowt any difference  
 except that they couer theyr heades with linnen bayles, and  
 vse linnen hose muche lyke vnto maryners stoppes. When  
 theyr quenees coome abroad, they are accustomed to couer  
 theyr faces. The other multitude of the common sorte  
 that lyueth here and ther in the feeldes, haue theyr apparell  
 made of sheepes skynnes, which they chaunge not vntyll they  
 bee woone and tozne to fytters. They tarpe not longe in one  
 place, indyng it a great mysery so to doo: In so muche that  
 when they are angrie with theyr chyldren, the greatest curse  
 that they can gyue them, is that they maye remayne perpetu-  
 ally in one place, and drawe the synthe of theyr olone fyl-  
 chynesse as doo the Chyrsians. When they haue consumed  
 the pasture in one place, they go to an other with theyr dyones  
 of cattayle and theyr wyues and chyldren whom they euer  
 cary about with them in Wagons: albeit the Tartars that  
 dwell in cities and townes, vse an other order of lyuynge.  
 If they be inclosed with any dangerous warre, they place  
 theyr wyues, chyldren, and old folkes, in the safest places.  
 There is no iustice amonge them, For if any man stande in  
 neede

hore heades,  
 deintie meate  
 The Tartars  
 horses.

Saddells and  
 syrrops of  
 woodde.

The Tartars  
 women.

The Tartars  
 curse.

No iustice  
 amonge the  
 Tartars.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

made of any thyng, he may withowt punnyshement take it awaye from an other. If any complayne to the Judge of the vyolence and wronge doonne vnto hym, the offender denyeth not the cryme, but sayth that he coulde not lacke that thyng. Then the Judge is wounte to gyue thys sentence: If thow also shalte haue neede of any thyng doo the lyke to other. Sum say they do not steale: But whether they steale or not, lette other iudge. They are surely a theeu. The kynd of men and very poore, lyuynge only by robbing of other, and scalynge away other mens cattayle, and vyolently also carrynge awaye the men them selues whom cyther they selle to the Turkes or pposse them to bee redemed by ransome, reseruyng only the younge wenches. They seldome assaulte cities or castells, but burne and waste towne and byllagges: In so muche that they so please them selues herin, that they thynke they haue so muche the more enlarged their empire, in holme muche they haue wasted and made desolate manye prynces. And although they bee moste impacient of rest and quyetnesse, yet doo they not kyll or destroye one an other, excepte they kynges bee at dissention betweene them selues. If any man bee slaine in any fraye or quarel, and the authors of the myschefe bee taken, only theyr horse, harnesse, weapons, and apparell, are taken from them, and they dismissed, so that the murtherer by the losse of a hyle horse or a bowe, is dyscharged of the Judge with these wordes: gette the hense and goo abowte thy busynesse. They haue no vse of golde and syluer, excepte only a fewe marchauntes: But exchynge of ware for ware. And if it so chaunce that by sellynge of such thynges as they haue stolne, they gette any monye of theyr buytherers, they bye therewith certeyne apparell and other necessaries of the Moscouites. The regions of theyr habytations (the feelde Tartars I meane) are not lymyted with any boundes or bytheres. There was on a tyme a certeyne fatte Tartar taken prysoner of the Moscouites: to whom when the pryncce sayd, How arte thou so fatte thow dogge, sythe thow hast not to eate, the Tartar answered, Why shoulde not I haue to eate sythe I possesse so large a land from the East to the west, wherby I may bee abundantly nuryshed? But thow mayst rather seeme to lacke, sythe thow inhabytst so smaule a portion of the worlde, and doste

The Tartars  
are theues  
and poore.

They reioyce  
in spoyle

The feelde  
Tartars.

A mery tale.

daylye

dayly streue for the same.

Casan, is a kyngedome, also a cite, and a castell of the same name, situate by the ryuer Volga on the further banke,

almost threescore and tenne leaques beneath Ruogardia the lower. Alonge by the course of Volga towarde the East and South, it is terminated with deserte feldes. Towarde the souther East, it confineth with the Tartars cauled Schibanski,

and Kosatzki. The kyng of this prouince, is able to make an army of. xxx. thousande men, especially foore men, of the which the Czeremise & Czubaschi are most expert archers. The Czubaschi are also cunnynge maryners, The cite of Casan,

is threescore leaques distant fro the principal castel Tuiachka, furthermore, Casan in the Tartars language, signifieth a brasse potte hopynge. These Tartars are more ciuile then the other. For they dwell in houses, tyll the grownde, and exercise the trade of marchaundies. They were of late subdued by Basilus the greate duke of Moscouia, and had theyr kyng assigned them at his arbitrement. But shortly after,

they rebelled ageine: and associate with other Tartars, in uaded the region of Moscouia, spoyled and wasted many cities and townes, and ledde away innumerable captiues, euen from the cite Moscouia which they possessed for a tyme, and had bitterly destroyed the same if it had not byn for the valy- antnesse of the Almayne gunners which kept the castell with great ordinaunce. They also putte duke Basilus to flyght, and caused him to make a letter of his owne hande to Mach- metgirei theyr kyng to acknowledge hym selfe for a perpetu- all tributarie to them, wheruppon they dissolued the siege, and gaue the Moscouites free libertie to redeeme theyr cap- tiues and gooddes, and so departed. But Basilus not longe able to abyde this contumelie and dishonour, after that he had putte to death suche as by flyng at the fyrst encounterynge were the cause of this ouerthrowe, assembled an armye of a hundred and fourescore thousande men shortly after in the yeare. 1523. And sent forwarde his armye vnder the conducte of his Lieutenante: and therewith an heralde at armes to bydde battayle to Machmetgirei the kyng of Casan, with woordes in this effecte: The last yeare lyke a theefe and rob- ber withowt byddynge of battayle, thou byddeste pryuilie op- presse me, Wherefore I now challenge the, once ageyne to

Casan.

The kyng  
of Casan.

Archers.  
Maryners.

The towne  
Tartars.

Moscouia in-  
uaded by the  
Tartars.

The prince  
of Moscouia  
tributary to  
the Tartars.

Duke Basil-  
us armye a-  
gynst the  
Tartars.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

proue the fortune of warre if thou mistruste not thyne owne  
pouere. To this the kynge answered, that there were manye  
wayes open for hym to invade Moscouia: And that the war-  
res haue no lesse respect to the commoditie of tyme and place  
the of armure or strenght: And that he wold take thadvantage  
therof when & where it shulde seeme best to him and not to o-  
ther. With which wordes Basilus beinge greatly accensed  
and burnyng with desyre of reuenge, invaded the kyngdome  
of Casan: whose kynge beinge stricken with suddayne feare  
at thapproche of so terrible an army, assigned the gouernance  
of his kyngdome to the younge kynge of Taurica his nenie,  
whyle he hym selfe went to requyre ayde of the Emperour of  
the Turkes. But in fine the kynge of Casan submytted hym  
selfe vppon certeyne conditions of peace whiche the Mosco-  
uites dyd the gladlyer excepte for that time because they bit  
rayles fayled them to mainteyne so great a multitude. But  
wheras duke Basilus hym selfe was not present at this last  
expedition, he greatly suspected Salitzki the Lieutenant  
of tharmy to bee corrupted with bybes to proceade no fur-  
ther. In this meane tyme, the kynge of Casan sent ambassa-  
dours to Basilus to increate of peace: whome I saue in the  
dukes courte at my beyng there: but I coulde perceaue no  
hope of peace to bee betwene them. For euen then, Basilus  
to endamage the Casans, translated the marre to Mouogar-  
dia, which before was accustomed to bee kepte in the Ilande  
of marchauntes nere vnto the cite of Casan: Commaundyng  
also vnder peyne of greuous punishment that none of his  
subiectes shulde resorte to the Ilande of marchauntes: thyn-  
kyng that this translation of the marre shulde greatly haue  
endamaged the Casans: and that only by takyng away their  
trade of salte (which they were accustomed to bye of the Mos-  
couites at that marre) they shulde haue byn compelled to sub-  
myssion. But the Moscouites them selues felte no lesse incon-  
uenience hereby then dyd the Casans, by reason of the dearchy  
and scarfenesse that folowed hereof of al such thynges as the  
Tartars were accustomed to bynge thither by the ryuer of  
Volga from the Caspian sea, the kyngdomes of Persia and  
Armenia, and the marre towne of Astrachan: especially the  
great number of most excellent fyshes that are taken in Vol-  
ga both on the hyther and further syde of Casan.

The kyng of  
Casan submit-  
teth hym  
selfe.

The Ilande of  
marchauntes

The Caspi-  
an sea.  
Persia.  
Armenia.  
Astrachan.

But

But haupnge sayde thus much of the warres betwene the prince of Moscouia and the Tartars of Casan, we wyl now procede to speake sumwhat of the other Tartars inhabityng the regions towarde the southeast and the Caspian sea.

Next beyonde the Tartars of Casan, are the Tartars cauled Nagai or Nogai, which inhabite the regions beyond Volga about the Caspian sea at the ryuer Jaick, runnyng owt of the prouince of Sibier. These haue no kynges but dukes. In owre tyme, thre bretherne diuidynge the prouinces equally betwene them, possessed those dukedomes. The first of them named Schidack, possesseth the cite of Scharaitzick, beyond the ryuer of Isha or Volga towarde the East, with the region confinynge with the ryuer Jaick. The seconde cauled Cosum, enioyeth all the lande that lyeth betwene the ryuers of Iaman Jaick and Volga. The thyrde brother named Schichmamai, possesseth parte of the prouince of Sibier and all the region about the same. Schichmamai, is as much to say by interpretation, as holy or myghty. And in maner al these regions are full of wooddes, excepte that that lyeth towarde Scharaitz, which consisteth of playnes and feldes.

Betwene the ryuers of Volga and Jaick, about the Caspian sea, there sumtymes inhabyteth the kynges cauled Samwolhenses. Demetrius Danielis (a man among these barbarians, of singular sayth and grauitie) toulde vs of a maruelous and in maner incredible thyng that is sene amonge these Tartars. And that his father beinge sente by the prynce of Moscouia to the kyng of Samwolhense, sawe whyle he was in that legacie, a certeyne seede in that lande sumwhat lesse and rounder then the seedes of Melones: Of the whiche beinge hydde in the grounde, there groweth a frute or plante very lyke a lambe, of the heyghe of fyue spannes: And is therefore cauled in theyr tounge Bozanetz, whiche signifyeth a maruelous frute lyke a lambe. For it hath the headde, eyes, eares, and all other partes like vnto a lambe newly cnyed: with also a very thynne skynne wherewith dyuers of the inhabitants of those regions are accustomed to line theyr cappes and hatres and other tyme mentes for theyr heades. Many also confirmed in owre presence that they had sene these skynnes. He sayde furthermore that that plant (if it may be cauled a plant) hath bludde, and no fleshe: but hath in the steade of fleshe a certeyn

The Tartars neare to the Caspian sea, Nogai.

The possession of thre bretherne.

The kynges cauled Samwolhenses.

A maruelous frute lyke a lambe.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

serue substance like vnto the Acche of crepithes. The hooves also are not of horne as are the lambes, but covered with haire in the same forme. The roote cleauerly to the nauell or myddest of the belly. The plante or fruite lyueth vntyll all the grasse and herbes growynge aboute it beinge eaten, the roote tothereth for lacke of nuryshement. They say that it is very shote to bee eaten, and is therefore greatly despyed and sought for of the wolues and other rauenyng beasts. And albeit I esteeme all that is sayde of this plant to be fabulous, yet forasmuch as it hath byn tolde me of credible persons, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

**Wandeuell.**

Of this strange frute, Wandeuell maketh mention, where in the. lxxviii. chapitre of his booke he wyrteth thus: Nowe shall I say of sum landes, countreys, and Isles that are beyonde the lande of Cathay. Therefore who so goeth from Cathay to India the hygh and the lowe, he shall go through a kynge dome that men caule Cadissen, and is a great lande. Where groweth a maner of frute as it were gourdes. And when it is ripe, men cut it a funder: and fynde therein a beast as it were of fleshe, bone, and bludde, as it were a lytle lambe withowt woolle. And men eate that beast and the frute also, which is a great maruayle. Neuerthelesse, I sayde vnto them that I helde that for no maruayle. For I sayde that in my countrey are trees that beare frute that become bydes flying which are good to bee eaten. And that that fauleth into the water, lyueth: And that that fauleth on the earth dyeth. And they had greate maruayle of this. &c.

**Barnacles of the Dyke-neya.**

**Barack Sol-  
tan.  
Cathay.**

From the prince of Schidack, proceeding. xx. dayes iorney towarde the East, are the people which the Moscouites caule Jurgenci, whose prince is Barack Soltan, brother to the greate Chan of Cathay. In tenne dayes iorney from Barack Soltan, they comme to Bebeid Chan. And this is that greate Chan of Cathay.

**Names of  
dignities a-  
monge the  
Tartars.**

Names of dignities amonge the Tartars, are these, Chan, signifieth a kynge. Soltan, the soonne of a kynge. Bii, a Duke. Mursa, the soonne of a duke. Olboud, a noble man or counsiler. Olboadulu, the soonne of a noble man. Seid, the hygh prest. Ksi, a priuate person.

**Names of  
offices.**

The names of offices are these: Alan, the seconde dignitie to the kynge. For the kynges of the Tartars haue foure principall men whose counsaile they be in all theyr weyghes a dayes. Of these the fyrste is cauled Schirmi: the seconde Barni. the thyrde, Bargni: The fourth, Tziptzan. And to haue sayde thus much of the Tartars, it shall suffice.

Marcus

Marcus Paulus wytereth that the greate Chan, is cauled a Chan Cu Chan Cublat that is, the great kynge of kynges: as the greate turcke wytereth hym selfe in lyke maner, as I sawe in a letter wyrtten by hym of late to the cite of Ragusa, in the which he wytereth this subscrip-  
 on: Soltan Soliman deselim Cham Signore de Signori in sempiter-  
 no. As concernynge Molcouia and Cathay, I was mydded to haue added hereunto dyuers other thynges, but that for certeyne considerations I was perswaded to proceade no further. Unto whose requeste, herein satisfiynge rather other then my selfe, wyllynge o-  
 therwyse to haue accompylshed this booke to further perfection, I was content to agree for two causes especially mouynge me: where-  
 of the one is, that as touchynge these trades and vyages, as in man-  
 ner in all other sciences, there are certeyne secretes not to bee pub-  
 lyshed and made common to all men. The other cause is, that the  
 parteners at whose charge this booke is prynted, although the cop-  
 py wherof they haue wrought a longe space haue cost them nought  
 doo not neuerthelesse cease dayly to caule vppon me to make an end  
 and proceade no further: affirmynge that the booke wyll bee of to  
 great a pyce & not euery mans money: fearyng rather theyr owne  
 losse and hynderaunce, then carefull to bee beneficiall to other, as  
 is now in maner the trade of all men. which ordinarie respecte of  
 priuate commoditie hath at this tyme so lyttle moued me, I take god  
 to wytnesse, that for my paynes and trauayles taken herein, such as  
 they bee, I may vppon iust occasion thynke my selfe a looser manye  
 wayes, except such men of good inclination as shall take pleasure  
 and feele sum commoditie in the knowlege of these thynges, shall  
 thynke me woorthy theyr good woorde, wherwith I shal repure my  
 selfe and my trauayles so abundantly satisfiied, that I shal repure  
 other mens gaynes a recompense for my losses, as they may bee in  
 dedde, yf men bee not vnthankfull, which only vice of ingratitude  
 hath hyndered the woilde of many benefices.

### The nauigation by the frozen sea.



At my beynge in Molcouia when I was sent  
 thither by kynge Ferdinando my lord and  
 master, it so chaunced that Georgius Mos-  
 ma the duke of Molcouia his interpreter,  
 a man of great experience who hadde before  
 lerned the latin tounge in the court of John  
 kynge of Denmarke, was there present at  
 the same tyme. He in the yere of Christ. 1496. beinge sente  
 of his prince with master Dauid a scotte borne and then am-  
 bassadour for the kynge of Denmarke, (whom also I knewe  
 there at my fyrst legacie) made me a hysse information of all  
 thynge

## Moscouia and Cathay.

thorder of his tozney. The which, forasmuch as it may seeme difficult and laborious aswel for the distaunce as dangerous places, I haue thought good to describe the same as I receaued it at his mouth.

First he sayde that beinge sent of his prince with the sayd David, they came fyrst to Nouogardia the great. And wher as at that tyme the kyngedome of Suecia reuolted frome the kyng of Denmarke, and also the duke of Moscouia was at discention with the Suerians, by reason wherof they coulde not passe by the most accustomed way for the tumultes of war they attempted theyr tozney by an other way longer but safer And came fyrst from Nouogardia to the mouthes of the ryuer of Dwina and Potiulo, by a very dyfficult and paynesfull tozney. For he sayd that this tozney which can not bee to muche detested for suche laboures and trauayles, continueth for the space of thre hundredeth leaques. In fine, takyng foure smaul shippes or barkes at the mouthes of Dwina, they sayled by the coaste on the ryght hande of the Ocean, where they sawe certeyne hyghe and rolwgh mountaynes: and at the lengthe saylunge. xvi. leaques, and passyng a great goulfe, folowed the coaste on the lefte hande: And leauyng on the ryght hand the large sea which hath the name of the ryuer Perzora (as haue also the mountaynes adiacent to the same) they came to the people of Finlappia: who, although they dwell here and there in lowe cottages by the sea syde, and leade in maner a beastly lyfe, yet are they more meeke and tractable then the wyldde Lappians. He sayde that these also are tributaries to the prince of Moscouia. Then leauynge the lande of the Lappians, and saylunge fourscore leaques, they came to the region of Norpoden vnder the dominion of the kyng of Suecia. This the Moscouites caule Katenska Semla, and the people Kaveni. Departynge from hense, and saylunge alonge by the coaste of a wyndynge and bendynge shore reachyng toward the ryght hande, they came to a promontorie or cape cauled the Holy nose, beinge a greate stone reachynge farre into the sea to the similitude of a nose: vnder the whiche is seene a caue with a whyrlepoole which swalloweth the sea euery fyre houres: and castynge furth the same ageyne with terryble roynge and violence, causeth the sayde whyrlepoole. Sum caule this the nauell of the sea: and other name it Charibdis,

Nouogardia.

Suecia vnder  
the kyng of  
Denmarke.

Dwina.  
Potiulo.

hygh moun-  
taynes neare  
the north  
Ocean.

Finlappia.

The wyldde  
Lappians.

The region  
of Norpoden

The cape  
cauled the  
holy nose.

A whyrlepoole  
or swallowyng  
goulfe.

rphdis. He affirmeth that the violence of this shalowyng  
 goulfe is such, that it draweth into it, inuolucth, and draweth  
 by shippes and al other thynges that comme neare it:  
 and that they were neuer in greater daungoure. For the  
 whyllepooles so suddely and violently drew vnto it the  
 shippe or barke wherein they were caryed, that with the helpe  
 of oyes and great labour they hardly escaped. When they had  
 thus ouerpasse the holy nose, they came to a certeyne stony  
 mountayne which they shulde needes compasse aboute. But  
 beinge there stayed with contrary wyndes for the space of cer-  
 teyne dayes, the pylotte of the shippe spake vnto them in this  
 effecte: This stone (sayth he) that yowe see, is cauled Semes:  
 The which except we please with summe gyfte, wee shall not  
 passe by without great daungoure. But the pylot bringe re-  
 proued of Jstoma for his bayne superstition, helde his peace.  
 And when they had byn deteyned ther by tempest for the space  
 of foure days, at the length the tempest ceased and they went  
 forthwarde on theyr wyage with a prosperous wynd. Then the  
 pilotte spake vnto them agayne, sayinge: yowe despised my  
 admonicion of pleasynge the Semes, and scorned the same  
 as bayne and superstitious. But if I had not prouide in the  
 nyght ascended a rocke and pleased the Semes, wee shulde  
 surely haue had no passage. Beinge demaunded what he offe-  
 red to the Semes, he sayde that he poured butter myrt with  
 oyle vpon the stone which wee sawe reache furth into the  
 sea. As they sayled further, they came to an other cape named  
 Motka, which was almost environed with the sea lyke an Is-  
 lande: in whose extreme poynte, is situate the castell of War-  
 dhus, which sum caule Wardhus, (that is) a house of defence  
 or fortreffe. For the kynges of Norway haue there a garry-  
 son of men to defende theyr marches. He sayde furthermoze  
 that that cape reacheth so farre into the sea, that they coulde  
 scarcely compasse it in eyght dayes. By which carying leasse  
 they shulde bee hyndered, they caryed on theyr shuldres with  
 greaue labour, theyr barkes and fardelles ouer a streyght of  
 lande conteynyng halfe a leaque in breadth. From hence they  
 sayled to the region of the wyld Lappones, cauled Dikilap-  
 ones to a place named Driout, beinge .CC. leaques distant from  
 Dwina towarde the North. And thus farre as he sayth, doth  
 the prync of Moscouia exacte tribute. Furthermoze leauyng  
 theyr

Such whylle  
 pooles, are  
 caused by

The stone  
 cauled Se-  
 mes.  
 Superstition

Sacrifice to  
 the stone Se-  
 mes.  
 The cape  
 Motka.  
 The castell of  
 Wardhus.

The region  
 of the wyld  
 Lappones.  
 Driout,

## Moscouia and Cathay.

Joineyng  
on leades.

howe the  
hartes drawe  
leades.

xx. leagues  
in one day.

The citie of  
Berges in  
Norway.

A shorter  
ioyney.

Roskow.  
Pereaslaw.  
Castromow.

Quolochda.  
Suchana.  
Dwina.  
Wafnia.  
Koppenhage

Liunia.

werste, is al-  
most an Itali-  
an myle.

theyr barkes here, they synnyed the residue of theyr iojney on leades. He further declared that there were hearde of hartes as are with vs of oren, whiche in the Norwegians tounge are cauled Rhen, beinge somewhat bygger then owre hartes. These the Lappones vse in this maner. They iojne them to leades made lyke fyfther botes, as wee put hoyses to the carte. The man in the leade, is tyed fast by the feete least he fall owre by the swyfte course of the hartes. In his lefte hande, he holdeth a collar or rayne wherewith he moderately the course of the hartes: and in the ryght hand, a pyked staffe wherewith he may susteine the leade frō faulynge if it chaunce to decline to much on any part. And he coulde me that by this meanes he traupled twentie leagues in one daye, and then dismydd the harre, who by hym selfe returned to his owne master and accustomed stable. This iojney thus synnyed, they came to Berges a citie of Norwegia or Norway, situate directly towarde the north betwene the mountaynes: and went from thence to Denmarke on horsebacke. At Dron and Berges, the day is sayde to bee. xxii. houres longe in the summer Equinoctiall. Blasius an other of the prynce of Moscouia his interpreter, who a fewe yeares before, was sent of his prynce into Spayne to the Emperour, declared vnto vs an other and shorter way of his iojney. For he sayde that when he was sent from Moscouia to John the kyng of Denmarke, he came fyrste on foote vnto Roskow: And takynge shyppe there, came to Pereaslaw: and from Pereaslaw by the ryuer Wolga to Castromow: and that frome thence goynge seuen Werstes by lande, he came to a lyttle ryuer: saylynge by the which, when fyrst he came to Quolochda, then to Suchana, and Dwina, and in fine to the citie of Berges in Norway, or uerpassynge in this byage all the perelles and laboures that Jstoma rehearsed before, he came at the length to Wafnia the chiefe citie of Denmarke, whiche the Germaines caule Koppenhagen. But in theyr returnynge home, they both confesse that they came to Moscouia by Liunia: and that they were a yeare in this byage: Albert Georgius Jstoma, sayde that halfe the parte of that tyme, he was hyndered by tempestes, and inforced to tarye longe in many places by the waye. Yet they both lykewyse constantly affirme that in this iojneye: ther of them traupled a thousand threescore and ten Werstes that

(that is) three hundred and fortie leagues. Furthermore also Demetrius who of late was sent ambassadour from the pryncce of Moscouia to the byshoppe of Rome, (by whose relation also Paulus Jovius wrote his description of Moscouia) confirmed all these thynges to bee trewe. All they being demaunded of me of the congeled or frozen sea, made none other answer but that in places nere vnto that sea, they saw many and great riuers by whose vehemente course and abundance flouyng, the seas are dryuen farre from the shore: and that the sayde water of the riuers is frozen with the sea a good space from the lande, as in Liuania and other partes of Succia. For althowgh by the vehemencie of the wyndes, the Ice is broken in the sea, yet dooth this chaunce seldome or neuer in riuers, excepte by sum inundation or flud the Ice gathered together bee lyfted vp and broken. For the flakes or pices of Ice carped into the sea by force of the riuers, doo float about the water in maner all the hole yeare, and are as geyne so vehemently frozen together, that a man maye there sumtymes see great heapes of the Ice of manye yeares, as dooth appere by such pices as are dryuen to the shore by the wynde. I haue also byn credibly informed by saythfull men that the sea Balthicum (otherwyle cauled the goulfe of Lituania) is often tymes frozen in many places. They say furthermore, that in that region whiche is inhabytred of the wylde Lappones, the soonne in the sommer Equinoctiall dooth not faule for the space of .xl. dayes: yet that the body therof is so hydden with a darke myste or cloude three houres, that the beames doo not appere: Neuerthelesse to gyue such lyght duringe that tyme, that the darkenesse hyndereth not theyr woork. The Moscouites make theyr booke that these wylde Lappones are tributaries to theyr pryncce. Wherat I do not greatly maruaile, forasmuch as they haue none other neare vnto them, that may demaunde tribute of them. Theyr tribute is onely fures and fysh, hauyng in maner none other thyng greatly commodious. And albeit they lacke breade, salte, and other intyementes of gluttony, and lyue onely with fysh and wylde beastes, yet are they excedyng prone to lechery. They are such expert archers, that if in theyr huntynge they espye any beastes whose skynnes they desyre to saue vnperished, they wyll not lyghtly myste to hytte them

Paulus Jovius.

Riuers faul-  
tyng into the  
frozen sea.

Wynde.  
Ice.

Ice of many  
yeares.

The sea Bal-  
thicum.

where the  
son fauleth  
not in .xl. dayes

The wylde  
Lappones  
are tributa-  
ries to the  
Moscouites  
fures and  
fysh.

Experte  
archers.

## Moscoula and Cathay.

Good fellows  
they.

Necessary  
wares.

No vse of  
money.

Theyr cot-  
ages.

Mountaynes  
continually  
burnyng.

Purgatory.

The ryuer  
Perzora.

in the noſechyrlles. When they go furth on huntynge, they are accuſtomed to leaue at home with theyr wyues ſuche mar- chauntes or ſtraungers as they haue receaued into theyr hou- ſes. So that if at theyr retuene, they perceaue theyr wyues throught the company of the ſtraungers to be myſtier and more iocunde then they were wonte to bee, they gyue the ſtraun- gers ſum preſent. But yf they fynd it otherwyſe, they thruſt them furth of the doores with woordes of reproche. But nowe by the company they haue with ſtraungers that reſorte thither for gaynes, they begyn to leaue theyr natie barba- rouſneſſe. They gladly admitte marchauntes, bycauſe they byynge them apparel of groſe cloth: alſo hatchettes, needels, ſpones, knyues, drynkyng cuppes, earthen and braſen por- tes, with ſuch other neceſſarie wares: So that they be now to eate ſodden and roſted meate, and doo embrace moze ciuile maners. Theyr owne apparell is made of the ſkynnes of by- ners beaſtes ſowed togyther. And in this apparell they ſum- tymes comye to Moscoula. yet ſeue of them haue cappes or hoſen, which they be to make of hares ſkynnes. They haue not the uſe of golde or ſyluer money: but uſe only barterynge of ware for ware. And beynge ignozant of other languages beſyde theyr owne, they ſeeme amonge ſtraungers to bee in maner domme. Theyr corages are couered onely with the barkes of trees. They haue no certeyne reſpynge habitacion. But when they haue conſumed the ſpythe and wylde beaſtes in one place, they remoue to an other. Furthemore alſo the ſayde amballaours of the prync of Moscoula, declared that in the ſame partes they ſawe certeyne hygh mountaynes con- tinually caſtynge furth flames of fyre as doth the mountayne of Etna in the Iſlande of Sicilia: and chat euen in Norway, many mountaynes are faulen downe and burnt in maner to aſhes with ſuch continuall flames. Which thynge ſum con- ſyderynge, ſayne the fyre of Purgatorie to bee there. And as concernynge theſe mountaynes of Norway, when I was ſent amballaour to Chriſtierne kynge of Denmarke, I was infor- med the lyke by the gouernours of Norwaye who chaunced at that tyme to bee preſent there.

About the mouthes of the ryuer Perzora that are toward the ryght hande from the mouthes of Dwina, are ſayd to bee dyuers and great beaſtes in the Ocean: and amonge other, a certeyne

Perreyne great beast as bygge as an ore, which thinhabitauntes caule *Mors*. This beast hath mozte feete lyke a beuer or an Otter, with a brest sumwhat hygh and brode for the proportion of the residue of his body: and two longe and greete teeth growynge owte of the upper iawe. These beastes for rest and increase, doo sumtymes leaue the Ocean, & by great heardes ascende the mountaynes: where befoze they gyue the selues to profounde sleepe (wherunto they are naturally inclined) they appoynt one of theyr number as it were a watchman as doo cranes for the securitie of the reste. Whiche if he chaunce to sleepe, or to bee slayne of the hunters, the residue may easely bee taken. But if the watchman gyue warnynge with roynge (as the maner is) immediatly the hole hearde is wakened thereby, suddelynly put theyr hynder feete to theyr teeth: And so faulynge from the mountayne with great celeritie as it were on a sleade, they cast the selues headlong into the Ocean: where also they rest and sleepe for a whyle vppon the heapes of yse. The hunters pursue these beastes only for theyr teethe: Of the which the Moscouites, Tartars, and especially the Turkes, make hastes for swoordes and dagges very artificially: And vse these rather for ornamente, then to gyue the greater stroke for the weyght or heauinesse thereof as summe fable. Also amonge the Turkes, Moscouites, and Tartars, these teethe are soulede by weyght, and are cauled the teethe of fysshes.

The frozen sea reacheth farre and wyde beyonde Dwina to Hetzora and vnto the monthes of the great riuer Obi: beyonde the which they say to bee the region of Engroneland, vnknoen and seperate from the trade and conuersation of owre men, by reason of hygh mountaynes covered and coulede with perpetuall snowe, and the sea no lesse incumbered with continually yse whiche hyndereth navigationes and maketh them dangerous, as they saye.

h h h h.ii.

The beeste  
cauled mors.

The prou-  
dence of  
nature.

The frozen  
sea.

Engronland  
or Groneland

EXEMPLAR EPISTOLAE SEV LI

TERARVM MISSIVARVM QVAS

illustrissimus Princeps Edvardus eius no-

minis Sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiber-

niæ Rex, misit ad Principes Septemtri-

onalem ac Orientalem mundi pla-

gam inhabitantes iuxta mare gla-

ciale, nec non Indiam Ori-

entalem, Anno Dñi,

1553. Regni sui

Anno septimo

et ultimo,



Edvardus sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, &  
Hiberniæ Rex, &c. Omnibus, Regi-  
bus et Principibus ac Dominis, et cun-  
ctis Iudicibus terræ, & Ducibus eius qui  
buscunq; est excellens aliqua dignitas in ea cunctis  
in locis quæ sunt sub vniuerso coelo: Pax, tranquillitas,  
& honor vobis, terris, et regionibus vestris quæ  
imperio vestro subiacent, cuiq; vestrum quemadmo-  
dū conuenit ei, Propterea quod indidit Deus Opt.  
Max. hominibus præ cunctis alijs viuentibus cor &  
desiderium tale, vt appetat quisq; cum alijs societate  
mire, amare, et vicissim amari, beneficijs afficere, et  
mutua accipere beneficia studeat, ideo cuiq; pro fa-  
cultate

cultate sua hoc desiderium in omnibus quidem hominibus beneficijs fouere et conseruare conuenit, in illis autem maxime, qui hoc desiderio adducti, a remotis etiam regionibus ad eos veniunt. Quo enim longius iter, eius rei gratia ingressi sunt, eo ardentius in eis hoc desiderium fuisse declararunt. Insuper etiam ad hoc, nos patrum maiorumq; nostrorum exempla inuitant, qui semper humanissime susceperunt et benignissime tractauerunt illos qui tum a locis propinquis tum a remotis, eos amice adibant, eorum se protectioni commendantes. Quod si omnibus id prestare æquum est, certe mercatoribus imprimis præstari debet, qui per vniuersum orbem discurrent, mare circūlustrantes et aridam, vt res bonas et vtilis quæ Dei beneficio in regione eorum inueniuntur, ad remotissimas regiones et regna adferant, atq; inde viuissim referant q; suæ regioni vtile ibi repererint: vt et populi ad quos eunt, non destituantur commodis quæ non profert illis terra eorum, & ipsi sint participes rerum quibus illi abundant. Nam Deus cœli et terræ, humano generi maxime consulens, noluit vt omnia in quauis regione inuenirentur, quo regio ope alterius regionis indigeret, et gens ab alia gente commodum aliquod expectaret, ac ita stabiliretur amicitia inter omnes, singulicq; omnibus benefacere quererent, Hoc itaq; ineundæ ac stabiliedæ amicitia

The kynges letter.

amicitiæ desiderio moti viri quidam regni nostri, iter in remotas maritimas regiones instituerunt, vt inter nostros et illos populos viam mercibus inferendis et eferendis aperirent : Nosq; rogauerunt vt id illis concederemus. Qui petitioni illorum annuentes, concessimus viro honorabili et forti Hugoni Wilibeo et alijs qui cum eo sunt seruis nostris fidis et charis, vt pro sua voluntate, in regiones eis prius incognitas eant, quesituri ea quibus nos caremus, et adducant illis ex nostris terris, id quo illi carent. Atq; ita illis et nobis commodum inde accedat, sitq; amicitia perpetua et foedus indissolubile inter illos et nos, dum permittent illi nos accipere de rebus quibus superabundant in regnis suis, et nos concedemus illis ex regnis nostris res, quibus destituuntur. Rogamus itaq; vos Reges et Principes & omnes quibus aliqua est potestas in terra, vt viris istis nostris transitum permittatis per regiones vestras. Non enim tangent quicquā ex rebus vestris inuitis vobis. Cogitateq; homines et ipsi sunt. Et si quare caruerint, oramus pro vestra beneficentia, eam vos illis tribuatis, accipientes vicissim ab eis quod poterunt rependere vobis. Ita vos gerite erga eos quemadmodum cuperetis vt nos et subditi nostri nos gereremus erga seruos vestros si quando transferint per regiones nostras. Atq; promittimus vobis per Deum omnium quæ coelo, terra et mari

et mari continentur, perq; vitam nostram et tranquillitatem regnorum nostrorum, nos pari benignitate seruos vestros accepturos si ad regna nostra aliquando venerint. Atq; a nobis et subditis nostris, ac finati fuissent in regnis nostris, ita benigne tractabuntur vt rependamus vobis benignitatem quam nostris exhibueritis. Postquā vos Reges, Principes, &c. rogauimus vt humanitate et beneficentia omni prosequamini seruos nostros nobis charos, oramus omnipotentem Deum nostrum, vt vobis diuturnam vitam largiatur, et pacem quæ nullam habeat finem. Scriptum Londini, quæ ciuitas est regni nostri. Anno. 5515. a creato mundo, mense Iar. xiiii. die mensis, anno septimo regni nostri.

**T**he copy of the letters missiue which the right noble prince Edward the. vi. sent to the Kynges, Princes, & other potentates inhabytyng the Northeast parties of the worlde towarde the myghtye Empire of Cathay, at suche tyme as Syr Hugh Willoby knyght and Rycharde Chaunceler with theyr company attempted theyr vyage thither in the yere of Chyist. 1553. and the. vii. and laste yere of his reigne.



Edward the syxte by the grace of God, kyng of Englande, Fraunce, and Ierlande. &c. To all Kynges, Princes, Rulers, Judges, and gouernours of the earth, and all other haupnges any excellent dignitie on the same in all places vnder the vniuersall heauen: peace, tranquillitie, and honoure, bee vnto you, and your landes and regnys

208

ons which are vnder yowre dominions, and to euery of yowre  
as is conuenient.

Forasmuche as the greate and almyghthy god hath gyuen  
vnto mankynde aboue al other liuing creatours, such a hart &  
desyre, that euery man desyret to ioyne frendshyppe with  
other, to loue and bee loued, also to gyue and receaue mutu-  
all benefites, it is therfore the dewtie of all men, accordyng  
to theyr poure to maintayne and increase this desyre in euery  
man with well deservynge to all men, and especially to shewe  
this good affection to such as beinge moued with this desire,  
comme vnto them from farre countreys. For in howe much  
the longer viage they haue attempted for this intent, so much  
the more doo they therby declare that this desyre hath byn ar-  
dent in them. Furthermore also theremples of owre fathers  
and prediceours doo inuite vs hereunto, forasmuch as they  
haue euer gentelly and louyngly intreated such as of frendely  
mynde came to them aswel from countreis nere hand as farre  
remote, commendynge them selues to theyr protection. And  
if it bee ryght and equitie to shewe such humanitie toward all  
men, doubtlesse the same owght chiefly to bee shewed to mar-  
chauntes, who wanderynge about the worlde, searche both  
the lande and sea to cary such good and profitable thinges as  
are founde in theyr countreys, to remote regions and kynges-  
domes: and ageyne to byrge from the same, suche thynges  
as they fynde there commodious for theyr owne countreys:  
Bothe, aswell that the people to whom they go, may not bee  
desitute of such commodities as theyr countreys byrge not  
furth to them, as that also they may bee partetakers of suche  
thynges wherof they abounde. For god of heauen and earth,  
greatly prouydynge for mankynde, wolde not that al thinges  
shulde bee founde in one region, to thende that one shuld haue  
nede of an other, that by this meanes frendshyppe myght bee  
establisshed amonge all men, and euery one seeke to gratifie  
all. For the establisshynge and furtherance of which vniuer-  
sall amitie, certeyne men of owre realme moued hereunto by  
the sayde desyre, haue institute and taken vppon theym a by-  
age by sea into farre countreys to thintent that betwene owre  
people and them, a way bee opened to byrge in and cary owre  
marchaundies, desyryng vs to further theyr enterpryse. Who  
sentynge to theyr petition, haue licenced the ryght valiante  
and

and worthy s<sup>r</sup> Hugh Wylloby knyght, and other o<sup>r</sup>e  
 trasty and faithful seruauntes which are with hym accordyng  
 to theyr desyre to go to countreys to them heretofore vnknow  
 en, aswell to seeke such thynges as we lacke, as also to cary  
 vnto them from o<sup>r</sup>e regions, suche thynges as they lacke.  
 So that herebye not only commoditie may enseeve both to the  
 and to vs, but also an indissoluble and perpetuall league of  
 frendshipp be establisshed betwene vs bothe, whyle they per  
 mitte vs to take of theyr thynges suche whercof they haue a  
 bundaunce in theyr regions, and we againe graunt them such  
 thynges of o<sup>r</sup>s whercof they are destitute. Wee therfore des  
 syre yow kynges and princes, and all other to whom there is  
 any poure on the earth, to permitte vnto these o<sup>r</sup>e seruauntes,  
 free passage by yowr regions and dominions. For they shall  
 not touche any thyng of yowres vntowylling vnto yow. Con  
 syder yow that they also are men. If therfore they shall stand  
 in neede of any thyng, we desyre yowe of all humanitie, and  
 for the nobilitie whiche is in yowe, to apde and helpe theym  
 with such thynges as they lacke, receauynge agayne of them  
 such thynges as they shall be able to geue yowe in recompense.  
 Shewe yowe selues so towarde theym, as yowe wolde that  
 wee and o<sup>r</sup>e subiectes shoulde shewe o<sup>r</sup>e selues toward yow  
 seruauntes, if at any tyme they shall passe by o<sup>r</sup>e regions.  
 Thus doynge, wee promise yowe by the God of all thynges  
 that are conteyned in heauen, earth, and the sea, and by the  
 lyfe and tranquillite of o<sup>r</sup>e kyngdomes, that we wyl with  
 lyke humanitie accepte yowre seruauntes if at any tyme they  
 shall come to o<sup>r</sup>e kyngdomes, where they shall as friendly  
 and gentelly be receyved as if they were borne in o<sup>r</sup>e do  
 minions, that we may herebye recompense the fauour and be  
 nignitie which yow haue shewed to o<sup>r</sup>e men. Thus after we  
 haue desyre dyow kynges and princes. &c. With all huma  
 ni: e and fauour to receyue o<sup>r</sup>e welbeloued seruauntes, wee  
 pray o<sup>r</sup>e almyghty god to graunt yowe longe lyfe and peace  
 which neuer shall haue ende. Wrytten in London whiche is  
 the chiefe cite of o<sup>r</sup>e kyngdome: In the yere frome the  
 creation of the worlde. 5515. in the moneth of Iuar, the xiiii.  
 day of the moneth, and seuenth yere of o<sup>r</sup>e reigne.

**C**his letter was wrytten also in Greeke  
 and dyuers other languages.

III I. I.

Ocher

## Other notable thynges

Other notable thynges as touchynge the Indies: and  
first of the foreknowledge that the poet Seneca  
had of the syndynge this newe worlde and  
other regions not then known.  
Francisco Lopes.

Diuination.

Coniecture.

Prophecie.

So do the  
Egiptians.

The wordes  
of Seneca.

**T**o speke of thynges that shalbe, longe before they  
are, is a kynde of diuination if the truth thereof  
folowe effectually.ouertheless although such  
thynges as are spoken eyther by coniecture, or by  
thinsincte of nature, or by naturall reason, doo  
ofen tymes take place and succede accordyngely, yet are not  
such coniectures to bee accounted as certeyne as prophesies  
reueled by the spirite of god, which wee ought entierly to be-  
leue: but not so the other gathered only by certeyne apparenc-  
es, similitudes, reasons, and demonstrations: although it  
bee greatly to bee maruailed to consyder howe they hytte the  
trithe summe: which perhappes they doo accordyng to the  
prouerbe that sayth: He that speaketh much shall sometimes  
stumble on the truth. All this I speake consyderynge the say-  
inge of the poet Seneca in his tragedie of Medea, where his  
woordes seeme in all poyntes to agree with the discouerynge  
of the Indies founde of late by Chypposfer Colon & the Spa-  
nyardes, The woordes of Seneca, are these.

Venient annis

Sæcula seris, quibus Oceanus

Vincula rerum laxet, et ingens

Pateat tellus, Tiphisq; nouos

Detegat orbes,

Nec sit terris vltima Thyle.

Islande was  
in owlde time  
cauled Thyle  
as summe  
shrike.

That is to say: Where shall coomme worldes in late peares,  
in the which the Ocean shall vnlose the bondes of thynges,  
and a great lande shall appeare. Also Typhis (that is nau-  
gation) shall discouer newe worldes: And Thyle shall not bee  
the furthest lande.

Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled  
Atlantica or Atlantide.



The Philosopher Plato wyrteth in his Dialoges of Timæus and Critia, that in the owlde time there was in the sea Atlantike ouer agens Africa, an Ilande cauled Atlantide greater then Africa and Asia: affirmynge that those landes are from thense continent and great: And that the kynges of that Ilande gouerned a greate parte of Africa and Europe. But that in a certeyne greate earthquake and tempest of rayne, this Ilande soonke and the people were drowned: Also that there remayned so much mudde of the drownynge or synkynge of that Ilande, that that sea Atlantike coulde not bee sayled. Sum take this for a fable: and many for a trewe hystorie, as doothe Marcellius Ficinus inducynge Proclus alleagynge certeyne hystories of the Ethiopians wyrtten by one Marcellus, who confirmeth the same to bee trewe. But there is nowe no cause why wee shulde any longer doubte or dispute of the Iland Atlantide, forasmuch as the discoverynge and conquest of the west Indies do plainly declare what Plato hath wyrtten of the sayde landes. In Mexico also at this day they caul that water Ayl. by the halfe name of Atlant, as by a woorde remaynynge of the name of the Ilande that is not. Wee may lykewylse say that the Indies are eyther the Ilande and firme lande of Plato or the remanent of the same: and not the Ilandes of Hesperides or Ophir, or Tharsis, as sum haue thought of late dayes. For the Hesperides, are the Ilandes of Cabo Verde and the Bozgonas from whense Hanon browghe apes: Albeit in conferynge it with Solinus, there is sum doubte by reason of the nauigation of fortye dayes wherof he speaketh. Aswell maye it bee, that Cuba or Hayti, or any other Ilande of the Indies, shulde bee those which the Carthaginenses founde and forbodde theyr citisens to make any vyages thither or to inhabite the same as Aristotle and Theophraste doo rehearse whete they wyre of the marueylous and vnknewen workes of nature. As concernynge Ophir and Tharsis, it is not known what or where they bee, althowgh many lerned men as saynt Augustine and other haue searched what citie or lande

Tharsis

Plato sayth  
that these  
kynges were  
the sonnes of  
Neptunus.  
An earth-  
quake.

Marcellus Fi-  
cinus.  
Proclus.

Mexico or  
new Spaine.

Hesperides.  
Cabo Verde.  
Ophir.  
Tharsis.  
Bozgonas.  
Solinus.

Lands found  
by the Car-  
thaginenses.

Aristotell.  
Theophrast.

## Other notable thynges

Jonas fledde  
to Tharlis.

The navigati-  
ons of Salo-  
mon.

Bermio is  
the Arabian  
sea.

Tharlis myght bee. Saynt Jerome who was expette in the  
Hebrew tongue, sayth in many places vppon the prophetes  
that Tharlis is as much to say as the sea: and that whereas  
it is wrytten that Jonas fledde to Tharlis, he wente to the  
sea by a longe journey. Furthermoze as concernynge the nau-  
gations of Salomon, it is not to bee thowght that his names  
sayled to the west Indies, forasmuch as to passe thither, it  
was requisite for them to sayle Westwarde departynge frome  
the sea of Bermio: and not Eastward as they sayled. Ageine,  
the west Indies haue no vnicornes, elephantes, diamonds,  
and such other thynges as they brought in the trade of their  
nauigations.

### Of the colour of the Indians.



One of the marueylous thynges that god bleseth  
in the composition of man, is colour: whiche  
doubtlesse can not bee considered withoute  
great admiration in beholding one to be white  
and an other blacke, beinge coloures utterlye  
contrary. Sum lykewylse to be yelow which  
is betwene blacke and white: and other of other colours as it  
were of dyuers liues. And as these colours are to be mar-  
ueyled at, euen so is it to be considered howe they dyffer one  
from an other as it were by degrees, forasmuche as sum men  
are whyte after dyuers sortes of whytenesse: yelow after dy-  
uers maners of yelow: and blacke after dyuers sortes of  
blacknesse: and howe from whyte they go to yelow, by dis-  
colourynge to browne and redde: and to blacke by as the col-  
our, and murrey sumwhat lyghter then blacke: enen with like  
lyke vnto the west Indians which are all togyther in general  
eether purple, or tawny lyke vnto sodde quynses, or of the  
colour of chesnuttes or olyues: which colour is to them na-  
tural and not by theyr goynge naked as many haue thought:  
albeit theyr nakednesse haue sumwhat helped therunto. Ther-  
fore in lyke maner and with suche diuersitie as men are com-  
monly whyte in Europe and blacke in Affrike, enen with like  
varietie are they tawny in these Indies, with dyuers degrees  
diuersly inclynynge more or lesse to blacke or whyte. No lesse  
maruayle is it to consider that men are whyte in Sumit and  
blacke

How colours  
dyffer by de-  
grees.

The colour  
of the west  
Indians.

Dyues sortes  
of whyte and  
blacke.

blacke at the cape of Buena Speranza, and of cheshutte colour at the ryuer of Plata, bringe all in equall degrees frome the Equinoctiall line. Lykewyle that the men of Affryke and Asia that lyue vnder the burnte line (cauled *Zona Terribilis*) are blacke: and not they that lyue beneath it. In this lyke the same line as in Mexico, Pucatan, Quauhtema, Tiah, Nicaragua, Panama, Santo Domingo, Paria, Cape, Saynt Augustine, Lima, Quito, and other landes of Peru which touch in the same Equinoctiall. For in all the tracte of these coastes certeyne blacke men were found only in Quarequa when Vasco Nunnez of Balboa discovered the sea of Sur. By reason wherof it may seeme that suche varietie of colours procedeth of man, and not of the earth: whiche maye well bee although wee bee all bozne of Adam and Eue, and knowe not the cause why god hath so ordeyned it, otherwyle then to certifyder that his diuine maiestie hath doonne this as infinite other to declare his omnipotentie and wylldome in such varieties of colours as appere not only in the nature of man, but the lyke also in beastes, byrdes, and fiores, where dyuers and contrary colours are scene in one lytle feather, or the leaues growynge out of one lytle stalk. An other thyng is also greatly to bee noted as touchynge these Indians. And this is, that they heare is not curide as is the Moores and Ethiopians that inhabite the same climate: neyther are they balde excepte very seldome, and that but lytle. All whiche thynges may giue further occasion to phylosophers to search the secretes of nature and complexions of men with the nouelties of the newe worlde.

Difference of  
coloure in the  
same climate.

Rio de la  
Plata.

Peru.  
Blacke men  
in the west  
Indies.  
From where  
procedeth  
the varietie  
of colours.

Gods wyse  
dome & power  
is scene in  
his workes.

Could heare  
and balance.

### ¶ Why they were cauled Indians.



¶ I thinke that the people of the newe worlde were cauled Indians because they are of the colour of the East Indians. And although (as it semeth to me) they dyffer much in colour and fashions, yet is it true that of India they were cauled Indians.

India is properly cauled that great pryncesse of Asia in the which great Alexander kepte his warres: and was so named of the ryuer Indus: and is diuided into many kyngdomes conspynging with the same. From this great India

The colour  
of the East  
Indians.

East India.

cauled

## Other notable thynges

Priester John  
came owt of  
India to E-  
thiope.

Ethiopia cau-  
led India.

India not far  
from Spayne

Priester John  
known to  
the portu-  
gales.

At the fur-  
thest East,  
begynneth  
the west.  
The Iland of  
Cipango.  
China.  
Cathay.  
To the East  
by the west.  
Marcus Pau-  
lus Venetus.

(cauled the East India) came great compaynes of men as wy-  
teth Herodotus: and inhabited that parte of Ethiopia that  
lyeth betwene the sea Bermeia (otherwyse cauled the redde  
sea or the goulfe of Arabia) and the ryuer of Nilus: at which  
regions that great Christian prince Priester John dooth now  
posseste. The sayde Indians preyayled so much, that they ve-  
terly changed the customes and name of that lande, and cau-  
led it India: by reason wherof, Ethiopia also hath of longe  
tyme byn cauled India. And hercuppon came it that Arysto-  
tell, Seneca, and certeyne other oulde autours sayd that In-  
dia was not farre from Spayne. After this also, of later  
dayes omtre West India was so cauled of the sayde India of  
Priester John where the Portugales had theyr trade. For the  
pylot of the caruell that was fyrst dryuen by force byle wynde  
to an vnknown lande in the Weste Ocean, cauled the same  
India bycause the Portugales so cauled such landes as they  
had largely discovered Eastwarde. Christopher Colon also af-  
ter the sayde pilot, cauled the west landes by the same name.  
Albeit, sum that take Colonus for an expert Cosmographer,  
thynke that he so named them of the East India, as to be the  
furthest and vnknown ende therof reachyng into the Weste  
vnder the other hemispherie or halfe globe of the earth be-  
neathe vs: affirmyng that when he fyrst attempted to disco-  
uer the Indies, he went chiefly to seeke the ryche Iland of  
Cipango, which fauleth on the parte of great China or Ca-  
thay as wyteth Marcus Paulus Venetus and other: And  
that he shulde sooner come thither by folowynge the course of  
the loonne Westwarde then ageynst the same: Albeit manye  
thynke that there is no suche Ilande, or at the leaste not yet  
known by that name: wheras also Marcus Paulus obserued  
no exacte description of the place eyther of this Ilande or of  
Cathay.

### The fyrst discoveryng of the Weste Indies.



After certeyne caruell saylyng in the weste Ocean a-  
bowt the coastes of Spayne, had a force byle and  
continuall wynde from the East wherby it was  
dryuen to a land vnknown and not describied  
in any mappe or carde of the sea: and was dry-  
uen

A harde be-  
gynnyng.

nen styl alonge by the coaste of the same for the space of many dayes vntill it came to a haven: where in a shorte tyme the most parte of the maryners beinge longe before verpe weake and feeble by reason of hunger & trauayle, dyed: So that on ly the pylot with thre or foure other remayned alpye. And not only they that dyed dyd not inioy the Indies which they fyrst discovered to theyr mylfortune, but the resydue also that lyued had in maner as lyttle fruition of the same: not leaupnge or at the least not openly publyshynge any memorie therof, ney ther of the place, or what it was cauled, or in what ycare it was founde. Albeit, the faulte was not theyrs, but rather the malice of other, or the enuie of that which wee caule fortune.

I doo not therefore marueyle that the auncient hystoriques affirme that great thynges procede and increase of smaul and obscure begynnynge, syth wee haue seene the same herefynd in this fyndyng of the Indies, being so notable and newe a thyng. Wee neede not bee curious to seeke the name of the pylot syth death made a shorte ende of his doinges. Sum wyl that he came from Andaluzia, and traded to the Ilands of Canaria and the Ilande of Madera when this large and mortal nauigation chauced vnto hym. Other say that he was a Spanyayne, and traded into Englande and Fraunce. Other also, that he was a Portugale: and that eyther he mente, or came from Mina or India: which agreeth well with the name of these newe landes as I haue sayde before. Ageyne, sum there bee that say that he brought the carauel to Portugale: or to the Ilande of Madera, or to sum other of the Ilandes cauled *delos Azores*.

Yet doo none of them affirme any thyng, although they all affirme that the pylotte dyed in the house of Chrystopher Colon, with whome remayned al such wytynges and annotacions as he hadde made of his vyage in the sayde carauell, aswell of such thynges as he obserued both by lande and sea, as also of the eleuation of the pole in those landes whiche he had discovered.

*Great thynges  
proceedyng  
of smaul and  
obscure be-  
gynnynge.*

*The pylotte  
that fyrst  
founde the  
Indies.*

*Mina.*

## Other notable thynges

**W**hat maner of man Christopher Colon was:  
and howe he came fyrst to the know-  
leage of the Indies.



Thus also be-  
gan Rycharde  
Chawnceler.

Colon was  
not much ler-  
ned.  
The Ilande  
Atlantide.

The lande  
found by the  
Carthaginen-  
ses.

Colon confer-  
red with ler-  
ned men.

Christopher Colon was borne in Lugureo, or  
(as sum say) in Merui, a byllage in the territo-  
rie of Genua in Italie. He descended as sum  
thynke, of the house of the Descendentes of pla-  
centia in Lunbardie. He beganne of a chylde  
to bee a maryner: of whose arte they haue  
great exercise on the ryuer of Genua. He traded many peares  
into Suria and other partes of the East. After this, he be-  
came a master in makynge cardes for the sea, whereby he had  
great vantage. He came to Portugal to knowe the reason  
and description of the south coastes of Africa and the naviga-  
tions of the Portugales, thereby to make his cardes moze per-  
fecte to bee folde. He maryed in Portugal as sum say: or as  
many say, in the Ilande of Madera, where he dwelt at suche  
tyme as the sayde caruell arryued there, whose pylot suozned  
in his house, and dyed also there, bequeethynge to Colon his  
carde of the description of suche newe landes as he hadde  
founde, wherby Colon had the fyrst knowleage of the Indys-  
es. Sum haue thowght that Colon was well lerned in the  
Latine tongue and the science of Cosmographie: and that he  
was thereby fyrst moued to seeke the landes of the Antipodes  
and the ryche Ilande of Cipango whercof Marcus Paulus  
wryteth. Also that he had redde what Plato in his dialoges  
of Timæus and Critias, wryteth of the greete Ilande Atlan-  
tide, and of a great lande in the West Ocean vndercouered be-  
ynge bygger then Asia and Africa. Furthermoze that he had  
knowleage what Aristotell and Theophrastus saye in theyr  
bookes of mariuaples, where they wryte that certeyne mar-  
chauntes of Carthage saylyng from the streygthes of Gibral-  
tar towarde the west and south, founde after many dayes a  
greete Ilande not inhabited: yet replenished with al thynges  
requisite, and hauynge many navigable ryuers. In dedde  
Colon was not greatly lerned: yet of good vnderstandynge.  
And when he had knowleage of the sayde new landes by the  
information of the dead pylot, made relation thereof to cer-  
teyne lerned men with whom he conferred as touchynge the  
lyke

lyke thynges mentioned of owlde autours. He communicated this secrete and conferred chiefly with a fryer, named John Perez of Marchena that dwelt in the monastery of Barbida. So that I beuely beleue, that in maner all that he declared, and many thynges moze that he lefte vnspoken, were wyrtten by the sayde Spanysh pilot that dyed in his house. For I am perswaded, that if Colon by science atteyned to the knowleage of the Indies, he wolde longe before haue communicate this secrete to his owne contry men the Venueses, that crauyle all the worlde for gaynes, and not haue come into Spayne for this purpose. But doubtrelesse he neuer thought of any such thyng before he chaunced to bee acquainted with the sayd pilot who founde those landes by fortune, accordynge to the sayinge of Solinie: *Quod ars docere non potuit, casus inuenit.* That is: That arte coulde not teache, chaunce founde. Albeit, the moze Chyistian opinion is, to thinke that god of his singuler prouidence and infinite goodnesse, at the length with eyes of compassion as it were lookynge downe from heauen vpon the sonnes of Adam so longe kepte vnder Sathans captiuitie, intended euen then (for causes to hym only known) to raple those wyndes of mercy whereby that caruell (herein most lyke vnto the hypppe of Noe whereby the remanent of the hole world was saued as by this caruel this newe worlde receaued the fyrst hope of theyr saluation) was dyuyn to these landes. But wee wyl not declare what great thynges folowed of this smaule begynnynge, and how Colon folowed this matter reueled vnto hym not withowte goddes prouidence.

Chaunce and arte.

A Chyistian opinion.

The caruel compared to the ship of Noe.

**W**hat labour and trauayle Colon tooke in attempting his fyrst vyage to the Indies.



After the death of the pilot and mariners of the Spanysh caruell that discovered the Indies, Chyristopher Colon purposed to seke the same. But in howe muche moze he desyred this, the lesse was his poure to accomplishe his desire. For, besyde that of him selfe he was not able to turnyssh the one hypppe, he lacked also the fauour of a kynge vnder whose protection he might so enioy the riches he hoped

¶ ¶ ¶ i,

to

## Other notable thynges

The kynge of  
Portugale.

The kynge of  
Castile  
Kynge Henry  
the seventh.

Barnarde  
knewe not  
all thynges.

The duke of  
Medina Si-  
donia.

The duke of  
Medina Celi.

to fynde, that none other myght take the same from hym or  
defeate hym therof. And seinge the kynge of Portugale occu-  
pied in the conquest of Africa and the navigations of the East  
which were then fyrst attempted, the kynge of Castyle lyke-  
wyse no lesse busied in the warres of Granada, he sent to his  
brother Bartholomewe Colon (who was also priuie to this se-  
crete) to practise with the kynge of Englande Henry the se-  
uenth beinge very ryche and withowt warres: promysynge  
to bypunge hym great ryches in short time if he wolde shew him  
faueur and furnyshe hym with shippes to discouer the newe  
Indies wherof he had certeyne knowlege. But neyther here  
beinge able to bypunge his sute to passe, he caused the matter  
to bee moued to the kynge of Portugale Don Alonso the fyfte  
of that name: at whose handes he founde neither faueur nor  
money, forasmuch as the licenciare Calzadilla the byshop of  
Vileo, and one master Rodrigo men of credit in the science of  
Cosmographie, withstoode him and contended that there nei-  
ther was nor coude any golde or other ryches bee founde in  
the west as Colon affirmed. By reason whereof he was very  
sadde and pensine: but yet was not discouraged or despaired  
of the hope of his good aduenture which he afterward found  
This done, he tooke shippinge at Lisburne, and came to Sa-  
los of Moguer where he comuned with Martin Aloso Pinzo  
an expert pylot, who offered hym selfe vnto hym. After this  
disclosynge the hole secretes of his mynde to John Perez  
of Marchena (a fryer of thorder of saynt Frances in Rabida,  
and wel lerned in Cosmographie) & declaryng vnto hym how  
by folowyng the course of the son by a temperate wyage, rich  
and great landes myght be founde, the fryer greatly commen-  
ded his enterpryse, and gaue him counsaile to breake the mat-  
ter to the duke of Medina Sidonia Don Enrique of Guzman  
a great lord and very ryche: And also to Don Lups of Cerda  
the duke of Medina Celi, who at that tyme had great prouisi-  
on of shippes well furnysed in his haven of Santa Maria.  
But wheras both these dukes tooke the matter for a dreame  
and as a thyng diuised of an Italian deceauer who (as they  
thought) had before with lyke pretence deluded the kynges  
of Englande and Portugale, the fryer gaue hym courage to  
go to the courte of the Catholyke princes Don Ferdinando  
and lady Isabell princes of Castile: affirmynge that they  
wolde

wolde bee ioyfull of such newes. And for his better furtherance herin, wrote letters by hym to frer Ferdinando of Talavera the queenes confessor. Christopher Colon therfore, repayed to the court of the Catholyke princes, in the yeare, M. CCC. lxxvi. and deliuered vnto theyr handes the petition of his request as concerninge the discouerynge of the newe Indies. But they beinge more carefull, and applyinge all theyr mynde howe they myght dyue the Moores owte of the kyngdome of Granada, which great enterpryse they had alreedy taken in hande, dyd lyttle or nothyng esteeme the matter. But Colon not thus discouraged, found the meanes to declare his sute to such as had sumtymes priuate communication with the kyng. yet bicause he was a stranger and went but in simple apparell, nor otherwys credited then by the letter of a gray frer, they beleued hym not, neyther gaue eare to his wordes: wherby he was greatly tormented in his imagination. Only Alonso of Quintanilla the kynges chiefe auditour gaue hym meate and drynke at his owne charges, and hard gladly such thynges as he declared of the landes not then founde: despyrge hym in the meane tyme to bee contented with that poore enterpynement, and not to despayre of his enterpryse: puttyng hym also in good conforzte that he shulde at one tyme or other, coome to the speache of the Catholyke princes. And thus shortly after by the meanes of Alonso of Quintanilla, Colon was brought to the presence and audience of the Cardinall Don Ihero Gonzales of Mendoza, archbishop of Toledo, a man of great reuenues & autoritie with the kyng and queene, who brought hym befoze them after that he well perceaued and examyned his intent. And by this meanes was his sute harde of the Catholyke princes, who also redde the booke of his memorials which he presented vnto them. And although at the fyrst theyooke it for wayne and false that he promysed, neuerthelesse they put hym in good hope that he shulde bee well dispatched when they had synished the warres of Granada which they had now in hand. With which answere, Colon beganne to reuiue his spirites, with hope to bee better esteemed and more fauorably to bee hard amonge the gentelmen and noble men of the court, who befoze tooke hym only for a craftie felowe and deceauer: and was nothyng dismayde or discouraged when so euer he debated

The conquest  
of Granada.

what men  
knowe not  
they call  
fantasticall.

Colon his in-  
tertainment.

The arch-  
bishop of  
Toledo.

Colon is  
brought to  
the kynges  
presence.

## Other notable thynges

The iudge-  
ment of igno-  
rant folkes,

Colon is dis-  
patched.

Colon his re-  
warde.

One quent  
is. x. hund-  
reth thou-  
sande.

bated the matter with them, althowghe many iudged hym phantasticall, as is the maner of ignorant menne to caule all such as attempte any thyng beyonde theyr reach and the compasse of theyr knowlege: thinking the worlde to bee no bigger then the cages wherein they are brought vp and lyue. But to retorne to Colon: So horte and brgente was the siege of Granada, that they presently graunted hym his demaunde to seeke the newe landes, and to byngne from thence golde, syluer, perles, precious stones, spices, and suche other ryche thynges. They gaue hym also the tenth parte of all the reuenues and customes dewe vnto the kynge of al such landes as he shulde discover, not doyngne preiudice in any thyng to the kynge of Portugale. The particulars of this agreement were made in the towne cauled Sancta Fe: and the priuilege of the rewarde, in Granada the .xxx. daye of Aprill the same yere that the citie was woonne. And wheras the sayde Catholyke princes had not mony presently to dispatch Colon, Luyd of S. Angell the kynges secretary of accomptes, lente theym syxe quentes of marauedes, whiche in a grolle summe make .xvi. thousande ducades. Two thynges are herein chiefly to be noted: wherof the one is, that for so smaule charges they haue increased the reuenues of the crowne of Castyle as much as the Indies are in value. The other is, that endyngne the conquest of the Moores who possessed the kyngdome of Granada eyghth hundredeth yeres, they immediatly beganne the conquest of the Indies, as though the nation of the Spanyardes were euer appoynted to feght ageynst infidels and enemies of the fayth of Iesu Chryst.

By this traualle of Colonus in so noble an enterpryse and so harde successe, dooth the sayinge of Plinie appere to be most trewe, wher in the preface of his natural hystory wyttē to theprouerbespañā he writeth ī this maner. *Res ardua vetustis nouitatem dare: Nouis, auctoritatem: absoletis, nitorem, obscuris, lucem: fastiditis, gratiam: dubiis, fidem: omnibus vero naturam, et natura sua omnia.* Itaq; est, non assecutis, voluisse abunde pulchrum atq; magnificum est. That is to say: It is a difficulte thyng to gyue newenes to owlde thynges, auctoritie to newe thynges: bewtie to thynges owt of vse: fame to the obscure: fauoure to the hatefull: credite to the doubtfull: nature to all, and all to nature. To such neuerthelesse as can not attayne to all these, it is greatly commendable and magnificall to haue attempted the same,

In the seuchen of armes gyuen to Colon by Don Ferdinando<sup>o</sup>  
and queene Elizabeth Catholike princes (so cauled for they<sup>r</sup>  
warres ageynst the infidels) these verses were wyrtten.

Por Castilla y por Leon,

Nuevo mundo hallo Colon.

That is: For Castile and for Leon,  
The newe worlde founde Colon.

C Of newe Spayne cauled Noua  
Hispania, or Mexico.



The Spayne is that parte of the continent or  
firme lande that lyeth West and South frome  
the lande of flozida. This was subdued to  
the empire of Castile by the ryght noble gentel-  
man Ferdinando Cortese the marquisse of the  
vale of Quaxaca. In this lande are many pro-  
uinces cōteynnyng in the in maner innumerable cities, amonge  
whiche that is the chiefe which the Indias caule Mexico or Te-  
mixtitan, cōsystyng of more the fīue hundredeth thousand inha-  
bitauntes. It standeth in the myddest of a lake of salte wa-  
ter as doth Venecy in the sea. The lake conceynerth fortye Per-  
sian myles cauled Marafange, euery one cōsystyng of. xxx.  
furlongs, and moze as sum say. In these regions is founde  
great plentie of golde, syluer, and p̄cious stones, with in-  
numerable other thynges both necessary for the lyfe of man  
and pleasaunt: as sylke, bombasine cotton, alame, Safferne,  
Woade, with dyuers other thynges wherewith clothe & sylke  
is dyed. There is also such abundaunce of suger, that cer-  
teyne Spanysh shippes are yearly freighted therewith and  
bryng the same into Sicyle from whence it is carryed in ma-  
ner to all partes of Chrystendome. The inhabitauntes of Mex-  
ico are subtile people, and vse much craft in theyr bargening  
They haue not the vse of golde and syluer monye: but vse in  
the steade therof the halfe shelles of almonds, whiche kynde  
of Barbarous money they caule Tacao or Tacanguate. In ma-  
ner al kyndes of cozne are there very good cheape: especially  
barly and wheate. They haue great plentie of hartes, wyld  
boyes, Lyons, Leopardes, and Tygers, which beastes wan-

The cite of  
Mexico or Te-  
mixtitan.

Golde and  
syluer.

Sylke.  
Cotton.  
Alam.  
woade.  
Sugar.

Shelles for  
monye.

Come.  
wyld  
beastes.

der

## Other notable thynges

hawkyng and  
huntinge.

Paintyng.

women sumptuously appa-  
reled.

A warlike na-  
tion.

Captiues sa-  
crificed to I-  
doles.

der in maner in euery place. The region is moſte commodious for hawkyng and huntinge for the great abundaunce it hath of beaſtes and foules. But the people exerciſe all theſe cun-nyng in makynge the images of theſe Idolatre, and in pain-tyng. Theſe women are valiant: and ſumptuous in theſe ap-parell and other ſpementes. For theſe ſo richely frynge and byſet the ſame with perles, precious ſtones, and golde, that nothyng can be more excellent. They haue a kynde of pa-per greatly differing from ours. In this they expreſſe theſe mindes by certeyn figures. For they haue not otherwiſe theſe of letters. The nation is deſirous of warre: and dooth not longe keepe the conditions of peace vniuolated: But deſpreth rather in ciuile and moſt cruell battayle amonge them ſelues then to lyue in peace and quietneſſe. Suche as in the warres faule by any meanes into the handes of theſe enemies, eyther by ſubmiſſion or otherwiſe, are partly ſacrificed to the Idoles, and the reſidue gyuen to the ſouldiers to bee eaten, in lyke maner as wee rewarde dogges and haukes with parte of theſe pray. They haue innumerable Idoles which euery one maketh for his particular god after the phantaſie of his own brayne, and gyueth thereto diuine honour. Albeit at this day they doo by lytle and lytle leaue of theſe barbarous ſierce-neſſe: and with othere religion embrace better maners. For they nowe profeſſe the ſapth of Chryſt, and in his name pray vnto God the father.

Underſtande here that as touchyng theſe regions cauled new Spayne, yow may reade at large in the booke here before entituled of the landes and Iſlandes lately founde. This booke foloweth immediately after the Decades, althowgh the printer haue alſo wyrtten the thyrde decade ouer the head of that booke which intreateth principally of the regions nowe cauled newe Spayne. Of the conqueſt of this Mexico, Francisco Lopez hath writen a large booke in the Spanyſhe tounge.

## Of Peru.



The prouince cauled Peru, was alſo named noua Caſtilia by them that fyrſt founde it. This region is the weſt parte of America: and is ſituate in the longitude of. 290. degrees, proceadyng from the Weſt to the Eaſt. And ſouthward be gynneth ſinedegrees beyonde the Equinoctiall

quinoctial line, and is extended very farre into the south.

This is taken to bee the rycheſt lande in golde, ſyluer, perles, precious ſtones, and ſpyces, that ever was founde yet to this day. For golde is there in ſuch plenty that they make pyl- pots therof, and other beſtels applyed to ſplethy bleſes. But this is moze to bee marueyled at, that in a citie cauled Collao was founde a houſe all couered with maſſie plates of golde. In theyr warres alſo theyr harnelle was of golde and ſyl- uer. Theyr weapons are bowes, arrowes, ſpynges, dartes, and pikes. Thinhabitantes are warlyke people and of great agilitie. They haue cities defended with lawes and armes. The region is exceeding fructfull, and yeldeth corne twyſe in the yeare. It is ſo ſlopy thynge with many fayre wooddes, mountaynes, ryuers, and other both pleaſaunt and neceſſary commodities, that it ſeemeth in maner an earthly Paradyſe. It hath dyuers kyndes of beaſtes, and yet none hurtfull or of rauenyng kynde. There are ſheepe of ſuch heygth that they ble them in the ſcade of hozles. Some wyte that they are as bygge as the younge ſoles of camels: and that theyr woolle is very ſofte and fine. Alſo that the ewes byng ſurth lambes twyſe a yeare. The people are wyttie and of gen- tyl behauiour. Cunynge alſo in artes, faythful of promes, and of maners not greatly to bee diſcommended, ſaue that they are ignozant of Chryſt: who neuertheleſſe is nowe know- en vnto them in many places, as our hope is he ſhalbe dayly moze and moze if all princes wyll herein putte theyr helpynge handes to the plowe of owre lord, and ſende labourers into his vyneparde.

Peru is the  
rycheſt lande  
that is know-  
en.

A houſe coue-  
red with gold

harnes of  
golde.

A fructful re-  
gion.

Great ſheepe

The dewtie  
of Chryſtian  
princes.

**O**f the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata  
(that is) the ryuer of ſyluer.



This ryuer reacheth very farre in length & bredth: and is cauled Aruai in the Indian tounge. Into this fauleth an other ryuer named Parane. The fyrſte that ſayled into the ryuer of Plata, was John Dias Solis, whom the ryght noble kynge of Spayne Ferdinandus made Admyral of theſe ſeas. In the ryuer lyeth an Ilande whiche John Dias named Martinus Gracias becauſe a pylot of his ſo cauled, was buryed there.

Parane.

John Dias  
Solis.  
The Ilande  
Martinus  
Gracias.

This

## Other notable thynges

The viage of  
Sebastian  
Cabote to the  
ryuer of Pla-  
ta.  
Charlis.  
Ophir.  
Cipango.  
Cathay.

The ryuer of  
Plata.

This Ilande is situate in the myddest of the ryuer: and is dy-  
stant from the mouth of the same abowt forty leaques. As the  
sayde Admirall attempted to expugne the Iland, he was sud-  
deynly oppressed and slayne of the Indians that pryncie as  
sayled hym. Wherewith neuerthelesse theyr barbarous cruel-  
tie was not satisfiied but they had torne him in pieces and  
deuoured hym. But many yeaeres after, Whemperours maier  
sie and kynge of Spayne Charles the fyfte, sente forth Se-  
bastian Cabot (a man of great courage and skylfull in Cosmo-  
graphie, and of no lesse experience as concernynge the starres  
and the sea) with commaundement to discouer and subdue the  
Ilandes of Charlis, Ophir, Cipango, and Coi Cathay. Re-  
ceauynge therfore his commission and proceadyng forwarde  
on his vyage, he arriued by chaunce at this Ilande: The  
cause wherof was that the principall vessel was lost by ship-  
wracke, and the men that saued theyr lyues by stoppynge  
were receaued into other shippes. Wherefore that  
by reason of this chaunce he could by no meanes performe his  
vyage attempted, he intended to expugne the sayde Ilande;  
and theruppon to conueygh his vytrayles to land, to prepare  
his soldiers to thynualion, to plant colonyes, and to erect for-  
tresses by the ryuers syde wherby the Spanyardes myght bee  
defended from the violence of the barbarians. But before he  
attempted this, he was aduertised that the Ilande was riche  
in golde and syluer. Which thyng dyd so encorage him, that  
withowt respect of perel he thought best to expugne it by one  
meanes or other, wherein his bouldenes tooke good effecte  
as often tymes chaunceth in great assayes. Furthermore as  
touchynge the ryuer, Sebastian Cabote made relation that he  
neuer sawe any comparable vnto this in bredth and depth. For  
whereas it fauleth into the sea, it conteyneth. xxv. leaques in  
breadth. From the mouth of the ryuer, Cabot sayled by the  
same into the lande for the space of three hundred and fiftie  
leaques as he wyrteth in his owne carde. That it is of great  
depth, may hereby bee considered that manye greate ryuers  
faule into it: so that the chanell can not bee shalowe that con-  
teyneth such abundance of water, and suche plenty of good  
and great fyshes. For there in is maner no fysh in the sea,  
that is not founde in this ryuer. As soone as the Spanyards  
were set alande, they made a prooue if the soyle were fruitful

fo beate corne. Takyng therefore fiftie graynes of wheate and commytrynge the same to the earth in the moneth of Seytember, they gathered therof two thousande and fiftie at December nexte folowynge: wherein some beinge deceaued and mistakynge the thyng, haue wyrtten in the booke of two thousande and fiftie, syttie thousande and two. The lyke ferelitie is there of all other grayne and pulse. Furthermoze the inhabitants declared that not farre from that place, there are great and hygh mountaynes in the which is founde great plentie of golde. And no great distance from the same, to bee other mountaynes no lesse frutefull of syluer, and many other thynges longe to rehearse. The inhabitants are paynetull men, and tyll the grounde diligently, wherein they take great pleasure: and haue therfore great plentie of breade of Maizim. There are sheepe of suche byggenesse that they compare them to younge camels or asses as sum say. Theyr woolle is very fine: and nearest vnto the fynnesse of sylke. There are also beastes of dyuers kyndes. Amonge men there is this dyfference, that such as lyue in the mountaynes, are whyte, and for the most parte lyke vnto the men of owre regions. But they that dwell about the ryuer (as though they tooke theyr colour thereof) are blackyshe or purple of the colour of fine Iren or Steele. This also chauncerth to many of them, that theyr fiere and legges are lyke the legs and fiere of the foule cauled the dyftriche.

maruelous  
frutfulness.

mountaynes  
conteynynge  
golde and syl  
uer.

Great sheepe

men with be  
formed legs.

Theyr colour

**C** Of the hygher East India cauled India  
Tercera or Treceera.



In this India whiche the Portugales caule Tercera, are very great kyngdomes: as the kyngdomes of Bengala, Pegu, Berma, Bracangui, Daulian, Capelam, and the greete kyngdome of Malacha, cauled of the owlde wyrters Aurea Therlonesus: whose chiefe citie is also cauled Malacha, and was in owlde tyme named Tachola. Under this kyngedome are infinite Ilandes cauled Maluche, whercof the principall are these: Iana the greater, Iana the lesse, Molagua, Mendana, Cubu, Cailon, Huban, Bur, Tenado, Ambon, and Bilolo, with

Malacha.

Tachola.  
The Ilandes  
of Malacha.

## Other notable thynges

With infinite other. On the Southwest parte from Malacha,  
**The Iland of** is the great Ilande of Samotra cauled in owlde tyme Tapiro  
**Samotra.** bana, in the which are the kyngdomes of Pedir, Biraen, Ba  
 zer, Ardagni, and Ham. This Iland and al the other cauled  
**Spices.** Maluche, bynge furth great quantitie of cloues, cinamome,  
 nuttemegges, maces, and all other kyndes of spices excepte  
**Calocut.** pepper, which groweth in the prouince of Calocut and the I  
**Ceilam.** lande of Ceilam. All these sortes of spices are carped to Ma  
 lacha to bee soulde. But the greatest parte of them is carped  
 to Cathay and China: and from thense to the north partes of  
**Cathay.** Tartarie. This kyngdome of China, is very great: and was  
**China.** in owlde tyme cauled Sina. Here is founde great plentie of  
 precious stones. The people are very subryle and ryche. They  
**precious** are all appareled eyther in sylke oz cloth, oz vestures of other  
**stones.** woorkemanhippe: and are of good ciuilitie. They doo not  
**Sylke.** gladly permitte the Portugales oz other straungers to tra  
 fike in theyr kyngedome: whose mosse famous place vppon  
**Cautan.** the sea syde, is named Cautan, and the sea Machiam, caus  
 led of the owlde wynters the sea of Sina.

**O**f the landes of Laboradoz and Baccalaos, lyinge  
 west and north west from Englande, and beinge  
 parte of the firme lande of the  
 West Indies.

**The way to**  
**the Ilandes**  
**of Maluca by**  
**the north sea.**



**The Spany-**  
**ardes.**

**Gaspar Cor-**  
**tisreales.**

Any haue traunayled to search the coast of the  
 lande of Laboradoz, aswell to thintente to  
 knowe howe farre oz whyther it reachethe,  
 as also whether there bee any passage by sea  
 through the same into the sea of Sur and the  
 Ilandes of Maluca which are vnder the E-  
 quinoctiall line: thinkynge that the waye  
 thither shulde greatly bee shortened by this wyage. The Spa-  
 nyardes as to whose ryght the sayde Ilandes of spices per-  
 teyne, dyd fyrst seeke to fynde the same by this way. The Por-  
 tugales also haupnge the trade of spices in theyr handes, dyd  
 traunayle to fynde the same: although hether to neyther anye  
 such passage is founde oz the ende of that lande. In the yeaere  
 a thousande and fyue hundredeth. Gaspar Cortisreales, made  
 a wyage thither with two carauelles: but founde not the  
 streyght

streyght or passage he sought. At his beinge there, he named the Ilandes that lye in the mouth of the goulfe Quadzado, after his name Cortesreales, lyinge in the .X. degrees and more: and brogght from that lande abowt three scoze men for slaues. He greatly maruayled to beholde the houghe quantitie of snowe and Ise. For the sea is there frosen excedyngly. Whinhabitauntes are men of good corpozature, although takyn lyke the Indies, and labozious. They paynte theyr bodes, and weare braseletes and hoopes of syluer and copper. Theyr apparel is made of the skynnes of marternes and dyuers other beastes, whiche they weare with the heare inward in wynter, and outward in soommer. This apparell they gyze to theyr bodes with gyzels made of cotton, or the synewes of fyfthes and beastes. They eate fyfthe more then any other thyng, and especially salmons, although they haue foules and frute. They make theyr houses of timber wherof they haue great plentie: and in the steade of ryles, couer them with the skynnes of fyfthes and beastes. It is sayde also that there are gryfes in this lande: and that the beares and many other beastes and foules are whyte. To this and the Ilandes abowt the same, the Britons are accustomed to resorte: as men of nature agreable vnto them and bozne vnder the same altitude and temperature. The Norwages also sayled thither with the pylot cauled John Scoluo: And the Englyshe men with Sebastian Cabot.

The coaste of the lande of Baccallaos, is a greate tract: and the greatest altitude therof, is .xlviij. degrees and a halfe. Sebastian Cabot was the fyrst that brogght any knowlege of this lande. For beinge in Englande in the dayes of kyng Henry the seueneth, he furnyshed twoo shippes at his owne charges or (as sum say) at the kynges, whome he perswaded that a passage might bee founde to Cathay by the north seas, and that spices myght bee brought from thence soner by that way, then by the vyage the Portugales vse by the sea of Sur. He went also to knowe what maner of landes those Indies were to inhabite. He had with hym three hundred men, and directed his course by the tracte of Ilande vppon the cape of Labrador at .lviij. degrees: affirmynge that in the moneth of July there was such cold and heapes of Ise that he durst passe no further: also that the dayes were very longe and in

IIII, ii, maner

*Insula Curterre-  
des.*

*Snowe and  
Ise.*

*Furres.*

*Fyfthe.*

*Gryfes.  
Beares.*

*The britons.*

*Sebastian  
Cabot.*

*The land of  
Baccallaos.*

*The vyage  
of Cabot in  
the dayes of  
kyng Henry  
the seueneth.*

*Ise in July.*

## Other notable thynges

Baccallaos.

Bytons.

Danes.

Jaques Cartier.

manner witholat myght, and the nyghtes very cleave. Certeyne it is, that at the. lx. degrees, the longest day is of. xviii. houres. But consyderynge the coulede and the straungenes of the unknowen lande, he turned his course from thence to the West, folowynge the coast of the lande of Baccallaos vnto the xxxviii. degrees, from whence he returned to Englande. To conclude, the Bytons and Danes haue sayled to the Baccallaos: and Jaques Cartier a frenche man was there thysle with thre galeons: as one in the yeare. xxxiii. and the other in the. xxxv. and chose the lande to inhabite frome the. xlv. degrees to the. li. beinge as good a lande as fraunce, and all thynges therein commune to such as fyrst possesse the same.

The people of Baccallaos

Of these lands, Iacobus Bassaldus wyrteth thus: The newe lande of Baccallaos, is a coulede region, whose inhabitants are Idolatours and praye to the soonne and moone and dyuers Idoles. They are whyte people and very rusticall. For they eat fleshe and fysh and all other thynges rawe. Sumtymes also they eat mans fleshe pryncely so that theye Caciqui haue no knowlege therof. The apparell of both the men and women, is made of beares skynnes, althowgh they haue sables and martenes, not greatly esemed because they are lyttle. Sum of them go naked in sommer, and weare apparell only in wynter. The Bytons and frenche men are accustomed to take fysh in the coaste of these landes where is founde great plentie of Tunnyes which inhabitants call Baccallaos wherof the lande was so named. Northwarde from the region of Baccallaos, is the lande of Laborador, all full of mountaynes and great wooddes in whiche are manye beares and wyde bozes. The inhabitants are Idolatours and warlike people, appareled as are they of Baccallaos. In all this newe lande, is neyther cite or castell: but they lyue in companies lyke herdes of beastes.

Fysshys for tunnyes.

Laborador.

## The discouerynge of the lande of flozyda

John Ponce.  
water of  
great vertue,  
of this reade  
in the Des-  
cades.



He gouernour of the Ilande of Boriquena John Ponce of Leon beinge discharged of his office and very ryche, furnished and sente forth two caruels to seeke the Ilandes of Boyuca in the which the Indians affirmed to be a fontayne or springe whols

whose water is of vertue to make olde men younge. Whyt he trauayled syre monerthes with obtragiuous desyre amonge many Ilandes to fynde that he sought, and coule fynde no token of any such fountayne, he entered into Bimini and discovered the lande of Florida in the yere. 1512. on Easter day which the Spanyardes caule the flozpythynge day of Pascha, wherby they named that lande Florida. And supposyng that great ryches myght be bryowght from thense, he returned into Spayne and conuenaunted with kynge Ferdinando as touchynge the trade: and by thintercession of Nicolas de Quarezdo and Peter Nunez de Gusman, the kynge dyd not onely make hym gouernoure of Bimini and Florida, but also sente furthe with hym thre shippes from Seville toward his second vyage in the yere. 1515. He touched in the Ilande of Buacana otherwyse cauled Guadalupe, and sent to lande certeyne of his men with the landreſſes of the shippes: whom the Canibales lyng in ambuſſhe, assayled with theyr mucnemed arrows: and slaying the most parte, caried away the women. With this euyl begynnynge, John Ponce departed frome hense to Boriquen and from thense to Florida wher he went alande with his souldyers to espie a place moste commodious to inhabite and plant a colonie. But the Indians comynge furth agaynst hym to defende the enterance, assayled the Spanyardes fiercely and kille and wounded many of them. At which conflicte also he hym selfe beinge wounded with an arrowe, dyed shortly after in the Ilande of Cuba: and so endedynge his lyfe, consumed a great parte of the rycheſſe he had before begotten at saynt Iohannes of Boriquen. This John Ponce had before sayled with Christopher Colon to the Ilande of Hispaniola in the yere. 1493. He was a gentel soldier in the warres of this Ilande, and capitayne of the province of Higuel for Nicolas de Quarezdo that conquered the same. The region of Florida is a poynt or cape of lande reaching into the sea lyke vnto a tounge: beinge a famous and notorions place amonge the Indians by reason of many Spanyardes that haue bin slayne there. But wheras by fame this Florida was esteemed a ryche lande, many valient and noble men desyred the conquest therof, amonge whom Ferdinando de Soto (who had before byn a capitayne in Peru and greatly myrched by thimprisonment of kynge Atabaliba) accepted

Bimini.

Buacana.

The Canibales.

Boriquen.

The death of John Ponce.

The land of Florida.

Ferdinando de Soto,

a vyage

## Other notable thynges

a vyage thither with a good bande of men, and spente fyue yeare in seekyng of golde mynes, supposyng that this lande hadde byn lyke vnto Peru.

The valient myndes of the Spanyardes.

The thynde attempte of the conqueste of Florida.

Certeine fryers attempte the conquest onely with woordes, but with euill successe.

The fryers are slayne and eaten.

A new kynde of disgrading

In fine, he dyed there and was the destruction and vndoinge of all that went with hym withowt inhabytyng that lande, in the which the conquestours had hitherto neuer good successe, forasmuche as these Indians are valiant archers and stronge and hardy men. But the valiant myndes of the Spanyardes not discouraged by these mysladventures, after the death of Ferdinando Soto, many woorthy gentlemen desyred this conquest in the yeare. 1544. amonge whom was Iulian Samano, and Peter de Ahumada beinge brotherne and men of sufficient abilitie for such an enterprise. But neyther themproure beinge then in Germanie, neyther the prince Doir Philippe his sonne who gouerned all the kyngedomes of Castile and Aragonie, neyther yet the counsaile of the Indies wolde in any case agree to the conqueste. Neuerthelesse notwithstandinge the matter which they were partly perswaded myght otherwyle bee browght to passe, they sent thet fryer Alys Cancell of Baluastro with other fryers of the order of saynt Dominike who offered them selues to conuertere the nations of that lande from theyr gentilitie to the fayth of Christ and obedience to the Emperoure, onely with woordes. The fryer therfore goinge forwarde on his vyage at the kynges charges in the yeare. 1549. went aland with foure other fryers which he tooke with hym and certeyne maryners with olde harnesse or weapons: vnto whom as he began his preachinge, many of the Indians of the sayd Florida resorted to the sea syde, where withowt geyng audience to his woordes, they caried hym away with thre other of his companyons and dyd eate them, whereby they suffered martyrdome for the fayth of Christ. The resydue that escaped, made hast to the shippe and kept them selues for confessours as sum say. Many that fauoure thintente of the fryers, doo nowe consider that by that meanes the Indians coulde not be browghte to owre frendshippe and religion. Neuerthelesse, that if it coulde so haue byn browght to passe, it had byn better. There came of late from that shippe, one that had byn the page of Ferdinando de Soto, who declared that the Indians hanged vp the skynnes with the heades and crownes of the sayd fryers in one of theyr temples,

**C**An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia,  
are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauiga-  
tions abowt the same.

**T**he ancient wryters diuided this oore worlde  
into Asia, Africa, and Europa, by the ryuer Ta-  
nais as Isocrates declareth in his Panegyri-  
co. Afterwarde they diuided Asia and Africa  
by the turnynges and course of the ryuer Ri-  
lus, thogh the same had byn better by the  
sea Bermeio (that is) the redde sea, which almoste trauerfeth  
and passeth through the lande from the Ocean to the sea Me-  
diterraneum which diuideth Europa and Asia. But Berofus  
the Caldean, sayth that Noe gaue names to Africa, Asia, and  
Europa: and gaue them to his sonnes, Cham, Sem, and Ia-  
fet: also that he sayled by the sea Mediterraneum ten yeres.  
In fine we nowe conclude that the thre sayde prouinces oc-  
cupy this mydlande of the worlde. All in generall say that  
Asia is greater then any of the other, and in maner as bygge  
as they both. Albeit Herodotus in his Helypomene, scoznerth  
them that make Europe and Asia equal: affirmynge that Eu-  
rope in longitude is equal to Asia and Afrike: and that it pas-  
sech them in latitude, wherin he speaketh not greatly owt of  
square. But to speake moze of this elsewhere, not pertey-  
nyng to the matter wee haue in hande, I say that Homerus  
one of the most ancient wryters, sayth that the world which  
is diuided into Asia, Africa, and Europa, is an Ilande as re-  
herfeth Pomponius Mela in his thyzde booke. Strabo in  
the fyrst boke of his Geographie, sayth that the earth which  
is inhabited, is an Ilande enuironed with the Ocean. Digi-  
nius also, and Solinus, confirme this sentence, Althowghe  
Solinus doo erre in mystakeinge the names of the seas, suppo-  
synge that the Caspian sea was parte of the Ocean, beinge  
rather lyke vnto the sea Mediterraneum so named bycause it  
is in the mydlande as is the Caspian sea withowt participar-  
cion of the great Ocean. Strabo wryteth that in the tyme of  
Tolomeus Euergetes, one Eudoxus sayled thre or foure  
tymes from Caliz to India: And that the guides of the redde  
sea (cauled the goulfe of Arabie or Bermeio) presented to the  
same kynge Tolomeus, an Indian whome he brought frome  
thense

Noe gaue  
names to  
Africa, Asia,  
and Europa.

Asia.

Europe.

The hole  
earth is an  
Ilande.

The Caspi-  
an sea.

Caliz is a  
ryuer.  
Nauigations  
from the red  
sea to East  
India.

## Other notable thynges

The vyage  
to India by  
the north  
seas.

The hystorye  
of Cornelius  
Nepos.

Note this.

Indians in  
Lubec.

The Sarma-  
tian sea,

Islande.  
Gruntlande.

Laponia.  
Finnarchia.

Gruntlande.

The distance  
from Grunt-  
land to the  
lande of La-  
boradoz.

thence. Wynges Zuba also proued this navigation from Ca-  
liz to India as wyrteth Solinus. Whereby it appeareth that  
the navigation to India by the Ocean was then wel known  
and frequented, althowgh not so much as at this present, the  
same beinge neyther then or nowe a thyng of great difficultie  
or trauayle by the coastes of hotte regions. But to sayle from  
India to Caliz by the other parte of the north by a clyme and  
regions of extreme coulde, shulde bee doubtlesse a difficult and  
daungerous thyng, wherof is no memory amonge the olde  
autours sayynge onely of one Wynges as Islinie and Mela doo  
wyte, rehercyng the testimony of Cornelius Nepos who af-  
firmed that the kynge of Sueuia presented to Quintus Metel-  
lus Celer Lieutenant of Fraunce, certeyne Indians dyuyn  
by tempest into the sea of Germanie: if the same were not of  
the lande of Laboradoz or Bacallaos, and they deceaued in  
theyr colour. For sum say that lykewyse in the dayes of the  
Emperoure Fredericus Barbarossa, certeyne Indians were  
browghe in a Canoe from the citie of Lubec in Germanie. Fur-  
thermore pope Eneas Syluius wyrteth that the Sarmation  
sea, is as certeyne as the Scythian, Germanian, or Indian  
sea. Nowe also there is great knowlege and experience hold-  
the navigations and passage may be attempted by Norwaye  
and other north regions vnder the same north, and to folow  
that coaste to the south sea of Sur and keepe that course by  
the tracte of China. Olanus Bothus the archbishop of Up-  
salia and bozne in Gothlande, hath wyrtten muche of these  
north regions and navigations by the north sea. In the tract  
of this vyage by the north sea, are the Isles of Islande  
and Gruntlande, althowgh there is doubte whether Grunt-  
lande be an Isle or parte of the firme lande. It is, vt lea-  
ques, from Laponia, and sumwhat more from Finnarchia  
a lande of Scandinavia in Europe. The people of Gruntland  
are stronge men and of comly stature. They sayle with smaul  
Wynges or barkes couered close aboute with lether or beastes  
hydes for feare of the coulde and sylhes. Gruntlande as sum  
say, is fyfte leagues from the north parte of the firme lande  
of the West Indies by the lande of Laboradoz. But it is not  
yet known whether this land be continent or adherent with  
Gruntlande, or if there bee any streight of sea betwene the.  
If all bee one firme lande adioynynge by any parte, then the  
two

Two great partes of the world seeme to ioyne together aboue the north pole or vnder it, or beneth it, forasmuch as it is not past fortie or fiftie leaques frō Finmarcke to Grunland: wher by it may appere that althowgh there be any such straight diuidynge them, yet are they neyghbours & not farre in lunder. Furthermore from the land of Labrador by thacompt of the pilottes, is aboue foure hundred leaques to Faial, one of the Ilandes of Azores, otherwyse cauled the Ilandes of So ria lyng in the West Ocean ouer ageynst Spayne. Also by their accompte the lande of Labrador is aboue fine hundred leaques from Ireland, and sixe hundred from Spayne.

of the streight if it be.

The Ilandes of So ria, or Azores.

from labrador to Ireland.

That the Spanyardes haue sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go fiere to fiere ageynst vs. and inhabite the inferiour hemispheric or halfe globe of the earth, contrarie to thoppinion of the olde wyters.



Al the ancient philosophers of the gentiles do deny that there may be any passage from oure hemispheric or halfe compasse of the earth to the Antipodes by reasō of the burne line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) and the Ocean sea lyng in the mydde way, whereby this vyage shulde be hyndered and impossible, as Macrobius.

Macrobius wyrteth at large in his cōmentaries vpon the dreame of Scipio. Of the Chrysitan phylosophers, Clemente wyrteth that it is not possible for any man to passe the Ocean: and other wyrters of later tyme, seeme to confirme the same. In dede I verely beleue that this way was neuer knowen to them, as well for that euer presuppōsinge the thyng to bee impossible they neuer attempted it, as also that the Indians (whom we caule Antipodes) haue no shippes sufficient for so longe and difficulte a nauigation to byngne them knowlceage herof, as haue the Spanyardes to passe the Ocean vnto the: In so much that at this present this vyage is by dayly experience so well known vnto the Spanyardes and Portugals, that they can in maner go thither byndfildes, contrarie to thoppinion of those phylosophers. I will here omytte to speake of many shippes that haue sayled ordynarly from Spayne

Clement.

The Indians are Antipodes.

¶ ¶ ¶ m. i.

## Other notable thynges

**The Myppe  
Victoria.**

**A straunge  
thyng.**

**Shadowes  
towards the  
south.**

**The sonne ry  
syng on the  
ryght hande.**

**The vyage  
of Magella-  
no.**

**Antipodes.**

**Guinea.**

**The north  
starre.**

**The needle  
& compasse.**

Spayne to India, and speake onely of the Myppe Victoria which compassed about the hole globe of the worlde and touched in the landes of two or thre Antipodes, and in fine returned to Spayne by a contrary way, whereby is declared the ignorance of the sage antiquitie. In this nauigation, they founde many secretes, amonge the which this is strange and woorthy memorie, that al such deade Christians as were cast into the sea, lay on theyr backs and turned theyr faces bywarde: but the gentyles lay all goodely on theyr bellies. They also perceaued the sonne and moone to keepe a contrary course from that they doo here, & euer to cast the shadowes of all thynges towards the south: whiche thyng also was knowen to sum of the owlde wyters. For this is manifest that the sonne ryseth on the ryght hande to theym that lyue in the thyrtye degrees on thother syde the Equinoctiall: so that lookynge towards the sonne, they turne theyr faces to the north: whereby it appeareth to bee true that they affirme. They consumed thre yeares lackynge. xliii. dayes in voyage and commynge, and losse a daye in theyr accompte, whereby they dyd eate fleshe on frydayes, and celebrated the feast of Easter on Sundayes: so that they ouerleaped a day (not saylynge in the calender) and kept no iust rekenynge of the bisserile. The cause wherof whyle some haue searched by philosophy, they haue erred more then the maryners. They sayled x. thousande leaques and. xliii. myles by theyr accompte, albe it they shulde haue gonne lesse, if theyr way hadde line ryghte forth. But as they were enforced partly of necessity, and partly to fynde that they sawgh, they made many voyagynge and turnynge. They trauesed the Equinoctiall line fyve tymes without burnynge, contrary to thopinion of the owlde autours. They remayned fyve monethes in the Iland of Tidoze, whose inhabitauntes are Antipodes to theym of Guinea, whereby it is appaerent that wee maye communicate with them. And althowgh they lost the syght of the north starre, yet dyd they euer directe theyr course thereby. For beinge in the. xl. degrees of the south, they sawe the needle of the compasse stande as directly towards the north as it dooth in the sea Mediterraneum: althowgh sum say that it looeth his force somewhat. About the poynt of the South or pole Antarctike, they sawe a lyttle whyte cloude and foure starres lyke

lyke vnto a crosse with thre other ioynynge therunto, which resemble owre Septentrion, and are iudged to bee the signes or tokens of the south exelre of heauen. Great was the nauigation of the fleet of Salamon, but greater was this of the Emperours maiestie Don Charles kynge of Spayne. The Argos of Jason whiche the antiquitie placed amonge the starres, sayled but a lytle way and a shorte byage in comparason of the shyppe Victozia whiche owght woorthely to bee kepte in the Arsenall of Siuile in perpetuall memory of so famous an enterpryse. The daungours, paynes, trauayles and laboures of Ulysses were nothyng in respecte of suche as John Sebastian susteyned: whereby in the scution of his armes in the head of a monstrous or inuincible beast, he wgoz they gaue the woozde with this circumscription: PRIMVS CIRCVDNDEDISTI ME. (that is) Thou art the fyrst that hath compassed me about.

As touchynge the needie of owr compasse, I haue redde in the Portugales nauigations that saylynge as farre south as Cap. de Boa Esperanza, the poynt of the needie styl respected the north as it dyd on this syde the Equinoctiall, sayynge that it sumwhat trembled and decayned a lytle, wherby the force seemed sumwhat to be diminished, so that they were fayne to helpe it with the lode stone.

**C** Who fyrst founde the needie of the compasse, and the vse therof.



Speakyng much of nauigations, it myght seme a thyng vndecent to omitt to say sumwhat of the needie of the compasse: without the which as all nauigations are but blynde and wanderynge coniectures, euen so shulde the Indies neuer haue bynne founde but by helpe of the same, forasmuch as the shippes shulde haue byn lost in the Ocean, were it not that theyr courses were directed by the needie and compasse, which owght therfore to be compted the chiefe partes of the shyppe and principall instrumentes of saylynge. The fyrst that founde the needie and the vse therof (as Plinius and Mapheus Birardus doo wyte) was one Plinius of Alpha a citie in the kyngdome of Naples, of whome the Metropolitans glory to this day: and that by good reason, for as much as a citisen and neyghbours chyld of theys, was

¶ ¶ ¶ m. ii.

Septentrio-  
nes, are the  
vii. starres.  
that are sene  
by Charles  
wayne or the  
great beare.  
Argo of Ja-  
son.

Ulysses.  
John Seba-  
stian.

The chiefe-  
stes partes of the  
shyppe.

## Other notable thynges

the fyrst fynder of so commodious and profitable a thinge, to the secrete wherof so many excellence wyties as were before hym coulde not attayne, althowgh they hadde both iren and the lode stone (cauled *Mignes*) whiche are the materials of the needle. Next vnto *Flavius*, the chiefe commendation is deuoted to the *Spanyardenes* and *Portugales* by whose daylye experyence, the same is brought to further perfection, and the use therof better knowne: althowgh the hether to no man knoweth the cause why the iren touched with the lode stone, turneth euer toward the north starre, as playnly appeareth in euery common dyall. In maner all wyters attribute this to a secrete and hyd propertie, sum of the north, and other of the mixture of naturall temperature of elementes that is betwene iren and the sayde stone. If it bee the propertie of the north or north starre, then (as the pylots make thesse rekenynges) neyther shulde the needle make anye chaunge or dyffer in northelinge, as in saylynge northeaste withowt the *Ilande of Tercera* beynge one of the *Ilandes* of *Azores* or *Soria* and two hundred leagues from *Spayne* toward the West East: West neyther yet shulde it lose his office (as sayth *Plinius*) in passyng from the *Ilande* of *Magnete*, that is, the *Ilande* of the lode stone, which is vnder or neare aboute the north pole. But howe so euer it bee, or what so euer bee the cause, trewth it is that the needle turneth euer to the north although wee sayle about the south. We ought therefore to vnderstande that the lode stone (whiche wee falsely caule the *adamant*) hath heade, fiete, and also armes as sum say. The *iren* that is rubbed with the heade, neuer ceaseth to turne directly toward the north, as is to see in the dyals that are made to the soonne. The rubbing of the fiete seruethe for the south: as doo lykewyse the other partes, for other quarters and poyntes of heauen.

Note here that yf a piece of this stone, of the byggeneesse of an egge or a walnute, or more or lesse, bee broken into manye smaule pieces as bygge as dyce or lesse, yet euery of thore smaule ptes, hath heade, foote, and armes, as is sayde here before.

The

**C**The Situation and byggenes  
of the earth.



It may to some seeme a vaine thyng to seke the situation and byggenes of the earth, although it bee easy to knowe, forasmuche as it is situated in the myddeste of the worlde as the center of the same, beinge enuironed and as it were borne vp of the sea which compasseth it abowt. Ptolemy sayth that the pylers that susteyne it, are East, West, North, and South: which sayinge Dauid confirmeth in the C. vi. psalme. These foure are the most notable pylers or sustentacions that the earth hath in heauen, accordynge to the motions wherof, all byages are ruled on the earth, from whence they haue theyr originall, as engendered of the diuers qualities of vapoures & exhalacions raysed by the sonne and otherwyse. Ptolemy put none other sustentacions then the north and south poles, and parteth the earth by the course of the sonne: which partition Marcus Varro dooth greatly commende as agreable to reason. The poles are firme and immouable as an exelre abowt the which the heauen moueth and is thereby susteyned. They furthermore declare vnto vs vnder what parte of heauen wee bee, howe farre, and which way wee go, with also the largenes of heauen and compassment of the earth. As for example: the streyght of Gibraltar (accompryng from Spayne) is from the north, or to sprake more playnely from the poynte of the earth that is or may be directly vnder the north pole, abowt. liiii. degrees which make. ix. hundredeth and. lxxx. leagues according to the common computaciō of the Cosmographers and Astronomers: And is from the Equinoctiall line. xxxvi. degrees: which added to the other. li. ii. make. xxx. degrees, beinge the hole distance from the north poynte to the Equinoctiall line diuynge the earth by the myddeste, and the quarter or fourth parte of the hole circumference of the earth: the whiche how great it is in compasse and how many leagues or myles it compreheneth, is easy to perceaue accompryng euery degree. lx. myles. But that yowe may the better perceaue what degrees are, I haue thought good to speake sumwhat more hereof.

wher

The sea.

The wyndes

The poles.

The measure  
rynge the cir-  
cumference  
of the earth

## Other notable thynges

### What degrees are.



In the olde tyme theyr maner was to measure the earth and the woorld by furlonges, paces, and fiers, as is to reade in Plinie, Strabo, and other wyrters. But after that Ptolome founde degrees a hundreth and fiftie yeares after the death of Chrys, that maner of accompte was receaued as the best. Ptolome diuided all the hole body and face of the land and sea into three hundreth and sixtie degrees of length or longitude: and other as many degrees of bredth or latitude: so that the hole globe of the haule beinge rounde, conteyneth as much in latitude as longitude. He assigned lyke wyse to euery degree thre score myles, whiche make. xlii. Spanyshe leagues and a halfe: In such sorte that the globe or haule of the earth measured directly by any of the foure partes of the same, conteyneth in circuite fyre thousand and two hundreth leagues. This computacion and measurynge, is so certeyne, that as it is approued of all men and founde trewe by experience, so much the more is it to bee commended and had in admiration for that thynvention hercof was iudged so dyfficulte by Job and the preacher, that no man had founde the measure of limites of the same. They name those degrees of longitude, that they accompte from soonne to soonne by the Equinoctiall line which reacheth from the East to the Weste by the myddle of the globe or haule of the earth. These can not well bee obserued, forasmuch as in this tract of heauen, there is no fyre or permanent signe wherunto the pylots maye directe theyr eyes or instrumentes. For the soonne, althowghe it be a moste cleare signe, yet doothe it dapeley change the place of rysynge and fallynge, and keepe the not the same course the day folowynge as the Astronomers affirme. And althowgh there is no number of the that in trauallyng strange landes and seas haue spent theyr gooddes and almoste theyr wyttes to fynde the degrees of longitude withoutt error as are founde the degrees of latitude & heygth, yet is there none that hitherto hath any trewe knowlege thereof. The degrees of latitude or altitude, are they that are accompted from the north pointe to the south, the commensuration or measuring wherby, is most certeyne by reason that the north starre is per

Ptolome  
founde degrees.

Longitude &  
Latitude.

A degree.

Degrees of  
Longitude.

The degrees  
of Longitude  
are not known.

The degrees  
of latitude.

The north  
starre.

mans

stande and remayneth still in one place, or at the least moueth about the pole which is the firme and stedfast signe wherby they accompte the degrees and directe the byages. By the degrees therfore accompted by these most certeine signes, is unfaylably measured the hole circumference of the lande and sea, diuidynge the same into foure equall partes in this maner. From the north poynte to the Equinoctiall, arc. lxxx. degrees: and from the Equinoctiall to the south poynt, other lxxx. Ageyne on the contrary syde, from the south poynt to the Equinoctiall, are other. lxxx. degrees: and from the Equinoctiall ageyne to the north poynte, are as many. This may we coniecture by good reason aswell of this inferioure hemisphere wherof a great parte is knowne vnto vs by the nauigations of such as haue passed the streyghets of Magellanus and the cape of Bona Speranza, althowgh we haue noo such cleare and manifest relation as we ought to haue of the lande vnder the south pole beinge the other exlree of the worlde whose syght we lacke. For (as Herodotus sayth) yf there be any lande of the Hyperboreans (that is suche as are vnder the north) ther is also of the hypernotios, that is such as are vnder the south: which perhappes are they that lyue in the lande of the streyghes of Magellanus as nere vnto the other pole. But what these landes are, or of what greatnes we can haue no certeyne knowlceage vntyl sum man shal haue compassed about the lands vnder the south pole as did John Sebastian the circumference of the Equinoctiall line.

These last annotations of the Indies, haue I translated out of the bookes of Franciscus Lopes, wyrtten in the Spanyshe tongue to the Emperours maiestie: and partly also out of the carde made by Sebastian Cabot.

The circuite  
of the earth.

The inferiour  
hemisphere.

hyperborea.

hypernotia.

### A demonstration of the roundnesse of the Earth.



Any ignorant men thynke that the earth is not rounde onely by iudgemente of the eye which is deceaued in many thynges not onely of the woorkes of nature, but also of suche as are doonne by the sight and arte of man. For they say: How can it bee rounde foras  
much

The eye is  
deceaued.

## Other notable thynges

¶ rynge.  
¶ circle.

much as thogh a man trauaile neuer so far eether by land or sea, he seemeth euer to passe as it were by a ryght line with out any such circuite or compassynge, ascendynge or descendynge, as pertaineth to all the partes of a rounde forme. The which obiection, as it is grosse and simple, proceedynge of the narrownesse of the vnderstandynge of such as can not conceaue the large circumference of the lande and sea, euen so may it be answered with this simple demonstration. In a rynge that serueth for the synger of a mans hande, the space of halfe an ynche or lytle more, is halfe a cyrcle. But in a rynge or cyrcle of bygger circumference, as in the hoope of a tubbe, halfe an ynche appeareth in maner a ryght line, althoghe it bee not so in dedde, forasmuch as it is not possible for any parte of a circle to consist of a ryght line, neyther any parte of a line to consist of a cyrcle, like the partes must needs bee conformable to the hole, consistynge of such vniforme partes as are in mathematical. But not to wander to farre in these subtilties, the greater that yow can imagen the circle to bee, so that a greater parte therof seeme a ryght line or playne forme: As for exemple, imaginynge a circle whose diameter (that is measure from syde to syde) consisteth of a myle: in this circle a pole length or more, may seeme a ryght line, as yow may or therwylse multiply of the like infinitely: wherby it shal appere that the large circumference of the earth well consydered, a much greater parte of the circle therof then the eye of man conceaueth, may seeme to bee a ryght line, and he continually to walke vppon a playne forme forasmuch as euery parte of a circle is lyke vnto other as I haue sayde. This may suffice for a simple and bryefe demonstration and induction for suche as are desirous to seeke furth to knowe the truth hereof.

¶ What credit ought to bee gyuen to wyrters as touchynge the woorkes of nature.



The moste auncient wyrtter Diodorus, Siculus, in the fourth booke of his Bibliotheca, wyrteth in this maner. If any man for the maruelous straungenes and noueltie of such thynges as are describied in othere bookes, wyl not perhappes gyue credyt to othere hyssorie, let hym with

With ryght iudgement consider the difference that is betwene the ayer of the Scythians and the Troglodytes compared to owtres, and he shall the easelyer perceaue the woorkes of nature and approue owtre woypnynges. For owtre ayer dyffereth so much from theyrs, that it myght seeme incredible if experience were not moze certeyne then doubtfull reason. In some regions the coulde is so extreme that greate ryuers are so frozen, that laden cartes and armys of men passe ouer the immovable ice. Wine also and other moist thynges are so conieled that they may bee cutte with knyues. But this is moze marueylous, that the extreme partes of suche apparell as menne weare, are so bytten with coulde that they faile of. Mens eyes are also dymmed: the fyre gyueth not his natural byghtnesse: and brassen vesselles and images are broken. Sumtime by reason of thicke cloudes, thunders and lyghtnynges are neyther seene oz harde in such regions. Many other thynges moze marueylous the these hath nature wrought, which may seeme incredible to the ignorant: but easy to such as haue experience. In the furthest partes of Egypt and Trogloditica, the heate of the soonne is so extreme abowt noone, that noo man can se hym that standeth by hym, by reason of the thicke ayer caused by the vapoures and exhalations rayled by the heate. None can go withowt shooes but haue theyr fiere suddeynly blyssered and exulcerate. Such as are a thyrt, dye immediately except they haue drynke at hande, the heate so faste consumeth the moysture of theyr bodyes. Meate put in brassen vesselles, is sodde in short space by the heate of the soonne withowt other fyre. yet they that are borne and brought vp in such regions, had rather wyllyngely susteyne these incommodities then bee inforced to lyue otherwyse: such a loue of theyr natie countrey hath nature gyuen to all men: custome of continuance from younge yeares being also of force to ouercome the maliciousnesse of the ayer. Neuerthelesse, these places of such contrary natures wherby suche strange effectes are caused, are not farre in sunder oz diuided by any great distance. For, from the marytches of Agotis oz Meotides where certeyne Scythians dwell in extreme coulde, many haue sayled with shypps of burden to Rhodes in the space of ten dayes: and from thence to Alexandria in foure dayes. From thence passynge thowgh Egypte by the ryuer of Nilus, they haue

The bitter  
tie of ayer in  
dyuca reg  
ons.

Extreme  
colde.

Extreme  
heate.

The force of  
education.

Extreme  
heate & colde  
in a smale  
distance.

Frome Scy-  
thia to Ethio-  
pia.

## Other notable thynges

arrived in Ethiopia in other tenne dayes: So that the navigation from the coldest partes of the worlde to the hottest regions, is no more then. xxiij. continuall dayes. Where as therefore the varietie of the ayer is such in places of so small distance, it is no marueyle that the customes and maners of lyvinge of the people of those regions, with the complexions of theyr bodyes and such thynges as are engendered there, do greatly dyffer from owtres.

### The peface to the booke of Metals.

**I**n this booke of the Indies and navigations I have thought good to adde the booke of metals, for three causes especially me mouynge: whereof the fyrst is, that it seemeth to me a thyng vnder cent to reade so much of golde and syluer, and to knowe lytle or nothyng of the naturall generation thereof, beinge neuerthelesse thynges not onely most despyred, but also such withowt the which at this age the lyfe of man can not bee passed ouer withowt many aduersities, forasmuch as povertie is hatefull to all men, and vertue no further esteemed then it is supported by ryches, syth nowe that lady that reigned in Saturns dayes, is become the slave to hym that was then her bondeman in that golden worlde, so named, not for the despyre that men had to golde, but for thinnocencie of lyvinge in those dayes, when Mars was of no poure, and men thought it cruelte by breakynge the bones of owre mother the earth, to open a way to the couerte of infernal Pluto from thence to get golde and syluer the seedes of al mischiefes and angells of such a god, whom the antiquitie (not without good consyderation) paynted blinde, affirmynge also that of hym golde and syluer haue receaued the propertie to blinde the eyes of men. But syth it is nowe so that we shalbe inforced to seke ayde by that which was sumyimes a myschefe, it resteth so vnto the matter as doo cunningge phisicians that can mynistre popson in proportion with other thynges in such sort qualifyinge the malicioulnesse therof, that none shall therby be incoreate. Forasmuch therfore as golde and syluer haue obteyned this prerogative that they are suche necessarie euils whiche

Whiche the lyfe of man can not lacke without det̄iment, not only they but other metals also perhappes more necessārie althowgh not so p̄cious, are thynges woorthy to bee better knownen then only by name, syth they are th̄ instrumentes of all artes, the p̄ices of all thynges, the oz̄namentes of al dignities, and not the least p̄ortion of nature, wherby the contēplation of them is no lesse pleasaunte then necessary. But forasmuch as it is not here my intent to intreate much of metals, I wyl speake of the seconde cause: which is, that if in traueyling strang and vnknoʒen countreys any mans chaunce shalbe to arriue in such regions where he may knowe by th̄ formation of th̄ inhabitants or otherwyse, that suche regions are fr̄tefull of riche metals, he may not bee without sum iudgement to make further searche for the same. The th̄yde cause is, that althowgh this owre realme of Englande be full of metals not to bee contemned and much rycher then men suppose, yet is there fewe or none in Englande that haue anye greate skyll thereof, or any thyng wytten in oʒer tounge, wherby men maye bee well instructed of the generation and kyndyng of the same: as the lyke ignozance hath byn amonge vs as touchyng Cosmographie and nauigations but I attempted accordyng to the p̄ortion of my talene and simple leaŕnyng to open the fyrst doze to the enteraunce of this knoweledge into owre language, wherin I wolde wyſe that other of greater leaŕnyng wolde take some p̄epnes to accomplishe and bynge to further perfection that I haue vndely begunne, not as an autour but a translatoure, leaſte I bee iniurious to any man in ascribyng to my selfe the trauayles of other. And wheras as concernyng the knowleage of metals, I was once mynded to haue translated into Englyſhe the hole woork of Protrechnia wherof I fynysshed .xxii. chapiturs nowe more then thre yeāres sence, and left the copie therof in the handes of one of whom I coulde neuer get it ageyne (om̄p̄tyng to speake of oʒer ingr̄titudes) I was therby discouraged to p̄ceede any further in that woork. Neuertheleſse, syth this hyſtoꝝy of the Indies hath ministred occasion to intreate sumwhat of metals, I haue ageyne translated thre of the fyrst chapiturs of that booke, which seeme most necessary to bee knownen in this case. And hereof to haue sayde thus much in manner of a p̄face it may suffice,

Of the generation of metalles and their mynes with the  
maner of fyndinge the same: wrytten in the Italian  
tounge by Vannuccius Biringucius in his booke cauled  
*Pyrotechnia*. To his louynge frende Master  
Bernardino Moncellese, greeting.



Whereas I promysed you to wrytte of the na-  
tures of metalles in particular, I am nowe in-  
forced to declare euery thinge in generale, and  
especially of the places of their generation and  
their order, with the forme and maner of woork-  
ynge in the same, and the instrumentes therto  
percepyninge. Youe shall therefore vnderstande, that mynes  
of metalles are founde in the moste partes of the worlde, more  
or lesse according to the diligence of wittie searchers: and shewe  
them selues standinge in the grounde in maner in suche sorte  
as the beynes of bludde are dyspersed in the bodie of lyuing  
beastes, or like vnto the braunches of trees spredde forth di-  
uers wayes. wherfor, the diligent searchers of mines, willing  
by a certeyne similitude declare howe the mynes are placed in  
the mountaynes, haue figured a greate tree full of branches  
planted in the myddeste of the base of a mountayne, frome the  
whiche are diuied dyuers and many bowtes and branches,  
sum greate and sum smaule, muche like vnto verpe trees that  
are in owlde woddes. They will also that in growynge, they  
euer ingrowe them selues and reache towarde the heauen, con-  
uertynge into theyr nature the moste disposed and neare mat-  
ter, vntil the toppes of theyr branches extend to the highest  
parte of the mountayne, and there shewe furthe theyr selues  
with manifeste apperaunce, puttyng furthe in the steade of  
bowtes and floures, certeyne fumosities of blew or greene co-  
loure, or marchasites with smaule beynes of ponderous mat-  
ter, or suche other compositions of tinctures. And when by  
this means they shewe the selues vnto vs, we may make firme  
coniecture that suche mountaynes are mincral, and that ac-  
cordinge to the demonstrations they shewe more or lesse, they  
are richer or poorer of myne. Therfor the searchers, according  
to thapperaunces which they fynde, take good courage vnto  
them: and with hope and securitie of profecte, apply al their  
possible diligence with witte and expences to digge or gette  
owte

The mineral  
tree.

The mynes  
doo growe.

Marchasites.

Signes of  
metals.

obte such ethynges as the signes and owtewarde apperayn-  
ces be clare vnto them. And by this maner of fyndinge of

mynes, it hath often tymes chaunced that many haue byn ex-  
alted to the highest degree of riches. Whereas therfore by this  
meanes men enter into the mountaynes with the eys of confu-  
deration and right Iudgemente, and see the places where the  
mineralles are ingendered and comprehend in maner theire  
quantitie, they adapte theyr caues or fosses accordynge there-  
unto, whereas they shulde otherwyle wandre by chaunce, be-  
cause no man can by any other meanes knowe where the mines  
are in the mountaynes, although he were of neuer so good iud-  
gement, and shulde make searche for the same neuer so cury-  
ously by litle & litle. It shal therfore in this case be necessary  
to folow the certificat & aperayces of signes, & to encofure the  
same as nere as may be, with eys & eates euer attentie where  
they maye hope to fynde any tokens of metalles, especially by  
enquyringe of shepardes and other anciente inhabitants of  
such regions in the which mineralles are engendered. And this  
I speake the rather for that I am perswaded that at the first  
sight of a mountaine, by reason of the greate barrennesse and  
roughnes therof, and also by reason of the great aboundance  
of waters that are engendered in the same, a right good iud-  
gemente shall not suffice to coomme to certayne knowelceage  
that metall is contayned in such mountaynes, vntill the scar-  
chers haue with charges and travail caused miners in sundry  
places to discouer the same. And therfore I also beleue that  
one man although he bee neuer so stronge, wyrtie, and farre  
castinge, shall not be able in a newe and straunge contrey, to  
searche by smaule portions not onely al the mountaynes of  
one or moor prouinces which may bringe furth minerals, but  
shall with muche difficultie scarcely suffice to searche the se-  
cretes of only one mountayne: In so muche that sum consyde-  
ringe the difficultie hereof, are of opinion that in this effecte,  
it shuld be requysite to worke by the arte of Negromancie,  
which I thynke to be a fable without further knowelceage.  
But I wolde that these necromancers shulde tell me why this  
theire arte helpeth them no further in the woork after that  
they haue once founde the myne, if it be trewe that they say.  
Why (I say) doth it not helpe them furthe as at the begyn-  
nyng to fynde the myne, so consequently in the myddest and

Signes and  
tokens of me-  
tals,

Mountaynes  
in the which  
metals are en-  
gendered.

Ageynst see-  
kyng metals  
with the rod  
wher they  
caule vngua-  
la diuina.

Negromancie,

the

## Of the generation Of metals.

the ende to byynge the same to further perfection, as to gette  
it oute, to byynge it to fusion or meltinge, and to purifie or  
pouge it from drosse, which doubtlesse it shoulde haue poue  
to doo if it may bee beleaued that it can doo the other. But  
forasmuch as such effectes are so fearefull and terrible, that  
they thought not or can not be practised of al men, and also per  
happes because such maner of woorkynge is not knowne, I  
thinke it not good to be bled: but thinke rather by good rea  
son that this arte is so much the moze to be omitted and con  
temned, in howe much we are accustomed in the begynnynge  
of dyggynge of mynes, especially to caule for the grace of god  
that it may please hym to be presente with his ayde to oth  
er doubtfull and trauallous woorkes. Lettynge passe therefore  
this deeplye the diuise of such beastly and fearefull men, I ex  
horte you to folowe the practise by the foresayde signes mi  
nistred vnto you by the benignitie of nature, bothe ground  
ed vpon the foundation of truth and approued by the experie  
ence of many practicionars, not consydinge in woordes or  
promysse of thynges vayne and incōprehensible. With these  
signes therefore shall you searche the banks and sides of the  
halles, with the clyffes and ryftes of the stones, and the bac  
kes, toppes, or ridges of the Mountaynes: Also the beddes,  
chanelles, and courses of ryuers, lookynge diligently amonge  
theyr sandes, and the ruines of theyr fosses, amonge the whi  
che you shall often tymes espie marchasites or smaule sparkes  
of mynes, or other dyners tinctures of metals, whereby you  
may be certified that certeyne mynes are in such places, which  
you shall exactly fynd by diligent and curious searchynge the  
clyffes of theyr ryftes and dry places. After these aduertise  
mentes, take this for a generall signe, that all suche places  
and moūtaynes are mineral, out of the which many springes  
and great abundaunce of crude water dooeth issue, haupng  
with theyr clearenes a certeyne mincral taste, and such as at  
variable seasons of the yeare chaunge theyr qualitie, beynge  
warne in the springe tyme and coude in sommer. And this  
thyng thought you to beleue the moze when you shall see the  
aspecte of such mountaynes to be rough, sharpe, and saluage  
withowt earch or trees. Or so that yf there bee a lyttle earch  
found vpon the same with a smaule beyne of herbes or grasse  
you shall perceaue the greynenes therof to be sapnt and in ma  
pcc

The maner  
of searchynge  
for mynes.

A generall  
signe,

Rough and  
barren moun  
taynes.

wet wythered and dyed. And albeit that sumtymes also,  
 mines are founde in mountaynes hauynge earth and frutefull  
 trees in the toppes thereof, yet are they for the most part found  
 in such wherof we haue spoken. Of these other, there maye  
 fewe signes be gyuen, except to go by lytle and lytle to seke  
 the bankes of theyr sydes. But amonge all these, the best and  
 most certeyne signe that may be gyuen, is wheras on the su-  
 perficiall parte of the earth eyther on hyghe or belowe, the  
 myne dooth shewe it selfe apparente to syght. Sum there are  
 that for a good signe do greatly commende the residences  
 which certeyne waters make wher they haue rested for a time  
 and beinge dyed vp of the heate of the sonne, do often times  
 shewe in certeyne partes of theyr residencies dyuers tinctures  
 of mynerall substance. Summe other are accustomed to take  
 such waters, and in a vessell of earth or glasse or other mat-  
 ter, cause them to boyle and vapoure away vntyll the dregs  
 or residue remayne in the bottome well dyed in the likenes  
 of a grosse earth, of the which they make an assaye eyther by  
 the ordinarie tryall of fyre, or after some other maner as ly-  
 keth them best. And by this meanes (althowgh they attayne  
 not to theracte knowlege of the truth) yet do they approche  
 to a certeyne knowlege of the thyng wherby they haue sum  
 intelligence of what sufficiencie and goodnesse the myne is  
 which they seeke, before they be at any great charges in for-  
 lowynge the same: wherby they alway that with all diligent  
 aduertisement the places neare vnto the rootes of the confine  
 mountaynes be curiously searched, with also the bankes and  
 sydes of the selfe same mountayne, and all such superficiall  
 partes thereof, where any stones are founde discovered eyther  
 of theyr owne proper nature or by the course of water: presu-  
 mynge euer that it is in maner impossible but that yf suche  
 mountaynes contayne any mynes, they muste needes shewe  
 furth sum floures, tinctures, or colours of theyr exhalations.  
 Yet yf it shulde so chaunce that they do not this, the goodnes  
 of the mine may be the cause hereof forasmuche as eyther it is  
 not of vaporable nature, or to be of smaule quantitie, or els  
 perhappes because the mountayne is greete and the myne ve-  
 ry low or so farre with in, that it is not sufficient to put furth  
 any signes of fumosities. The cause also hereof maye bee that  
 sum stone lyke vnto that caused *Albasano* (which I thynke to be

The best  
 signe.

The residues  
 of waters.

Marchasius  
 are the tinc-  
 tures of my-  
 neral exha-  
 lations.

of

## Of the generation of metals.

Metals in  
fruitful moun-  
taines.

of that kynde which we caule the greete stone) or blacke and  
whyte marble of thyeke and respyng nature, may be found  
to lye betwene and so to stoppe the passages, that the sayde fir-  
mosities may therby be hyndered to arryue to the uppermost  
parte of the earth: by reason wherof, it is possible that suche  
mountaynes may byngne furth trees and herbes forasmuche  
as the earth therof dooth receyue his vertue and may nurysh  
they roots not beinge incinerate or burnt with hotte and  
venemous vapours of the mynes: so that the shoures of rayne  
or fluds with their courtes can not cary away the earth as in  
such places wher the same is found soe dryed. And therfore  
hypon such mountaynes I haue seene great wooddes of chest-  
nutte trees, beeches also and okes, with well cultured and  
fruitfull fieldes. So that to conclude, by the signes of the  
fertilitye or barrenesse of the mountayne, is not taken a-  
way but that other places may also haue plentie of mines whi-  
che ought to be searched and folowed. But forasmuch as these  
signes are of the natures of minerals, I wyll speake more de-  
terminately of theym in the places wher I entreate of theyr  
proper mynes: Not intendynge here to saye muche of these  
thynges in generall, but only to induce you to sum clearnesse  
of the fyrst lyght. And therfore that you may gyue the more  
diligent aduertisement, I saye vnto youe that all the mynes  
which you shall fynde by such signes, by what meanes soe-  
uer they shall come to youre handes, whether they be found  
in stones, earth, or sande, after that at the fyrst lyght they  
haue shewed them selues to be mynes of metals, you ought  
to consyder of what ponderositie or weyght they are: The  
which the greater that it is, so much the more dooth it shewe  
both the perfection and goodnesse of the substance, and also  
the more quantitie of the mine. And thus presupposyng that  
by the signes or other meanes you haue founde the mine, not  
yet fully perceayunge of what kynde of metall it myght be, to  
certifie youe hercof and also of what quantitie it is, or howe  
it is accompanied or myxt with other, or lykewyse of what  
puritie it is of it selfe, or of what euyl disposition or malice  
it is founde to bee, it shall herein be necessary before you be at  
any further charges therewith, to proue the same by two or  
thre assayes or mo, as I wyll further declare in the particu-  
lar place of assayes. Beinge therfore certifyed of the myne,  
and

Howe the  
signes are to  
bee consyde-  
red.

The assay of  
the mines.

and of what metall it is, and also what quantitie it concey-  
neth, fyndynge it by accompte to bee so profitable as to beare  
the charges, I exhorte youe bouldely to gyue the fyrste at-  
tempte to faule to mynyng, and with all possible diligence to  
folowe your enterpryse: assuryng youe selfe, that of what  
so euer mynerall matter you shall take assay accordyng to the  
proportion of that pice which you tooke of the vppermost or  
owtmost parte of the mine for that purpose, you shall fynde  
that to bee muche better and rycher whiche is further within  
the mountayne. And thus being certified by the assay of what  
quantitie the thyng is that appered by the signes, and of all  
other reasonable consyderations apperteynyng to the worke,  
you shall with all celeritie dispose your selfe to faule to dyg-  
gyng, to thintent that youe may shortlye cyther here enioye  
the frute of youre trauell, or els where with better suc-  
cesse proue youre good fortune.

But in thattempte of this enterpryse, you ought principally to haue respecte  
to the situation of the place where youe intende to make the  
begynnyng of your caue or fosse: Takyng good aduertise-  
ment that it be commodious for the labourers that shal worke  
therein: prouydyng aboue all thynges that it haue an easye  
enteraunce into the mountayne, with lesse charges and in shor-  
ter tyme to arryue vnder the signes which youe haue taken:  
encounterpyng the same as muche as is possible as it were by  
a ryght line, fyrst with iudgemente and then with workeman  
shyppe, vntyll you stycke on the grosse masse or bodye of the  
myne, breakyng in the course of the caue al matters of hard  
compositions, as quarreys and stones ouerthrowyng the  
same: haupyng euer respecte to the owtwarde signes whiche  
you folowe, forcaspyng in youre mynde how youe may di-  
rectly arryue to the same, euen as the maryners directe theyr  
course by theyr compasse and syght of the north starre. Also  
by syde that place where you haue determined to make the en-  
teraunce and begynnyng of the caue, you muste take choyse  
of an other place, cyther on the front of the mountayne or on  
the syde that it may bee neare and commodious to make one  
or two or mo cotages for the commoditie and necessitie of the  
workemen. One of these must bee appoynted for theyr dor-  
mitorie where sum may rest and sleepe whyle other worke,  
and that you may the moze commodiously be present and as-

DDDD, i.

spiaunce

The richer  
myne further  
within the  
mountayne.

Consyderaci-  
ons how the  
caue ought to  
bee made.

The bodie of  
the myne.

howses of  
office for the  
myners.

## Of the generation of metals.

Baptisinge &  
dedication of  
the caue.

The makinge  
of the caue.

Causes of hi-  
derance.

Soft stones.

syffaunt to theyr doynges, diligently to beholde all thynges and to conforthe theim in theyr laboures: also to dispence and bestowe theyr byttayles as shall bee nedefull, and to reserue the same in safe custodie, with dayly prouision of al thynges apperteynyng. The other must bee as it were a smythes forge wherin theyr woorne and broken tooles must bee renewed, and other newe made, to thintent that the woork be not hyndered for lacke of stoke of necessarie instrumentes. When these thynges are thus spynsted, with good prouision of byttayles and a sufficient number of expert myners, then in the name of God and good aduenture, causynge a presse to blesse the most mayne with all the shoppes, and to baptise the caue, dedica-  
tyng it (as the maner is) to the holy Trinitie or to our Lady or to the name of sum other saynt which yowre haue in deuoti-  
on, with inuocation to theym to prosper yowre attemptes, yow shall with good courage and hope begynne to dygge the caue, with intente to folowe the same withoute ceasynge as farre as yowre abilitie shall reache, or untill yowre haue pas-  
sed ouer the lymettes signified by the signes befoze named: Takynge euer diligent heade that yowre begyn yowre caue as lowe as yow may at the foote of the mountayne, in such order that yowr myners so continue and folow the same by a righe line, that they encounter the veyne of the myne by the shortest and safest way that may bee deuised. For it often times chaun-  
ceth, that althowgh the caue haue byn wel begunne, yet hath it not byn well folowed, for that the myners bringe with-  
drawen from the ryght course by the hope of suche braunches of mynes as haue appered vnto them in the waye, doo often times decline from theyr attemped course, and from the signes which they owght to haue folowed. And bysye other pre-  
ceptes, see that yow beate in memozy to procure that in dyg-  
gynge, yow eschewe as muche as yowre maye, the cutryng of soft or byskell stones, aswell for that it may bee daungerous for ruine of the caue, as also that it seldome chaunceh that any mynes are founde in such stones. But yf yow shal chaunce so to fynde them that yow can by no meanes auoyde them, I conforthe yow that where suche cause of feare sheweth it selfe, both that yow lose not the charges of the caue and for the bet-  
ter safegarde of yowre woorkemen, it shalbe necessary that yow vse all possible diligence in well vpholdynge and forye-  
spynge

## Of the generation of metals. 330

fyng the caue with arches of waules trauesed with stronge postes of tymber after the maner of framed beames, lusspned with grose and stronge pylles made of good and stronge tymber of oke or other great trees. And in this maner owghe yow to proceade in dyggynge yowre myne that yow may with more securitie enioy the frute of yowr traualle. But in the olde tyme they that dygged mynes (as is yet to see) in the caues lesse of them) folowed an other maner: so that in the steade of begynnynge the caue belowe at the foote of the mountayne (as doo the later myners) they begunne to dygge theyr caue in the upper or hyghest parte where the daye discovered the myne, dyggynge downwarde after the maner of a pytte or a well, folowynge the same sumtyme on the one syde, and sumtyme on the other euen vnto the depth, as the beyne shew ed it selfe to theyr syght: wherof I haue thought good to make mention, for that in thoppinion of many men, this way dooth seeme much better and of more securitie to fynde that they seeke, then to dygge by the sydes: bycause that by this meanes they haue euer the mine before theyr eyes eyther more or lesse as a line to leade them to the grosse masse. yet who so consydereth the thyng well, shall vnderstande that the later myners haue better concealed the reason of this woork, in respecte (as is to see) of many more commodities and securities which insue rather of this maner of woorkynge then of the other: as the difficultie to descende and ascende the caue, & the daungious lest it bee stopped by by many ruines, bysyde the traualyous labour to drawe owte the mine with the rockes & fragmentes of stones: And aboue al thynges, that they shal not bee able to drawe owte the waters whiche are often tymes so abundaunt that they greatly increase the charges and traualles of the patrones of the mynes by reason of the greatespayde and helpe which shalbe requisite to haue in that case and also for the makynge of wheeles, troughes, pyppes, & pumpes, with suche other instrumentes seruyng for the purpose to drawe owte the waters. And yet with all this, it often tymes chasiceth that although they labour hereat continually, yet shal they be iforced to forlake their profitable & laudable tterpyrse. So that to conclude, I saye (as yow maye well vnder stand) that it is a much better way and of more securitie to begynne the diggynge of the caue rather at the roote or fote of the mountayne

The fortifick  
of the caue.

howe the  
caues were  
made in olde  
tyme.

Abundaunce  
of water in  
the mynes.

The beste  
maner of ma  
kinge the  
caue.

## Of the generation of metals.

The change  
of the signes.

The rudder  
& compasse.

Austria.

mynes of  
copper and  
leade holdis  
silver.

A caue of  
two myles.

A large caue  
of the myne  
of copper hol-  
dinge silver.

rayne and to enter into the same by litle and litle a slope by  
warde, then to begynne at the toppe or the highest backe ther  
of. And this both for the more commodious passinge furthe  
of the water, and also for the easier trauaile of the labourers.  
Obscrvyng euer diligently the chaunge of the signes whiche  
appere vnto you outwardly, vsynge the rudder and compasse  
as do they that sayle on the sea. For hereby the myners shalbe  
instructed euer to folowe the right way in the caue vntill by  
the conductinge of wytte and arte, they bee brought to the  
place of the grose masse or bodie of the tree, whych is the  
cause, fontayne, and original from whence the sayd tinctures  
fumolites, and mineral signes, are deriued and sente furth  
to the superficiall partes. And as concernynge this purpose, I  
thincke it good to declare vnto you howe in the Dukedome  
of Austria, betweene Ispruc and Alla where I contynued manye  
yeares, I sawe a large vale enuironed with a greate number  
of mountaynes, by the middell wherof a ryuer passed through  
of greate aboundaunce of water: and in maner in all the mon-  
taynes that are there abowt, is digged great plentie of mine,  
wherof the moste parte are of copper or leade, althoughe also  
in maner euery of them is founde to holde sum portion of sil-  
uer. Amonge these mountaynes, I sawe one in the whych  
the inhabitantes of the countrey dwellyng there abowt, alu-  
red by the sight of many signes, beganne to digge a caue after  
the maner wherof we haue spoken: In so muche that (as it  
appered vnto me) from the place where they begane the caue,  
they had digged litle lesse then two myles before they sawe  
any sparke or shadowe of any myne. And beinge arryued with  
the caue in maner perpendicularly vnder the signes they folo-  
wed, they were encountered with a beyne of the harde stone  
cauled *Albazano*, of a yarde and a halfe thicke, which they pas-  
sed through with greate trauaile and longe tyme, and with  
the helpe of commodious instrumentes of iren shardened to  
woozke in suche stones. And when they had thus passed  
through this quarrey of stone, they chaunced vpon a verie  
great beyne of the myne of copper of such sorte that when I  
was there, lookinge betweene the one and the other, I sawe  
on euery syde as it were a waile of the hard stone of *Albazano*,  
and therein a boyde place of suche largenes from the one syde  
to the other that moze then two hundred men al at one time,  
had

had sufficient roome to stande labouringe frome the hygheste parte to the lowest, hauynge non other lyght then of candells, and makinge certeyne markes in euery place where they saw the bre of myne shewe it selfe: and thus ceased not to worke continually both day and nyght, course by course, a thyng surely maruelous to be holde. Without the mouth of the caue, I sawe great abundaunce of mine partely mixt with the stone of the bre, and partely chosyn and seperated. Amonge these pieces, there was one consistynge of a hole masse of pure mine of suche biggnes and weyght, that two good horses with a light carre could scarcely drabe it away. This myne was of copper as I haue sayde. But to magnifie it, they cauled it syluer, because it helde suche plentie thereof that it surmount- ed the charges, whereas they had also the copper for aduan- tage. Nowe shall further vnderstand that in the myddest of the caue, there was a chanell or gutter whiche gathered together the waters that fell into it continually on euery syde from the ruptures or broken places and cliffes. These waters ranne throughe the chanel with so vehemente a streame, that I surely beleue that it might well suffice to dryue any greate mylle. In so muche that in goynge in and comming out of the caue, I remember that by the contynual faule & sprinkling of the waters from aboue & beneth, I was as wet as though I had passed throughe a greate shoure of rayne. Whereat I maruel the lesse when I consider that water is the fyrst and nearest prin- ciple of the whiche the substance of minerals is engendered. By reason wherof, such men of vnderstandynge as haue sear- ched the natures of these thynges, argue hereby and take it for a generall rule, that all those mountaynes out of the whi- che spryngeth great abundaunce of water, doo also abounde with myne. The which thyng well considerynge, and wey- inge the greatnes hereof, I faule into this accompte with my selfe, that if to the patrones of the sayde caue, the charges of the same hadde byn a hynderaunce or greafe, eyther for the length thereof, or for despayre that they shuld not haue found that they sought, they wolde surely haue forsaken it. And beinge nowe come to this harde stone after they had suffe- red so great charges by the trauaile both of mynde and body, if they shulde then haue leste of theyr enterpryse, they shulde not haue come to such ryches wherby they haue obtey- ned

Candlelight.

A greete masse of pure myne.

Abundaunce of water in the mynes.

Water is the nearest principle of mine- rales.  
A general rule.

Great riches obtayned by searchinge of mynes.

## Of the generation of metals.

Magnanimi-  
tie & paciēce.

The moun-  
taines are  
the matrices  
of riches.

The grace of  
god is recea-  
ved by owre  
endeuoure.

Money beget  
rich rches.

ned many commodities aswell profitable for them selues as  
also for theyr lordes and princes, theyr countrey, theyr kins-  
folkes and famelic. Neyther yet shulde they haue byn so wel  
able to helpe theyr poore neyghbours as they haue doone by  
the meanes of the valientnesse of theyr constant myndes and  
persistynge in so good and commendable an enterpryse. Where-  
fore to conclude, yow that wyll begynne to attempt any such  
thyng, must be of good courage and much patience to folowe  
that yow haue begunne, at the least untill yow knowe by the  
signes what the thyng is: hopinge euer that in goynge for-  
warde, the day folowynge (as it is possible) shal discover the  
thyng that yowe seeke and content your desyre: Wherof yow  
may bee the better assured, if yow well consyder that the moo-  
thers and matrices of most esteemed ryches, and the myntes  
of al treasures, are the mountaynes: To the whiche (with the  
helpe of fortune and yowr ingenious indeuoure) yow shal  
open the way, not only to fynde the myne and arryue to the  
belly of the mountaynes where suche thynges lye hyd, but  
shal also bee exalted by ryches to hyghe honoure and digni-  
tie as they of whome we haue made mention before: for as-  
much as most beningne and liberall nature, doothe open her  
lappe and promette good successe to suche as seeke ryches by  
such honest meanes. The whiche way surely is muche rather  
to be folowed, then eyther the warres full of troubles and  
miserie, or the carefull trade of marchaundies with wander-  
ynge abowt the worlde, or suche other fastidious cares per-  
happes vnlawfull for a good man. And albeit (as some men  
like to speake) the fyndynge of mynes bee an especial grace of  
God, neuerthelesse, forasmuch as we are bozne to labour, it  
shalbe necessary that we seeke the same in suche places where  
they are brought furth by the woozke of nature, and by fear-  
chynge to fynde them, and beinge founde to dygge for them,  
and by this meanes to receaue the grace of God with apply-  
inge owre owne diligence therto, with helpe of the disposi-  
tion of fortune and naturall iudgemente. And yet shal not this  
only suffice withowt sufficiencie of money able to susteyne the  
charges and continue the woozke: to thende that if yow can  
not fynde it with yowr owne expences, yow maye supplie  
the same by the ayde of other, eyther patrones or parteners.  
But let vs nowe cease to reason any further of these thynges.

W. J. S.

Whesupposyng therfore that yow haue alredy passed the charges, and haue not only founde the myne yow sought, but also haue brought furth to lyght a great quantitie therof, it shal then bee needeful (as a thyng chiefly to be consydered befoze yow begin to dygge) wel to ponder & examen both the comodities of such thynges as shall occurre, and also of such wherof yow shall haue neede: as cymber and woodde of all sortes, with water and byrtayles: of all the whiche, yow must haue great plentie: and especially of woodde, whereof yowe muste haue great quantitie, aswell to serue to the proportion of the myne, as also to make coles to the vse of melrynge, fynnyng, dryyng, garboylng, and such other bysoplynges, byslyde that which must serue to fortifie the caue and to buyld hoppes and cotages with such other edifices. Diligent consideration must lykelyse be had to the situacion of the place where the buyldynges shalbe erected: as that the plotte therof bee commodious with abundaunce of water hauyng a good faule. Also not onely of plentie of woodde and cole nere vnto the myne, but of such as may serue the turne. And of all other incommodities, yowe muste chiefly auoyde the lacke of water, as a thyng of greatest importaunce and most necessarie in this effecte. For by the force and weyght of the course hereof, wheeles and dyuers other ingenious instrumentes are adapted with ease to lyfte vppre greate bellowes to make fyers of great poure, to beate with hammers of great weyght, and to turne myghtie and stronge engens, by the force whereof the trauayles of men are so much furthered, that without such helpe, it were in maner impossible to ouercome suche tedious trauayles or to arryue to the ende of the woozke, forasmuch as the force of one wheele may lyfte moze, and that moze safely then the paynefull labour of a hundreth men. It shal therfore be needefull to haue great consyderation hereof, not onely to make these edifices or houses of office, but also to make them commodious for the purpose, as for the cariage of myne and cole with other necessities. For if any of these effectes shulde be wantyng, the coste, tyme and trauayle, shulde bee cast away: forasmuch as these thynges doo so much the moze relieue the one the other as they are ioyned togyther, and hinder the woozke not a lytle yf any be separate. But bycause these commodities can not euer be hadde all togyther, yowe

Necessarie  
aduertise-  
mentes.

Plentye of  
woode.

Cotages and  
edifices.

The situacio  
of the place.

The vse of  
water.

Necessarie  
considerati-  
ons.

ought

## Of the generation of metals.

owght to wey with your selfe which of the twoo serueth for mo necessarie vles, as eyther to haue the cole or the mine most commodious to the houses, and accordinge thereto vnto to place the houses nere vnto the same if the commoditie of water wyll so permytte.

Albeit, if it were possible, it shulde be much better if al these necessarie commodities were ioyned togyther, whereas other wyse youe muste contente your selfe as occasion serueth.

Nowe therefore to conclud, bysye that whiche I haue declared vnto you of the findinge of the myne and the digging thereof with other considerations, I exhorte youe further to faule to practyse with sum myne of your owne, that you may therby take occasion to ryle to the degree of ryches whych you desire. And therfore I aduertise you that after you haue founde the mountayne and begun to digge, you shal euer go forwarde with a boulde mynde and stout corage, woorkyng with witte and Iudgement, forasmuche as in this effecte the one serueth the other in the seeke of eys to enter where they can not.

A false opiniō

Byue no credit to that whiche many ignorante folkes doo say and beleue, affirminge that in digging for metals, they are founde rather by chaunce then by arte. The which although it were trewe, yet owght we to trust more to arte and practyse then to chaunce.

The trauer-  
singe of the  
veyne.

And when you are nowe entered into the mountayne, beare well in memozy that you haue presently with you the tallie or ruler of the caue, wherby youe may traaverse the beyne of the myne when you are comine to it.

For if you shulde folowe it by the course as it lyeth, it is possible that youe mighe folowe it a greate way not passe the biggnesse of a mans finger and perhappes lesse: By reason wherof, it might happen that you shuld lose it and neuer find it ageyne.

Continuance  
in the worke.

The like shuld chaunce vnto you if after that you haue begun to digge a caue, it shulde repent you of the charges, and that for the basnes therof youe shulde forsake it, as many haue doone whobycause they coulde not fynde the mine at the first stroke, despayninge that they shulde neuer fynde it, haue forsaken it as a thyng vnprofitable, thynking that they haue woonne enough in that they were not at further charges with that which they accompt losse and damage: And thus curiously leaue of their enterpryse, not regardinge that they may leaue the frute of theyr expenses and trauaile to an other that

that may folowe thes begynninges, and perhappes fynde the myne within the distance of a cubit, a spanne, or a finger. We may say therfore that suche men doo willingly forsake theyr good fortune as many haue doone. He therfore that hath begunne to digge a caue, let hym determine to folowe it, puttinge away the inclination of the basenes therof, and not to feare the strenghtenesse of the way, but rather to applye all his possible diligence without remourse, hopinge thereby no lesse to obteyne honour and riches, then to auoyde shame and infamie for omittynge so profitable an enterpryse. And that you may the more circumspectly behaue your selfe in all thynges, besyde the former instructions, I further aduertise you to seeke frethe menta woork by course in such order, that in euery sixte or eyght houres (accorpyng to the number of the myners) you appoynt such to the woork as haue repoled or taken theyr rest, that you may by this meanes the soones come to thende you desyre, whereunto (after you haue layde so sure a fundation) I exhorte you to runne without abydle. And whereas to these effectes it shalbe necessarye to haue many instrumentes adapted for the purpose, I can haue otherwyle speake of them then in generall, consyderynge that according to the nature of the place and the myne, it shalbe necessarye to vse instrumentes and iern tooles of dyuers formes, as there ought to be difference in such wherwith you shall dygge in mynes engendered in marble, greete stone, and harde freese stone, or such other. For the dyggyng of such as are found in deade and tender stones, as Alabastr and marle, it is requisite to haue apte and stronge instrumentes, as greete heetes, mattocks and spades of iern, also great & longe crookes of iern to lyfte great burdens: lykwyle greate and smaule picke axes sum of iern and sum of Steele: furthermoze greate manles with handels and without handels, and such other bothe of iern and fine Steele hardened, if the hardenes of stone shall so requyre. But as for such as shall serue to dygge the mynes which are engendered in tender and softe stones, I neede make no mention of them, forasmuch as the tooles of the common sorte may suffice, and necessarye shall I agly further instructe you to diuide such as shall serue for your purpose. Albeit, for the moste parte, they are beetes, manles, mattocks, pickes, hoes, spades, and such lyke. But as well for

frethe me.

Instrumentes.

## Of the generation of metals.

the soft stones as for the harde, it shalbe necessarye to haue great plentie of al sortes, to thende that the myners may lose no tyme, and that the woorkes may go the better forwarde to the comfort of the parrones of the mine. Wylde these before named, it shall also be requisite to haue plentie of greates harkes, spades, shovels, sledges, and handbarrowes, bothe with wheeles and without wheeles: also sacks made of raby or butande hydes to carrie the fragmentes out of the caue.

Pyre in the  
caue.

It shall furthermore be requisite to haue greates quantitie of vncuous liquours to make pyre: as are the oiles of olives, of nuttes, of linc seede and hemye seede: Likewise the rootes of purified trees, or talowe of beastes, or fatte and oyle of fyshes. For without the lyght of pyre, it is not possible for the labourers to woork. For yet can any pyre be maintained in the caue except it receaue the ayer by sum respiracle or breathynge place by the meanes of a funnell or trunke of woodde or such other open instrument wherby the ayer maye be conueyed into the caue.

The conuey-  
ance of ayer.

Of the myne of golde and the qualittie thereof in particular.

The excellen-  
cie of golde.



As muche as golde is a compounde mynerall which of the phylosophers and all men of vnderstandynge, is founde to be of greatest perfection amonge all other mynerall minerals, it is indiged by the vniuersal opinion of such men, that for the beuotie and excellent qualittie thereof, it shulde be of excellent vertue to helpe and conforment men. And therefore amonge all thynges that are in this worlde (excepte luyng creatures) it is chiefly esteemed. By reason wherof, I also the more to honour it, wyl first speake of this before I entreate of any other metall, and declare in particular the conception with the most apparet qualitties thereof. The which although it be a metall most knowne, desyred also and sought for of all kyndes of men, yet are there not many that do care to knowe of what substance or natural mixture it consisteth. But that yow shulde not be one of them that knowe it onely by name or by superficiall apparence, I certifie yow that the originall and proper matter thereof, is none other then elementall

The originall  
& substance  
of golde.

tall

all substances with equall quantitie and qualitie proportionate the one with the other, most perfectly purified by the subtile woorkes of nature. For of these being thus ioyued together (and of equall force) is engendered an amiable and most perfect mixture by the helpe of fermentation and decoction of the minerall heate, whereby is caused such a permanent union betwene the sayde elementes, that they are in maner inseparable: So that by the vertue of heauenly influence or of tyme, or by the order of most prudent nature, or by all these causes concurrant, such substance is conuerted into this metalline body that we caule golde. The which (as I haue sayd) by his much temperatenes, purenes, and perfect mixture, is condensed and made thicke, in such sorte that the elementes thereof can not be vnbounde or loosed, so that it remaineth in maner incorruptible: The cause whereof is, that it eyther conceyeth in it no maner of superfluitie, or the same to be but very litle. And heresof commeth it, that althoughe it lye many yeares in the earth or in the water, it is not infected with rust or canker for that neither of them are able to corrupte it, nor yet the fyre whose force dooth incinerate or bynne to ashes & resolve in maner all creatures: And yet is the pouer hereof so farre vnable to destroy or corrupte this metall, that it is thereby the more purified and made better. Likewise the sayde perfect union or mixture, causeth it to be a body without steame, and without vinctuous or fat superfluitie: which is the cause that it euer remaineth in the native brightnes and sayrenes of colour, in so much that when it is rubbed vpon any thyng, it leaueth not behynde it the tincture of any blacke or yelow colour, as doo in maner all other metals: Nor yet hath it any taste or sauour that may be perceaued to the sense. Further more, if it be eaten eyther wyllynge or by chance, it is not benemous to the lyfe of man, as are sum of the other metals: but is rather a medicine carynge dyuers diseases. And so much that nature hath giuen vnto it of peculiar propertie, a vertue and priuilege to conforthe the weakenes of the harte, and to geue ioyfulness and myrth to the spirites, disposing thereby the mynde to magnanimitie and attempts of great enterpryses. Which singular qualities, sum wyse men asseme that it hath receaued by the influence of the sonne, and that it is therefore of such grace and pouer to helpe men: especially such

19 19 19 p. ii.

Mineral  
heate.

The tempera-  
ture & pure-  
nesse  
of golde.

Golde is in-  
corruptible.

The bewtie  
of golde.

Golde is me-  
dicinable.

Golde is con-  
fortable.

as

## Of the generation of metals.

The attractive  
que qualitie  
of golde.

where moſte  
plentie of  
golde is found.  
Cathay.

as haue many great bagges and cheſtes full therof. To conclude therfore, this metall is a body tractable and bright, of colour like vnto the ſonne: And hath in it inwardely ſuch a naturall attractiue or allurynge vertue, that beinge ſeene, it greatly diſpoſeth the myndes of men to deſyre it and eſtyme it as a thyng moſt precious: although many there are whiche crye out againſt it and accuſe it as the roote and ſede of moſt peſtiferous and monſtrous conuouſneſſe, and the cauſe of many other miſcheues. But whether it bee the cauſe of moze good or euill, we entende to lette paſſe this diſputation as a thyng unprofitable. To procede therfore as I haue begun I ſay (as befoze) that the woorthynneſſe whiche is founde in it, hath cauſed me to encreate of it befoze any other metall. And this the rather for that the order of this preſent worke meth ſo to requyre, that I may the better deſcende to the degrees of other metals, to thende that in theſe owre partes of Italy, yow may haue ſum inſtruction of practice, whiche may redounde from yow to other, whereby the myndes of all men may receaue ſum lyght: beinge well aſſured that newe inſormations, wilbe the ſeedes of other newe wittie diuiſes in the vnderſtandynge of ſuche men as with theſe keys ſhall open theiꝝ wyttes to arriue to ſuche places whither they can not els come or by any meanes approche. And nowe therfore, beſyde that which I haue ſayde vnto yowe in generall, I wil further in particular declare the nature hereof and the generation of the ſame, with alſo the ſignes whiche it ſheweth furth, that I do not omitt any thyng. Laſt of all, I wil ſhewe yowe howe it ought to bee pouaged from ſuperfluous earthynes of the mine, after that I ſhal haue expreſſed the manner howe it is founde. But forasmuch as I haue not with mine eyes ſeene the mountaines which conteyne the mynes of golde, or the places where this thyng is put in practice, I wil only ſhewe yow (hauinge made diligente inquiſition for the ſame) what haſhe byn coulde me of credible perſons, or what I haue gathered in readynge of dyuers autours, by whom I am certified for a truth that the greateſt plentie of this metall, is founde in *Scythia*, in thoſe prouinces which we commonly caule the Eaſt partes, where the ſonne extendeth his chiefe force and vigour. Of theſe places India is thought to be the chiefe, and eſpecially thoſe Iſlandes which the ſhips

of

of Themperours maiestie and the kynge of Portugale haue founde of late : as the Ilandes about Peru and Paria with the firme lande of the same which extendeth it selues very farre on both sydes the Equinoctiall.

In Europe also, golde is founde in many places : as in *Afesia*, and in many places in Boheme. Also in Hungarie, in Rhene, and in Apsla. Plinie sayth that it is lykewyle founde in *Austria* and in Portugale : and that the Romans had from thense yearely. xliiii. pounds weyght. And thus speakynge of this precious metall, I beleue certepnly, that it is and may be engendered in all suche places wher the influence of the heuens disposeth the elementall causes to bynge furth an apte substance for this purpose. But nowe intendynge more particularly to speake of the places of the conception hereof, yowe shall vnderstande that it is engendered in dyuers kyndes of stones in great and toogh mountaynes, and suche as are vterly bare of earth, trees, grasse, or herbes.

And amonge all the stones of this myne, that is best which is of a blew or asurine colourre lyke vnto a saphire, and is commonly cauled *Lapis Lazuli*. But it is not byghe and harde as is the saphire. It is also founde in orpemente cauled *Auripigmentum* : but more often in the mynes of other metals. It is lykewyle founde in many prouinces in the sandes of ryuers. That which is founde in the montaines lyeth in order of veynes betwene quarrey and quarrey ioynd with the sayde Azurine stone and mirte therewith. They saye that this myne is so much the better in howe much it is the higher and of hygge colour, shewyng in it many sparkes of gold. They say furthermore that it is engendered in another stone lyke vnto salte marble : but it is of a deade colour. And also in another whose colour is yelow with certeyne redde spots within it. They affirme lykewyle that it is founde in certeyne blacke stones, whose veynes sprede dyuers wayes much like the courses of ryuers. They further declare that it is founde in a certeyne bituminous earth, of colourre lyke vnto cley and very heauy, haunyng in it a great saueur of bymstone : And that the golde which is founde in this, is very good, and in maner all together fyne, yet very harde to bee gotten oute, because it consisteth of so smaale sparkes lyke vnto inuisible atomes of such lytelnesse that they can hardely bee perceaued with the eye.

Golde in the Ilande of the Weste Indies.

Golde in Europe.

The influence of heauen.

The mountaynes and stones in the whiche golde is engendered.

*Lapis Lazuli*. Orpemente. Golde in other metals. Golde in the sandes of ryuers.

Sold in earth.

Golde duste.

And

## Of the generation of metals.

Ryuers in the  
which gold is  
founde.

The washting  
and pource-  
ing. of golde.

Howe golde  
is divided  
frome sande.

The Spany-  
ardes make  
these disthes  
with hādels.

The drawe-  
inge out of  
golde with  
quicke siluer.

And herein may you not do as in *Lapis Lazuli*, or other stones,  
or as the maner is to do with that which is found in the sands  
of ryuers; the which the more it is washed, the more it fau-  
leth to the bottome: & in melcynge with the mother of his ear-  
thines, doth incorporate it selfe therewith in a bricke substance.  
But in fine, with much patience and by one meanes or an-  
other, or by the helpe of quickesilver, it is drawn out. A-  
geyne (as I haue sayde before) it is found in the sandes of dy-  
uers ryuers, as in Spayne in the ryuer Tago: in *Tracia*, in *Ebro*:  
In *Asia*, in *Patolo* and *Ganges*. In *Hungarie* and *Boheme*, it is  
founde in *Lassia* in dyuers ryuers: And in *Italie*, in the sandes  
of *Tesino*, *Adda*, and *Po*. But not euery where in the beddes of  
theyr chanelles, but in certeyne particular places where in cer-  
teyne cloddes the sande is discovered in the tyme of the ouer-  
flowynge of the ryuers when the water leaueh behynde it a  
fine sande wherewith the sayde golde is myxte in the forme of  
certeyne smaule scales, and shynynge graynes. Then in the  
sommer season, with patience and ingenious practise, the sear-  
chers to pource it from the grosse earthynesse of the myne, and  
washe it diligently: preparynge for that effecte, certeyne ta-  
bles made epyther of the tymber of plane trees, of elme, or  
whyte nuttes, or such other woodde apte to be sawen, hauing  
theyr playnes made ful of hackes, & notches, with the helpe  
of the sawe or such other instrumentes of iron. Upon these  
tables standynge sumwhat a slope or declynynge, with a ho-  
lowe Houel they cast a great quantitie of water myxt with the  
sayde sande, which they cast so, that the water runne downe  
directly alonge the tables. And by this meanes the gold, as  
a matter most heuy, fauleth to the bottome of the sawne hac-  
kes, and there restynge and cleaupnge fast, is so diuided from  
the sande. When therfore they perceaue a sufficient quantitie  
of golde thus remaynynge on the tables, they gather it with  
diligence and put it in a trey or great shallowe dythe of wood  
lyke vnto those which the golde finers vse: And in these they  
washe it more exactly ageyne and ageyne from al fylth or br-  
ckynnesse. This doone, they beate or mixte (or amalgame it  
as they caule it) with *Mercurie* or quickesilver, whiche after-  
ward they seperate ageyne from the same cyther by straynyng  
and presynge it through a bagge of lether, or by styllynge or  
quapozarynge the quickesilver from it in a styllatory of glasse  
and

and so fynde they the golde remaynyng in the bottome of the beſſell in the lyknes of fine ſande, which they bypunge into a metalline body by melpunge it with a lytle bozage, or ſalt petre or blacke ſope, & ſo caſt it eyther in the forme of a wedge or a rodde, or otherwyſe as lyketh them beſt. And this is the exacte maner of drawyng golde out of the ſandes of riuers, which many haue bleſed to theyr great commoditie: And that the rather becauſe that in folowynge this order of woozke in the pourgyng and diuydyng of golde, it ſhall not bee requiſite as in other maner of practiſes, to bee at greate charges by reaſon of many men which ſhall be needefull, with manye furnaces, fornaſes, fiers, and dyuers artificers: whereas in woozkyng after this ſorte, one man may ſuffice with one table and one holowe ſhoouell, with a lytle quickſyluer and ſufficient abundaunce of water.

But lettynge paſſe to ſpeake any further of theſe thynges: perhappes ſumme man wolde here demaunde from whence this golde is deriued into the ſandes of the ſayde ryuers, and whether it be brought thither by the water, or engendered there. As touchyng which queſtion, I haue oft tymes deliberated with my ſelfe not without great marueyle: and eſpecially of that which is founde in the ſandes of the ryuers of Teſiro, Adda, and Po, becauſe (whereas I haue ſayde befoze that it is brought thither by the courſe of the water) I can not perceaue from whence it ſhuld be brought, forasmuch as there is no myne of golde, or of any other metal that is knowne, nere to any of thoſe places. By reaſon whereof, my iudgemente is in maner confounded, ſeing alſo that it is thoppinion of certeyne wyters, that it is engendered euen where it is founde: The which, if it ſo be, it is not true that it is brought thither by the water. Ageyne, if it be engendered there, it ſeemeth to me a difficult thyng to comprehend whether it be brought furthe there by the vertue of the water or the earth, or the heauen. If furthermore any of theſe ſhuld be the cauſe of the generation hereof, it ſeemeth agreeable to reaſon that it ſhulde bee both founde and engendered through out all the beddes of ſuch riuers, and at al tymes. And if the influence of heauen be the moſt prepotent cauſe of this effecte, then it ſeemeth to me that it ſhuld woozke immediatly, becauſe it can not otherwyſe obſerue the order whiche nature bleth in the generation of metals: fyrſt bypynge it furth to the open

from where  
golde is de-  
riued into the  
ſandes of  
ryuers.

That golde  
is not engen-  
dered in the  
ſandes of  
riuers.

## Of the generation of metals.

Snowe, in the place where aboundeth the continuall issue  
 of water, which ought also to be of such force as to remove  
 the earthy substance thereof from place to place, and not to  
 increase such great inequality of coldnesse and moistnes.  
 And albeit that this composition begunne in this order, shuld  
 not be dissuened or broken by the waters of the ryuers, yet it  
 appeareth to me that the showers of rayne and increase of  
 fluddes, shulde be of sufficient poure to dissemper, breake, and  
 utterly destroy all such compositions as shulde be engendered  
 in such places, forasmuch as all thynges are concealed by rest  
 and quietnesse after the commixtion of the fyre elementes.  
 And therefore if this golde of the ryuers, bee there engendered  
 where it is founde, I wolde it were declared vnto me why it  
 is engendered only in these places and not in other: and why  
 in lyke manner, syluer, copper, leade, or any other metals are  
 not also engendered there as well as golde, beinge matters  
 of an easier composition of nature then it is, by reason of the  
 perfecte unitie and concordance with puritie of substance &  
 perfecte concoction which is in golde aboue all other metals:  
 whereas also in many places in the territories of Rome, there  
 are founde many sparkes of the mine of iren of blacke colour  
 amonge the sandes of certeyne smaule ryuers: And yet these  
 only in certeyne particular places of the sayde riuers: wherby  
 it appeareth that these also, shulde not bee engendered where  
 they are founde. By all which reasons and apparent effectes,  
 it seemeth most agreeable to truth that the golde which is found  
 in such sandes, is rather brought thither by the water, then  
 engendered there. And therefore to declare my mynde more  
 playnely herein, I suppose that this chaunceth only in great  
 ryuers which receaue abundaunce of waters of diuers spring-  
 ges, fosses, and other ryuers, engendered partly of the mel-  
 tynge of snowe and partly of great showers of rayne, whiche  
 faulynge in certeyne chanelles from the toppes and sydes of ni-  
 nerall mountaynes, wash away parte of the earth of the  
 bankes and the overhanginge and holowe rockes which may  
 conteyne the substance of golde: Or otherwyle, that in such  
 places, there are ordinarie mines in the hyghe mountaynes or  
 other superficial lowe places, perhappes incessable, and ry-  
 ther such whither men can not come for extreme heate or cold  
 or other hynderaunces, or els such as they haue conremned to  
 scarche

This mater  
 is apparent i  
 the golde  
 founde in the  
 ryuers in the  
 Indies.

The faule of  
 waters from  
 mountaynes.

Search: And yet the same to bee so consumed by the force of water as we haue sayde, and by the course therof to bee caried into the ryuers. It may also chaunce that suche mynerall earthes bee farre within the mountaynes neare vnto such ryuers: And that in the space of many yeares, the springes if shewynge ome of the same, may eether bee dzyed by (whiche thyng hath byn scene) or els turne theyr course an other way So that it is no maruayle if in such a multitude of yeres, the trewe originall of these thynges bee vnknewen euen vnto the that dwell nere such places. But in fine, howe so euer it bee, trewe it is that golde is founde in the sandes of many riuers: And particularly (as I haue noted) in the forenamed ryuers. And if therefore I haue maruayled at this thyng, I dwght worthely to bee excused, forasmuch as where iudgement can not bee certified by reason or effectuall apparence, there arise many doubtfull coniectures and newe causes of admiration. But yet do I maruel much more of an other thyng, the which I am informed to bee most trewe by the report of many credible persons: That is, that in sum places of Hungarie at certeyne tymes of the yere, pure golde springeth out of the earthe in the lykenesse of smaule herbes, wyched and wynded lyke smaule stalkes of hoppes, about the byggeresse of a pack threde, and foure syngers in length or suer a handfull. As concernynge which thyng, I haue also in the xxxiii. boke of his naturall history, wytyeth the lyke to haue chaunced in Dalmatia in his tyme. The which (if it bee trewe) suerly the husbande men of those fieldes shall reape heauenly and not earthly frutes, sent them of god from heauen, and brought forth of nature without theyr trauayle or care. A grace doublelesse most especial, sely that in so great a quantitie of earth graunted to the possession of men, in manner onely this is thought worthy so hygh a prouileage. But what shall I say of that wherof *Albertus Magnus* wytyeth in his booke of minerals; a firyng: that he hath seene golde engendered in a deade mans heade. And that the same beinge founde by chance in dyggynge, and perceaued by the wyghe and coloure to conteyne sum mynerall substance, was proued by experience to holde a portion of fine golde myxte with smaule sande. And in deede his wordes seme to sound to none other sence but only that this precious metall was engendered there by the great disposi-

Sprynge of  
water in  
mountaynes.

Vegetable  
golde growynge  
out of  
the earthe.

Of this, reade  
*Alexander ab  
Alexandro lib.  
4. Genidium  
dierum. Cap. 9.*

Golde founde  
in a deade  
mans heade.

## Of the generation of metals.

sition of the place and strong influence of heaven: The which  
 succie is a thyng hardely to be beleued. Yet consyderynge  
 thaurorie of so greate a clerke, with the force of the superi-  
 our causes and the maruelous poure of nature, I had rather  
 gyue sayth hereto then rashely to contemne the iudgement of  
 so greate a clarke. And forasmuche as I haue began to tell  
 yow of these effectes, I wyll not omittre to shewe yow of a  
 straunge thyng which chaunced also in a part of Hungarie,  
 where a myne of golde was so found by chaunce and vnsought  
 for, that it may neuerthelesse be an aduertisement to other to  
 searche diligently. So it is therfore, that a woman of the  
 contrey beinge accustomed to resorte with her bucke of clo-  
 thes to washe them in a certeyne fosse or dike where ranne a  
 lytle water, and vsynge to beate and rubbe them vppon a  
 stone which seemed commodious for her purpose, chaunced at  
 the length by her good fortune to espye on the stone, a beyne  
 of golde trauersyng or ouerthwarynge the same abowte the  
 byggene of a grose packe threde, shewynge fayre & bryght  
 by reason of her much rubbynge. Wheremanyngynge dayly  
 more and more, at the length opened the matter to her famili-  
 ers: who conferryng with such as hadde better skyll of the  
 thyng, founde it in fine to bee a beyne of pure golde: And  
 that the quarrie of that stone, trauersed the course of the wa-  
 ter of the fosse. Remouynge therfore the water, and turning  
 the course thereof an other waye, they beganne to dygge and  
 folow the mine which hath now continued certeyne .x. yeaues  
 sence it was fyrst found: And hath not only greatly enriched  
 that contrey, But also all Chyistendome hath had great com-  
 moditie by the same. This haue I rehearsed vnto yow the ra-  
 ther that yow shulde not bee negligent in any poynt or omitt  
 any signe or token wherby yowe may bee certified of greate  
 thynges: nor contemnyng the shadowe of any smaile to-  
 kens: but aswel to gyue attentye care and eye vnto them, as  
 to feare and forseeke all such thynges as may hynder. For (as  
 yow may hereby well perceaue) if credit had not fyrst ben gy-  
 uen to the woozdes of the simple wooman, and the thyng af-  
 terwarde well folowed, perhappes they shulde neyther now  
 nor euer hereafter haue enioyed the frute of so great a commo-  
 ditie: When therfore of good courage folowynge suche ryche  
 signes, byd nother feare the smailenesse of the beyne or hard-  
 nesse

A myne of  
 golde founde  
 by chaunce.

A wayne of  
 golde in a  
 stone.

No signes to  
 be omitted.

ness of the stone: presupposunge by good reason that golde and syluer can not lyghly bee founde in so smaule quantitie, but that the same shalbe able to surmounte the charges. And this the more, in howe much the further yowe shall enter into the stone, as chauncerth commonly in all other mynes. Albeit, the practised searchers, saye that the myne of golde is not founde in such great quantitie as are the mines of other metals. Wherin although perhappes they say trewly, yet dooth it not folowe but that golde also maye bee founde in greate quantitie. And suerly it seemeth to me, that the benignitie of nature hath graunted large quantities thereof to the worlde, and that much hath euer byn and is founde amonge men, consyderynge in howe many places it is dayly gatherd aswel in mountaynes as in landes of ryuers, bysyde that whiche is founde accompanied and iopned with other metals. A further profe hereof may that bee, which is consumed and hydde by the dyuers inuentions of men: As that whiche the paynters bestowe in adournynge theyr woorkes: And golde smythes both in gyltynge other metals and also in makynge dyuers woorkes of masse golde: bysyde that whiche the woorker of clothe of golde and arras doo consume with such as imbrotherers and sylke woomen spende abowt the vanities of men and womens apparell and tymentes. Also such as is consumed bypon trappers and furnimentes for hores, with gylted harnesse and such other sumptuousnesse as pertaineth to the warres and magnifical buyldinges of noble mens houses and temples: Bysyde that also whiche the covetousnesse of men hath hydde in stronge wauls, and buryed in the grounde, enclosed in chayned cofers locked with triple keyes: And that whiche serueth to the dayly uses of men and wandereth about the worlde through the handes of marchantes. The whiche thynges well considered, who so thinketh that nature bylyngeth furr but lytle golde, shall perceaue that there is greate quantitie therof in the worlde, although there bee but fewe that haue so much as may satisfie the thirst of theyr covetousnesse. And to speake particularly of Fraunce, although there bee no myne of golde known in it, yet by the vertue and diligence of good wyttes, it hath euer and at all ages byn more ryche then many other prouinces: Notwithstandynge it hath often tymes byn spoyled and ouerrunne of dyuers nations, as

Golde is not founde in like quantitie as are other metals.

Argumentes of plenty of golde.

howe diuers wayes golde is consumed.

many haue to muche, but fewe haue enough. Fraunce wasted by the barbarians.

## Of the generation of metals.

none of late in oore tyme by the cruell handes of the Barba-  
 rians which entered into it abowt. xl. yeares paffe. But who  
 knoweth as hath chaunced in the dayes of oore valient pre-  
 dicessours whether Godde wyll ageyne gyue vs occasion to  
 chastise them and so to invade theyr regions that we maye  
 wonne oore owne ageyne with increase of double burie.  
 Or if he wyll not permitte this, perhappes he wyll graunce  
 vs to fynde sum ryche myne of golde. For, consyderynge and  
 seyng that this oore region of Italie is replenyshed with  
 as many excellent thynges as in maner heauen can gyue to a-  
 ny habitable place, it is not to bee thought that this benefite  
 of golde shulde bee wantynge, wheras it byngeth such such  
 plentie of al other mines except this of golde and synne. And  
 yet doo I verely beleue that it is not withowt the mynes of  
 these alio, although they be not yet discovered to the know-  
 leage of men: As I am perswaded bothe by the golde that is  
 founde in the sayd ryuers, and also by the dyuers and sundry  
 meane minerals which are founde in many places and abund-  
 ged of the practicionars to bee certeyne cleare tokens of theyr  
 proper and natural agentes. But for that they are not found,  
 scilicet, of saene, we owgh not therby to affirme that they are  
 not. To conclude therfore, I thinke that in ou r partes of It-  
 alie, pure golde is none other wayes founde (excepte that  
 which is currant amonge the marchauntes) then after twoo  
 sores, wherof the one is that which is founde in the sandes  
 of ryuers: And the other, that whiche is gotten by the indu-  
 strious & subtile art of partynge gold fro new sylvier, or fro gil-  
 ryng sylvier, or other metals which hold gold, as there are in  
 maner but fewe which hold not a smaul portion therof, more  
 or lesse accordyng to the mixtur & permanencie of theyr substan-  
 ces, or accordyng to the qualitie and force of the planettes  
 which expresse theyr influence in the generation of them. And  
 in fine, this is the golde that which is founde in oore partes  
 of Italie. Nowe therfore to retorne to the matter wherof is  
 oore chiefe intente to increate, haupnge before spoken suffi-  
 ciently of the generation and inuention of the myne of golde,  
 I wyll further declare vnto youe howe it ought to be pour-  
 ged from earthly superfluitie, and especially that whiche is  
 founde lpyng in the forme of beynes. And although I haue  
 not seene the edifies and engens wherewith the myners are ac-  
 customed

Comendacio  
of Italie

Golde and  
synne.

meane mine-  
rals.

The golde of  
Italie.

Golde cōtay-  
ned in other  
metals.

The maner  
of pourginge  
of golde.

customed to get it out, yet I will I shew you howe by other  
 practices I haue learned to poure it, that you may not bee  
 without sum knowlege of your fortune shalbe so good as to  
 fynde any in Italy. When you haue therfore dygged out the  
 myne and placed it in order, you oughte to consider in what  
 kynde of stone it is engendered. And if it bee in that which is  
 cauled *Lapis Lazuli*, then muste you so drawe oute the golde  
 that youe also saue the stone, because perfecte Asure is made  
 therof, and such as the paynters caule *Azurra Oltramario*, that  
 is, Asure of beyonde the sea, which they greatly esteeme & hve  
 it deare. And to do this, it is necessary that youe first beate  
 it into fine powder, and then put it in a tray or brode reene  
 dythe, and washe it sayre and cleane with water. This done  
 amalgame or rubbe it well with quickesilver untill it haue  
 lycked vpp and drawne al the golde into it and left the stone  
 pure of it selfe. Then strayne the quickesilver from the golde  
 through a bagge of lether, or vapour it away in a stillatorie  
 of glasse: And thus shal youe fynde the golde in the bottome  
 of the vessell in mater pure without quickesilver, as I haue  
 sayde before. And if youe haue no respecte to saue the stone,  
 it shall suffice to vse the common experience, meltinge it in a  
 forname in a bayne or tesse of leade. But in my opinion, the  
 best maner to bynge is to purenesse, is first to burne the mine  
 with a gentell fyre in an open forname, and to suffer it to euas-  
 porate well if it bee not in such stone as youe desyre to saue.  
 Then grynde it in a mylle or beate it with pestelles, adapted  
 with a wheele untill it be brought to fine powder. And when  
 youe haue wel washed it and so much washed the superfluous  
 earthynesse therof, then put it in a tesse made accordyng to  
 the quantitie of the same, and melt it therein with leade whi-  
 che youe shall consume partly by vapoure and partly with  
 drawyng it out by the syde of the tesse (as is the maner) un-  
 till youe come to the pure golde whiche youe shall in fine  
 bynge to perfect purenesse in vterly consumyng the rema-  
 nent of the leade with vehement fyre increased by the helpe of  
 stronge bellowes. And this is the vniuersal maner which you  
 may vse not only in pourgyng the myne of golde, but also  
 the mynes of all other metals.

*Lapis lazuli.*

Asure.

Howe golde  
 is drawen  
 frome  
*Lapis lazuli*  
 with quicke  
 silver.

The basne or  
 test of leade.

The maner  
 of pourginge  
 golde with  
 leade.

Of  
 the maner of pourginge the myne of golde, but also  
 the mynes of all other metals.

## Of the generation of metals.

Of the myne of siluer and the qualitie therof.

whether syl-  
uer haue a  
mine by hit  
selfe or no.

Georgius Agri-  
cola.  
A table of mi-  
neral syluer.

The workes  
of nature.

write me  
talca.



Here are ( as I vnderstande ) diuers opinions  
amonge the practitioners of the mynes, whe-  
ther syluer haue a proper myne by it selfe or  
no. The reasons of suche as write of the na-  
tures of mineralles, and thauthoritie of the most,  
persuade me to assent to the affirmatiue : Not  
only to see the naturall matter distincte, as is to perceauie in  
the mynes of golde, copper, leade and other metals whiche in  
theyr mynes are found pure by them selues without mixture,  
but also that I vnderstand that there hath bin found likewyse  
certeyne pieces aswell of this mettall of siluer, as of gold and  
copper, brought to his laste fynesse by thonly worke of na-  
ture. And this dooth Georgius Agricola a lerned man of Germany  
confirm in his booke of minerals where he writteth that in  
Saronie there was found in a caue a piece of mineral siluer of  
such bignes, that the duke the prince & parone of that place,  
caused a chayre and square dyninge table after the maner of  
Almanche to be made therof withoute any further woork of  
mans hande : Glorifyinge often tymes that in this thyng he  
surmounted the greatneise and magnificence of the Empe-  
roure. But in dedde ( excepte copper ) I haue seene no me-  
tall taken oute of the caue pure without his bre. yet doo I  
belceue it a thyng possible, consyderinge the greates force and  
pouere of nature, thende of whose woorkynge euer intendeth  
to bringe all thynges to perfection as farr as it is not othe-  
rwyse hyndered. yet ( as I haue sayde ) of the moste parte  
of those mynes whiche I haue seene, none of theym haue byn  
without mixture, not only of the earthe of their owne proper  
myne, but haue byn also mixte with other metals : And espe-  
cially this of syluer more then any other, excepte onely that  
which was digged in scbio in Vicentina. And therefore not with-  
out sum shadow of apparent reason, haue suche doubtis risen  
amonge the practitioners of the mynes. And yet ( as I haue  
sayd I beleue that siluer may haue and hath his proper mine,  
forasmuche as euery substance that maye be conuerted into  
metall, may aswell stande by it selfe pure in his owne kynde,  
as epyther separte or mixte with other, as is often tymes seene  
in

## Of the generation of metals. 340

In one masse in the whiche diuers metals are conteyned and engendered by nature. And by this meanes it often chaunceth that he that speaketh of the mine of silver, may with the same herche and without distinction, sprake also of all other metales, forasmuche as there are but fewe mynes which are not mixte with other. But bycause the moste noble and riche metals haue obteyned the prerogatiue to be esteemed aboue other, therfore the name of the myne is gyuen to them wher they are mixte with other: as the mynes which holde copper, leade, or iron, (as doo the moste parte) yet if they holde also golde or silver, they are cauled gold mynes or silver mynes, according vnto that which is founde in them to bee of most value. But to lette passe this matter, yowe shall further vnderstande that when suche mynes are mixte of diuers metals, they shew furth so much the more diuers and variable fumosities of tinctures and martialites, as signes wher they bee and of what purenesse: forasmuch as euery of them according to theyr natures, exalte theyr colours which they shewe furthe to the eye, sum in the similitude of asurine or blew stones, sum greene, sum yelowe, and sum of vndistinct colours accordynge to the compositions and mixtures of the fyrst matters of metals, which is also the cause that they are founde more or lesse in quantitie. Nowe to speake more particularly of this metall of silver, the philosophers speculatores of naturall thynges, saye that it is engendered of substance more watery then spheric, of complexion feminine and Aegmatike in comparason to gold: receauynge more of the influence of the moone then of the son, and therfore engendered more in coulde regions nerer vnto the moone, then in hotte regions vnder the soonne: consisting also of pure elementes, although sumwhat crude and vndyggested in respecte of the elementes of golde as may bee plainly perceaued by theyr colours, weyght, and fixation. The practitioners affirme that it is engendered in a stone lyke vnto Albazano, and also in an other stone of a russet, deade, and darke colour: And is often tymes founde in an other stone lyke vnto Treuertino or in Treuertino it selfe. The myne hercof, is very ponderous, and hath in it often tymes certeyne spynges graynes: The which howe much the lesse they are like to the poynte of a needle so muche is the myne founde to bee the perfecter, bycause this is a token of purenesse and fixation.

And

Diuers met-  
als in one  
masse.

In the indies  
golde founde  
in greate qua-  
ntitie, pure and  
vnyte.

The colours  
of mineral fu-  
mosities.

The genera-  
tio ⁊ qualite  
of silver.

The influēs  
of the moone.

Stones in  
the which  
silver is en-  
gendered.

The myne of  
silver.

## Of the generation of metals. 10

The moun-  
tayne.

Marchasites  
of syluer.

What mar-  
chasites are  
the beste sig-  
nes.

Syluer myns  
in harde  
stones.

Syluer with  
copper or  
leade.

The deuydig  
of syluer from  
other metals.

And when it is founde in a whyte stone, or leade stone, it is so muche the better, because it maye be the ealyer purged from the stone and earthynesse. When also it is founde spynge as it were loose amonge cerreine scales or claddes of earth, they saye that it is perfecte, although it haue not to the eye suche resplendence as other are wance to haue. They say also that it is engendered in an earth of darke russet colour: And that when it is founde in this, it is of great quantitie and perfec- tion, and that there is great plentie therof within the moun- tayne: This also to be so much the better in howe much more it is spynge of the colour of iren or redde. And that you may the better comprehend the signes of the myne of the fore sayde metall, you shall vnderstand that euen togyther with the myne, epyther where it is fyrste founde, or nere vnto the same, you shall see cerrepyne marchasites of pelowe colour lyke vnto golde. The which, the more they holde of suche hygge colour, so much the more do they shewe adust or burne matter and heate, as thynges contrary to the nature of theyr metals. And therfore accordyng to the degrees of suche colours, you may in maner iudge of what farnes or leanness the myne is lyke to bee. Such marchasites therfore as shewe the best signes of the goodnesse of theyr mynes, dwyge in colour to approche to whytynesse as much as may bee, and to consist of smaule graynes, and not in greate quantitie. And this is a generall rule of all marchasites, that howe much the narrower and lesse they are, the more do they shewe the good- nesse of theyr myne. This myne of syluer is also often times founde in a vyne of great quantitie, and yet so leane in qual- itie that it wyll not beare the charge of the dyggyng, because it is founde in a harde stone lyke vnto *Albazano*, beinge verye harde to bee dygged or broken. Sum tymes also, it is founde in the company of copper or leade: The which lykewyse if it do not surmount the value of the charges, it is not to bee fol- lowed. Otherwhyles also, it so chaunceth that these thre met- als are founde accompanied togyther in one myne: In whi- che case it shalbe necessarie to vse aduertisement of arte. And presupposyng that you desire to separate the syluer frome the other metall, it is necessarie that you increase the leade. But if you passe not to saue neyther the syluer nor the leade, but only the copper, it shalbe requysite to procede with longe and

## Of the generation of metals. 341

And great fyers vntyl the weakest matters bee consumed. But this owghe to be doone especially in such mines as hold iron. Yet neyther for this or those, can there any general rule be gyuen, but that accordynge vnto theyr qualitie and nature, so owghe they to be diuided: And this so much the more in that they are often tymes mixte with sum dyse earthe, or with a quantitie of antimonie or arsenike, which are matters al togyther euaporable and burnt, or of harde substance to bee reduced to fusion or meltynge: In so much that the artificers sumtymes beinge ouercumme of them, leaue them as thynges vnpofitable. Wherof there can none other cause often times be gyuen, then theyr owne ignorance by reason of extraordi- narie and longe fyers whiche they gyue them. And therefore they woork inordinately in such kynd of mynes, except they accompanie them in the fusion or meltynge with such thynges as may defende them from the fyre. For wheras is suche a bundaunce eyther of burnt matter, or of superfluous water: ynnesse, wherof the one is cauled *sulphur* or *hymsstone*, & the other *Mercurie* or quicksyluer not fixed, or arsenike, it is nec- cessarie that the one burne the syluer, and the other cary it a way, so that of the myne there resteth none other then an ear- thye substance infusible and not able to bee molten. To saue the sayde myne therefore it shalbe requisite to vse discretion with much patience and conueniente meanes, fyrste after the common maner of woorkynge to euaporate the myne (as wee haue sayde) or withowt euaporation to grinde it smaule: then to washe it often, and in fine, if not by greate fyers, at the leaste by great baynes or testes of leade to pouge it. And to bynge this effect the more easely to passe as much as may be, after that it is grounde yow owghe to proue in the same grin- dyng or in an other, if it may be amalgamed with *Mercurie* which is the best maner of profe, if the myne bee of a dyse na- ture: And I knowe that it hath bynne bled of many to theyr greate profyte: And especially in those sorte of mynes which I sayde before to bee dygged in *Vigentina* in *Schio*, beinge very ryche and good. I proue it therefore. For all kyndes of mines do not receaue it. And of this wherof I haue spoken, I haue intelligence that there hath bynne pieces founde holdynge a fourth part of syluer, and sum more then halfe. And this was founde lyng in maner in the superficiall parte of the earth:

¶ ¶ ¶ ¶ ¶

and

Iron.

Metals mixte  
With Antimo-  
nie or Arsenike

howe metals  
are preserued  
in fusion.  
Sulphur and  
mercurye.

Grinding and  
washing of  
mynes.

The amalga-  
myng of  
mines with  
Mercury.

mines hold-  
ynge the  
fourth part  
of syluer.

## Of the generation of metals.

**Copper hol-  
dinge syluer.**

**The vices  
of siluer in  
euery hun-  
dredth of mine**

**war betwene  
Maximilian  
a hemperour  
and the Venetians.**

**The mines  
of Almanye.**

**The march-  
site myrt with  
the myne.**

and sum tymes in pathes and high wayes. It hath also bin founde vnder the rootes of suche trees as haue bin ouerthzo-  
wen by tempeste: and this very perfecte. So that emonge all  
the mynes whiche I haue seene in the dominions of Venice,  
as in Carnia and in many other places, I can not saye that I  
haue seene any better: Although there bee many causes wher-  
of the most parte are of copper holdinge syluer: and emonge  
other, that in the mountayne of *Auanzo*, where I in the com-  
pany of certeyne other gentlemen caused a caue to bee digged.  
And because the holt charge was committed to mee, I wente  
by occasion thysle into high Almanye to see the mynes of that  
countrey, wherby I might haue the better experience to faule  
to practise at my returne. In so much that I founde the mine  
which we had taken in hand to folowe, to bee very good and  
ryche: holdyng more then thre vnces and a halfe of syluer  
in euery hundredth of the myne. And doubtlesse we shuld haue  
obteyned great commoditie hereby if fortune at that tyme had  
not raysed warre betwene Maximilian the hemperour and the  
signorie of Venecy: which was the cause that those places of  
*Frioli* and *Carnia*, coulde not be quietly inhabited: wherby we  
were enforced to forsake oure enterpryse, and to raise and de-  
stroy thorder which we had begonne. And by reason that the  
warres continued longe, we were constrained to diuide oure  
company, where I also departed an other way, hauing euer  
in mynde to folowe oure attempted enterpryse when better  
oportunitie shulde serue. In the meane tyme returnyng agayne  
into hyghe Almanie, I made more diligent searche to knowe  
the mynes then before: and went to *Sbozzo*, *Plaiper*, *Ispruch*, *Alla*,  
and *Arotinbergh*: frome whence I wente into dyuers places of  
Italy. So that to conclude, the most and best mynes whiche  
I haue sene to holde most of syluer, are those that are founde  
in *Vicentina* in certeyne stones of a dark grey, or russet colour,  
as I haue sayde before. And now for a generall aduertise-  
ment, I will not omit to tell you, that when you haue at-  
tempted to dygge any mynes, and haue founde the march-  
site and the myne myrt togyther, youe shall leaue of youre  
woorke, because it signifieth that the myne is neare to the su-  
perficial part of the earth, & that it is of but lytle quantitie.  
And thus as touchyng this myne of syluer, I can say no more  
saueynge that I haue not yet shewed youe the maner of pour-  
geynge

## Of the generation of metals. 342

gyng it from earthly grofenes and to byng it to perfect met-  
tall. But bycause I haue determyned to speake largely here:  
of in the proper place of the fusion or melpng of all metals,  
I haue thowght good to speake no further of this matter at  
this presente.

The maner of workyng in golde mynes of Egipte in old  
tyme, after the description of Diodorus Siculus, who  
wrote his hystorie cauled Bibliotheca, sumwhat before  
the dayes of thempereour Octavianus Augustus, &  
before the incarnatio of Christ about .xl. yeares.

He wyrteth therefore in his fourthe  
booke as foloweth.



Where haue not thowght good to pretermitt howe  
golde is founde, digged, and wrought amonge  
the Egyptians. In the confines therefore of  
Egipte where it bordereth with Ethiopia and  
Arabia, there are certeyne places frutefull of  
metalles, out of the whiche, golde is digged  
with great labour and expenses. For a blacke earthe of mine-  
rall nature, hath certeyne baynes of moste white marble excea-  
dinge bright and shyninge. The surueyours of this worke,  
haue assigned them a greate company of men to woozke and  
copen golde. For the kinges of Egipte are accustomed to ap-  
poynt to these paynefull trauailes, all suche as haue byn con-  
victe for certeyne crimes and condemned by lawes, or taken  
prisoners in the warres, or suche as haue byn committed to  
prison through the indignation of princes who by this mea-  
nes haue bothe great vantage by theyr labour, and punishe  
them sufficiently for theyr offenses. For barbarous & strange  
souldiers of diuers languages, bare ruleouer them and keepe  
them to theyr worke, in suche sorte that thuse of speache be-  
inge taken from them, they can not bee corrupted by loue or  
inreacie. They drabe golde out of the hardest earth decoct  
with much fyre. The softest stone which is broken with meane  
labour, is digged with instrumentes of iern by the trauayle of  
many thousands of men. The scier which decreneth the beimes  
of the mine, goth before the workemen, appoynting them the  
places where they shall digge. The marble stone whiche he

Golde i a black  
earthe, and  
white marble

Then dam-  
ned to the  
metales as  
nowe to the  
gallies.

The scier  
of the wayne,

RRR, ii,

speweth

## Of the generation of metals.

Golden marble.

The worke of chylidren.

mylles.

The misery of the miners

The pouging of the metall frome the vre.

The melting of golde.

betweth them, they breake and cleaue with wedgles of iren by the mere strength of their bodies withowte arte. They make theyr fosse or caue, not right furthe, but as the bryght nature of the golden marble leadeth them, beinge otherwys darke and obscure by reason of theyr sundry turnes and bendinges diuers wayes. The labourers caryinge lyght before theyr forheades, digge great stones out of the myne, whyche they let faule on the ground. From this labour they neuer rest, inforced to continual worke with strokes and conuulsiuous woordes. Chylidren of thage of .xii. or .xiii. yeares of bypewarde, are diuided into two companyes, whereof the one breake the stones into smaule pieces, and the other cary furth that which is broke. They that are past thage of .xxx. yeares, receaue the sayd broken stones at theyr hands and beate them in vessels of stone with maules of iren, to the quantitie of tares or fyches: which afterward they cast into many milles, where by the laboure of two or thre women or owlde men to euery mylle, they are grounde as smaule as meale. The sylthinesse of the bodies of these labourers, is apparent to all men. For not so muche as their priuie members are couered with any thinge: And theyr bodies bysye so sylthy, that no man can beholde them withowt compassion of theyr miserie. But no pitie, no rest, no remission is graunted them, whether they bee men or women, younge or owlde, fyche or feeble: But are all with strokes inforced to continuall labour vntyl the pooze wretches faynt and often tymes dye for extreme debilitie: In so much that many of them for feare of theyr lyfe to coomme (which they thynke worse then the present payne) preferre death before lyfe. When they haue thus grounde the stones very smaule, they cast that substance vpon brode tables inclynynge sumwhat steepe or standynge a slope, and cast water thereon, scryng continuallly the sayde powder of marble: by the meanes wherof the earth and vre of the myne is washed away, and the golde as the heauier matter remayneth on the tables. When they haue doonne thus often tymes, they ouerturne the golde continually with t eyr handes & rub it with rhynne sponges, out of the which they presse a softe earth, and thus continewe vntyll the pure metall remayne lyke vnto golden sande. After that this preparation is fynished, other woorkemen receauynge it at theyr handes by measure and weichte

weyght, cast it into earthen pottes, puttyng thereto a certeyne portion of leade, with hyanne of barley, and weedes of the sea cauled restes or ouse. These thynges proportioned accordyngly, they close the pottes diligently with cley, and so let them stand in a furnesse with fyre for the space of fyue continuall dayes and nyghres. In which space, al other thynges of contrary mixture beinge consumed, only the golde is found in the vessels, sumwhat dimynished of the fyrst weyght. And by this labour and diligence is golde possessed in the furthest parte of Egypt. Wherby, even nature her selfe teacheth vs howe laborious it is in fyndyng, tedious in pursuynge, dangerous in keepynge, and in vse constitute betwene pleasure and sorowe.

The description of the two viages made out of England into Guinea in Affrike at the charges of certeyne marchauntes aduenturers of the citie of London, in the yeare of oure Lordes,  
M. D. LIII.



That these viages to Guinea are placed after the booke of Metals as separate frome other viages, the cause hereof is, that after I had delpynered the sayde booke of metalles to the handes of the printers, I was despyred by certeyne my frendes to make summe mention of these viages, that sum memorie thereof myght remayne to oure posteritie if eyther iniquitie of tyme consumynge all thynges, or ignorance creppynge in by barbarousnesse and contempte of knowleage, shulde hereafter bury in obliuion so woorthy attemptes, so much the greatyer to bee esteemed as befoze neuer enterprysed by Englyshe men, or at the leasse so frequented as at this present they are and may bee to the greate commodity of oure marchauntes, if the same be not hyndered by thambition of such as for the conquestynge of fortie or fyftie myles here and there, and erectynge of certeyne fortresses or rather blockhouses amonge naked people, thinke the selues woorthy to bee lordes of halfe the worlde, enuyng that other shulde enjoy the commodities which they them selues can not holy possesse. And although such as haue byn at charges in the

## The vyage to Guinea.

the discouerynge and conquestynge of such landes, owght by good reason to haue certeyne priuilegies, preeminencies, and tributes for the same, yet (to speake vnder correction) it may seeme somewhat rigorous and ageynst good reason and conscience, or rather ageynst the charitie that owght to bee among Chrysten men, that such as violently inuade the dominions of other, shuld not permit other frendely to vse the trade of marchandies in places neuer or seldome frequented of them, wherby theyr trade is not hindered in such places where they them selues haue at theyr owne election appoynted the martres of theyr trafike. But forasmuche as at this presente it is not my intent to accuse or defend, approue or improoue, I wil cease to speake any further hereof, and proceade to the description of the fyrst viage as bryefely and faythfully as I was aduertised of the same by rhinformation of such credible persons as made diligent inquisition to knowe the truth hereof as much as shalbe requisite, omittynge to speake of many particular thynges not greatly necessarie to be knowen: whiche neuerthelesse with also theract course of the navigation, shalbe more fully declared in the second vyage. And if herein fauoure or frendshyppe shall perhappes cause sum to thinke that sum haue byn sharply touched, let them laye a parte fauoure and frendshyppe and gyue place to truth, that honest men may receaue prayse for well doinge, and lewde persons reproche as the iust sypende of theyr euill desertes, wherby other may bee deterred to do the lyke, and vertuous men encouraged to proceade in honest attempres.

**Africa.**

**The coast of  
Guinea.**

But that these vyages may bee more playnely vnderstode of al men, I haue thowght good for this purpose before I intreate hereof, to make a brefe description of Africa beinge that greate parte of the worlde, on whose Weste syde begynneth the coast of Guinea at Cabo Verde aboute the. xii. degrees in latitude on this syde the Equinoctiall line, and two degrees in longitude from the measurynge line, so runnyng from the north to the south and by east in sum places within h. iiii. and. iii. degrees and a halfe within the Equinoctiall, and so furth in maner directly east and by north for the space of. xxxvi. degrees or there about in longitude from the West to the East, as shall moze playnely appere in the description of the seconde vyage.

A brefs



In Affrica the leſſe are theſe kyngdomes: The Tennes. kyngedome of Tunes and Conſtantina which is at this day vnder Tunes, and alſo the region of Bugia. Bugia, Tripoli, and Tzab. This part of Affrike Tri oli. is very baren by reaſon of the great deſertes, as Numidia. the deſertes of Numidia and Barcha. The principall portes of the kyngedome of Tunes are theſe: Boletta, Bizerta, Dof tofarnia, Boua, and Stora. The chiefe cities of Tunes, are Conſtantia and Boua with dyuers other. Under this kyngedome are many Ilandes, as Zerbi, Lampadola, Pantalarca, Limof, Beit, Bamelaro, and Malta where at this preſente is the greate maſter of the Rhodes. Under the ſouthe of this of kyngdome, are the great deſertes of Libia. Al the nations of this Affrica the leſſe, are of the ſecte of Machomet and a ruſti call people lpyunge ſcattered in byllages. The beſte of this parte of Affrike, is Barbaria lpyng on the coaſte of the ſea Mediterraneum.

Mauritania (nowe cauled Barbaria) is diuided into two partes, as Mauritania Tingitania, and Ceſarienſis. Mauritania Tingitania, is nowe cauled the kyngdome of Feſ and the kyngedome of Marrocco. The principall citie of Feſ, is cauled Feſſa: and the chiefe citie of Marrocco, is named Marrocco. Mauritania Ceſarienſis is at this day cauled the kyngedome of Tremiſen, with alſo the citie cauled Tremiſen or Telenſin. This region is full of deſertes, and reacheth to the ſea Mediterraneum to the citie of Dram with the porte of Maſſaquiber. The kyngedome of Feſ reacheth vnto the Ocean ſea from the Weſt to the citie of Argilla: and the porte of the ſayde kyngedome is cauled Salla.

The kyngedome of Marrocco is alſo extended aboue the Ocean ſea vnto the citie of Azamor and Azafi whiche are aboue the Ocean ſea towarde the Weſt of the ſayde kyngdome. In Mauritania Tingitanea (that is to ſay in the two kyngedomes of Feſ and Marrocco) are in the ſea, the Ilandes of Canarie cauled in owlde time the fortunate Ilandes. Toward the ſouth of this region, is the kyngedome of Guinea, with Senega, Jaiſo, Bambza, and manye other regions of the blacke Moores cauled Ethiopians or Negros, all whiche are watered with the ryuer Negro cauled in owlde tyme Niger.

Bugia.  
Tri oli.

Numidia.

Ilandes of  
Tunes.  
Malta.

The diſcetes  
of Libia.

Barbarie.

Mauritania.

The kingdōs  
of Feſ and  
marrocco.

Tremiſin.  
Dram.  
Maſſaquiber

Salla.

Azamor.

The Ilandes  
of Canarie.

Guinea.

Ethiopians.

## The vyage to Guinea.

In the sayde regions are no cities : but only certeyne lowe cottages made of boughes of trees plastered with chaunke and covered with strawe : In these regions are also very great desertes.

Marrocko.

Fes.

Tremesin.

Guinea.

Africa the great.

Afrika the lesse.

Carthage.

Priester John.

Cape de Buona Speranza.  
The sea of Sande.  
Alcair.

The kyngedome of Marrocko hath vnder it these seven kyngedomes : Beza, Sus, Buzula, the territorie of Marrocko, Duchala, Bazchora, and Telde. The kyngedome of Fes hath as many : as Fes, Temesne, Azgar, Elabath, Errifi, Garer, and Eleauz. The kyngedome of Tremisen hath these regions : Tremisen, Tenez, and Elgazer, all which are Machometistes. But all the regions of Guinea are pure Gentyles and Idolatours without profession of any religion or other knowlege of god then by the lawe of nature.

Africa the great, is one of the thre partes of the worlde knownen in owlde tyme and seuered from Asia, on the East by the ryuer Nilus : On the West, from Europe by the pillars of Hercules. The hyther part is nowe cauled Barbarie, and the people Moores. The inner parte is cauled Libia and Ethiopia. Afrika the lesse is in this wyse bounded : On the west it hath Numidia : On the east Cyrenaica : On the north, the sea cauled Mediterraneum. In this countrey was the noble citie of Carthage.

In the East syde of Afrika beneth the redde sea, dwelleth the greate and myghty Emperour and Chrystian kynge Priester Johan, well knowen to the Portugales in theyr vyages to Calicut. His dominions reache very farre on euery syde : and hath vnder hym many other kynges both Chrystian and hethen that pay hym tribute. This myghty prince is cauled Dauid The Emperour of Ethiopia. Sum wyte that the kynge of Portugale sendeth hym yearely, viii. shippes laden with marchaundies. His kyngedome confineth with the redde sea, and reacheth farre into Afrika towarde Egypte and Barbarie. Southwarde it confineth with the sea towarde the cape de Buona Speranza : and on the other syde with the sea of Sande cauled Mare de Sabione, a very dangerous sea, lyinge betwene the great citie of Alcair or Cairo in Egypte and the countrey of Ethiopia : In the whiche way are many inhable desertes continuinge for the space of fyue dayes iorney. And they affirme that if the sayde Chrystian Emperour were not hyndered by those desertes (in the which is great lacke of vittayles and

## The fyrst vyage to Guinea. 345

And especially of water) he wolde or nowe haue inuaded the kyngedome of Egypte and the citie of Alcayer. The chiefe citie of Ethiope where this great Emperour is resydent, is called Amacatz beinge a fayre citie, whose inhabitantes are of the coloure of an olyue. There are also many other cities, as the citie of Sana vppon the ryner of Nilus where Theemperour is accustomed to remayne in the soommer season. There is lykewylse a great citie named Barbaregal: And Alcon from whense it is sayde that the queene of Saba came to Ierusalem to heare the wysdome of Salomon. This citie is but lyttle, yet very fayre and one of the chiefe cities in Ethiope. In the sayde kyngdome is a prouince cauled Manicongni, whose kyng is a Mooze and tributarie to Theemperour of Ethiope. In this prouince are many exceedynge hyghe mountaynes vppon the which is sayde to be the earthly Paradyse: And sum say that there are the trees of the soonne and moone whereof the antiquitie maketh mention: yet that none can passe thither by reason of greate desertes of a hundred dayes iorney. Also beyonde these mountaynes, is the cape of Buona Speranza, And so haue sayde thus much of Afrike it may suffice.

From whense  
the queene of  
Saba came.

Manicongni.

The earthly  
Paradyse.

The trees of  
the soonne  
and moone.

### ¶ The fyrst vyage to Guinea.



In the yeare of olore Lorde, M. D. LXX. the xii. day of August, sayled from Dorchemouth two goodly shippes, the Primrose and the Lion, with a pynte cauled the moone: beinge all well furnysshed aswell with men of the lastest sort to the number of senen score, as also with ordinaunce and vytrayles requisite to such a vyage: Hauinge also two capitaynes, the one a straunger cauled Antomades Pintado a Portugale, borne in a towne named the porte of Portugale, a wyse, discrete, and sober man, who for his cunnyng in saylynge beinge aswell an expert pylot as polypke capitayne, was sumtyme in great fauoure with the kyng of Portugale, and to whom the coastes of Brasile and Guinea were commytted to bee kepte from the Frenchemen to whom he was a terroure on the sea in those partes: and was furthermoze a gentleman of the kinge his masters house. But as fortune in maner neuer fauoureth but flattereth, neuer

The pynte  
rose  
The Lyon.  
The moone

Pintado.

Brasile.  
Guinea.

The flatter  
ynge of for  
tune.

SSS li,

promyssheth

## The fyrst vyage to Guineā.

The euell con-  
ditions of  
Wyndam.

The Ilandes  
of Madera.

A galeon of  
the kinge of  
Portugale.

The castel of  
Mina.

promyseth but deceaueth, neuer rayseth but casteth dothne a-  
geyne, and as great wealth and fauour hath alwayes compar-  
nions emulation and enuie, he was after many aduersities and  
quarrels made ageynst hym, inforced to come into Englande:  
where in this golden vyage he was euill matched with an vn-  
equall companion and vnlyke matche of most sundry qual-  
ties and conditions with vertues few or none adourned, with  
vices dyuers and many sobly spotted, knowne of many with-  
out pryete, and despyred of fewe or none for his wyckednes:  
whose smaule acquayntaunce was profitable to all men, and  
his familiar conuersacion an vndoinge, that happye was the  
man or woman that knewe hym not, he for his gooddes and  
thee for her name. In fine, vnfortunate was the company  
that had owtghe to doo with hym: in so much that it was no  
maruayle that so goodly an enterpryse with so noble a furni-  
ture of men, shippes, and ordinaunce of all sortes, with all  
kynde of byttayles and that of so great abundaunce, had so  
smaule successe: which could be none otherwysse wher so foule  
a spotte dyd blemyshe, ye rather deface the rest. Thus depar-  
red these noble shippes vnder sayle on theyr vyage. But first  
this capitayne Wyndam, puttyng furth of his shyp at portz-  
mouth, a kynseman of one of the headde marchauntes, and  
shewynge herein a muster of the tragical partes he had concea-  
ned in his trayne, and with such smaule begynnynghes nuryse-  
d so monstrous a byrch, that more happy, yea and blessed  
was that younge man beinge lefte behynde then if he had byn  
taken with them, as sum doo wyshe he had doonne the lyke  
by theyrs. Thus sayled they on theyr vyage, vntyl they came  
to the Ilandes of Madera where they toke in certeyne wyne  
for the store of theyr shippes, and payde for them as they agre-  
ed of the price. At these Ilandes they met with a great gar-  
lion of the kyng of Portugale full of men and ordinaunce:  
yet suche as could not haue pryuayled if it had attempted to  
withstande or resyst owre shippes, for the which cause it was  
set furth, not only to lette and interrupte these owre shippes  
of theyr purposed vyage, but all other that shulde attempte  
the lyke. yet chiefly to frustrate owre vyage. For the kyng  
of Portugale was sinisterly informed that owre shippes were  
armed to his castel of Mina in theie parties, wheras nothing  
lesse was ment.

After

After that our shippes departed from the Ilandes of Ma-  
dera forwarde on theyr vyage, began this woorthy capitaine  
Pinteado to sorowe as a man tormented with the company of  
a terrible hydra who hytherro flattered with hym and made  
hym a fayre countenance and shewe of laue. Then dyd he take  
hypon hym to commaunde all alone, settinge nowght bothe  
by capitayne Pinteado with the reste of the marchaunte fac-  
tours: sumtymes with opprobrious woordes and sumtymes  
with threatenynge most shamefully abusinge them, takinge  
from Pinteado the seruice of the boys and certeyne mariniers  
that were assigned hym by thorder and direction of the woorthy  
shippfull marchauntes, and leauynge hym as a common mary-  
ner, which is the greatest despite and greefe that can be to a  
Portugale or Spanyarde to be dimynished the honoure  
which they esteeme about all rycheite. Thus saylyng forward  
on theyr vyage, they came to the Ilandes of Canarie, contin-  
uynge theyr course from thence untyll they arriued at the  
Ilande of saynt Nicolas where they bytaylorled them selues  
with frethe meate of the fleshe of wyld goates whereof is  
great plentie in that Ilande and in maner of nothyng else.  
From hense folowynge on theyr course, and tarynge here  
and there at the deserte Ilandes in the waye, because they  
wolde not coome to tyme to the countrey of Guínea for the  
heate, and tarynge somewhat to longe (for what can bee wel  
impynted in a common wealth where inequalitye with tyran-  
nie wyll rule alone) they came at the length to the fyrst lande  
of the countrey of Guínea where they fell with the great ry-  
uer of Sesto where they myght for theyr marchaundies hane  
laden theyr shippes with the graynes of that countrey, which  
is a very hote frute, and much lyke vnto a fygge as it grow-  
eth on the tree. For as the fygges are full of lmaule seedes,  
so is the sayde frute ful of graynes which are lose within the  
codde, hauynge in the myddest thereof a hole on euery syde.  
This kynde of spice is much vsed in coulde countreys, and  
may there be solde for great aduantage for therchaunge of o-  
ther wares. But our men by the perswasion or rather inforce-  
ment of this tragicall capitayne, not regardynge and settinge  
lyght by that commoditie in comparason to the fine gold they  
crysted, sayled an hundredth leagues further untyl they came  
to the golden lande; where not attemptinge to come nere the

howe wynd  
abused Pin-  
teado.

The Ilandes  
of Canarie.

The Ilande  
of s. Nicolas.

Guínea.

The ryuer of  
Sesto.  
Graynes.

The thrift of  
golde.

The castel of  
mena.

## The fyrst vyage to Guínea.

castell perryngunge to the kynge of Portugal, whiche was  
 within the ryuer of Mina, made sale of theyr wares onely on  
 this syde and beyonde it for the golde of that countrey to the  
 quantitie of an hundred and fiftie poundes weyght, there  
 beinge in case that they myght haue dispatched al theyr wares  
 for golde, if the vntame brayne of Wyndam had or could haue  
 gyuen eare to the counsaile and experyence of Dintado. For  
 when that Wyndam was not satisfied with the golde whiche he  
 had (and more myght haue had if he had tarped abowt the  
 Mina) commaundyng the sayde Dintado (for so he toke vpon  
 hym) to leade the Shyppes to Benin beinge vnder the Equinoctial  
 line and a hundred and fiftie leagues beyonde the Mina where he  
 looked to haue theyr Shyppes laden with pepper: And beinge  
 counsailed of the sayde Dintado consyde-  
 ryng the late tyme of the yere for that tyme to go no further  
 but to make sale of theyr wares such as they had for golde  
 wherby they myght haue byn great gayners. But Wyndam  
 not assentynge hereunto, fell into a suddayne rage, reuyllynge  
 the sayde Dintado, causynge hym fiewe with other opprobrious  
 wordes, sayinge. This horson fiewe hath promysed to byn-  
 ge vs to such places as are not, or as he can not bring vs vnto.  
 But if he doo not, I wyl cut of his eares and naile them to the  
 mast. Dintado gaue the forsayde counsaile to goo no further  
 for the safegard of the men and theyr lyues, whiche they shulde  
 put in daungoure if they came to late for the rossia which is  
 theyr wynter, not for coulde but for smotherynge heate with  
 close and cloudy ayer and storminge weather of such putryng  
 qualitie that it rotted the cores of theyr backes: Or els for  
 commynge to soonne for the scorchnge heate of the sonne  
 whiche caused them to lenger in the way. But of force and not  
 of wyll, browght he the Shyppes befor the ryuer of Benin: where  
 rydynge at an anker, sente their pynners vp into the ryuer  
 fiftie or thre score leagues, fro whens certeyne of the  
 marchauntes with capitayne Dintado, Francisco a Portugal,  
 Nicolas Lambert gentleman, and other marchauntes were  
 conducted to the court where the kyng remayned. x. leagues  
 from the ryuer syde: whither when they came, they were  
 browght with a greate company to the presence of the kyng  
 who beinge a blacke moore (althoughe not so blacke as the  
 rest) sat in a great house haile longe and wyde,

The quantite  
of golde.

Benin.

pepper.

Shippe admit-  
ted no coun-  
saile.

The Rossia.  
Rottynge  
heate.

Scorchynge  
heate.

Benin.

Francisco.  
Nicolas Lam-  
bert.

The kyng of  
Benin his  
court.

wyde, the walles made of earthe withowte wyndowes, the  
the rooffe of thynne boordes open in sundry places lyke unto  
louers to lette in the ayer.

And here to speke of the great reuerence they gyue to their  
kyng, beinge such that if wee wolde gyue as much to our sa  
uiour Chryst, we shuld remoue from our heades many plages  
which wee dayly deserue for owre contempite and impietie.

So it is therefore, that when his noble men are in his pre  
sence, they neuer looke hym in the face, but syt crouching, as  
wee vppon owre knees so they vppon theyr buttockes with  
theyr elbowes vppon theyr knees and theyr handes befoze  
theyr faces, not lookynge vpp butyll the kyngs commande  
them. And when they are commynge towarde the kyng as  
farre as they do see him, do they shewe such reuerence sytting  
on the grounde with theyr faces couered as befoze. Lykewyse  
when they depart from hym they turne not theyr backs to  
warde hym, but go creppynge backwarde with lyke reue  
rence.

And now to speake sumwhat of the communication that  
was betwene the kyng and owre men, yowe shall fyrst vnder  
stande that he hym selfe coulde speake the Portugale tounge  
whiche he had lerned of a chylde. Therefore after that he had  
commaunded owre men to stande by, and demaunded of them  
the cause of theyr commynge into that countrey, they answered  
red by pntecado that they were marchauntes traualynge in  
to those parties for the commodities of his countrey for ex  
chaunge of wares which they had brought from theyr coun  
treys, beinge such as shulde bee no lesse commodious for him  
and his people. The kyng then haupinge of owlde lynge in  
a certeyne floze house thirtie or forcie kyntals of pepper (euery  
kyn all beinge an hundredth weyght) wyllynge them to looke  
vppon the same, and ageyne to bynge hym a syght of suche  
marchaundies as they had brought with them. And therup  
pon sent with the capytayne and the marchauntes certeyne of  
his men to conducte them to the waters syde, with other to  
bynge the ware from the pinelle to the court. Who when  
they were returned and the wares seene, the kyng grewe to  
this ende with the marchauntes, to prouyde in thirtie dayes  
the ladyng of all theyr shippes with pepper.

And in case theyr marchaundies wolde not extende to the va  
lue of

Reuerence  
towards the  
kyng.

The commu  
nication be  
twene the  
kyng of Bes  
tan and owre  
men,

pepper.

The kynges  
gentlenesse  
towards owre  
men,

## The fyrst vyage to Guínea:

luc of so muche pepper, he promysed to credite them to the next returne: and thereupon sente the countrey rounde about to gather pepper, causynge the same to be brought to the court: So that within the space of. xxx. days they had gathered foure scoze toonne of pepper.

**The disorder  
and death of  
swre men.**

In the meane season oovre men partly hauynge no rule of them selues, but eatynge without measure of the frutes of the countrey, and drynkyng the wyne of the palme trees that droppeth in the nyght from the cutte branches of the same, and in such extreme heate runnyng continually into the water, not bled befoze to such suddayne and vehement alterations (then the which nothyng is more dangerous) were they by brought into swellynge and agues. In so much that the later tyme of the yeare comynge on, caused the to dye fiftynes iii. & fiftynes. iiii. or .v. in a day. Then Wyndam perceauynge the tyme of the. xxx. dayes to be expyred, & his men dyng to fast, sent to the court in poste to capitayne Pintado and the rest to come away and to tary no longer. But Pintado with the rest, wrote backe to hym ageyne, certifyinge hym of the great quantitie of pepper they had already gathered and looked dayly for much moze: Despyrnyng hym furthermore to remember the great prayse and name they shulde wyne if they came home prosperously, and what shame of the contrary. With which answer Wyndam not satisfied, and many of the men dringe dayly, wylled and commaunded them agayne eyther to come away furthwith, or els thretened to leaue them behynde. When Pintado harde this answer, thynkyng to perswade hym with reason, rooke his way from the court towards the hyppes beinge conducted thither with men by the kynges commaundement.

**The furie of  
Wyndam.**

In the meane season Windam all rageing, brake wythe Pintados Caben, broke open his chestes, spoyled suche prouisyons of coude stilled waters and suckettes as he hade prouided for his health, and lefte hym nothyng neyther of his instruments to sayle by, nor yet of his apparell. And in the meane tyme faulynge speke hym selfe, dyed also. Whose death Pintado comminge aborde, lamented as muche as if he had byn the dearest frend he had in the worlde. But certeyne of the maryners and other officers dyd speete in his face, sum callinge hym Jewe, saying that he had brought them thither

**The death of  
Wyndam.**

**Pintado evil  
used of the  
maryners,**

to kille them: And sum drawynge theyr swordes at hym ma-  
kyng A Ketue to Aey hym. Then he perceauinge that they  
wolde nedes away, despyed them to tary that he might fe: ch  
the reste of the marchauntes that were sette at the court. But  
they wolde not graunte his request. Then despyed he them to  
gyue hym the shippe boate with as muche of an owlde sayle  
as myght serue for the same, promisyng them therewith to  
bryng Nicolas Lamberte and the rest into England: But all  
was in vayne. Then wrote he a letter to the courte to the  
marchauntes informyng them of all the matter, and promy-  
syng theif god wolde lende hym life to returne with al hast  
to fetch them. And thus was Pintado kepte a bordeshippe  
ageynste his wyll, thrust amonge the boyes of the shippe, not  
blesed like a man, nor yet like an honest boy: But glad to find  
fauoure at the cokes hande. Then departed they, leauing one  
of theyr shippes behynde them, whiche they soonke for lake  
of men to cary her. After this within sixe or seuen days say-  
linge, dyed also Pintado for very pensiuenesse and thowght  
that strooke hym to the harte: A man worthy to serue any  
prince and most vilely bled. And of seuen scoze men came home  
to Plymouth both scarcely fortye, and of them many dyed.

And that no man shulde suspecte these wordes which I haue  
sayd in commendation of Pintado, to be spoken vpon fauour  
otherwyse then truth, I haue thought good to adde herevnto  
the coppie of the letters which the kyng of Portugale and the  
infant his brother wrote vnto hym to reconcyle hym at suche  
tyme as vppon the kyngs his masters displeasure (and not for  
any other crime or offence as may appere by the sayde letters)  
he was onely for povertie inforced to cooime into Englande  
where he fyrst perswaded oovre marchauntes to attempte the  
sayde vyages to Guínea. But as the kyng of Portugale  
to late repented hym that he had so punished Pintado vppon  
malicious informacions of such as enuied the mans good  
fortune, euen so may it hereby appere, that in sum cases, euen  
vpon them selues, may eyther bee hyndered by the contempe  
or ayded by the helpe of the poze myg accordynge vnto the fa-  
ble of Alope.

The death of  
Pintado.

The

## The fyrst vyage to Guínea.

**T**he coppie of Antonianes Pintado his letters patentes wherby the kynge of Portugale made hym knyght of his house after all his troubles and imprisonment, which by wronge information made to the kynge, he had inteyned of longe tyme, beinge at the laste deliuered, his cause knowne and manifested to the kynge by a greye feyer the kynges confessor.



Seven hund:  
dred, reys  
are. r. s.  
Alcayr, is  
halfe a bus:  
shel.

The kynge do gyue yow to vnderstande lordes Frances Delleola one of my counsayle and ourleser of my house, that in consideration of the good seruice which Antonie Anes Pintado, the sonne of John Anes, dwellinge in the towne cauled the porte, hath doone vnto me, my wyll and pleasure is, to make hym knyght of my house, alowynge to hym in pension seven hundredeth reys monethly, and euery daye one alcayr of barley as longe as he kepereth a horse, and to bee payde accordynge to the ordinaunce of my house. Wroudyngge alwayes that he shal receaue but one mariage gyfte: And this also in such condition that the tyme whiche is excepted in owre ordinaunce forbyddynge such men to mary for gettyng such chyldren as myght succede them in this alowance, which is fyve yeares after the makynge of this patente, shalbe fyrste expired before he do mary. I therfore commaunde yowe to cause this to bee entered in the booke cauled the Matricula of owre household under the tytle of knyghtes. And when it is so entered, let the clerke of the Matricula for the certentie therof, wyte on the backe syde of this Aluala or patente, the number of the lease wherin this owre graunt is entered. Which doone, let hym retourne this wytyngge vnto the sayd Antonie Anes Pintado for his warrant.

I Diego Henriquez haue wytten this in Almarin the xii. day of September, in the yeare of owre lord. 1551. And this benenolence the kynge gaue vnto Antonie Anes Pintado the. xxv. day of July this present yeare,

Rey.

# The fyrst vyage to Guinea. 349

**C**The secretaries declaration wyrtten vnder  
the kynges graunt.



Our maiestie hath bouchsafed in respect and  
consyderation of the good seruite of Antonie  
Anes Pintado dwellynge in the porte, and  
soonne of John Anes to make hym knyght of  
povre house with ordinarie allowance of seven  
hundredth reys pension by the moneth and one  
Alcayr of barley by the day as longe as he keepeth a horse:  
And to bee payde accordyng to the ordinaunce of povre house  
with condition that he shall haue but one marriage gyfte: And  
that not within the space of. vi. yeaeres after the makynge of  
these letters parentes.

The secretaries note. Entered in the booke of the Matricos  
la. fol. 683.

*Francisco de Siquera.*

**C**The coppie of the letter of Don Lewis rhinfant and  
brother to the kyng of Portugale: sent into  
Englande to Antonianes Pintado.



Antonie Anes Pintado, I the infant bro-  
ther to the kyng, haue me hartely commen-  
ded vnto yow. Peter Bonfaluës is gone to  
seeke yow, desyryng to byngne yow home  
ageyne into yowre countrey. And for that  
purpose, hath with hym a safe conduct for  
yow, graunted by the kyng, that thereby  
yowe may freely and withowt all feare come home. And al-  
though the weather be foule and stormy, yet sayle not to come.  
For in the tyme that his maiestie hath geuen yow, yow maye  
doo many thynges to yowre contentacion and gratifyng the  
kyng, wherof I wolde bee ryght gladde: and to byngne the  
same to passe wyll doo all that lyeth in me for yowre profyte.  
But forasmuch as Peter Bonfaluës wyll make further decla-  
ration hercof vnto yow, I say no more at this present.

Wyrtten in Luxburge the. viii. day of December. Anno. M.  
D. LIII.

**Item.**

**The**

## The fyrst vyage to Guinea.

**C** The Infant don Ictos.



In these forsayd wytynges I sette vnder sele in the house of my frende Nicolas Lyse with whom Pintado left them at his vnfortunate departynge to Guinea. But notwithstanding all these frendly letters and sayre promyses, Pintado durste not attempte to go home, neyther to keepe company with the Portugales his countrey men without the presence of other, forasmuch as he had secreate admonition that they intended to slep hym, if tyme and place myght haue serued theryn wycked intent.

**C** The seconde vyage to Guinea.



In the fyrst vyage I haue declared rather the order of the hystory then the course of the nauigation, whercof at that tyme I coulde haue no perfecte information, so in the description of this seconde vyage my chiefe intent hath byn to shew the course of the same accordynge to the obseruation and ordinarie custome of them aryners, and as I receaued it at the handes of an experte pylot beinge one of the chiefe in this viage, who also with his owne handes wrote a bryefe declaration of the same as he founde and tryed all thynges not by coniecture, but by the arte of saylynge and instrumentes perceyvyng to the mariners facultie. Not therfore assuminge to my selfe the commendations due to other, neyther so bould as in anye parte to chaunge or otherwile dispose the order of this vyage so wel obserued by art and experience, I haue thought good to set forth the same in such sort and phrase of speache as is commonly vsed amonge them, and as I receaued it of the said pylot as I haue sayde. Take it therfore as foloweth.

In the yere of oure lord. M. D. LIII. the xi. day of October, wee departed the ryuer of Ammes with thre goodly shippes, thone cauled the Trinitie, a shyppe of the burden of seuen score toonne: Thother cauled the Barthelmeu a shyppe of the burden of. lxxx. The thyrde was the Iohn Euangelist a shyppe of seuen score toonne, With the sayde shippes

## The seconde vyage to Guinea. 350

shippes and two pynnelles (wherof the one was drowned in the coast of Englande) we went forwarde on ovr vyage, and slepde at Douer. xiii. dayes. We slepde also at Rye three or foure dayes. More ouer last of all we touched at Dartmouth.

The fyrst day of Nouember at. ix. of the clocke at nyghe departynge from the coaste of Englande, we sette of the first bearynge southwest all that nyght in the sea, and the nexte day all day, and the next nyght after vntyll the thyrde daye of the sayde mooneth about noone, makynge ovr way good, dyd runne. 60. leaques.

Item from. xii. of the clocke the thyrde daye tyll. xii. of the clocke the. iiii. day of the sayde mooneth, makynge ovr way good southeast, dyd runne euery three houres twoo leaques, which amounteth to. xvi. leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. of the clocke the. iiii. day to xii. of the clocke the. v. day, runnyng south west in the sea, dydde runne. xii. leaques.

Item runnyng from. xii. of the clocke the. v. day vntyll. xii. of the clocke the. vi. day runnyng southeast, dyd runne. xviii. leaques.

And so from. xii. of the clocke the. vi. daye vntyll. xii. of the clocke the. vii. day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne euery houre. ii. leaques which amout to. xlviii. leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. of the clocke the. vii. day tyl. iii. of the clocke the. viii. day, southsouthwest, runnyng in the sea, dyd runne xxx. leaques.

Item from three of the clocke the. viii. day, vntyll. iii. of the clocke the. ix. day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne. xxx. leaques.

Item from. iii. of the clocke the. ix. day tyll. iii. of the clocke the. x. day, dyd south southeast in runnyng in the sea the sum of. xxiii. leaques.

Also from. iii. of the clocke the. x. day vntyl. xii. of the clocke the. xi. day, dyd run southsouthwest the sum of. xii. leaques, and from. xii. of the clocke tyll. vi. of the sayde day, dyd run. vi. leaques.

Runnyng south and by west in the sea from. vi. of the clocke the. xi. day tyll. vi. of the clocke the. xii. day, dyd run. xxxvi. leaques.

Item, ii.

From

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

From. vi. of the clocke at after none the. xii. daye tyll. vi. of the clocke the. xiii. day at after none, dyd runne. xiii. leagues Item from. vi. of the clocke the. xiii. day, tyll. vi. of the clocke the. xiiii. day at after none that we were becalmed that we could lye southwesterly with a fayle. And the. xv. daye in the mornynge, the wynde came to the East and easte northeast. The. xvi. day in the mornynge, we had syght of the yle of Madera which doth ryse to hym that cometh in the north northeast parte bypyght lande in the west part of it, and very hyghe: and to the south southeaste a lowe longe lande and a longe poynt with a saddle throught the myddeste of it, standeth in the. xxii. degrees: and in the west parte, many springes of water runnyng downe from the mountayne, and many whete feldes lyke unto corne feldes, and sum whete houses to the southeast parte of it: and the toppe of the mountayne sheweth very ragged if yow may se it, and in the north east parte there is a byght or bay as thotogh it were a harbor towe. Also in the sayde part, there is a rocke a lytle distance from the shore: and ouer the sayde byght, yow shall se a great gappe in the mountayne.

The yle of  
Madera.

The yle of  
palme.  
Teneriffa.  
The Canaries.

Frome mader  
to the  
yle of palme.

Grancanaria.  
Fortes Ventu-  
ra.

The land of  
Somera.

The. xix. day at. xii. of the clocke, we had syght of the yle of Palme and Teneriffa and the Canaries. The yle of Palme ryseth rounde and lyeth southeaste and northwesterly, and the northwesterly parte is lowest. In the south, is a rounde hyll or ner the hedde lande, and an other rounde hyll about that in the lande.

There is betwene the southeast parte of the yle of Madera and the northwesterly parte of the yle of Palme. lvi. leagues. This yle of Palme lyeth in the. xxix. degrees. And owre course fro Madera to the yle of Palme was south and south and by west, so that we had syght of Teneriffa and of the Canaries. The southeast parte of the yle of Palme, and the north northeast of Teneriffa, lyeth southeast and northwesterly. And betwene them is. xx. leagues. Teneriffa and the greater Canarie cauled Grancanaria, and the west part of Fortes Ventura standeth in. xxvii. degrees and a halfe. Somera is a fayre lande and very ragged and lyeth west southwesterly of Teneriffa. And who so ever wyll come betwene the two ylandes, must come south and by east, and in the south parte of Somera, is a towne and a good rode in the sayde parte of the

## The seconde vyage to Guínea. 351

the Ilande: and it standeth in. xxvii. degrees & thre terces. Teneriffa.  
Teneriffa is a hygh lande and a great hyghe picke lyke a su- Snowe.  
ger lofe. And bypon the sayde picke is snowe throughout  
all the hole yere. And by reason of that picke, it maye bee  
knowne aboue all other Ilandes, and there we were becalmed  
the. xx. day of Nouember from. vi. of the clocke in the moz-  
nyng vntyll foure of the clocke at after none.

### C Betwene Gomera and Cape de las Barbas.

**T**he. xxii. day of Nouember vnder the Tropike of Cancer,  
the soonne goeth downe west and by south.

Upon the coast of Barberie xxv. leaques by north cape blanke The coast of  
at. iii. leaques of the mayne, there is. xv. fadome and good Barbarie.  
shelly grounde and sande amonge, and no streemes, and two Cape blanke.  
smaule Ilandes standyng in the. xxii. degrees and a terce.

From Gomera to cape de las Barbas is a hūdrith leaques  
and our course was south and by east. The sayde cape stan-  
deth in. xxii. and a halfe: and all that coaste is flatte. xvi. or The ryuer of  
xvii. fadome deepe, vii. or. viii. leaques of frome the ryuer de de Oro.  
Oro to cape de las Barbas, there vse many Spanyardes and  
Portugales to trade for fyshyng duringe the mooneyth of  
Nouember: and all that coaste is very lowe landes. Also wee  
went from cape de las Barbas southsouthe west and southwest  
and by south: yll we broughte oure selues in. xx. degrees and  
a halfe, rekenyng oure selues. vii. leaques of: and that was  
the least holes of cape Blanke.

Then we went south vntyll we broughte oure selues in  
xiii. degrees, rekenyng oure selues. xxv. leaques of. And in  
xv. degrees, we dyd reere the crossiers: and we myght haue  
tered them sooner if we had loked for theym. They are not  
ryghte a crosse in the mooneyth of Nouember by reason the  
nyghtes are shorte there. Neuerthelesse we had the syght of  
them the. xxix. day of the sayde mooneyth at nyght.

The xxi. of December oate. xiii. degrees, we sette oure  
course south and by East vntyll the fourth daye of December  
at. xii. of the clocke the same day. Then we were in. ix. de-  
grees and a terce, rekenyng oure selues. xxx. leaques of the  
holes of the ryuer cauled Rio Grande beinge west southweste  
of them: The which holes be. xxx. leaques longe,

The crossiers  
or crosse  
starres.

Rio Grande

The

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

The fourth of December, we beganne to sette ovr course southeaste, we beinge in. vi. degrees and a halfe.

The ninth day of December we set ovr course east southeast

The. xiii. day of the sayde mooneth, we set ovr course east, we beinge in. v. degrees and a halfe, rekenynge ovr selues. xxxvi. leaques from the coast of Guinea.

Cape mensurado.

The river of Sello.

The. xix. day of the sayde mooneth, we sette ovr course east and by north, rekenynge ovr selues. xlv. leaques distant from cape Mensurado, the sayde cape beinge east north east of vs, and the ryuer of Sello beinge east.

The. xxi. day of the sayde mooneth we fel with cape Mensurado to the southeast abowt two leaques of. This cape may be easly knownen, by reason the rysynge of it is lyke a porpoise hedde. Also towarde the southeast there are thre trees, wherof the eastermost tree is the hyghest, and the myddlemost is lyke a hepe stakke, and the southermost lyke unto a iebet: and vpon the mayne, are foure or fyue hygh hylls rysynge one after an other lyke round hoommockes or hylllockes. And the southeast of the thre trees, is thre trees lyke a brazier: wyle: and all the coaste alonge is whyte sande. The sayde cape standeth within a lytle in. vi. degrees.

The. xxii. of. December, we came to the ryuer of Sello, and remayned there untill the. xxix. day of the sayde mooneth. Here we thought it best to sende before vs the pyneile to the ryuer of Dulce cauled Rio Dulce, that they myght haue the begynnynge of the market before the comynge of the John.

The river of Sello.  
Rio Dulce.

At the ryuer of Sello, we had a toonne of grapes. This ryuer standeth in. vi. degrees lackynge a certe. From the ryuer of Sello to Rio Dulce, is. xxv. leaques. Rio Dulce standeth in. v. degrees and a halfe. The ryuer of Sello is easy to be knownen by reason there is a ledge of rockes on the south east parte of the rode. And at the enterynge into the haven, are fyue or fyve trees that beare no leaues. This is a good harborow: but very narrowe at the enteraunce into the ryuer. There is also a rocke in the haven mouth right as yow enter. And all that coast betwene cape de Monte and cape de las Palmas, lyeth southeast and by east, north west and by weste, beinge thre leaques of the shore. And yow shall haue in sum places rockes two leaques of: and that betwene the ryuer of Sello and cape de las Palmas.

Cape de Monte.

Cape de las Palmas.

Wetmore

Betweene the ryuer of Sello and the riuer Dulce, is. xxb. leaques. And the hygh lande that is betweene them bothe, is cauled Cakeado, beinge. viii. leaques from the ryuer of Sello. And to the southeastwarde of hym, is a place cauled Shau: gro and an other cauled Shyauwe oz Shauo, where you may get freshe water. Of this Shyauwe, lyeth a ledge of rockes: and to the southeastwarde, lyeth a hed lande cauled Croke. Betweene Cakeado and Croke, is. ix. oz. x. leaques. To the southeastwarde of, is a harborowe cauled saynte Vincent. Wyght ouer ageynst saynt Vincent, is a rocke vnder the water, two leaques and a halfe of the more. To the southeastwarde of that rocke, you shall see an Ilande aboute thre oz foure leaques of. This Ilande is not past a leaque of the more. To the east southeast of the Ilande, is a rocke that lyeth aboue the water: and by that rocke goeth in the ryuer of Dulce, which you shall knowe by the sayde ryuer and rocke. The north west syde of the haven, is flat lande: and the south east syde therof, is lyke an Ilande and a bare plote without any trees, and so is it not in any other place.

The lande of  
Cakeado.

Shauo.

Croke.

Saint Vincen  
tes harborow.

The riuer  
Dulce.

In the rede, you shall ryde in. xiii. oz. xiiii. fadomes, good oves and lande, beinge the markes of the rede to bringe the Ilande and the north west lande together. And here wee ankered the last of December.

The thyrde day of January, we came from the ryuer of Dulce.

Note that cape de las Palmas is a fayre high land. But summe lowe places therof by the water syde, looke like redde cliffes with white strakes like wayes a cable length a piece. And this is to the East parte of the cape. This cape is the southermost lande in all the coast of Guinea: And standeth in foure degrees and a terce.

Cape de las  
Palmas.

The coast of  
Guinea.

The coast from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes oz de tres Puntas, is fayre and cleare without rocke oz other daungionr.

Cape de tres  
puntas.

xxv. leaques from cape de las Palmas, the lande is higher then in any place vntyll we came to cape Trepoyntes. And about. x. leaques before you come to cape Trepoyntes, the lande ryseth still hygher and hygher vntyll you come to cape Trepoyntes. Also before you come to the sayde cape after other fve leaques to the north west parte of it, there is cer  
reyn

## The seconde vyage to Guínea.

The castell  
of Arra.

theyne broken grounde with twoo greate rockes : and within  
them in the byght of a bay, is a castell cauled Arra, pertyning  
to the kynge of Portugale. you shall knowe it by the sayde  
rockes that lye of it : For there is none such from cape de las  
Palmas to cape Trepoyntes. This coaste lyeth easie and by  
north, west and by south. From cape de las Palmas to the  
sayde castell, is foure score and xv. leaques. And the coaste  
lyeth from the sayde castell to the Westernmoste poynte of the  
Trepoyntes, southeast and by south, north west and by north.  
Also the Westernmost poynt of the Trepoyntes, is a lowe lande  
lyinge halfe a myle owt in the sea : and vpon the innermoste  
necke to the landwarde, is a tyste of trees, and there we arri-  
ued the. xi. day of January.

The towne  
of Samma.

The. xii. day of January, we came to a towne cauled Sam-  
ma or Samua, beinge. viii. leaques from cape Trepoyntes to-  
ward east northeast. Betwene cape Trepoyntes and the towne  
of Samma, is a great ledge of rockes a great way owt in the  
sea. We continued foure dayes at that towne : and the capi-  
tayne therof wolbe needes haue a pledge a shoze. But when  
they receaued the pledge, they kepte hym tyll and wolde traf-  
fike no more, but that of thei ordinance at vs. They haue  
two or thre pieces of ordinaunce and no more.

The plege  
was in John  
yorke his ne-  
vie.

The. xvi. day of the sayde mooneth, we made rekenyng  
to come to a place cauled cape Tozea where capitayne Don  
John dwelleth, whose men interceyued vs friendly. This  
cape Tozea is foure leaques eastwarde of the castell of Mina,  
otherwyse cauled La Mina, or Castello de Mina, where we arrived  
the. xviii. day of the mooneth. Here we made sale of al othe  
cloth saynge two or thre packes.

Cape Corea.

The castel of  
mina perty-  
ninge to the  
kinge of por-  
tugale.

The. xxi. day of the same mooneth, we theyd anker and  
departed from thence to the Trinitie which was. vii. leaques  
eastwarde of vs where he solde her wares. Then they of the  
Trinitie wylled vs to go eastwarde of that. viii. or ix. leaques  
to sel part of their wares in a place caled Perecow, & an other  
place named Perecowe grande, beinge the eastermost place of  
both these, which you shall knowe by a great rounde hyl nere  
vnto it named Monte Rodondo lyinge westwarde from it.  
And by the water syde are many hygge palme trees. From  
hence byd we set furth homeward the. xiii. day of February  
and plyed vpp alongest tyll we came within. vii. or viii.  
leaques

Perecowe.  
Perecowe  
grande.

Monte rodõ-  
do.

## The seconde vyage to Guínea. 355

leagues to cape Trepoyntes. About. viii. of the clocke the xxv day at after noone, we dyd cast about to seawarde. And be: The currants  
 ward of the currantes, for they wyll deceaue you sore.

Who so ever shall comme from the coast of Guinea home: Frome mina  
homewarde.  
 ward, let hym be sure to make his way good west untill he  
 reken hym selfe as farre as cape de las Palmas where the cur-  
 rant settech alwayes to the eastwarde. And within. xx. lea-  
 ques eastwarde of cape de las Palmas, is a ryuer cauled Rio Rio de los  
potos.  
 de los Potos where you may haue frethe water and balaste  
 enowgh, and plentie of Quercy or Elephantes teethe. This Iverye.  
 ryuer standeth in foure degrees and almost two terces.

And when you reken youre selfe as farre thotte as cape Cape de las  
palmas,  
 de las Palmas, bringe in a degree or a degree and a halfe,  
 you may go west or west and by north untill you come in  
 three degrees: and then you maye go weste north west, and  
 north west and by west untill you come in siue degrees and  
 then north west. And in the. vi. degrees, wee mette northerly  
 wyndes and greate rookynge of tydes. And as wee coulde  
 iudge, the currantes went to the north north west. Further:  
 more betwene cape de Monte and cape Verde, go greate cur- Currantes.  
 rantes which deceaue many men.

The. xxii. daye of Aprill, wee were in. viii. degrees and  
 two terces: and so we ranne to the north west, hauynge the  
 wynde at northeast and east northeast, and sumtymes at east  
 untill we were at. xviii. degrees and a terce, which was on  
 May day. And so from. xviii. and two terces, wee hadde the  
 wynde at east and east northeast, and sumtymes at east south:  
 east: and then wee reckened the Ilandes of cape Verde east  
 southeast of vs, wee iudged oure selues to be. xliii. lea-  
 ques of. And in. xx. and. xxi. degrees, wee had the wynde  
 more easterly to the southwarde then before. And so we ran  
 to the north west and north north west, and sumtymes north  
 and by west and north untill wee came into. xxxi. degrees,  
 where we reckened oure selues a hundredeth and foure score  
 leagues south west and by south of the Ilande de Floze or de The Ile de  
Floze.  
 los flosos. And there we met with the wynde at south south:  
 east, and set oure course northeast.

In. xxxiii. degrees, we had the wynde at the south and  
 south west: and then we set our course north north east, and  
 so we ranne to xl. degrees: and then we set our course north:

U U U V. I. east

## The seconde vyage to Guinea,

east the wynde beinge at the southwest and hauynge the Ile de Flore east of vs, and, xviij. leaques of.

In, xli. degrees, we met with the wynde at northeast, and so we ranne north westwarde. Then we met with the wynde at the west north west and at the west within .vi. leaques runnyng towarde the north west: And then wee cast about and ley northeast untill we came in. xlii. degrees, where we sette our course east northeast, indgynge the Ile of Coruo south and by west of vs and. xxxvi. leaques distant from vs.

The Ile of Coruo.

A remembraunce that the. xxi. day of Maye, we communed with John Rafe, and he thought it best to go northeast, and iudged hym selfe. xxv. leaques eastwarde to the Ile de Flore, and in. xxxix. degrees and a halfe.

where they lost the sight of the northe starre.  
howe the compasse dooeth varie.

Note that in the fourth day of September vnder nine degrees, we lost the syght of the north starre.

Note also, that in the. xlv. degrees the compasse is varied, viii. degrees to the west.

Item, in. xl. degrees, the compasse dyd vary. xv. degrees in the hole.

Item, in. xxx. degrees and a halfe, the compasse is varied. v. degrees to the west.

Be it also in memorie, that two or thre dayes before we came to cape Trepointes, the pyrnatte went alongest the shore thinkynge to sell sum of our wares. And so we came to anchor thre or foure leaques west and by south of the cape Trepointes where we lefte the Trinitie.

The pyrnatte rose.

Then our pyrnatte came a boorde with all our men. The pyrnatte also tooke in more wares. They tolde me moreouer that they wolde go to a place where the pyrnatte was and had receaued much golde at the fyrste vyage to these parties. And tolde me furthermore that it was a good place. But I fearynge a brigantine that was then vppon the coast, dydde way and folowe theym, and lefte the Trinitie aboute foure leaques of from vs. And there we rode ageynst that towne foure dayes: so that Martine by his owne desyre and assente of sum of the commitioners that were in the pyrnatte, wente a shore to the towne. And there John Beryn went to trafike from vs beinge thre myles of trafikyng at an other towne. The towne is cauled Samma or Samua. For Samma and Sammaterra, are the names of the two fyrste townes where we

The towne of Samma.  
Golde.

## The seconde vyage to Guinea. 354

wee did trafficke for gold, to the northeast of cape Trepointe:  
 Therto continueth the course of the vyage as it was  
 described by the sayde pylot. Nowe therfore to speake sum:  
 what of the contrey and people, and of suche thynges as are  
 brought from thence.

They brought from thence at the last vyage, foure hun:  
 dret pounce weyght and odde of golde of .xxii. carattes and  
 one grayne in finenesse. Also. xxxvi. butres of graynes: and  
 about two hundred and fiftie elephantes teethe of all quan:  
 tities. Of these, I sawe and measured sum of. ix. spannes in  
 length as they were crooked. Sum of them were as vyage as a  
 mans thygh about the knee: and weyed aboute foure scoze  
 and ten pounce weyght a piece. They say that sum one hath  
 byn seene of a hundred and. xxv. pounce weyght. Other  
 there were which they caule the teeth of calves of one or two  
 or thre yeares, wherof sum were a foote and a halfe, summe  
 two foote, and sum thre or more accordynge to thage of the  
 beaste. These great teeth or tuskes, growe in the upper iawe  
 downwarde, and not in the nether iawe upwarde, wherein  
 the paynters and arras woorkers are deceaued. At this laste  
 vyage was brought from Guinea the headde of an elephante  
 of such huge byggenesse, that only the bones or crauelwe ther  
 of helpde the nether iawe and greate tuskes, wayed aboute  
 two hundred weyght, and was as muche as I. could well  
 lyfte from the grounde. In so muche that considerynge also  
 herewith the weyght of .ii. such great teeth, the nether iawes  
 with the leste teethe, the tounge, the greate hangynge eares,  
 the bygge and longe snout or troonke, with all the fleshe,  
 byaynes, and kyne, with all other partes belongynge to the  
 hole headde, in my iudgemente it could weyghte leste then  
 fyve hundred weyght. This headde dyuers haue seene in the  
 house of the woorthy marchaunt syr Andrieu Judde, where  
 also I sawe it, and behelde it not onely with my bodely eyes,  
 but much more with the eyes of my mynde and spirite consy:  
 dered by the woork, the cunnynge and wyledome of the  
 woorker master: withowt which consydration, the syght of  
 such straunge and wonderfull thynges may rather seeme cur:  
 iosityes then profitable contemplations.

The elephante (which sum caule an oliphant) is the big:  
 gest of all foure footed beastes. His forelegges are longer

¶ ¶ ¶ ¶ ¶

Solde foure  
 hundred  
 weyght.  
 Graynes.  
 Jurey.  
 Elephantes  
 teethe.

The head of  
 an Elephante.

The contem:  
 plations of  
 Gods woorkes

The descrip:  
 tion and pro:  
 pertes of the  
 Elephante.

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

then his hynder. He hath ankles in the lower parte of his hynder legges, and tye toes on his fiere vndiuided. His snout or troonke is so longe and in such forme that it is to hye in the steepe of a hande. For he neyther eateth nor drinketh but by byngynge his troonke to his mouth. Therewith he helpeth vp his master or keeper: therewith he ouerthowleth trees. Besyde his two greate tuskes, he hath on euery syde of his mouth foure teethe wherewith he eateth and geynderh his meate. Eyrther of these teeth, are almost a span in length as they growe alonge in the iawbe: and are abowt two inches in height and almost as much in thickenesse. The tuskes of the male are greater then of the female. His tounge is verye lytle, and so farr in his mouth that it can not bee seene. Of all beastes they are mosse gentyll and tractable. For by many sundry ways they are taught and do vnderstand: In so much that they learne to do due honour to a king, and are of quicke sence and sharpenes of wyt. When the male hath once leasorned the female, he neuer after toucheth her. The male Elephante lyueth two hundredeth yeaues, or at the leaue one hundredeth and twentie. The female almost as longe: but the shoure of theyr age, is but. lx. yeaues as sum wyte. They can not suffer wynter or coulde. They loue ryuers and wyl often go into them vp to the snout wherewith they blowe and snuffe, and play in the water: but swymme they canne not for the weyght of theyr bodyes. Solinie and Solinie wyte that they vse none adulterie. If they happen to meete with a manne in wyldernesse beinge out of the way, gentilly they wyl go before hym and bynge hym into the playne waye. Joyued in battayle, they haue no smaule respecte vnto the that be woundebd. For they bynge them that are hurt or mery into the middle of the army to be defended. They are made tame by drynkyng the use of barley. They haue continuall warre agaynst dragons which desyre theyr bludde because it is very coulde. And therefore the dragon lynges awapte as the Elephante passeth by, wyndeth his rayle (beinge of exceedynge length) about the hynder legges of the elephante: and so sleping bym, thrusteth his heade into his troonke and exhausterh his breeth, or els byereth hym in the eare wherunto he can not reach with his troonke. And when the elephante waxeth saynt, he fauleth downe on the serpente beinge now full of bludde: and

Debate betwene the Elephante and the dragon.

## The seconde vyage to Guinea. 355

With the poyle of his body breaketh hym: so that his owne bludde with the bludde of the elephant, runneth out of hym mingled together: whiche beinge coude, is congeled into that substance which the apothecaries caule *Sanguis Draconis*, (that is) dragons blud, otherwyle cauled *Cinnabaris*, although there be an other kynde of *Cinnabaris*, commonly cauled cinoper or vermilion which the paynters vse in certeyne coloures.

*Sanguis Draconis.*  
*Cinnabaris.*

They are also of three kyndes, as of the marshallles, the playnes, and the mountaynes, no lesse differynge in conditi- ons. Philostratus wyteth, that as much as the elephant of Lybia in byggenesse passeth the horse of Aplea, so much both the elephantes of India exceede them of Lybia. For of the elephantes of India, sum haue byn scene of the heyght of .ix. cu- bites. The other do so greatly feare these that they dare not abyde the syght of them. Of the Indian elephantes, only the males haue tuskes. But of them of Ethiopia and Lybia, both kyndes are tusked. They are of dyuers heyghtes, as of .xii. fti. and .xiiii. dodrantes, euery dodrant bringe a measure of ix. ynches. Sum wyte that an elephant is bygger then thre wyld oxen or buffes. They of India are blacke or of the col- our of a mouse. But they of Ethiopie or Guinea, are browne. The hyde or skynne of them all, is very harde and withoute heare or byssels. Theyr eares are two dodrantes brode, and theyr eyes very lytle. Our men sawe one drynkyng at a ry- uer in Guinea as they sayled into the lande.

The kyndes  
of elephantes.

Of other properties and conditions of the elephant, as of theyr maruelous docilitie, of theyr feight and vse in the war- res, of theyr generation and chastite, when they were fyrste scene in the theaters and triumphes of the Romans, howe they are taken and tamed, and when they cast theyr tuskes, with thuse of the same in medicine, who so despyeth to know, e t hym rede Plinie in the .v. li. booke of his natural hylozie. He also wyteth in his .xii. booke, that in oulde tyme they made many goodly woorkes of Iuery or elephantes teeth: as tables, trellises, postes of houses, raples, lattices for wyndowes, Images of theyr goddes, and dyuers other thynges of Iuery both coloured and uncoloured also interprete with sundry kyndes of precious wooddes, as at this day are made certeyne chayres, lutes, and virginalles,

woorkes of  
Iuery.

They

## The seconde vyage to Guínea.

They had such plentie therof in owlde tyme, that (as farre as I remember) Josephus wyrteth that one of the gates of Hierusalem was cauled *Porta Eburnea*, (that is) the Iuery gate. The whyteneſſe thereof was ſo muche eſtremed that it was thought to repreſent the naturall faynenelle of mans ſkynne: In ſo much that ſuch as went abowt to ſer furth (or rather corrupte) naturall bewtie with colours and payntynge, were reproued by this prouerbe: *Ebur atramento candelacere*. That is: To make Iuery whyte with ynke. The poettes alſo deſcribunge the fayre neckes of beuotifull virgins, caule them *Eburnea colla*: That is: Iuery neckes. And to haue ſayde thus much of elephantes and Iuery, it may ſuffice.

The people  
of Africa.

Nowe therfore to ſpeke ſumwhat of the people and theſe maners and maner of lyuynge, with alſo an other brieſe deſcription of Africa. It is to vnderſtande that the people whiche nowe inhabite the regions of the coaſt of Guinea and the myddle partes of Africa, as Lybia the inner, and Nubia with dyuers other great and large regions abowt the ſame, were in owlde tyme cauled Ethiopes and Nigrite, which we nowe caule Moores, Moorens, or Negros, a people of beaſtly lyuynge, without a god, lawe, religion, or common welth, and ſo ſcorched and vexed with the heate of the ſonne, that in many places they curſe it when it ryſeth. Of the regions and people abowt the inner Libia (cauled *Libia Interior*) Seneca & Hyppius wyrteth thus.

Libia Interior.

Lybia Interior, is very large and deſolate, in the whiche are many horrible wylderneſſes and mountaynes repleniſhed with dyuers kyndes of wyld and monſtrous beaſtes and ſerpentes. Fyſt from Mauritania or Barberie toward the ſouth is Berulia, a cologh and ſaluage region whoſe inhabitants are wyld and wanderynge people. After theſe folowe the people cauled Melanogetuli and ſharuſi whiche wander in the wylderneſſe carrynge with them greate gourdies of water. The Ethiopians cauled Nigrite, occupie a great parte of Aſſyrica, and are extended to the Weſt Ocean. Southwarde alſo they reache to the ryuer Nigritus whoſe nature agreeth with the ryuer of Nilus ſo farre as it is increaſed and diuyneth at the ſame tyme, and byngeth furth the like beaſtes as the Crocodile. By reaſon wherof, I thinke this to be the ſame ryuer which the Portugales caule Senega. For this ry

Berulia.

Ethiopes.  
Nigrite.

The ryuer Ni-  
gritis or Se-  
nega.

ner is also of the same nature. It is furthermoze marvelous and very strange that is sayde of this ryuer. And this is, that on the one syde thereof, thinhabitauntes are of hyghe stature and blacke: and on the other side of browne or tawny colour and lowe stature, which thynge also oovre men confirme to be trewe.

A strange  
thynge.

There are also other people of Lybia cauled Saramantes, whose women are common. For they contracte no matrimo- nie, neyther haue respect to chastitie. After these are the na- tions of the people cauled Hyzei, Sathiodaphnite, Odzangi, Mimaces, Lynamare, Dolopes, Agangine, Leuce Ethiopes, Filicei Ethiopes, Calcei Ethiopes, and Rubi. These haue the same situation in Stologie that they nowe giue to the kyng- dome of Rubia. Here are certeyne Christians vnder the do- minion of the greate Emperoure of Ethiopie cauled Prester John. From these towarde the west, is a great nation of peo- ple cauled Aphricerones: whose region (as farre as maye bee gathered by conjecture) is the same that is nowe cauled Reg- num Diguene, confinyng bypon the east partes of Guinea. From hense westwarde and sumwhat towarde the north, are the kyngdomes of Sambra and Budamel not farre from the ryuer of Senega. And from hense towarde the inlande regi- ons and alonge by the sea coast, are the regions of Binoia or Guinea which wee commonly caule Synne. On the west side of these regions towarde the Ocean, is the cape or poynt cau- led Cabouerde or Caput viride (that is) the greene cape, to the whi- che the Portugales fyrst directe theyr course when they sayle to America or the lande of Brasile. Then departynge frome hense, they ture to the ryght hande towarde the quarter of the wynde cauled Garbino which is betwene the west and the south. But to speake sumwhat moze of Ethiopia. Although there are many nations of people so named, yet is Ethiopia chiefly diuided into two partes: wherof the one is cauled E- thiopia vnder Egypte, a great and ryche region. To this per- tyneth the Ilande of Meroe, imbraced rounde abowte with the streames of the ryuer Nilus. In this Ilande women reyg- ned in oulde tyme. Iosephus wyrteth that it was sumtyme cauled Sabea: and that the queene of Saba came from thense to Hierusalem to heare the wysedome of Salomon. From hense towarde the East, reigneth the sayde Christian Empe- roure

Saramantes.

people of  
Lybia.

Prester John.

Regnum Di-  
guene.

Sambria.

Guinea or  
Sinoia.

Cap. verde.

The Portu-  
gales nauiga-  
tions to Bra-  
silie.  
Ethiopia.

The Ilande  
of Meroe.

The queene  
of Saba.

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

Better John  
 emperor of  
 Ethiopia.

route Better John whom sun-daule Papa Johannes, and o-  
 ther say that he is cauled Bear Juan (that is greate John,  
 whose empyre reacheth farte beyonde Nilus, and is extended  
 to the coastes of the redde sea and Ju dan sea. The myddle of  
 the region is almost in the 66. degrees of longitude, and, xii.  
 degrees of latitude. Abowte this region inhabite the people  
 cauled Clodii, Aethiophagi, Babilonti, Arimure, Golyli, and  
 Golybe. After these is the region cauled Trogloditica, whose  
 inhabitants dwell in canes and denues. For these are theyr  
 houses, and the fleshe of serpentes theyr meate, as wyperth  
 Plinie and Diodorus Siculus. They haue no speache, but  
 rather a geynyng and chattering. There are also people  
 without heades cauled Blemines, hauinge theyr eyes and  
 mouth in theyr breste. Lykewys Scruocophagi and naked Ba-  
 phantes. Satyrs also which haue norhyng of men but on-  
 ly shape. More ouer Diuei great hunters. Memones also;  
 and the region of Smyrnophora which byngeth furth myre.  
 After these is the region of Azania in the whiche many ele-  
 phantes are fownde. A great parte of the other regions of A-  
 fricke that are beyonde the Equinocriall line, are nowe ascrib-  
 bed to the kingdome of Aelinde, whose inhabitants are  
 accustomed to traffike with the nations of Arabie, and theyr  
 kyng is ioyded in frendship with the kyng of Portugale, and  
 payeth tribute to Better John.

people of the  
 east syde  
 2 frica.

Cophiophagi.

people with-  
 out heades.

myre.  
 Azania.

Regnum Me-  
 linde.

Ethiopia In-  
 terior.

whyte ele-  
 phantes.

habassia.

Zethiophagi

Anthiopopha-  
 gi.  
 Montes Lu-  
 na.  
 Bazaria.

The other Ethiopie cauled *Ethiopia Interior* (that is) the inner  
 Ethiopie, is not yet knowne for the greatnesse therof but on-  
 ly by the sea coastes. yet is it described in this maner. Fyrst  
 from the Equinocriall towarde the south, is a greate region  
 of Ethiopians which byngeth furth whyte elephantes, ty-  
 gers, and the beastes cauled Rhinocerontes. Also a region  
 that byngeth furth plentie of Cinamome, lying betwene the  
 branches of Nilus. Also the kingdome of Habech or Habas-  
 sia, a region of Chycken men, lying both on this syde and be-  
 yonde Nilus. Here are also the Ethiopians cauled Zethio-  
 phagi (that is) such as lyue only by fyllhe: and were sumtime  
 subdued by the warres of great Alexander. Furthermore the  
 Ethiopians cauled Bahassii, and Anthiopophagi that are ac-  
 customed to eate mans fleshe, inhabite the regions nere vnto  
 the mountaynes cauled *Montes Luna*, (that is) the mountaynes  
 of the moone. *Bazaria*, is vnder the tropike of Capricorne.  
 After

## The seconde vyage to Guinea. 357

After this, foloweth the fronte of affrike, the cape of Buena Speranza or *Caput Bone Spei*, (that is) the cape of good hope, *Cap Bone Spei* by the which they passe that sayle from Spayne to Calicut. But by what names the capes and goulfes are cauled, foras-  
much as the same are in every globe and carde, it were here  
superfluous to rehearse them.

Sum wyte that Aphrica was so named by the Grecians  
because it is withowt coulede. For the Greeke letter Alpha  
or, A, signifyeth pyguation, voyde, or withowt: and phryce,  
signifieth coulede. For in deede althowgh in the see of  
wynter they haue a cloude and tempestuous season, yet is it  
not coulede, but rather smothering hot with also hot shoures  
of raine and sumwhere suche scorchyng wyndes, that what  
by one meanes and other they seeme at certeyn tymes to liue  
as it were in fornares, and in maner already halfe way in bur-  
gatorie or hel. Gemma Phrysius writeth that in certeyn  
partes of Aphrica, (as in Atlas the greater) the ayer in the  
night season is scene spynge with many straunge fyers and  
flames rysinge in maner as high as the moone: And that in  
the element are sumtime harde as it were the sounde of pipes,  
trumpettes, and drummes. Whiche noyses may perhappes  
be cauled by the vehemente and sundry motions of such fyer  
exhalations in the ayer, as we se the lyke in many experiences  
brought by fyre, ayer, & wynd. The holownesse also & diuers  
reflections & breaking of the cloudes may be greate causes here  
of, hylde the vehement cold of the myddle region of the ayer  
wherby the sayd fyer exhalations ascending therether are sud-  
denly styken backe with greate force. For enen common and  
dayly experience teacheth vs by the whyllinge of a burninge  
torge what noyse fyer maketh in the ayer, & much more where  
it strineth when it is inclosed with ayer as apereth in gounns,  
and as the like is scene in only ayer inclosed, as in organ pipes  
and such other instrumentes that go by wynde. For wynde as  
say the philosophers is none other then ayer vehemently mo-  
ued, as we see in a paver of belowes and suche other.

Sum of othere men of good credit that were in this  
last vyage to Buinea, affirme earnestly that in the nyght sea-  
son they felt a sensible heate to comme from the beames of  
the moone. The which thynge althowghe it be straunge and  
insensible to vs that inhabite coulede regions, yet doothe it  
stande

*Aphrica with  
owt coulede.*

*The winter  
of Africa.*

*Flames of  
fire & noyse  
in the ayer.*

*The myddell  
region of the  
aer is coulede.*

*The strife of  
elementes.*

*wynde.*

*The heate of  
the moone.*

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

The nature  
of the stars.

stande with good reason that it may so be, forasmuche as the nature of the starres and planets (as wyrteth Plinie) consisteth of fyre, and conteyneth in it a spirite of lyfe, whiche can not be without heate.

And that the moone gyueth heate vpon the earth, the prophete Dauid seemeth to confirme in his. *Lxx. Psalme*, where speakyng of such men as are defended from euyls by goddes protection, he sayth thus: *Per diem sol non exuret te, necluna per noctem.* That is to say. In the day the soonne shall not burne the nor the moone by nyght.

Spoutes of  
water fauling  
out of the  
ayer.

They say furthermoze that in certeyne places of the sea, they sawe certeyne streames of water which they caule spoutes faulynge owt of the ayer into the sea: And that sum of these are as bygge as the greate pylers of churches: In so muche that sumtymes they faule into shyppes and put them in greate

Cataracts of  
heauen.

daungion of downynge. Sum phantasie that these shulde bee the cataractes of heauen whiche were all opened at Noes fludde. But I thynke them rather to be suche furions and eruptions as Aristotle in his booke de Mundo, saith to chaſse in the sea. For speakyng of suche straunge thynges as are seene often tymes in the sea, he wyrteth thus: Often tymes also euen in the sea are seene euaporations of fyre, and suche eruptions and breakyng furth of sprynges, that the mouthes of ryuers are opened, whylepooles, and furions are caused of such other vehement motions not only in the myddest of the sea, but also in creekes and streyghtes. At certeyne tymes also, a great quantitie of water is suddely lyfted vp and carryed abowt with the moone. &c. By which woordes of Aristotle it dooth appere that such waters maye bee lyfted vp in one place at one tyme, and suddely faule downe in an other place at an other tyme. And hereunto perhappes perceyvneth it that Rycharde Chaunceler toulde me that he hadde Sebastian Cabot reporte, that (as farre as I remember) eyther about the coastes of Brasile or Rio de Plata, his shyppe or pinnes was suddely lyfted from the sea and cast vpon the land I wotte not howe farre. The which thyng and suche other lyke woonderfull and straunge woorkes of nature whyle I

A straunge  
thyng.

The poure of  
nature.

consyder and caule to remembraunce the narrownes of mans vnderstandynge and knowleage in comparyson of her myghty poure, I can but cease to maruaile and confesse with Plinie that

that nothyng is to her impossible, the leaste parte of whose poure is not yet knownen to men.

Many thynges more oore men sawe and consydered in this vyage worthy to bee noted, wherof I haue thought good to put sum in memory that the reader maye aswell take pleasure in the varietie of thynges as knowleage of the hystorie. Amonge other thynges therfore touchyng the maners and nature of the people, this may seeme straunge that theyr princes and noble men vse to pounse and rase theyr skynnes with prery knottes in diuers formes as it were branched damaske, thynkyng that to be a decent ornament. And albeit they go in maner all naked, yet are many of them and especially their women in maner laden with collars, brasseletes, hoopes, and chaynes eyther of golde, copper, or Iuery. I my selfe haue one of theyr brasseletes of Iuery wayinge twoo pounce and xi. ounces of Troye weyght, whiche make .xxxviii. ounces. This, one of theyr women dyd weare vppon her arme. It is made of one hole piece of the byggest parte of the toothe turned and sumwhat carued, with a hole in the myddest wherein they put theyr handes to weare it on theyr arme. Sum haue of euery arme one and as many on theyr legges, wherewith sum of theym are so galded that althoughe they are in maner made lame therby, yet wyll they by no meanes leaue them of. Sum weare also on theyr legges great shackles of bryght copper which they thynke to bee no lesse cumly. They weare also collars, brasselets, garlandes and gyrdels of certeyne blew stones lyke beades. Lykewyse sum of theyr women weare on theyr bare armes certeyne foressees made of the plates of beaten golde. On theyr fyngers also they weare rynges made of golden wyres with a knotte or wrethe lyke vnto that whiche chylidren make in a ryng of a rusthe. Amonge other thinges of golde that oore men bought of them for exchaunge of theyr wares, were certeyne dogges chaynes and collers.

They are very ware people in theyr baryngynge, and wyl not lose one sparke of golde of any value. They vse weyghtes and measures, and are very circumspecte in occupyinge the same. They that shall haue to do with them must vse them gently: for they wyl not trafike or byngne in any wares if they be euill vsed. At the fyrst viage that oore men had into these parties, it so chaunced that at theyr departure from the fyrste

xxx. ii,

place

They rase  
their skynnes.

Fine iewells.

A brasselet.

Shackelles.

Ringes.

Dogges chaynes  
of golde.

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

**A muske cat.**

place where they dyd trafike, one of them epyther stole a muske catte or tooke her a way by force, not mistrustynge that that Gulde haue hyndered theyr bargenynge in an other place wher they intended to go. But for al the haill they could make with full sayles, the fame of theyr mysusage so preuented the that the people of that place also offended therby, wold bying in no wares: In so muche that they were inforced epyther to restore the catte or pay for her at theyr price befoze they could trafike there.

**Their houses**

Theyr houses are made of foure postes or trees, and coned red with boumes.

**Their feeding**

Theyr common feedynge is of rootes and such spithes as they take, wherof they haue great plentie. There are also such spynge spithes as are seene in the sea of the Weste Indies. Oure men salted of theyr spithes hopynge to prouyde store therof. But they wolde take no salte: And muste therefore be eaten furthwith as sum say. Howe be it, other assume that if they be salted immediatly after they be taken, they wyl last incorrupted. x. or. xii. dayes. But this is more straunge, that

**Fleing fishes**

parte of such fleshe as they caried with them oure of Englande and putrified there, became sweete ageyne at theyr returne to the clime of temperate regions.

**A straunge. thing.**

**Their bread.**

They vse also a straunge makynge of breade in this manner. They grynde betwene two stones with theyr handes as much corne as they thynke maye suffice theyr famelic. And when they haue thus brought it to floure, they put thereto a certeyne quantitie of water and make therof very thin dowgh which they stycke vppon sum post of theyr houses, where it is baked by the heate of the sonne: So that when the master of the house or any of his famely wyll eate thereof, they take it downe and eate it.

**Their wheate.**

They haue very sayze wheate, the ere whereof is thoo handfulls in length and as bygge as a great bulrush, and almost foure ynches abowt where it is byggest. The steme or strawe, semeth to be almost as bygge as the lytle fynger of a mans hande, or lytle lesse. The graynes of this wheate are as bygge as our peason: rounde also, and verie whyte and sumwhat shynynge lyke perles that haue lost theyr colour. Almost all the substance of theym turneth into floure, and maketh lytle blanne or none. I coulde in one ere thoo hundred

## The seconde vyage to Guínea. 359

breth and thre score graynes. The ere is inclosed in thre blades longer then it selfe, and of two inches brode a piece. And by this fructifullnesse the soonne seemeth partly to recompence such griefes and molestations as they otherwyle receaue by the seruent heate therof. It is doubtesse a woorthy contentment to consider the contrary effectes of the soonne: or rather the contrary passions of suche thynges as receaue thinauence of his beames eyther to theyr hurte or benefite.

The soonne.

Theyr drynke is eyther water or the iuice that droppeth from the cut branches of the barren date trees cauled *Palmites*. For eyther they hange greate gourdes at the sayde branches euery euynge and let them so hange all nyght, or els they set them on the ground vnder the trees that the dropes may faule therein. They say that this kynde of drynke is in tast much lyke vnto whey, but sumwhat sweeter and more pleasaunt. They cutte the branches euery euynge because they are scered vp in the day by the heate of the soonne. They haue also great beanes as bygge as chestenuttes, and verpe harde with a shell in the seeede of a hulke.

Their drinke.

Many thynges more myght be sayd of the maners of the people and of the woonders and monstrous thynges that are engendered in Arike. But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus much of such thynges as oure men partly sawe and partly brought with them.

And wheras before speakynge of the frute of graynes, I describ'd the same to haue holes by the syde (as in deede it is as it is brought hether) yet was I afterwarde informed that those holes were made to put synges or twygges throughe the frute thereby to hange them vp to drye at the soonne. They growe not passe a foote and a halfe or twoo foote frome the grownde: and are as red as bludde when they are gathered. The graynes them selues, are cauled of the physicians, *Brazina Paradyfi*.

Graynes.

At theyr comminge home, the keles of theyr shippes were maruelously ouergrowe with cer:cin shels of .ii. ynches lengch and more as thicke as they coude stande, and of such byggenes that a man may put his thom in the mouthes of the. They certeynly affirme that in these there groweth a certeyne slimy substance which at the length lyping owt of the shels & sailing in the sea, becometh those faules which we cal barnacles.

Shelles that cleave to shippes.

Barnacles.

The

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

The lyke shelles haue byn seene in shippes returning from the lande. But these shelles were not past halfe an inch in length. Of the other that came from Guinea, I sawe the Symrofe lying in the docke, and in maner couered with the sayd shelles, which in my iudgemente shulde greatly hynder her saylinge. Theyr shippes were also in many places eaten with the woozmes cauled Bromas or Bissas whereof mention is made in the Decades. These creepe betwene the planks whiche they eate throught in many places.

Bromas.

A secrete.

The death of  
owr men.

Could may be  
better abide  
then heare.

The west In  
dies.

Amonge other thynges that chanced to them in this vyage, this is woorthy to be noted, that wheras they sayled thether in seven weekes, they coulde returne in no lesse space then. xx. weekes. The cause wherof they say to be this: That abowt the coast of Cabo Verde, the wynde is euer at the East by reason wherof they were enforced to sayle farre oute of theyr course into the mayne Ocean to fynde the wynde at the west to bringe them home. There dyed of oure men at this last vyage abowt. xxiiii. wherof many dyed at theyr returne into the clime of the coulde regions, as betwene the Ilandes of Soria and Englande. They brought with them certeyne blacke slaues, wherof sum were taule and stronge men, and coulde well agree with owr meates and drynkes. The coulde and moyst ayer dooth sumwhat offende them. yet doubtesse men that are borne in hotte regions may better abyde coulde, then men that are borne in coulde regions may abyde heate, forasmuch as vehement heate resolucth the radicall moisture of mens bodies, as coulde cōstreyneth and preserueth the same.

This is also to bee considered as a secrete woork of nature, that throughout all Afcyke vnder the Equinoctiall line and neare abowt the same on bothe sydes, the regions are excreme hotte and the people very blacke. Wheras contrarily such regions of the West Indies as are vnder the same line, are very temperate and the people nether blacke nor with curle and short woolle on theyr heades as haue they of Afcyke, but of the coloure of an olyue with longe and blacke heare on theyr heades: the cause of which varietie is declared in dyuers places in the Decades.

It is also woorthy to bee noted that summe of them that were at this vyage toulde me. That is, that they ouertooke the course of the soonne, so that they had it north from them  
at

## The seconde vyage to Guinea. 360

at noone the. xiiii. day of Marche. And to haue sayde thus much of these vyages it may suffice. For (as I haue sayd before) Whereas the parteners at whose charges this booke is printed, wolde longe sence haue me proceeded no further, I had not thought to haue wyrtten any thyng of these vyages but that the liberalitie of master Toy encouraged me to attempte the same. Whiche I speake not to the reproche of other in whome I thynke there lacked no good wyll, but that they thought the booke wolde be to chargeable.

C The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of regions  
by dyuers wayes after the description of  
Gemma Physicus.



Perceaynge what contention is and longe hath byn not only amonge the pylottes that by tra- uaylynge the sea haue observed the starres, but also amonge sum men that are skylfull in mathematicall sciencens, wherof many affirme that the longitude (that is to meane, the course from the East to the Weste) can not be perfectly knowne, I haue thowght good for the better satisfying of such as desire to haue sum knowleage hereof, to interprete such demonstrations as I haue redde of the declarynge of the same in Gemma Physicus, who as touchynge this matter hath added to thynuencions of other, a moze certeyne way of his owne diuise wherby (as he sayth) he can fynde the longitude of regions althoughe he were dyuen owte of the way a thousande myles into places vnto hym vtterlye vnknewen and of vnknewen distance. He wyrteth therfore as foloweth.

When yow haue founde the place of the mone, yow ought to consyder the houre when he occupied that place. Then ether by the Ephimerides or by the tables of Alphonsus yowe ought to knowe in what houre the moone entereth into the same signe of the zodiake in an other region or towne whose longitude is well knowne. Then reducyng the houres to xiiii. the lesse number of houres is to be deducted out of the greater number. Then the remanent of the houres & mynutes is to be brought to degrees in this maner. Multiplie the hours by. xii. and diuide the minutes of the houres by foure: so shall appere the degrees of the Equinoctiall conteyned betwene two

By the mone.

## The maner of fyndynge

meridians. And if after this diuision there remaine any minutes, multiplie them also by .xv. and thereby shalbe knowen the minutes of degrees. Adde this difference of longitude founde to the longitude of the region knowen if the houres of that place bee more in number: or take awaye from the same longitude if they be lesse: So shall youe in fine gather the longitude of the place vnknowen from the Ilandes of Canarie. But the same is more easely and redely found geometrically by the globes by this meanes. Set directly vnder the meridian, the place whose longitude is knowen in the globe. Then directe the poynte or stile that moueth aboue the pole, to the houre in the whiche the moone occupieth the place assigned in that region. Then turne the globe vntill the stile that sheweth the houre, be comen to the houre in the which the pole sheweth the vnknowen place of the moone. And so shall the degrees of the Equinoctiall distance or diuided frome the mouable meridian, declare the longitude of the region which youe seeke. Nevertheless, the more certaine way wherby the differences of longitudes may bee founde, is by sum one thyng that in one moment appeareth in all regions, as by the eclipses of the moone. For the diuers houres beinge knowen in the whiche the sayd eclipses chaunce in diuers regions, the longitudes maye thus as well be knowen by geometric and arithmetike, as it is founde by the rule here before. But forasmuch as this doth neyther appere at all tymes nor to all men, and the other way is somewhat difficult, neyther at all tymes redy by reason of the coniunctions of the moone and furthermore also sumtymes vncertaine and varying sum what from the truth for the diuers aspectes and latitudes of the moone, it so chaunceth hereby that wee haue eyther no longitudes or the same very vncertaine of many regions, and especially of those which the Spanyardes haue of late discovered. For no certentie doubtlesse can be knowen by such commensurations as are made in the wanderynge turnynges and wyndynges of such byages, as Ptolome affirmeth in the first booke of his Cosmographie. I wyll therefore adde hereunto sum thyng of myne owne inuention wherby by an easy way and at all tymes the longitudes of regions may bee founde in all byages and navigations,

The Ilandes  
of Canarie.

howe to fynd  
the longitude  
by the globe

The Eclipses  
of the moone.

Answere

# The longitudes of regions. 361.

**C**A newe maner of fyndynge the Longitudes of regions.



Let see that in these owere dayes certeyne lytle clockes are verpe artificially made the whiche lytle clockes for theyr smaule quantitie are not comberous to be carped abowt in all byages. These often tymes moue continually for the space. of. xxiiii houres: and may with helpe continewe theyr mouynge in maner perpetually. By the helpe therfore of these the longitude may bee founde after this maner. Befeore wee enter into any byage, wee muste fynde foresce that the sayde clocke exactly obserue the houres of the place from whense we departe: And ageyne that in the way it neuer cease. Accomplyshynge therfore. x. or. xx. myles of the byage, if wee desyre to knowe howe much in longitude we are dystant frome the place of owere departure, we must tary vntyll the poynt of stile of the clocke do exactly come to the poynt of sum houre: and at the same moment by ower Astrolabe or globe, By the Astro-  
labe and  
globe. wright mee to seeke the houre of the place where we bee: The which pf it agree in minute with the houres which the Horosco-  
pium or ascendent dooth shewe, then is it certeyne that we are yet vnder the same Meridian or the same Longitude: and that owere course hath byn to-  
warde the south or north. But if it dys-  
fer one hour or any mynute, the are the same to bee reduced to degrees or minutes of degrees as we haue taught in the chapiture here befoze.

And so shall the longitude bee founde. And by this arte can I fynde the longitude of regions althowgh I were a thousand myles ower of my attempted course & in an vnknewen distance, but the latitude must fynde bee perfectly knowne.  
F I R S T

Horoscopus  
or the Ascen-  
dent.

The latitude.



**C**A byrse reherſal of the contentes  
of the bookes of the fyrſt Decade, and  
ſo ſolowynge of all the other  
Decades. Folio. i.

**I**n the fyrſt booke is declared howe Chryſtopho-  
rus Colonuſ otherwoyle cauled Columbus, per-  
ſuaded fernando and Elizabeth, prynces of  
ſpayne, to ſoozther his attempte in ſearching  
newe and vnknowne landes in the Weſt Ocea-  
n. Alſo of the. vii. Iſlandes of Canarie, by  
whom they were founde and conquered.

Howe Colonuſ founde the Iſlandes of Hiſpaniola, and  
Cuba: And of the fierce people cauled Canibales or Caribes,  
which are accuſtomed to eate mans fleſhe.

Of the rootes cauled Ages, Iucca, and the grayne Maiz-  
gum, wherof the people of the Iſlandes make theyr breade.

Of the golde found in the ſandes of ryuers, and of the ſer-  
pentes which are without hurte. Alſo of turtle doves, duckes  
and poppingiapes.

Of Maſtir, and Aloe, with dyuers frutes and trees vn-  
knownen to vs: and of the frutefulnes of the Iſland of Hiſpa-  
niola which the Spanyardes caule Spagnuola.

Of the ſeconde vyage of Colonuſ into theſe regions, and  
howe he was furnyſhed with. xviij. ſhyppes and a thou-  
ſande and two hundred ſouldyers, with all kynde of artiſt-  
crpe, artificers, and grayne to ſowe. And of the tree frome  
the which water dropperh continually into a trenche made by  
mans hande.

**T**he contentes of the ſeconde booke. Fol. 4.

**C**Howe Colonuſ departynge from the Iſlandes of Canarie,  
ſayled. viiiij. hundred and. xx. leagues in. xxi. dayes, and came  
to Dominica an Iſlande of the Canibales: And of the fragrant  
ſauour of ſpices which proceded from the Iſlandes.

Of the Iſlandes of Balanta or Balana and Guadalupea,  
and of the trees which beare that kynde of cotton whiche the  
Italians caule Bombaſine, and the Spanyardes Algadon.

Of dyuers kyndes of poppingiapes: And of the Iſland of

p p p p. ii

Maſti:

## The contentes of the decades.

Matinino or Madanino, being inhabited only with women:  
Also of dyuers other frutefull Ilandes: And of a condictie  
which the Spaniards had with the Canibales.

Of certeyne Ilandes in the which are scene the mynes of  
metals and precious stones: and of the frutefull and peopu-  
lous Ilande cauled Burichena or Boriquen. or *Insula S. Iohannis*

Howe all the Admirals men whiche at his fyrst byage he  
lefte in Hispaniola, were slayne in his absence by the rebelliz-  
on of Buaccanarillus, kynge of the Region of Xamana: and  
of the free kynde of lyfe which they leade that haue not the  
vse of money.

Of the. vii. maydens which swamme. iiii. myles in the sea:  
And of the maner of gatheryng of gold in the sands of riuers

### C The Contentes of the thyrde booke. Fol. 10.

A particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola, whi-  
che Colonus thynketh to be Ophir, from whence kynge Sa-  
lomon had his great ryches of golde.

Of the maruelous frutefulnes of Hispaniola, and of the  
suger canes growynge there.

Of the golden regions of Cipanga or Cibana, and of the  
ryuers in whose sandes is founde great plentie of golde.

Of certeyne graines of gold of excedyng great quantitie.

Of wylde vines of pleasaunt taste, and of grasse which in  
foure dayes groweth as hygh as wheate.

Of the Ilande of Iohanna or Cuba, beinge the ende of  
the East and the West: And of the frutefull and peopulous I-  
lande of Iamaica.

Howe the Admirall thought that he had sayled abowte  
the lowest hemispherie or halfe circle of the earth, and of a se-  
crete of Astronomie touchyng the same matter.

Howe the Admirall gaue names to. vii. hundred Ilan-  
des, and passed by three thousande vnnamed.

Of certeyne serpentes lyke vnto Crocodiles of. viii. foote  
longe, whose fleshe is delicate to be eaten: and of certeyne  
trees which beare gourdes.

Of the ryuer whose water is very hotte: and of the hun-  
tryng fyre which taketh other fyres.

Of great abundaunce of Tortoyles as bygge as targets, and  
of a frutefull mountayne well inhabited.

Of

## The contentes of the decades,

Of dogges of deformed shape and dum: And of whyte and thicke water.

Of wooddes of date trees and ppnepaple trees, and of certeyne people appareled like white friers.

Of certeyne trees whiche beare spices, and of cranes of excreadyng hignes.

Of focke doues of more pleasaunte taste then partriches.

An oration of a barbarous gouernoure as touchinge the immortallitie of the soule: Also of the rewarde of vertue and punishmente of vice.

A similitude of the golden worlde, and of prouision with ohte care.

Howe the admirall fell sicke by reason of to much watchyng: And of a sedition which rose among the Spaniardes in the Ilande of Hispaniola.

### C The Contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 18.

Howe the Kinges of the Ilande of Hispaniola, were by the Spaniardes mysbehaoure prouoked to Rebellion: And howe the admirall sent for them.

Howe kinge Cannaboa the Lord of the house of golde, that is, of the mountaynes of Cibaua, conspired the Admirals death, and how he with his familie were take prisoners.

Of a greate famine that chaunced in the Iland of Hispaniola: and howe the Admirall builded certeyne fortresses.

Of a piece of rude golde waighinge. xx. vnces: and of the myne of the riche metall cauled Electrum.

Of the mountayne in the whyche is founde greate plenty of Amber and ozpemente: And of the wooddes of brasile trees.

Howe thynhabitauntes are put to theyre tribute: And howe the nature of the Region disposethe the maners of the people.

Howe the brother of kinge Cannaboa came ageynste the Admirall with an army of fine thousand naked men: and how he was taken and his army put to flyght.

Of the fructfull vale Magona, in the sandes of whose ryuers is founde great plentie of golde: and of certeyne whirles wyndes and tempestes.

Howe the Admirall sente for the his brother Bartholomeus

## The contentes of the decades.

Iomeus Colonus with an army of mē to search the gold mines  
& of the fosses which he found to haue bin digged in old tyme

### C The Contentes of the .b. booke. Fol. 22.

Howe the Lieutenannt builded a fortreffe in the golde  
mynes: And prepared instrumentes for the pourginge and fy-  
ninge of the golde.

Howe certeyne shippes laden with byrtayles, came frome  
Spayne: And howe the Lieutenannt sent the kynges which  
rebelled, with thre hundred captiues into Spayne.

Howe the Liefetenaunte remoued his habyracion: And  
buylded a fortreffe which he cauled saynt Dominickes towre  
Also howe he passed ouer the ryuer Raiba, and entered into  
the wooddes of bzalyle trees.

Howe the great kyng Beuchius Anacauchoa, frendely  
enterreyned the Lieutenannt, and brought hym to his pal-  
layce, where the kynges wyues and concubines receaued him  
honorably with pompes and triumphes.

Of the fortreffes which were erected in Hispaniola: And  
howe the Lieutenannt exacted tribute of the kynges whiche  
rebelled ageyne.

Howe the Lieutenannt sette hypon the kynges bythaces  
in the nyght season, and tooke .xiii. of them prysoners.

Howe kyng Guacionexius, capitayne of the conspiracte  
was pardoned, & howe he perswaded the people to obedience.

Howe kyng Beuchius Anacauchoa, sente messingers to  
the Lieutenannt to repayre to his pallayce where he founde  
.xxii. kynges redy with theyr tributes: And howe the queene  
Anacaona entyled hym to eate of the serpentis fleshe.

Howe the serpentis fleshe is prepared to be eaten: And  
how delicate meate theyr egges are yf they be sodden.

Howe queene Anacaona, syster to kyng Beuchius Ana-  
cauchoa, enterreyned the Liefetenaunt, and gaue hym muche  
housholde stuffe and many vessels of Bebene woodde artific-  
ally wrought and carued.

Howe kyng Anacauchoa and the queene his syster went  
aboarde the Liefetenaunt his shyppe, and howe greatly they  
were amased to beholde the furniture therof.

Howe Boldanus Xeminus a Spaniarde, rebelled in the  
Lieuten-  
nant

## The contentes of the decades,

Lieutenantes absence : by whose mysdemeanour also kinge  
Buarionerius was prouoked to a newe conspiracie, & with  
hym Maiobanerius the kynge of the mountaynes.

¶ The contentes of the syxte boke. Foli, 28.

¶ The thy:de vyage of Colonus, and howe he diuerted from  
his accustomed ease by the Ilandes of Canarie to the Ilande  
of Madera for feare of certayne frenche pirates and rousers.

Of the. xiii. Ilandes which in olde tyme were cauled Hef  
perides, and are nowe cauled the Ilandes of Caput Viride or  
Cabouerde. Also of the Toxtopfes of the Ilande of Bonauis  
sa, wherewith the leaper is healed.

Howe the Admirall founde contagious ayre and extreme  
heate nere the Equinoctial where the north pole was eleuate  
onely syue degrees : And how saylyng from thence westward,  
he founde the starres placed in other order, and the sea ry:  
pyng as it were the backe of a mountayne.

Howe the Admirall saylynge westwarde, and neuer pas:  
syng owt of the clyme or paraleles of Ethiope, founde a tem  
perate Region and people of goodly corporature : And what  
difference is betwene the natures of Regions beyng vnder one  
paralele and one eleuation of the pole.

Of the Ilandes of Puta and Margarita : and of the swift  
course or faule of the Ocean from the East to the weste.

Of the goulkes cauled Os Draconis : And of the conflict  
betwene the freshe water and the salte.

Of a sea of freshe water : And a mountayne inhabited one:  
ly with monkeys and marmalettes.

Of the sayre, riche, and large region of Paria : And howe  
frendly chynhabitantes entreated the Admirall and his men,  
Also of pleasaunte wyne made of dyuerse frutes : And of  
greate abundaunce of perles and golde.

Of the regions of Cumana, Manacapana, and Curiana,  
beyng regions of the large prouynce of Paria : And of the  
sea of herbes or weedes.

A certeyn secrete as touchyng the pole starre and the eleua:  
tion of the same : Also of the roundnesse of the earth.

Of the mountaynes of Paria in the toppes wherof Coloz  
mus earnestly affirmeth the earthly Paradise to be situate : And  
whether

## The contentes of the decades.

Whether *Baria* be part of the firme land or continent of *India*.

The contentes of the. vii. booke. fol. 33.

Howe *Roldanus* *Reminus* with his confederates, accused the Admirall to the kynge: And howe he pourged hym selfe and accused them

Howe kynge *Guarionerius* rebelled ageyne: And with him kynge *Maiohanerius*: Also howe they with other kinges came ageynst the Lieutenaunte with an armie of. viii. thousande naked and paynted *Tiguanians*. Also twoo rare examples of frendshyppe and faythfulnes in barbarous princes.

Howe *Colanus* the Admirall and the Lieutenaunte hys brother, were sent bounde into *Spayne*: And newe officers appoynted in theyr places.

The contentes of the. viii. booke. fol. 37.

The Nauigation of *Petrus Alphonsus* frome *Spayne* to *Baria*, where in the region of *Curiana*, he had in shorte space .xv. vntes of pearles & greate plenty of bytrailes for haukes belletes, pyennes, lokinge glasses, and suche other tryfelles,

Of certeyn coniectures wherby *Baria* is thought to bee parte of the firme lande: And of the golden region of *Cauchietta*, where in the moneth of Nouember the ayre is temperate and not coulde.

Howe *Alphonsus* had a conflicte with the *Canibals*: and howe they are accustomed to invade other countreys.

Of greate abundaunce of salte in the region of *Baria*: & howe the dead bodyes of theyr princes are dreyed, reuerued, and relygiouly honoured.

Howe *Alphonsus* at his returne to *Spayne* frome *Curiana*, brought with hym threescore and .xvi. pounce weight of pearles which he bought for othe tryfells amountinge only to the value of fve shyllyngs.

The contentes of the. ix. booke. fol. 40.

The Nauigation of *Vincencius* *Pinzonus* and *Aries* *Pinzonus*, and howe they sayled beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, loste

## The contentes of the decades.

losse the syght of the northe starre, and founde the starres in  
other order.

Howe Vincentius passynge the equinoctiall toward the  
fourthe pole, founde fierce and warlike people of great stature:  
And of the sea of frethe water.

Howe Vincentius directting his course toward the north  
weste from the equinoctiall, recovered the syght of the northe  
pole, and by the regions of Maratamball, Camomorus, and  
Beritoza, came to the fayre and ryche prouince of Paria, and  
to the regions of Os Diaconis, Cumana, Manacapana, Cu-  
riana.

A coniecture that Paria (wherby is ment that mayne land  
now cauled America) shulde be parte of the fyne lande or con-  
tinent of India, beyonde the ryuer of Canges and no islande:  
And of the exceedynge great riuier Maragnonus replenished  
with Ilandes.

Of Boziosomea and Spiriosomea, the moutthes of the fa-  
mous ryuer of Danubius, cauled in olde tyme Jster: And of  
the commodities of the regions and Ilandes about Paria.  
Also of the woodes of brasile trees.

Of many fruitfull Ilandes wasted and left desolate by re-  
son of the Caniballes crueltie: And of the trees of Cassia Fi-  
cula. Also of other trees of exceedynge bygnesse.

The description of a certayne monstrous beaste, And howe  
Vincentius losse two of his shippes by tempeste.

Howe Vincentius at his returne to Spayne, brought with  
hym cinamome, gynger, and certayne precious stones cauled  
Topases. And of the navigations of certayne other inhabitan-  
tes of the towne of Palos.

Of the precious medicine cauled Anime Album. And of the  
diuerse superstitions of the inhabitants of Hispaniola.  
Also of their Idolatry, and howe they honour the ymages of  
deuyles, whiche they caule Zemes.

**T**he Contentes of the .x. booke. fol. 48.

Of great glentic of golde, perles, and frankensence found  
in the regions of Paria. And of innumerable beastes in shape  
differynge from owtres.

Howe the Spaniardes profered them selues to conquere  
the newe founde landes, beyng in largenesse thysse as great

## The contentes of the decades.

As Europe besyde the southe landes partepynge to the Portugales. And howe the nature of the place altereth the formes and qualities of thynges.

Of the Ilande of Cuba, and of the golde mynes of the Iland of Sancti Iohannis, otherwise cauled Burichena, or Buchena. Also of the ryche golde mynes of Hispaniola, and of the order of workynge in the same.

Of the two chiefe golde mynes of Hispaniola. And of a pece of golde weyinge thye thousande thye hundred and scenne pounde weyght.

Howe the golde is fynded and distributed: And howe that only in the meltynge shoppes of the two golden mynes of Hispaniola, is molten yearely aboue thre hundredeth thousande pounde weyght of golde.

Howe the enterpryses of the Spaniards are not inferiour to thacres of Saturnus or Hercules: And howe the Admirall discovered the lande ouerageynst the west corner of Cuba and the Ilande of Guanania.

## The Contentes of the booke of the seconde Decade.

The contentes of the fyrst booke, fol. 51.

Howe after the death of Colonus the Admirall, the kynge gaue free lycence to all suche as wolde attempte any vyages: And of the navigatiōs of Diego Nicuesa, & Alphonsus Fogeda.

Of the Ilande Codigo and the region of Caramasri: And of certeyne sweete apples whiche turne into woozmes when they are eaten, whose trees are also contagious.

Howe Alphonsus Fogeda, the Lieutenannt of Uraba, encounterynge with the barbarians had the overthrowe. And howe in this conflicte, fyfte of his men were slayne with Iohannes de la Costa the captayne.

Howe Fogeda, and Nicuesa the Lieutenanntes of Beragua, reuenged the death of thei coompanions: And howe Fogeda came to the Ilande Fortis and the region of Caribana where he was repulged from the golde mynes by the fierce wylde of the barbarians wyng arrowes infected with poyson.

Howe

## The contentes of the decades.

Howe Fogeda was wounded in the thigh with a venemous arrowe, and his men almost consumed with famine.

Howe a hyganine was drowned with the stroke of a cyclone: And of the nauigation of Ancilus from Hispaniola to Oraba.

Of the lamentable hyppewracke of Ancilus: And of the dangers and wynde bores which he founde.

Of the frutes or apples of the trees cauled Ceders of Libane which beare owlde frutes and newe all the yeare.

Howe cruelly thre of the Canibales with theyr bowes and innemied arrowes assailed Ancilus with a hundredth of his men: In which conflict they wounded and slew many. Also of theyr wylfulness of foote.

Of the great ryuer of Dariena: And howe Ancilus encountered with fyue hundredth of the inhabitants of the gouerne of Oraba and put them to flight. Also howe he founde greates plentie of wrought golde and householde stuffe in a thicket of reedes.

The contentes of the seconde booke. Fol. 58.

Howe Nicuesa losse his felowes in the darke nyght and went past the mouth of the ryuer Beragua which he sought: And howe the capitaynes of the other hyppes consulted howe to fynde hym. Also of the ryuer Lagartos in the which greates Ipartes are founde much lyke vnto the Crocodiles of Nilus.

Howe the capitaynes forooke theyr hyppes that the foulers myght bee without hope of departite: And of the miserable chaunce of Petrus de Umbria and his felowes.

By what chaunce Nicuesa was founde, and of the calamities which he and his company suffered. Also of the region of Gracia Dei or Cerabaro, and of the ryuer of Sancti Marthae.

Howe Nicuesa caused them to remoue theyr habitation from Beragua to poynte Garmoz where he bylded a forreffe. And howe his men by warre and famyn were consumed from seven hundredth and odde, to scarcely one hundredth.

Howe one Maschys Runnez vsurped the authoritie of the Lieutenant hyppie of Oraba in chabience of Fogeda: And of the nauigation of Rodericus Colmenaris from Hispaniola to Oraba.

Of the ryuer Salta descendinge from the toppe of a high

## The contentes of the deca decs.

mountayne couered with snowe: And howe Rodericus Colmenaris in a conflict ageynst the barbarians, losse. xliiij. of his men by reason of theyr inuenemed arrowes.

Of the force of the popson toherewith the barbarians infecte theyr arrowes, and a remedie for the same. Also howe Colmenaris by gunneshot and kyndelynge fyers off the hyghe toppes of the rockes, came to the Spanyardes lyster desolate in Daricna.

**C** The contentes of the thyrde booke. Fol. 61.

Howe Ricuela was sought forth to acquiere the contentions of Araba: And howe he was ageyne reiected.

Howe Walschus Rannez invaded, tooke prysoners, and spoiled the kynges bothe kyngdomes about the region of Araba: And howe Ancilus Lieutenant for Fageda was cast in pryson, and afterwarde set at libertie.

Howe Ancilus tooke his vyage from Araba to Spayne to accuse Walschus: who also at the same tyme sent Waldiua aswell to speake in his defence, as also to certifie the kyng of theyr doynge.

Howe kyng Carata conspired with the Spanyardes ageynst kyng Doncha whom they put to flyght and spoiled his byllage.

Howe kyng Comogus frendely entercepted the Spanyardes and brought them to his pallasce where he shewed them the dyed Carcales of his auncestours reserved and sumptuously apparellled: And howe the kynges elder sonne gaue Walschus and Colmenaris foure thousand vnces of brought gold and fiftie haues. Also a myetic oration which he made to the Spanyardes, wherein he certified them of a countrey exceeding ryche in golde, &c.

**C** The contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 66.

Of horribble thunder and lyghtnyng in the mooneth of November, and of grayne which waxeth ripe thyrle a yeare. Also how digestion is strengthened by owtwarde coule.

Howe Waldiua is sent ageyne into Hispaniola to moue the gouernour and counsaile there to sende into Spayne to the

## The contentes of the decades,

the kynge for a supplie of a thousand souldyers to make way to the golden mountaynes: And howe he carped with hym the kynges portion, (that is) the fyfte parte of golde and othe thynges.

Howe Ualchus invaded the kynges inhabytyng the regions about the goulfe of Araba, and howe he put kynge Daibaiba to fyght, in whose byllage he founde wrought golde amountynge to the weyght of seven thousande Castellans.

Of battes as bygge as turtle dooues which summye byt men in the nyght in theyr sleepe, whose bytyng is also benemous: but is healed with water of the sea or by cauterization as are also the woundes of venemous arrowes.

Of the Ilande of Cannafistula, and a towne of fyue hundred houses, whose kynge Abenamachei was taken and his arme cutte of in the fyght.

Of trees of exceedynge bygnesse and heyght: And howe kynge Abibeiba had his pallaice in the toppe of a tree frome the which he was enforced to descende and entreate of peace.

### The contentes of the fyfth booke. Fol. 69.

Howe kynge Abraiba slewe a capitayne of the Spanyards and caused the kynges to rebell. Also howe they were put to fyght and many of theyr men slayne.

Of fyue kynges which attempted a newe conspiracie with a hundred great Canoas and fyue thousand men: And howe theyr intent was bewrayed by a woman, and prevented. Also howe Rodericus Colmenaris sacked the byllage of Tichiri and honge the kynge therof with foure of his chiefe rulers, and commaunded them to be shotte through with arrowes.

### The contentes of the syxte booke. Fol. 72.

Howe Ualchus with his confetherates, sente Johannes Quicedus and Colmenaris from Dariena to Hispaniola and from thêse to Spayne to the kynge for a thousand men to passe ouer the mountaynes to the golden regions: And what miseries they susteyned in that vyage. Also of the death of Ualalas, Zamudius, and Fogeda.

Of the prosperous vyage of Ancilus: And howe godde wrought

## The contentes of the decades.

Brought miracles by the simple faith of a mariner. Also how god respecteth the innocencie of sayth for his sake: And how one religion turned into another, holdeth still many thinges of the fyrste.

Howe many of the barbarians were baptised by reason of the miracles: And howe they rewarded the prestes by towhome they were baptised.

Howe Ancilus shortly after his acceptaill in Spayne, resorted to the court and made his complayne to the kinge of this solenne of Malchus, wherupon the kyng gave sentence against hym: And howe after the barbarous nations are to embrace the Christian faith.

**C** The contentes of the seventh booke. Fol. 79.

Howe Dulcedus and Colmenaris the procuratours of Dariena, were honorably enterepned at the court and brought to the kynges presence: And howe theyr complexion was chaunged by alteration of the ayre.

Howe Petrus Arias a noble man, was elected governour and Lieutenannt of Dariena: And howe other of the court laboured for the same office. Also howe the byshop of Burgos spake to the kyng in his behalfe.

Howe Petrus Arias had a thousande and two hundred thesouldyers appoynted hym at the kynges charges: And of the kynges custome house in the cite of Seville, caused the house of the contractes of India.

Howe a great number of Spanyardes profered the selues to go at theyr owne charges: And of a restraint made that no straunger myght passe without the kynges licence. Also howe the autour reponeth Aloisius Cadamustus a wytyer of the Portugales wyages.

Howe Petrus Arias shortly after his departure from Seville, lost two of his shippes and was dyscuen backe agayne by tempest: And howe beinge newly furnyshed, hee passed the Ocean with more prosperous wyndes.

The thyrde wyage of Vincentius Pinzonus, and howe he came to the regions of India where encounterynge with thur habitauntes he put them fyrst to flyght: but after faultynge to entreatie of peace, they gave hym greate plentie of golde and ab undaunce

## The contentes of the decades,

Abundance of masculine frankensence with dyuers other  
pynctly presentes.

Of the greate multitude of poppingiayes which are in the  
region of Paria, and howe thynhabitours are apparelled.  
Also of the fyne kynges that made a league of frendeshyppe  
with Vincentius.

Howe Vincentius sayled Eastwarde by the tracte of the  
regions of Paria untill he came to the poynte of that longe  
lande which the autour supposeth to be the greate Ilande Ar:  
lantike wherof the owlde wyrters make mention.

Cap. 5. Ar  
gustine

### The contentes of the. viii. booke. Fol. 80.

A contention betwene the Castellans and Portugales as  
concernynge the diuision of the newe founde landes: And  
howe the controuerisie was synctified by the byshop of Rome.

Howe Don Chrysopher the gouernoure of the Ilande of  
Sancti Iohannis, was slayne by the Canibales and the bys-  
hop put to flyght. Also of the other byshops of the Ilandes.

Howe the Canibales of the Iland of Sancta Cruz, slew  
and ate a kyng with certeyne of his men beinge frendes to  
the Chrysians and made faggottes of theyr bones: And how  
querelynge with othere men, they put them to silence.

### The contentes of the. ix. booke. Fol. 81.

Of the marvelous frutesfullnes of the regions of Beragua,  
Uraba, and Dariena: And of the dyuers kyndes of trees and  
frutes. Also of the pleasaunt caste of swynes as they beinge  
fedde with the frutes of Myrobalanie trees.

Of Lions and Tygers and other wyld beastes: And of a  
beaste of straunge forme.

Of the ryuers of the goulfe of Uraba, as the ryuer of Da-  
riena and Rio Brandis: And howe the great serpentes call-  
ed Crocodiles, are founde in other ryuers bysye Nilus in  
Egypte. Also howe thantour of this booke was sent Amba-  
sador to the Soldane of Alcap in Egypte.

Of the Portugales nauigations, and of the ryuer Seneg-  
ga founde by them to bee a chanel of Nilus. Also of the mul-  
titude of byrdes & foules beinge in the marishes of Dariena.

I ppe

## The contentes of the decades.

A phylosophicall discourse of the originall and generation of springes and ryuers: And of the breadth of the lande drypyng the north and south Ocean.

Of the great ryuer Maragnonus and of the earthly Paradise: And howe springes are engendered by conuersion of ayer into water.

Of the often faule of rayne vnder the Equinoctiall line, and of the pores of the sea opened by the South wyndes.

Of the great ryuers of Tanais, Ganges, Danubius, and Eridanus, famous to the olde wyters: And howe certein ryuers runnyng throughe the caues of the earth, breake forth into springes afarre of.

### The contentes of the 1. booke. Fol. 86.

Howe the newe founde landes discovered by the Spanyardes in the West Ocean, are eyght tymes bigger then Italia besyde that which the Portugales possesse: And of the cardes of the sea drawen by Colonus and Americus Vesputius.

The order of mesurynge the lande: And howe a league cometh foure myles by sea and but thre by lande.

The Nauigation of Iohannes Dias, and of the sundry eleuations of the pole starre.

Of the Ilande of Boiua or Agnaneo, and of the springe whose water being dronke, causeth old men to looke yonge.

Howe Ricuela and his souldiers were so oppressed with famine, that they were dyuen to eate mangie dogges, coades, and deade men: And howe a brothe made of a dogges skynne, was soule for many pieces of golde.

### The contentes of the booke of the thyrd Decade.

#### The contentes of the first booke. fol. 88.

Of the desperate aduencure and good fortune of Walschus: And how with a hundred and fourescore and ten men, he brought that to passe for the which Petrus Arias was sente with a thousande and two hundred frethe souldyers.

Howe

## The contentes of the decades,

Howe iren serueth for moze necessary bles then gold, and howe superfluities hynder libertie.

Howe Waschus in one conflicte, slewe syxe hundred bar barians with theyr kynges: And howe he founde the house of kyng Quarequa infected with unnatural lecherie, commaundynge that the kyng and fortye suche as he kepte for that purpose, shoulde be gyuen for a pray to his dogges whiche he bled to serue in the warres ageynst these naked people.

Of a region of blacke Moores: And howe Waschus came to the toppes of the mountaynes, where geuynge thanks to god, he behelde the newe South Ocean neuer before sene nor knowne to men of owre worlde.

Howe Waschus put kyng Chitapes to flyght, and after made a league of frendshyppe with hym: And howe the king gaue hym. iiii. hundred poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Howe kyng Coquera was putte to flyght, who also beinge receaued to frendshyppe, gaue Waschus syxe hundred and fiftie poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Of the goulfe cauled Sinus. S. Michaelis beinge full of inhabited Ilandes: And of the manly corage and godly zeale of Waschus. Also of the rylsinge and faulynge of the South sea.

Howe kyng Tumaccus beinge dyuen to flyght and after warde reconciled, gaue Waschus. vi. hundred and. xiiii. peccos of golde, and two hundred and fortye of the greatest and fayrest pearles: And howe the kyng caused his men to fysh for pearles.

Of the Ilande cauled Margaritea Dines: And of the abundance of fayre and great pearles founde therein.

Of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line: And of the Portugals navigations to the Antipodes inhabytyng the fyue and fiftie degree of the South pole. Also a declaration of Antipodes, and of the starres about the South pole.

### The contentes of the seconde booke, Fol. 95.

Of the maner of fysshynge for pearles and of the three kyndes therof. Also dyuers other questions concerning perles.

Of the multitude of the shell fyshes wherein perles are ingendered and founde in maner in all places in the South sea: And of abundaunce of golde founde almoste in every house.

AAAA. i.

Also

## The contentes of the decades.

Also howe the treasure of nature is in those coastes : And of the golde mynes of Dariena.

Howe kynge Teaocha gaue Maschus. xx. poundes weighe of wrought golde and two hundred perles. Also of desertes full of wyld beasts, and howe Maschus was troubled with greate heate in the moneth of November.

Howe a dogge Tyger was taken, and his whelpes tyed in cheynes and torne in pieces : Also howe Maschus gaue. iiii. kynges to his dogges to be deuoured.

Of the vse of dogges in theyr warres, and of the fierceneffe of the Canibales.

Howe kynge Bononiana fauoured the Chryistians and gaue Maschus. xx. pounce weyght of wrought golde. Also his oration to Maschus.

A similitude prouynge greate plentie of golde in the regions of the south sea, and of the tranayles which owlde souldyers are able to susteyne.

## The contentes of the thyrde booke. fol. 99

Howe kynge Buchibuea submytted hym selfe to Maschus, and sent hym certeyne vesselles of golde. Also howe kynge Chiozilus sente hym. xxx. dythes of pure golde.

Howe iren serueth for more necessary vses then gold. Also an exemple of the lyfe of ovr fyrric parentes.

Howe kynge Bocchorosa submytted hym selfe, and gaue Maschus. xv. pounce weyght of wrought golde. Also howe Tumanama the great kynge of the golden regions towarde the south sea, is taken prisoner. Lykewyse howe he gaue Maschus. xxx. pounce weyght of pure and wrought golde, and his noble men. lx. poundes weyght of golde.

Of the cause of vehement wyndes nere vnto the Equinoctiall line, and of the coloure of the earth of the golden mines.

Of the large and frutefull playne of Zauana, and of the ryuer Comogrus. Also howe kynge Comogrus baptised by the name of Charles, gaue Maschus. xx. pounce weyght of wrought golde.

Of the good fortune of Maschus, and howe he was turned frō Goliath to Gileus, and frome Anteus to Hercules : And with what facilitie the Spangardes shall hereafter ob-

teyne

## The contentes of the decades,

teyne greate plentie of golde and pearles.

Of the Spanyardes conquestes, and fiercenesse of the Canibales. Also an exhortacion to Chryſtian princes to ſette forthwarde Chryſtes religion.

**C** The contentes of theſe ourr booke. Fol. 104.

**C** The fourth vyage of Colonuſ the Admirall frome Spayne to Hiſpaniola, and to the other Iſlandes and coaſtes of the firme lande: Also of the floreyſhyng Iſlande Guanaſſa.

Of ſeuē kyndes of date trees, wylde vynes, and Myrrobalanes: Also of byrdes and foules.

Of people of goodly ſtature which vſe to paynt theyr bodies: And of the ſworſte courſe of the ſea from the eaſt to the weſt. Also of freſhe water in the ſea.

Of the large regions of Paria, Os Draconis, and Quiriquetana: And of greate Torroyles and reedes. Also of the foure fretefull Iſlandes cauled Quatuor Tempora, and. xii. Iſlandes cauled Limonares.

Of ſweete ſauours and holſome ayer: And of the region Quicuri, and the haueu Cariai or Myrobalanus: Also of certeyne cuple people.

Of trees groynge in the ſea after a ſtraunge ſorte, and of a ſtraunge kynde of Monkeys which innade men and feight with wylde bozes.

Of the greate goulfe of Cerabaro replenished with many fructefull Iſlandes, and of the people which weare cheynes of golde made of ouches wrought to the ſimilitude of byuers wylde beaſtes and foules.

Of fyue byllages whoſe inhabitauntes gyue them ſelues onely to gatherynge of golde, and are paynted, vſynge to weare garlandes of Lyons and Tygers clawes. Also of ſeuē ryuers in all the which is founde greate plentie of golde: And where the plentie of golde ceaſeth.

Of certeyne people which paynt theyr bodies, and couer theyr priue members with ſhelles, haupnge alſo plates of golde hangynge at theyr noſethpylles.

Of certeyne woodmies which beynge engendered in the ſeas were abowt the Equinoctiall, eate holes in ſhyppes: And how the Admirals ſhyppes were deſtroide by them.

AAAA, ii,

Home

## The contentes of the decades.

Howe the kynge of Beragua entercepted the Lieutenant and of the great plentie of gold in the ryuer of Duraba and in al the regions there about: Also in rootes of trees and stones and in maner in all the ryuers.

Howe the Lieutenante and his company wolde haue erected a colonie helpe the ryuer of Beragua, and was repulsed by thynhabitauntes.

Howe the Admirall fel into the handes of the barbarians of the Ilande of Jamaica where he lyued miserably the space of tenne moonethes: And by what chaunce he was saued and came to the Ilande of Hispaniola.

Of holtsome regions, temperate ayer, and continual spring al the hole yeare: Also of certeyne people which honour golde religiously durynge theyr golden harvest.

Of the mountaynes of Beragua beinge fiftie myles in heygth and hygher then the clowdes: Also the description of other mountaynes and regions there about, comparynge the same to Italy.

Colonus his opynion as touchynge the supposed continente, and iopnyng of the north and south Ocean. Also of the breadth of the sayde continente or firme lande.

Of the regions of Uraba and Beragua and the great ryuer Maragnonus and the ryuer of Dabaiba or Sancti Iohannis. Also of certeyne marvellous and desolate wayes, and of dragons and Crocodiles engendered in the same.

Of. xx. golden ryuers about Dariena and of certeyne precious stones, especially a diamunde of marvellous byggeneesse bought in the prouince of Paria.

Of the heroical factes of the Spanyardes and howe they concerne effeminate pleasures. Also a similitude prouynge greate plentie of golde and precious stones.

## The contentes of the fyfth booke. Fol. 113.

The nauigation of Petrus Arias from Spayne to Hispaniola and Dariena, and of the Ilandes of Canarie. Also of the Ilandes of Madanino, Guadalupea, and Balancia.

Of the sea of herbes and mountaynes covered with snow: Also of the swyfte course of the sea towarde the west.

Of the ryuer Baira, the region Caramaiti, and the poyre Carthago

## The contentes of the decades,

Carthago and Sancta Martha: Also of Americus Vesputius and his expert cunnynge in the knowledge of the carde, compassse and quadrant.

Howe the Canibales assayled Petrus Arias with his hole nauie, and shot of theyr venemous arrowes euen in the sea. Also of theyr houses and householde stuffe.

Howe Gonzalus Quietus founde a saphire bygger then a goode egge: Also emerodes, calcidonies, iaspers, and amber of the mountaynes.

Of wooddes of brasile trees, plentie of golde, and marchasites of metals founde in the regions of Caramairi, Baira, and Saturma. Also of a straunge kynde of marchaundes exercised amonge the people of zunu.

That the region of Caramairi is lyke to an earthly Paradise: And of the fruitefull mountaynes and pleasaunte gardenes of the same.

Of many goodly countreys made desolate by the fiercenes of the Canibales, and of dyuers kyndes of breade made of rootes. Also of the maner of plantynge the roote of Iucca, whose iuice is deadly popson in the Ilandes, and without hurte in the continent or firme lande.

Of certeyne golden ryuers, harres, wylde bores, foules, gossampine, whyte marble, and holsome ayer. Also of the greate ryuer Maragnonus descendynge from the mountaines covered with snowe, cauled Serra Reuata.

Howe Petrus Arias waied certeyne Ilandes of the Canibales: And howe by the stoppe course of the sea, his shippes were caried in one nyght fortye leaques beyonde the estimation of the beste pylottes.

### The contentes of the fyrte booke. Fol. 118.

Of sundry opinions why the sea runneth with so stoppe a course from the East to the west: and of the greate goulfe of the north parte of the firme lande.

The vyage of Sebastian Cabote from Englande to the frozen sea, and howe beinge repulled with Ice in the moonethe of Iuly, he sayled farre westwarde.

Of people apparelled with beastes skynnes: And howe beastes take fyshes in the sea and eate them.

AAAAa, iiii.

Howe

## The contentes of the decades.

Howe Sebastian Cabote after that he had discovered the lande of Baccallaos or Baccallearum, was cauled out of Englande into Spayne, where he was made one of the assistance of the counsaile of chaffayres of India, & of his second viage

Of the Ilande Fortis: And howe a great foule as bygge as a storke lyghred in the gouernours shyppe. Also howe he arriued at Dariena with the kynges nauie.

Howe Alschus receaued the newe gouernour: And of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial.

Howe Petrus Aries the newe gouernour distributed his army to conquere the south regions ryche in golde, and to erecte newe colonies in the same.

Of the ryche golde mynes of Dabaiba, and of the expedition ageynst the kyng of that region.

Of the violent course of the sea from the east to the west: And of the difficulte saylynge ageynst the same.

Of the pestiferous and unholsome ayre of Sancta Maria Antiqua in Dariena: and howe the Spanyardes were of necessitie inforced to plant theyr fyrst colonie and habitation there.

The cause of the varietie of regions lyinge all vnder one degree or paralelle, and by what meanes the soonne beames are cause of feruent heate.

Of toades and flees engendered of droppes of water, and of a house set on fyre with lyghenyng.

Of a dogge deuoured of a Crocodile, and of the venemous bytynge of great batters. Also of Lions and Tygers and other wyld beasts.

Howe in these regions all foure footed beasts growe to a bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the fyrste broode. Also of certeyne trees of whose planks if ships be made, they are safe from the woormes cauled Byoma or Bytas.

Of a tre whose wood is present payson yf it be only bozne about: And of an herbe that is a preseruatiue ageynst the same.

Of the ryche Ilandes of the south sea, and of certeyne expeditions ageynst the Canibales.

¶ The contentes of the. viii. booke. fol. 124.

¶ The particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola, and

*Tanquam canis  
in Nilo.*

## The contentes of the decades.

and of the ryche Ilande cauled Margaritea Dives lyinge in the South sea. Also of the greate abundaunce of bigge pearles founde in the same.

Howe the autoure compareth Hispaniola to the earthely Paradyse: And howe it farre excelleth Italy in fertilitie and temperate ayre.

Of the fyrste inhabitours of Hispaniola & of the Ilandes of Canarie.

Howe the inhabitauntes of Hispaniola in theyr songes & rhymes had certeyne propheties that appareled men shulde come to theyr contrey and byynge them into seruitude: And of theyr familiaritie with spirites. Also howe those spirites haue no more appered to them sence they were baptised.

Of theyr experyence in swymmyng: And of theyr deadlye serpentes, byzdes, foules, and poppingiais.

Of the forme and situation of Hispaniola nere the Equinoctiall: And howe coulde is in sum place thereof accidental and not by the situation of the region.

Of oren and swyne of exceedinge bygnesse: And of eares of wheate as bygge as a mans arme in the bzaun. Also howe the swyne are fedde with myzobalanes. &c.

Of plenty of golde, bysyle, mastix, gossampyne, Elemtrum &c: And of chincommodities of intemperate regions.

Of dyuers languages in the Ilande: And howe the proportions are deuided into regions.

Howe Andreas Mozalis sayled into a dangerous and darke caue within the rocke of a mountayne: And of hols cyuers deuoured of suche caues. Also of the conkyete of the waters.

Of a standynge poole in the tope of an hygh mountayne: And howe fern and bryamble bushes growe only in coulde regions.

## The contentes of the .viii. booke. Fol. 130

Of a greate lake or standynge poole of swete and salte water, and of the sea fyshes in the same in the myddelande of the Ilande. Also of deuourynge fyshes cauled Tiburoni.

Of the ryuers falling into the lakes, and of .xx. springes in the space of a furlonge,

A more

## The contentes of the decades.

Amicnelous hyffozp of a kynge ftryken dumme and lame by a myracle: And of the Indian language.

Howe fuche as are drowned in the lake, are neuer cafte by ageyne: And of the Ilande Guarizacca in the myddelfe of a fandyng lake. Also of a lake of freffhe water, and an other of falte and freffhe water.

Of a large playne of two hundredeth myles in length: And an other of a hundredeth and twentie.

Of the merueloust ffifhe oz monfter of the fea, cauled Magiari oz Marum, fedde with mans hande: and howe the caryeth men over the lake.

Of the mountaynes, vales, hylles, playnes, and ryuers of Hifpaniola: And howe golde is founde in all mountaynes and golde and ffifhe in all ryuers.

Of falte bayes, and howe the ryuers haue theyr increafe from the caues of the mountaynes. Also howe there is no hurtfull beaffe in the Ilande.

Of the pleasures of Hifpaniola: And of the region of Cotohi well inhabtyed and fityate in a playne in the toppes of mountaynes reachyng to the clowdes.

Of moderate coulde in the mountaynes, and of ferne of merueylous bygnelle.

Howe pure and mafie gold is founde in the region of Cotoy oz Cotohy: And that the veyne of golde is a luyng tree. Also of the rootes, braunches, and floures of the fame, and howe certeyne caues are fufteyned with pylers of golde.

What golde is brought yearly frome Hifpaniola into Spayne: And of the falte of the mountaynes, beinge as hard as ftones and cleare as cryftall. Also fpynges of falte, freffhe and fower water.

Of certeyne wylde men luyng in caues and dennes with out any certeyne language: And of theyr merueylous fwiftnelle a foote.

Of pyrtche of the rocke and twoo kyndes of trees: And of the leafe of a tree vfed in the fteede of paper. Also howe thyn habitantes thinke that the Chriftians can make thofe leaues fpeake and difclofe all fecrecies.

Of a ftronge coloure made of the iufte of a certeyn apples: And of the herbe whole fmoke is payfon.

## The contentes of the decades.

The contentes of the .ix. booke. Fol. 136.

Of the kyndes of frutes wherewith the inhabitants of Hispaniola lyued fyrste, and howe they came to the knoweledge of Tucca. Also howe Ceres fyrst found wheate and barley in Egypte.

Why the kynges are cauled by dyuers names, & by what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are borne.

Howe they make the kynges testaments, and howe certeyne of the kynges wyues and concubines are buryed with them.

Of the variable motions of the elementes in Hispaniola: And where it rayneth but lyttle, and where much.

Of the colonies and byllages that the Spanyardes haue buylded in Hispaniola: & of the other Ilands about the same

Of a sprynge which runnyng vnder the sea from Hispaniola, breaketh furth in the Iland of Arctusa: Also of habitabyle regions vnder the Equinoctial, and of the ryche golde mynes of the Ilande of Cuba.

Of the gumme cauled *Amma Album*: And of the Canibales. Also wherby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Of hony founde in trees and rockes: And of the generatioun of greate Toxoyfles and of theyr egges.

The contentes of the .x. booke. Fol. 140.

Of the expedition ageynste the kyng of the Ilande Dites in the south sea: And howe after foure condities, submytting hym selfe, he gaue our men a hundreth and ten pounde weyght of greate pearles. Also howe he agreed to pay yeaerly a hundreth pounde weyght of pearles for a tribute.

Howe ares and hatchettes are moze esteemed then golde, or perles: And of greate plentie of hartes and cunnys. Also howe the kyng of Dites and his famelie were baptised.

Of perles of great pryce: And howe Paule the byshop of Rome bought a perle for foure and fortie thousand ducades.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of perles: And of a hundreth perles founde in one shel fyfthe. Also of the byrth of pearles.

Of the regions of the East syde of the goulfe of Arabia: And

## The contentes of the decades.

And of the originall of the Canibales.

Of certeyne circumcised people which haue the knowledge of letters and bke bookes : And what chaunced of the capitynes which Petrus Arias sente furth byuers wayes. Also howe John Solysius was slayne of the Canibales, and of theyr fiercenesse.

Howe John Pontius was repulsed of the Canibales, and of the lewde behauour of John Aiora.

Of the variable fortune of Bonifacius Badafocius : And howe after he hadde gathered greate ryches of golde, he had the ouerthrowe, and was spoyled of all.

Of the golden region of Coiba Dices : And howe theyr haues are marked in the face.

Of the Ilandes of the south sea : And of the regions frome whense the Portugales fetch the spices.

Of a strange kynde of sowlynge : and of the trees that beare gowdes.

Of the later opinions as touchynge the stoppe course of the Ocean towarde the weste : and of the continence of firme lande. Also of the byage from the newe landes to Spayne.

Of the golde mynes of Dariena, and the maner of gathering of golde in the same : Also of the droptic of countournes which is not satisfied with ryches.

¶ For the contentes of the booke of the Ilands lately founde reade the margente notes of the same.

¶ ¶ ¶ ¶

¶ Thinterpretours excuse.

I haue not in wytyng byn very curious  
To auoyde the scornes of Rhinoceros nose,  
Or the spyled iudgement of seuerer Aristarchus  
Not fearynge thereby any thyng to lose,  
But haue thought it sufficient to be open and playne  
Not lookynge for other commoditie or gayne.

I am not eloquent I knowe it ryght well,  
I be not barbarous I desyre no more,

I haue not for enery woorde asked counsell  
 Of eloquent Eliot or syr Thomas Moore,  
 Take it therfore as I haue intended,  
 The fautes with fauour may soone be amended,

The poet Homere for all his eloquence,  
 Lacked not Zoilus to be his foe,  
 Wherfore I conclude this for a trewe sentence  
 That no man lacketh suo bargello:  
 For as no beaste lyuerh without woorme or aye,  
 So no man lacketh his pryncie enemy.

### Rumpatur Zoilus.

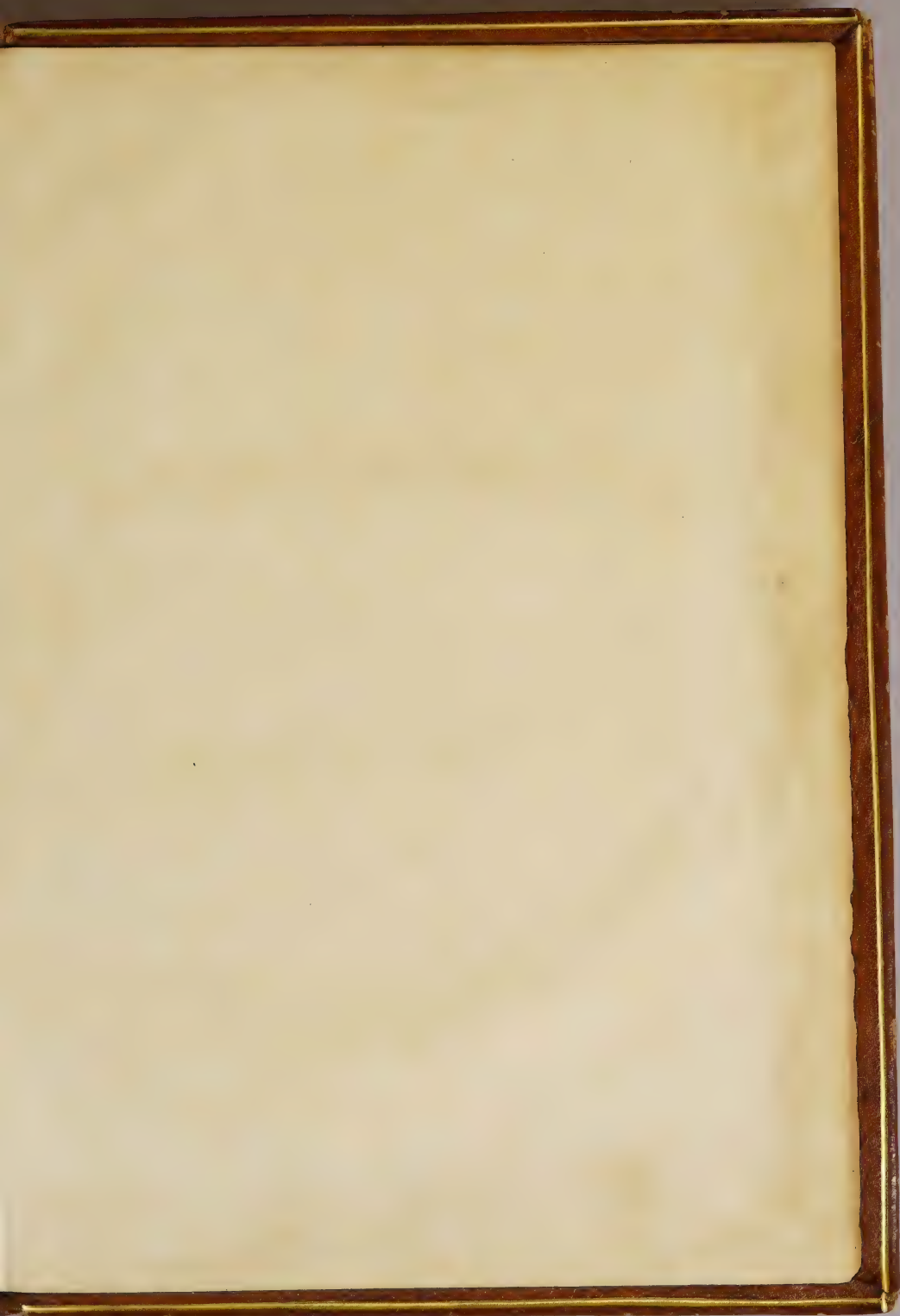
C fautes escaped in the pryncyng. F. the leafe,  
 A. the line. B. the backe syde of the leafe.

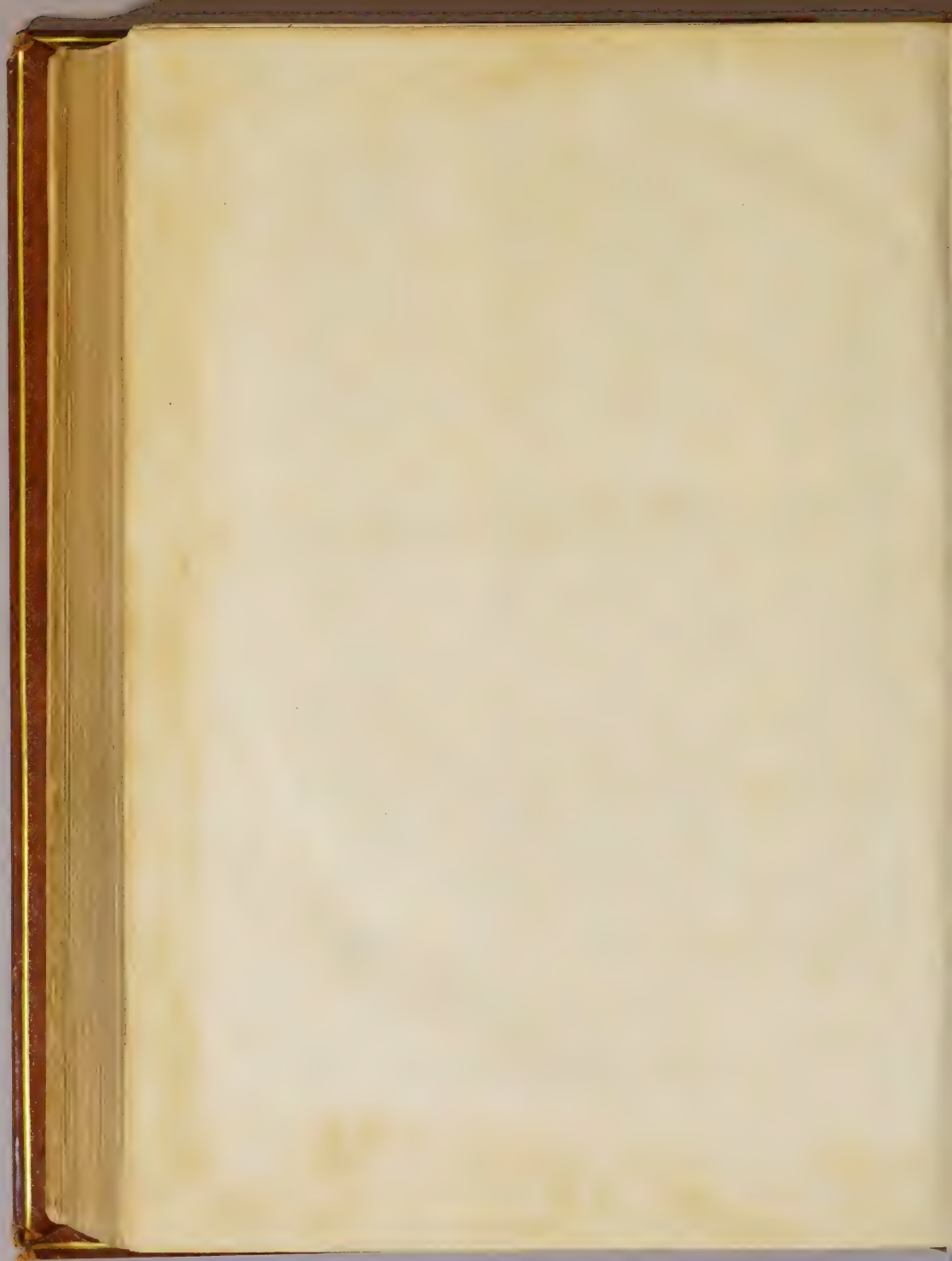
- F. 2. B. A. 36. helpen, reade helped.  
 F. 3. B. A. 25. thre fethers, reade theyr fethers.  
 F. 9. A. 28. fourme, reade forme.  
 F. 20. A. 37. otre, reade potre.  
 F. 22. B. A. 27. shure, reade sure.  
 F. 30. A. 6. clooke, reade cloke.  
 F. 34. A. 5. wodes, reade wooddes.  
 F. 36. B. A. 22. put out and.  
 F. 36. the last line. put out, I do.  
 F. 36. B. A. 34. first parre, reade fyft partes.  
 F. 38. B. A. 13. gardens, reade guardens.  
 F. 52. A. 18. parre, reade porte.  
 F. 62. B. A. 25. and, reade then.  
 F. 68. the last line, put out trees.  
 F. 92. A. 18. Michael, reade Michahels.  
 F. 92. A. 19. ans, reade and.  
 Also there the laste line, put out, arose.  
 F. 95. A. 12. cause, reade sause.  
 F. 96. B. A. 15. gretheardes, reade greate heardes.  
 F. 99. A. 17. filte hpe, reade fylthy.  
 F. 118. B. A. 35. langitude, reade longitude.  
 F. 128. A. 42. epyes, reade heres.

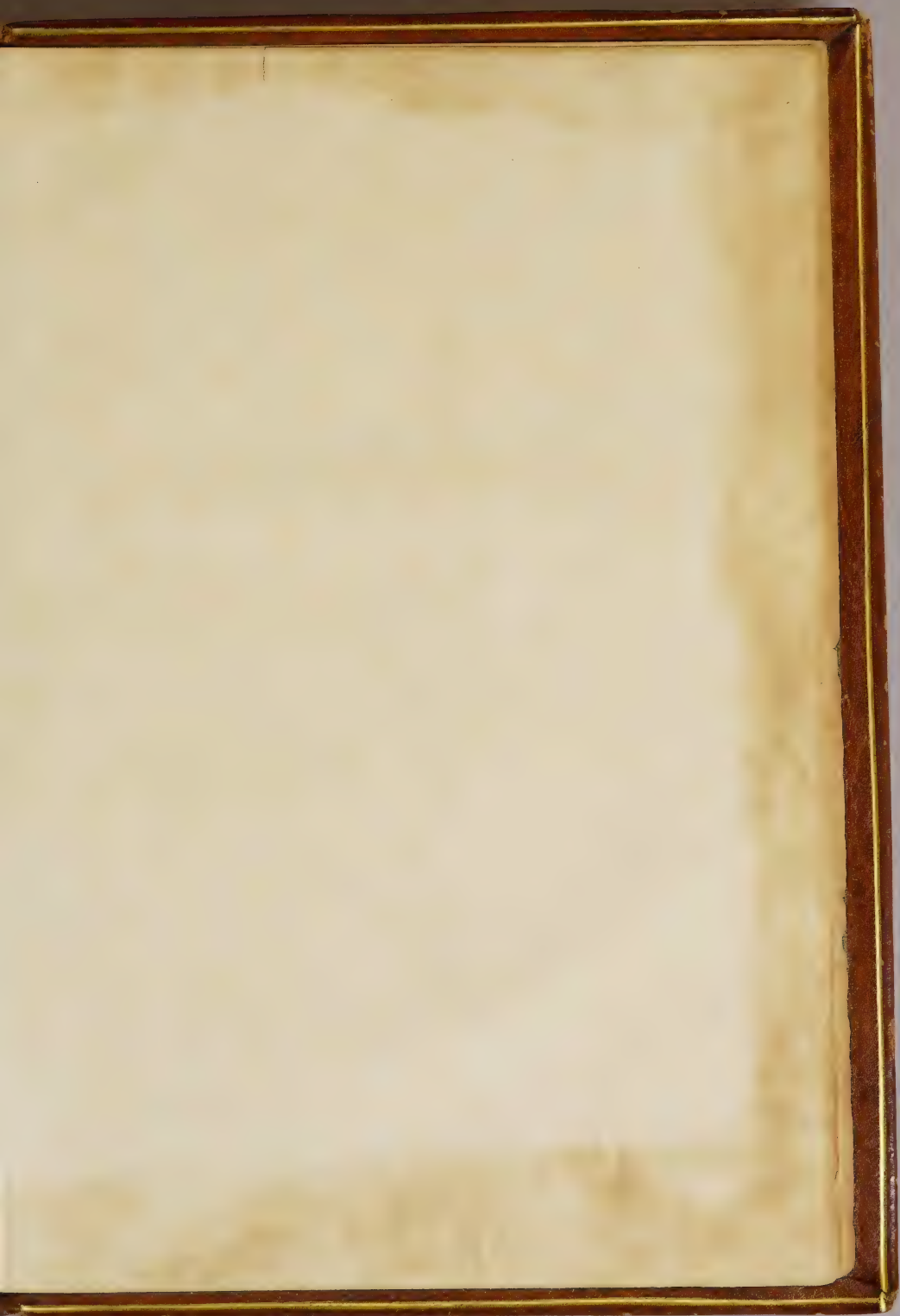
- f. 129. l. 1. Antiqua, reade Antiqua.  
 f. 140. l. 17. counceled, reade counsayled.  
 f. 150. l. 15. beles, reade bayles.  
 f. 150. l. 33. prouydence, reade pronince.  
 f. 153. l. 32. trackes, reade tractes.  
 f. 154. l. 2. selde, reade seldome.  
 f. 157. l. 26. wod, reade woodde.  
 f. 168. B. l. 13. hortamus, reade hortanur.  
 f. 170. B. l. 17. for. 1593. reade. 1493.  
 f. 171. l. 21. without, reade with.  
 f. 188. B. l. 33. burie, reade burne.  
 f. 193. B. l. 21. webs, reade webbes.  
 f. 199. B. l. 37. hydinge, reade hyninge.  
 f. 202. l. 17. ny, reade any.  
 f. 206. B. l. 23. fourme, reade forme.  
 f. 208. B. l. 7. codes, reade coddes.  
 f. 209. l. 15. wars, reade warres.  
 f. 212. l. 40. ignitie, reade dignitie.  
 f. 219. l. 10. vs, reade them.  
 f. 228. l. 37. rant, reade ranne.  
 f. 241. l. 4. Colonuo, reade Colono.  
 f. 249. l. 17. reade by the commynge of the  
 Bothes and Mandales: &c.  
 f. 262. B. l. 15. Thus, reade this.  
 f. 296. l. 26. reade Singulus Mundi, that is the  
 gerdle of the worlde, otherwyse cauled Catena  
 Mundi, that is, the chapne of the worlde.  
 f. 298. B. l. 3. fennes, reade fennes.  
 f. 300. l. 20. ceelcrypte, reade celeritie.  
 f. 317. l. 27. reade Tercera or Terciera.  
 Also, l. 35. kyngeidgme, reade kyngdome.  
 f. 322. l. 17. owre compasse, reade the compasse.

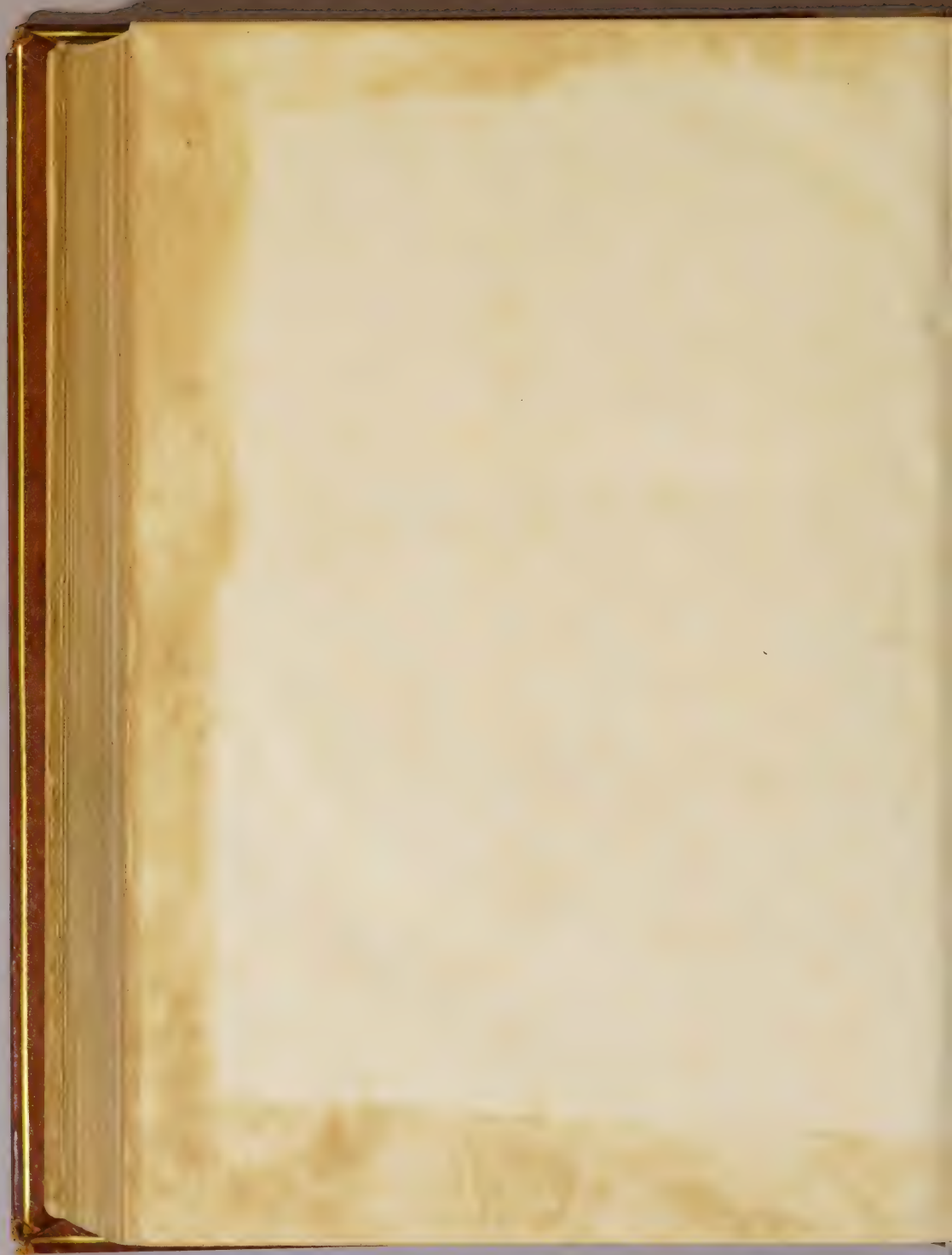
**I**mprynted at London in Lumbarde Streete  
 at the signe of the Cradle by  
 Edwarde Sutton.

Anno. Dñi. M. D. LV.









H 555  
A 587 d1

*Sebastian Cabot 255*



